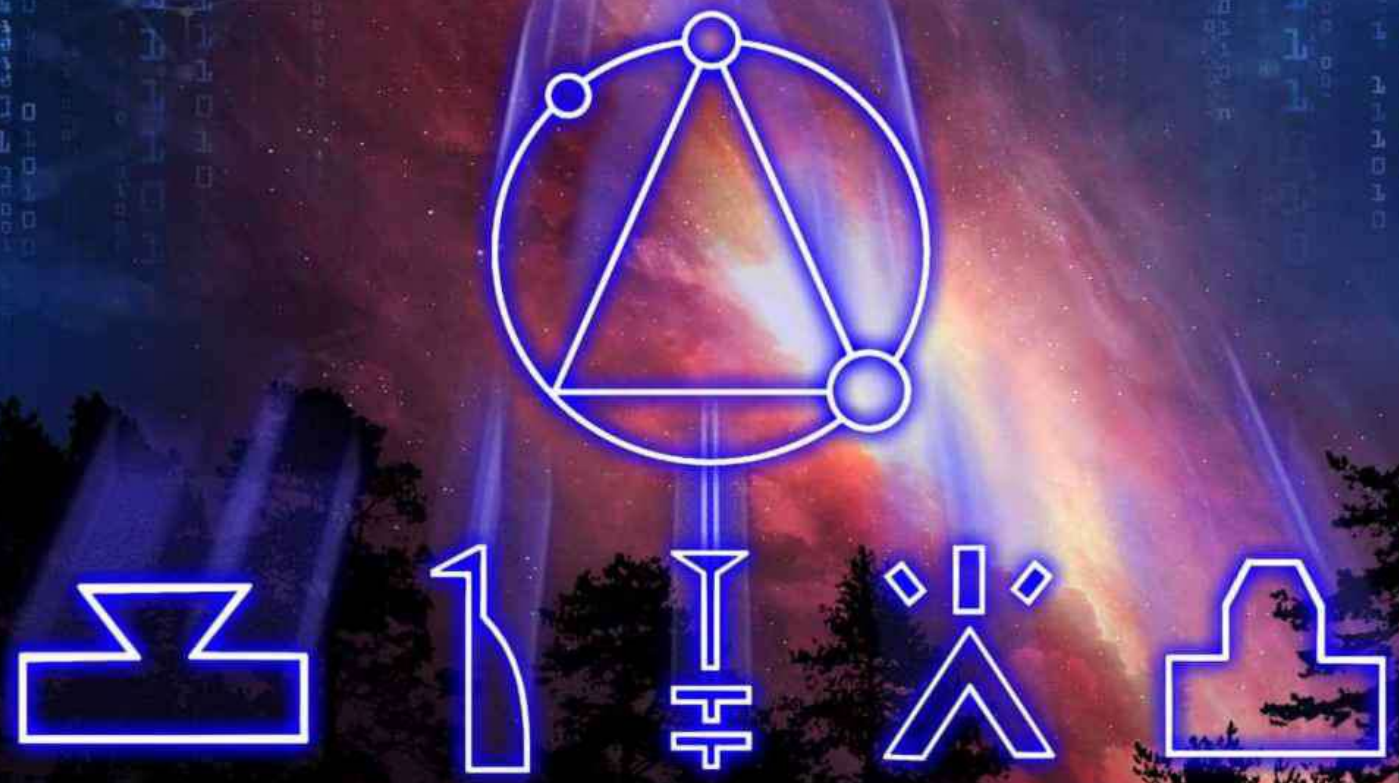
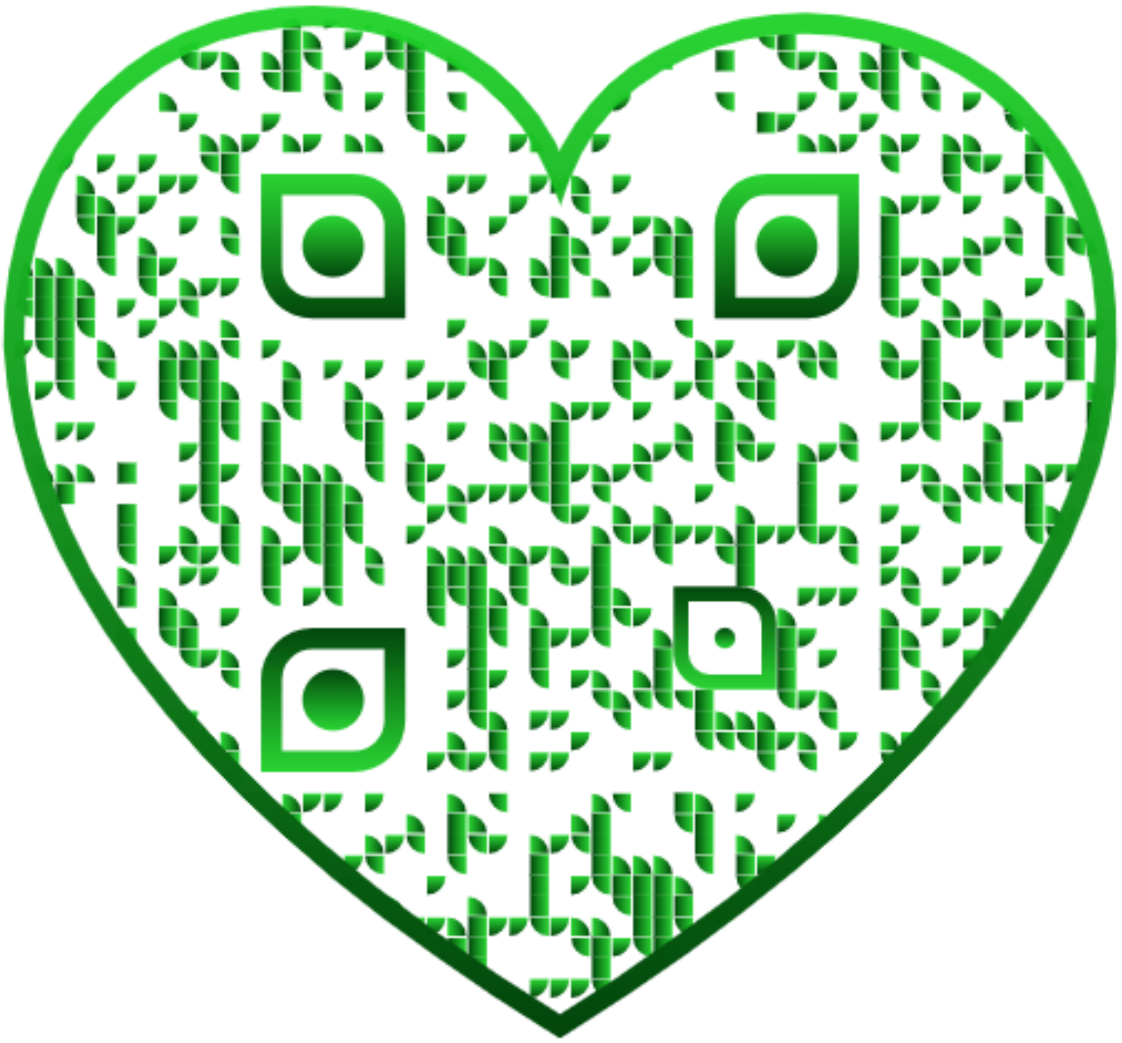
THE RENDLESHAM ENIGMA

Book 1: Timeline



JIM PENNISTON (USAF/Retired),
and GARY OSBORN



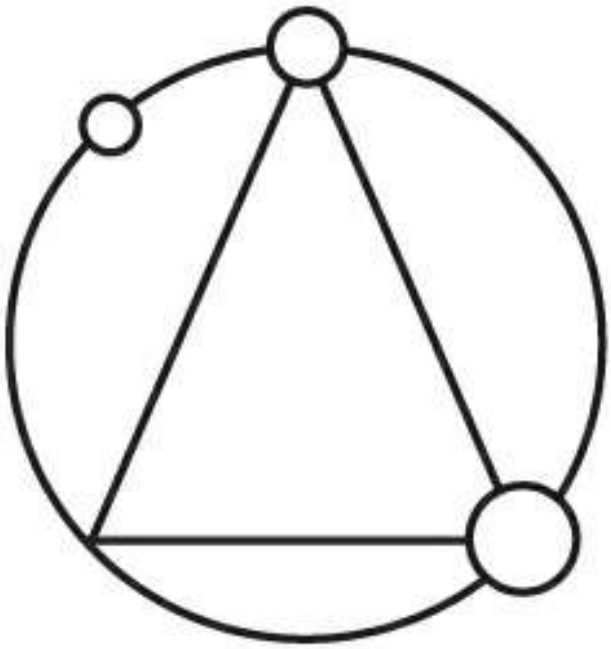


Table of Contents

Preliminary – Bentwaters and Woodbridge: A Brief History

Introduction

Chapter One – Normal Was the Beginning

Chapter Two – East Gate

Chapter Three – Discovery

Chapter Four – Evidence

Chapter Five – “Special Mission”

Chapter Six – “It’s Back . . .”

Chapter Seven – Landing Site

Chapter Eight – UAP Activity

Chapter Nine – Afterburn

Chapter Ten – Containment

Chapter Eleven – Lifeline

Chapter Twelve – Disinformation

Chapter Thirteen – The Coda Decade

Chapter Fourteen – Regression

Chapter Fifteen – The ‘Hold Forth’ Years

Chapter Sixteen – Hunted by Lions, Tigers, and Bears

Chapter Seventeen – Taking the Road Less Travelled

Chapter Eighteen – The Rockford Colloquium and The Road Not Taken

Epilogue – A Code Within a Code About an Ancient Code

Glossary of Abbreviations and Terms

About the Authors

Preliminary

Bentwaters and Woodbridge: A Brief History

The twin Royal Air Force airfields of RAF Bentwaters and RAF Woodbridge are two to four miles apart, some eight miles from the town of Ipswich and 70 miles north-east of London. They were first built in 1943, and from April 1944 were first used by the Royal Air Force during the Second World War. Formerly known as 'RAF Station Sutton Heath,' the name given to the Bentwaters base was taken from two cottages ('Bentwaters Cottages') that had once stood on the site that was later the main runway.

On March 16, 1951, and because of the Soviet threat during the 'Cold War,' RAF Bentwaters was transferred to the USAF (United States Air Force) by the British MOD (Ministry of Defence). Although they originally operated as separate bases, on July 8, 1958, both Bentwaters and Woodbridge became the primary home for the 81st Fighter Wing and were therefore under unified command of the USAF and USAFE and treated as a single establishment.

In 1992, the Berlin Wall came down and so with the end of the Cold War, the USAF then returned control of the "twin bases" as they were always known, to the Ministry of Defence on July 1, 1993.

Today the twin bases are inactive as a military facility and the site is now known as 'Bentwaters Parks' – although RAF Woodbridge is still used by the UK Ministry of Defence for Army training exercises. On site at Bentwaters Park is 'The Bentwaters Cold War Museum.' There are also offices and warehouses to rent and the site is also used as a filming location for various television and film companies.[1] However, throughout the four decades between 1951 and 1993 the 'twin bases' played a key role in the defence of Western Europe, as both British and U.S. NATO defence chiefs were keeping a watchful eye on the Soviet threat in Europe, and the threat posed by various

terrorist groups.

During the time of the Rendlesham UFO incident in December 1980, and due to a political crisis involving an uprising in Poland and the rise of the ‘Solidarity Movement,’ the Cold War had reached its peak and things had reached a critical point for the USSR. Around this time a CIA report suggested the Soviet military were mobilizing for an invasion. Therefore it may not have been a coincidence that the UFO incident in Rendlesham Forest and close to these bases, happened at this same time when the Cold War was going though one of its hottest moments, as the Rendlesham Incident brought to light the possibility that at the Bentwaters base and therefore on British soil, the USAF had secreted a massive stockpile of tactical nuclear weapons aimed at the Soviets and the Communist or Eastern Bloc nations. Although the storing of these nuclear weapons on British soil was a treaty violation against British policy and the British Government which had an agreement with the American Government that US nuclear weapons wouldn’t be stored in the UK, it appeared that no one knew anything about it and there was no official admission. What was actually stored there was officially classified – although it is also said that nuclear weapons at the Bentwaters base was really no secret to the British government or the people in the nearby towns of Suffolk. The fact that outside the front gates of the base there would often be an assembly of anti-nuclear “CND” protesters, attests to this notion that what was housed in the weapons storage area was not a big secret.

At that time, both Bentwaters and Woodbridge, one of the largest and most important NATO complexes in Europe, with over 12,000 highly-skilled personnel, were under the command of Wing Commander Colonel Gordon E. Williams (Later General). The Bentwaters/Woodbridge Base Commander was Colonel Ted Conrad and the Deputy Base Commander was Lieutenant Colonel Charles I. Halt (later Colonel).

Fig. 1: RAF Bentwaters base, Suffolk, England. (Satellite image from 2000, using *Google Earth Pro*). (See Chapter 1, Fig. 1 for a similar aerial image of RAF Woodbridge).

Rendlesham, East Suffolk and Orford Ness

To the east of Ipswich and between the twin air bases lie the vast, thick pine forests of Rendlesham where the UFO incidents took place. It is a fact that during the Second World War more pine trees were planted to build up the Rendlesham Forest so as to help keep the military activities there fairly well hidden. A few miles from Woodbridge and close to the River Deben is a significant archaeological site. This is the site of the famous *Sutton Hoo* treasure discovered in 1939 from an Anglo-Saxon burial ground dating from between the 6th – 7th centuries CE.

Some five miles away on the south east coast of Suffolk and at Orford Ness is the Lighthouse known as *Orfordness* (all one word). East of Butley – also at Orford Ness – is the location of several other military buildings, long rumored to have been used by the National Security Agency (NSA). Among the rumours that were going around in 1980 was the story that these buildings were involved with 'Top-Secret' experiments – although the official story was that these buildings and the nearby MADRE radar station which was constructed in 1961, were associated with "over the horizon" radar research named "*Cobra Mist*" to monitor all and any launches made by the Soviets and possibly the Chinese. However, because of noise problems and because constant warnings had to be made to ships that came too close to the shore that they might experience "interference,"[ii] the station was decommissioned in 1973 and today the BBC World Service transmits from the site.

Lastly, to the south near Felixstowe, also in Suffolk, is the RAF Bawdsey Chain Home Radar Station, which in World War II had monitored the launch of Nazi V2 rockets from Germany. However, this area of Suffolk, especially the shingle coastal area around Orford Ness, is said to have a darker military history. Numerous stories have since emerged of secret experiments associated with all kinds of military weapons, including experiments with laser-like "death rays." It is well known that from 1913 until the mid-1980's Orford Ness was a military test area.[iii] Indeed, it is said that it was here and during the 1930s that the first purpose-built experiments on the radar defence system were made. Once successful, this newly-developed technology was then moved to nearby Bawdsey Manor, later to become the base known as RAF Bawdsey.

Aside from the development of radar, Orford Ness was also a test firing

range, and it is a fact that the development of atomic weapons were also carried out in certain military buildings (huts or 'pagodas') which once dominated the coast, and that during August 1956 the nuclear devices, detonators and the outer casings of Britain's first atomic weapon, "Blue Danube," was actually developed and tested in these buildings.[iv] The decaying remains of these buildings and the MOD Warning signs are still there today.

> "Whilst it is maintained that no fissile material was tested on the site, the very high explosive initiator charge was present and the buildings were designed to absorb any accidental explosion, allowing gases and other material to vent and dissipate in a directed or contained manner."[v]

Much of what went on at Orford Ness is still secret, and it's no wonder that amidst the more incredible stories of the area are also tales of whole villages having once been evacuated and burnt bodies having washed ashore on the beach. Perhaps the latter is associated with the apocryphal tale that it was here at the peninsula of 'Shingle Street' on Orford Ness beach that a Nazi invasion during WWII was repelled – the German soldiers having been stopped by a "wall of fire" – although official documents released in 1993 appear to confirm the official view that this invasion never took place and is just a wild story.[vi] Also interesting is the fact that at Orford Ness there are species of rare plants and fauna, and that Orford Ness is listed as a Grade-1 site in the Nature Conservation Review as well as a National Nature Reserve.

> "It is a place of strange contrasts. For the National Trust, its 'elemental nature' contrasts with the 'inherent dangers' of this place, a 'hostile and potentially dangerous site.' Military structures – the Bomb Ballistics Building, the Black Beacon, the 'pagodas' used for explosive design – have been converted into viewing spots. This is not a celebratory site, however; there is ambivalence and doubt here, with regard to what is being physically and ideologically conserved."[vii]

It is no wonder then, that with all the military installations and military testing activity in the area, Rendlesham and this part of the Suffolk coast also has a documented history of paranormal activity stretching right back to the 1800s as well as continuing phenomena *after* the Rendlesham UFO Incident. For example, in 1983 there were sightings of "green fireballs" emerging from

the North Sea around Orford Ness with fishermen have reported strange blisters on their skin afterwards.[viii] Documenting all the paranormal phenomena, the folklore and history of the area would take another book in itself.

With the recent disclosures made by several USAF officers in 2010, it is now more-or-less an established fact that since the 1940s, the 'intelligence' behind the UFO phenomenon has been highly interested in all nuclear bases, installations and facilities around the world. It is no surprise then to discover that in August of 1956, *and at the same time when Britain was developing and testing the nuclear devices for its first atomic weapon at Orford Ness in Suffolk*, a now famous and well-documented UFO incident happened over the same area . . . .

Jet Chase over Bentwaters 1956:
The Lakenheath-Bentwaters Incident

On the night of 13th August 1956, one of the most significant UFO encounters took place over Bentwaters.[ix] We are told that one of the remarkable things about this case was that it actually convinced astronomer Dr. J. Allen Hynek and several other scientists that a more serious study should be given to the UFO phenomenon. The USAF Air Intelligence Information Report on this incident on 13th – 14th August 1956 was filed by Captain Edward L. Holt.[x]

On the night in question, radar operators at Lakenheath and Bentwaters Air Bases in the east of England, had repeatedly tracked both single and multiple high-speed objects which made rapid changes of speed and direction. Two jet interceptors were sent up, and the pilots were able to view and track them in a brief series of manoeuvres. According to official U.S. Air Force reports, the sightings could not be explained by radar malfunction or by unusual weather.

Jenny Randles writes:

> "This Lakenheath R/V is still regarded as one of the two or three best cases in UFO history. It has defied attempts to solve it and really must have set our Ministry of Defence thinking very seriously about UFOs – if they were not already so doing. Indeed many internal sources

have told me so.”[xi]

Introduction

By Gary Osborn

When the project to write this book began in 2015, I immediately set out *to write the book I always wanted to read about the Rendlesham Incident* . . . a so-called 'UFO event' in Suffolk, England, which took place over three nights from the last hour of the evening of December 25 (Christmas Day), to 5:00 a.m. on the morning of December 28, 1980.

Today, the Rendlesham Incident is by far the most significant event in UFO history, having now surpassed the famous 'Roswell Incident,' which took place in New Mexico in July 1947. In fact, the RFI (Rendlesham Forest Incident) has been named the "UK's Roswell" by former Ministry of Defence UFO desk officer Nick Pope, now author and investigator and the media face/spokesman on UFO-related phenomena.

What makes this particular paranormal case highly significant and special is that it was a unique military-related event, having taken place in Rendlesham Forest just outside the twin bases of RAF Bentwaters and RAF Woodbridge, both of which had been transferred to the United States Air Force during the Cold War by the British MOD (Ministry of Defence) in 1951, becoming one of the largest and most important NATO complexes in Europe.

The account that forms the main narrative of this book, from the time of the incidents in December 1980, right on up to April 2014, is that of James W. Penniston, who was a Staff Sergeant and USAF Security/Area Supervisor at the time of the Rendlesham Incident. Jim Penniston had 'Top-Secret clearance' – one of only eight people with Top-Secret clearance working Security. His credibility and honesty were highly respected, with military commendations and perfect performance reviews given annually by many high-ranking officers throughout his years in the USAF. On one of SSgt. Penniston's performance reports, dating from April to December 1981, the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler, wrote: "*When this NCO speaks, we listen,"* and it is a fact that SSgt. Penniston's opinion was often sought after by his senior commanders. Penniston was a trained observer, and there is no doubt about his integrity and credibility in the military, especially when we consider the fact that he was one of many trained personnel entrusted with the responsibility of both defending and

upholding the efficient running of the twin-base installations used by the USAF, as part of the NATO forces to defend western Europe against all kinds of military or terrorist threats.

Jim Penniston reported what he had witnessed and experienced on the morning of December 26, 1980. He was simply doing his job in investigating a possible downed aircraft, which turned out to be something he did not expect, affecting the course of his life and presenting continuous challenges.

Over the years, Jim Penniston has had many offers from UFO researchers and authors expressing their wish to write a book with him, and he did consider several and was in the process of actually writing a book with a few potential lead authors, but eventually he turned them down, as it was clear to him they had their own agendas, based on their personal views and beliefs about what it was he had encountered in Rendlesham Forest that fateful morning. Jim Penniston has never totally believed that what he encountered off-base and inside a small clearing in the tall pine-wooded forest had anything to do with 'aliens,' especially not in the extraterrestrial sense, and although he keeps an open mind, he doesn't wholly subscribe to the ET hypothesis. "We just don't know," he says. Ironically, this has landed him in a lot of trouble with the UFO community, many of whom staunchly cling to the belief that we are being visited by aliens from other planets and star systems.

So, *why was I chosen by Jim Penniston to write this book with him? How did I get involved?*

The fact is that not only have I been given the opportunity to write the book I always wanted to read on this subject, but I have also been given something to offer back to those who have been searching for answers.

Jim Penniston first contacted me by email in November 2010, having been told that I might be able to assist him with interpreting the binary code message he claims to have received during the incident. Soon after encountering the craft in the forest, which Jim Penniston first assumed was a downed aircraft in trouble, he had a telepathic download of a message in binary code when he touched one of the raised symbols on its side. At the time, I didn't know what Jim Penniston was referring to. He assumed I did, as it had caused some controversy in the media when news of its existence was finally released, *but I knew nothing about the binary code.*

On February 3, 2011, Jim then sent me six of seven sets of geographical coordinates, which he said had been found within the deciphered message of the binary code and asked me to study them to see if there was any additional information I could find. I then set about working on them. Eventually, this ended up being an eight-year study, during which I discovered a great deal of mathematical and geometrical data. With this superlative mathematical data were also mythical theme-related references, designed to lead to factual, documented information and knowledge, all of which could easily fill three large volumes. In fact, with what emerged over that lengthy period of time, I can confidently say that the ancient pyramid field of Giza – which had forever been one of the greatest mysteries on this planet, and something I had personally been researching – had finally given up its secrets for a very important reason, because NOW is the time, and I am certain this is all in preparation for what is to come.

Imagine the vast amount of literature and material that has been written and presented about the Great Pyramid and Giza over the last several hundred years. Now imagine that since 1980, and as a result of one of the most famous events in UFO history, the key to unlock the door to these mysteries was given in a coded message, which a first responder leading the investigation during this event had walked away with, but had kept it to himself for thirty years. The fact that the coordinates from the code re-focuses our attention on this ancient site, and in ways that are unprecedented, would surprise anyone who firmly believes that the Rendlesham Incident is a UFO/UAP, "extraterrestrial-related" event. What the code is pointing to is a far greater and wider world of probabilities than anyone who was involved in these events had likely thought possible.

I had long discussions with Jim Penniston about the release of these findings to the public, which I said would take two or three books in order to cover it all, and he wavered on making a final decision on this, even debating whether or not the findings should be released. We both realized how this material could easily be misinterpreted, utilized, spun, and manipulated to support all kinds of personal views, beliefs, and agendas.

Finally, Jim said that he would make the findings public, but first he wanted us to write a book together which would realize his dream of a *definitive* account of the Rendlesham Incident from his own perspective. I agreed, as there needed to be such a book which laid the foundations for us to then present all the information found in the binary code message that

originated from the incident.

Before we began our project with this first book about the RFI, it was after having read through all the literature I could get my hands on about the incident that I came up with my own idea/concept in presenting Jim Penniston's account, while also documenting everything that had happened on all three nights, as well as the events that followed in the years leading up to a specific time in 2014, which is when the full deciphered binary code message was made public.

To avoid the confusion that can often arise when dealing with other's related experiences and the minutiae of details and facts, which offer a different perspective to the account given, but which can also digress from the main narrative, as I had noted with previous books on the RFI, we found it best to separate the often exhausting and conflicting 'different sides of the story' elements of the incident from the chosen main narrative of Jim Penniston's account and place them after each of the chapters in the end notes, which also includes the references. Therefore, the testimonies, statements, reports and the usual 'he said, she said' issues made by others who were also involved in these events will be dealt with in the end notes – if we can call them that – as they are both lengthy and detailed and are presented to convey an overall picture in regard to the witnesses' testimonies of the events.

We would recommend that the reader first read through and absorb the main narrative of the chapters and then perhaps read the chapters again, along with the end notes, which provide the reader with a deeper level of information which can be cross-referenced to grasp the 'bigger picture,' as it were, of the events documented. The end notes provide a detailed resource of reference material in themselves.

In effect, what we have here are *two books in one* . . . one book based on one man's perspective, and the other book documenting the events that went on around him – things that happened behind the scenes, of which he wasn't always aware.

Now having completed it, I would have to say that this book on the Rendlesham Incident has been the most difficult book I have ever written. In hindsight, I can honestly say that, in comparison, my eight-year decipherment of the code hidden within the seven coordinates from the binary code, which

involves highly complex mathematical data and requires an intellectual grasp of ancient esoteric knowledge, was much easier.

The reason why is that, with the RFI, *we are dealing with people.* It's the difficulty one faces in making sense of the conflicting witness accounts and personal agendas, made more difficult by the fact that a containment cover story was added with various contradictory details by those who had claimed to be present during the incidents to confuse potential researchers and investigators.

As said, most of the research I did for this book you will find in the end notes – research which was gathered independently of my collaboration with Jim Penniston. In preparation for this book, I dedicated four years to its groundwork and research, approaching different people who had been involved with the incident either directly or indirectly over the years, also managing to interview those witnesses who had been more cooperative and accommodating.

It is a fact that for some reason or another, the accounts of the witnesses have altered or changed incrementally over the years with inconsistencies and even contradictions when heard or read in comparison with their earliest testimonies. When I began this research, thirty-five years had passed since the incident, and after I had read some of the literature available on the incident, I was made fully aware of the fact that if I had managed to interview all of the witnesses, which actually turned out to be impossible due to the witnesses falling out with each other, resulting in various factions, in-fighting, trust-issues, and the paranoia that this case and the UFO community in general has generated, I would have simply been given their latest account of what happened. Based on my experiences with witnesses I questioned, when confronting them about the inconsistencies and contradictions in the testimonies they had given over the years, it was only natural that my questions would often be met with a defensive reaction, and I would then be offered an explanation to simply get around the issue being addressed – an explanation that didn't always fit the facts. So, while attempts were made to get what answers I could, I also made it my mission to read through all the documented witness testimonies and accounts and watch an untold number of interviews and documentaries made available to compare what was said during each interview, documentary, or posting made by the witnesses, and to note the contradictions and inconsistencies, if any, and then determine what was likely to be closer to the truth.

It is a fact that Jim Penniston was deeply traumatized and affected by the event, so-much-so that during radio interviews and conferences he often had problems with explaining what had occurred, as he was reliving it with each telling. Until the writing of this book, which was therapy for him in facing the reality of what had happened in often painstaking detail, he decided to stay away from the public eye and did so for five years, as he still suffers with PTSD today, much of it exacerbated by the negative press he had personally received almost on a daily basis since the announcement of the existence of the binary code message thirty years after the event. All will be explained, as with this book Jim has decided to lay out the facts surrounding the incident, as well as his own personal thoughts and feelings regarding his interactions with others over the years. It is his final say, and true to his character, Jim is at times brutally honest and makes no excuses in telling it how he saw and experienced it.

What you are about to read in this first book also comprises the background events to the revelations that are coming soon in *The Rendlesham Enigma, Book Two: A Code Within a Code*. In my view, this is all part of our history now in the making.

Gary Osborn
Pennsylvania, USA, June 6, 2019

Chapter One

Normal Was the Beginning

> "What I once believed is no more, and what I have witnessed defies all that I have ever imagined. I am truly in awe over the whole incident, and no one can fully understand the magnitude of such an event, unless they were there. Some people are thrust into situations, not out of desire, but rather because of necessity and what is required for the moment. I present my story because I was asked and because it is important for the truth to be known, which is much bigger than one's self, or one's own internal peace.

> I find that people will do or say almost anything to be relevant when it comes to the Rendlesham Forest Incident. They chase rainbows, they attack the witnesses, they try to fit it into their box with accounts of other UFO-related phenomena, or they try to debunk it based on their own bias, even though all this has nothing to do with the facts. So, at the end of the day, some things are true whether we believe in them or not. All I ask is for people to keep their minds open and not prejudge the event or the witnesses without first looking at the evidence. Any investigator knows the first rule in investigations is to follow the evidence."
>
> Jim Penniston (USAF ret).

Born November 26, 1954 in the city of Monroe, Wisconsin, James W. Penniston had been in the US Air Force since 1973, after graduating from Freeport High School in Freeport, Illinois. Penniston was then immediately chosen for special duty with the SAC (Strategic Air Command) Elite Guard in Omaha Nebraska,[xii] and was later promoted to Sergeant and worked security for the SAC Command Post, General Officers, Congressmen, and the President of the United States.

Penniston then volunteered for reassignment in 1975 to RAF Alconbury, England, where he worked flight operations. He was then reassigned in 1977 to Malmstrom Air Force Base, Montana, as a Flight Security Controller for the protection and launch readiness of twenty Minuteman ICBMs, intercontinental ballistic missiles.

In June 1980, James Penniston – 25 years old, married, and a father of two daughters – was then assigned to the 81st Tactical Fighter Wing and the 81st Security Patrol Squadron at RAF Bentwaters Air Base in Suffolk, England, which was then the largest tactical fighter wing in the Air Force. He was immediately promoted to Staff Sergeant. It was here where he then became a USAF Security Supervisor and Area Supervisor.

Jim Penniston:

I had been at the Bentwaters base since June 1980, providing on-the-ground Security Police duties and supervision of the security forces for which I was responsible. My wife and children arrived two months later in September that same year, and we were all living off-base in Ipswich town, a 14.6-mile drive from the Bentwaters base.

At that time, I held a top-secret US and NATO security clearance and was

responsible for the protection of war-making resources for that base. My duties were to ensure that the facilities and resources assigned to the base were protected from terrorist activity and any other type of encroachment that could jeopardize the safety or the operational status of equipment.

The political climate was responsible for the on-going need for U.S. presence in the U.K. and the European theater, so the normal operation of the twin bases was set up to protect the Western societal infrastructure from various terrorist groups at the time, such as the IRA (Irish Republican Army), the *Baader-Meinhof* terrorist gang, the *Red Brigade,* and *Black September,* to name just a few – some of which are now long forgotten. Even though some of these groups were based in other regions of the European theater, they were still considered a threat to U.S. forces. Generally speaking, our presence in the U.K. would best be described in terms of supporting the American interest in Europe, and it was aimed at 'peacetime nation' persuasion and also protection in the event of any outbreak of hostilities from foreign nations. Furthermore, the twin bases had a treaty mission, with us being part of the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO).

In addition to these watchful threats, we were also accessed by shipping ports in Ipswich and the nearby port of Lowestoft and Felixstowe – all within a 25-mile radius of the twin bases of Bentwaters and Woodbridge in Suffolk, England. With a high volume of general shipping and shipping-container traffic from all over Europe, its crews and passengers – many from the Soviet and Warsaw Pact countries – were also cast with a watchful eye. Our primary mission at the base was to keep the squadrons of A-10 'tank killers' ready to do anything that was covered in our contingency and operational plans.

All this was the normality of the day. We worked, we trained, and we were evaluated to do everything well, and just 'good enough' was never an option. We had to do our best, every day, every week, year in and year out, and we did just that. The 81st Tactical Fighter Wing was always receiving the 'Best' awards, and the Security Police Squadron was no different.

'Security' and 'Law Enforcement' are two different entities, and routinely they would work different schedules. For example, during Christmas, Security could be on a 'Christmas shift' schedule, and Law Enforcement could be on a regular schedule. The tour for us in Security over Christmas were three 'swing shifts,' then three 'midnight shifts,' and then a three-day break. I was the RAF Woodbridge Security Supervisor, and so during the late

afternoon/evening of Thursday, December 25 (Christmas Day), 1980, I was getting ready to work the last midnight, 12-hour shift of my six-day tour, which would end at 06:30 hrs on Boxing Day morning.

I left for work early that evening from my home in Ipswich at around 17:30 hrs, and at 18:00 hrs I reported for work as usual in the 'Guard Mount room' to prepare for *guard mount.* This was the formation of all the Security Police going on duty. Each would be checked to see if they were fit for duty, also receive an equipment check, a shift pass-on, and security information for the shift – an important necessity for safety. The Security Flight Chief and I wanted to make some adjustments to equipment and personnel at the Bentwaters base before leaving for the Woodbridge base. I wanted to get there a little early – at least an hour before everyone else – so I could look over the Security and Law Enforcement posting for Woodbridge for that shift.

I usually worked with my squad, which was made up of twelve men, including me. That night we had two new people working with us. One of these was the newly-assigned, Airman, First Class (A1C) Edward Cabansag (pronounced "*ker-van-sack"*). So altogether there would be fourteen of us going to the Woodbridge base. The plan was to have the new guys help with 'chow relief' and that way they would experience and see most of the security posting. They would then patrol with 'Security Six,' which was the RAF Woodbridge Security Response Team (SRT). Sergeant McCulley, one of the SRT, was assigned for the shift with Airman O'Hara as his member.

The other men reported for duty in the Bentwaters base at 19:00 hrs. With the 'guard mount' done, we then transported from Bentwaters over to Woodbridge, Security No. 6, in a Metro, which was an enclosed vehicle that could carry twenty persons – i.e., ten sitting in a row on the left and ten sitting in a row on the right, with both rows facing each other. We left through the rear gate at the end of the runway at Bentwaters for a short, four-mile trip.

There was a small, paved, public road which left the back gate at the Bentwaters base named *Butley Gate.* This was the utility gate for the on-duty security police. This was the gate through which we would move to and from the bases of RAF Woodbridge and Bentwaters – moving armed personnel and equipment like portable 'lightalls' (large lamps) and such – never using the primary road. The primary road was used by command staff and by Law Enforcement, which usually drove patrol cars marked 'Police.'

As the Base Security Supervisor of Woodbridge on that shift, I personally posted all security personnel assigned to the base. Overall, I was responsible for any security situation which could occur at the base. At my utilization were the Law Enforcement patrols, if needed, to augment the security forces at my discretion. The Woodbridge base had two restricted aircraft parking ramps. They were Priority 'C' aircraft, some of which would usually be parked on the tarmac aprons in front of the hardened aircraft shelters. Some aircraft would also be locked inside. Since it was Christmas, there was no active maintenance; most of the aircraft had been locked inside the Aircraft (A/C) shelters. Each Restricted Area had an 'Entry Controller' and an 'Alert Response Team' (ART) which was dedicated to the Restricted Area. We had two on the Woodbridge base: one was near the fire department, known as the 'Charlie Restricted Area,' and the other began adjacent to the *East Gate* at Woodbridge base, known colloquially as the 'back gate' and also the 'Delta Restricted Area.' Sgt. McCulley on Security Six had full access to both restricted areas – the 67th ARRS area and the controlled areas, which Law Enforcement patrolled on the 'flight line' side of the base.

Fig. 2: An aerial view of the location of the former RAF Woodbridge base, Suffolk, England, as seen today, showing the location of the *East Gate* (black dot) at the far eastern end of the runway. (Satellite image from 2000, *Google Earth Pro.* 2018).

I always drove the posting Metro van over to our post at RAF Woodbridge. This night was fairly quiet in terms of activity, and since it was a down night for aircraft maintenance, it was ‘small talk’ as usual with the guys in the back of the Metro. The focus of their discussions were mostly on small, mundane things. Obviously, they talked about the Christmas celebrations they had just enjoyed that day and what they were going to do on their up-and-coming

break. Others were complaining about their lack of sleep – saying that they wished they had grabbed more sleep that day. It was the usual ‘chit-chat’ that cops would indulge in to pass the time just before a work shift. The Metro was being used because of the English weather. It was usually raining and damp – plus, the Metro hid the contents of what was being transported back and forth between each of the twin bases. There was always an extreme danger of road hazards from the wildlife of the area, which would often cross the road abruptly, so I was busy being attentive and looking out for deer, which were more of a challenge to spot in England. (The deer in England were half the size of the white tails in the States. This was most likely due to inbreeding, as the U.K. mainland is an island).

As we entered the Woodbridge ‘back flight line’ gate – again, known as East Gate – I began by having Sgt. McCulley post the rest of the areas. I exited the vehicle, took out my flight bag, and met my off-going post. We did the usual things when one shift was being relieved by another. I then checked out the vehicle for fluid levels and possible unreported damage. I also checked and inventoried the A/C (aircraft) crash kit and other equipment in the back of the CJ-5 Jeep that I would also be using that night. We then exchanged pass-on information, which had transpired during the ‘off-going’ shift.

I radioed Central Security Control (CSC), which was located in ‘Building 679’ on the Bentwaters base, requesting that they notify all W/B post and patrols to initiate ‘chow relief’ after the completion of their checks of the restricted areas and the aircraft com-plot. (Aircraft or A/C com-plot is the reverification of matching tail numbers to aircraft hard stands and shelters). This was done to make sure that our control center (CSC), knew the location of each aircraft on the Woodbridge base. Law Enforcement and base gates were posted separately and were on a separate radio channel, so as not to interfere with Security operations.

I decided to make my required base perimeter check and restricted ‘drive through’ before I had midnight chow. I also did a base perimeter lighting check and noted these checks in my notebook to be relayed to CSC later that night. As I now drove around in the CJ-5 Jeep doing the perimeter checks, I would stop under the lights since the Jeep did not have interior lights for security. During these brief stops, I would write down notes in my notebook about several flight exercises that I would submit to Master Sergeant Preston, who was my reporting official. I was fairly new with him, so as a safety

protocol, he always wanted to see my flight training exercises before I would actually do them. I completed two exercises for the up-and-coming tour of duty that would occur after the break. I was sure he wanted this so that he could evaluate me on my execution of it.[xiii]

It was very quiet and serene as I drove around, continuing my security checks of the buildings on the base, which was usually bustling with activity from the maintenance squadrons. A few hours had gone by, and I heard Security Six tell CSC that they were done and going to 'chow relief' and needed a rendezvous with Security Eight (myself). Waiting at the designated point, I saw Security Six coming down the road. Sgt. McCulley drove his vehicle next to mine and rolled his window down as he stopped.

"Have you had chow yet?" He asked.

"Not yet," I replied.

"Neither have we," he said.

In the vehicle with Sgt. McCulley was his team member, A1C (Airman First Class) O'Hare, and the new recruit, A1C Ed Cabansag. McCulley then continued, "Will meet you there in 5 mike," which means five minutes.

"See you there," I responded.

Sometime between 23.40 and 23.50 hrs, I arrived at the chow hall on the Woodbridge base. I walked in and after saying hello to Diane, the cashier on duty, I then got my meal from the line and went over to the reserved Security Police table. The chow hall was largely empty, as was usual at this time, and so we always sat at the table which was reserved for the cops because it also had gun racks for our M-16s and was conveniently by the wall phone to CSC and the exit door. Sgt. McCulley, known as 'Mac' soon walked in, and he sat down with me. He and I often dined together while working at Woodbridge, and we engaged in our normal casual conversation while preparing to eat our meals.

Strange Lights seen over Rendlesham Forest from the 'East Gate' of Woodbridge Base

Outside, as the evening progressed, the air had become colder and a little foggy, but the sky was clear. As it was Christmas, aside from the normal duties being carried out, almost everything was virtually quiet and relaxed on the twin bases. As was the tradition every year, Christmas song requests were

being played over one of the radio nets, and apparently it was SSgt. Donnie Dillard, the comm/plotter at CSC (Central Security Control), who took the role of disk jockey that evening.[xiv]

SSgt. Jim Penniston's senior 'Law Enforcement' counterpart at the Woodbridge Base – the smaller of the twin bases – was Staff Sergeant Bud Steffens. SSgt. Jim Penniston being the Security Supervisor that night had rank and authority over both Security and Law Enforcement on the Woodbridge base. Steffens was new to the base, having only been there almost three months. He was in charge of the Law Enforcement personnel posted at Woodbridge . . . but little did he realize the significance of the event he and his subordinate partner on the shift that Christmas night were both about to experience.

Patrolling the Woodbridge base perimeter in his patrol car was twenty-year-old, A1C (Airman First Class) John Frederick Burroughs, who began his shift at 23:00 hrs.[xv] Burroughs had now been with the USAF since March 1979 and had spent the last seventeen months stationed at RAF Bentwaters, where he was assigned to the Law Enforcement Squadron in July 1979.[xvi] Having now been recently assigned to RAF Woodbridge, patrolling the perimeter of the base had become normal routine for the Law Enforcement policeman, and he knew the area well.

From the various recorded interviews that Burroughs has done over the years since the incident, it can be fairly-well established that the on-site supervisor, SSgt. Bud Steffens (Burroughs' senior partner and superior), had called Airman Burroughs on his radio while the latter was still guarding and patrolling the area to see if they could ride around together patrolling the perimeter of the base. Burroughs accepted, as Steffens was new on the base, and Burroughs wanted to get to know him better.[xvii] We are told that Steffens then pulled up in a patrol car beside the vehicle driven by Burroughs.[xviii]

Note: Unfortunately, it would appear that Bud Steffens has never gone on the record. To date, no official witness statement has been produced that was written and signed by SSgt. Steffens, and no interviews have been given by him, so we only have the official witness statement and subsequent interview testimonies given by John Burroughs to rely on – the relevant citations of which will be quoted in the endnotes section at the end of this and the following chapters.

Burroughs tells us that when SSgt. Steffens arrived, he exited his own vehicle and got into the patrol car driven by Steffens, and together they proceeded to check different areas of the Woodbridge base. After a short while, the two patrolmen then decided to head towards the East Gate to check and make sure that it was locked and secure, as there was no sentry guard stationed there.[xix]

Fig. 3: Location of the original East Gate at RAF Woodbridge in December 1980, from which a dark line across the road still exists. The foundation remains of the East Gate hut or sentry post can also be seen. The location of the high security gate that exists today is exactly 300 feet from the original gate due-east along the 'East Gate Road.'
(Satellite image from 2007, *Google Earth Pro.* 2018).

On the way, Burroughs says that both were talking about different things and adds that he was tired and was half-listening to Steffens[xx] talking about his philosophies[xxi] when suddenly Steffens noticed strange, red and blue lights outside the Woodbridge base and just above the tops of the tall pine trees of Rendlesham Forest – due-east from their location close to the East Gate.[xxii]

To get Burroughs to look at what he was observing, Steffens pointed to the lights in the distance, which were now slowly descending into the forest, and said, "What is that? Have you seen that before?"[xxiii]

The area they were looking towards was covered by tall Corsican pines that were between five and ten feet apart and could reach as tall as 80-feet. Burroughs says he looked to where Steffens was pointing and saw what he later described as "different colored lightings" – green, red, blue and white lights, and that by the time he looked, the lights had descended into the tree-line.[xxiv] Both men then observed these lights, which were now deep inside the tree-line of the woods and had caused the surrounding forest to light up.

"Woah!" exclaimed Steffens and asked, "Is that normal?"[xxv]

"No, that's not normal," Burroughs said.[xxvi]

Being new to the twin bases in Suffolk, England, and having only recently been assigned to Woodbridge within the last two or three months, SSgt. Steffens, who saw Burroughs' puzzled facial response, then asked Burroughs again if he had ever seen lights like that anywhere off the base. Burroughs, who was clearly mesmerized by what he was seeing, said, "No, I had never seen anything like that before."[xxvii]

Both men continued to watch what Burroughs would describe in his handwritten, witness statement three days later, as *'both a red and blue light, with the red light, which was blinking on and off above the blue light.'*[xxviii] In subsequent interviews, beginning a decade after the incident, Burroughs more candidly described what he saw as a "randomly cycling" mass of coloured lights resembling "a Christmas display."[xxix]

Noting how unusual this light phenomenon was, the Law Enforcement supervisor and his patrolman then decided to drive into Rendlesham Forest to take a closer look.[xxx] No attempt was made at this time by the patrolmen to call the Law Enforcement desk and to ask for permission to leave the base. Why they decided not to say anything about going off base may be related to the fact that both of them were armed (according to Burroughs)[xxxi] and had no one with whom to leave their weapons. Burroughs tells us that SSgt. Steffens instructed him to open the combination lock on the East Gate.[xxxii] From there,

the two men then continued in the car due east down East-Gate Road to where it ends at a T-junction facing Rendlesham Forest.

> **Note:** This T-junction point is exactly 700 yards (640 meters) along the 'East Gate Road' from the East Gate. The road going across at the T-junction, is the 'Forest Service Road.' At this T-Junction one would turn left (north) to go to the Bentwaters base, or right (south) to go to the 'Forest Service Headquarters,' which is about 700 yards down this road. However, if one turned right (south), then after a short distance of approximately 57 yards (52 meters), one would come to a left turn which leads into the 'logging road' – a dirt track which continues just over 285 yards (260 meters) due east like the East Gate Road, leading right up to a field of relatively younger, short pine trees that adjoined the east tree line or edge of the forest at that time.

We are told by Burroughs that it was at this T-junction, and at the end of 'East Gate Road,' that Steffens then turned the car around in the opposite direction so that it faced back towards the East Gate of Woodbridge and there he parked the vehicle.[xxxiii] If true, then this seems to have been a strategic move by the already nervous Steffens, who most-likely wanted to get out of there fast if something untoward happened.

Burroughs tells us that he then exited the vehicle, noticing static electricity in the air.[xxxiv]

It is from here and just off the road they were on that Burroughs says that both he and Steffens observed a large, glowing, white light some way inside the woods.[xxxv]

Fig. 4: The T-junction at the eastern end of *East Gate Road* (exactly 700 yards (640 meters) from the East Gate), where SSgt. Steffens stopped the patrol car and turned it around. It is not exactly certain where or how far away the source of the lights were in the forest at this time, because according to John Burroughs, it was seen to be moving, and at one point the white light seemed to be moving closer to where Steffens and Burroughs were. At this stage, all we know is that the source of the light phenomena was within the tree-line of Rendlesham Forest, eastward from the East Gate and the two patrolmen. *Tangham Woods* is part of Rendlesham Forest, and the public camping site is the light area south-east of the Forestry Commissioner's office. (Satellite image of the area as it was in 2000 according to *Google Earth Pro.* 2018).

At this point, Burroughs again mentions seeing the red and blue lights[xxxvi] he described in his official witness statement three days after the incident.

However, it appears that the two patrolmen were now observing TWO sources of light some distance from each other – a white light close to the edge of the road (possibly close to the far, east end of the logging road) and also distinct blue and red lights deeper inside the woods.[xxxvii] Rather than entertain the thought that it might be some kind of festive prank, instead a depressing, eerie feeling came over Burroughs that he couldn't shake; *he felt a sense of danger . . . that something wasn't right.*[xxxviii] Burroughs then observed the white light slowly moving towards them.[xxxix]

The patrolmen discussed what to do next and decided to report it. SSgt. Steffens, being the officer in command, decided that instead of broadcasting this kind of information over their radios, because scanners were used by some members of the public to tap into conversations, that the wise thing to do would be to drive back to the security gate to 'call it in' to the Law Enforcement duty flight desk on the direct and secure landline located there.[xl] Both men then drove back to the East Gate. Burroughs continued to look back over his shoulder at the lights, overwhelmed still with the feeling that something wasn't right. He says that at this point he still "saw the bright white light moving down the road towards them."[xli]

Return to East Gate

After a few minutes, Steffens and Burroughs arrived back at the East Gate, where Burroughs quickly exited the patrol car and rushed straight to the phone in the nearby sentry post. It was here that he first reported the weird lights in the forest to a Sgt. 'Crash' McCabe, who took the call at the Law Enforcement duty flight desk. It has been confirmed that McCabe noted the time as being around midnight[xlii] when he took the call from Burroughs.[xliii]

In the past, Burroughs had played a few practical jokes on McCabe, and so when Burroughs reported the weird lights in the woods, it was no wonder that at first McCabe said he didn't believe him. After all, it was Christmas, when everyone on the twin bases was more relaxed than they would normally be, and it would have been typical behavior for Burroughs to pull a prank at this time to relieve the boredom, but as a result, as in the story of the boy who cried wolf, he wasn't being taken seriously.[xliv]

Apparently, Sgt. McCabe then checked with the radar stations in the area – i.e., RAF Bawdsey (Eastern Radar) and Heathrow Tower – to see if

anything in the air had been tracked over Rendlesham Forest close to RAF Woodbridge and was told that nothing had shown up and nothing was flying in the area. McCabe then relayed this information back to Burroughs, who still insisted that something had landed out in the forest, and they could still see it. After receiving the negative responses from the radar personnel, it was even more difficult for Sgt. McCabe to trust Burroughs, and so needing confirmation of what Burroughs was telling him, McCabe, then asked to speak to SSgt. Steffens, who confirmed most of what Burroughs had just said[xlv] – adding that the situation with the lights, which were still visible, were strange and highly suspicious – especially as they were now on the edge of the forest and on the perimeter of the base, possibly getting closer.

Although, initially, Burroughs did at least entertain the idea that the weird lights he had just seen in the woods may indeed have been a prank *played on him* – even possibly concocted by his comrades as 'payback,'[xlvi] he had to put all thoughts about that aside, especially after feeling the effects of the static electricity in the air and the eerie, ominous feelings he had – in his own words, a "sense of danger,"[xlvii] which testifies to the 'high strangeness' and fear of what he and SSgt. Steffens had been observing and feeling.

Because of the protocols that were in place, which would have still been strictly adhered to on the base during Christmas, it can be fairly-well determined that while on the phone, Steffens wisely acceded to have the call transferred to CSC – the 'Center for Security Control' at Bentwaters. And, after listening to what SSgt. Steffens told him, Sgt. McCabe then talked to Security Controller SSgt. Dave Coffey at CSC, who alerted the CSC Flight Shift Commander, Lt. Fred 'Skip' Buran. Buran then listened to what had been relayed to Sgt. McCabe, and then to SSgt. Coffey by SSgt. Steffens – all of which was also being monitored by Master Sergeant. J. D. Chandler.[xlviii]

Burroughs is on record saying that from the time the strange lights were first seen in the forest, to the time when he and SSgt. Steffens called the sighting in at the East Gate sentry post, it was no longer than five to ten minutes.[xlix]

Back at the Chow Hall, Woodbridge Base

Jim Penniston:

While Mac and I were about to drink what would have been our first cup of coffee, Mac said, “Did you copy that radio transmission earlier Staff Sergeant Penniston?”

“No,” I said, “I must have missed it.”

Mac continued, “It was Dillard at CSC, and they want you to ten-twelve them via a landline immediately.”[l]

I then reached around and picked up the phone to call CSC. SSgt. Dave Coffey answered.

“Hey Jim, you need to head to the East Gate and meet up with Police 2 and 4” (the call names of two Law Enforcement personnel).[li]

Noting the urgency in his voice, I asked Coffey why and what was going on. “They have a semi-quasi emergency out there and I want you to go investigate,” Coffey said.[lii]

“A what?”

I asked what Coffey meant by that, but he refused to explain or elaborate on it any further, telling me that he would not talk about it on the phone and added that Lieutenant Buran, who was the security flight officer and night-shift commander, would rather have me just go out there and investigate it.

This was not standard procedure, I thought.[liii] Being a little annoyed that I wasn’t being briefed properly on what it was, to gauge the seriousness of the situation and perhaps get Coffey to release a little more information, I then asked if it could wait, as we were just having our meal.

“No, you’ve got to get out there immediately!” SSgt. Coffey urged. He again reiterated that I was to team up with Police 2 and Police 4, who would brief me there on arrival – quickly adding, “You need to go code two (blue lights only and no siren), and they will brief you when you arrive. Also, use the East Gate phone to update us, and try to stay off the open airwaves.”

“Ok,” I sighed, “I’m on my way.”

I then briefed Mac as to what I had been told, and he said he was going to head over to Delta R/A first, and then he would then meet me at the East Gate.

“That sounds good to me,” I said.

I looked at my watch. I noted that it was two minutes past midnight[liv] – now the morning of Friday, December 26 . . . Boxing Day. Leaving what was left of our meal, we quickly grabbed our weapons, and we were out of there.

From that point on, ‘Normal’ was over, *as the rest of the shift was anything but normal*….

Chapter Two

East Gate

Rendezvous at East Gate, 12:06 a.m., December 26, 1980

Jim Penniston:

Having taken roughly four minutes to drive the 2.5 miles from the chow hall, it was now six minutes after midnight[lv] when I drove up to the East Gate.[lvi] I saw Staff Sergeant Bud Steffens and A1C John Burroughs. They were standing next to their vehicle some twenty feet outside the gate.[lvii]

I observed straight away that Burroughs' demeanor was somewhat anxious and overly-excited. As I exited the Jeep, SSgt. Steffens walked over to greet me, and I immediately asked him what was going on[lviii] and what was up with Airman Burroughs. At this point I didn't know why I had been deployed to the East Gate, and so for all I knew, the problem could have had something to do with Burroughs.[lix] Steffens waved my concerns about Airman Burroughs aside and with a nervous, even worried expression, he said, "This is unbelievable . . ."

With his left arm fully-extended, Steffens then pointed down the perimeter road (East Gate Road) that led out of the base from where we were. I stood right next to Steffens, and I looked in earnest to where he was pointing. He was pointing slightly south-east and to the right of the straight perimeter road towards a section of Rendlesham Forest just before Capel Green. Some way off in the distance,[lx] I could see that part of the canopy of the forest had a distinct 'dome' of white-yellowish light over it, which extended some way out on both sides of what at first looked like a multiple array of colors emanating from the center of the forest floor. Although what I was seeing was unnatural and strange overall, it looked like a fire . . . well, to my mind, *that's what it had to be!* I saw yellow, orange, red, and bluish types of glowing light, which was standard with aircraft crashes – the colors you get

with Titanium and JP4 (jet fuel) burning.

After watching these lights for no longer than a minute, I was able to distinguish a red light blinking on and off at five to ten second intervals directly in the center of the lighted area and at ground level. There was also a blue light beneath the red light, which was also blinking, but for the most part this blue light was steady. The random blinking effect of the blue light could have been due to the branches of trees swaying in front of the light and momentarily obscuring it. Still, I reasoned that the surrounding white-yellowish glow with the mechanical blinking red and blue lights could be an aircraft on fire. Up until that time, I had been involved with perhaps thirty to forty aircraft crashes. So, based on experience, my impression was that, because of the close vicinity of the runway, an aircraft – maybe an A-10 – had problems and had come down in the forest, even though it was Christmas, and there were no scheduled flights. However, there was no apparent smoke and no smell of smoke or anything burning in the air . . . just this huge 'dome' of glowing white-yellowish light over the forest, which didn't look natural.[lxi] My thoughts were that if it were an aircraft crash then we could go out there and render assistance and set up security for it.

I then asked SSgt. Steffens if he had heard an explosion.

"No!" interrupted Burroughs.

Steffens then answered calmly, saying, "No Jim, there was no explosion and no crash. It landed."

Surprised by this, I repeated his last word out loud . . . *"Landed?"*

I thought that impossible due to the density of the forest. *How could an aircraft land successfully and intact in a densely-wooded area?*

The demeanor of the Law Enforcement Sergeant, Bud Steffens, although also somewhat measured and calm, was one of worry and concern. Again, the Law Enforcement Airman (Burroughs) was the opposite: he was excitable and agitated and at times I found it far too cumbersome to engage with him due to his interruptions of Steffens and myself while we were talking. This only served to irritate me. Concerned by an uneasy feeling of anxiety in him, I told Burroughs to be quiet and to calm down.

As SSgt. Steffens and I continued to exchange thoughts on what we were observing, I took him back to his first statement to me that it had landed and had not crashed. My thoughts were still focused on how improbable that was, and I asked Steffens, "Was it a chopper?" – wondering if it was a helicopter.

Interrupting again, but this time a little calmer, Burroughs said slowly, “Sergeant Penniston, there was no crash . . . it landed . . . there was no explosion.” The airman then continued staring at me.

“What are you trying to say?” I asked him.

“I think a UFO just landed over there in the forest,” Burroughs replied.

I stood staring at Burroughs for a few seconds with a deliberate bewildered look on my face to make sure he registered it, as I was already irritated with him. I then looked at SSgt. Steffens to see his response and to see if I could get anything rational from him, especially after what Burroughs had just uttered. All Steffens did was acknowledge what Burroughs had just said by nodding…. It didn’t make sense.

Making absolutely sure, I hesitantly asked Steffens again . . . “Could it be a chopper?”

“No, it’s not a chopper Jim.” Noticing the look on my face, Steffens then added, “I’m not crazy. If you must, think I’m nuts, but we see it land over there.”[lxii]

Naturally, what Steffens said was both highly unlikely and suspect to me, and after some consideration, I decided to call MSgt. J. D. Chandler at Central Security Control, as he was the overall flight chief for both bases. Whatever the case, this was no longer a ‘Law Enforcement’ situation; it was now a ‘Security’ situation. Steffens kept his eyes on me to see what I was going to do next. I glanced over at Burroughs, who was staring at the forest with his mouth open, as if awestruck. As soon as I told the men that I needed to call this in, Burroughs turned to me and touched his radio as if he were going to grab it and use it. With disbelief and panic on my face, I said, “Don’t! You’re not calling that in over the radio. We don’t know what it is yet. It could be classified!”[lxiii]

I then told both Steffens and Burroughs to stand by and to keep an eye on the forest for any changes. Steffens said they would. I then walked over to the East Gate shack, which was some fifteen feet away. Immediately, I picked up the direct landline to the Law Enforcement desk. The desk sergeant, ‘Crash’ McCabe, picked up the line. I told him to patch me through to SSgt. Dillard at CSC (Center for Security Control). I looked at my watch. It was now 12:15 a.m.

SSgt. Dave Coffey picked up the line right away. I said, “Coffey, this is Penniston. I need to talk to Master Sergeant Chandler. It seems we’ve got a problem here.”

I then heard MSgt. Chandler say, “We are all on the line” – meaning himself, SSgt. Coffey (senior controller), SSgt. Donnie Dillard (comm/plotter), and Lt. ‘Skip’ Buran (security flight officer and night-shift commander).

I continued to tell MSgt. Chandler that I suspected a possible downed aircraft adjacent to the East Gate in Rendlesham Forest. All the while I was saying this, my mind was troubled and in conflict with what Steffens and Burroughs had just told me. I immediately discounted what Burroughs had said . . . *UFO indeed!* However, although I decided to discount Steffens’ statement as at best ‘highly-unlikely,’ as no airplane or helicopter could land intact in a densely-wooded area, I still struggled with giving the personnel at the control center the normal/rational information they would have expected to receive. I first gave a description of the lights I saw, which were red, blue, and orange inside a surrounding yellowish/white light. I then added that although I had never seen lights of this colour or nature in the area before, I suspected it could be a downed helicopter. From what I could determine, I was able to give them a map plot of the estimated location. I then asked MSgt. Chandler for permission to investigate.

Chandler told me to stand by as he and Lt. Buran discussed this. Then he returned and said, “Stand by. Staff Sergeant Dillard is contacting the control tower to see if there have been any sorties.”[lxiv] Everything was being done instantaneously while I was on the line – meaning the plotting of the area, as well as obtaining radar confirmation with the base and eastern radar. Chandler came back on and told me that he had checked to see if any military aircraft had been lost, but found that all were accounted for – adding that there were no official reports of anything flying in the area. Then to my surprise, SSgt. Coffey jumped in on the conversation to say that Bentwaters Control Tower had just been in contact with Heathrow Airport’s Control Tower in London, as well as RAF Bawdsey at Eastern Radar – some seven miles from where we were on the coast near Felixstowe, Suffolk. Apparently, RAF Bawdsey confirmed they had triangulated the radar sighting and that radar had been tracking an unidentified ‘bogey’ (unidentified aircraft) about three miles out from Bentwaters but had lost contact with it *some fifteen minutes or so prior* when it suddenly disappeared, having dropped from ‘radar imaging’ somewhere near the Woodbridge base.[lxv] *Damn! What the hell could that be out there?* I thought.

I then rationalized that although radar had been tracking an ‘unidentified

bogey,' it didn't rule out the possibility of it still being a downed civilian plane or helicopter which wasn't one of ours, and obviously, it didn't rule out the possibility that this could be a security threat, either.

'First Responder' Investigation

Less than a minute went by, and on the strength of the radar report CSC had been given, Lt. Buran received permission through the Wing Command Post, and ultimately from the Base Commander, (Colonel Theodore 'Ted' Conrad), to do a 'first response off-base.' I was then given clearance to investigate what officially might be a downed aircraft off the base that had crashed into the Rendlesham Forest woods.

It was now 12:20 a.m. I took out my notebook and quickly logged the time and the following:

"12:20 Response
notes
A/C crash
Adjacent East Gate"

Fig. 5: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.
The date at the top is not "27," as most people have misread it, but "29," and has nothing to do with the date of the incident[lxvi]
(Screen shot from the 2005, *Sci-Fi Channel* TV Documentary *UFO Invasion at Rendlesham*).

If this was indeed a crashed A/C (aircraft), I knew I would have to set up an *Entry Control Point* (ECP) somewhere near the forest to be the centralized location area for other first responders (Fire Department, Medical, and further Security Forces), along with the aircraft crash kit. All this was standard, first responder, security protocol for this type of emergency.

Sensing there might be a problem with this because it was in a densely-wooded area and on British territory, I requested back-up assistance. MSgt. Chandler said he was on his way,[lxvii] and he instructed me to select two men –

including one of the two Law Enforcement men to go with me. I was thinking that if this were a crashed airplane or helicopter, then I knew that once there at the suspected crash site, I would have to tag any classified material, as well as bodies and body parts, which I did not relish at all.

I turned to SSgt. Bud Steffens first and instructed him that he should go with me, and then turning to Burroughs, I told him he should stay at the sentry post. It was clear that Steffens was very worried and wanted no part of the response. (I noted that as soon as he knew I was told by MSgt. Chandler to pick two men – one being Law Enforcement – Steffens began shaking his head from side-to-side while mumbling, "No, no . . . no-way," under his breath). In any case, Steffens just flatly refused, quickly adding that he would remain behind and on guard duty at the East Gate and wait for MSgt. Chandler to arrive.[lxviii] Time was of the essence, and I had no time to debate and to mess around. I was more concerned with doing my job correctly and 'to the book,' and no matter how unpleasant it might turn out to be, my job was to identify the facts of what was out there, report the facts, and let someone else make the assessment.

To take the place of his superior Steffens, Airman Burroughs then expressed his eagerness to go with me.[lxix] Although he was not my first choice by any means, I then decided to take Law Enforcement Airman Burroughs and the new guy, Airman Ed Cabansag, who had now just arrived at the East Gate with Sgt. McCulley and Airman O'Hare. There was no need for weapons for crash recovery, and so being careful not to violate the British Status Forces Agreement,[lxx] we were instructed to leave our weapons (M16's and .38 revolvers) at the base, as we would be venturing outside U.S. jurisdiction. We left the weapons with Sgt. McCulley and SSgt. Steffens.[lxxi]

I then told Sgt. McCulley to stand-by at the East Gate with Steffens until MSgt. Chandler arrived, who was already en route, or so I had been told.[lxxii]

Burroughs, Cabansag, and I then got into the CJ-5 Jeep. Burroughs sat in the passenger seat, Cabansag was in the back with the crash kit equipment, and I was driving.[lxxiii] We then deployed from the East Gate to the suspected crash site. All of the above – from the time I arrived at the East Gate, to the time we began our journey to the supposed crash site – *took no longer than twenty minutes.*[lxxiv]

As we headed (700 yards) due east along the East Gate Road towards the area of concern, I was trying to rationalize what I was seeing. It appeared

there was still a fire deep inside the forest, but I couldn't shake off the fact that there was something about the surrounding glow of the fire that looked odd, strange, and unfamiliar to me.[lxxv] As we tried to keep our eyes locked on the light in the woods, I briefed Burroughs and Cabansag on what I had heard from CSC, telling them that the only reason why we had been allowed off base to investigate this was because CSC had told me that eastern radar had sighted and tracked an 'unknown' over Woodbridge and had lost it, suspecting it had gone down into the woods, and so the lights we were seeing could be a fire due to it having crashed.[lxxvi]

Coming to a T-junction, we turned right, and then after a short distance (57 yards) we turned left onto a rough dirt track (285 yards) known as the 'logging road' that foresters used to gain access to the pine trees, and which took us into the forest. With the road being frozen, the Jeep was already difficult to drive, but with all the potholes and ditches, the ride soon became very rocky. Because we would have to venture into the woods, I again radioed CSC for permission to continue the investigation on British territory and was again told that we were sent out there to investigate a possible aircraft crash, most likely associated with the base. It was then that the radio signal began to break up. The radios we were using were the standard Motorola type, and I thought it could be the dampening effect common with atmospheric conditions. Having now gone past the end of the logging road and having entered an open field, we soon reached a point where we could go no further, as there were berms and ditches in front of us – some of them quite deep where the Jeep could easily tip, roll, or get stuck.[lxxvii] Now that we were out in the field, we could see that the target was some distance inside the forest to the right of us and towards the south-east.[lxxviii] We then decided to exit the vehicle. It was inevitable that at some point the only way we were going to reach the source of these lights was by walking through the woods.

I estimated that I had parked the Jeep some 50 yards (45 meters) into the virtually open field that lay in front of us.

Fig. 6: The route the first responders took in the CJ-5 Jeep from the East Gate to some 50 yards into the field past the east end of the logging road (ECP) where they parked. For the record, this is a distance of approx. 0.59 miles map distance as the crow flies and a driving distance of 1 kilometer or 1,093 yards) from the East Gate at RAF Woodbridge.
(Satellite image, *Google Earth Pro*).

I thought that entry from the east end of the logging road (approx. 0.59 miles 'map length' distance from the East Gate), where the Jeep was parked in this open field, surrounded by the denser wooded areas to the north, east, and south that enclosed it, would be an ideal place for the ECP (Entry Control

Point) to accommodate the vehicles of the responding emergency forces.

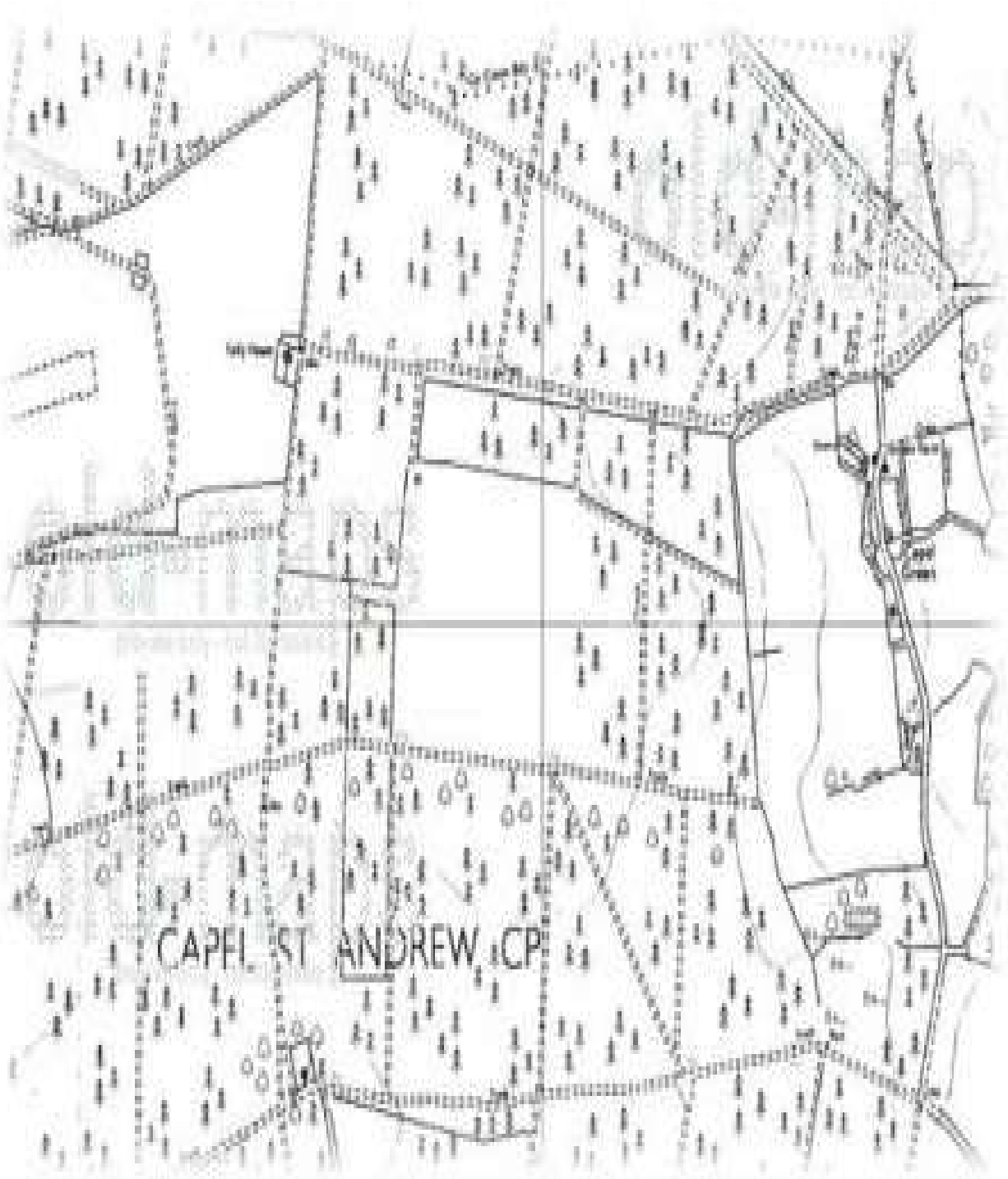


Fig. 7: Ordnance Survey map of the same area (late 1970s), almost contemporary with 1980. Note the open space in the center (no trees), depicting what was then a fairly open field containing only short, young trees at that time. Source: *Old Maps*.

The IBR (Intra-Base Motorola Radio), which was attached to my belt, crackled, which signaled that I was back in communication with CSC again. Unhooking the radio to use it, I told them that although it seemed to be a large fire, from what we could see, it could only be a small aircraft. I was again told that because of the radar reports that something was flying over the area, but had been lost, and that I should continue my investigation. Burroughs then interrupted while I was talking, "There's no fucking way that's an aircraft," he said indignantly. "It landed out there . . . hovered and landed."[lxxix] Choosing to ignore the airman, whom I thought had perhaps not had enough sleep and was not thinking straight,[lxxx] I searched the back of the Jeep and grabbed the base 'crash map.' Looking up the location on the map's grid coordinates, I advised CSC to plot the ECP on their disaster preparedness map at coordinates 'Delta 1 / Sierra 5.'[lxxxi]

Now that we had to continue on foot, I told Burroughs to grab the camera and flashlights that were part of the crash kit from inside the vehicle, but he didn't seem to hear me, as he continued to prattle on about the lights in the woods and that it was no aircraft. I then decided to get them myself.[lxxxii] *The guy is no help at all,* I thought. Having picked up the camera, there were three flashlights, and after checking them, it was apparent that only two of them would work. I gave one to Burroughs, and he put his hand out again like, *"I'll take both of them."*[lxxxiii] Burroughs clearly wasn't paying attention. After staring at him for a few seconds so he could gauge my incredulity at what he just did, I then put the camera in my jacket, and the three of us began our walk forward.

We observed the same phenomenon of lights in the forest to the south-east.[lxxxiv] And so with our flashlights, we continued on to enter the wide-open field in a south-easterly direction. From where we had parked the Jeep, it was a distance of some 330 yards (300 meters) from the south-east tree line of the forest to where we were now heading. Burroughs was talking incessantly about every movement the lights appeared to be making, as if whatever it happened to be was gliding between the trees. I was certain that this could have been an optical illusion, especially as a result of our own movement, since we weren't allowing whatever it was to leave our sight, as we continued walking towards it.[lxxxv]

We had now gone some 270 yards (250 meters) from the Jeep, and we

were some 50 yards from the tree line when I again started to have strong interference and signal failure problems with my radio contact with CSC.[lxxxvi] I had already been instructed by Central Security Control that when I could, I would need to use one of the airmen as a 'radio relay' to the East Gate and to MSgt. Chandler and then to CSC. Unfortunately, Cabansag was on his first night of duty in the Air Force, and so when the radios began to break up and became so bad that I found it difficult to send or recover full transmissions, I knew he would be the person I would have to pick. And in fact, before I had even said anything, Cabansag had said he would act as relay. The radio crackled, and we had a signal again. I quickly told CSC that Burroughs and I were going to continue and informed them I was sending Cabansag back to the Jeep to remain there as a radio relay. I also added that if the radios continue to play up, I will also have to post Airman Burroughs as a comms link.[lxxxvii]

I then gave Cabansag detailed instructions to remain behind with the only other radio we had, while Burroughs and I continued onward towards the tree line of the forest and into the woods.[lxxxviii] I told Cabansag that it would be best if he went back to where the Jeep was parked, some distance from the end of the logging road, as the Jeep marked the 'Entry Control Point.' Cabansag nodded. I told him that when my signal began to weaken again, he should notify me, and I would then stage Airman Burroughs somewhere between us to complete the radio link relay. I had the only other operational radio, so if I had to use Burroughs, my distance would be limited to the 'sound of voice' distance from me to Burroughs, and then from him to Cabansag by the Jeep. Cabansag, then, would hopefully be in contact via MSgt. Chandler at the East Gate, who would himself be in direct contact with CSC. After affirming that he understood, the airman then began walking back to the Jeep.

After I had instructed Cabansag to return back to the Jeep, I decided to log down several reminder notes in my notebook – i.e., my recent decisions and what was occurring. Burroughs was still gazing at the lighted area to the south-east of us. Using my flashlight, I jotted down what I had just done and the time, which was now 12:51 a.m.[lxxxix]

"Cabansag
Posted
Logging Road
Possible
ECP
Having CSC

Plot
12:51”

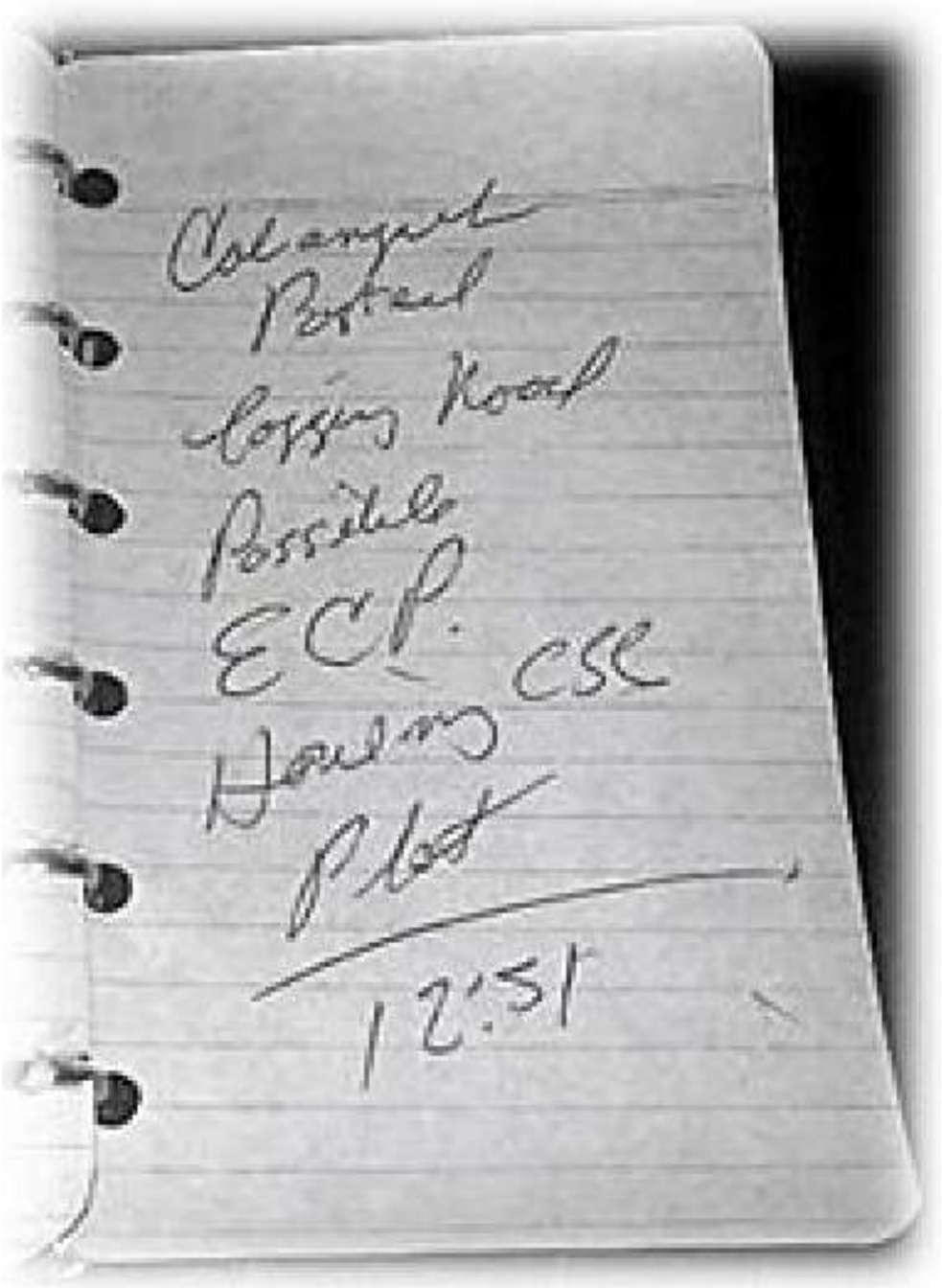


Fig. 8: The relevant page from Jim Penniston’s notebook.

I then put my notebook away, and Burroughs and I continued onwards. After a few steps, I heard the weakening of Cabansag’s radio transmission – even though Cabansag was still silhouetted and visible, as I looked beyond him

back towards the base and its perimeter lighting.

What follows is an account of the radio transmissions (through SSgt. Coffey, the Security Controller) that were initiated from CSC during the rest of the response from my team. I was 'Security Eight,' but they couldn't pick up my transmissions. Of course, the annoying sound of heavy static crackled between each transmission:

> *"Security Control to Security Eight…."* Static.
> *"Security Control to Security Eight…."* Static.
> *"Security Control Security Eight, SSgt Penniston…."* Static.
> *"Security Control to Security Six."* (Sgt. McCulley)
> *"Six by, go ahead control."*
> *"Control to six, can you ascertain the status of Security Eight?"*
> *"Ah, that's negative control. Ah, from my position I am unable to verify. Recommend contacting."*
> *"Security One, it appears he has arrived at the East Gate."*
> *"Copy Security Six, Tango Yankee on last."*
> *"Security Control to Security One."* (MSgt. Chandler)
> *"One by, on scene adjacent to East Gate."*
> *"Security Control to Security One…."*
> *"Security Control to Security One…."*
> *"Stand-by Control, I am being briefed by Police unit…."*
> *"Security Control to Security Eight, status please…."*
> *"Security one to Security Control."*
> *"Control by, Go ahead one."*
> *"Be advised, security status of Penniston and Burroughs is unknown…."*

It was obvious that MSgt. Chandler ('Security One') had arrived at the East Gate at this point, and soon after, I had posted Airman Cabansag as a relay.[xc]

Chapter Three

Discovery

> *"The trauma as a result of the Rendlesham incident I was witness to was more than enough to deal with. For me that incident was last night. For most everyone else, the Rendlesham Incident has been a hobby or source of entertainment."*
>
> – Jim Penniston

With our eyes still locked on the lighted area in the woods located some distance away and slightly south-east from where we were, Airman Burroughs and I left the spot where I had ordered Cabansag to go back to the Jeep, and we began to complete our crossing of the open field, using our flashlights for guidance. We kept to the same south-easterly direction for another 55 yards (50 meters) before we came to a narrow dirt path, and after crossing this, we began entering the south edge of the forest. We both entered the tree line in a staggered, horizontal line with me first, then Burroughs to my right, who was some fifteen to twenty feet away.[xci] To our immediate rear and far to my right (north-west) of us was Airman Cabansag, who was now no longer visible due to the darkness behind us.

As we advanced further inside the tree line keeping to the same south-east course, Burroughs and I then became aware of the air coming alive with

some kind of thick energy – both of us experiencing a distinct crackling and tingling sensation on and around us. We later commented on the fact that we felt the hair stand up on our heads, necks, and bodies, as if we were entering a very strong electrostatic field. We also felt the effects on our clothing. It was almost the same sensation one experiences before a thunderstorm when a strong electrostatic discharge is in the air. But this was far more intense than anything natural like that, and it was a cold winter night. Also, each movement and step we took was becoming more labored. It was like walking through water, chest deep.

Having walked another 165 yards (150 meters) inside the woods, we turned slightly left so that the light was directly to the east of us. We were now approximately 440 yards (approx. 400 meters) from the lighted area. As we struggled to move forward towards the light, everything became more disorienting, as if what we were experiencing was some kind of 'time distortion' effect.[xcii] These physical effects had been with us since the time we had exited the Jeep and entered the open field. I thought it might be adrenalin-related, but now the effects were more pronounced; it was definitely something external and phenomenal. This also explained the static problems with our radios, which certainly wasn't due to adrenalin. Being obviously related, these effects were telling us that we were now close to the source of the lights in the woods, and this puzzled me because these were not the effects of a normal aircraft crash.

As we now moved eastwards, the light was shining so brightly through the trees that, whenever I moved slightly, sharp rays of light would reflect more intensely off the vertical edges of the numerous tree trunks between us and the source of the light, and I had to squint my eyes. However, there were brief occasions when the light dimmed, and I could see things more clearly. I could see that inside the effervescent white/yellowish blur lighting up the forest, were definite, distinct colors . . . red, orange and blue mostly, and these lights would be steady for a few seconds and would then move and blink. At other times, the lights would appear to merge together, as one, lighting up the whole forest. I found it very strange that there was absolutely no sound – although this silence did not last.

All of a sudden, we were alarmed by someone or something screaming. I later discovered this was the sound a Muntjac deer would make if distressed.[xciii] Soon after this, we heard more disturbing noises and also movement from the animals and creatures in the forest, all sounding very upset and frightened

by something. I turned to talk to Burroughs about this unexpected activity, but he was back way behind me in the darkness at this point and out of view. Then, suddenly, I heard birds taking off in the air from the trees some distance in front of us, making a deafening noise with the flap of their wings. The forest wildlife had come alive, and the creatures around me seemed to be in a frenzy. This activity had obviously begun in the region of the light ahead of us and was the result of some sudden disturbance there.

I felt the ground tremoring slightly under my feet, and the sounds of surrounding trees, foliage and shrubbery being disturbed in front of us and was then startled to see deer and other creatures running by me going in the opposite direction.[xciv] It is obvious that Burroughs must have experienced this too. That frightened the hell out of me at first because it was so sudden, and I didn't know what was happening. We resumed our approach while the animals and creatures were still running around us and away from whatever it was we were walking towards. After some minutes, the silence returned, and that settled my nerves somewhat.

Fig. 9: The route that SSgt. Jim Penniston and Airman Burroughs had taken by foot after exiting the Jeep (ECP), which was parked some 50 yards (45 meters) into the field. After Airman Cabansag was posted by SSgt. Penniston to go back and remain with the Jeep, Jim Penniston maintains that he and Burroughs crossed the open field in a south-easterly direction, entering the south edge of the forest. After walking some 490 yards (approx. 450 meters) in this direction, they then turned left and headed eastwards some 440 yards (approx. 400 meters) towards the source of the light(s), which was found to be situated in a clearing just 150 feet from the farmer's field to the east. The journey by foot was approx. 930 yards, (850 meters or 0.53 of a mile) in total, and 585 yards (536 meters) of this journey was covered inside the dense woods of the forest. The coordinates Jim Penniston has now determined for the landing site, where he says he and Burroughs engaged the black triangular craft, are: 52º5'10.78"N 1º27'0.03"E in degrees, arc minutes and seconds, and 52.0863278°, 1.4500083° in decimal degrees.
(Satellite image from 2000. *Google Earth Pro,* 2018. Overlay artwork by Gary Osborn.)

160 feet (50 meters) away

We were now a good distance inside the forest, and some hundred and sixty feet (53 yards or 50 meters) away from our target. I stopped for a while to take stock of the situation. I looked at my watch. It was now 1:00 a.m. We were both in an advantaged position now to see the target more clearly. Again, we observed what seemed to be a bright, white/yellowish dome of light clearly emanating from something on the forest floor, but now we could see a strong red light pulsating just above whatever it was, and a bluish-white light shining beneath. I was certain that what we were looking at was an object in the clearing, and it had to be something mechanical.

Burroughs then started "jabbering" on again about this being "no fucking downed aircraft!" and insisted that he and Steffens had observed ". . . whatever the hell it was, hover over the forest before it slowly descending and landed." I didn't answer, and so he repeated it, swearing again as if he was panicked. That only served to irritate me. His agitated state made me wonder if he was losing it.[xcv]

Moving forward a short distance, I could now see that the light had dimmed somewhat and formed a kind of grey/white/yellowish "bubble" around the outline of what appeared to me to be a dark mechanical object. I could not make out any distinctive features, as it appeared silhouetted inside the light it was obviously generating around it. I could still see an array of colored lights moving, pulsating, and blinking. It was clear at this point that although the object was mechanical and most likely an aerial craft of some sort, this was no aircraft crash. There was no fire, scattered debris, or bodies, either around us or in the clearing just ahead of me, as there surely would have been. There was no expected smell of fuel burning or any smoke or fumes either. So, my concerns and thoughts as a 'first responder' to an aircraft crash were now completely dismissed.

Because the strange, electrostatic effects in the air surrounding it was something I was not familiar with in aircraft crash situations, I still wasn't sure what it was at that point. I radioed all that information and my thoughts about it back to Airman Cabansag, who radioed it back to CSC. That went through okay, but then Cabansag was beginning to break up on the transmissions. I told Cabansag to move one hundred feet closer to us, but

then suddenly the signal was gone, and we had no outside contact with our IBRs (radios).[xcvi]

The terrain was rough, as we went deeper into the forest moving eastwards. We came to another series of berms (natural land ridges) that were each about four to five feet high and rowed from about six to over ten feet apart. With the electrostatic effects and the startling creature activity we experienced, Burroughs was far from calm at this point and was clearly agitated. Seeing how distressed he was, I was hesitant to go any further, but with the added problem of the radio signal breaking up again, I decided to continue onwards on my own and have Burroughs stay behind as a link to Cabansag.

I then told Burroughs to stay right where he was, and I thought he understood what I had said. Being more concerned at that moment with what was going on in front of me, I continued onwards, not knowing at first that Burroughs was following behind me. He either didn't acknowledge what I was saying because he was agitated and too self-absorbed by what was going on, or he deliberately disobeyed a direct order. I stopped and crouched down inside a ditch.

I could determine that there were now two high berms in front of the lighted object. There was so much color in the woods in front of us it was unsettling. The lights from the object were still actively flashing and pulsating, and I was worried that whatever it was might become hostile or even explode. I then turned and signaled to Burroughs that he either crouch or lay down. His towering height of 6.6 feet[xcvii] made him stick out like a leg in a cast. He then came up close to me, and again, I told him to get down. I actually had to pull him down, as he wanted to remain standing. "Stay there!" I told him. Burroughs just stared at me. Exasperated, I then grabbed his face with both hands and looked him in the eyes to get him to pay attention. "Stay here; I need the link," I said.[xcviii]

I then turned away and ran and crouched behind a bush some distance in front of the first berm and stopped for a minute or two. I thought I heard Burroughs following behind me, but I was now very close, and what I was seeing distracted me from reprimanding him. I looked at my watch. It was now 1:15 a.m. I then stood up and walked slowly to the top of the first berm. I remained there for a few minutes, crouching. There was now no sign of Burroughs behind me; perhaps he had decided to stay put. I then ran down the other side of the berm and attempted to climb the second berm, which

was a little higher . . . *and there it was, the source of the lights*….

Hitting the ground

I was now some twenty feet away. It was clearly an object surrounded by what I best could describe as a 'dirty, grey/white, bubble' of light – 'dirty,' because it looked like there was something dark or black in the center of it.[xcix] My sudden presence must have triggered something because whatever it was then lit up brightly, and there appeared a bright flash of bluish/white light, which 'whited out' my entire view. Reacting out of reflex, I immediately hit the ground, expecting to be hit by debris or the force from an explosion.[c] As I lay there momentarily, the first thought that crossed my mind was that the sudden burst of light was an explosion . . . *but an explosion without sound or trauma . . . how could that be?* The sudden bright flash made me instinctively think the thing had detonated. After all, I was walking into the unknown here. But again, there was no physical trauma, no follow up air-burst or blast of energy that one would expect.

I then looked up and forward from the prone position I was in, having slid back behind the berm.[ci] For a few seconds, the area was still brightly lit up, as if stadium lights or all the car headlights in a parking lot had been turned on. Laying prone behind the berm, I could only see the light the object was projecting above it and around it. Whatever it was, it was an object that was so bright that everything was somewhat silhouetted around us as a result. I had to squint and put my hand in front of my face to shield my eyes when trying to look at it.[cii] I also noticed a blue halo of light surrounding the white light being projected from the object. Then, as quickly as the bright flash came, it equally dissipated. *At least we were still alive,* I thought. Sensing nothing more untoward, cautiously, I crouched and finally stood up again. I couldn't see Burroughs and just assumed he was still some distance behind.

Feeling relieved, but also worried about what lay before me, I saw the darkness surrounding the area behind me to the left, and to the right of me . . .

but still in front of me was a glow of light from behind the high berm. Although I couldn't see him, I yelled back at Burroughs to stay put.[ciii] I attempted to climb the high berm that was in front of me.

Black Triangular Craft

I climbed the berm, and there it was . . . an object surrounded by light which seemed to be hovering just off the ground in a clearing amidst the trees and positioned in the depression between the berm I was on and a berm on the other side of it. As I walked down the other side of the berm I stood on, I then entered the milky-grey/white dome of light that surrounded the object. This was likely an 'energy force field' – which I would later term the 'sphere of influence' – which was being generated by the object/craft. From my perspective, this distinctive dome or 'bubble' of white-yellowish light that had been obscuring and distorting my view of the object then seemed to 'collapse' around me as I entered it, and everything became clearer and more distinct, with more vibrant colors and the darkest blacks. I then saw what appeared to be a *fully-intact, black triangular, streamlined, craft.*[civ]

Without a sound, distinct 'circular' and 'pie-shaped' lights were blinking on and off and moving sequentially just under the black shiny surface and around the craft like a digital display, while colored shapes and globular forms of light were emerging and moving throughout the surface of the body. These colored globules of light were randomly forming under the black, opaque surface or skin and then fading back into it again, as if part of the fabric of the craft. One would be inclined to ask why a flying craft would produce such an exterior light show with such a display of shapes and possible symbols, *and for whose benefit?*

Fig. 10: ". . . fully-intact, black triangular, streamlined, craft" . . . "colored shapes and globular forms of light were emerging and moving throughout the surface of the body" (Left: Artist's impression by Mike Fisher. Right: Model by Phil Longmeier.)

I could see that the dome-like, light or 'energy field,' which seemed to be generated from the craft somehow, enveloped the area possibly ten to fifteen feet out around it. I had never seen anything like that before; it was eerie and surreal. I realized that right where I stood was now completely void of all sound. The forest was still. There was absolutely no sound, no wind or air rushing through the forest trees or canopy – no rustling of branches or leaves, no sounds of forest creatures as there had been previously – not even any sound of me walking over the frosted twigs and pine needles on the ground . . . *complete silence.*

Immobilized

I then gazed back around me to see where Burroughs was and noted that he, too, had climbed the berm, as he was now standing some ten feet to my right and a couple of feet back, with both arms down by his side, motionless. Although he was standing just outside the dome or 'bubble' of light between us, he was also engulfed in a 'beam' of white/blue light, which looked as though it was shining down from above him, *or that's the impression I got.* However, the light that seemed to be shining down on him could only have been the dome of light surrounding the craft as viewed from where I was inside it. Burroughs was staring straight ahead and looked helplessly frozen to the spot. It was possible he was in a state of duress, likely paralyzed by fear. I yelled at him, but he seemed not to hear me, as he did not flinch or make a move and continued to stare at the space directly in front of him. I couldn't be certain if he was still cognizant and consciously aware of what was going on.[cv]

Although I could not comprehend it, his immobilized state made me think he was most likely a casualty at this point and that I could be next. I thought, *this is probably the worst possible situation I could ever be in.* I was deeply troubled by it and concerned for him. However, the seconds silently ticked by with no further incident, and although my thoughts and my heart were racing, my main concerns were the physical effects of what was going on in our immediate area and how, whatever this thing was, could be affecting us – after all it could be highly radioactive, and that thought scared the hell out of me. Also, the way the craft had suddenly lit up, giving off a flash of intense bright light, I still felt uneasy about it.

My thoughts then returned to my primary job, *which was the security of the base.* All the training that I had ever received was still in play. Seeing this craft, the last security protocol I could use was that this was a prelude to an attack against the base itself. This was definitely a security situation now, I thought . . . *but, was this really a threat*? It had to be a threat, or a possibility of that, for what I was seeing could not be identified. Trying to focus on my job was paramount; however, my mind was racing with questions, while at the same time discounting them all.

I knew I had the USAF standard issue camera and notebook with me, and so I simply had to ignore Burroughs, and also try to ignore any fears I was having for my own safety and focus on the task at hand and what I was there

to do. I thought that if it suddenly malfunctioned and exploded, became hostile, and I didn't survive this, it was imperative that I record as much information as I could before anything happened to me so that others from my command would have something from my first response and could determine what had happened out here. Right now, any thoughts I had regarding security protocol for an aircraft that could have crashed were terminated.

Gathering my thoughts, I took the radio from my belt and tried to call CSC (SSgt. Dave Coffey).

"Security Control, Security Eight . . ." Silence.

I called several more times. My thoughts then turned to the possibility that my call was being received, but I could not hear anyone, so I called again, and quickly announced that I was terminating any possibility that this was an aircraft crash.

I then took out my notebook and wrote the following.[cvi]

"Radio difficulty"

Although I was receiving no response from CSC, I continued to transmit and advise. It was my hope that CSC was receiving – or at best, our messages were being relayed by either Airman Cabansag, or more likely by MSgt. Chandler, who would surely now have been 'on scene' at the East Gate. I talked into the radio and quickly added that there was a *landed craft in front of me, which was fully-intact and mechanical in nature.* Then addressing SSgt. Coffey in the hope that he could hear me, I asked him to initiate a *Helping Hand Report.*[cvii]

(**Note:** A 'Helping Hand' is a voice-transmitted report--in this case, by radio to CSC, that a serious security situation exists, or a hostile security violation is suspected which could possibly affect the operations of priority 'A, B,' or 'C resources.')

The 'Helping Hand' went up channel from CSC to the Wing Command post and was held there until I could ascertain if it was a threat. But I knew from my training and by security protocols at the twin bases that if my transmission of the termination of it being an aircraft crash (and, therefore, termination of the 'Helping Hand') were received, I would not receive back-up until I could determine whether this was a hostile threat or an elaborate

ruse to detract security forces out into the forest away from our resources on the base, and which would make the base vulnerable to insurgence. I knew that, until I could determine what this was, that I was alone, and no security force response would follow. I was the only ‘eyes and ears’ for my fellow security forces. The reality was *that I was expendable*, and so was my team member, Burroughs, who was still standing in the same position just outside the ‘dome-shaped’ area of light that was somehow being projected outwards from the craft.

Power down

I turned and looked again at the black, triangular craft, which was becoming more pronounced in front of me with the steady weakening of the once dominant and strong light around it.

I was mesmerized by the colored blobs of blue, yellow, orange, and red lights – mostly orange – which all varied in size and shape; some were six inches in diameter, while others would grow as large as twelve inches in diameter. These blobs would merge into each other before slowly fading away again, as if melting back into the molded fabric of the craft. For example, the bluish blobs of light would emerge from the black exterior, beginning with a bluish gray and would then change smoothly to a brilliant blue, while other blobs of color would last longer and would change shape. I had never seen that kind of effect before. The closest comparison to what I was seeing would be the globular wax shapes that form inside a ‘lava (astro)

lamp,' which were fashionable in the 1960s. However, the globules of light generated by the craft were more circular and independent, as they appeared and moved around underneath the black skin of the craft.

At first, and when I first saw the craft, these patterns of light had been forming and moving quite quickly throughout the craft's body, but now some were slowing, while others became still. It seemed this colored light activity within the surface of the craft, and which seemed to be generating the larger white dome, or 'bubble' of light around it, was slowing down – hence the overall weakening of the surrounding light the craft was generating.[cviii]

When viewed from a distance, and as we were approaching the craft, this same 'bubble' of light was more intense and had extended to a much larger area around it, possibly one hundred feet in diameter. But now the diameter of this light was down to around twenty to thirty feet and had a softer glow to it.[cix] My fleeting thoughts were that the craft could be in a 'powering down' situation or in 'shut down' mode. However, the craft continued to emit this large dome or 'bubble' of light around it, which was strange because there were no exterior lighting devices on it. I could see that on the left side of center was a stationary bluish light, and on the right side of center, a stationary red light. These colored lights, too, seemed to have been part of the molded exterior of the structure, as if pulsating on and off from just beneath its shiny, black, glassy, opaque surface. Also, I noted that as some of the light activity within the upper layer surface of the craft slowed, the white light underneath the craft intensified, remaining bright.

Remembering I had the camera with me, I then put my notebook away and pulled the camera from my jacket pocket. It contained a 35mm roll of 36 black and white (monochrome) photos, as standard issue. After taking the camera from its case and adjusting it, I then stood back from the craft. Then bringing the camera up to focus, I began taking photos.[cx] I continued to walk closer to the craft, taking some time to record what I saw with the camera, while feeling the same electrostatic and weird time-distortion effects I had experienced while approaching it. Everything I did felt like it was in slow motion at times, which was surreal.

I was so nervous and self-conscious of what I was doing – i.e., *that feeling of being watched, while my view was limited to looking through the viewfinder* – that I snapped all the pictures I could before anything happened, quickly expending the film. I then put the camera back in its case and into my jacket pocket.

I again took out my notebook, and on the same page where I had inserted my pen, I began jotting down short descriptions of what I was seeing after my previous entry, *"Radio difficulty"*:

"larger white
light slowing
High intensity
White
Blue & Red"

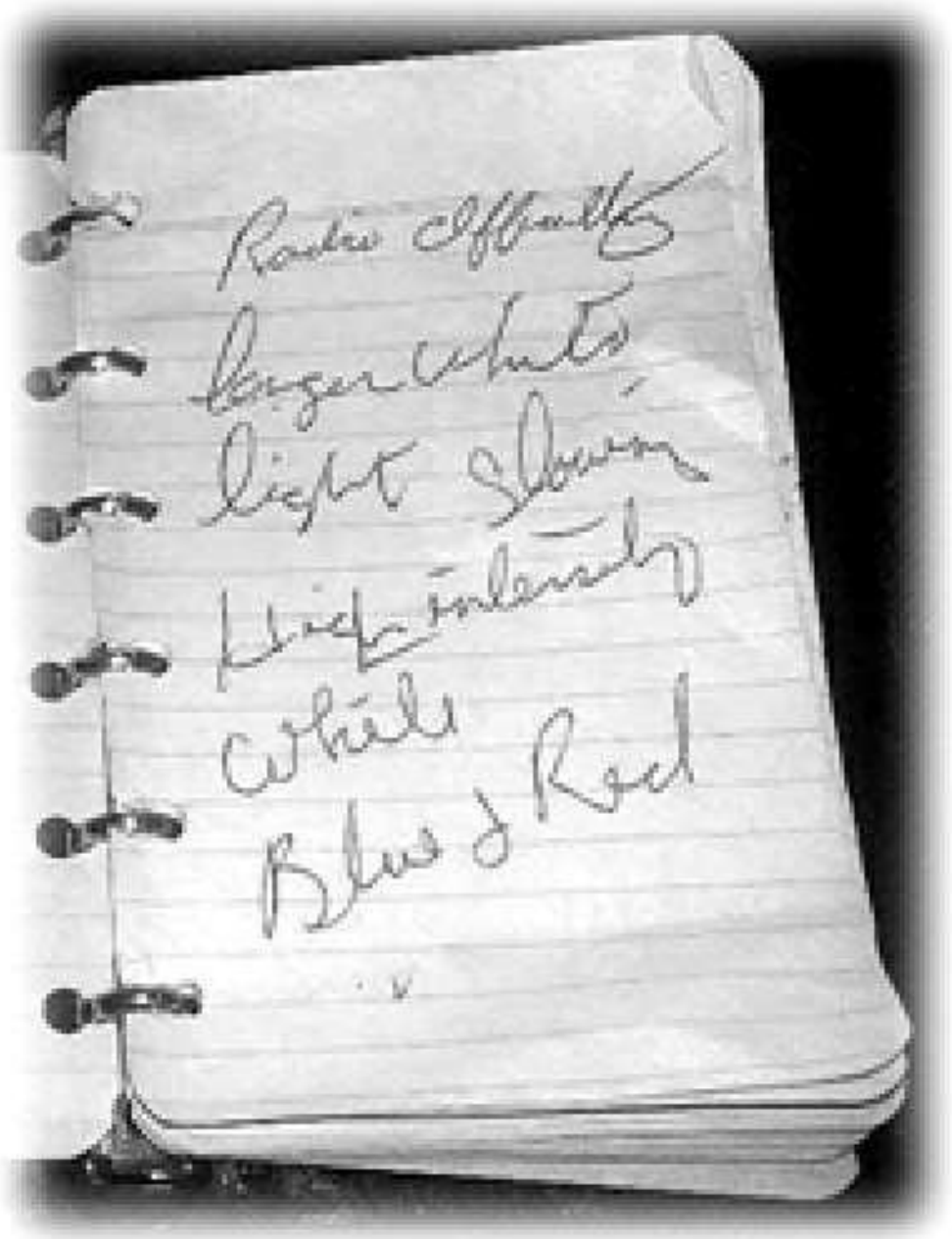


Fig. 11: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

It was just as I finished writing that the dramatic light display had virtually stopped, and I now saw the craft more clearly. I noticed again that the craft was very smooth and curved. It seemed to have been created as if from a single mold. The shiny, black, opaque skin was smooth like glass and reflected the surrounding forest like a dark mirror. It looked like a huge, triangular, obsidian/onyx, polished gemstone that had its edges rounded and smoothed.

Turning to the next page of my notebook, I again wrote down what I was seeing:

"Skin of Craft
Fabric
Black
Smooth
glass like
Surface unknown
Identity unknown"

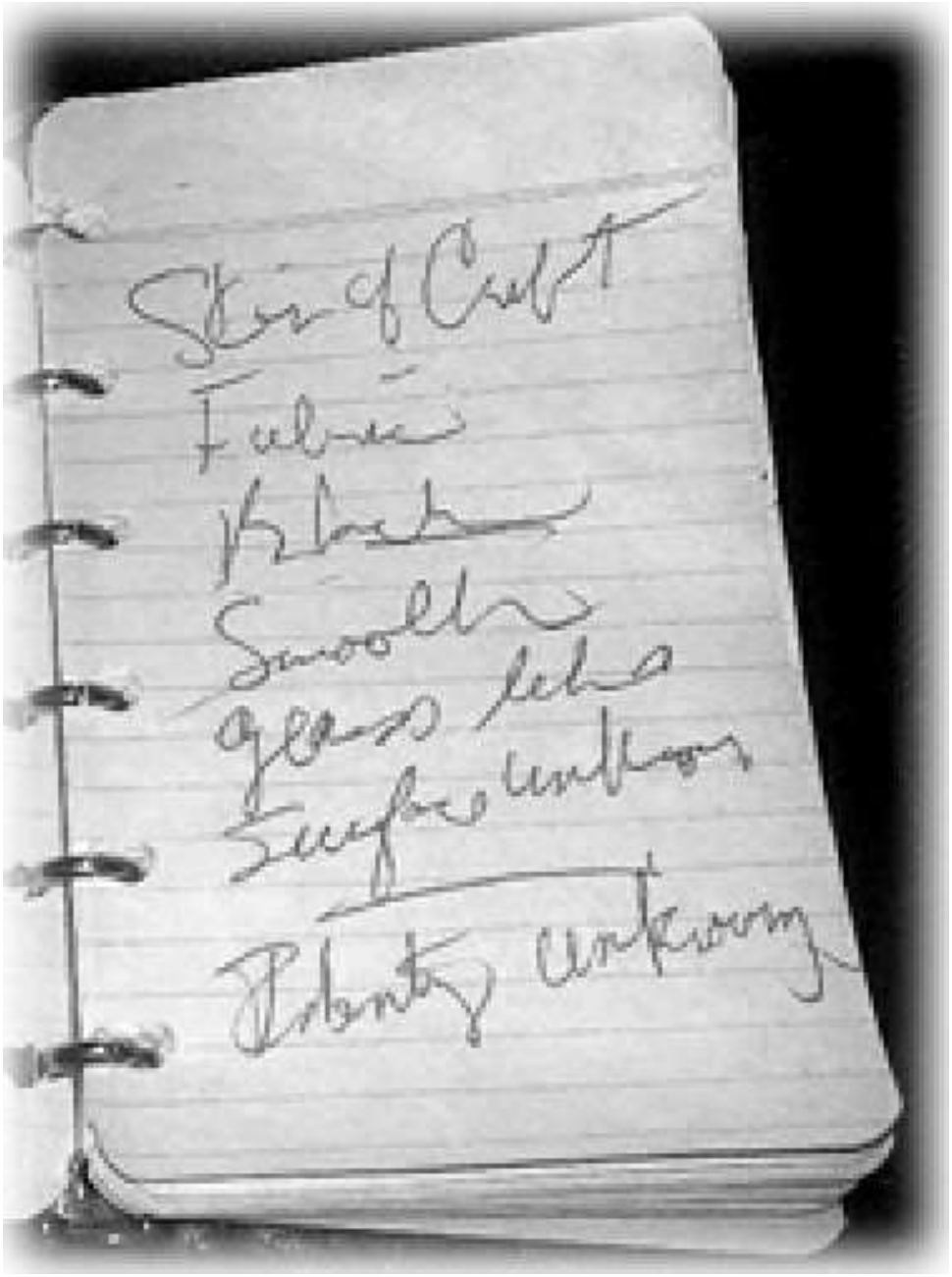


Fig. 12: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

By this time, I noted that everything seemed much slower, and I was becoming more disoriented and light-headed, almost losing consciousness at one point.

Cautiously, I moved closer towards the craft. Again, my movements were slow and labored, and I was struggling to put one foot in front of the other. There were moments when I moved so slowly, it seemed like time had

stopped. In addition to my sluggish movements, there was still an electric charge in the air. I could feel this static load more intensely now on my clothes, my skin, hands, face, and hair and also noted this:

"High electric
Static on clothes
Skin / Hair!"

I also had a distorted view of the forest around me, as if the small area I was in was out of sync with the surrounding area. *How odd?* I thought. I had the impression that time was dragging, and I had the feeling that the 'time-slowed' area I seemed to be in 'yearned' to catch up with the faster-flowing time of the surrounding area. These 'time-distortion' effects where time seemed to have slowed down told me the craft was creating a strong *electromagnetic* or *gravitational* field around it.

I was trying to normalize and rationalize the situation by trying to relate what I was seeing to a common frame of reference, experience, or training protocol. But I knew it was pointless trying to rationalize what I was seeing, as none of it made sense. In view of what was transpiring, the job I had to do was my only 'grounding' in the forest that night. And so, gaining focus yet again, I cautiously approached what I was seeing with the intent of fully investigating it. What I was observing was truly odd. It was so unique and 'one of a kind,' and it was like nothing I recognized from my studies of the latest *Jane's Aircraft Recognition Guide* manual, nor any prototype of which I was aware. Indeed, nothing in my training had prepared me for what I was witnessing. I was simply in awe, coupled with confusion, and at times I still felt flashes of fear envelop me. I tried to write down what I was seeing. However, a flood of emotions were running amok in my mind, and with pen poised, I found it difficult to find the words to describe it. In the end, I could only write down the following additional note:

"type of A/C unknown!"

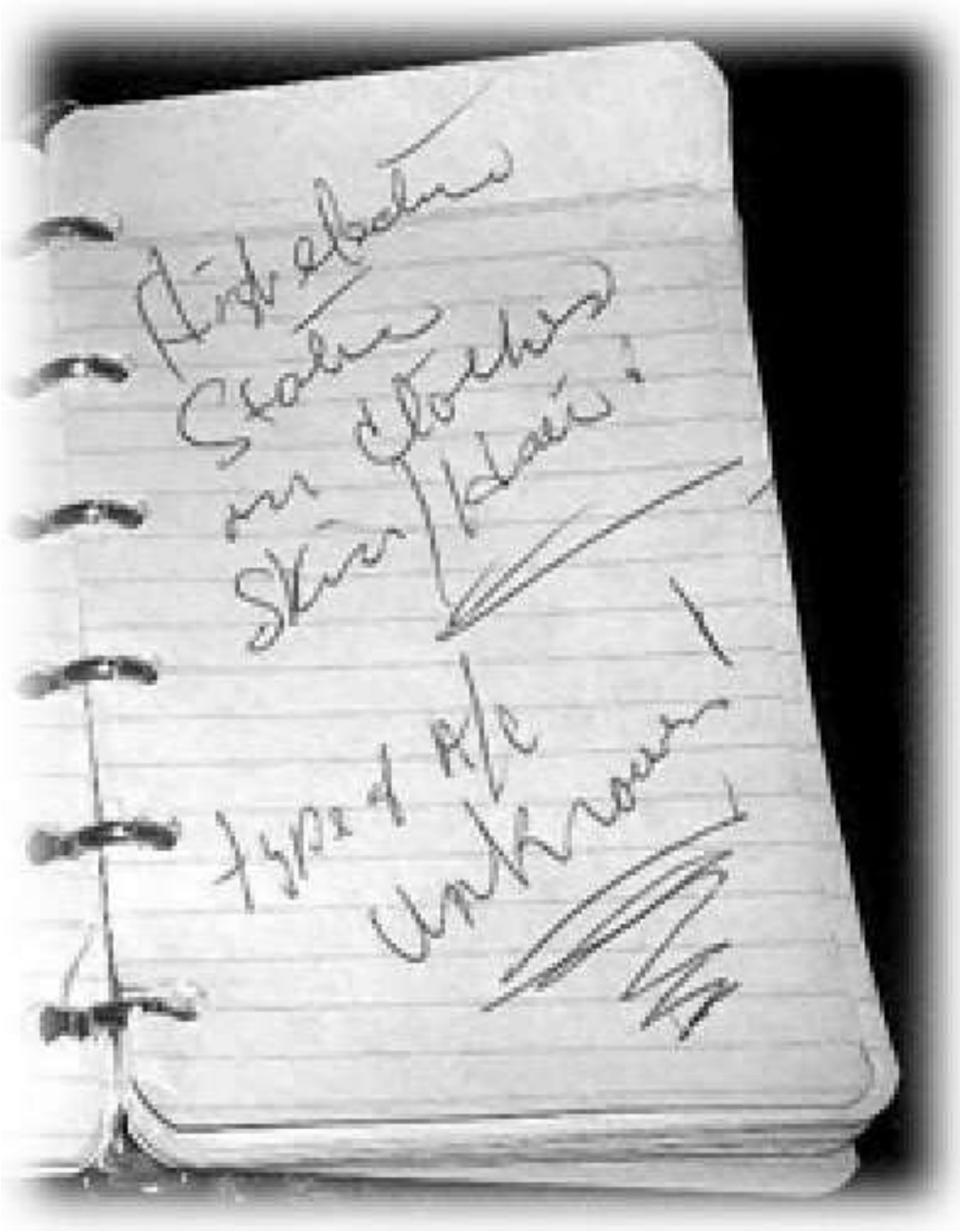


Fig. 13: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

From my position, I observed the closeness of the surrounding trees around the craft. Although the craft was relatively small compared to the aircraft I was used to, the trees seemed far too narrowly-spaced for it to have manoeuvred through them to this small clearing . . . which made me wonder how this thing, which was smooth throughout, had done all this and had landed as safely as it did without incurring some damage and not even a

scratch. I looked back to where I last saw Burroughs, but now I couldn't see him. It was as if he had simply disappeared. I reasoned that he was most likely still out there and had just faded from view, or that from my vantage point the light had simply obscured him – but it did disturb me for a while.[cxi]

I then felt my movement and steps becoming less labored – the struggle to move dissipating altogether. The returning normalcy was obvious and reassuring, and this must have been related to the powering down of the craft and the fact that the movement of light just under the skin of the craft now seemed to be completely at a standstill . . . *but still there was no sound.* It was as if a bell jar had been placed over me and the object, shutting out all sound – but without the muffled effect you would have if you had become deaf through blocked ears or air pressure. This effect, like the 'bubble' of light, seemed to be generated by the object that now lay in reach on the forest floor.

Amazingly, there was more than sufficient light from under the craft to illuminate the area and the craft was still surrounded by the strange, misty aura of the 'bubble' I was in, so I required no flashlight in what would normally be a very dark forest. As I got closer, the light from the craft and especially from underneath, felt warm like the sun, and that felt good compared to the frosty, cold forest surrounding it.

I know that the flickering blobs of color that had run throughout the surface of the craft seemed to have also emerged from the bottom and also from within its whole fabric. I wondered if the craft was standing on something. I then crouched a little to look underneath, but it was difficult to distinguish anything because of the high intensity light being generating under there. It seemed to be defying gravity by the absence of any kind of landing gear – *or at least landing gear as I had known it to be.*

"No apparent
landing gear
No Sound
but appears
operational
Somehow?"

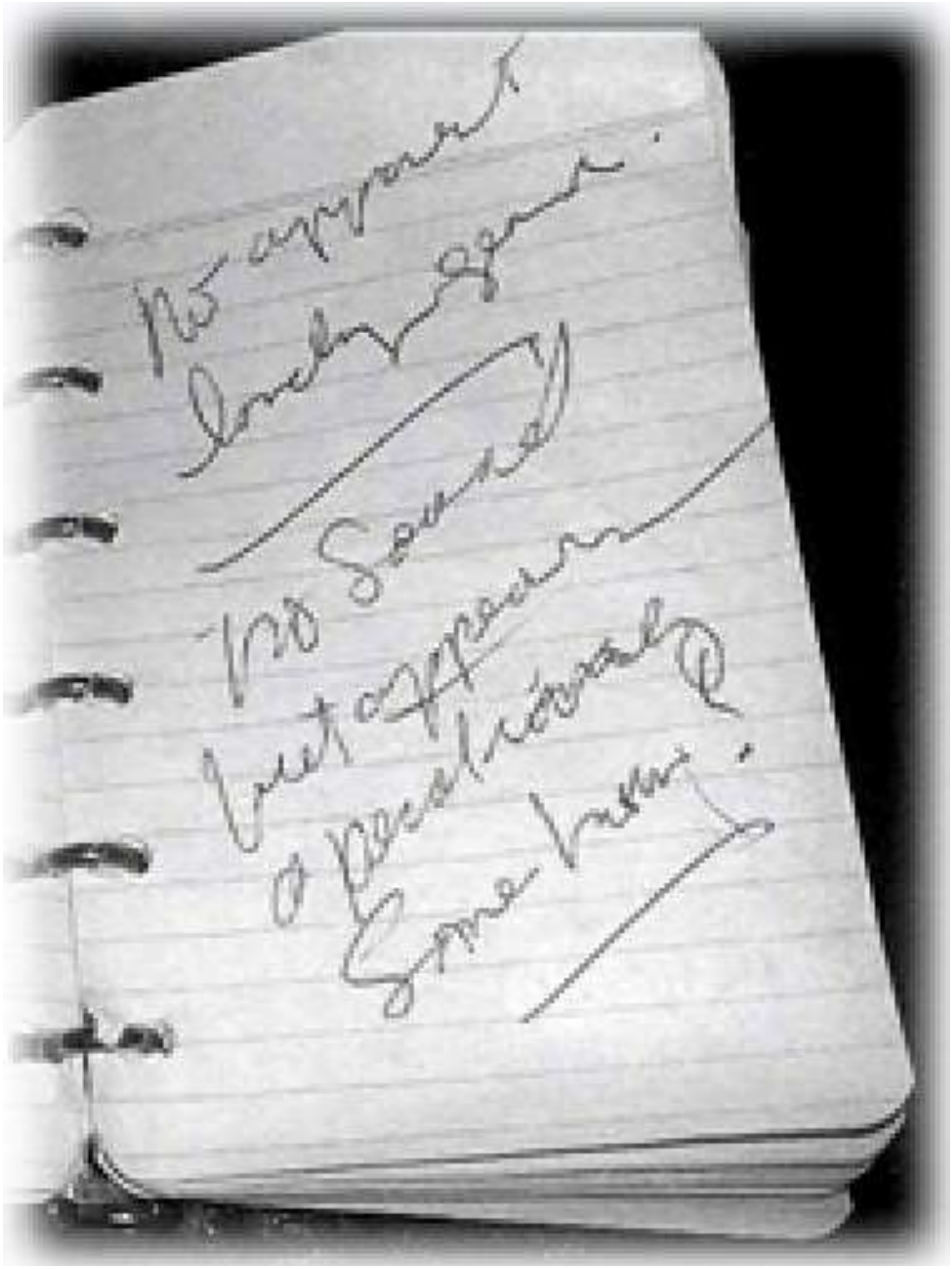


Fig. 14: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

I could also determine a prevalent smell, which reminded me of hot engines or metal in the air, but no exhaust or intake ports were observed, and no engine or propulsion unit. I made an extra effort to look for access ports, a crew compartment, or cockpit, or anything like that, but could not see any. There were no visible handles, seams, rivets, or sharp angles on the skin of the craft. It was also void of windows, flaps, a horizontal stabilizer, vertical

stabilizer, or rudder.

"A/C
is unknown
Cannot
Identify
Propulsion
unknown!"

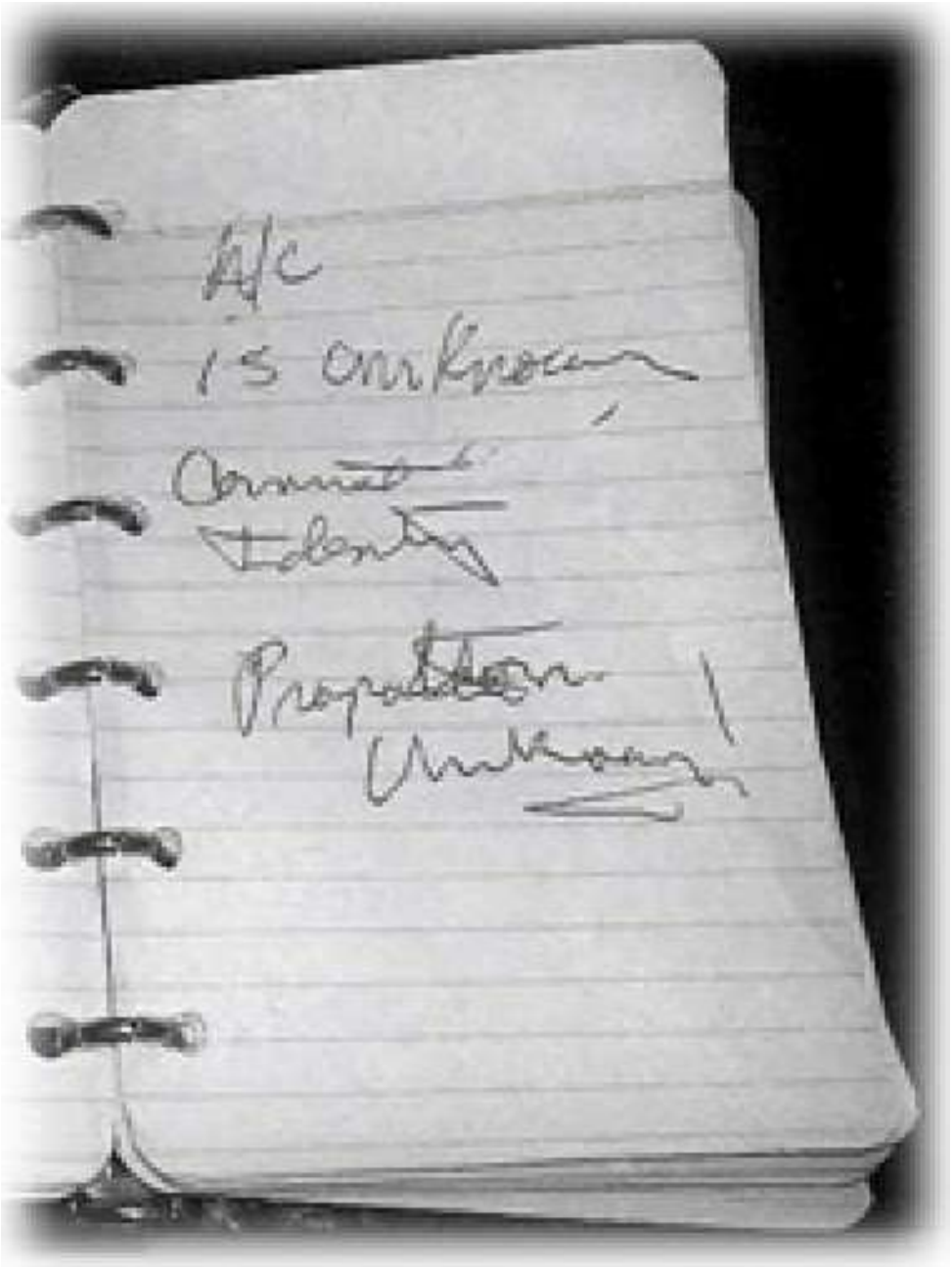


Fig. 15: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

There was one feature that was immediately apparent when I first saw the craft. Extending out of the top of the main streamlined body was a single, triangular-shaped portion of the craft. It lay in the center and on what seemed like the back part of the flat triangular body. It extended back about five feet and seemed to bulge out of the top of the craft into the air almost two feet, like a dorsal fin – or possibly for lack of better words, a tail section.[cxii] Even so, on closer inspection, it had none of the other features that an aircraft must have to be able to become airborne. Although this craft must have flown and landed here, it was difficult to imagine how. If so, it was essentially a 'flying brick.' My mind was telling me that this technology was not possible, although there it was right there in front of me as something real.

The craft was just sitting there, silent and still with no sign of life. And although I felt that there could be a pilot or being inside, it was way too small to accommodate the average-sized person comfortably, let alone a crew. No, although I felt there was some kind of life presence or rather an intelligence attached to it, my rational mind was telling me that this was an *unmanned craft* – a drone, a probe, or some kind of remote-controlled device under intelligent control. That made sense to me.

I then thought that I must preserve this scene somehow. I figured my stride was about three feet, and so I decided to pace off the size of the craft. Turning left first, I slowly moved next to the craft, to take a 360-degree examination of it. Again, what stood out was the smell, the smell of hot metal, like after an aircraft engine shuts down, and the heat is still leaving the plane. One after the other, thoughts moved through my mind quickly, fizzling out as soon as they started.

Having paced my steps down the left side of the craft from my perspective, I noted that from the base of the craft, as it was somehow resting off the ground some eighteen inches, to the height of the craft with the dorsal fin feature, made the craft a foot and a half taller than me (I am six feet, two inches).[cxiii] I then wrote the following in my notebook:

"Size
9 ft long
Approximately
7 – 8 Feet
High"

I then walked around what I would assume to be the back end of the triangular craft and began walking the length of the other side. Due to the steady activity and effect of the milky ‘bubble’ of light surrounding me, when I got to where I had last seen Burroughs, I could barely see him. I appeared to be the only one within the lighted area, but there he was again, still standing in the same ‘frozen’ position just outside the ‘bubble’ I had entered with his ‘deer in the headlights’ stare. It was apparent I had taken the wrong team member with me, for it was clear I was getting no immediate support from this other first responder, who was now fading from view as I continued my tour of the craft.[cxiv]

I then gathered up my courage to touch the outer skin of the craft to see what it felt like and to see what, if anything, might occur from it. As I touched the smooth, hard, glass-like surface and ran my fingers along it, I felt a continual flow of low-voltage electricity running through my hand and moving to my mid-forearm. The craft seemed to be running, but there was no sound. I again experienced the electrostatic effects on my clothes, my skin, and my hair, as if the energy were ‘dancing’ on me. The craft was also warm to the touch, maybe ten to twenty degrees above the crisp air temperature, which was around 32 degrees Fahrenheit that night. Once again, the fear rose in me that it might be radioactive, but I pushed all thoughts of that aside, as my job was to record as much as I could. I took out my notebook and wrote the following:

“Skin / Fabric
of craft
warm”

Fig. 16: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

I then placed my notebook and the enclosed pen in my jacket again and put both hands on the side of the craft and pushed, trying to rock it. It was solid and did not budge. Next, I began walking at a slow pace, while touching the craft with one hand and then the other, as I moved along the other side of it.

Resting on Solid Light

I then stopped and bent down to take a closer look underneath. I had to squint my eyes a little, so I was able to better make out what I was seeing. I still saw no landing gear as one would expect, *but now I clearly saw indentions in the ground, and then noticed that the craft appeared to be resting on thin beams of light! . . . Three of them extended down from underneath each corner of the triangular craft.* It had been difficult to distinguish this at first, but this was now my impression. I say 'impression' because I couldn't believe what I was seeing.

I was so perplexed by this supernatural display that I began to feel the fear rising in me again, and I struggled to record what I was seeing . . . *beams of light that acted like solid physical struts, and which had a physical effect on the ground – meaning the full weight of the craft was simply resting on light!* [cxv] I had never seen that, and it was difficult for me to process. I even asked God to allow me to survive for the next ten minutes so I could finish my job and report back . . . *yes, report back.* I needed to make a security check and report in these findings so far. But, to hell with operational security because I was in a situation I had never experienced before.

I then grabbed my IBR from its belt case and called security control.

"*Security Eight to Security Control . . .*" Silence.

I repeated this but was met with more silence. I couldn't even hear the familiar static after releasing the transmit button. I couldn't hear them, but it was still possible they were receiving me, I thought, so I gave a security check with security control that I was secure, and that the security status was A-Ok . . . *still nothing.* I then put my IBR back on my belt case. In the likely event of not surviving this, my thoughts were to gather as much information as I could by writing down notes so that my command center would have first reconnaissance of my contact of the situation.

It was the fact that the craft was resting on three beams of light that then reminded me again of the camera, as that was truly something weird that I would have wanted to capture. I became angry with myself that I had likely used all the film before I had walked this close to the craft . . . *a picture-photo would be worth a thousand words.*

Symbols

I walked around to the other side of the craft again, and then I spotted something I had missed earlier. On the upper left side towards the front of the craft and from the perspective of a pilot, if there was one, there were markings of some kind. *Thank God, it's marked*, I thought. A feeling of normalcy returned. I was thinking that any markings would be welcome, whether it was USAF, NASA, or something of that nature . . . *Hell, even a red star and sickle would be welcomed at this point.* Maybe it was an XR-1 or something – or a prototype? But even that was impossible due to the technology I had already observed. What I was seeing was not any known aircraft constructed by any nation state. It was far too advanced. I was in awe again. As I looked at the symbols, I was angry again about having already expended the film in the camera.

While my heart was beating as if it were going to jump out of my chest, I then wrote the following in my notebook.

"Very warm
to touch
Identifying
markings
on
Left Front
side!"

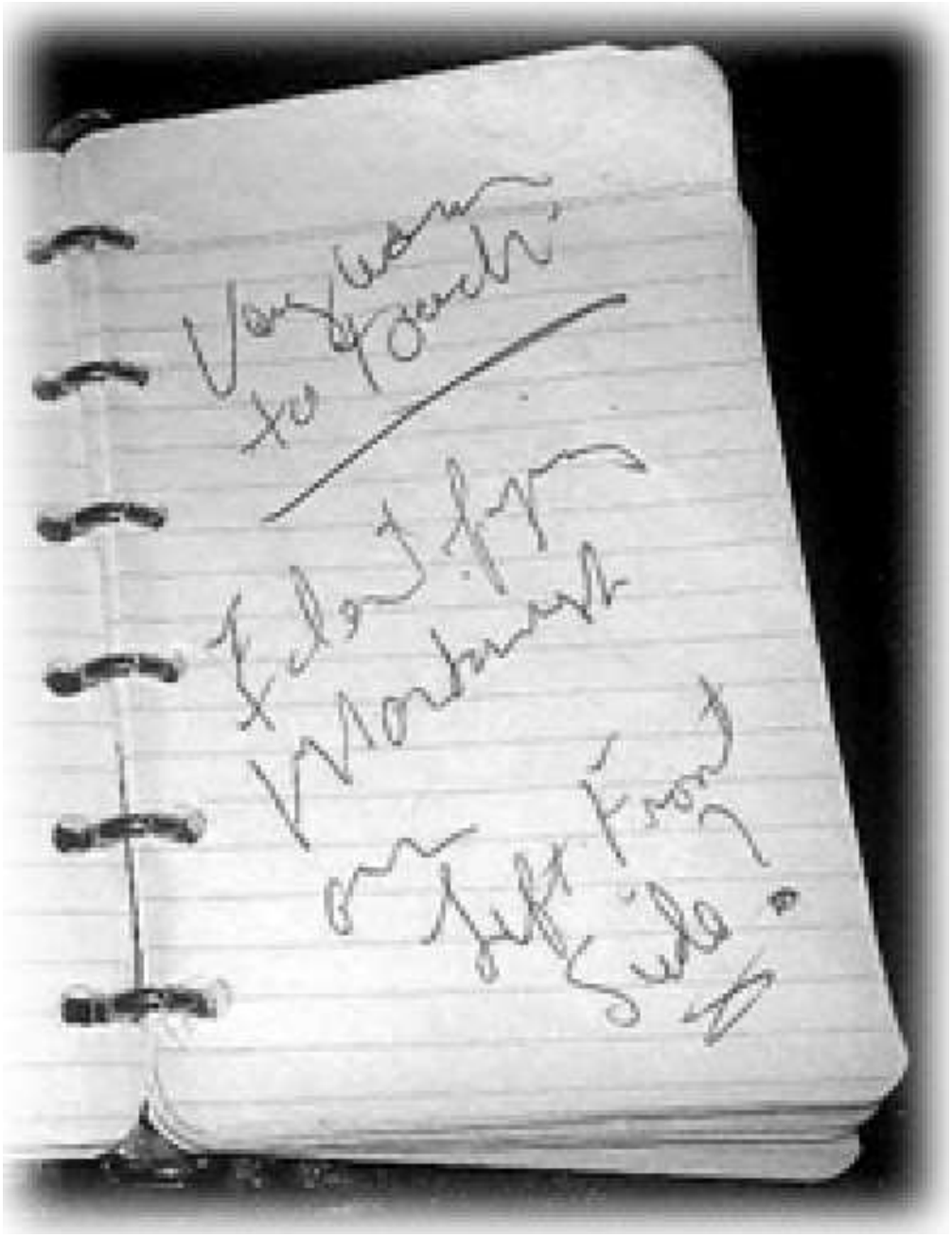


Fig. 17: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

I was trembling and shaking as I wrote in the notebook, and the shaking in my hands almost made it impossible to write – so-much-so, that some of the words I wrote were barely legible and more of a scrawl than anything. It was as if some strange force was weighing me down.

Each was a symbol of some kind, and on first glance a few of them resembled ancient Egyptian hieroglyphs, but on closer and lengthier

examination, it was apparent that they were more modern and technical-looking, and were like nothing I had ever seen before. These were no familiar aircraft markings, writing, or symbols I could identify. There were five smaller symbols in a line, each about three inches high, and together measuring two feet in length. There was also a larger symbol above them centrally placed.

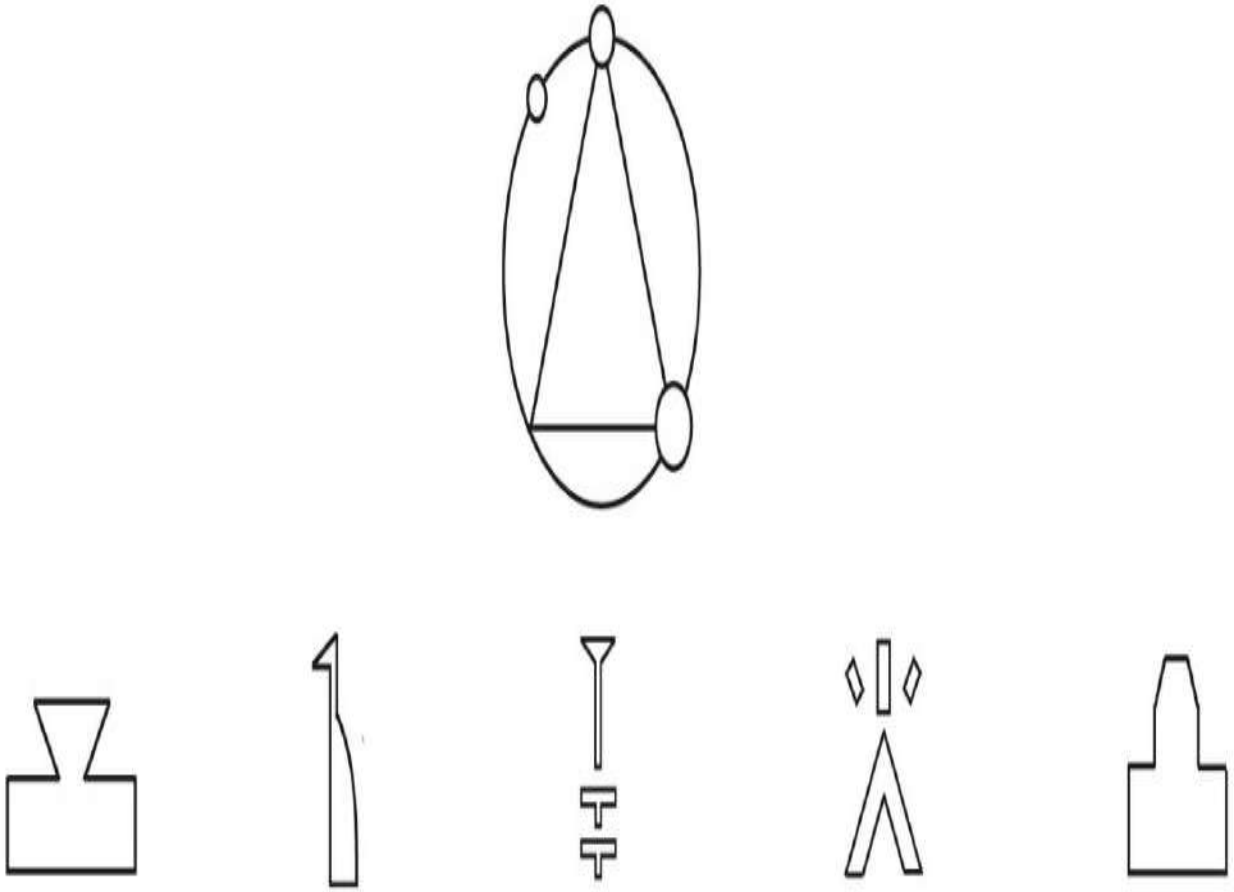


Fig. 18: The glyphs on the upper left side of the craft towards the front, as viewed and remembered by SSgt. Jim Penniston.
(Artwork by Gary Osborn.)

"Approximately
3 inches
Symbol length
& About 2 feet
long"

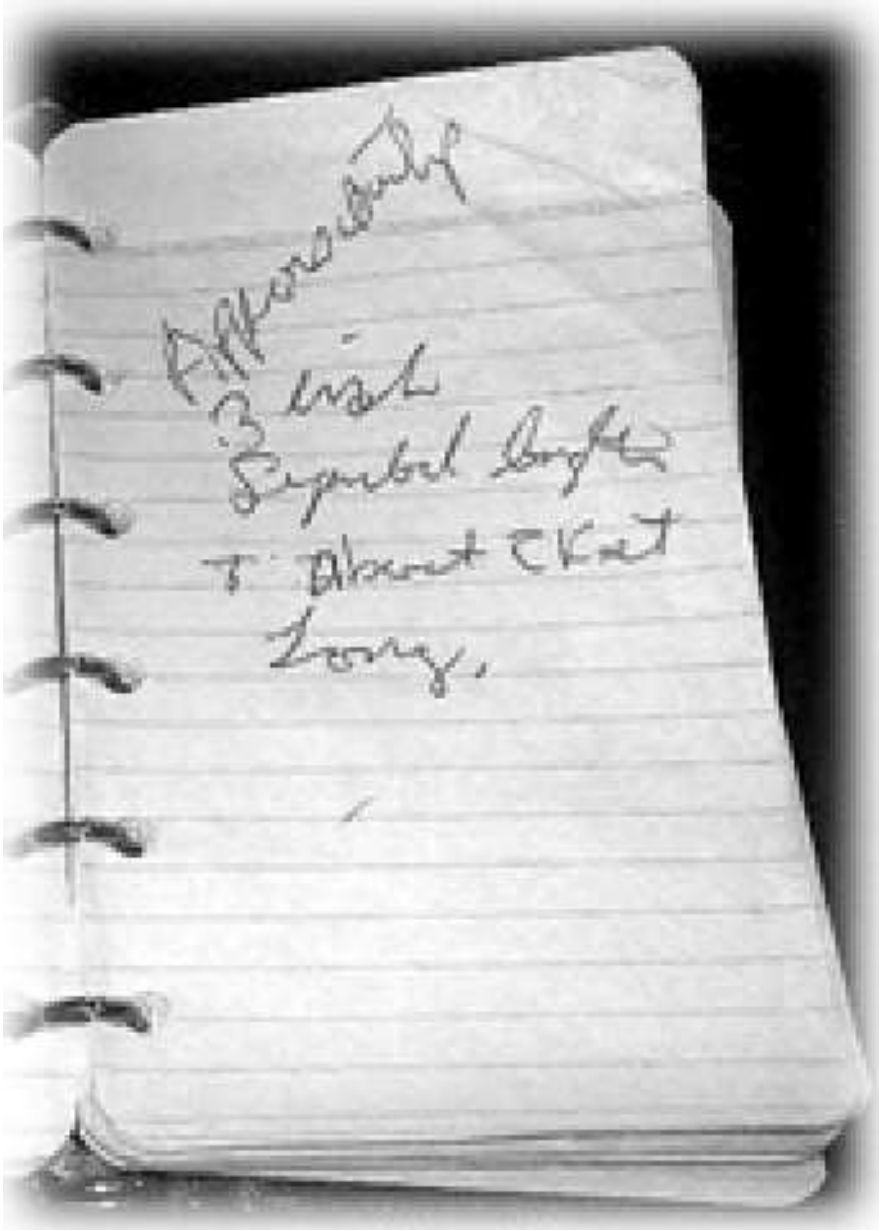


Fig. 19: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

I had an immense feeling of being overwhelmed, stacked with a feeling of total disbelief. After seeing these strange, illegible markings on the side, it became apparent to me that perhaps I was wrong on my thoughts about so-called 'UFOs' – although I was still uneasy using the term 'UFO,' which now automatically implied 'extraterrestrials' or 'aliens.' But, still, *could 'aliens,' or rather, 'extraterrestrials' from other planets or star systems really be visiting us here on Earth?* It never seemed logical or likely to me that an alien intelligence from a distant star system would travel all the way here –

especially as regularly as they are reportedly seen. So then, *how could what I was seeing in front of me be explained?* And, if the craft was 'terrestrial,' then even today the technology we have does not come close to what I saw in front of me in the forest that night.

I had earlier dismissed Burroughs' words that it could be a UFO that had landed, and there he was, still standing outside the 'bubble' of light this craft had cast around it – seemingly unaware of the probable truth of his words – in fact, unaware of anything right now, as he seemed to be in either some kind of hypnotic trance or suspended animation. Although I was trying to make some common reference to what I was seeing, everything about it was vividly real . . . *material, physical,* and as I got over one question, another stood out. In retrospect, all my thoughts were in terms of what I believed was normal for an aircraft. And even though I could smell what appeared to be an engine, again, this was like no aircraft I could ever imagine, or would ever see again. I was in constant denial, but at the same time also feeling a reverie of magical wonderment.

Because it seemed to have powered down, and for some time nothing untoward had occurred, I felt I had all the time in the world I needed to document all that I saw in absolute detail. But having expended the roll of film, the only option now was to record the symbols by drawing them in the notebook. As I was drawing what I was observing, I was shaking again. I couldn't help it and couldn't stop it; it was beyond my control. I stretched out my right hand and closed it into a fist, trying to regain some steadiness. It seemed to help a little. Even though my hands were still shaking, I tried my best to sketch each of the symbols in my notebook.

Fig. 20: The glyphs as drawn by Jim Penniston in his notebook.

After quickly drawing each of the symbol glyphs, and exactly how I saw

them, I then wrote the following:

“Symbols
etched or
engraved?
Language
Unknown”

Fig. 21: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

I was ready for another walk-around of this craft-of-unknown-origin. I put

my notebook with the enclosed pen back in my pocket and began to walk around it in a full, 360-degree circle again, concentrating more on the details of the craft, in case I had missed something else. I struggled again in my own mind to stay focused no matter what, making small moves while assessing everything.

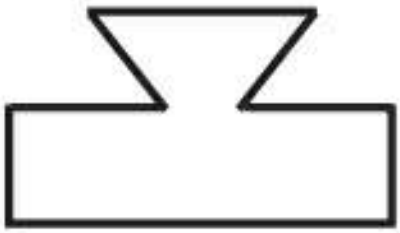
After almost a complete circle, I came back to the symbols or glyphs. Despite what adverse effects this craft might be having on Burroughs, again, it appeared more likely that this craft and situation was benign, and I thought that eventually it would become daylight, and we would receive assistance. Because I was certain we would be alright, and I would see my wife and kids again, I stabilized and felt relief envelop me. I noted the time was now 2:30 a.m. That confused me because it felt as if only twenty to thirty minutes had passed since I first began inspecting the craft, and so far, an hour and fifteen minutes had passed since I last looked at my watch. In other words, although my movements and the passing of time seemed to be much slower inside the lighted area (dome) and close to the craft, my watch was showing that time had speeded up.

In any case, I then decided to take it a step further. I then decided to touch the symbols. Perhaps I was compelled to do this, or, maybe curiosity was overwhelming me; it never was clear to me.

I reached up and touched one of the symbols. Nothing happened, and so I continued to slowly feel and trace my hand along each of the five symbols that were arranged in a line, and which together measured about two feet long and three inches in height.

Running my left hand over the pictorial glyphs, they also felt rough to the touch, like sand paper or rather something resembling *braille.* By this, I mean that the outline of these glyphs or symbols were ‘raised up’ or embossed, like *repoussé* relief, while the area inside the outline of the glyphs felt rough, as if engraved or etched into the surface with a diamond tip. Again, the texture of the rest of the craft’s surface was as smooth as glass, and the glyphs were black like the craft, which is why I didn’t notice them at first.

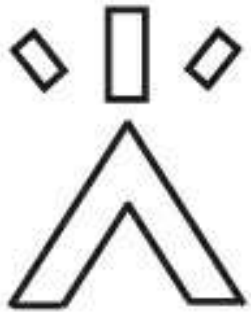
I began by touching the first symbol on the left in the line of five symbols, which had an upside-down triangle entering a rectangle. To me, it resembled a ‘blacksmith’s anvil.’



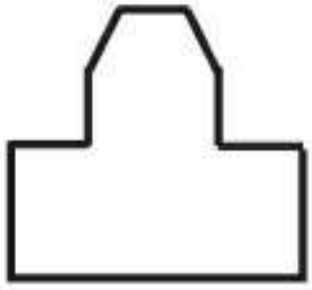
I then traced my fingertips around the next symbol in the sequence, which first looked like a bird or musical note you see in sheet music, but also resembled a strange kind of bat or paddle.

The third glyph I touched was composed of two ‘T-shaped’ figures stacked vertically – with a third one above having a longer stem and a wide triangle at the top. It resembled a flag pole or aerial of some kind.

I then moved onto the next glyph, noting that it resembled a human figure – much like the targets we used for shooting practice.

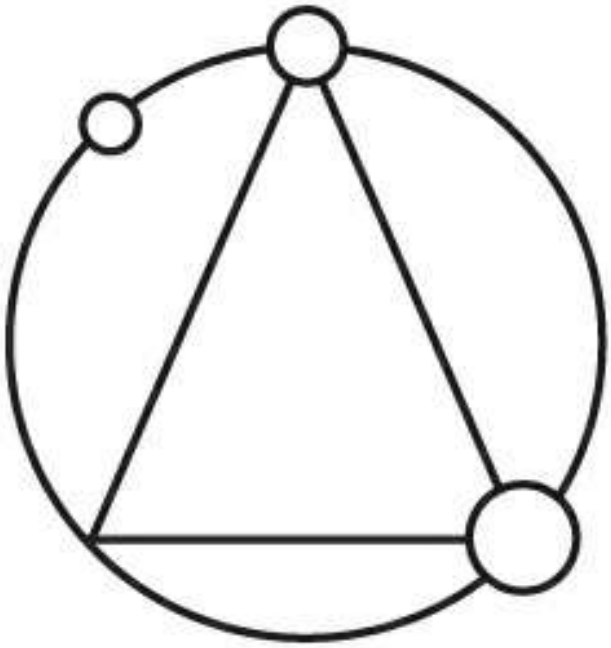


Lastly, I moved my fingers over the last symbol in the line, which didn't bring anything to mind that might resemble it.



Again, above these symbols, which ran a length of about two feet or so, was a much larger one that was more intriguing and appeared more important than the others. I estimated the measure of this large glyph to be a couple of palm-widths high – around six to eight inches. I decided not to touch this large symbol until last. It somehow seemed this decision was more logical than by design.

The large glyph or symbol was a triangle, with its three points circumscribed by a *circumcircle*. There were also three smaller circles arranged on the symbol – one over the bottom right vertex of the triangle, which was the size of a half dollar, a slightly smaller circle on the apex of the triangle, and lastly, as I now recall, another on the large circle, just left of the apex of the triangle, which was about the size of a dime.



I intuited that the large glyph was the key to the craft. I so wanted to photograph these symbols that I pulled out the camera again to check to see if I really had used all of the film . . . I had.

I reached out with my right hand, and first I ran my fingers slowly around the outer circle of the glyph. I then took my fingers away and hesitated while making a closed hand, and then I opened my hand and flatly pressed the palm of my hand over the large triangle. I noticed it was slightly warmer than the rest of the craft, and I was again thinking *radioactivity.*

What happened next, defied reality even more . . .

Transmission of Ones and Zeros

A few seconds after placing my right hand on the triangle of the largest glyph, an intense flash of bright white light instantly occurred. I thought it had either exploded or was going to. *This is it*, I thought. It then became a bright and steady 'bluish-white light' – but so brilliant and bright, I found myself squinting and screwing up my eyes, even though I wasn't seeing this light with my physical eyes. I had opened my eyes briefly, and I realized that what I was seeing was in my head – in my mind's eye – as it obscured my normal vision, and I could no longer see normally. Then, the stream of

intense, bluish-white light changed into a flickering sequence of intense and rapid flashes of light. An analogy would be like flicking through a deck of cards with my thumb. It was relentless, and I was still unable to see my surroundings. I felt I had somehow pressed a button and activated a technology I couldn't understand.

What I figured as symbols at first then became more distinct. What I was seeing was a series of *ones* and *zeros* – **1** . . . **0** – in black and white running in front of my eyes very fast and in a different ordered sequence. Although I was scared, I seemed to understand that this was not harmful – well at least for the moment – *but was somehow required.*[cxvi]

As this was going on, I remember letting go of the camera from my left hand and allowing it to drop to the ground. It was somehow made clear to me that when I physically touched the craft's glyphs, which were located on the outside skin of the craft, I had activated a technology that through light was able to communicate a message to me in ones and zeros and in seconds. I know today that while I was receiving the ones and zeroes I was also made aware of the message, but this was obviously communicated and stored at a subliminal level. As quickly as it started, the 'transmission' simply stopped and was over – the whole thing lasting possibly no longer than a minute. Unable to pull my hand back when it first began, I finally felt the large circle-triangle symbol release it.

Immediately, my vision returned like I had been in darkness for some considerable time. I thought, it was impossible for my eyes to adjust so quickly and to not be affected by the intense light. I quickly looked at my hand. I was examining it for damage. Seeing none, I was both relieved and thankful. I was thinking, *My God . . . I am not touching that craft again . . . maybe it would happen again, or maybe it would even detonate.* Such were the negative thoughts and fears running through my mind.

As unbelievable as that was, I decided that I was not going to touch the craft or do anything which could re-engage me with it in that way again. There was no experience I could compare it to. It was both terrifying and unreal. *That was it! I had now done all I was going to do, and there was no need to have physical contact with this 'thing' again.*

Lift off

With all this going through my mind, I then observed the colored, globular lights beginning to move again through the external skin of the craft. With this activity, everything started to become bright, in that the surface of the craft was turning white and getting brighter.

Fig. 23: Artist's rendition of the whole surface of the triangular craft transforming into a bright white light.

(Artist's rendition by Mike Fisher.)

And so, fearing it was going to explode – which was always on my mind – I quickly picked the camera up from the ground where I had dropped it and hurriedly stepped back to a point some twenty to thirty feet away and outside the 'bubble' of light surrounding it. I then saw a flash of intense bright light and took a defensive position by diving to the ground again, virtually burying my face in the dirt to protect my eyes.

I looked behind me and couldn't see Burroughs at first, and thought he had perhaps left his former position to go back towards the tree line. But then I looked back and saw him laying prone on the ground, still some ten feet behind me and to my right. Somehow, Burroughs had been relieved of the frozen, standing position he had been in all the time I was examining the craft.[cxvii]

The craft's lights and the light of its surrounding field then dimmed somewhat.

I then stood up again and heard movement to my right with the sound of small branches breaking, and I was startled as Burroughs suddenly came up behind me. It was actually a relief to see that Burroughs was active again.

The craft, which was twenty to thirty feet in front of us, then slightly lifted upwards some three feet while the three light supports underneath appeared to dim down, as if retracting. Then, gradually, it moved backwards, weaving its way back through the trees at a very slow pace – maybe a half-foot per-second. It was so slow we could have walked after it, but we didn't and stayed where we were at this point. In retrospect, I knew that what I saw would have been virtually impossible due to the small spaces between the trees. It took a few minutes for it to maneuver itself back in a zig-zag fashion to a distance of about forty to fifty feet, where it started to ascend towards the forest canopy. I watched in awe as it raised upwards, *with no sound* . . . up and up it went, and then it manoeuvred to move up through a hole in the canopy of the trees. I again noted that there were no beams of light or fixed legs underneath. After reaching a point around 200 to 250 feet above the tall trees, it momentarily stopped, rotated slightly to the left, and with a 'flash' and in a 'blink of an eye,' *and with no air displacement, it was gone*….

Witnessing that just shook me to the core and was probably the most amazing thing I had ever experienced. It was just too unbelievable – even for the eyes. I then put the camera away in its case and back into my jacket, and I

immediately pulled out my notebook and began noting what I had just seen.

"Lift off
2:45
No Sound
No air disturbance
No other
Identified
markings"

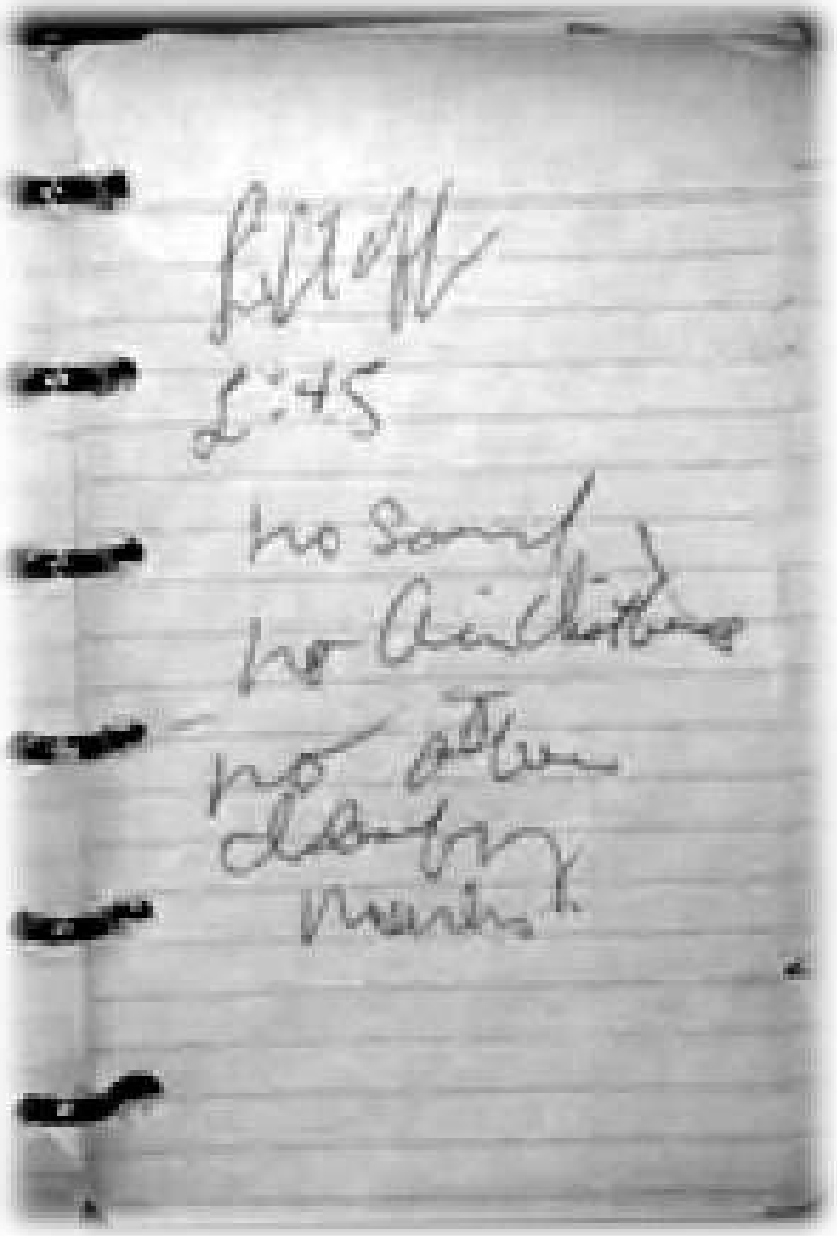


Fig. 24: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

I was simply stunned and confused, saying to myself over and over again, *What was that? . . . What was that?* Yet, what that craft just did was proof enough that it simply did not belong to any Air Force on Earth and was way above and beyond our present technological capabilities.

I turned to the next page and wrote down the following:

"Take off
Unknown
Speed
Impossible."

Fig. 25: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook.

For some strange reason, I also had the odd thought/feeling that the craft would return. Just as I was putting my notebook away, to my surprise, Burroughs then began running around the shrubs and between the trees in an apparent panic.[cxviii] However, the object was no longer in view. I then realized that the electrostatic effects and the overall sense of unreality I had felt, which had been markedly perceptible throughout the encounter, had now stopped.[cxix] My thoughts about this were then broken by Burroughs, who

having reacquired a visual on the craft, was shouting, “Over there!”

This startled me. I thought the craft had gone, but there it was . . . the same array of colored lights now some four hundred yards or quarter of a mile away to the east of us. Not listening to me, Burroughs left me no choice but to follow. To maintain team integrity, I was right behind him, walking quickly and sometimes running towards something I did not want to catch up with again – but I remained silent and just followed. I was tired and really wasn’t enthusiastic now, having already inspected the craft up close and having recorded what I could.

After a few minutes, we came out of the opposite side of the forest from where we went in – a location only some 150 feet from the ‘landing site’ clearing in the woods. Burroughs was now feverishly pointing to a direction out beyond the farmer’s field, where we both saw the light of the moving craft. Burroughs yelled, “There it is Staff Sergeant Penniston . . . let’s go!”

Although we could now see the white farmhouse and the lights of a couple of cottages further on in the distance to our left and in the area known as *Green Farm,* in front of us was what we later learned was once an animal barn, although the farm was *arable,* meaning it concentrated on crops rather than livestock. So, any animals we heard were not from the farm, as we had first thought. The interior incandescent lamps from the barn glowed a dim orange. I definitely noted the larger and brighter light of the craft, which was also directly in front of us, and it was distinguishable from the interior lights shining from the windows of these buildings.

The visuals we had on the craft’s ‘maneuvering activity’ were even more bizarre than when I had observed it up close, and when it was resting silent and still in the clearing. The craft would seem to disappear and then reappear very close to us. In the same manner, it would seem to disappear again and then reappear some distance away. I reasoned that this phenomenon could have been the changing intensity of the light.

I then started to hear and receive radio traffic again. It was SSgt. Coffey speaking. I immediately answered and reported to CSC the strange maneuvering activity of the light we were observing and told them that just as we seemed to be catching up with the craft, it would move away instantly – or would jump instantly to another position in the sky.

Still moving eastward, we then came across two wire strand fences some ten feet apart. The first fence belonged to the forestry commission, and the second fence belonged to the farmer, whose house was centrally-placed on

the other side of the field to the far left of us. While climbing the second wire fence into the farmer's field, it was just my luck to get my foot caught, and so down I went hard onto the wet and muddy ground. Burroughs quickly helped me up, and we continued following the light of the craft, which was slowly moving east again. Trudging our way to the middle of the field, close to what has since been described as a long 'finger' of trees to our left (north of us), and which extended into the field in a westerly direction, we found the ground extremely water-logged. It was difficult to cross and slowed us down. It annoyed me that we couldn't avoid getting wet and muddied.

At this point, and while we focused on being careful not to sink, get stuck, or fall into the wet mud, Burroughs then pointed to a light in the field ahead of us and moved as quickly as he could through the remainder of the marshy field we were in and past the line of the farmhouse, which was far off to our left. I, too, quickly followed, as it was now becoming easier to maneuver towards the other edge of the field. I then saw him cross a narrow country lane into a second open field, which is where we last saw the craft. We then ran north-east across the field, and through an opening in the tree line to our right and into another part of the field. Burroughs then pointed east, and thinking he had acquired the lights again, he went charging off in that direction. It was just as I reached this field myself and saw what he was looking at that I had to call Burroughs back and point out to him that he had been looking in the wrong direction . . . *as what he had just been looking at and chasing was the flashing beacon from the Orfordness Lighthouse some 4.8 miles away on the coast!* I really wasn't in the mood at this point.[cxx]

The radio crackled again, and through SSgt. Coffey, the CSC controller, Lt. Buran, asked what was happening. I sighed and told Coffey to pass onto Buran that we had just been chasing what we thought was the light of the object, but that it was the beacon from the lighthouse.

Fig. 26: The route from the landing site, through the marshy, waterlogged farmer's field and out to the second field behind the farmhouse – a total distance of 790 yards (720 meters). The end of the white line is where SSgt. Jim Penniston stopped and where Burroughs spotted the beacon light of the Orfordness Lighthouse, as from here, one has an unobstructed line of view of the flashing beacon. The yellow dashed line represents the approx. 220-yard route that Burroughs had run according to Jim Penniston, trying to chase and catch up with the lighthouse beacon he had mistaken for the object/craft. (Satellite image from 2000. *Google Earth Pro,* 2018. Overlay artwork by Gary Osborn.)

Through SSgt. Coffey, Lt. Buran then asked if we had been mistaking the light we were investigating for the beacon of the lighthouse . . . as if this is what we had been doing all along. After the unbelievable events I had experienced, I was deeply offended and annoyed by this – especially as I remember having already reported to CSC earlier that the source of the

strange lights we were sent out to investigate was a *fully-intact, landed mechanical craft,* and had even requested a 'Helping Hand,' which is only done in Security threat situations. Also, in the forest at the clearing where the craft had landed and I had inspected it, one cannot see the Orfordness Lighthouse. And in any case, even discussing this was a non-starter, as it would have been impossible to mistake the craft I saw for the lighthouse. Lighthouses don't fly, and they certainly don't transform into black triangular objects. Anyway, I didn't want to go into specifics at this point, and just responded with, *"No! If any of you were here and had seen what we had, then you would know the difference!"*[cxxi]

I was already regretting having mentioned the lighthouse beacon and could have kicked myself, as that was just what people needed to dismiss everything we experienced. (My thoughts on that would one day be proven right).

In any case, soon after imparting that to Buran, we again spotted a bright light that we knew was the craft, and which was now some way off in the distance and to the right or south of the lighthouse. Again, Burroughs said, "Let's go," and he was off in the same direction he had just run. It was evident that it had finished playing with us and was now moving off, and this time I was hesitant to follow.

"No, Burroughs . . . it's too far away!" I shouted.

So, after what was possibly an hour of chasing the craft after it first took off, and within only half a kilometer distance, climbing over fences, and trespassing on privately-owned land that was water-logged, we never caught up with it again. It seemed that the craft had given up on this apparent 'hide and seek' activity, continuing eastwards from where we were, as if it were done with us and wasn't looking back.

Again, the location where I stopped was a field 300 yards east of the farmhouse – all part of the small area in Rendlesham known as *Capel Green* – and Burroughs had run some 220 yards beyond where I had stopped before I called him back. The craft had moved off towards the east and was now obscured by a line of tall trees, which was blocking our view of the horizon, and so I could only assume the craft must have moved off towards the coast and beyond, as that was the direction it was heading. Feeling tired, wet, sweaty, muddy and irritable, I was actually relieved it was gone. I would stress that we never went further than that second field past the farmhouse and Capel Green,[cxxii] and because the craft had now disappeared from any

observational point we were at or could use, it was there that I then made the decision to head back, as it was the only thing we could do at this stage.

Through SSgt. Coffey, Lt. Buran, asked if we were okay, and I replied, “Yes,” and he said he was terminating the investigation.[cxxiii] I informed him that we were on our way back to the East Gate anyway. He then told us to report to MSgt Chandler on arrival at CSC and also advised me to write notes about what happened after I came in. On our way back, I found it difficult to even begin talking about what we had both witnessed – although on several occasions I did say to Burroughs that it was some kind of craft, although I really had no idea what it was, and I didn’t know how we were going to explain this. He agreed.

On our way back, and because it was just a short distance away, we decided to return to the clearing in the forest where the landed craft was and where I had examined it. After we got there, it was Burroughs who noticed the indentations in the ground made by the strange landing gear I had seen. There were three depressions – each about nine to ten feet apart, creating an equilateral triangle. I crouched down to examine both the diameter and depth of the three depressions. All were around seven inches wide and one to two inches deep. We both knew we would have to come back when it was daylight and make a proper examination.

We spent a few more minutes looking around and then decided to leave the site and continue heading back, and along the way we met up with Airman Cabansag.[cxxiv] Although he had been ordered by me to go back and remain with the Jeep, he appeared to be expressing some degree of fear and distress. Like me, as well as Burroughs, he mostly remained silent as we journeyed back.[cxxv]

Chapter Four

Evidence

Back at the East Gate

Jim Penniston:

After arriving back at the East Gate, exhausted and fatigued, we found the posting van/bus waiting for us to take us back to Bentwaters base. Almost everyone expressed their worry and concern, telling us we had been 'off the grid' for almost three hours. I went with my guys who had been picked up from shift change. I assumed that Burroughs had met with the Law Enforcement patrol, as he was still on his shift.[cxxvi]

Noting what Lt. Buran had directed me to do, I knew that when we got back we would be debriefed and that I would most likely have to write out an AF1569 form – which was a 'Security Police Incident and Complaint' report.[cxxvii] I was nervous about that and a depressing, black cloud came over me thinking about it.

How could I do a full, comprehensive report on this when what I had experienced had been so extraordinary that it went against everything I had

ever known?

I thought of simply reducing all the details of the experience to a sighting of a craft of some kind that we could not identify, which was the truth in summary. Although it was an unidentified craft of unknown origin, I was certainly not going to use the term 'UFO,' which had too many absurd connotations associated with it and which immediately implied 'flying saucers,' 'aliens' and 'little green men.' At this stage, as I felt my career hung in the balance because of what we had witnessed – even though I was doing my job – to say I was totally uncomfortable with the whole situation is an understatement. Because of the nature of what we had witnessed, I then thought this was something that would most likely at best be 'played-down,' so I thought it wise to be prepared.

I boarded the bus and took a seat, and while I was waiting for everyone else to board, I took out my notebook and began to summarize what had happened by writing down a short list of the times and accompanying notes in proper chronological order. I did this so that I could simply consult the list of things I had written to be entered into the official AF1569 form, which would then be placed in the Security blotter. The purpose of these logs was not only to pass on information to those working the next duty shift, but they also provided invaluable raw data, such as the dates and times of an incident if any questions were raised later or memories had faded. Because this list was for an official report, I now wrote down the times in the formal '24-hour clock' military notation.

"0002 Notified East Gate
0015 Rendezvous / east gate
*with P-2 / P-3**

0020 Assessed possible
A/C Downing

0051 ECP established
D-1/ S5 Plot

0100 Determined not
to be A/C crash

0115 White, blue and
red yellow lights
in woods investigated
& observed

0230 Undetermined markings

0245 Origin of craft? Took off, trailed lights in woods

0345 Physical markings on forest floor
Triangular measuring
Approx 10 feet apart
1 ½ inch depressions
Round, Dinner
Plate size”

0010 Rotating East Bound
0015 Rendezvous Lost Sate
and Acft F-3

0020 Resumed Rendezvous
Acft Running

0025 ECM switched
A-1/SS Plot

0100 Determined not
to go to A/C Brand

0115 White Blue and
Red Yellow Lights
on inside Wingtip
observed

0230 Over
Oregon Coast
Lights in sight

0315 Flashed markings
on Point Flora
Transponder Morse
Report Visual Approach
1½ inch Explosions
Observed. Report
Plate Angle.

Fig. 27: The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook, with notes written on both sides of the same page. As the pages have become brittle over the years, a piece at the top of the page was accidentally ripped away – now missing. Compare the writing here with the scrawled writing on the previous notebook pages presented in the previous chapter, which were noted down while Jim Penniston was next to the craft. We can see that Jim had resumed his composure while writing the notes above. In the witness statement signed by Fred A. Buran, it is written that the investigation was terminated at 0354 hrs. SSgt. Jim Penniston's entry for the landing site evidence on his return to it, is given as 0345 hrs, which would have been some time after the investigation was terminated. Jim Penniston explained that this time was based on the time Buran had terminated the investigation, which he is certain was around 03:45 hrs, as it was only took minutes to return to the site. Its possible that a typing mistake was made with "0354," when it should have been "0345."

*Note by Jim Penniston:
I wrote down "P2" (Police 2) and "P3" (Police 3) in my notebook, but I later discovered that the call numbers were wrong based on what I had been told by SSgt. Coffey who had directed me to the East Gate, and who had referred to the two Law Enforcement men as either "Police 2" and "Police 3," or "Police 2" and "Police 4," as had later come up in my hypnosis in 1994. I was later told that SSgt. Steffens had been assigned "Police 5" and A1C Burroughs, "Police 4."

In this short summary, which took up both sides of the same page, I laid out the basics of all I was going to say. I knew not to mention anything about my close-up examination of the craft and to just keep things short and simple. I also knew that if I wrote down "UFO," to explain what I witnessed, then with all the connotations now implied by that acronym, I was sure it would have been the end of my career.

As we were driven back to CSC on the bus, a few of the guys were talking about the craft and its departure. I remember one of the airmen from 'C Flight,' A1C Richard Bertalino came and sat next to me. Although I was reserved and still reflecting on what I had witnessed, we did talk about it briefly. At one point, Bertolino asked me, "How close did you get?" I smiled, thinking he had no idea, and said, "Too close . . . way too close . . ."

Instead of trying to describe it, I then got out my notebook again and quickly did a simple sketch of the craft I saw for him.[cxxviii] When we arrived at Bentwaters (CSC), the airmen all scurried to the armory to turn in their weapons. I was the last one off the van. Standing there to meet us was MSgt J.D. Chandler. Although he didn't say a word, he looked at me with a look of *"Well? What happened?"*

I said to him, "You're not going to believe what happened tonight."

"Yeah? I would Jim," he said, seriously. "If it has anything to do with what I saw a little while ago, I believe you . . . I saw everything from the East Gate."[cxxix]

We both looked at each other, as if in complete understanding. MSgt. Chandler then thanked me for remaining calm. I was surprised by that, as 'calm' certainly wasn't how I remembered it. I had been far from calm. Chandler then told me that they had been worried as they had lost contact with us from around two and a half to three hours.[cxxx] I said I didn't know how I could explain that, other than our radios just stopped picking up a signal.

Curious, I then looked at my watch, which read 4:15 a.m. However, I was surprised to discover that the time according to everyone else was 5:00 a.m., [cxxxi]. . . *Some 45 minutes was missing.*[cxxxii]

It certainly didn't feel as if we had been out there all that time. My watch, which was a quartz digital, hadn't acted up before, and for a quartz watch to be slow or stop unless the battery dies is impossible. The battery in my watch was fine as it was still working. Also, unlike mechanical watches, quartz watches are not usually affected by magnetic fields, *unless the magnetic field is extremely strong.*

I later heard that many others – perhaps around *eighty* Air Force personnel and from different vantage points – had seen the lights in the woods and, more significantly, the take-off of the craft, as well as the strange activity of the craft in the skies afterwards – especially those in the WSA (Weapons Storage Area) control tower on the Bentwaters base.

MSgt. Chandler and I made our way into the now empty 'guard mount' room which was attached to the 'small arms' armory, and also Building 679 where CSC (Center Security Control) was located. Chandler watched as I cleared my M-16. Chandler and then told me that my Flight Shift Commander (Lt. Buran) had already left, since he was going on leave back to the States for a few days, and that the Day Shift Commander, Captain Mike Verrano, wanted to see both Burroughs and me.[cxxxiii] I nodded acknowledgement while responding with "Okay, see you in CSC," and hurried out of the guard mount room to turn my weapon, ammunition, and radio in at the armory.

The 'Security' Blotters

After clearing and doing the equipment turn-in, I went outside and felt for my notebook in my upper breast pocket to make sure I had it ready to give the updates and times for the AF1569 form completion for the controllers. Upon entering CSC, I saw MSgt. Chandler at the Flight Chief's desk with the on-coming Flight Chief, MSgt. Gulias. I hung around for a while, checking my notes, and later entered the control room asking SSgt. Dave Coffey about the AF1569 form – anticipating being told that I would be writing it.

To my surprise, SSgt. Coffey said, "The 1569 is already done. Take a look at it for accuracy." Reading through it, I was thankful that it was a brief report of what CSC were able to determine from what little they had picked up on the transmissions and didn't go into much detail. In what little it said, *I saw that the information and the times were all accurate.* I was both relieved and satisfied with the fact that there was no need for me to use what I had written down on the page in my notebook – all of which I had prepared while on the posting Metro van on the way to CSC. The report covered enough of what happened to satisfy the commanding officers. More important to me was the fact that the term "UFO" wasn't mentioned at all in the AF1569 form. I noticed that the term "unidentifiable craft" had been used, and also the term "mechanical," just as I had relayed to Lt. Buran at CSC when approaching the craft.

I turned to Coffey, "Great job," I said.

With relief and a smile on my face, I finally said good night to all in CSC and was about to exit when MSgt. Chandler said, "Don't forget to see Captain Verrano before leaving."

"No problem," I answered. "Airman Burroughs and I will go in to see him."

I then stepped outside the building and waited for Burroughs to return to CSC after his shift. I lit a cigarette while I waited and reflected on the situation. I was just happy knowing that all I had to do when going in to see Verrano was to repeat more-or-less what I had just read in the AF1569 form . . . simple.

The Law Enforcement Blotters

Just as SSgt. Jim Penniston had exited the posting van/bus at Bentwaters at

around 05.00 hrs (according to the time on everyone else's watch), and while he was talking to MSgt Chandler, the Deputy Base Commander, Lieutenant Colonel Charles I. Halt – *second in command of the twin bases*[cxxxiv] – had come on duty, and some 30 to 45 minutes later he had entered the Police Operations Center and was on his way to the Law Enforcement desk – known as "The Desk."[cxxxv] He was there to pick up the 'blotters' – again, the logs on which anything significant that had occurred on the previous shift were recorded and which gave a chronological list of everything that happened over the previous 24-hour period. Picking up the blotters was something Lt. Col. Halt would do if he happened to be out early and near the Police Station.[cxxxvi]

As he was heading to the room, Halt heard a lot of lively chatter and laughter, which stopped as soon as he entered. Halt said, "Good Morning" and asked what was going on. With a grin on his face, Sgt. Crash McCabe spoke up, saying, "Penniston, Burroughs and Cabansag were out last night chasing UFOs, sir." Obviously, it was now a topic of amusement for some people.[cxxxvii] Halt also laughed, not knowing that he would be chasing UFOs himself in less than 48 hours, and noticed that Sgt. McCabe was tidying up the Law Enforcement blotters. All jokes aside, Halt then asked Sgt. McCabe if he was serious, to which McCabe responded with "Yes sir, I am serious."

"Tell me more, and be specific," Halt responded.

During a UK conference in 2018, Halt, now a retired Colonel, related the following as to what he was told by Sgt. McCabe.

Sgt. McCabe according to Col. Halt:

> "Well, all I know is after midnight sometime[cxxxviii] I got a call on the phone from Airman Burroughs. He said, I think there's a downed aircraft out in the forest outside the East Gate. I immediately called Air Traffic Control, and I said, do we have an aircraft down? And he said, nothing is in the air and nothing is flying. I called RAF Bawdsey over at Eastern Radar, and they said nothing showing, nothing flying, nothing around. I phoned Heathrow Tower and was told, nothing in your area. I scratched my head and called Burroughs back, and told him there's nothing reported anywhere, and Burroughs says, there's something out there!"[cxxxix]

According to Col. Halt, McCabe then told him that SSgt. Jim Penniston was ordered to report to the East Gate by CSC and while there gave a brief description about the strange lights in the woods, which SSgt. Penniston and

the others had been sent to investigate, adding that they had come across something they couldn't explain.

Apparently, although Halt was amused and had quite a chuckle over it, he knew Jim Penniston quite well and knew that he had led the investigation. Sergeant McCabe also told Halt about a conversation he had held with the flight commander (Lt. Fred Buran), who was the night shift commander over at Central Security Control that night, adding that he had decided not to write a report, so McCabe said he thought it best not to enter the incident in the log, either. Considering Jim Penniston a reliable and credible witness, Lt. Col. Halt deemed the incident serious enough to log it.

"Put it in the Law Enforcement blotters," Halt ordered.

McCabe then said that the flight commander (again, Lt. Buran) had told him not to put anything about the incident in the blotters. At this, Halt paused for a moment, and then said, "Well you have to put something in there . . . they went off base, after all."

"What do I say?" McCabe asked.

"You don't have to mention a UFO," Halt said, knowing the problem. "Just write they saw lights; they thought it was a plane . . . whatever. Also, put the times in there because, who knows? Something could happen, and it would be important to have it in the log."

Col. Halt tells us that Sgt. McCabe then wrote up a brief log, mentioning that lights had been seen in the Rendlesham woods and that a response team had gone out to investigate, but nothing substantial had occurred or was found.[cxl] Apparently, Lt. Col. Halt then took all of the blotters with him to his office and read through them.[cxli]

Debriefed by Captain Verrano (Day-Shift Commander)
Morning of December 26, 1980

Jim Penniston:

After about fifteen minutes or so of waiting outside building 679, which housed Central Security Control, I saw the Police unit driving towards us in the distance. It was Burroughs and another Law Enforcement flight member. They both went into the armory to clear their revolvers. About five minutes later, Burroughs exited, and I told him we had been ordered to report to the

Shift Commander's office to give a debrief to Captain Mike Verrano.

Looking concerned, Burroughs asked, "How much are we going to tell him?"

"We are not telling him anything," I replied.

To make sure I got his attention, I then looked Burroughs straight in the eyes and said, "Look, I will do the debrief, and you say nothing, unless you are directly asked OK? I am going to keep it in general terms. This is a definite career-ender if we tell everything." Burroughs nodded. We then entered the building, passing the door to CSC and walked down the hallway to the Shift Commander's office.

It was around 7:20 a.m. when Airman Burroughs and I went in to see Captain Verrano, and we stood to attention before him in his office. Capt. Verrano looked at both of us for a moment and then speaking to us in a very steady and calm voice, he said, "Can you gentlemen explain to me what happened out there?"

I knew it was important to play it safe by sanitizing the report somewhat to ensure my future career in the USAF. Since I was the only one who got close enough to see and to examine the craft properly, I did not want to go into any great detail and felt it best to just mention what was in the AF1569 report and allow the other witnesses to speak about what they saw in the forest – i.e., red, blue and orange lights with an overabundance of white light etc – all very general. At the same time, though, I decided to test the waters and take a 'leap of faith' with the Captain by mentioning the object/craft was unidentified and of unknown origin and also give a few visual details about the craft.

Reporting for both of us, I quickly responded:

"Sir, we had been the first responders to a possible aircraft crash, and having terminated that situation, we came upon an intact, unidentified craft of unknown origin."

Just as I thought, the Captain remained unemotional, calm, and silent. I also added that the craft, which wasn't large, being three meters long and two meters high, and metallic in appearance, was on the ground for quite a while before taking off in a 'blink of an eye.' I also said it had left marks on the trees and depression marks on the ground. Although I didn't give him any more specifics, especially about the symbols I saw on the side or the design of the craft, to a certain extent what I said was completely true and accurate.

Capt. Verrano, who didn't recoil or flinch at anything I said, was now

tapping his pencil on the table while in attentive silence. After a while, he looked me in the eye and said, “Staff Sergeant Penniston, there is just no prudent way to report this.” He then looked at both of us.

“Gentlemen, what you say you experienced tonight is no longer able to be reported through Air Force channels.”

He then then gave us a brief history lesson on *Project Blue Book*, an official Air Force investigation of the UFO phenomenon that had begun in 1947 and then terminated in 1969.[cxlii]

Afterwards, and in a roundabout way, the Captain issued a warning: “It is nothing more than just one out of thousands of unexplainable sightings made each year, gentlemen, and I think that it is best to close this discussion and just leave this alone . . . some things are best left unsaid.”

He then said, “However . . .” and paused for a moment to think about what he was going to say next, and then he continued, “You saw something. Heathrow tower confirms you saw something, so I think that today, and while everything still remains undisturbed in the forest, you should go out there and inspect the area in daylight and look for any physical proof of what happened. I need you to rendezvous with me and other officers over at the woods to show us the site where you saw the object so that we, too, can see the physical evidence of what you claim you saw.”[cxliii]

The debrief took roughly 20 minutes. It was apparent at this point that the Captain had taken on board all I had said and was following this up himself. As an afterthought, Verrano then said, “After that, it is my recommendation that you both enjoy your break.”

That went well, I thought . . . *Career intact and hopefully that will be the end of it.*

It is notable that Captain Verrano never asked us for a witness statement, which was a formal requirement during or following the debrief of those involved in an event or incident on and around the bases.[cxliv]

Evidence: ‘Landing Pod’ Marks (December 26, 1980)

After we left Captain Verrano’s office, Burroughs and I entered my POV (privately owned vehicle), and on the seat, I saw the 35-mm roll of film I had taken earlier that morning of the craft, *which reminded me, I had to get the film developed.* Picking it up and placing it in my jacket pocket, I then drove

over to the Base Photo Lab to drop off the film. It was a fast 'drop and stop' at the Photo Lab.

We then left the lab and drove away from RAF Bentwaters to go home; the time was just after 7:50 a.m., and the Sun was coming up. As we were leaving the base, Burroughs was talking relentlessly about the landing site and whether we should take the opportunity to drive over to Woodbridge now, so that just the two of us could enter the forest first to look at the landing site again in daylight, and before anyone else arrived there. I did agree to do that, as I was curious to see if there was any evidence left out there of what we had witnessed before it was covered over or removed. I wanted to revisit it again in the daylight for my own peace of mind. However, at the same time, I was also hesitant about it. The whole experience had freaked me out where I also wanted to forget it, so, I was in two minds about it, and this is how it's been for me since the incident. One part of my mind wants to forget it, and another part of my mind is always curious to pursue it and to wherever it might lead. In any case, instead of going home first, we drove straight there.

I again parked the car at the east end of the logging road, and we walked into the forest to the area where we knew the landing site would be. We noticed there were other people in the forest and some activity going on, but we ignored them and continued walking.

Note: Jim Penniston:
We learned later that the landing site, where marks on the trees, the three depressions in the ground and the large hole in the canopy had been found and examined by us and others, is a distance of 930 yards (850 meters) from the east end of the logging road, and takes roughly ten or so minutes to walk there when you know where you are going. This is far less time than when we were cautiously approaching the craft earlier that morning and would occasionally stop and take cover, so as to take stock of whatever it was we were approaching and engaging with.

(See maps presented in Note 19 in the end notes of chapter, *Lifeline*.)

Within approximately five minutes of arriving at the estimated area – the time now being around 8:20 a.m.[cxlv] – Burroughs, who was about fifteen yards from me, began yelling for me to come over. He was standing and pointing to

the ground, and in particular, he was pointing to the marks left by the ‘apparent’ landing gear, as he had earlier that morning when it was still dark. As I walked over to him, my first observation of the depressions in daylight was now clear.

There, in the semi-frozen ground were *three* distinct impressions, each at around seven inches in diameter – about the size of a dinner plate. Each of the edges of these depressions were perfectly round. Also, the depressions were tapered or conical in shape and were each at a depth of around one and half to two inches at the center.

The most important thing was that these three holes or depressions were evenly-spaced apart by three meters (9.8 feet, so we later discovered), forming a *perfect equilateral triangle shape* on the forest floor. Although we had both found the impressions earlier that morning, we were still a little disoriented by the strange nature of what we had experienced, and it was just then, and in the cold light of day, that Burroughs expressed his amazement that there were actual physical landing marks. I guess it was now all too real for him, as it had been for me.[cxlvi]

However, he didn’t know that while I was examining the craft, I had made note of the fact that the craft was being held up off the ground by three landing legs or struts that were somehow made of light, even though we know that light is made out of photon particles that contain energy, it is believed photons have no mass.[cxlvii] What I saw, each of the struts resembled a straight laser beam of bright, white light – but again, all three were approximately seven inches in diameter.[cxlviii]

We also discovered freshly-broken branches scattered at the landing site and limbs missing from some of the trees. It was obvious to me that they had been broken off when the craft came down through the canopy of the trees and had landed. Looking up, there was a clear circular hole or space in the canopy. It is likely that some limbs were also sheared-off when the craft ascended a little before slowly, moving in a zig-zag motion back a distance, and then moving up above the trees, before finally taking-off. There were also scorch marks and fresh cuts on the trees at a height of about five feet and higher facing inward toward the small open clearing which became the landing site. The interesting thing about the three ground impressions is that during the time of our investigation, when we were first making our way to where the craft was, the ground temperature was such that our vehicle and even our feet couldn’t make impressions on the forest floor because the

ground was so cold and frozen – frosted over. So, noting this fact, if the craft had normal physical landing gear supporting it, then whatever that craft was, it had to be heavy.

We had been inspecting the site on our own for roughly ten minutes when the officers arrived, having now found us. Walking towards us was Major Ed Drury, the 81st Security Police Operations Officer and second in Command in the squadron. He seemed to be leading the investigation at the landing site. [cxlix] Also out there was MSgt. Ray Gulyas (Day Flight Chief), and Captain Mike Verrano. Burroughs and I showed the officers the evidence we had found, and with our direction, they began inspecting the three depressions in the ground, the broken tree limbs and the cuts and scorch marks on the tree trunks. All throughout, and because the officers were there to see it too, Burroughs expressed his excitement, disbelief, and amazement to them while viewing the physical evidence. Seeing it now in daylight, it was as if he had discovered a 'dream' that had been all too real.[cl] After some discussion on what we were seeing, the officers said that this required a proper investigation. At this point, Burroughs and I then decided to leave, and we were dismissed. As Burroughs and I began to leave to walk to my car, I was stopped by Major Drury, who asked me if I was okay.

I replied, "Yes sir, I am . . . uh, considering."

After a long pause, he said, "Go home and get a good rest."

"Yes, sir," I replied. Burroughs and I made our way back to the car at the end of the logging road. We then headed to Ipswich, where we both lived.

During the drive home, there was absolutely no discussion about what had happened earlier that morning. I suppose we were both just running through all that had happened in our thoughts, trying to absorb and process what had transpired during our shifts. It was absolutely clear to me that I had entered that forest with nothing but my thoughts on doing my job. But then after leaving the forest, everything I had believed up until that point was no more. Having had my whole worldview transformed was just so unsettling to me, as I drove through the morning rush hour traffic. My 'normal and familiar' sense of reality had been shattered, and I felt like I was in a boat, in a storm without oars and a rudder.

Lt. Col. Halt Summons Airman Edward Cabansag to his Office

At around the same time that morning when SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs were inspecting the landing site for evidence, Lieutenant Colonel Halt summoned the new recruit, A1C Edward Cabansag to his office.[cli] Apparently, Halt only had Cabansag to discuss the incident with, as he assumed, or was told, that Penniston and Burroughs were not on the base, as they had been given a six-day leave and wouldn't be back until January 2nd. This wasn't true, because in Jim Penniston's case he had taken a *three-day break* from that morning, which he had already planned, and which extended over the weekend until Monday morning.[clii]

In any case, being newly qualified, and having only been on official duty for one or two days prior to his involvement in the incident, Airman Ed Cabansag was extremely nervous and felt intimidated as he faced the Deputy Base Commander for the first time in his office. Halt wanted to know what had happened, but with Cabansag being extremely worried and anxious as to why he was there and what might happen to him because of the nature of the incident, it was difficult to get Cabansag to say anything.[cliii]

Airman Cabansag had been given a one-page, typed statement to sign in front of Lt. Col. Halt, which Cabansag did indeed sign, *although he had neither prepared it, written it, or typed it.* Being frightened, he neglected to read it beforehand, and it can be assumed that he didn't even know what he was signing.[cliv] Apparently, Halt told the terrified Airman that it was all "very hush-hush" and advised him not to talk about the incident on the base, to which Cabansag dutifully complied.[clv]

Home

Jim Penniston:

Having finally arrived at my home in Ipswich, it was around 9:20 a.m. when Burroughs and I stepped through the front door and entered the living room. It would be more correct to say that we both 'fell' through the door. That's what it felt like and must have looked like. Sitting there were my wife at the

time (Maria) and Mark Kennedy, a Security Police Sergeant, with whom I worked. Mark was there because we rented out a room to him, and he had been off the previous night, so he was having morning coffee with Maria. Both were looking at us with mouths wide open. After a second or two, Mark then asked in bewilderment, “What the hell happened to you guys?”

It was obvious we were fatigued and water-soaked, with muddied uniforms – not a sight Mark was familiar with for a normal night’s work. Rather wearily, and feeling like I wanted to collapse, I just said that we had a pretty rough night . . . and that was all I was going to say. I was then startled to hear Burroughs exclaim in a loud and almost uncontrollable voice, “We saw a UFO!”

I was stunned. Immediately my thoughts were, *What a dumbass! . . The things Burroughs will say without thinking!* Both Mark and my wife immediately started laughing at us, and Burroughs tried to explain and was even about to elaborate. However, I retorted back sharply before Burroughs could say any more, “Fine, think what you like, but Maria, I don’t want you to ever ask me about this incident again.” I was serious. Mark was no longer laughing and just sat there quietly.

Nothing else was discussed, and Burroughs, feeling a little embarrassed, then said, “I am going home and will see you later.” We said our good-byes and Burroughs left for his apartment, which was only a block away. I went to take a badly-needed shower.

After this little incident, and in the weeks that followed, I would occasionally give Burroughs a ride to work, along with Sgt. Mark Kennedy. The interesting thing about this is that, immediately after the incident, no one in our command had yet told me that I was not allowed to talk freely about it. Most people will only get one chance with me. Kennedy, and even my then wife, had now forfeited any chance of hearing me say anything about the incident. However, this did not matter because, within 72 hours, the event was to be treated as classified, and so the truth I possessed about the incident, and more, would remain largely hidden for the next fourteen years.

The Missing Law Enforcement and Security Blotters

It can be reasoned that Lt. Col. Halt had read the statement signed by Airman Edward Cabansag and had then consulted with other officers, and in doing

so, he had become aware that what SSgt. Jim Penniston and A1C Burroughs had witnessed was something far more tangible than a mere 'lights in the sky' UFO sighting. It was sometime later that Halt decided to review not just the Law Enforcement blotters (that he had ordered to be written up and had read earlier), but also the Security blotters, which were always likely to have the best and most accurate contemporaneous account of what had actually taken place.

However, the Deputy Base Commander's efforts were stymied as he discovered that somehow, someone had removed both sets of blotters, which contained the incident report.[clvi] Everyone on duty was unable to explain how and why this could have happened, and to this day, the blotters and reports concerning the first night's events of the Rendlesham incident have never been recovered or seen again.[clvii]

Evidence: 'Landing Pod' Plaster Casts (December 26, 1980)

Jim Penniston:

After everything that had happened, I was completely fried. I had never gone through such an intense night in my career up until that point, or most likely since. At that time, I did not know that it would even supersede my subsequent experiences in the Air Force and the Gulf War, too.

After a quick shower and change of clothes, I decided to stay up for a while drinking my morning coffee. In fact, I didn't go to bed as planned, as I would have done on a normal day, *but this was no normal day*. I was so wound up that I could not even think of sleeping. Then I started to question all that had happened. I had a strong feeling that this incident might just be pushed under the carpet as the days went by. Although on the career level that was a comforting thought, again, I wanted some real, tangible evidence for my own well-being and state of mind. The whole thing was surreal and there were the odd times when I had to pinch myself that this was real, and that disturbed me. Of course, there was the roll of film which I had dropped

off at the Base Photo Lab earlier, and to think I would have the developed photos in my possession was also a comforting thought . . . *but, I needed to have physical evidence of what had transpired.*

I then decided to go back to the landing site where it all had taken place and make casts of the three landing pod depressions. I felt some anxiety about it. Knowing what people are like in wanting to cover up the truth for whatever reason or agenda, I knew I had to act fast before the three depressions were either filled in or covered over, and the other evidence at the site made imperceptible.

After thinking about it for a short while, I decided to visit a British friend of mine who lived down the street. His name was Keith John, and he was an interior decorator and painter by trade. I had known him from our local pub, *The Inkerman*, which was located between his house and mine. He wasn't at home, but one of his workers was in the garage. He also knew me. His name was Derek. I asked him if he had any cement that I could use. He asked what it was for. I was not even going to try to tell him why I needed it after having been laughed at thirty minutes earlier. I just said I needed to make a cast of something. Derek said, "Well, the best thing to use is Plaster of Paris." He asked if I was going to use it immediately. "Yes," I said. Derek asked how much I would need and then mixed up the plaster in a large plastic container. Taking only a few minutes, he instructed me on how to use it and how long to wait for it to set. I thanked him and said I would buy him a pint over the weekend.

I then walked to my home, got my knapsack, and told my wife that I would be back later – adding that I had errands to run. I noted the time as being 10:05 a.m. when I left home and drove immediately out to the logging road adjacent to the East Gate – the 15-mile journey from my home taking roughly 30 minutes. As luck would have it, it was as I was walking to the landing site that I ran into others leaving the area . . . including MSgt. Ray Gulias and Captain Verrano, who had told me earlier that "some things were best left alone."

I stopped and had a brief chat with them and told them I was heading back to the landing site, as I wanted to check out some things for my report.[clviii] Captain Verrano, who was looking a little dismayed with me going out there a second time – especially after he had advised Burroughs and me to just forget all about it immediately after our rendezvous at the site earlier – told me to make it quick, because the forest service was not going to be happy

about having all of us out running around in the Queen's forest. I agreed to be quick. My knapsack contained all that I needed to make the plaster casts. I was worried they would ask what was in it, but neither asked, and I was on my way again to the landing site.

Upon getting there, I found the three pod impressions. *Good, they are still there,* I thought, as I had been worried that they may have been covered over to erase all evidence of that morning's events. I quickly poured the ready-mixed plaster into the impressions and found a tree to lean on. Then I waited patiently. I smoked a few cigarettes while standing there. The whole time must have taken around thirty to forty minutes. As I looked up, I could still see where the branches had been torn off by the craft as it landed, and the fresh scarring of deep cuts, abrasions, and burn marks on the bark on the trunks of the trees.

I then tested the poured mixture. It was hard, although I could still mark it with my finger nail. I carefully pulled up each plaster cast of the three pod impressions. They were all identical. Next, I numbered them, wrapped them in plastic garbage bags and ever-so-carefully placed them in the knapsack, since they were still damp. I then walked back to my vehicle to return home, deciding not to hand these plaster casts over to my superiors, but deciding instead to keep them to myself as tangible evidence. I looked at my watch. It was now 11:30 a.m., approaching lunch time, and I was hungry.

As I was putting my knapsack in the back of the car, to my utter surprise, along came Major Drury, and, once more, MSgt. Gulyas, and this time with a British civilian policeman in tow. I was later told that he was British police constable PC Brian Cresswell.

Major Drury quietly stood there looking at me for some seconds, as if biting his tongue.

He then asked, "Why are you back out here? I thought I told you to go home and get some rest." (MSgt. Gulyas, who had seen me earlier with Captain Verrano, remained quiet).

"I did, sir," I responded. "I'm just looking around, as I was concerned about it all – especially after what I had witnessed."

He looked at me and thought about the situation.

"That is understandable," he said, and asked me to accompany them to the landing site so I could show the police constable the evidence. Of course, I complied. After some discussion at the 'scene of the crime,' which led to the police constable and I debating over what made the three impressions in the

ground, Major Drury intervened. “I am now investigating this,” he said, looking at me, “I was sent out by the Squadron Commander [Major Malcom Zickler] to do so. Your part in this is over. Now go home and leave it all to us.” I told the Major I would, and thinking he most likely had said that to make an impression on the skeptical British ‘bobby,’ I began to head back to my car to then return to Ipswich.[clix]

Good grief! I thought – or words to that effect. From what the Major had just told me and from having previously seen Captain Verrano and MSgt. Gulyas still out there, I could see that they were taking it all very seriously . . . which, to be honest, was quite comforting.[clx]

In any case, after arriving home at around 12:50 p.m.,[clxi] I had something to eat and spent the rest of the day doing things around the house. I was still hyped-up from the incident and was hopelessly trying to occupy my attention on anything other than what had happened outside of the base, and I didn’t feel like talking to anyone. As the night drew to a close, I had a cup of hot chocolate to relax and welcomed sleep. I finally went to bed around 11:00 p.m.

Ones and Zeros

Early Morning, December 27, 1980:

Jim Penniston:

Unfortunately, the restful night of sleep that I craved had eluded me. Disturbed by visions of ones and zeros, I woke up abruptly around 1:30 a.m.

I got up for a glass of water, thinking it would help before returning to bed. I tried hard to go to sleep again. I would doze off for ten minutes or so, only to wake up again with the same visions of ones and zeros. I thought about how strange this was, and it really worried me. I then thought that perhaps it was the result of the shock of what had happened – a mental reaction of some sort. But, whereas before I could only see the ones and zeros in my sleep, now I could see them whenever I shut my eyes and especially while lying relaxed in bed. I was afraid that the trauma of this event had caused some kind of warped psychosis or something.

I got up again, carefully, so as not to wake my wife, and went to the kitchen to make myself a cup of coffee. *What does it matter? I am not going*

to be able to sleep now anyway, I thought. With my coffee in hand, I sat down at the table in the dining room. Still seeing those unpleasant ones and zeros, which now seemed to be more and more pronounced in my mind, I thought that I would hold one of the plaster casts of the pod depressions again, just to feel evidence of what I had witnessed and experienced. I picked up one of the casts that were still drying on newspaper laid out in the room, and still in disbelief, I sat at the table slowly running my fingers over it. It was still damp from being poured the day before. I could smell the mustiness of the plaster with the distinct odor of the forest floor. This did nothing to end or abate the vision of ones and zeros that were still flashing in a sequential fashion in my mind's eye.

My notebook was on the side counter where I always put it, along with my 'Restricted Area' badge, wallet and keys. I put the plaster cast back where it had been and picked up my notebook. I sat back down at the table and started to flip through the pages, looking at the symbol/glyphs that I had drawn, and reading my notes about the craft. I still couldn't rid myself of the ones and zeros, and looking back at the glyphs again, the visions of ones and zeros intensified in my mind. Because I was now able to clearly see the numbers of ones and zeros, I grabbed a pen to see if I could write them down, as if suddenly compelled to do so. I then leafed through the notebook to find some blank pages where I could write them down.

To begin, and in order to test the pen, I wrote down the date of *"27 Dec 80"* on the first page of these blank pages.[clxii]

Fig. 28: The relevant page in Jim Penniston's notebook. "27 Dec 80." Note how Jim Penniston has written the number seven in the European style with a dash through the stem of the seven.

I then turned to a new page, and at the top I started to write down the ones and zeros, which began with "01000101 . . ."

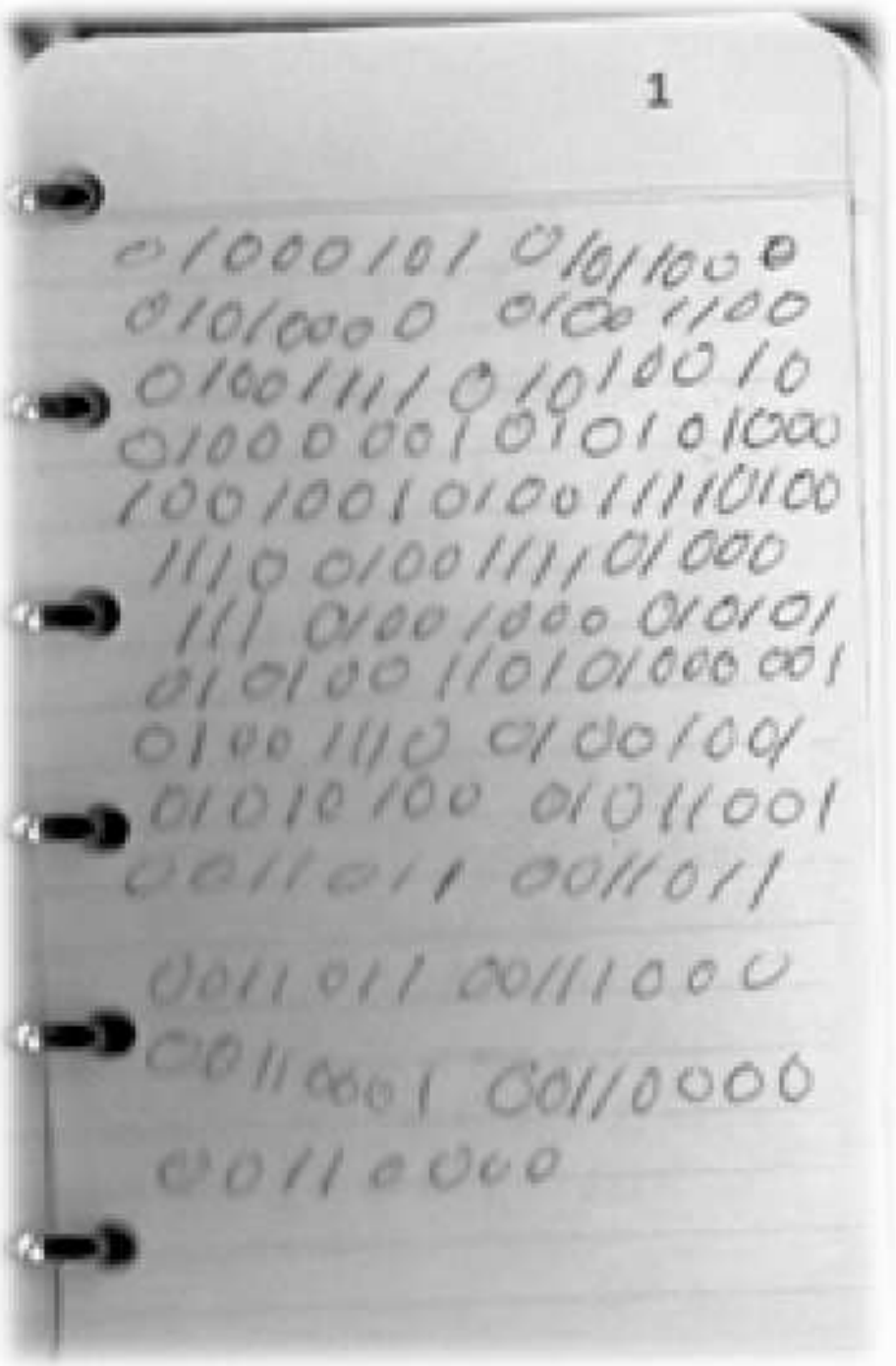


Fig. 29: The first page of sixteen pages of binary code in Jim Penniston's notebook, written during the early hours of the morning of December 27, 1980.

It was as if by actually starting to write them down I was automatically releasing them one-by-one – all flowing in a string from my mind onto the page and all in proper sequence, so it seemed. As I wrote, the anxiety and raw

feelings I had about them seemed to dissipate. As the pages were so thin, I would often write only on one side. In other words, when I got to the bottom of the page, I would turn the page and begin writing on a fresh, new page – NOT on the back of the page on which I had just written.

As a result, the more I wrote, and the more I could see, the calmer I felt – feeling even more compelled to write them down. Writing the ones and zeros I was seeing in my mind made me feel so much better, inciting a growing sense of relief. I could not write them down fast enough. Then, suddenly, while writing the second line of ones and zeros on the third page, the pen stopped working, and I frantically looked through the drawer for another pen. Finding another one, I continued with a compulsion to complete the task. Once again, while writing the first line of ones and zeros on the fifth page, the second pen I was using had also run out of ink! Agitated, I looked for another one that worked, and then finding another, I scribbled on the back of the fifth page to test it. Thankfully, it worked, so I continued on the next page and wrote another dozen pages of these ones and zeros. Then, suddenly, the compulsion to write finally stopped. The whole process took around 45 minutes, and there were no more of these ones and zeros in my thoughts or my mind's eye to torment me. There was nothing but a calm feeling and a sense of contentment that I was now free of the images.

However, looking at what I had just done, I became concerned about the stability of my mind and was aware that this was a very weird situation – definitely something that others could not possibly understand. I sat alone, wondering how and why this was all happening.

The unusual thing was that my rational mind was telling me that what I had just written was just nonsense – 'gibberish' – and that this was possibly associated with the after-shock of what had happened to me . . . perhaps related to some kind of 'post-traumatic stress.' However, at the same time, and at a deeper level, while seeing the ones and zeros in my mind, I had a sense, a feeling, that they must mean something.

This was the same feeling I had felt when I touched the large symbol on the craft. I had the feeling that this was related to some kind of communication going on between the craft and me, and at the same time I had a vague, subliminal understanding of what these ones and zeros might relate to, as there were certain words on my mind, as well as some other things that were still unclear. But now that I had gotten these numbers out of my head and onto the pages of my notebook, I consciously struggled with

these transient feelings and impressions and immediately suppressed them, as I knew it would do me no good to talk about any of this at the moment. I knew that if I went to the clinic at the base and told them about this compulsion to write ones and zeros, and that my only remedy as a means of release was to write them down . . . *well, what on earth would they think?*

Surely, they would think I was mentally unstable and had a serious psychological problem. My superiors would be alerted; I would probably spend time in a hospital and have my PRP (Personal Reliability Program) access removed, my firearm removed, and removal would mean I could not do my job as a Security Policeman. Perhaps I would even lose my job, and, of course, I had my Air Force Career to consider. Thinking about how this could impact my career placed me in the same insecure position that I was in just after I had witnessed the unidentified craft and had to report it. I knew that talking about this to anyone – especially after having already been debriefed and questioned – was not an option, and I could only hope for no reoccurrences of this 'madness' and any memory of these ones and zeros ever again. I then put the notebook away in a drawer. *The ones and zeros would not ever be mentioned,* I thought, but even this would change in the future.[clxiii]

Although my mind was still somewhat troubled, finally, I was able to go up to bed and fall asleep, and I slept soundly until late that same morning, awakening somewhat refreshed and normal.[clxiv]

UAP Incident, Morning of December 27, 1980

During the early hours of the morning of December 27, 1980, and just as Jim Penniston was writing down the sequence of ones and zeros in his notebook, another UAP (Unidentified Aerial Phenomena) incident was taking place out in the Rendlesham Forest.

Eighteen-year-old Law Enforcement Airman Lori Ann Buoen of 'D-Flight,' had begun her midnight shift (23:00 hrs, December 26, – 07:00 hrs, December 27), having been stationed at the East Gate.[clxv] The 'C-Flight' team was now on its three-day break. The gate was normally left closed and unguarded at night, but it's possible that after the incident the previous night and because the activity was concentrated at the East Gate, it was deemed wise to post a sentry on the gate in case of any curious personnel or visitors who had decided to turn up there, or more importantly, to monitor any further

aerial activity.

Whoever had given the order to post a sentry at the East Gate would not be disappointed . . . .

Lori Buoen was looking north across the dark flight line (not lighted) from her position inside the small 3-ft by 3-ft, wooden, guard shack at the East Gate. It was between 1:30 and 2:00 a.m. – the time when Jim Penniston was writing down the binary code – when Lori observed what she describes as a "*red/orange, fiery, sphere of light,*" which also had an "*eerie blue/white corona.*" It was located on the north side of the Woodbridge runway some distance away and above the tree line of the forest there.

> "You could tell it was big. It's like looking at the moon – is the moon big? You knew it was big because you could see it! You know, you knew it was off in the distance and you are thinking it's just like nothing else you've ever seen! You can't even compare it to something because there is nothing to compare it to!"[clxvi]

Lori then saw the light slowly descend into the dark tree line on the horizon and then disappear. Startled and somewhat concerned by what she had witnessed, Lori called the on-duty, Law Enforcement Desk Sergeant, who is named as Sgt. O'Brien.

According to the research of Georgina Bruni, who doesn't actually mention Lori Buoen, Lori's call came through to the Law Enforcement Office just as desk Sergeant O'Brien was talking in person with two British policemen, PC Dave King and PC Martin Brophy, who had both made their 'routine check' visit to the RAF Bentwaters Law Enforcement Desk to engage in their regular exchange of information.

Dave King was interviewed by Georgina Bruni in 1998 and confirmed that the report came on the pocket radio while he and PC Brophy were at the Law Enforcement desk on the Bentwaters base and in the early hours of December 27, adding that the report had said that there were lights in the forest at the exact same spot as the previous night. PC King, then said that he was just about to go and have a look, when he received an emergency call to attend to a post office break-in some ten miles away in the town of Otley.[clxvii] The sighting of the object could not have been "at the exact same spot," as disclosed by King, because the light phenomenon that SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs had observed and Penniston had encountered up close as a

black triangular craft, *was east of the East Gate,* and Airman Lori Buoen said she saw the object across the Woodbridge runway, which was *north of the East Gate* shack from where she was observing it.[clxviii]

After a while, Law Enforcement Corporal John Trementozzi (Police 5) was sent to join Lori, along with four of his colleagues, also from D-Flight. Apparently, the members of D-Flight had not been told what had happened the night before with the first responders of C-Flight, and it has been said that this lack of knowledge was either a consequence of the missing blotters or was due to a decision made higher up in the chain of command.

Like Airman Lori Buoen, Corporal John Trementozzi and the four personnel from D-Flight also saw a strange light north of the Woodbridge base runway. Like the night before, they saw different colored lights – red, green and white lights – with or on the object in the forest, which were not flickering or blinking, but steady, and the object was quiet. However, the lighted object would suddenly disappear, then re-appear at another spot. This activity was repeated and there was no particular pattern as to where it reappeared. They announced what they were seeing to the control tower. Trementozzi says that he and the others in his team had observed it for a good hour and a half and adds that it "wasn't stars, and that it wasn't a plane . . . it was just terribly weird!"[clxix] Trementozzi says that he had informed the Shift Commander, Glen Whitehead, of what they were seeing, and that the sighting had also been announced to the Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt.

Apparently, Security Police, Second Lieutenant Bonnie Tamplin and Master Sergeant Bobby Ball, were sent out to investigate. After a while, Airman Lori Buoen and Corporal Trementozzi, who both had been following developments on their radio, then heard Lt. Tamplin call out to MSgt. Ball, "Bob, Bob, where are you? I can't see anything." Buoen recalled the fear in Lt. Tamplin's voice and is on record as having said Lt. Tamplin was frightened to death, "She was so scared, and this was our Lieutenant!"[clxx]After this, all radio contact with Lt. Tamplin was lost for ten minutes.

The story goes that at one point the vehicle that Tamplin was driving had been struck by light beams and that a small sphere of blue light had raced through the vehicle. It is said that all the power went off, and the vehicle stalled and died. At this, Lt. Tamplin panicked and ran from the scene, having left her firearm inside the vehicle. There were rumors that she had crashed the vehicle and had even discharged (fired) her weapon. After this incident, Lt. Bonnie Tamplin was relieved of duty and was not seen again – and the

thoughts of most people was that she had been traumatized by the event – which, of course, infers that she was involved in a real paranormal incident involving a UFO – and had been posted in a new position elsewhere in the USAF.

As noted, it was said that Lt. Col. Halt had been notified of the incident. However, since retiring as a Colonel in 1990, Charles Halt has always said that he didn't know the details of what had happened on this night until many years after the incident.[clxxi]

"Hey, it's the UFO guy!"

Like SSgt. Penniston, Airman John Burroughs was on a three-day break, since his shift had ended after the first night's events and would not be on duty again until Monday night, December 29th. According to Burroughs' account, while the UAP activity had started up again in the early hours on the night of Saturday the 27th, he was asleep at his rented lodgings in a house in the nearby town of Ipswich, which, again, was just up the road from where Jim Penniston lived.

Burroughs says that he had suddenly awakened around 4:00 and 4:30 a.m. He was certain that this was because he had sensed that another incident was taking place or had. Like the compulsion Jim Penniston had felt to write down the sequence of ones and zeros that were running through his mind, Burroughs states that he had a distinct urge and compulsion to return to the forest, *as if something was actively drawing him back out there again.*

Burroughs says he couldn't get back to sleep, and that he then got up out of bed and decided to head straight to the Bentwaters base.

> "I was on my first day of break, which would have been Friday. I went to bed that night, and I woke up in the middle of the night, and it's almost like what Jim said. I felt something had come back and something had happened. I got up. I went up to the base early in the morning. The on-duty flight the night before when I went up there was still on."[clxxii]

When Burroughs arrived, he walked up to the Law Enforcement desk. On duty was a guy he knew, Sergeant O'Brien. Apparently on seeing Burroughs, O'Brien mockingly exclaimed, "Hey, it's the UFO guy!" Perhaps because he didn't get the reaction he wanted from Burroughs, O'Brien stopped joking around, and after some small talk, he then became quite serious. He then told Burroughs that there had been another UFO sighting earlier that night (December 26), involving personnel from 'D-Flight,' and that a fiery red/orange object had been seen north of the runway at Woodbridge, which descended slowly into the forest. Burroughs was also shown the report that the Desk Sergeant had been completing when he first walked in. Apparently, this shocked Burroughs to the core, as it seemed to be a replay of what had happened the previous night, and it confirmed his suspicion that whatever it was would be back.

Burroughs was then told about the lights that had moved through the vehicle driven by Lt. Bonnie Tamplin, and that she had been so freaked by it, she was relieved of duty.[clxxiii]

Quoting Burroughs:

> "One of the things that he clarified to me was that the Shift Commander – was a female, her name was Tamplin – had went out into the area where the lights were seen, and she had an object go through her vehicle, the vehicle shut down, and it completely upset her so much she had to be relieved of duty." [. . .] ". . . she should have been on duty the third night, which she wasn't, ok? But that's the only confirmation. I did see the report. He [Desk Sergeant O'Brien] did say it to me, and I'm still working on some people are now coming forward that are talking a little bit about that night."[clxxiv]

We are told that O'Brien then asked, "What the hell do you think is really going on?" Burroughs didn't have an answer.[clxxv]

Burroughs says he then went to the dormitories on the base to find two friends of his who were also off-duty and on their break. After hearing that the strange lights had been back, he and the two off-duty airmen discussed the phenomenon and agreed with Burroughs that it was a good idea to look into this mystery themselves and hopefully figure it out. They then planned to stay on the base most of the day, and when the sun went down, which would have been around 4:00 p.m., they would change into their civvies (civilian clothes) and then head out in a car to the forest where the activity had taken

place on the first night, just to see if they could experience anything.

Chapter Five

“Special Mission”

Born in Phoenix City, Alabama on October 15, 1948, Staff Sergeant Monroe Ruby Nevels was a photographer and ‘Disaster Preparedness’ technician at RAF Bentwaters during the time of the Rendlesham Forest Incident, December 1980.

It should be noted that both SSgt. Monroe Nevels and Security Supervisor, SSgt. Jim Penniston had ‘Top-Secret’ clearance, and both were ordered out into the forest to lead their own investigations into the strange lights first observed in the Rendlesham Forest – SSgt. Jim Penniston on the morning of December 26, during which he encountered an intact, unidentified black triangular craft of unknown origin which had landed in a clearing in the forest, and SSgt. Monroe Nevels on the evening/morning of December 27/28, who was ordered by the Base Commander, Colonel Ted Conrad, to lead a special mission out to the ‘landing site’ to gather any evidence or proof that would substantiate what was reported on the first night’s events of December 25/26 involving SSgt. Jim Penniston. In this and the next three chapters, we will use Monroe Nevels’ testimony as written and sent to us on February 10, 2017, as the main narrative.

Most investigative reporters and researchers tend to focus on Charles Irwin Halt, as he was the most senior officer to be directly involved in the incident, having been the Deputy Commander of the twin bases at that time. And so most people who are familiar with the incident will already have an overall picture in their mind of what happened on the ‘third night’ based on Lt. Col Halt’s involvement. However, as it all began with Monroe Nevels on the late afternoon/evening preceding the events that took place with Halt, and because he is one of the most reliably-honest individuals to have been involved, it is important to show how the other witness testimonies compare with what Monroe Nevels witnessed and experienced, as he was out in the forest with Lt. Col. Halt the whole time throughout the incident and during the time when these other witnesses also became involved – some of whose

testimonies run in stark contrast to what the consensus of witnesses had stated happened.

Monroe Nevels:

My military career began as a United States Marine on June 7, 1966, serving in the Vietnam War. As a Marine, discipline, loyalty and dedication to my mission was completed wherever it took me. My cross-training, which began in April of 1968, was with the U.S. Army Chemical, Biological and Radiological (CBR) school at Fort McClellan, Alabama. After attending specialized courses in the NBC field, my skills taught me to be very disciplined in search, detailed observation, and collection.

My chosen specialty was Chemical Warfare Defense, and while in the Marines, this is what I taught until my discharge on June 5, 1970. I both enjoyed and believed in what I taught, and my students and friends knew this. I was dedicated to honesty and truth and saving lives through practical application, and I was mission-oriented. I lived by the principle of NEVER asking anyone to do anything that I was not willing to do myself. I taught with conviction and practical application through experience and enjoyed training my students through research on the Soviet Union and integrated this into my training. I loved teaching this way to keep it interesting. It was my way of connecting through practical application.

I enlisted in the U.S. Air Force on March 1, 1971, starting as an aircraft structural mechanic on UH34D and CH 53A helicopters and also as a jet engine mechanic. I was then transferred into Disaster Preparedness NCO training in the USAF in early 1972 due to past experience in the Marine Corps. For this career path, I trained at Army, Navy, and Air Force technical schools (three in total). These were the NATO SHAPE School in Germany, the Army Schools on CBR, and NetOps in Alburque, New Mexico. At that time, there were only forty or fifty others in that Disaster Preparedness field in the USAF. We were trained for aircraft accidents and simulated nuclear weapons on board, as well as biological and chemical threats.

While at RAF Bentwaters, my responsibility was to train all base newcomers for RAF Bentwaters/RAF Woodbridge, as an introduction for what to expect with training, exercises, and preparation. I loved this class, as it gave me an opportunity to present their tour as a positive experience. In addition, I trained the regular initial and refresher training courses in these

fields, as well as Specialized teams such as the Disaster Preparedness Response Teams (DPST) and other teams, as well. During this time, I had the privilege of working for Capt. Sue Jones (Disaster Preparedness Officer) and Col. Theodore "Ted" Conrad (Base Commander). I enjoyed working with these superiors and respected them, and sometimes I would be given special assignments and took pride in what I did. I taught as an instructor in these fields until my discharge in November 1984.

I list the above only to establish my credentials. I believe my background and expertise lends somewhat to what I am about to say in terms of credibility. With this basic introduction, it will be evident that what I am about to say about my experience with the Rendlesham Forest Incident is honest, truthful, and in no way exaggerated, twisted or altered. This is how it happened. So, with this, let's begin.

Afternoon of Saturday, December 27, 1980.

On the afternoon of Saturday, December 27, 1980, around 15:00 hrs (3:00 p.m.), I received a knock on the door of my house located in Base Housing at RAF Woodbridge. Second Lieutenant Bruce Englund from Security Police introduced himself and said he was there to speak with me. After entering, he began to go throughout my residence, checking each room. I didn't have a clue why this was happening because I knew I wasn't in any trouble. He then told me the reason for his behavior. He said he wanted to know if anyone else was in the home. I told him that my daughter Elizabeth was with me, and that she was three years old.

He then asked me, "Does she [my daughter] understand what we may talk about? Because what I have to say is Top-Secret."

I told him no, but to calm his concerns, I then let my daughter out into the backyard to play, and we began to talk.

Lt. Englund then announced that he was sent by Colonel Theodore Conrad (Base Commander) on Top-Secret orders to pick me up for a special mission. I asked why.

"Because you are the only one he [Col. Conrad] can trust to give him an honest evaluation about what you see," he said.

A brief introduction of events was then given by Lt. Englund.

Lieutenant Englund told me that close to midnight on the night of December 25, 1980, the London Control Tower had contacted the RAF Woodbridge Tower and said they had an object showing up on their radar screen which appeared to be hovering right above them over the Woodbridge Tower. They asked if Woodbridge Tower knew about it in hopes to identify it. The staff at Woodbridge could not determine what it was.

He then told me about the lights in the woods in Rendlesham Forest, which the Security and Law Enforcement NCOs on duty had witnessed, and which they thought might be a crashed object of some kind, so they were then ordered to investigate. The lieutenant added that different stories emerged. He mentioned SSgt. Jim Penniston and Airman John Burroughs, and the rumor that one of these men had been "abducted" . . . taken aboard an unidentified craft.[clxxvi]

Lt. Englund then added that Colonel Conrad was presently at the Woodbridge Officer's club, where the officers were having a party,[clxxvii] and that when we got though our investigation, he would be waiting for us, and I would have to go back there and report to him whatever I had witnessed during our investigation. Other things were mentioned, but due to the dissipating daylight, which was now quickly fading, we decided to leave and to take my daughter with us so we could proceed to the RAF Bentwaters Chapel where my wife was attending a Catholic Ladies function and leave my daughter with her. We left my home with my daughter at around 4:30 p.m. In the vehicle with us, we had night-vision goggles, and I had also taken my camera.

During our ride of approximately seven miles, Lt. Englund and I briefly discussed the situation, but decided to keep it to a minimum until we were alone. We then dropped my daughter off with my wife Patricia, who wanted me to explain the reason why I was leaving our daughter with her. I told her not to ask questions because I was unable to accommodate them. I did inform her that my mission was classified and to never again ask me or probe me for answers. With this done, Lt. Englund and I left for the East Gate at the Woodbridge base and from there we would proceed to the supposed 'landing site' in Rendlesham Forest, as Lt. Englund knew where it was.

It was now quite dark while driving to the site, and Lt. Englund talked more about the events that had occurred so far. He gave me instructions where to drive and pinpointed things that had happened two nights earlier. Somehow he knew where to go, as if he had already been out to the site or

had been given directions. When we reached the end of a logging road going into the forest, he then instructed me where to stop. I then parked the vehicle, and we exited it. I was astounded because I hadn't been out there before, and looking at the Corsican Pines I said, "Man, those trees are tall."

Englund said, "Yeah," and told me that the craft had not knocked into any trees or broken any tree limbs as it manoeuvred through the trees, which we both agreed was impossible.[clxxviii]

As we made our way to the landing site by foot, we began to feel static electricity. This effect was quite significant, mainly around the landing site and a couple of places along the road. Lt. Englund told me again that the object had zigzagged through the trees, adding, that the object was very quiet, and no disturbance had been noted.

Landing Site

At the site, which was a small clearing in the woods, Lt. Englund showed me the indentations of what was reported to have been the object's three landing pods. There were three indentations that were the same distance apart from each other, making a perfect triangle. Each were exactly the same in appearance, which I estimated to be about an inch and a half deep, probably more at their center. Significant was the fact that the ground was uneven. There was a slight bank, and so the three indentations were at different levels, but again, evenly spaced – much like a tripod adjusted to accommodate an even load.[clxxix]

I noted abrasions and charcoal-black/grey burns or scorch marks on the trees, all of which were evenly-spaced in a circle and affected only on the side of the trees facing inward towards the clearing where the three triangular-pattern ground indentations were located.[clxxx] I didn't think much of it at the time, but later as I thought about it, I then made some sense of it. The three indentations in the ground all being at the same density and depth but each on uneven ground, as well as the burn marks on the surrounding trees, looked as though the object was somehow controlled by a *gyroscope*. A gyroscope spinning like a top could explain this phenomenon, as the object would then remain level and stable.[clxxxi]

Light Phenomenon
(Logging Road, Rendlesham Forest. Approx. 19:00 – 20:00 hrs)

After a few minutes of standing in the landing area and with the static still in the air, Lt. Englund and I decided to head back to the Woodbridge Officer's Club to join the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad. This time Lt. Englund was driving.

While exiting the area on the logging road that led into and out of the forest, another incident occurred on the left side (south) of the logging road, while we were driving along which caused us alarm. We had been out there for some time, and it was now somewhere between 7:00 and 8:00 p.m.[clxxxii] I saw with my naked eyes what looked like a bright, lighted object slowly pulsating in the trees. We had a pair of night vision goggles borrowed from the pilots' supply locker with us, and while looking through the glass, I saw something that looked like an 'eyeball' slowly pulsating, as though it was blinking. The object had a green outer edge, which was due to the goggles picking up on the heat radiating from it, and what I saw was a continuous blinking activity. The object was pulsating very slowly, getting larger, then softer with the black center – or what looked like the black pupil of an eye – always remaining visible and intact. It was like the object was observing us . . . waiting.

I asked Lt. Englund to stop the vehicle. I then passed him the goggles so he could see what I saw. I then decided to exit the vehicle, and while doing so, I observed the electrostatic effects around me had become more intense with the hair on my head, my arms, and clothing. I knew something wasn't right. I remember rubbing my arms to get rid of the static. Now, every time I took a few steps forward, the light of the object we were observing would become noticeably brighter, also blinking and pulsating much faster. But when I stepped back, it would dim again, and the blinking became slower. When I re-entered the vehicle, the light would then grow even dimmer, while its blinking or pulsating activity slowed right down.

At this point, and because of the unnerving behavior we had witnessed, Lt. Englund seemed upset and a little anxious to leave.[clxxxiii] I was scared, too, as I didn't know what we were looking at, but I wanted to be sure of what I was to report. So, I asked him to just let me do what I was sent to do. He appeared to be somewhat agitated or frightened and wanted to leave. I was trained as a combat Marine, and when my commander gave me an order, I did what I was

ordered, even if it meant my death. I asked Lt. Englund again, “With all due respect sir, please let me do what I was sent to do!” I then exited the vehicle again, and, once more, the object, still some distance away, got brighter and pulsated faster. I repeated this motion two or three times, and the same thing happened each time, as if whatever it was knew we were there and was reacting to what I was doing. After my observations were complete, I said we could go, and Lt. Englund and I immediately proceeded to the Officer’s Club at RAF Woodbridge.[clxxxiv]

Monroe Nevels (USAF-ret). February 10, 2017.

Chapter Six

“It’s Back . . .”

Woodbridge Officer’s Club

Saturday Evening, December 27, 1980

Inside the Officer’s Club at the Woodbridge base were seated some forty senior officers and their significant others[clxxxv] enjoying their belated Christmas ‘cover dish’ dinner before the evening’s activities. These activities would include the Combat Group annual awards, during which due recognition was given for those who had made special accomplishments during the year. Amongst the senior officers in attendance, smartly dressed in their dinner suits, were the Base Commander, Colonel Theodore (Ted) Conrad, the Deputy Base Commander, Lieutenant Colonel Charles I. Halt, Captain Mike Verrano, and the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler, who was in uniform.

The exact time when Lt. Englund and SSgt. Nevels arrived at the entrance to the Woodbridge Officer’s Club, both looking the worst for wear after being out in the forest, is uncertain. But from what Monroe had said about having observed the lighted object off the logging road between 7:00 and 8:00 p.m., one would logically assume the time to have been around 8:00 to 8:30 in the evening.[clxxxvi] It must be mentioned, though, that Ted Conrad, the Base Commander and Colonel at the time, is on record as having said that SSgt. Nevels and Lt. Englund arrived at the Officer’s Club between 9:00 and 10:00 p.m. Furthermore, Col. Halt told us personally that Ted Conrad could be correct about the time, adding that the party did not start early.[clxxxvii] So, from this we would determine the time of arrival to have been around 9:30 that evening.[clxxxviii] Of course, this then begs the question, *what were SSgt. Nevels and Lt. Englund doing all that time in the forest from 8:00 to 9:30 p.m.? Could this sighting have taken place later than the estimated time given by Monroe Nevels?* It is possible, seeing as Monroe is on record saying that he and Lt. Englund were out in the forest a very long time, and that one source gives the specific time of 9:09 p.m., when Lt. Bruce Englund entered

the club.[clxxxix]

(Like the previous chapter, all quotes by Monroe presented in the next three chapters are largely from his written testimony and accompanying notes sent to the authors on February 10, 2017, followed up with a few quoted comments Monroe had made during subsequent Skype calls).

Monroe Nevels:

> "Lt. Englund and I walked up to the door of the Officer's Club, where we were immediately met by the Maître D' who had been told by Colonel Conrad to wait for us. He immediately went in to notify the Colonel that we were there. After some seconds, Base Commander Conrad walked over and stood with us just outside the door to talk.
>
> The Colonel and I then briefly discussed what I witnessed while out in the forest. Afterwards, he asked me my thoughts and if I believed this incident deserved another look and further investigation. After what I had just seen, my answer was a short, "Yes, Sir, most definitely." Colonel Conrad then ushered us both into the club."[cxc]

In the many interviews he has conducted over the years, Charles Halt (now a retired Colonel), has expressed a different version of what happened in the Officer's Club that evening. His account of his own involvement, which he made public after he retired from the USAF in 1990, has largely been accepted without question and is often quoted and published as the version that is factual and true. This is because for many years the testimony of Monroe Nevels had not been made available to the public – especially some of the finer details of what he witnessed and knows had transpired between the hours of 3:00 p.m., on December 27, and 5:00 a.m., on December 28, 1980. However, the significance of Monroe Nevels' own involvement that afternoon and evening of December 27, before and during the incidents

which Colonel Charles Halt has described from his own perspective, are both profound and enlightening and presents us with an alternative view of what happened during the events of the so-called 'third night' of what has now become known as the Rendlesham Forest Incident.

"... came bursting in"

Colonel Charles Halt often leads into his account of the third night's events by setting the scene with the Officer's Club on the Woodbridge base. He tells us that on the evening of Saturday 27th, he and the other senior officers with their families were attending a Combat Group annual awards party there at 'Woody's Bar,' where they also enjoyed a belated Christmas dinner. Col. Halt says that just as they had just finished the main course and were waiting for dessert, Bruce Englund, the on-duty Flight Lieutenant for the Security Police Squadron that evening,[cxci] had entered the premises. Col. Halt will say that Englund appeared to him, looking as "white as a sheet,"[cxcii] "shell-shocked,"[cxciii] excited and upset, and also "red-faced" – the latter description contradicting Halt's first, which is the one he often uses to describe the Lieutenant's appearance.

In the book, *The Halt Perspective* (2016), which Col. Halt co-authored with UFO researcher/author John Hanson, Col. Halt is quoted as having said, ". . . the on-duty Flight Lieutenant for the Security Police Squadron [Lt. Englund] came bursting in, with his Ml6, and all red-faced and upset . . ."[cxciv]

Reflecting on the Lieutenant's character, Halt has said that this was unlike Bruce Englund, who was mature and not easily excited, adding that ". . . he wasn't your typical Lieutenant."[cxcv] This is perhaps because, like Monroe Nevels, Englund had been in the Marine Corps before joining the Air Force, and a Marine is never considered a *former* Marine; he is always a Marine. Halt expounds on the fact that after four years in the Marine Corps, Bruce Englund then went to college and got himself a degree before joining the Air Force, adding that Bruce was a little more mature and was a down-to-earth, no-nonsense guy. ". . . very business-like – and to see him excited kind of bothered me a bit because I had never seen him like that."[cxcvi] "I mean he was a pretty seasoned guy. He didn't get excited very easily."[cxcvii]

Although Monroe Nevels had said that Lt. Bruce Englund had expressed some anxiety and fear when they had both been confronted with the light

phenomenon they had observed earlier just off the logging road in the forest, it would appear that Englund had calmed down somewhat when entering the Officer's Club – even though he was still undoubtedly shaken by the experience. But as one can see, according to Monroe's description of what happened, Lt. Englund had hardly "rushed" or "burst into the club," as Halt has often described the scene. As Monroe had stated in his written testimony to us, he and Lt. Englund *were quietly ushered* into the club by the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad, who had likely been notified they were on their way and was expecting them.

"He said, 'It's back'"

While reciting his account, Col. Halt will then continue with what Lt. Englund had told him just after entering the club . . . and again there are slightly differing versions.

In the book he co-authored with John Hanson, Halt is quoted as having said that after the Lieutenant "came bursting" into the club, that he then walked straight over to him and said, *"I've got to talk to you privately, right now."*[cxcviii] In most of his interviews, Halt will often state that as soon as Lt. Englund had walked over to him in the club that Englund then told him, *"It's back."* Halt will recite this part of his account as if Englund had initially told him this personally with no one else present. Because of the dramatic value of what Lt. Englund is alleged to have said to Lt. Col. Halt, this is how it is often portrayed in the media. It is a fact that in several of the TV or video documentaries about the Rendlesham Incident, Lt. Englund is played by an actor entering the Woodbridge Officer's Club, pushing through the crowd of partygoers carrying either an M-16 or Glock rifle over his shoulder to tell Lt. Col. Halt "It's back." Halt is often portrayed by an actor sitting at the bar inside the club casually enjoying a drink, sometimes in a friendly conversation with others, when he is interrupted by Lt. Englund and taken aside by him to talk.[cxcix]

Other times, Col. Halt will say Englund had told *both* himself and Col. Conrad, "It's back." For example, in another recorded interview, Halt said, "We were having a Christmas party and the Lieutenant who was on duty – a police officer – came into the party and said I need to talk to you and the Base Commander right now."[cc] In another, Halt said, "He came in all excited,

grabbed Ted Conrad, my boss and I, and said, 'We have to talk, it's back'."[cci] In the same interview Halt describes what happened next: "Then Col. Conrad and I looked at each other. So the only private place that was a small facility was in the cloakroom."[ccii]

> "And he [Lt. Englund] said the UFO is back. He said, 'It's back.' I said, 'What's back?' He said, 'The UFO's back.' I said, 'How do you know that?' He said, 'I've seen something.' I said, 'Where?' He said, 'Outside the East Gate, in the woods.' I said, 'So what are you doing out in the woods in the East Gate?'[cciii] "The Base Commander and I looked at each other, you know, in disbelief."[cciv]

These inconsistencies in Col. Halt's account are of course trivial and would be viewed as natural with anyone recounting something that happened decades earlier and on different occasions – many of the inconsistencies excusable due to memory failure. However, according to Monroe Nevels it's a waste of time analyzing what Col. Halt had said took place in the Officer's Club just after they had arrived and what was said between him and Lt. Englund . . . *"as none of that happened! – especially as Col. Halt has always described it."*[ccv]

If we take Monroe's testimony seriously, which we do, then this appears to be evident in the fact that although SSgt. Monroe Nevels was also at the Officer's Club – and it should be noted that according to Monroe, everything he has laid out in his testimony is endorsed by Colonel Ted Conrad – *Col. Halt does not mention SSgt. Nevels at all at this stage,* even though we are told by Monroe that Lt. Englund walked into the club with him. In fact, in all of Col. Halt's interviews, when describing what happened in the club, *it's as if Nevels was never there and the only person he saw enter the club and spoke with was Lt. Bruce Englund.*

"We took some lightalls out"

In another interview conducted by Alejandro Rojas for *Open Minds Radio* in November 2010, Col. Halt says the following concerning his alleged discussion with Lt. Englund:

> "And I said specifically, 'What happened?' He said, 'We

> were out in the forest, we saw something, we saw some lights, we couldn't explain it. We took some lightalls out.' I said, 'You took WHAT out into the forest?' I mean this is going off-base in a foreign country. He said, 'Well something's going on out there.' So, myself, I, was a bit concerned, and more concerned about the public relations with what fallout of this all could have been."[ccvi]

Note that Col. Halt does not mention that Lt. Englund had told him he had been out in the forest with SSgt. Monroe Nevels. The important point here, though, is that Halt said that Englund had told him, "We took some lightalls out."

> **Note:** The NF2 Lightall --more correctly known as an 'NF2 Light Cart'-- is a heavy piece of machinery. It basically consists of two 445-watt Mercury vapor floodlights mounted on a large box-like-wheeled platform made out of sheet metal. The lights are set on a retractable platform and can be raised up to any height between 78 and 144 inches, using a hand-crank to illuminate areas that are dimly lit. The lights at the time of the Rendlesham Incident, were powered by a five horsepower, Briggs and Stratton generator driven by a gasoline (petrol) engine. Lightalls are used to supply lighting for emergency, security, or remote-area operations. They are mostly used on the flight line to give additional lighting during aircraft maintenance and munitions handling at night.[ccvii]

Monroe Nevels never mentioned to us that lightalls or any heavy equipment had been taken out to the forest when he was with Lt. Englund that afternoon at the landing site. Monroe said that no one else was present when they inspected the site. In any case, it would have been impossible for Englund and Monroe to have handled the lightalls all by themselves. The lightall, which is a heavy piece of machinery, must be transported by trucks – far too cumbersome a job for Englund and Nevels to manhandle – especially if there were more than one, as it requires a team or patrol to transport and deploy them. But we would ask the reader to take note of what Lt. Englund is reported to have said here, because for any researcher looking into what happened on the third night, *it is not made clear 'when' exactly the lightalls were first deployed in the forest; the number of times they were sent back to be refuelled and deployed again; and by 'whom' and on 'whose orders.'* It

seems the deeper we probe into what happened during the third night's events, this issue of the lightalls, which keeps coming up, does much to thwart every attempt to establish a proper timeline.

The Room

In the testimony Monroe Nevels sent us and what he said during subsequent discussions online, it is made clear that when the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad, had brought him and Lt. Englund inside the Officer's Club that they were immediately ushered by him into a room. When we told Monroe that Col. Halt had referred to it as a cloakroom, he replied that he didn't know what the room was, but it was away from the guests who were dining in the main room or bar and added that this room could have been the cloakroom, or reception room of the club.[ccviii] In any case, after having read through Col. Halt's account many times, and having listened to and watched a number of interviews and videoed-conferences he has done over the years in which he says he only became aware of what was happening when Lt. Englund entered the club, what was truly startling was hearing Monroe tell us that waiting in that room was Lt. Col. Halt, who was sitting with his subordinate, the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler (later Lieutenant Colonel). It was as if, like Colonel Conrad, *they too had been expecting the two NCOs to arrive.*

Monroe Nevels:

> "We then entered a room with tables and chairs. In fact, there were about two or three tables set up in there, assembled as one long conference table for the purpose of this meeting, as ordered by the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad. Sitting at the table were senior officers who had been waiting for me and Lt. Englund to return. At one end of the table to the sides sat Major Zickler (in uniform), and Lt. Col. Halt. I believe Colonel Gordon

Williams, the Wing Commander was also there, but I cannot be certain. In any case, Col. Conrad had me sit at one end of the table, while he sat at the other end with Lt. Col. Halt to his left.

While there were others present, I do not recall everyone in the room because in my mind I was still very focused on what I had just observed, but there were around twelve people in that room, including me and Lt. Bruce Englund. I remember there were officers who had command of the civil engineers and were responsible for ordering the equipment that was needed out there, like the lightalls for example.

There were also other units such as Medical, and of course Security under Major Zickler. Anyway, the situation was discussed, although I suspect some decisions had already been made before we had arrived. It was obvious that everyone in that room knew what had been happening, and it was up to them to bring anyone else into the program. However, aside from Colonel Conrad and Lt. Englund, I personally don't think the others knew I was involved with the brief foray into the forest to the extent I had been until I had arrived. They knew Lt. Englund was involved, as they knew he had been sent out by Conrad.

Because I had been out there and because of what I had conferred to him briefly at the door, Colonel Conrad then asked me again if I thought that it deserved further investigation. I gave him the same answer, and he then told me that

> I was to go out to the landing site with Lt. Englund and continue the investigation, and basically these were the final words between us before preparations were discussed.'

As for the dramatic discussion that Halt has always said he had with Lt. Englund concerning the returning UFO, it should be noted that Lt. Col. Halt was the Deputy Base Commander and answered to Col. Conrad, the Base Commander, and ultimately above him the Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon Williams.

Surely, in this situation – and because it was Conrad who had sent Lt. Englund to pick up SSgt. Nevels and accompany him to the landing site – like Nevels, Englund would have reported straight to Colonel Conrad? As we will see, it seems that although everyone was aware that Lt. Englund had been out to the forest, Conrad *did not want it known* – especially by Lt. Col. Halt – that he had specifically sent Lt. Englund to pick up SSgt. Nevels and accompany him to the landing site to look it over and to see if it warranted further investigation.[ccix]

Monroe himself told us that he had only talked directly with Col. Conrad first just outside the entrance to the club in the presence of Lt. Englund, and emphatically states that he and Englund were ushered straight into the room where the senior officers were seated, as if they had been expecting them to arrive. Monroe told us that as far as he is aware no discussion took place between Lt. Englund and Lt. Col. Halt when they first entered the club, nor when they both entered the room.

However, if Halt did talk with Englund while in the room without Nevels noticing, or even later when plans were being discussed to go back out to the forest – which may be how Halt had received the information about the lightalls having been taken out there – then Halt has never mentioned being told by Lt. Englund that Conrad had specifically sent him to collect SSgt. Monroe Nevels so he could take Nevels out to the first night's landing site and investigate it for any evidence or proof of what had been reported by SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs.

In fact, it does seem, from what has been said by Col. Halt in various interviews, that this is the case – i.e., *that Lt. Englund did not brief Lt. Col. Halt on this, and neither did Col. Conrad,* which makes one wonder what

was actually discussed in the club and in that room before Nevels and Englund had arrived – because as Monroe said, Lt. Col. Halt was sitting in the room waiting with Col. Conrad and Major Zickler and the other officers, as if all had already known what had transpired earlier that afternoon.

It appears that Monroe's mission was meant to be carried out 'on the quiet' and in secret, and it is worth mentioning again, that the reason why SSgt. Monroe Nevels, an NCO (non-commissioned officer), was given the mission to investigate the site in the first place, is because above all others, Conrad trusted Nevels, who was unaware of the first night's events and would be looking at all this objectively to find what evidence could still be out there and to report back with an honest, reliable and sensible evaluation of the facts he personally wanted or needed to know.

During a radio interview Charles Halt did in 2014, the host, Jimmy Church, asked Col. Halt about *who had actually made the report to the Lieutenant that it was back?* Surprisingly, Halt responded with, "I don't know. Somebody saw it off the base. I never did find out who, you know? In fact, I was upset when he [Lt. Englund] came in and said it was back. I said, you know, "You're off base again? What?" I was quite concerned. We didn't go off base, I mean, not in uniform."[ccx]

From what we now know, Halt's reply may seem disingenuous. Surely he would have assumed that Lt. Englund had seen for himself the phenomenon he was reporting? Halt must have known that Englund had been out in the forest when the issue of what was to be done about the phenomenon was being discussed in the room of the club with Colonel Conrad. But Halt's response does imply that he had no prior knowledge of the 'special mission' ordered by Conrad, and which Nevels and Englund had been involved in earlier that day before they entered the club to report back to the Base Commander. Furthermore – and this is quite a revelation in light of the fact that the "It's back" quote has become a key phrase in RFI folklore . . . *Monroe denies ever having heard the words "It's back" mentioned in the Officer's Club, as attributed to Lt. Englund.*

Monroe Nevels:

> "Because I was there with Lt. Englund all the time and witnessed everything that

> was being said, I will honestly state that nowhere in this briefing were the words *"It's back!"* ever mentioned, as reported by Col. Halt in his many interviews over the years, to have been said by Lt. Englund, or anyone else for that matter."

Monroe's statement above is interesting in light of the fact that during an interview conducted in 2010 by the folklorist and UFO skeptic, Dr. David Clarke, the former Base Commander, Ted Conrad had told Clarke that the comment, "It's back," was relayed to him by Lt. Col. Halt, and that he didn't know who told Halt that or why, adding that the statement might have been simply an "attention getter."[ccxi] We cannot reject the possibility that Lt. Englund had told Lt. Col. Halt this without Monroe's knowledge, but Halt's account that Col. Conrad was present and had heard this, too, from Englund in various interviews is now certainly in doubt.

Preparations

Obviously, it was noted from the previous two nights that the phenomenon made its appearance in the early morning hours. So, after the short briefing by Colonel Conrad regarding his investigation, Monroe says that the officers involved then began to make plans to get whatever equipment was needed out to the site, as it was already dark and getting late. However, going by what Lt. Englund is purported to have told Lt. Col. Halt, it would appear that the lightalls had already been deployed in the forest earlier that afternoon. As Monroe had told us, transporting the lightalls from the Bentwaters base to the forest would have been the responsibility of the civil engineers, who would have been ordered by the officers that were present in the room at the Officer's Club and ultimately on Col. Conrad's order.

If any of this quoted conversation as claimed by Col. Halt did take place at some point, and that Col. Halt was told by Lt. Englund that lightalls had already been taken out to the forest, then we have to look again at the possibility that, knowing it would soon be getting dark, the Base Commander, Col. Conrad, had told the commanders who were in control of the civil engineers that lightalls be deployed in the forest before Lt. Englund

went to collect SSgt. Nevels. The lightalls may have been stationed at the location in the forest which later became the staging post so that from there they could be deployed to whatever spot was deemed suitable. It is more than likely that Lt. Englund, who had known where the landing site was, had supervised the deployment of the lightalls to the forest on Col. Conrad's orders before going to collect SSgt. Monroe Nevels at around 15:00 hrs (3 p.m.) that afternoon, which is why this isn't mentioned in Monroe's testimony.

To date, the question has never been asked as to *how long the discussion in the Officer's Club had lasted, and when exactly Halt left to prepare to go out to the forest.* Jim Penniston and I approached Col. Halt about this. Col. Halt's response was: "*We met with Bruce for about 10 minutes.*"[ccxii] It was interesting that Halt mentioned Bruce (Englund) only in terms of the discussion that took place in the room at the Officer's Club, when Monroe, who was also present, had said there were twelve people in that room. But at least we had Halt's answer as to how long the discussion was.

Now, the following is a key moment in Monroe's memory. . . .

> "Each organization represented had left to retrieve their equipment and were to report at the East Gate site. As we started to leave, Lt. Col. Halt came over to where I was still sitting at the end of the table. He kind of leaned forward across the table towards me and said, "Sergeant Nevels, do you mind if I come along?" I was surprised and thought this strange . . . *a Lieutenant Colonel asking a Staff Sergeant?* But I didn't pay it too much mind and I said, "*No, not at all . . . yes, of course you can come along.*""[ccxiii]

In all his interviews, Colonel Charles Halt has never once mentioned having asked SSgt. Nevels if he could tag along – which is understandable seeing as he outranked Nevels. And again, in all the years since the incident, Halt has never publically acknowledged Nevels even being present at the Officer's

Club.

This is an interesting detail related by Monroe, because in the numerous interviews he has engaged in over the years, Col. Halt has always presented his own version of what was discussed while in that room with Col. Conrad. Col. Halt says that after Englund had told them the UFO was back, that he and Conrad looked at each other as if it was a problem that had come at a bad time. However, as was his duty because he was the Base Commander, Conrad had to remain at the club, as he had to make a speech and give some awards that recognized people for their deeds and accomplishments the past year. So then, the responsibility fell on Halt, who tells us that Conrad had then told him, "Why don't you go out and see what this is all about?[ccxiv]

In a recorded interview in 2017, Col. Halt says he was told to "Go out, put this thing to rest, investigate it; get this behind us, basically."[ccxv] This version of events, which states that Col. Conrad had instructed/ordered Halt to go out there and put the matter to rest, is quoted frequently in the literature on the Rendlesham Incident. For example, there is this quote from Georgina Bruni's book, which she wrote after she interviewed Col. Halt in 1998:

> "Colonel Conrad then instructed Halt to assemble a group of personnel and investigate with the aim of debunking the saga once and for all. Apparently, the officers felt it was now getting out of control."[ccxvi]

The following is from the book, *Encounter In Rendlesham Forest* (2014) by Jim Penniston and John Burroughs, with Nick Pope as the main author:

> "Halt conferred with Conrad over what to do. It was clear that one of them would have to take charge of the situation and go out into the forest. It was Conrad's decision to take, as the senior officer. Perhaps because he felt it was important for him to present the awards, perhaps because he was skeptical that there was any substance to the UFO sightings, or perhaps because as the old military saying goes, "rank has its privileges", Conrad made his decision: he would remain at the social function. Halt would go out into the cold December night, into the forest, and investigate these latest UFO sightings. As he walked out of the building, he had no idea that he would be walking into history."[ccxvii]

In the same book, Nick Pope also expresses the view that after being told by the Base Commander to go out into the cold and damp forest to investigate

this problem while his fellow officers were enjoying a convivial evening in the warmth and comfort of the Officer's Club, that Lt. Col. Halt's mind-set was a mixture of frustration, determination and curiosity, and that he no doubt felt as if he had been handed the short straw. However, Col. Halt had often expressed his skepticism, and especially his frustration with the rumors that had been going around over the last two days about the UFOs, which had now become a distraction for the personnel on the twin bases, and that he had a job to do to finally put it all to rest.

Col. Halt:

> "I wanted to go to put it to rest, but I did think I was wasting my time. It's thirty-two to thirty-five degrees, the wind is blowing and its cold, out in the middle of nowhere."[ccxviii]

It is interesting that Nick Pope does not neglect to say that in Col. Halt's mind there was no doubt a spark of interest and curiosity also.

Monroe Nevels:

> "Colonel Halt has stated he went along to debunk this event, more as a skeptic. I did not observe this attitude with him. To me, it was an adventure for him and he wanted to be in on the action."[ccxix]

However, Col. Halt's claim that the Base Commander Col. Conrad had ordered him to assemble a team and go out to investigate is contradicted considerably by what Monroe Nevels says he had later heard . . . *and from Ted Conrad himself.*

Note by Monroe Nevels:

> "I later learned from Ted Conrad, and for his own reasons, not mine, that he did not want Col. Halt involved in this mission, and that he had actually ordered Halt not

to get involved."[ccxx]

On the public record, the most that Ted Conrad had come close to saying that Lt. Col. Halt had defied an order not to go out there is this quote from an interview Conrad did with Dr. David Clarke in 2010: "Halt decided to ride along with the shift leader, which he did."[ccxxi] As we now suspect, Halt didn't *literally* ride along with the shift leader (Lt. Englund), but because of his rank as Deputy Base Commander, and his own apparent interest and curiosity about the phenomenon, it does appear as if he took command of the mission that was specifically given by Conrad to Lt. Englund and SSgt. Nevels to continue.

Ted Conrad's statement that this *was Halt's decision*, simply removes all notion of Conrad having ordered or suggested that his Deputy (Halt) lead the investigation to the forest. Apparently, we are being told that it was simply Halt's decision, and NOT an order made by the Base Commander.[ccxxii]

Lt. Col. Halt assembles his team

Colonel Charles Halt says that on Colonel Conrad's orders (which is now doubtful, having noted what Monroe has stated in his testimony), he then began to assemble his team. It has been said that by virtue of the fact that Lt. Englund was the on-duty Shift Commander that night, Halt picked Englund first to be on the team.[ccxxiii] We are told by Halt that he then turned to the Security Police Squadron Commander Major Malcolm Zickler, who was sat beside him in the room and said, "I need one of your senior NCOs to go with me, take me out there and show me what's going on."[ccxxiv] Halt adds that he asked Major Zickler, "Who's your on-duty NCO?" And adds that Zickler then mentions Master Sergeant Bobby Ball. Halt said that he knew him and had replied, "Good, I want him to come by the house, I'm going home to change clothes. Come by and pick me up in about twenty or thirty minutes."[ccxxv]

Quoting Col. Halt, from the interview conducted by Alejandro Rojas, 2010:

> ". . . and I talked to a Police Commander, Mal Zickler, and I said, *'Who do you have available?'* He said, *'Well Master Sergeant Bobby Ball is available, he's on duty*

> *tonight.'* I knew Master Sergeant Ball, very responsible person. I said, uh, *'Can you have him collect me at the house in about thirty minutes?'"*[ccxxvi]

But then in another interview with Jimmy Church in 2014, Col. Halt says he told Major Zickler:

> "I need one of your senior NCOs to go with me, take me out, show me what's going on, and Bruce Englund, who was the Lieutenant . . ." [Halt doesn't complete what he was going to say] "And I said uh, to Zickler, 'Have them come by the house and pick me up,' because I had a suit on. I wanted to change clothes'."[ccxxvii]

After mentioning Lt. Englund, Halt says, *"have them come by the house and pick me up,"* as if he is including Lt. Englund along with MSgt. Ball. In fact, in Georgina Bruni's book, based on her interview with Col. Halt in 1998, it is said that Halt had told Lt. Englund to collect MSgt. Ball before picking him up – assuming Halt's thoughts were that they all ride to the forest together.

The problem with this apparent 'appropriation' of Lt. Englund by Halt into his account is that Monroe Nevels maintains, and resolutely, that after Colonel Conrad had told him (Nevels) to continue the investigation, he and Lt. Englund left the Officer's Club to go to the 'Disaster Preparedness Office' at the Bentwaters base to both calibrate and collect the Geiger counter equipment, also taking his camera and other things he needed. Monroe swears that he was not instructed by Lt. Col. Halt to do this and that Lt. Englund could not have been ordered to pick up MSgt. Ball by Halt, and neither did he go and collect Halt with Ball, because Englund was with him (Nevels) the whole time and would never have disobeyed an order. In our discussions with Monroe, he assertively stated that Lt. Bruce Englund was with him when he left the Officer's Club and was with him throughout the remainder of what was essentially his continued mission that night, as ordered by the Base Commander, Colonel Ted Conrad.

Monroe Nevels:

> "As we left the Officer's Club, and after Lt. Col. Halt had asked if he could come along, Halt went off to grab some

> equipment from his office at RAF Bentwaters base and then went home to change his clothes – his home being located on the domestic housing area of the same base. Lt. Englund then continued to be my escort, as we drove to the Disaster Preparedness Office at Bentwaters to pick up a few items we might need. I was methodical with my work, and as a Disaster Preparedness Tech, I knew and did my job professionally. I had brought along my Nikon F3 and a 105mm lens, just in case, as I represented the base Photo Lab photographer as much as I represented Disaster Preparedness. I was and am a Professional Photographer and had my own dark room and processing equipment to develop any photos I had taken. So, it was a habit of mine to always have my camera with me. I also brought along a flashlight, an AN/PDR 27 Radiac Meter (Geiger Counter), a field jacket, plus a few other items. Lt. Englund then drove me back to the forest."

Monroe Nevels assures us that he went to pick up the equipment he needed on his own initiative and that he was accompanied in this task by Lt. Bruce Englund.[ccxxviii]

As noted, from his response, Col. Halt had told us that the discussion in the room only lasted ten minutes. If Nevels and Englund arrived around 9:30 that evening – and this is only a rough guess based on what little has been said or gathered concerning the time they arrived – then this would mean that the discussion in the room ended around 9:40 or 9:45 p.m., which left over two hours for Col. Conrad to attend to the awards that evening. We would assume that shortly after the discussion in the room, Nevels, with Englund, had left the club, as did Lt. Col. Halt.

But what is perplexing about this is the part in Col. Halt's account when Halt says he had arranged things with Major Malcolm Zickler, with Halt telling Zickler to have MSgt. Ball come and pick him up from his home in 20 to 30 minutes. As noted, Halt says this as if both he and Zickler were still in the room at the club. This would mean that MSgt. Ball would have had to collect Lt. Col. Halt around 10:15 p.m., at the latest. However, as we will soon see, we find that MSgt. Ball had collected Lt. Col. Halt much later. But first, let's examine what Lt. Col. Halt says he did before he was picked up from his home to go to the forest.

Disaster and Preparedness Office

Colonel Charles Halt has said in numerous interviews that before he went to his own office to pick up some items, and then home to change into his fatigues for the forest, he first visited the Disaster Preparedness Office himself at Bentwaters, and asked the officer there – Captain Sue Jones – for a key NCO who was on duty, as he needed someone with a Geiger counter to prove once and for all that there had been nothing out at the supposed landing site two nights before.

Charles Halt:

> "So I went to the Disaster Preparedness Officer and said [to Captain Sue Jones] 'Would you have one of your key NCOs – whoever is on standby – go over to your office, pick up an ANP-27 Geiger counter and calibrate it?' And I knew who. She told me who was on duty. It was Sergeant Nevels. I knew he was a professional photographer, and had a degree in photography, so I said, 'Have him bring his camera along too,' so she got on the phone and called him."[ccxxix]

This quote by Col. Halt, again indicates that he was not aware that SSgt. Monroe Nevels was at the Officer's Club and present in the room where he and the other officers had discussed what should be done about this apparent "UFO"-related problem. As discussed, it is likely that Lt. Col. Halt also wasn't aware that Col. Conrad had received the report from SSgt. Nevels at the door of the club as to what had taken place earlier when he and Lt.

Englund had been at the landing site and had listened to Nevels' advice that the investigation be continued.

In an interview with his co-author John Hanson on the book, *The Halt Perspective,* Halt denies all knowledge of Monroe having been out there earlier until sometime later.

Charles Halt:

> "If Monroe had been to the landing site prior to our visit, he never mentioned it when we went out.
> In fact, he wasn't sure where the site was. His reaction when we found it was surprise. It certainly didn't happen the night we went out. Conrad did not have time during Englund's shift to go, and Monroe was home babysitting, as his wife spent the evening at a chapel program. Englund had to go and fetch him so he could participate."[ccxxx]

As we can see, it appears that Halt had no knowledge of Monroe's mission to the forest earlier that day and thought Monroe had been at home babysitting, but again, Halt makes no mention of having seen Monroe in the room at the Officer's Club and asking Monroe if he could go with him out to the forest that night, as recalled and stated by Monroe in the testimony he sent us. It is interesting that Halt acknowledges that Lt Englund had to fetch Nevels "so he could participate," but when Halt assumes Englund did this is still open to question. He could, of course, be referring to the part in his account when he says that he, MSgt. Ball, and Lt. Englund had collected SSgt. Nevels from the DP Office, which is something we will look at later. Also, it wasn't until Englund had escorted Monroe to the landing site for the first time earlier that afternoon when it was still daylight, that Monroe knew anything about it, and he certainly wouldn't have known where to find the landing site again in the dark. It was Lt. Englund who knew where the landing site was, and although it has not been properly explained as to how he knew, there is a simple and logical answer to how he did. It is possible that Englund was either given instructions where to find it by Col. Conrad, or had accompanied Conrad to the landing site on the morning of December 26th, only hours after the first incident.[ccxxxi]

The account that Col. Halt gives about visiting the Disaster Preparedness office is almost the same account that made its way into Georgina Bruni's

book. However, Halt is reported by Bruni as having *called* the Disaster Preparedness office instead of going directly there in person, and that he had made this call before leaving the party – meaning Halt had made the call from the Woodbridge Officer's Club where the belated Christmas dinner and awards party was taking place:

> "Before leaving the party Halt made a call to the Disaster Preparedness and spoke to the chief of the department, Captain Sue Jones, who told him that the officer on stand-by was Sergeant Munroe Nevilles [sic]."[ccxxxii]

Again, it seems strange that Lt. Col. Halt would either call or go directly to the Disaster Preparedness Office to ask what NCO was on duty for the weekend to then be told that SSgt. Nevels was on active duty – *especially after he had asked SSgt. Nevels earlier if he could tag along and just as Nevels and Lt. Englund were leaving the club.*

Monroe Nevels:

> "Colonel Halt has said repeatedly that he visited or called Captain Sue Jones and asked who was on duty for the weekend. He also said I had a 'babysitting problem.' These are both lies.
>
> The Base Commander, Colonel Conrad, was the reason I became involved in this incident, and Lt. Col. Halt had *absolutely no idea* that I had been out to the site when I returned to the club to report to Col. Conrad. There is no way that Halt could have known this. If Halt *was* told by Col. Conrad that I had been out there checking the landing site for any evidence or proof to substantiate the first night's events, then it was not until I reported in at the club with Lt. Englund. However, I doubt this, and even still, Halt wouldn't have known that Col. Conrad

> had actually ordered me out there earlier that day (late afternoon) and didn't know that fact until 2003. Halt has never admitted to any of this, and I have challenged him on this several times and still he insists that I am wrong."

It is clear from what Col. Halt said, as published in the book he co-authored with John Hanson, that he didn't know until much later that Monroe had gone to the landing site with Englund, and not until sometime after the third night's events, which could indeed have even been as late as 2003. As Monroe had written in his testimony, it was in 2003 when Halt had discovered that Colonel Conrad had ordered him to investigate the landing site with Lt. Englund.

The following is an extract from the February 1993 conversation that Halt – then a retired Colonel – had with Larry Warren and his then co-author Peter Robbins, close to the Pentagon. We quote this extract, as Peter Robbins said he had tape-recorded the whole conversation:

> Col. Halt:
> "The whole cop squadron was going crazy on us here now, everybody's seeing things. So [Base Commander] Conrad had to stay and make the awards, and I said, "Well, I'll go home and get my fatigues on and go out and get rid of this, once and for all."
>
> Peter Robbins:
> "And the rest is history."
>
> Col. Halt:
> "Yeah, and that's how I got involved. I just happened to pick up my little recorder *and just happened to think, well, I better take Nevels.* He was on standby for disaster preparedness, so he came along so that we can take a Geiger counter . . . ."[cccxxxiii]

As we can see, Col. Halt doesn't say he was ordered or told by Col. Conrad to go investigate, and from what Halt had added, it is as if Nevels' involvement on the third night began merely as an afterthought made by Halt that Nevels should be part of the team.

Monroe Nevels:

> "At such times, it seems everyone wants in on the 'action.' I didn't just 'fall into this,' and neither was I taken along as an afterthought, as Lt. Col. Halt would have people believe. I was assigned a mission from Colonel Conrad, whom I respected and just wanted to do the best job I could for him. What we ran across on that night was so serious that if you had higher-ranking Colonels telling you to go out there, they had to know. Col. Conrad sent me out there because he knew I was the only person on the base who would tell him honestly what I saw."[ccxxxiv]

According to what Georgina Bruni learned, and possibly from Col. Halt himself, before leaving for the forest, Halt had *reached* SSgt. Monroe Nevels – implying that he talked to him on the phone directly – and had instructed him on what equipment to bring along, also reminding him to bring his camera.[ccxxxv] However, if true, it's more likely that Halt had asked that Capt. Sue Jones phone SSgt. Nevels and inform him of what equipment to bring along, and again, Halt did say that Capt. Jones called Nevels, and possibly while Halt was present at the office, as this was said within the context of Halt having *visited* the office.

It is possible that this was also when Col. Halt says that it was arranged that he would meet with Nevels at the DP Office to pick him up after he had gathered what he was instructed to bring along.

However, again, there is a problem with this account, as Monroe Nevels denies unequivocally that Halt had visited or called Capt. Sue Jones that night, and also denies receiving Capt. Jones' call to instruct him on Halt's behalf on what to do, *and that Halt is either mistaken, or that this whole story by Halt is a fabrication.*

What is even more baffling is that in the notes with the document Monroe sent us, which was his written testimony for this book, Monroe writes that

Col. Halt had stated in an interview, *that he had actually taken him* [Monroe] *back to the Disaster Preparedness Office to collect the equipment*, but stresses the point again that this is untrue and that it was Lt. Englund who had taken him, not Halt, and that Halt had nothing to do with him collecting his equipment from the DP Office, or the mission he was entrusted with to continue – except to perhaps accompany him and Lt. Englund to the forest as part of their continued mission, as Halt had requested of him.

Monroe Nevels:

> "Check the repeated stories of Halt's involvement. Halt has also made an issue of taking me to the Disaster Preparedness Office to pick up gear, but it was Lt. Englund who did that and took care of me while I again attended to the mission I was given, ordered by Col. Conrad."

After having said that he visited or called the Disaster and Preparedness Office, Col. Halt continues his account by saying that he then made his way to his own office on the Bentwaters base, where he picked up his miniature pocket cassette recorder, which he often used to speak into when making observations and notes.[ccxxxvi] Apparently, Halt also picked up a hand-held image intensifier or night vision device called a *Starlight Scope*, known as the AN/PVS-2. Georgina Bruni informs her readers of the following, and this is where it is mentioned that Halt had instructed Lt. Englund to collect MSgt. Ball:

> "Having instructed Englund to collect Master Sergeant Ball and arranged to meet Nevilles, Lieutenant Colonel Halt made his way to his office to pick up his pocket recorder, a fresh set of batteries, utility earphones and a couple of miniature audio cassette tapes. He then jumped into his sports car, taking the short cut to his home at the Bentwaters domestic site, where he changed into his military field attire."[ccxxxvii]

Soon after getting himself prepared, Halt tells us that a Jeep had arrived to pick him up. Here we will quote Col. Halt from an interview conducted in

November 2010, on what happened after he had been picked up from his home:

> "We went down to the Disaster Preparedness office, and Sergeant Nevels was already there with his camera, and I said uh, *'Take one of your uh Geiger counters, an ANP/27, uh, just in case so we can show that there was no radiation out there.'* So he picked up a couple and he said, *'Well which one do I take?'* I said, *'Well calibrate both and see which one's the best.'* He said, *'Both about the same.'* I said, *'Well pick one.'* So he did, and off we went."[ccxxxviii]

In the next quote from the book co-authored with John Hanson (2016), Col. Halt says that he watched SSgt. Nevels calibrate the two Geiger counters, instead of saying he told Nevels to pick one:

> "The police came by in a jeep and picked me up (Master Sergeant Bobby Ball) and I don't remember who else. We then went over and picked up Sergeant Nevels. I watched him [Nevels] calibrate two ANP-27's, and we picked what I thought was the better. Actually, they were both probably very good . . . then we bundled into the jeep, and drove across the flight line."[ccxxxix]

Quoting Monroe Nevels during a Skype call with the authors on July 27, 2017:

> "Again, Lt. Englund and I were going out to continue the investigation and I did calibrate two Geiger counters because one was found to be faulty, but this was with Lt. Englund being present, NOT with Lt. Col. Halt or anyone else. And when I returned to the forest again WITH Lt. Englund, *Lt. Col. Halt was already out there, so how could we have taken him? And Lt. Col. Halt certainly didn't take me."*

Who collected Lt. Col. Halt in the Jeep?

As noted, in the last quote made by Col. Halt above, Halt had stated that the police came by in a Jeep and mentions only MSgt. Ball and adds *that he doesn't remember who else,* and it is inferred that he and MSgt. Ball then picked up Sergeant [Staff Sergeant] Nevels with no mention of Lieutenant Bruce Englund. However, during a radio interview with host Jimmy Church in 2014, Col. Halt said the following:

> "They came by in a Jeep . . . Englund and Ball, and I think, Ban . . . no, no, Bustinza maybe. I'm not sure who the other person was at that point."[ccxl]

Having been puzzled by all these conflicting accounts, in an email dated February 3, 2019, Jim Penniston and I asked Colonel Halt, WHO had actually collected him from his home and then drove him out to the forest? We also asked him, who else was in the vehicle with him? Col. Halt responded with the following:

> "Before I left the Woody Bar, Zickler said he would have Ball [MSgt. Bobby Ball] go with me. I said OK, as I knew Ball. I went home to change. Ball and Englund came and picked me up. Englund was driving. There was another cop in the Jeep. It was Bustinza. We went to the DP office and met Nevels. He picked up the counter and we all left. All of us rode to the forest. Englund was still driving."[ccxli]

So, now Col. Halt says that Major Zickler had told him he would have MSgt. Ball go with him, *as if Zickler had arranged this with Ball himself.* Col. Halt had stated earlier that he didn't know who else was in the Jeep with MSgt. Ball, who had come to pick him up, and he says this as if MSgt. Ball was driving. But now he recalls that Lt. Englund was driving and that Bustinza [Sgt. Adrian Bustinza] was also in the Jeep.

As the reader can appreciate, there is a huge problem with all this because . . .

> 1) Based on her interview with Col. Halt, Georgina Bruni tells us that Halt had ordered Lt. Englund to collect MSgt. Ball,

which removes all responsibility from Major Zickler, who would have arranged the pick-up if it was true that Halt had arranged with Zickler that Ball pick him up from his home, as claimed.

2) Monroe says that Lt. Englund was with him the whole time when they left the Officer's Club, and that after picking up the equipment from the DP Office, it was Englund who had driven him to the forest.

3) We are told by Col. Halt in the book he co-authored with John Hanson (2016) that the police came by his home in a Jeep to pick him up, and he mentions MSgt. Ball, *and says he doesn't remember who else* and that they then proceeded to the Disaster Preparedness Office on Bentwaters to pick up SSgt. Nevels.

4) In an email to the authors dated February 3, 2019, Col. Halt tells us that Ball and Englund came to pick him up; Englund was driving, and Bustinza was also in the Jeep, and that they then went to the DP Office and met Nevels, who picked up his Geiger counter and all rode to the forest with Lt. Englund driving.

5) As Monroe Nevels had already told us during a Skype call (July 27, 2017): *"When I returned to the forest again, Lt. Col. Halt was already out there, so how could we have taken him? And Lt. Col. Halt certainly didn't take me."*

As mentioned, Monroe told us and emphasized that he was not in any vehicle with Lt. Col. Halt, and it was Lt. Englund who drove him to the forest after picking up the equipment from the DP Office. In any case, we can see that the apparent contradictions between Monroe Nevels' and Col. Halt's versions of the events are difficult to reconcile, just as they are between what Halt had said concerning Malcolm Zickler, and what Zickler had told Georgina Bruni. It would appear that someone isn't being forthright or truthful in their accounts.

As noted, Col. Halt had told us in his email dated February 3, 2019, that Sgt. Adrian Bustinza was in the Jeep when he was picked up by Lt. Englund and MSgt. Bobby Ball. This would certainly be a revelation for most researchers of the Rendlesham Incident, who know that Col. Halt has said many times in his earlier interviews, when asked, that Sgt. Adrian Bustinza was NOT involved in the events that had taken place on the third night.[ccxlii]

Today, Col. Halt will now say that he *does* remember Bustinza being there that night, and that his previous denials of him being present that night were due to the fact that he didn't know Bustinza's name at the time. In other words, he didn't realize that the Sergeant who was present that night in his team, was in fact Adrian Bustinza – *the same person who had come forward in 1984 to talk about his own involvement.*[ccxliii]

For anyone absorbing all this for the first time, one would think that the apparent confusion as to how each of the men had become part of Halt's team would perhaps be given more clarity by the account given by Adrian Bustinza during various interviews he has made over the years. For many who are not familiar with Bustinza's testimony, it would certainly be interesting to see what Adrian Bustinza has had to say, as one would think that his own involvement could perhaps shed more light on what happened and clear up some of the inconsistencies and contradictions that are evident between the accounts given by Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels . . . but not so. As we will see, the fact is that there are glaring inconsistencies in Bustinza's own accounting, which has made our attempts to uncover all the facts of what happened, and in some agreeable chronological order, ever more puzzling and frustrating. And it has to be said, that after analyzing all of Adrian Bustinza's account and trying to make sense of it, one comes away confused, disturbed and annoyed. It is as if someone had deliberately rolled a grenade under the events as told by the witnesses, which had then exploded, scattering the painstakingly pieced-together 'third night' narrative – which was already

problematic – all over the place!

Enter Sgt. Adrian Bustinza

Sgt. Adrian Bustinza was the D-Flight 'Security Police Acting Commander' at Woodbridge on the night of December 27, 1980. What follows has also been gathered together from various sources.

During his rare 2015 interview on *Phenomenon* Radio, KGRA,[ccxliv] Adrian Bustinza, who was the only non-commissioned officer assigned to the Woodbridge base that night, says he was patrolling the base in his CJ-7 Jeep. Bustinza then adds that he received a call on his radio telling him he was to drive straight to the East Gate at RAF Woodbridge, where some strange light activity in the area had been reported by the airman on duty there.

In the interview conducted by researchers Ray Boeche and Scott H. Colborn (April 15, 1984), Bustinza does not say that he received a call, and only says that he was on his way to the Woodbridge base *around 12:00 midnight*, as a normal part of his duties, and that after having arrived there, one of his patrols had then told him that he had sighted a strange light or object of some sort – adding that the airman at the East Gate didn't describe it, and just said it looked like a bunch of lights . . . like a fire in the area of the forest.[ccxlv] (This seems to have been a replay of the first and second-nights' events at this point.) During his August 29, 2015 *Phenomenon* radio interview, Bustinza recalls that the airman on duty was Airman Markham, who told him that he had seen strange lights outside of the base, which looked like a fire in the forest. Bustinza adds that the airman didn't want to stay out there *"because it was something different than what they had ever dealt with before."*[ccxlvi] Bustinza says that he told the airman that the lights were not on the base and that they had to maintain their posts and that the airman was to report anything else he saw.

In the same interview, we are told that Sgt. Bustinza then contacted CSC on the Bentwaters base by radio and remembers one of the personnel in the 'Whiskey Tower,' which was at the WSA (Weapons Storage Area) on the Bentwaters base, had also come on the radio stating that they had seen strange lights. Apparently, this generated a lot of excitement on the radio and Bustinza had to tell everyone to calm down, saying that they would communicate by landline if they had to. Bustinza says he was then

summoned back to the Bentwaters base and went to the Security Specialist post to brief Master Sergeant Clarence Washington (although he wasn't sure if it was him) and other officers who were on duty, telling them that there was some commotion going on outside the Woodbridge base, and that one of the airman had been startled by strange lights in the forest.

Now, according to Adrian Bustinza, it was while at the Bentwaters base that he met Airman John Burroughs in the Security area.

Adrian Bustinza:

> "I ended up back at Bentwaters and I remember that's when I ran into John, or I saw John up there and I was wondering, you know, what John was doing in the Security area. Normally, Law Enforcement had their own building, we had our own."[ccxlvii]

As noted, Bustinza says he went to the Security Specialist post. It's possible that after spending some time out in the forest with his two friends for several hours,[ccxlviii] Burroughs was back on the Bentwaters base at this time, which would have been sometime after midnight, and this is how Burroughs learned about the activity taking place in the forest. However, Burroughs seems to give a different account:

> "I went over to the dorm [on the Bentwaters base] and found a couple of my friends, and we, after talking about the whole thing and the fact that they couldn't understand what was going on, we decided we were going to go back out in the woods that night. So, I had no idea what was happening in the woods when I got there. We went out, we did, we spent our day, we ate, we did some things and that night we came onto the base – Woodbridge. We came through the front gate. One of the guys had a car and when it came through the front gate, the gate guard said, *'Hey, what are you doing here?'* And I said, *'Well. We're going out in the woods.'* He says, *'Well guess what? They're already out in the woods and stuff is already happening.'* So, we went from there to the East Gate."[ccxlix]

As we can see, Burroughs says that he and his two friends went to the front gate of Woodbridge base, and it's not clear if he is saying they went there from the forest after being out there all day, or that they had driven there from

the Bentwaters base after coming back from their day in the forest. However, Burroughs and his friends may have gone to the Bentwaters base first after coming back from the forest, and that they then decided to drive out to the Woodbridge base having heard what little was perhaps gathered from Sgt. Bustinza. It should be acknowledged, though, that Burroughs has never mentioned meeting with Sgt. Bustinza on the Bentwaters base during the third night's events, and says it was the gate guard at Woodbridge who told him about the activity in the forest. Perhaps Burroughs didn't feel a need to mention that he was at Bentwaters a short while before driving to the front gate of Woodbridge, which would have been seen as superfluous information – especially while at the front gate, he was told that Lt. Col. Halt was out there leading an investigation. This would have made more of an impression on Burroughs when giving his account.

Two places at the same time

In the interview conducted by Boeche and Colborn in 1984, and also in the interview conducted by researcher/author, Georgina Bruni, who talked to Bustinza in 1998, Bustinza says that after briefing Master Sergeant Washington at Bentwaters, he then notified/contacted Bruce Englund, the Flight Lieutenant that night by radio. It has not been made certain where Englund was at this time, and as we know Monroe Nevels has said that Englund was with him the whole time that night. Its possible that Englund was still at the Disaster Preparedness Office with Nevels, while Nevels was calibrating the Geiger counters.

Bustinza says in both interviews with Boeche/Colburn and Bruni, that after receiving his call, Lt. Englund then contacted the Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt. Apparently, Halt then told Englund to check out the situation (Boeche/Colborn) and investigate whatever it was. (Bruni, p. 187). The quote below attributed to Adrian Bustinza is taken from the interview by Boeche and Colburn:

> "I notified my acting commander – which was Lieutenant Englund – and he went ahead and called the Commander that night – which was Colonel Halt – and he told Lieutenant Englund to check out the situation. We proceeded to check out the situation – myself, Lt. Englund, and Sergeant Ball."[ccl]

Bustinza doesn't give any further details at this stage, and nor does he explain how he, MSgt. Ball and Lt. Englund had apparently got together to check out the situation. We are just left to fill in the details.

Adrian Bustinza then says – and it is assumed after Lt. Englund had discussed with Lt. Col. Halt – that he was ordered by Englund to pick him up at the Woodbridge base so they could both go and collect MSgt. Ball. *But why would Bustinza be ordered by Lt. Englund to pick him up from the Woodbridge base, if he was with SSgt. Nevels at the Disaster Preparedness Office on Bentwaters?* Of course, we only have Monroe Nevels' testimony on this, but unlike the others, Monroe's testimony has remained credible and consistent.

Also, Georgina Bruni informs us that MSgt. Ball was ". . . on his break, having worked the long Christmas and Boxing Day shifts." (Bruni, p. 187). It's not sure where Bruni got her information from, but saying that MSgt. Ball was on his holiday break is in glaring contrast to what was said in the room inside the Officer's Club, according to Col. Halt, when he said he turned to Major Zickler and asked him who his on-duty NCO was, and Zickler responded with *"Well Master Sergeant Bobby Ball is available, he's on duty tonight."* According to Bruni, when Lt. Englund and Sgt. Bustinza arrived at the home of MSgt. Ball, *". . . on the domestic site (751-C Woodbridge) he was not in uniform and they had to wait for him to change."* (Bruni, p. 187). However, this was said in the context of Adrian Bustinza's testimony, to which a whole chapter in her book was dedicated based on her interview with him in 1998. Bustinza may have been under the impression that MSgt. Ball was NOT on duty and had told Bruni this. This does imply, though, that at least Sgt. Bustinza went to pick up MSgt. Ball, although it cannot be determined who had ordered Sgt. Bustinza to pick up MSgt. Ball and who arranged for MSgt. Ball to collect Lt. Col. Halt. From what Col. Halt has said, we are led to assume it was Major Zickler.

As noted, from what Col. Halt had personally told us, Lt. Englund was driving when all three (Ball, Englund and Bustinza) had arrived in the Jeep to pick him up from his home on the Bentwaters base. But again, *how could Lt. Englund have done this if he was with SSgt. Monroe Nevels the whole time after they left the Officer's Club to continue the mission Nevels had initially been given by Col. Conrad?*

During the August 29, 2015 *Phenomenon* radio interview, Adrian Bustinza says that "they" – meaning the patrol with Lt. Englund and MSgt. Ball – then proceeded out through the East Gate along the road ('East Gate Road') and turned right (south) to go into the forest to where everything was taking place. Bustinza does not mention anything about their patrol having picked up Lt. Col. Halt.[ccli]

What do we make of these apparent contradictions to Monroe Nevels' testimony?

How could Lt. Englund be in two places at the same time? . . With Ball, Bustinza and Halt in one vehicle AND with Nevels in another vehicle without ever leaving Nevels' side?

To date, Bruce Englund has not come forward at any time to give his side of the story, and refused when Chuck De Caro tried to interview him for a CNN television show in 1985.[cclii] No one has been able to contact Bobby Ball since his rare appearance on *Unsolved Mysteries,* first televised in 1991, after his interview by Chuck DeCaro in 1984. It would appear he has remained quiet ever since. We really only have the testimonies of Col. Charles Halt, Monroe Nevels and Adrian Bustinza and the references made by certain researchers to examine and evaluate what happened. The testimonies of both Col. Halt and Adrian Bustinza could be considered 'correlative' in some respects, but which when taken together are seen to be in direct opposition to the testimony of Monroe Nevels, especially concerning the activities of Lt. Englund that night.

However, it is a fact that Monroe Nevels is known as a 'straight shooter,' and continually makes the point that he is known for his integral honesty above all else. He is known to keep strictly to the facts and would never lie or fabricate anything for any personal gain or reason. For instance, the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad, would not have sent Nevels out to the landing site in the forest to investigate it for evidence or proof if there was any hint of dishonesty in the NCO and he couldn't be trusted, *and it is the reason why Nevels is dependable that Conrad entrusted him with the special mission he had ordered in the first place.*[ccliii]

As we will see, there are some things mentioned in the different interviews conducted with both Col. Halt and Adrian Bustinza that reveal their accounts are not as straight and watertight as one would perceive them to be as regards the apparent contradictions they pose when read side-by side

with what Monroe has said. For example, and as exhaustively mentioned a few times, we are told on one occasion by Col. Halt that the police came by his home in a Jeep to pick him up, and he mentions MSgt. Ball, as if he were driving and adds that *he doesn't remember who else was with him.* In this instance, Halt does not mention Lt. Englund or Sgt. Bustinza. This account is given in the book, *The Halt Perspective*, which Col. Halt had co-authored with John Hanson and published in 2016, but it could have been said many years earlier than the time when the book was being written.

Also, in her book published in 2001, Georgina Bruni writes:

> "As far as I can ascertain, it was Master Sergeant Ball that had collected Halt and Sergeant Nevilles and drove them to Rendlesham Forest."[cccliv]

Well, we know from what Monroe had told us, and he was very resolute about it . . . *that he wasn't in any vehicle with Halt that night,* so we can count him out, and it has to be said that there is also no mention of Lt. Englund or Sgt. Bustinza in these statements, as one would expect going by what Col. Halt had said.

Crossing the Runway

Randy D. Smith, a Sergeant at RAF Bentwaters during December 1980, was interviewed by Scottish UFO researcher and skeptic James Easton on April 5, 1999. Although Randy Smith doesn't give a date, it is obvious that it was the night of December 27/28 when he says he remembers hearing MSgt. Bob Ball come on the radio between 11:30 and midnight, requesting permission from the Air Traffic Control Tower, to cross the runway at Bentwaters to pick up Lt. Col. Halt. Smith then says that it was thirty minutes to an hour later that MSgt. Ball made the same request on his radio to cross the runway, driving in the opposite direction with Halt, heading towards RAF Woodbridge.[cclv] If Randy Smith has his time correct, then MSgt. Ball had collected Halt an hour and 15 minutes later than was arranged.

We then mentioned this to Col. Halt, and in response to our question about it, Col. Halt told us that he was picked up thirty minutes AFTER he had arrived home to change,[cclvi] which suggested to us that he had simply altered his account to suit. In other words, after years of having told his audience that

he had told Major Zickler to have MSgt. Ball drive by his home and pick him up in twenty to thirty minutes while still inside the room in the club just before leaving, Col. Halt is now leading us to consider that his instructions to be collected by MSgt. Ball in thirty minutes was communicated somehow to Major Zickler the minute he got home to change, leaving us to assume he had instructed Zickler of this, or an assistant of his, using his radio. It is possible, of course. This would mean that in the time between leaving the Officer's Club at 9:45 p.m., at the latest, and driving home to get changed a half hour before being picked-up between 11:30 and midnight, Halt would have had around an hour to play with, and as we know from his account, he mentions a number of things he did before arriving home to change his clothes.

However, it is clear that either Halt or Zickler, or both, are not being truthful when one discovers that while Malcolm Zickler was being interviewed by researcher/investigator Georgina Bruni in 1998 for her book, he is quoted as having told Bruni the following directly after she had asked him if he was involved in the third night's events:

> "When I knew Halt was out there, I chose not to go. I heard he was out there, I heard his radio call, Bravo Charlie 2. Halt and I didn't see eye to eye. I was subordinate to him in rank but I didn't work directly for him, I worked for the Base Commander."[cclvii]

From what Malcolm Zickler is reported to have said here, it certainly doesn't sound as if Lt. Col. Halt had discussed arrangements with Zickler regarding him being picked up by MSgt. Ball just before the third night's events, if it is true that Malcolm Zickler claims to have merely *heard* that Lt. Col. Halt was out there in the forest. If Halt had arranged things with Major Zickler beforehand, Zickler would have known he was going out there and wouldn't have talked about it as if he had heard this from someone else.[cclviii]

As mentioned, in his interview with Boeche and Colborn (April 15, 1984), Adrian Bustinza says that he was driving to the Woodbridge base in his CJ-7 Jeep at around midnight. This conflicts with the 11:30 p.m., to 12:00-midnight time quoted by Randy D. Smith, who remembers hearing MSgt. Ball come on the radio requesting permission from the Air Traffic Control Tower to cross the runway at Bentwaters to pick up Lt. Col. Halt. As noted, Randy Smith then says that it was a half-hour to an hour later that MSgt. Ball made the same request on his radio to cross the runway, driving in the

opposite direction towards RAF Woodbridge. (See Note 255).

If true – and it should be noted that Jim Penniston remembers Randy Smith being an honest, straight-up guy – then how could Sgt. Bustinza have been in the Jeep with MSgt. Ball to pick up Halt, if at the same time when MSgt. Ball was taking the shortcut by crossing the runway, *Bustinza was driving to RAF Woodbridge before the incidents involving him began, and even before he had apparently picked up MSgt. Ball with Lt. Englund to then go and pick up Lt. Col. Halt?*

The implications of this have to be made clear:

1) Because Col. Halt couldn't remember anyone else in the Jeep, as given in his statement quoted above, and 2) if Adrian Bustinza says that at around midnight when MSgt. Ball was collecting Halt he was driving to the Woodbridge base before any of the incidents that involve him actually began, and 3) also add the fact that Adrian Bustinza had never said in any interview while giving his account that he was in a Jeep with Lt. Col. Halt – let alone collected him from his home with Lt. Englund – *we can only conclude that it was only MSgt. Ball who had picked up Lt. Col. Halt*.

Woodbridge Motor Pool

After saying for years that Bustinza was never there that night (see Notes 242 and 243), Col. Halt has been hard-pressed by people who insist Bustinza *was there* and that Bustinza can even be heard in the background on the recorded audio-cassette tape that Halt was speaking into that night. Twice in recent interviews when discussing who was in the Jeep with him that took him to the forest, Col. Halt will pause for a few seconds after he is about to say something else before declaring it was Bustinza – and even then on occasion has said, "I think," as if he has no real recall on it. There are other quotes by Halt that reveal he is unsure that Bustinza was in the Jeep which pulled up at his home that night.

During the interview Col. Halt did with radio host Jimmy Church on December 23, 2014, Halt said that Adrian (Bustinza) was with his patrol when they got out to the forest, adding that he [Bustinza] had been out there earlier, and because there were problems with the lightalls, it is implied that Bustinza was then tasked with the job of fixing the problem, and this was going on all the while he [Halt] was preparing to go out to the forest or was

actually travelling out there having been picked up in the Jeep by MSgt. Ball, as he had already heard about the problems over the Command Net. Halt says that when he got out to the forest, that they had met with Bustinza then, later saying that Bustinza wasn't in the Jeep, and that they may have picked up Bustinza when they went by the motor pool, finally adding that he's not really sure:

> "Well, when we got out into the forest, Adrian was with us. The reason I say that is because Adrian went back sometime before or when I was going out, to get the lightalls, because they were having problems. The lightalls wouldn't run." [. . .] "There were problems with the lightalls, there were problems with the vehicles, and there was a lot of chatter on that. I could hear it on the police radios because we had two different frequencies, plus my Command Net. When we got out in the forest, I know we met up with Adrian then. He wasn't in the Jeep. I can't remember if he was in the Jeep with us, or we met him there, or we, we went by the motor pool, we may have of picked him up there. I'm not really sure."[cclix]

The above more-or-less matches what Col. Halt had said in his interview with Alejandro Rojas in 2010. He says that it was after picking up Monroe Nevels that they then headed to the motor pool, which must have been the Woodbridge base, to get fuel for the Jeep:

> "We went down to the motor pool to get fuel because the Jeep needed some gas, and several lightalls were down there getting refuelled because somebody out in the forest has sent them back saying they wouldn't work because they were out of gas. When we got there, they weren't out of gas, but they were trying to put more gas in. So we fuelled and went across the base at the back gate, of the East Gate, as it's now known – infamously I guess. And down into the forest . . . ."[cclx]

Halt saying, "So we fuelled and went across the base at the back gate of the East Gate" means that the lightalls were fuelled at the Woodbridge base and this is substantiated by other witness reports, such as that made by Airman Tony Brisciano included below.

It would appear that Sgt Bustinza had indeed been tasked with taking the lightalls, which had already been transported to the forest earlier by the civil

engineers (one would assume), back to Woodbridge to be refuelled because they were malfunctioning – the problem being, that the lightalls that had already been deployed in the forest had no gasoline in them *when in fact they were full*, it's just that the gauge on the lightalls wasn't showing they were full. This may explain why Lt. Col. Halt had been seen with the patrol that were taking the lightalls to be refuelled at Woodbridge where the gas pumps were.

In her book, Georgina Bruni also quotes Airman Tony Brisciano, whose account points to Lt. Col. Halt being present with the patrol when the lightalls were being fuelled at the gas pumps at Woodbridge. Apparently, Brisciano was on duty at the desk of the Fuels Management Branch at the Bentwaters base and was able to confirm he was on duty from December 26 to 29 1980, and believes the following incident took place in the early morning of December 28, 1980. Brisciano told Bruni that it was in the early hours of the morning when he received a call informing him that there were several emergency vehicles at Woodbridge urgently needing fuel. It was Brisciano's duty to cover both bases, so he had to drive over to the Woodbridge pumps.

Quoting Airman Brisciano:

> "When I reached the military gas pumps at Woodbridge, I never saw so many police vehicles and equipment waiting for fuel. It was especially unusual to see this as it was in the early hours of the morning. The vehicles were mostly pick-ups with lightalls attached, and there were a few police cars. I was having a difficult time with Lieutenant Colonel Halt, the deputy base commander. He was in a hell of a hurry and was bitching at me to snap it up and get the pumps going."[cclxi]

It seems that Lt. Col. Halt and MSgt. Ball then either followed with the convoy from the Woodbridge base after refuelling the Jeep and after the lightalls were refuelled, or they went straight to the forest. If so, then perhaps after taking care of the lightalls with his own patrol, Bustinza had hitched a ride with Lt. Col. Halt, while the patrol took the lightalls back to the staging area in the forest. The next questions is *why would they pick up Sgt. Bustinza?*

Today, as evident in his email to us, dated February 3, 2019, Col. Halt said that Bustinza was present in the Jeep, and again, it should be noted that

he said this in the context that Bustinza was present in the Jeep when he was picked up. It's more likely that Halt really doesn't recall, and so it is difficult to discard the possibility that Halt has merely given in to what people have said for years, and so with regard to his audience, one suspects he is merely overcompensating for all the times he had said Bustinza was never present that night. But then again, perhaps it is quite logical to him that Bustinza may have been in the Jeep when being picked up from his home going by the accounts that place Sgt. Bustinza with Lt. Englund, which we will get to in a moment, and whom Halt has also said on occasion was in the Jeep with MSgt Ball, *even with Englund driving.*

As said, *Monroe Nevels insists that Lt. Englund was with him the whole time and that both went to the forest together, alone.*[cclxii]

In consideration of the many inconsistencies and conflicting accounts, in his email to us, Col. Halt also added the following:

> "Consider someone or something messed with your memory. Stranger things have happened. I have other issues that more than suggest spook [intelligence agency] or whatever involvement. I'm trying to help but you need to accept the fact that things don't all match up. Believe me I will do all I can to help and get the truth out. This whole thing has been a nightmare for me too."[cclxiii]

The Lightall Saga

As we can see by looking back over the quotes presented, Col. Halt talks about being driven to the motor pool at Woodbridge to find that the lightalls were being refuelled. As noted, it was thought that the lightalls had no gasoline in them, as they wouldn't work properly after being deployed in the forest. Halt mentions this as if he wasn't the officer responsible for ordering the lightalls out in the forest initially, and this seems to be the most-likely conclusion. As said, it is logical that the operation to transport the lightalls to the forest from the motor pool at the Bentwaters base was the job of the civil engineers, and that this was done on the orders of the Base Commander, Col. Conrad, earlier that evening – not for Lt. Col. Halt, but for SSgt. Nevels and Lt. Englund, as they had been entrusted with the mission.

However, it is reported in most of the literature about the incident, that

while Lt. Col. Halt was still preparing to go out to the forest, it was he that had ordered the lightalls, and that they should be deployed to illuminate the areas in the forest where he and the patrol with him were going:

> "Halt ordered that the area of the forest where the UFO had been seen should be illuminated with light-alls."[cclxiv]

And it is interesting that in a few cases regarding the literature about the Rendlesham Incident, we are told that picking up the lightalls was a job that had been assigned to Lt. Englund by Lt. Col. Halt, and it's not certain when exactly Halt had given this order, and even if it was really given to Lt. Englund, but as we will see, this may relate to the time when Lt. Englund had ordered Sgt. Bustinza to gather the lightalls and refuel them *a second time* on Lt. Col. Halt's orders, and also collect a couple of fresh lightalls from the motor pool at Bentwaters. (See end of following chapter, *Landing Site*.)

Again, the first problem one encounters with this is the interview in 2010, where Col. Halt says that during their initial discussion in the Officer's Club about the phenomenon, Englund had told him, *"We took some lightalls out"* – meaning they had already been deployed by others (most likely the civil engineers) on someone else's orders, but under Lt. Englund's supervision. Halt then gives his reaction as if he was surprised by this and as if the whole thing was out of control.

It was then discovered that the lightalls, which had been stationed in the forest at what became the staging post, were not functioning properly and couldn't be started, and that's the reason why it was assumed they were out of gasoline or very low on it. That the lightalls had already been deployed in the forest earlier during the day and before it got dark is confirmed somewhat by what was said in the 1994 TV documentary about the Rendlesham Incident, *Strange But True?* The following commentary was narrated by the host Michael Aspel:

> "Huge, portable floodlights, known as lightalls, were rigged in the forest, ready for anything which might appear the next night. But as darkness fell, the lightalls began to malfunction."[cclxv]

This also confirms what Col. Halt, claims to have heard from Lt. Englund, when Englund said, "We took some lightalls out," and it is most likely that this information presented in the show was gathered from Col. Halt, who also

appears being interviewed.

In any case, the lightall problem was relayed over the radio net, and it is possible that Lt. Englund had heard the radio chatter going on about this problem, just as Lt. Col. Halt had heard it while preparing to go out to the forest. It is also possible that when Adrian Bustinza says he had contacted Lt. Englund, as claimed – which then led Lt. Englund to radio his superiors to report the sightings that Bustinza had told him about – he also ended up talking to Lt. Col. Halt, as Bustinza had said.

Although Halt may have heard it over the Command Net, Englund, also having heard the complaints about the lightalls over the radio, then mentioned to Halt that the lightalls were not working, and this is when Halt told Englund to take care of it.

The reason why this radio conversation between Halt and Englund about the lightalls is even considered is that in the TV documentary *Unsolved Mysteries*, first televised over a decade later, on September 18, 1991, the host, Robert Stack says: “At 9:30 p.m. Colonel Halt received word that the lightalls were inexplicably malfunctioning.” While this is being said, an actor playing Col. Halt is shown exiting the Officer's Club and getting into the Jeep with the actor playing Lt. Englund, who says: “I don’t know, sir, craziest damn things I’ve ever seen. Animals in the forest are acting weird, starlight scopes going bad, radios ain’t working, lightalls ain’t coming up.”[cclxvi]

Although in the show, the time and the portrayal are wrong, as Lt. Col. Halt did not ride with Lt. Englund from the Officer’s Club, it is possible that the producers had been told by Col. Halt that he did receive word from Lt. Englund at this point, stating what he is portrayed to have said in the show. And if so, then this would have been relayed over the radio from where Lt. Englund was with SSgt. Nevels. It was after this that Lt. Englund then called Sgt. Bustinza back and told him that he should pick several men and go and collect the lightalls that had already been deployed in the forest at the staging post and take them back to Woodbridge to get them refuelled. As said, it was while the lightalls were being refuelled by Bustinza’s patrol that Lt. Col. Halt, being driven by MSgt. Ball, had met up with Bustinza and the patrol who were there to refuel the lightalls.

But just as we think we have ironed out the discrepancies, things are made more confusing when we listen to more of what Adrian Bustinza had to say in the 2015 Phenomenon radio interview.

In the following, Adrian Bustinza talks about having been told to collect

the lightalls and to take them to be refuelled *from BOTH Lt. Englund and MSgt. Ball.*

To see how uncertain, problematic, and frustrating this account is when compared to the accounts made by Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels, we will have to begin from when Bustinza was at Bentwaters, briefing MSgt. Washington on the sighting that had been reported at the East Gate of Woodbridge:

> "And, I told them that, you know, some of the airmen were startled over there. And, you know, some things were going on, we were a little unsure, and I believe, that, that, night it was Master Sergeant Washington that was on duty and Lieutenant . . . I, I, want to say, was uh, Lieutenant Englund that was on duty, but I, I, think he had just gotten off of duty, I think, and we came on. I don't quite remember who was on duty as far as that was concerned, but uh, I do remember when I returned back to Woodbridge base, that we ended up going to pick up Lieutenant Englund and Sergeant Ball. And, we proceeded out to the East Gate into the forest area. And, if you remember, East Gate was, you know, you went out the gate, went out on the road and then we turned to the right and went out there into where everything was uh, apparently taking place, which I did not know at the time, that there was already some people out there."[cclxvii]

As we can see, Adrian Bustinza says he went to pick up Lt. Englund and MSgt. Ball, and importantly, Lt. Col. Halt is not mentioned. Bustinza then says they proceeded to the East Gate, and then from there they drove out to the forest to find there were base personnel already out there. It was then that Bustinza says he was told by Lt. Englund and MSgt. Bobby Ball to pick up some lightalls from the Woodbridge base, when he was told to collect up the lightalls that had already been deployed and were not working and take them to Woodbridge to be refuelled to see if that would solve the problem:

> "We, uh, we took several uh . . . well, Lieutenant Englund, Sergeant Ball, they commandeered the Jeep, the CJ-7 I was riding and they gave me one of the crew cab, Ford blue trucks and told me to go pick up some lightalls over in the uh, um, the Woodbridge base. So, we went back, and, I don't recall, exactly recall who was with me. I can see their faces, but I can't recall their names. We went, we made sure that the uh, lightalls were full of, uh, gas and the vehicles were full of gas,

> and we had approximately two or three lightalls with us, and we took them back"[cclxviii]

According to Adrian Bustinza (August 29, 2015 *Phenomenon* radio interview), Lt. Englund told him to take a "blue crew cab, Ford truck" to pick up the lightalls over in the Woodbridge base and refuel the ones that had already been deployed in the forest. If so, then this was most likely one of the trucks at the staging post in the forest where the vehicles were parked, and which had brought in the first order of lightalls. However, this is said as if Lt. Englund was present at the staging post with MSgt. Ball . . . but it could have been ordered over the radio, as mentioned. Also, Bustinza added that Lt. Englund and MSgt. Ball had commandeered the CJ-7 Jeep that he had been driving that night, which again places both Englund and Ball at the staging post with Bustinza. It appears that this detail is given to indicate that both Englund and Ball then used the CJ-7 Jeep Bustinza was driving to pick up Lt. Col. Halt from his home on the Bentwaters base. This falls in line with what Col. Halt has said only recently about Englund and Ball coming to pick him up from his home to take him to the forest and then picking up SSgt. Nevels on the way. However, Sgt. Bustinza could not have been in the vehicle which collected Lt. Col. Halt and then SSgt. Nevels, if Bustinza had already been ordered by Lt. Englund to pick up the malfunctioning lightalls from the staging post and refuel them at the Woodbridge gas pumps.

How can all this be explained?

Especially when 1) Monroe Nevels says that he and Lt. Englund were together in their own vehicle going to the forest after picking up the equipment from the DP Office, and that when he and Lt. Bruce Englund had arrived at the staging area in the forest, Lt. Col. Halt was already there and the lightalls had already been set-up. And 2) how could MSgt. Ball have been heard to ask for permission to cross the runway between 11:30 and midnight to pick up Lt. Col. Halt, when at the same time, Sgt. Bustinza was driving to Woodbridge at midnight and sometime before Bustinza had called Lt. Englund on the radio as claimed?

The reader can appreciate the problems with Bustinza's account already. It could, of course, all be due to fading memory, but one is faced with more problems.

It is more likely that Lt. Englund had told Sgt. Bustinza to pick a "blue crew cab, Ford truck" from the staging post to pick up the malfunctioning lightalls that had already been stationed there, and to go and refuel them, and

as mentioned, *he did this over the radio.* In other words, Englund wasn't present at the staging area with Sgt, Bustinza or MSgt. Ball, and had arrived later with SSgt. Nevels when the lightalls had been refuelled and were back at the staging post.

Timeline of Events from the Officer's Club to the Forest

To us, the most logical scenario is this: SSgt. Monroe Nevels and Lt. Englund arrive at the entrance to the Officer's Club around 9:30 p.m. The Base Commander, Colonel Conrad, is notified, and he walks outside to where the two NCOs are and asks SSgt. Nevels to brief him on what happened and asks if what he has seen warrants further investigation. SSgt. Nevels says it does. Col. Conrad then ushers the two NCOs into a room inside the club, already set up to discuss the situation. Waiting in the room is Lt. Col. Halt, Major Malcolm Zickler, and other senior officers – around twelve all-in-all. After ten minutes of discussion, it is again announced that an investigation be put into operation that evening, as it was noted from the previous two nights that the phenomenon appears in the early hours of the morning.

The time is now around 9:40 or 9:45 p.m. Before SSgt. Nevels and Lt. Englund leave so that Nevels can prepare, Lt. Col. Halt walks over to Nevels and leaning across the table to talk to him quietly, as if out of earshot of Col. Conrad, he asks Nevels if he can go along with him to the forest. Because of Lt. Col. Halt's rank, SSgt. Nevels says, "Yes, of course," and leaves with Lt. Englund to go straight to the Disaster Preparedness Office to collect a camera, calibrate and pick up a Geiger counter, and other equipment. Halt leaves to go to his office to pick up his miniature recorder and a cassette, his Starlight Scope device and other things, and then drives home.

However, there is some commotion over the radio by the few personnel that had gathered in the forest where the staging post was going to be, and where several vehicles were parked and lightalls had been deployed earlier that day, as ordered by Col. Conrad and supervised by Lt. Englund before he went to collect SSgt. Nevels at 3:00 p.m. The complaints heard on the radio net are about the lightalls, which are not working.

Now the scene switches to Sgt. Bustinza.

It is possible that Bustinza was mistaken about the time before the events began. He says it was midnight when he was driving to Woodbridge, but it

could have been much earlier. After being told by the airman on the East Gate of the light phenomena out in the forest, Bustinza drives back to Bentwaters to report the incident. He then calls Lt. Englund, who in turn then calls Lt. Col. Halt to inform him of the incident that Bustinza has reported. The time is estimated to be around 10:30 p.m., and Halt is at home. Halt then arranges with Lt. Englund to pick up MSgt. Ball and come by his home to be picked up himself in thirty minutes. It's likely that Halt and Englund had also discussed the lightall problem, and its then that Englund is told to round up more personnel and collect the lightalls that had been deployed in the forest and refuel them. This is quoted in Georgina Bruni's book *"You Can't tell the People"* (pp 187 – 188), but it appears that Bruni had the chronology mixed up, as we will see.

Halt then changes clothes and prepares for the forest. After talking with Halt, Lt. Englund then calls Sgt. Bustinza back. Now, because Bustinza was the only NCO on duty at Woodbridge and was the acting commander that night, and because Lt/ Englund was with SSgt. Nevels, it's likely that Bustinza was then ordered by Lt. Englund to collect MSgt. Ball from his home on the Woodbridge base and drive to the forest to collect the lightalls that had already been deployed at the staging post. Englund then said that while at the staging post Bustinza was to give his Jeep over to SSgt. Ball so that Ball could go and collect Lt. Col. Halt and bring him to the forest, instructing that Bustinza could then drive back to Woodbridge with the lightalls to refuel them.

So, after being picked up from his home on the Woodbridge base, MSgt Ball and Bustinza then drive to the forest where the lightalls are. However, as they approached the forest, it was then that a group of airmen had suddenly rushed out of the forest and told Bustinza and MSgt. Ball that they had encountered a bright light which was surrounded by a strange yellow mist. (Bruni, p. 187.) Apparently among this group of airmen was A1C Greg Battram.[cclxix] It is possible that Lt. Englund was then contacted about this incident, who in turn then reported the matter back to Lt. Col. Halt. If so, then this would explain why in one of his phone interviews with Ray Bouche and Scott Colborn, Bustinza is quoted as having said:

> "At this point, Col. Halt was contacted once more and advised of the situation. Halt indicated that he would be on the scene shortly, and that the men were to wait at their location for his arrival."[cclxx]

Halt had most likely already been told that MSgt. Ball was on his way to pick him up. Ball then commandeers the CJ-7 Jeep in which Sgt. Bustinza had collected him. And while there, MSgt. Ball, and possibly Lt. Englund over the radio, then instructed Bustinza to take one of the pick-up trucks at the site to collect the lightalls and refuel them at Woodbridge, while MSgt. Ball then drives the Jeep to pick up Lt. Col. Halt from his home on Bentwaters. We can, of course, allow the likelihood that MSgt. Ball could have been running a little late, especially if Sgt. Bustinza had to pick him up, and they had to go to the staging area in the forest first so that Bustinza could take a truck and take the lightalls to the Woodbridge base to be refuelled.

MSgt. Ball then drives across the runway at Bentwaters to collect Halt between 11:30 and midnight. After collecting Halt, Ball then drives back across the runway somewhere between midnight and 12:30 a.m. and drives to Woodbridge to fill the Jeep with gas. According to one source, it is likely that it was just after midnight that MSgt. Ball with Lt. Col. Halt had passed the back gate at Bentwaters (Butley Gate) to drive on towards Woodbridge.[cclxxi] In any case, it is at the motor pool at Woodbridge that Halt and Ball meet up with Sgt. Bustinza's patrol, who are refuelling the lightalls.

It is interesting that in his response to our questions, Col. Halt mentioned being driven to the motor pool at Woodbridge for gas, that several cops were there complaining the lightalls needed gas as they wouldn't run in the forest, *and that the attendant kept saying they were full* – all of which must be true and reveals Halt may very well have been the 'contentious senior officer' that attendant Tony Brisciano had mentioned when being interviewed by Georgina Bruni, even though Halt had denied it when questioned on this by Bruni.[cclxxii]

Its logical that the reason why Bustinza then hitches a ride with Lt. Col. Halt and MSgt. Ball while the patrol drive back with the lightalls was because the Jeep they were riding in was Bustinza's Jeep to begin with. Lt. Col. Halt, MSgt Ball, and Sgt. Bustinza then arrive at the staging post set up in the forest around 12:30 a.m.

As the reader is aware, the scenario above is one that does not include Lt. Bruce Englund in person, either at the forest, or in the Jeep with Lt. Col. Halt, and as we can see, the events which unfolded become much clearer when you take him out of the picture in the physical sense but acknowledge the possibility that he did assist in organizing certain things over the radio, as he

was the Flight Lieutenant that night.

Unlike the reasons as to why Lt. Englund became part of Col. Halt's account, it is probable that Bruce Englund, who has never come forward to give his side of the story, was deliberately drawn further into the early stages of the account Bustinza has given since 1984, as if he was with Bustinza, to confuse things for any potential investigators or researchers, as it is true that Lt. Englund may have played a part in the things that others had said he had been associated with, *but not in person,* as he was with SSgt. Nevels, as claimed, and directed and organized everything over the radio. Also, he did indeed order Sgt. Bustinza to refuel the lightalls a second time later that night on the orders of Lt. Col. Halt, and this will feature in the next chapter.

However, there is still an anomaly with the chronology of this timeline. One can't imagine SSgt. Nevels having taken around two and three quarter hours to calibrate the Geiger counter and prepare himself at the DP Office before arriving in the forest with Lt. Englund just *after* Lt. Col. Halt had arrived. We asked Monroe Nevels about this problem, and he simply couldn't account for it due to fading memory, specifically on the time of each of the events, as like Lt. Col. Halt, he didn't keep track of the time.

At the Staging Post

We are told that by the time Lt. Col. Halt had arrived in Rendlesham Forest, a staging post had already been set up, which is where the lightalls had first been deployed, and that it was there that things had begun to get out of hand. It's possible the refuelled lightalls had been brought back to the staging post, either when Halt had arrived or shortly after.

Although he was asked, the exact location of the staging post was never been made clear to us by Col. Halt. And despite it being said that the staging post was somewhere between 50 and 100 yards from the landing site, by cross-referencing the accounts and what was told to us by Monroe Nevels, we have determined that the staging post was on an intersection of three dirt tracks or roads at a distance of 480 yards away from the landing site.

Fig. 30: From what could be gathered, the location of the staging post relating to the third night and the location of the landing site relating to the first night are at the coordinates shown, and are 480 yards distant.

In the literature about the third night, we are told that there were already numerous personnel and vehicles in the area, and men were running about all over the place without any form of supervision. In one interview, Halt estimates that there were fifteen or twenty people out there already, and in another he estimates around twenty-five people. It seemed that it was now a

free-for-all, as the word got around that there was UFO activity again in the area. It was apparent that some of the personnel wandering around out there were on duty, while some were off-duty, as Nick Pope informs us, who then adds: "In what sounds suspiciously like a breakdown of discipline, a number of personnel headed out into the forest without any orders or authority, simply out of curiosity."[cclxxiii]

As we will see, *one of these was Airman John Burroughs . . . .*

As already mentioned, Burroughs had been out in the forest most of the afternoon and evening with his two friends from Law Enforcement. All three were off-duty, had on their civilian clothes, and went out hoping to figure out what this phenomenon was:

> "While most of the off-duty 'spectators' were content to take a passive role, Burroughs was not. Having been so intimately involved on the first night, he wanted to go out to see what was happening. Partly, this was a desire for confirmation (that he wasn't going crazy and that he and Penniston hadn't somehow imagined the whole thing) and maybe for some form of closure. But more than that, it was a compulsion."[cclxxiv]

Soon Burroughs would learn, while he and his friends were entering the front entrance to the Woodbridge base, that Lt. Col. Halt was in the forest leading a team to the landing site. We are also told that by this time, and in addition to the personnel who were out in the forest that night, there would also be as many as fifty or sixty personnel perhaps, monitoring the situation unofficially, either by listening into radio communications, or by climbing vantage points such as the Air Traffic Control Tower at Bentwaters.[cclxxv]

Being confronted with all the commotion that had greeted him when he arrived, Halt's thoughts were that it was *". . . a public relations disaster"* . . . that if they were to get *"caught out here in the forest in the middle of the night, the publicity would just be unbearable."*[cclxxvi]

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "Well, I was quite concerned, so I said to them, *'Let's keep all these people back. We don't need the publicity. We are kind of trespassing. This was the Queen's forest – sort of like a National Forest. There's a lot of private property around here. We don't want to cause a lot of concern, or get people upset. They're going to wonder*

> *what we're doing stomping around out here in the woods,'* so they said, *'OK.'"*[cclxxvii]

In his testimony, Monroe says that when he and Lt Englund had arrived, there were already lightalls at the checkpoint or staging area where the vehicles were parked, as he had expected.

Monroe Nevels:

> "When we [with Lt. Englund who was driving] first arrived at the location in the forest, it was an eerie feeling because everything was so quiet. All the forest creatures were still . . . no wind and no noise. However, a lot of activity was already beginning to unfold. As Lt. Englund and I exited the vehicle and approached the site, Lt. Col. Halt was already involved with his group that had assembled there with several vehicles and some lightalls.
>
> While at the staging area, I took out my Geiger counter and immediately began taking a few background readings by the road we were at, for comparison, which was some fifty to hundred yards north from the landing site."

More Problems with the Lightalls

In the book, *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest,* which Jim Penniston and John Burroughs had written with Nick Pope, it is said that Lt. Col. Halt had ordered that the lightalls be placed around the area of the forest where the UFO had been seen, so as to illuminate that area. It is more likely that two of the lightalls were left to illuminate the 'staging post' or 'checkpoint area,' where the vehicles would have been parked, and that only one lightall was taken to go to the landing site, and this seems to have been the case, as the

lightall was needed to illuminate the area where the Geiger counter was going to be used and concentrated.

Strangely, as the small team with Lt. Col. Halt were about to make their way to the landing site, it became apparent that there were now problems with the vehicle engines, which suddenly went dead and couldn't be re-started. Arguments then broke out as to whether the vehicles had gas in them or not. (Bruni, p. 188). Then there was radio difficulty and it was reported that the lightalls that had been brought back from being refuelled to be set up at the staging area were still not working. This problem is also mentioned in the *Unsolved Mysteries* episode about the Rendlesham Incident. The host, Robert Stack says: "By the time Colonel Halt arrived at the site, the second set of lightalls was also malfunctioning." Col. Halt is then shown, saying: "Some of the vehicles weren't working properly and radio transmissions were limited at best."[cclxxviii] However, this was the same set of lightalls that had been deployed in the forest earlier by the civil engineers, the ones which they had attempted to refuel at the Woodbridge base, when they were simply not registering on the gauge as being full, which is strange in itself.

Adrian Bustinza:

> ". . . and that's when strange things started to happen, because I remember we pulled them up. [The lightalls]. We situated them in certain areas that we were instructed to situate them on. And, uh, at that is. And then at that point, they kind of like started up but then died out, like they had choked out or something. So, we continued try to, you know, get them started, and they wouldn't start. And, it was very . . . I mean at the time, and I don't mean in retrospect, being funny, but it was, it was funny that that something like that would happen."[cclxxix]

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "What I saw at that point were people fussing over the lightalls and four, five, six-pack, six passenger pick up, forward drive pick-up trucks, and maybe, and our Jeep . . . and, I'm saying maybe two or three vehicles, plus the Jeep. And two or three, maybe four lightalls at least, two if not three, maybe four. And like I say, less than 25 total people counting us."[cclxxx]

Frustrated with the lack of discipline, Lt. Col. Halt ordered all the personnel out there to stay at the staging post and remain quiet, which he says they did, and summoning together a small team, he then made his way towards the landing site.[cclxxxi]

Chapter Seven

Landing Site

At the point where and when Lt. Col. Halt began recording himself on his mini-cassette recorder, the team were estimated to be around 150 feet from the ‘impact point’ – being the landing area relating to the first night.

HALT TAPE:

> LT. COL. HALT: “150 feet or more from the initial, [background voices] or I should say suspected, impact point. Having a little difficulty – can’t get the lightall to work.”

Charles Halt: *“The lights wouldn’t work. The radios were acting up.”*[cclxxxii]

HALT TAPE:

> HALT: “Seems to be some kind of mechanical problem. Gonna send back and get another lightall. Meantime we’re gonna take some readings with the Geiger counter and [pause] chase around the area a little bit waiting for another lightall to come back in.”

Quoting Adrian Bustinza:

> “What I remember clearly was that when we got there, [Col. Halt] pointed to the individuals that he wanted to go with him.”[cclxxxiii]

When Bustinza says that Halt had pointed to the individuals he wanted to go with him, it’s likely that these were MSgt. Ball, SSgt. Nevels and Lt. Englund.[cclxxxiv] Going by the accounts given, and on the orders of Lt. Col. Halt, Sgt. Bustinza was then instructed by Lt. Englund to use his radio to call Central Security Control to arrange for fresh lightalls to be brought to the forest and to the site.

Colonel Charles Halt continues his account by saying that the five-man team – himself, MSgt. Ball, Lt. Englund, SSgt. Nevels and Sgt. Bustinza – then made their way towards the known ‘landing site’ where the object had supposedly landed two nights before. Because he knew where the site was, it was Lt. Englund who had taken them there – although he seems to have had trouble guiding them there in the dark. However, Col. Halt tells us that it was at this point that Englund said, “Let’s look into the woods there,”[cclxxxv] and Englund used his image intensifier or night-vision device, called a *Starlight Scope,* which could be fitted on the top of an M16 rifle, and which Halt says was a first generation.[cclxxxvi] Lt. Col. Halt then used his own device, which was a hand-held AN/PVS-2, and sure enough a dull glow was seen in the area of the woods that Englund was pointing to, and it was in the vicinity of the landing site towards where they were now heading:

Quoting Col. Halt from different interviews:

> "So, we look out there through the Starlight Scope and I see a dull glow sort of, not really sure, but anyhow he [Lt. Englund] takes me out into the forest, and I tell everybody else, 'Stay here and be quiet.'"[cclxxxvii]

> "We looked at the area through the Starlight Scope and it did, I'll have to admit, have a dull glow that I couldn't explain."[cclxxxviii]
> "When you look through a starlight scope, you don't see things as you normally would. It's a greenish-yellow tinge to them. It's a different spectrum, or different, uh, frequency and there was something I could see in there, but I wasn't really sure what it was. It didn't make a lot of sense to me … and I'm not sure it's of great significance, but there was something."[cclxxxix]

Apparently, Englund still had his Glock rifle, a short version of an M-16 under his coat.[ccxc] If true, then this shows how terrified the young Lieutenant had been due to what he experienced earlier with Nevels on the logging road some distance outside the East Gate.

> **Note:** Both the twin bases were centrally controlled. There was the Command Post at Bentwaters, the Central Security Control – also at Bentwaters – and at the Woodbridge base was the Air Traffic Control Tower, which usually had somebody up there, but it would have been shut down for the night, as nothing was flying at this time. However, there were two on-duty operators in the Control Tower on the Bentwaters base, as it was required that personnel be there always.

We are told that Lt. Col. Halt was in radio contact with the 'Command Post' on the Bentwaters base the whole time, occasionally informing them of what was going on. According to Halt, the Wing Commander Col. Gordon Williams, the Base Commander Col. Conrad, and all the other senior officers, which must have included the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler, were all tuned in to listen.[ccxci]

While Bustinza was following the team, he was still on the radio to CSC to inquire if spare lightalls could be delivered,[ccxcii] and it can be assumed that Bustinza was only with the team because he had already been tasked with sorting out the lightalls, and so his ordered call to CSC to enquire about getting a couple of fresh lightall units was being supervised by Lt. Englund.

On the way, Nevels was checking things with his Geiger counter – again, an AN/PDR 27 Radiac Meter.

Monroe Nevels:

> "I saw that Lt. Col. Halt was holding the audio cassette recorder he had brought with him, which had a mini-cassette tape in it to talk into and record what was happening. He had no idea of what we might encounter, so he used the recorder sparingly to conserve tape space."

What follows is the next spoken entry made by Lt. Col. Halt into the audio mini-cassette recorder on the morning of December 27, 1980:

> HALT: "OK, we're now approaching the area within about 25, 30 feet. What kind of readings are we getting? Anything?"
> NEVELS: "Just minor clicks."
> HALT: "Minor clicks."

After having taken the team to the small clearing in the woods, Halt noticed that the ground was a little "scrupped up" – a description he has used in subsequent interviews. The cassette tape is recording and we can hear Halt asking the whereabouts of the three landing pod impressions:

> HALT: "Where are the impressions?"

Lt. Englund pointed down at one of the three depressions in the ground, supposedly made by the landing gear/pods of the object/craft, as witnessed and examined up close by SSgt. Jim Penniston on the first night:

> HALT: "Is that all the bigger they are?"

From his comments heard on the tape, it appears that Halt was not too impressed with the size of the depression shown to him first by Englund.[ccxciii]

Englund then pointed to another depression:

> ENGLUND: “Well, there’s one more well-defined over here.”

Col. Halt then says the five-man team were “milling” around the site taking measurements of the depths of each of the depressions and the distance between all three which were equal in length.[ccxciv] Halt says that the indentations were all the same size, had the same shape and formed an equilateral triangle, “*like something had set down on a tripod.”*[ccxcv] The indentations were clearly well-defined, as Lt. Englund had said, and it was obvious that the depressions must have been made by the “landing pods” of the object witnessed and examined by SSgt Penniston on the first night – *although they were not aware that the three landing struts on which the craft had rested were each composed of light*, as SSgt Penniston had observed.

It must be noted, that this objective set by Lt. Col. Halt to visit and examine the landing site is odd, as the site was not what Col. Halt had said he was sent out to the forest to investigate. Going back to investigate the landing site to check for radiation and other evidence that something had indeed landed there was SSgt. Nevels’ continued mission, not Lt. Col. Halt’s. According to Halt, he was ordered by Col. Conrad to investigate the return of the UFO-related phenomenon, based on what he says he was told initially by Lt. Englund.

Nick Pope’s words on this very issue are quite telling:

> “It should be remembered that investigating the landing site was not the reason Halt had assembled a team and gone out into the forest. He’s been sent out by Colonel Conrad because of a report that the UFO has returned. But in this initial part of the tape there’s no evidence to suggest that the UFO is anywhere in sight, and no evidence that Halt is looking for it. Given that Englund was the one who arrived at Woody’s Bar with the news that the UFO returned [According to Col. Halt], it’s intriguing that there’s no dialog between the two of them about this on the tape. Clearly, for whatever reason, this discussion wasn’t recorded.”[ccxcvi]

In any case, SSgt. Nevels then began taking readings around each of the depressions, which is what he was initially sent out to do. Sgt. Bustinza’s voice can be heard in the background trying to communicate with Central Security Control over the radio:

SECURITY COMMUNICATION: “Sergeant Bustinza . . . Security Control.”
HALT: “We’re still getting clicks.”
NEVELS: “. . . getting clicks . . .”
SECURITY COMMUNICATION “Sergeant Bustinza . . . We’re outta gas . . . Security-6 boarding . . . East Gate.”

Apparently, although Sgt. Bustinza was attending to his task to order more lightalls, he was no doubt aware of what the team were examining at the landing site.

Adrian Bustinza:

> “We proceeded to look and in the process found kind of like triangular tripods . . . burned into the [ground] at 3 different standpoints. . . . They were like it was a heavy object. They took radiation readings of the holes. And they got a radiation reading as I recall.”[ccxcvii]

According to Georgina Bruni, who interviewed Adrian Bustinza in 1998, *“Bustinza commented that it must have been a heavy object that had made these marks.”*[ccxcviii]

Monroe Nevels:

> “I began with a search using the Gamma mode and began searching for any changes in readings from the three landing-pod indentations on the ground. Starting with the top scale, or highest reading, I did not hear or see anything. I then went to the next scale, and again, I received a somewhat slight reading, but nothing significant.”

HALT TAPE:

HALT: “Can you read that on the scale?”
NEVELS: “Yes, sir. We’re now on the five-tenths scale, and we’re reading about third, fourth mark over . . .”
HALT: “OK, we’re still comfortably safe here?”

No response to Halt's question about the radiation readings being at a safe level can be heard on the tape, and we can assume that either someone had responded while Halt had stopped the tape for a while, or like Nick Pope had conjectured, *an unheard yes, a nod or thumbs up must have been given,* because if the answer had been "No" – meaning that the radiation readings in the area were not safe – the team would have left immediately.[ccxcix]

In the background, Sgt. Bustinza is again heard on the radio to CSC and also apparently the East Gate at Woodbridge, asking for lightalls:

> RADIO COMMUNICATION (BUSTINZA): "Do you happen to have a Lightall?"
> "East Gate security . . . Security Six . . . have a lightall with gas . . . please."

SSgt. Nevels then moved to a second depression/indentation to check the radiation.

> HALT: "Still minor readings, the second pod indentation . . ."
> NEVELS: "Nope."

Lt. Col. Halt then instructed SSgt. Nevels to move to the third depression.

> HALT: "This one's dead. Let's go over to the third one over here."
> BACKGROUND SECURITY COMMUNICATION: "Sergeant Bustinza . . ."
> NEVELS: "Yes, now I'm getting some residual."
> HALT: "I can read it now. The meter's definitely giving a little pulse."

Lt. Englund then suggested checking the center between all three indentations:

> ENGLUND: " . . . how 'bout the center? . . ."
> HALT: "I was gonna say let's go to the center of the area next and see what kind of a reading we get out there. You're reading the clicks, I can't hear the clicks."

Monroe Nevels:

> "I used headphones and relayed my findings of radiation detection only as

‘clicks’ and ‘noise’ because this was not anyone else’s business, and radio contact would have been in violation of security protocol.”

HALT TAPE:

HALT: “That about the center, Bruce?”
ENGLUND: “Yes.”
HALT: “OK, let’s go to the center.”

Monroe Nevels:

“Initially, I was looking for any activity on the Gamma scale. After little or no activity, I then removed the Beta shield and started searching the same areas for any activity with the Beta probe, as suggested by either Lt. Col. Halt or someone else [likely Lt. Englund] and this is where we started getting the more significant readings. The radiation was definitely Beta.”[ccc]

HALT TAPE:

NEVELS: “Yes, I’m getting more . . .”
HALT: “That’s the best deflection of the needle I’ve seen yet. OK, can you give me an estimation. We’re on the point five scale . . . we’re getting . . . have trouble reading . . .”

Having observed that SSgt. Nevels had become quite alarmed when he began getting higher readings than the background radiation, that’s when Halt started getting a little more nervous.[ccci]

During an interview with Adrian Bustinza conducted by Georgina Bruni in 1998, Bustinza is quoted as having told her, *“Nevilles was out there, I remember him getting some Geiger readings that were impressive. I remember saying, ‘Oh shit, there’s radiation there,’ because at one stage I was standing right next to Nevilles.”* [cccii]

Higher Radiation Readings at the Center

The time was now 1:25 a.m.

> ENGLUND: "At approximately 01.25 hours . . ."
> NEVELS: "We're getting right at a half of a millirem."
> HALT: ". . . best point. I don't see it go any higher."
> VOICE (BALL?): "It's still flying around."
> HALT: "OK, we'll go out toward the . . ."
> NEVELS: "Now it's picking up."
> HALT: "This is out toward the number one indentation where we first got the strongest reading. Yeah, it's similar to what we got in the center."
> NEVELS: ". . . right in the pod, it's right near the center."

A closer inspection of the soil at the center between the three depressions was then made, and perhaps a light was shone on it, as Lt. Englund mentions that the ground appeared to have been blasted, at that spot, which would have been directly underneath the center of the craft:

> ENGLUND: "This looks like an area here possibly that could be a blast . . . it's in the center of the triangle . . ."
> HALT: "It's hard to tell . . . Here take this, my fingers about to freeze."

It would appear that the highest radiation readings were found when Nevels checked the center ground area between all three indentations.[ccciii] Lt. Englund was obviously looking over Monroe's shoulder at the reader on the Geiger counter.

> ENGLUND: ". . . up towards seven . . . Just jumped up towards seven tenths."
> HALT: "Seven tenths? Right there in the center?" [Around 0.13 µSv/h (microSeiverts-per hour)].
> ENGLUND: "Uh huh."

Halt makes a note of this by talking into his mini cassette recorder:

> HALT: "We found a small blast – what looks like a blasted or scruffed-up area here. We're getting very positive readings. Let's see, is that near the center?"

ENGLUND: “Yes, it is.”
NEVELS: “Well, we assume it is.”
ENGLUND: “This is right in the center . . . dead center.”
NEVELS: “Picking up more as you go along . . . the whole area here now . . .”

Several click are audible on the tape.

HALT: “Up to seven tenths? Or seven units, let’s call it, on the point five scale. OK, why don’t we do this: why don’t we make a sweep – here, I’ve got my gloves on now – let’s make a sweep out around the whole area about ten foot out, make a perimeter run around it, starting right back here at the corner, back at the same first corner where we came in. Let’s go right back here. Now I’m gonna have to depend on you counting the clicks.”
NEVELS: “Right.”
HALT: “OK, let’s . . .”
NEVELS: “I’ll tell you as it gets louder . . .”
HALT: “. . . then I can put the light on it and sweep around it.”
HALT: “Put it on the ground every once in a while.”

The light mentioned by Halt could not have been a lightall, as the lightalls were clearly not working. Halt must be referring to a flashlight, and it’s likely that Nevels was being told to occasionally place the Geiger counter on the ground. The following is a quote by Georgina Bruni from her book published in 2001, which includes her interviews with some of the witnesses, as she was told that, despite the lightall problems, “Halt’s patrol” were able to get by with their torches (flashlights):

“The refuelled lightalls were still not functioning properly but Halt’s patrol were managing to get by with a starscope and their torches. Nevertheless, the lightall situation was becoming a major problem and vehicle engines were also affected.”[ccciv]

Abrasions, Cuts and Burns on the Trees Surrounding the Site

Lt. Englund then pointed to an abrasion on one of the trees, which was his way of getting the team’s attention to what he and SSgt. Nevels had seen

earlier . . . *that the trees surrounding the landing site all had abrasions on the sides pointing inward towards the center of the landing area.*

> ENGLUND: "This looks like an abrasion on the tree . . ."
> HALT: "OK, we'll catch that on the way back; let's go around. Move back. Hit it, then [there?]."
> ENGLUND: "We're getting interest right over here. It looks like an abrasion pointing into the center of the . . ."
> HALT: "It is."
> ENGLUND: ". . . landing area."
> HALT: "It may be old, though – there's some sap marks or something on it. Let's go on back around. All right?"

Aside from Halt, who passed it off as an old abrasion, no one was listening to Englund and Halt returned to focusing his attention on the depressions in the ground and the area in and around them:

> HALT: "Are we getting anything further? I'm going to shut the recorder off until we find something."
> NEVELS: "Picking up good."
> HALT: "Picking up? What are we up to? We're up to two, three units deflection, you're getting in close to one pod."
> NEVELS: "Picking up some here . . . picking up."
> HALT: "OK, it's still not going above three or four units."
> NEVELS: "Picking up more, though – more frequent. Closer together."
> HALT: "Yes, you're staying steady up around two to three to four units now."

Lt. Englund tried again to get Halt's attention, this time on the same abrasion pattern evident on all the trees surrounding the clearing or landing site and only on the sides of all the trees facing inward towards what Englund called the "blast" area – the center point between all three depressions:

> ENGLUND: "Colonel Halt?"
> HALT: "Yeah."
> ENGLUND: "Each one of these trees that face into the blast, what we assume is the landing site, all have an abrasion facing in the same direction, towards the center, the same . . ."
> HALT: "That's interesting. Let's go the rest of the way around the circle here. Turn it back down here."

BALL: “Try the other tree.”
NEVELS: “Picking up something . . .”
HALT: “Let me see that . . . that’s got a funny . . . that’s . . . You’re right about the abrasion. I’ve never seen a tree that’s uh . . .”
BALL: “That’s a small sap mark . . .”
HALT: “I’ve never seen a pine tree that’s been damaged react that fast.”

Soil and Sap Samples

After Lt. Col. Halt noted what they are seeing in his mini-cassette recorder, SSgt. Nevels asked Lt. Englund if he had a bottle to collect a sample of the sap from the abrasions. It would appear that Englund had already brought along sample bottles to perhaps collect some of the soil from the site.

NEVELS: “You got a bottle to put that in?”
HALT: “You got a sample bottle?”
LT ENGLUND: “Yes put out the . . . that’s for the soil sample . . .”
NEVELS: “Yes Sir.”

Samples were then taken from the sap seeping from the abrasions on the trees, and one would assume samples were also collected from the soil inside the depressions as well as the center ‘blast’ point.[cccv]

HALT: “Here, sit this on the ground . . .”
HALT: “From now on, let’s . . .”

Lt. Englund observed that the cuts and abrasions in the bark of the trees were at the same height:

ENGLUND: “You’ll notice they’re all at the same height.”
HALT: “Let’s identify that as point number one. That stake there. So you all know where it is if we have to sketch it. You got that, Sergeant Nevels?”
NEVELS: “Yes sir.”
HALT: “OK.”
NEVELS: “Closest to the Woodbridge . . .”
HALT: “Closest to the Woodbridge base . . .”
NEVELS: “Be point one?”
HALT: “Be point one. Let’s go clockwise from there.”
NEVELS: “Point two?”
HALT: “Point two.”

> BALL: “Go ahead, Ed” [receiving transmission over the radio?]
> HALT: “So this tree is between point two and point three.”

At this point and just as the team were marking off the number of trees enclosing the landing site for each of the sap samples, as one can only assume, from what is being said – Lt. Col. Halt was alerted by MSgt. Bobby Ball that A1C John Burroughs was arriving in a Jeep with two other personnel and was requesting to join Lt. Col. Halt and the team.

This exchange can clearly be heard on Halt’s cassette tape, and one can clearly hear the irritation in Halt’s voice, who denied the radio request by Burroughs to join them:

> MSgt. Ball: “Burroughs and two other personnel requesting . . . riding on a Jeep, that, uh, your location.”
> Lt. Col. Halt: “Tell them negative at this time. We’ll tell them when they can come out here. We don’t want them out here right now.”[cccvi]

There’s a break in the tape at this point. Again, Burroughs, who had already been out in the forest with his two friends that day, had returned to Woodbridge base, and it was while Burroughs was at the front gate that he and his friends then learned about the activity taking place in the forest outside the Woodbridge base. He had also learned that Lt. Col. Halt was out there leading a team. Burroughs and his friends had immediately transferred into a military Jeep to drive out to the East Gate, but after arriving at the East Gate, they had been detained.

Quoting Burroughs:

> “So, we went from there to the East Gate. At that point, I tried to get out into the woods. And at first, I was denied . . .”[cccvii]

After waiting at the East Gate for some time, it was now that Burroughs was then allowed to move forward into the forest and to the staging area, and this is what we hear on the Halt tape, as Burroughs was approaching the site where the vehicles and lightalls were – Burroughs noting that Lt. Col. Halt’s team had already moved into the forest to the landing site.[cccviii]

> “. . . eventually I was allowed to go from the East Gate

> to the area where they had the lightalls, and where I believe on Colonel Halt's tape, he talks a little bit about they're doing investigation, which was in the area of our first night."[cccix]

Listening to the tape, we can see deduce that Lt. Col. Halt simply ignored Burroughs' further requests to come forward from the staging area to where he and the team were located at the landing site and turned his attention back to what he and the team were doing before they were interrupted. And while the team were still taking samples at this point, Sgt. Bustinza was still gathering and refueling the lightalls:

> HALT: "The sample . . . you're going to mark this sample number one?"
> NEVELS: "Yes, sir."
> HALT: "Have them cut it off and include some of that sap and all . . . is between indentation two and three on a pine tree about uh . . . about five feet away . . . about three and a half feet off the ground."
> NEVELS (faint): "I'll just put it in there for now; I've got some more . . ."
> HALT: "There's a round abrasion on the tree about three and a half, four inches in diameter . . . it looks like it might be old, but, uh . . . strange, there's a crystalline . . . pine sap that's come out that fast.
> SGT FRAIL: ". . . Sergeant Frail . . ." [voice distant].
> HALT: "You say there are other trees here that are damaged in a similar fashion?"
> ENGLUND: "Yes, all facing in toward the center of the landing site . . ."
> HALT: "OK, why don't you take a picture of that and remember your picture; we ain't gonna be writing this down. Oh, it's gonna be on the tape."
> ENGLUND: "You got a tape measure with you?"
> HALT: "This is your picture; the first picture will be at the first tree, the one between mark two and three. Meantime I'm gonna look at a couple of these trees over here."

We can assume that SSgt. Nevels took a photo of the abrasion on the first tree, which Halt has since referred to as "rub marks." There is another break in the tape at this point, and it's possibly during the break that SSgt. Nevels had then placed the Geiger counter on the side of one of the trees – the side that was facing inwards towards the clearing and towards the three indentations on the ground.

NEVELS: “We are getting some . . .”

Another break in the tape.

HALT: “We’re getting readings on the tree you’re taking samples from on the side facing the suspected landing site.”
ENGLUND: “Four clicks max.”
HALT: “Up to four. Interesting. That’s right where you’re taking the sample now. Four? That’s the strongest point on the tree?”
NEVELS: “Yessir. And if you come to the back . . . there’s no clicks whatsoever.”
HALT: “No clicks at all on the back – it’s all on the . . .”
NEVELS: “. . . maybe one or two . . .”
HALT: “It’s all on the side facing the . . . interesting. The indentations look like something twisted as it dropped . . . you know, as it sat down on them. Looks like someone took something and sat it down and twisted it from side to side. Very strange.”
ENGLUND: “Uh huh.”

SSgt. Nevels then did the same with the other pine trees, which Halt had estimated to be approximately 8 to 15 inches in diameter, and which surrounded the clearing and around what appeared to be fresh cuts and burn marks on the trees.[cccx] Again, it was noted that the readings were much higher on the inward-facing side of the trees than when the counter was placed on the back side of the trees, but at no point did Nevels feel he had to warn the others that the peak radiation readings were dangerously high enough to do any degree of physical harm to him and to the team.

Monroe Nevels:

“I checked the fresh abrasions and burn marks that were consistent on the bark of the trees surrounding and facing the clearing or landing site, and there was radiation at the center of these abrasions, cuts and burn marks on the trees.

If Beta radiation touches a tree, it can burn it because it has a higher energy source, so whatever it was that produced this radiation was within a foot or two of

each tree, and I was thinking that it was turning because all of the trees had the same abrasion and burn mark at the same height, which was around three to four feet, no matter the size of the tree. I was surprised when I saw it earlier, but now I took the time to examine it.

I remember that on the 5x scale, the reading was close to the 7mr mark, with Beta radiation producing the loudest clicks. I had my headphones on and activity was often described as 'clicks.' Anyone 'in the know' would be aware of what I was saying.[cccxi] I was trained to be able to identify radiation on the ground while flying from above at 100 feet, so when I talk about the radiation, no one can dispute it. Because of the radiation 'half-life,' I am sure the readings would have been a lot more intense if we had got there earlier."

It appears that Lt. Englund then thought it was a good idea to use his own first-generation *Starlight Scope* to look at the marks on the trees. This image intensifier or night vision device can be heard to make a high-pitched electronic whine on the tape as it is turned on.

HALT: "We're looking at the same tree we took the sample off of with this – what d'ya call it – Starscope?"
ENGLUND: "Uh huh, starlight scope."

It is clear that looking through the night vision device, a definite heat signal, picked up as a "white streak," was detected issuing from the trees where the abrasions were:

HALT: "And you're getting . . . getting a definite heat reflection off the tree about, what, three to four feet off the ground?"
ENGLUND: "Yes, where the spot is . . ."
HALT: "Same place where the spot is, we're getting a

heat . . .”
BALL: “. . . and a spot on the tree directly behind us I picked up the same thing, and one off to your right.”
ENGLUND: “All right, let me . . .”

It would appear that Lt. Englund and MSgt. Ball each took turns in looking at the trees through Englund’s Starlight Scope before Halt used his own AN/PVS-2 Starlight Scope, and by what is said later it appears that SSgt. Nevels had his own night vision device. Halt then made a note of what they all observed in his mini recorder:

HALT: “There are three trees in the area, immediately adjacent to the site, within ten feet of the suspected landing site. We’re picking up heat reflection off the trees.”
ENGLUND: “Shine the light on that Bob.” [MSgt. Bobby Ball]
HALT: “What’s that again?”
ENGLUND: “Shine the light on it again, Bob.”
HALT: “Why, are you having trouble finding it? Turn the light on.”
ENGLUND: (indistinct) “. . . right on the spot, and then when you want . . .”
HALT: “OK, turn the light off.”
ENGLUND: “. . . then when you want ‘em you’ll notice the white . . .”

Halt then looked through the Starlight Scope himself:

HALT “Hey! You’re right. There is a white streak on the tree.”
ENGLUND: “Indicates a heat . . .”
HALT: “Let me turn around and look at this tree over here now. Just a second – watch, ‘cos you’re right in front of the tree. I can see it. OK, give me a little side lighting so I can find the tree. OK . . . Ahh . . .”
SECURITY COMMUNICATION: “Alpha Two, security.”

Sgt. Bustinza was “Alpha 2.”

HALT TAPE:

HALT: “Now I’ve lost the tree. OK. Stop, stop. Light off! Hey this is eerie.”
BALL: “Why don’t you do the pod spots and then the center?”

The team then diverted their attention to the three depressions on the ground, and looking through the Starlight Scope night vision device Halt saw heat spots, which he said were strange:

HALT: “This is strange. Here, someone wanna look at the spots on the ground? Whoops, watch you don’t step . . . you’re walking all over ‘em.”
HALT: “OK, let’s step back and not walk all over ‘em. Come back here and somebody put a beam on ‘em. You’re gonna have to be back ten or fifteen feet. You see it?”
BALL: “OK, fine.”
HALT: “OK, lights off.”

Break in the tape.

HALT: “What d’ya think about the spot?”

Break in the tape.

HALT: “Ready at the first spot? OK, that’s what we’d call spot number three. Let’s go to the back corner and get spot number one. Spot number one, here’s spot number one right here. Spot number one, right here. D’ya need some light? There it is, right there . . . you focused?”
NEVELS: “Focused.”
HALT: “OK. Looking now at spot number one through the Starlight scope.”
ENGLUND: “Picking up a slight increase in light as I go over it.”
HALT: “Slight increase in light at spot number one. Let’s go look at spot number two. Spot number two’s right over here. Right here – see it? OK, get focused on it. Tell me when. OK, lights off, let’s see what we get on it.”
ENGLUND: “Slight increase.”
HALT: “Just a slight increase?”

After attempting to correlate the heat areas or hotspots with the three depressions, the team once again turned their attention to the center point of the triangle formed by the depressions:

ENGLUND: “Try the center.”
HALT: “The center spot . . . well it really isn’t the center, it’s slightly off center. It’s right there.”
ENGLUND: “Right here.”
HALT: ““Let’s mark that as the center . . . OK. We’re

gonna get your reading on it right there."
ENGLUND: "OK."
HALT: "Tell me when you're ready."
ENGLUND: "Ready."
HALT: "OK, lights out. It's the center spot we're looking at now, or almost the center."
ENGLUND: "Getting a slight increase."
HALT: "Slight increase there? This is slightly off-center toward the, uh, one two side. It's, uh, some type of an abrasion or something in the ground where the pine needles are all pushed back where we get a high radioactive reading . . . uh, a high reading, about, uh . . . deflection of, uh, two to three, maybe four, depending on the point of it."
ENGLUND: "Someone wanna check it?"
NEVELS: "Yes."
HALT: "Are you sure there is a positive after-effect?"
NEVELS: "Yes, there is, definitely. That's on the center spot. There is an after-effect."
ENGLUND: "What does that mean?"
NEVELS: "It means that when the lights are turned off, once we are focused in and allow time for the eyes to adjust, we are getting an indication of a heat source coming out of that center spot, as, uh, which will show up on the . . ."
HALT: "Heat or some form of energy. It's hardly heat at this stage of the game."
NEVELS: "But it is still heat . . ."

There is a break in the tape at this point, and when the recording continues, it is evident that either Lt. Col. Halt or one of the team had looked up to the sky above them. From what Halt says, there is no doubt that something had come down in this part of the forest, crashing through the canopy and the branches of the trees, as was noted by SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs when they investigated the site later on the morning of the 26th during daylight and had found broken branches from the treetops.[cccxii] It's true that Penniston and Burroughs didn't see the craft land, but they saw it depart from the clearing by ascending through the open canopy of the trees, through which it must have descended earlier.

HALT TAPE:

HALT: "Looking directly overhead, one can see an opening in the trees, plus some freshly broken pine branches on the ground underneath. Looks like some of them came off about fifteen to twenty feet up. Some

small branches about an inch or less in diameter . . .”[cccxiii]

Refueling the Lightalls a Second Time

As is evident with what is heard on Lt. Col. Halt’s original cassette tape, throughout this whole time and while Halt, Nevels, Englund and Ball were examining the site, Sgt. Bustinza was on the radio trying to get through to CSC, as he can be heard in the background. When it became apparent that Sgt. Bustinza was having difficulty communicating with CSC because the radio signal kept dropping out, Halt decided that the lightalls that were already out there should be refuelled.

By all accounts, Lt. Englund, in turn, had told Sgt. Bustinza to again take several other personnel with him from the staging area to load the truck with the lightalls for refuelling and also to pick up another couple of fresh lightalls from the motor pool at the Bentwaters base, just in case. In addition, before bringing them back, the lightalls needed to be checked and to make sure they were filled with gas.[cccxiv]

Quoting Adrian Bustinza:

> “So, the next thing I know they ordered us back to go pick up some more light-alls and to make sure if they were gassed up . . .”[cccxv]

That Bustinza was ordered to do this is also substantiated by Georgina Bruni who interviewed Adrian Bustinza in 1998:

> “Bustinza was having problems trying to contact CSC for replacement light-alls, the static was getting much

> worse and finally Halt ordered him to the Woodbridge base to collect replacements. Bustinza explained the situation: 'Everything was malfunctioning, people were excited, all running in different directions.'"[cccxvi]

But again, this order was likely given through Lt. Englund. In the interview with Ray Boeche and Scott Colburn (April 15, 1984), Adrian Bustinza says he and his patrol went back to the Bentwaters base and grabbed two lightalls:

> "So we went back to Bentwaters base; grabbed 2 "lightalls" and had a patrol refuel them; and once we refuelled them, we took them out there [Rendlesham Forest] to see if we could light up the area to see if there was anything out there."[cccxvii]

Here's a relevant quote by Nick Pope:

> ". . . for some reason, the lightalls were not functioning properly. There's confusion about this. Some witnesses say that they were simply low on gas and this is certainly what the frustrated Halt believed, as he sharply ordered that they be refilled. But others involved have said that there was something odd about the malfunctioning lightalls, as if they were being interfered with in some way, perhaps akin to the way in which the radios had behaved during the initial encounter with the UFO on the first night of activity. One consequence of the malfunctioning lightalls was the fact that more people got involved in the unfolding situation, and more still heard about it."[cccxviii]

It is not surprising that it was believed there was something odd about the lightalls not working, especially when it was known by some that they had just been fully-filled with gas and tested before reaching the sites in the forest . . . something seemed to have affected them, along with the vehicles and the radios that night . . . but unperceived by the team at this stage, something inexplicable had already been lurking in the forest from the time when Lt. Englund and SSgt. Nevels were out there earlier, and which would

soon make itself known again.

Things were about to get considerably stranger . . . .

Chapter Eight

UAP Activity

1:48 a.m. . . . Disturbance

Back at the landing site with the team, it was only now that Lt. Col. Halt reported the time in his mini-cassette recorder to note that he and the team were hearing loud noises, presumably coming from the animals in the barnyard on the nearby farm, known as *Green Farm*, which belonged to the Boast family who lived in the nearby farmhouse:

HALT TAPE:

> HALT: "Zero-one forty-eigh . . ." (01:48 hrs). [Halt didn't finish saying the time properly, as if he was startled] "We're hearing very strange sounds out of the farmer's barnyard animals. They're very, very active, making an awful lot of noise."

It has been reported that what could be considered the barnyard of the farm, and which was no further than 400 yards away from the landing site, did not house any animals as such, as it was an *arable* farm which concentrated on crops rather than livestock. However, the team would later run into evidence that some cattle were kept there, and it is of course possible that family dogs were present. One can clearly hear a dog barking in the background at this point, which just passes thirteen minutes into the tape and which is estimated to be less than a quarter of a mile away. In any case, the noises heard overall were more likely to have been coming from the forest animals and creatures – especially Muntjac Deer, *which had clearly become disturbed by something.*

Adrian Bustinza says that while he and his patrol were at the staging post or checkpoint – possibly preparing to take the lightalls back to be refuelled – that they had encountered several animals that were very loud at first and had then suddenly become very quiet, as if they were no longer there, adding that

several others thought this very strange.[cccxix]

From the written testimony of Monroe Nevels sent to the authors on February 10, 2017:

> "We then began to hear some commotion in the woods; the animals became very loud and static was in the air again. I have often thought about this and wondered why ALL the animals were disturbed. *What was it they saw, or sensed, that frightened them like that?"*

What Monroe says about the return of the electrostatic effects in the air is significant, and like the noise from the forest wildlife, it signifies the return of the phenomenon. And it's no surprise that Lt. Englund then noticed a strange light out in the farmer's field, which must have been the cause of the animal disturbance. Only now could it be said that the lights or the 'UFO' was back, and Lt. Englund then alerted Lt. Col. Halt and the rest of the team to something out in the farmer's field.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> ". . . suddenly, Bruce Englund, the Lieutenant who was with me, looks out and says a few words I won't repeat, and says, 'There's something out there – look at that,' and it was a red thing." [cccxx]

Monroe Nevels:

> "Well, it appeared that the object Lt. Englund and I had observed earlier was back. We looked for the source of the commotion, and when our sighting of the object began. The object was first sighted about 200 meters off to the left in a field adjacent to a farmhouse."

Lt. Englund must have been anxious and excited when he alerted the team because on the tape we hear Halt telling him to slow down:

> HALT: "You just saw a light? Where? Wait a minute. Slow down. Where?"
> ENGLUND: "Right on this position here. Straight ahead, in between the trees – there it is again . . . beginning of the gap . . . right there."
> NEVELS: "Watch – straight ahead, off my flashlight there, sir. There it is."
> HALT: "Hey, I see it, too. What is it?"
> NEVELS: "We don't know, sir."
> HALT: "It's a strange, small red light, looks to be maybe a quarter to a half mile, maybe further out. I'm gonna switch off."

There is a break in the tape at this point. SSgt. Nevels states that when first sighted, the lighted object, which Halt describes as red, was hovering in the air in the field adjacent to the farmhouse and was about 200 meters away (220 yards), and off to the left – which would mean the lighted object was observed at a north-westerly position from where the team were at the landing site. So, with Lt. Col. Halt saying, "*. . . it looks to be maybe a quarter to a half mile further out,*" we can deduce that the lighted object had first been sighted through the trees, again, north-west of the team's position at the landing site or clearing, and that it had then moved closer into the farmer's field, which is possibly when Nevels first became aware of it. In any case, the appearance of this lighted object was very strange. In his subsequent interviews, Col. Halt has said that he saw a reddish/orange object, while Monroe Nevels has said the object looked more yellow than orange, and had rainbow colors radiating around it – i.e., its outer ring or corona.

Monroe Nevels:

> "There were rainbow colors around this object or craft, and it was dripping something. The light that I saw was more like heat. It appeared to be so hot that sparks were flying off it in the colors of a rainbow that changed, as you would see molten steel boiling."

This description by Nevels is similar to the lighted object that was seen descending into the forest just north of the Woodbridge runway, as sighted by

Airman Lori Buoen the night before from her position inside the East Gate shack. Lori described the object as a *red/orange, fiery, sphere of light* that had a *blue/white corona.* As for the noted "dripping" of something hot and sparks flying off the object, perhaps Lori Buoen was too far away to see this feature, but it's possible that it was the same object, or one of several that were similar and present in the forest over those three nights.

The fiery-colored object was being observed hovering some ten to fifteen feet off the ground in the farmer's field.[cccxxi] Halt is quoted saying that during this initial sighting of the object in the farmer's field, that the object was the size of a large basketball, maybe or a little bigger, and that it was more oval, than round.[cccxxii] However, according to UFO enthusiast and researcher, Gary Heseltine, Col. Halt had told him that while it was in the field the object was the size of a car.[cccxxiii] The average length of a car is between 14 to 16 feet, which is larger than the 9 x 9 x 9-feet size description that SSgt. Jim Penniston had reported!

During a Skype call on February 6, 2019, we asked Monroe Nevels the size of the lighted object he saw when it was first observed in the field. Monroe said it was the size of a small craft and agreed that it was around the size of what SSgt. Jim Penniston reported to have witnessed on the first night.[cccxxiv]

In any case, Lt. Col. Halt then became concerned with the family in the farmhouse. Halt says that from their perspective looking at the western side of the farmer's house, it had rows of windows on both the first and second floor, and that the glow from the suspended object was reflecting so brightly off the windows, it was like the house was on fire.[cccxxv] Suddenly the object then disappeared.

HALT TAPE:

> HALT: "The light is gone now. It was approximately 120 degrees from the site…."

A compass reading of 120 degrees is about 4 o'clock on the dial, which from the team's position at the landing site, would make the lighted object appear off to the right in a south-easterly direction. Perhaps the object had moved during the break in the tape and just before it disappeared. We then hear Lt. Englund announcing that the lighted object was back:

> ENGLUND: "It's back again."

> HALT: “Is it back again?”
> NEVELS: “Yes, sir.”
> HALT: “Well, douse flashlights then.”
> HALT: “Let’s go back to the edge of the clearing so we can get a better look at it. See if you can get the Starscope on it. The light’s still there, and all the barnyard animals have gone quiet now. We’re heading about 110, 120 degrees from the site out through to the clearing now, still getting a reading on the meter, about two clicks.”

As we can see, Halt is heard saying that they were heading 110, 120 degrees (south-east) from the site through to the clearing to get a better look at the lighted object – meaning the team had moved out of the tree line and close to the first of two wire fences that surrounded the farmer’s field. Also, the Geiger counter had become active, making two clicks. Note that Halt is saying the Geiger counter is registering clicks some four feet off the ground and at their position 110 degrees from the landing site:

> HALT: “Needle’s jumped, three to four clicks, getting stronger.”
> NEVELS: “Now it’s stopped . . . Now it’s coming up . . . Hold on. There we go . . . about approximately four foot off the ground, at a compass heading of 110 degrees.
> HALT: “He’s turned the meter off. Gotta say that again. About four feet off the ground, about 110 degrees, getting a reading of about four clicks?”

Apparently, the Geiger counter readings being taken by SSgt. Nevels had weakened at this point:

> NEVELS: “Yes, sir. (coughs). Excuse me. Now it’s dying.”
> HALT: “Now it’s dying. I think it’s something other than the ground. I think it’s something that’s . . . something variable.”

It could be estimated that it was around this time that Sgt. Bustinza and his patrol had collected two more lightalls from the motor pool at RAF Bentwaters and were refuelling them at the Woodbridge base:

> “So, we went back to Bentwaters base, grabbed two lightalls and had a patrol refuel them….”[cccxxvi]

Going by what Bustinza has said in other interviews, he was not only with the patrol which went to the motor pool at Bentwaters to pick up fresh lightalls and then headed to the gas pumps at the Woodbridge base, but he was also tasked with being responsible for fuelling the lightalls.

Quoting Adrian Bustinza:

> ". . . we made sure that the light-alls were full of gas and the vehicles were full of gas, and we had approximately two or three light-all units with us and we took them back…."[cccxxvii]

Inside the Tree Line

Back in the forest near the landing site, Sgt. Nevels then appeared to be alerting the team to the lighted object over by a tree:

> NEVELS: ". . . In that tree right over…."

It is reported that the lighted object had moved from the farmer's field into the tree line of the forest, north-west of where Lt. Col. Halt and his team were located, and was moving back and forth through the trees, horizontally zigzagging around them, deliberately dodging the trees, and occasionally bobbing up and down:

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "When we initially saw the object, it was moving back and forth and actually came into the forest. It moved through the trees, avoiding the trees, bobbing up and down a little bit as it went through trees, and it was thought it was coming in to look at us or something."[cccxxviii]

Halt is quoted as saying that it was obviously under intelligent control, as if it was being steered to manoeuvre cautiously around the trees.

Monroe Nevels:

> "It then moved into the forest tree line and

> was moving amongst the trees and blinking like an eye, just as I had seen earlier."[cccxxix]

While interviewed on the episode of *Unsolved Mysteries,* first televised in September 1991, Halt also mentioned the same electrostatic effects reported by Jim Penniston and John Burroughs during the first night's events:

> "There was a very strange feeling in the air. It made your hair bristle, sort of like static electricity. You just had a very unusual feeling, and I don't think it was all psychological. I think there was something physiological about it."[cccxxx]

During his December 2014 radio interview with host Jimmy Church, again, Col. Halt described the lighted object while it was in the tree line as not round or spherical, but *oval* . . . like an American football, but just a little larger (no longer the size of a car, if the quote attributed to Halt saying this can be believed), and that it was *red, glowing reddish-orange* and had *a dark center, and was blinking:*

> "The black disappeared like a shutter was closing over the black center. Well, I don't know if it was a craft, that's the thing, it was a light. I couldn't discern a physical shape, in other words I didn't see anything metallic or whatever. It was dripping something, that was happening definitely. The blinking was in the center and this [dripping of something] was coming off the perimeter, same orangey-red."[cccxxxi]

It seems that when Halt describes the object dripping something, he is referring to what he saw when the object was out in the field, because in the book he co-authored with John Hanson, he states:

> "While in the field it appeared to be shedding or dripping glowing red/orange particles. When it moved into the forest the blinking/shedding appeared to stop."[cccxxxii]

In any case, like Nevels had described earlier with Lt. Englund, when he viewed the lighted object through the night-vision goggles, Halt trained his Starlight Scope night-vision device on the object and described it blinking

and winking like an eye. After all, the object was an oval shape like an eye and had a black center like an eye's pupil.

Quoting Col. Halt from the book he wrote with John Hanson:

> "It's the only way I can describe it. It looked like an eye. It was oval and had a black center, and it was winking. It just looked like an eye is what it looked like."[cccxxxiii]
>
> **Note:** The lighted object observed to have a dark center to it is the same as what Jim Penniston described while approaching the lighted object he encountered on the first night, and immediately after he had entered the energy field surrounding the object and which was 'cloaking' (concealing) it, *it turned out to be a black triangular craft.* (See Chapter 3: *Discovery* and also Note 99).

It is likely at this point that Sgt. Bustinza and his patrol had now returned with the fresh lightalls.[cccxxxiv] During his interview on *Phenomenon* radio (2015), Adrian Bustinza says that it was at the staging post that he met Airman John Burroughs a second time:

> ". . . then we ended up back at the point where everybody was at the checkpoint, and that's where I ran into John again."[cccxxxv]

As noted, Burroughs was told by Lt. Col. Halt via MSgt. Ball to remain at the staging area, so it is likely that Burroughs and Bustinza had met again. Sgt. Bustinza and the airmen in his patrol then began to deploy the lightalls they had returned with and attempted to activate them, but still they could not get the lightalls to work:

> "In the process of trying to check the lightalls, everything was malfunctioning. When we got to 'Point A' – the sighting of the object – we had trouble turning the lightalls 'on.' Our truck wouldn't run either. It was kind of like all the energy had been drained out of both lightall units."[cccxxxvi]
>
> ". . . and we checked them for gas, and they were gassed up. Uh, they got one lightall going and then it was shut down again and before shutdown though it was like, sputter and the lights would flicker, so then it turned off completely."[cccxxxvii]

It was thought that perhaps the lightalls were again low on gas, which was impossible as they had already been checked to make sure they were full, and when tested had been functioning perfectly. We are told that amidst all the excitement, Lt. Englund complained (most likely by radio to Sgt. Bustinza from the landing site) that they couldn't have been filled, even though the lightalls had been filled to overflowing.[cccxxxviii] Bustinza also adds that some of the shift members that had gotten off during the prior shift had also been summoned – although by whom they were summoned isn't mentioned – and all were deployed out there, adding that they were simply walking aimlessly around the checkpoint (staging post area). Col. Halt had no doubt been listening in to the radio transmissions made from where they were at the landing site to the staging area:

> "At this time there were probably 30 or 40 people in total, with three or four lightalls which were acting up. They wouldn't run right, kept flickering off and on. I could hear comments: 'He didn't refuel them,' and somebody else said, 'Yes, I did refuel them; I took them down to the motor pool before we brought them out.'"[cccxxxix]

During the August 29, 2015 *Phenomenon* radio interview, Adrian Bustinza says that in the end they didn't use the lightalls – likely having abandoned them after trying in vain to get them to work.

> ". . . we weren't able to do, uh, get them started so we didn't use them, but we were summoned to go out into the forest area and try to locate the light, uh, that were moving about in the forest."[cccxl]

Obviously other things were now happening that demanded his and the men's attention, and so Sgt. Bustinza and his patrol then concentrated on locating the light that was reported to be moving through the trees in the forest and was causing some excitement. Bustinza says that then the lights started appearing – "*blue, red, orange and kinda like a bluish tint . . . whitish, bluish tint*"[cccxli] manoeuvring between the trees. (Again, this is the same description of the lighted object Airman Lori Buoen had reported the night before.) Basically, says Bustinza, he and his men were chasing lights:

> ". . . and the commotion started. People started getting excited, some points people were running at other point. I recall a couple of airmen that actually cried and said that they were scared, never going back to the point, and I calmed a couple of them down and returned them back to the checkpoint."[cccxlii]

After a break in the tape, Lt. Col. Halt resumed taking notes in his mini audio recorder, and says that they were now 150 to 200 yards from the landing site, which means they would have moved northwards to where the lighted object was being observed inside the tree line of the forest and at around 'eleven o'clock' of their position:

> HALT: "We've just bumped into the first night bird we've seen. We're about one-hundred and fifty or two-hundred yards from the site. Everything else is just deathly calm. There is no doubt about it – there's some type of strange flashing red light ahead."

Lt. Col. Halt is then told by SSgt. Nevels that the color of the object is yellow, which causes one to wonder why Halt initially observed the object as red/orange.

> NEVELS: "Sir, it's yellow."

. . . and now with a yellow tinge:

> HALT: "I saw a yellow tinge in it, too. Weird! It . . . it appears to be maybe moving a little bit this way?
> NEVELS: "Yes sir."
> HALT: "It's brighter than it has been."
> VOICE: "Yellow."

Only as recently as 2018 has Halt described the object as "orangey-yellow."[cccxliii]

Yellow Mist-like Object

Apparently, Sgt. Bustinza, from whatever vantage position he was inside the tree line, was also following the light in the woods.

Adrian Bustinza:

> "We got – I think it was the flight chief, and I believe another individual officer. We kept searching the area – kind of like trying to follow the object. And it was moving through the trees. And in the process, we came upon a yellow mist about 2-or-3 feet off the ground. It was like dew, but it was yellow . . . like nothing I've ever seen before. . . . We kind of like ignored it. We were worried about the [other] object … to see if we could locate it again or catch up to it again…."[cccxliv]

The "flight chief" would have been MSgt Ball, and the "officer," Lt. Englund, which would imply that Sgt. Bustinza had caught up with Lt. Col. Halt's team at this point – *but perhaps not,* especially when we consider this quote by Georgina Bruni, which tells us that Bustinza was still trying to catch up with Lt. Col. Halt's patrol when he says he saw the yellow mist:

> "Whilst trying to catch up with Halt's patrol he [Bustinza] saw lights moving through the trees and the forest was bathed in a yellow mist rising about two to three feet off the ground, almost to knee height."[cccxlv]

So, it is evident that Bustinza was near to Halt's patrol but in another part of the forest. The discrepancies are abundant in these accounts. For example, Halt has said in recent interviews that Bustinza did not leave his side and stuck to him like glue.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "Bustinza is a puzzle, as he was with me the whole time. We rode out in the Jeep together and he stayed with our small group that went forward to the service road (where the other cops and the lightalls were). He stuck to me like glue, as he was frightened."[cccxlvi]

Col. Halt says Bustinza is a puzzle, and this is in reference to the fact that when Adrian Bustinza came forward in 1984, what he had to say was unacceptably inconsistent with the account Col. Halt had always given and challenged the credibility of the whole incident. However, the fact is that Bustinza would have had to leave Halt and the rest of the team after having been ordered to collect the lightalls a second time and refuel them, and so it is possible that Bustinza and several other airmen really had observed the yellow mist-like phenomenon in the forest.

Now, the "yellow mist-like object" is intriguing, and like all of Bustinza's testimony, his sighting of this did not emerge until less than three and half years after the incident when he was first contacted in April 1984 by UFO researcher and investigator Ray Boeche. Perhaps a comparison can be made here with the "effervescent white/yellowish blur," or "white/yellowish dome of light" that Jim Penniston says was clearly emanating from something on the forest floor during his and Burroughs' approach to the LANDED craft they later encountered in a clearing in the forest. Although Jim Penniston doesn't mention "mist" or "fog," the correlation with his description of seeing an "white/yellowish, effervescent blur" is striking.

However, it should be said that the yellow mist phenomenon, which Bustinza may have indeed witnessed, is something which draws us into the more incredulous features given in Bustinza's account because what Bustinza claims to have seen and ignored at this stage to then focus on the light that Halt and the rest of the team were observing inside the tree line is something that comes up again in his account . . . *only it will later transform into a stereotypical UFO story with a LANDED saucer-shaped disk and alien beings,* which is why Col. Halt says Bustinza is a mystery.

But at this stage, Bustinza's sighting of a large, yellow mist-like object in the woods could be seen to be in plausible accord with the other strange phenomena that was going on, which is why we decided to leave it here for now and will pick up on this again in Chapter 12, when Adrian Bustinza was first contacted in April 1984 and when he first gave his own account. And we do this to see how Bustinza's more incredulous claims, which he said also involved Lt. Col. Halt and the others in the team, compare with what Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels say they witnessed.[cccxlvii]

Returning to Lt. Col. Halt and the team, the bright object inside the tree line was then seen to be moving closer to where Halt and the team were, and now pieces were shooting off from it, and it appears for a short while that two lights were observed:

HALT: "It's coming this way. It is definitely coming this way."
BALL: "Pieces are shooting off . . ."
HALT: "Pieces of it are shooting off."
BALL: "At about eleven o'clock . . ."
HALT: "There is no doubt about it. This is weird!"
BALL: "Look to the left . . ."

HALT: “Definitely moving . . .”
NEVELS: “Yeah, definitely moving. There’s two . . . two lights. One light to the right and one light to the left.”
HALT: “Ok, ok, keep your flashlights off. There’s something very, very strange. Keep the headset on, see if it gets any stronger.” [Halt wants to see if the radiation readings are getting any stronger.]
NEVELS: “I have.”
HALT: “OK. Give us, give us your readout.”
NEVELS: “OK, I have an indication that this is on a beta reading, too . . .”
HALT: “It’s on a beta reading?”
NEVELS: “The beta shield has been removed.”
HALT: “OK. Pieces are falling off it again.”
BALL: “Sir, it just moved to the right . . . it moved off to the right.”
HALT: “Yeah!”
ENGLUND: “Went off to the right.”
HALT: “Strange huh? The other one came to the left! Let’s approach to the edge of the woods up there at that point. Can we do without lights? Let’s do it carefully. Come on.”

Again, the description of the oval object resembling a blinking and winking eye with a pupil is recorded:

HALT: “OK, we’re looking at the thing; we’re probably about two to three hundred yards away. It looks like an eye winking at you. It’s still moving from side to side, and when you put the Starscope on it, it, it sort of has a hollow center right? A d-dark center, it’s . . .it’s . . .”
ENGLUND: “It’s like a pupil . . .”
HALT: “Yeah, it’s a bit like a pupil of an eye looking at you, winking. And the flash is so bright to the Starscope, that uh, it almost burns your eye.”[cccxlviii]

There is a long break in the tape at this point.

Back in the Farmer’s Field

Col. Halt continues his account by saying that as he and the team worked their way up between the edge of the forest and the field to try and get closer to it – one would assume going northward – the lighted object then left the

forest and receded back out into the field: *". . . probably fifty, a hundred, two hundred feet out into the field, about a third of the way to the farmer's house."*[cccxlix]

Col. Charles Halt:

> "So we moved up the edge of the field out of the forest, right by the barb-wire fence, and watched it for maybe a minute or so, maybe longer."[cccl]

Col. Halt says the lighted object seemed to be centered almost in front of the farmer's house and in line from their position at this stage, and again, the glow of the object was so dramatically reflected in the windows of the farmer's house, that it looked as if it were on fire inside.[cccli]

Monroe Nevels:

> "The object then moved back into the field to the left of the farmer's house at about 11 o'clock ahead of us. I had to track along with the men, and so to remain free, I left the radiograph instrument where we had just been taking the readings and moved to the edge of the farmer's field. As we stood behind the fence that led into the field in front of us, we then saw what looked like a large, oval, yellowish object hovering low in the air, with also yellowish-blue and red colors, as though it might be a very hot metal or steel burning at very high temperatures. It resembled a boiling pot of hot molten metal or steel, which had pieces dripping from it or had pieces discharging away from it. This would be the closest analogy I can make to describe it. Pieces of flying debris were being shed, and it seemed to get hotter the closer we got as we approached it. What we were observing made absolutely no sense at all. It appeared to be motionless

> and still, as if it were recharging itself. I then took a few photos of it with my Nikon F3 and a 105mm f/2.8 lens, with Tri-X at ASA 400.
>
> After that, Lt. Col. Halt and I took the initiative and climbed over the fence, but almost as soon as we touched ground on the other side, the object or vessel moved and appeared to be moving towards us. I say 'appeared' because everything happened so quickly. I have noted that several witnesses who were out there with us that night have claimed to have also climbed over the fence . . . but this is not true. I never saw anyone else climb over the fence. There was just not enough time for anyone else to follow Lt. Col. Halt and me in climbing over the fence and retreating back over again quickly. In any case, just as the object or vessel appeared to be rushing towards us, it suddenly disappeared!"

As noted, Monroe writes that, to him, the object simply disappeared. However, Charles Halt is on record as having said he saw the object explode silently into five white objects, which then immediately disappeared. Following are two comments on this observation made by Col. Halt:

> "And we tried to approach it, and it went back out into the field. And suddenly it silently exploded into five white objects, just like fireworks, you know, just poof! No noise at all, it just exploded . . . it was gone." [ccclii]

> "The object was there, probably for, I'm guessing, 30, 40 seconds – maybe a minute, and all of a sudden, it just silently exploded into five white objects and they disappeared – just gone like that!"[ccliii]

It would appear that Sgt. Nevels didn't see this short-lived display, which

must have lasted only a split second, and just noted that the lighted object had disappeared.

Monroe Nevels:

> "We were a little dazed by this, and were in awe that it was so fast, and our thoughts were like, *'Where did it go?', 'What did it do?'*"

According to his account, Halt then led his team out into the farmer's field where the lighted object was seen to try to find any evidence of residue, slag, or burn marks left on the ground out there by the object, as it had been observed dripping something like molten metal. The team, led by Lt. Col. Halt, then climbed over the wire fence (there were actually two wire fences surrounding the farmer's field, according to Jim Penniston from the first night), and moved out into the field to search for sample evidence. However, according to Halt the only evidence the team found in the field was ". . . *that a cow had been there, as there were cow pies.*"[ccccliv] It was dark and the team couldn't avoid stepping into a few, according to Col. Halt.[ccclv]

Three Elliptical Objects

From the first field, the team then moved past the farmer's house and across the narrow road into the second farmer's field, which was large and had been ploughed.

Monroe Nevels:

> "After a quick search, I then looked up and noticed three grayish-lighted, disk-like objects overhead, about a thousand feet off the ground. It looked as if our activity was being observed. I then pointed out to Col. Halt they were in the sky."

HALT TAPE:

> HALT: "We've passed the farmer's house and are crossing the next field, and now we have multiple sightings of up to five lights with a similar shape and all, but they seem to be steady now rather than a pulsating glow with a red flash."

Lt. Col. Halt says "*up to five lights*" sighted. But according to SSgt. Monroe Nevels, there were three objects in the sky directly above them – gray-lighted and disk-like, which seems in accord with what Halt had said – i.e., steady in motion and each no longer pulsating or glowing red. In any case, what Monroe Nevels remembers is endorsed by Col. Halt in his 1998 interview with American journalist Sally J. Rayl, which also appeared in the book he co-authored with John Hanson:

> ". . . three objects clearly visible with multiple-colored lights on them. The objects appeared elliptical and then they turned full round, which I thought was quite interesting. All three doing that. They were stationary for awhile."[cccvi]

We are told by Col. Halt that it was at this point, and while crossing a stream or creek that ran through the second farmer's field, that the team couldn't avoid getting themselves wet, as a few of the team, including himself, had accidently fallen into it, since it was too dark to see.

Col. Halt:

> "We crossed it, and we all fell into a stream we didn't see and got good and wet."[cccvii]

HALT TAPE:

> HALT: "We've just crossed the, the creek . . ."
> ENGLUND: "Here we go your on now . . ." [Englund is talking about the Geiger counter].
> HALT: ". . . and, uh, we're getting what kind of readings now?"
> NEVELS: "Three clicks . . ."
> HALT: "We're getting three good clicks on the meter, and we're seeing strange lights in the sky."

There is another break in the tape at this point. It should be noted that all five

in the team had radios, but three were using different radio nets to three different control centers. Lt. Col. Halt was on the net to the Command Post, Sgt. Bustinza was on the Security net to the Security Police, and MSgt. Ball was on the Law Enforcement net.[cccLviii] There were times when the team would have to relay through one of the personnel that was back at the staging post with the lightalls because there was a serious problem with the radios. This was puzzling because at this stage the team were in the field, out in the open and in the clear, and should have had a good line of transmission to the three control centers.[cccLix]

Now that three objects were being observed in the sky, Col. Halt continues his account by telling us that he was able to use his radio to ask the Command Post to contact the Air Traffic Control Tower on the Bentwaters base to see if anything had come up on radar. Their response? *". . . they came back and said, nothing. They don't see anything."*[cccLx] Halt then told the Command Post to have Eastern Radar (RAF Wattisham), which had the radar for the area including air defense, and also Heathrow Tower to try and locate the objects. Halt told them where the objects were, but again the same answer came back – *nothing . . . negative.*

In another interview, Col. Halt also mentions that he didn't receive any response from anybody through the Command. It was as if no one wanted to leave any record of having commented on what was taking place or assume responsibility for it. They just listened and observed.

Second Farmer's Field

The team have now reached the far-side of the second farmer's field, which was ploughed, and aside from the three objects above them in the sky, Lt. Col. Halt reports another light at 110 degrees east and some distance off the coast on the horizon:

> HALT: "Ah, two-forty-four." [2:44 a.m.] "We're at the far side of the farmer's . . . the second farmer's field and made sighting again about uh, hundred and ten degrees. This looks like it's clear out to the coast. It's right on the horizon. Moves about a bit and flashes from time to time. Still steady and red in colour. Also after negative readings in the center of the farmer's field we're picking up slight readings . . . uh, four or five clicks now on the

meter."

The lighted red object observed on the east horizon off the coast is not ever mentioned in later interviews by Col. Halt, but as we will see, this later turns up in Burroughs' account. It also appears that someone else had picked up the Geiger counter that Monroe said he had left behind and is using it while SSgt. Monroe Nevels concentrates on the objects above them.

Monroe Nevels:

> "These objects appeared to be stationary at first, and then we noticed some slight movement with them. Knowing that our eyes and brain can play tricks on us, I decided to lie down on my back, looking up with my camera to my eye and my elbows on the ground, so as to brace the camera in a steady, tripod fashion. As I did this, I knew that I would then be able to tell if the lights were indeed moving. They were indeed moving, but very slowly. As I concentrated on remaining perfectly still, I noticed the larger, grayish light of one that was predominant and in front of the other two as if it was the leading craft or command vessel. It was moving ever so slowly and away from the others, and I voiced this to Lt. Col. Halt. As we were watching this aerial phenomenon over our heads, the three objects suddenly disappeared!"

UAP's Over the Bentwaters Base

Suddenly, and despite denials from the personnel in the Air Traffic Control Tower at Bentwaters and the radar operators from Eastern Radar (Wattisham), a lot of noise then erupted over the radios made by the Security

Police personnel at Bentwaters, who were saying three objects were in the sky above them.

Monroe Nevels:

> "Just as instantly as the objects had disappeared from their position above us, we then heard a lot of commotion over the radios, and it was the Security Police at RAF Bentwaters, informing us that three objects were above them. Apparently, the lighted objects had been able to jump from their positions over us near Woodbridge and show up over Bentwaters in less than a second. In other words, from the time we had just observed the objects above us, to the time that the Security Police were talking about observing the same objects above them some distance away, it had happened immediately, instantaneously."

HALT TAPE:

> HALT: "Three-o-five" [3:05 a.m.] "We see strange, uh, strobe-like flashes to the, uh, [the north?] almost sporadic, but there's definitely something there. Some kind of phenomena."

Back out in the field, Col. Halt says that either MSgt. Ball or Lt. Englund, alerted the team to look towards the objects in the sky to the north, and they observed multiple objects. Lt. Col. Halt then called the Command Post again and told them to check with the personnel in the Air Traffic Control Tower at Bentwaters where to look. However, again, Halt was told that they were not seeing anything.[cccLxi]

In an email sent to John Hanson in August 2015, Col. Halt writes that at this stage in the events that unfolded, it was now observed that there were three objects to the north and two objects to the south. Halt adds that the two objects that were about three thousand feet to the south[cccLxii] were seen as a light source, and that he couldn't discern a shape due to their brightness.[cccLxiii]

HALT TAPE:

> HALT: “Three-o-five. At about, uh . . . ten degrees, horizon, uh, directly north, we’ve got two strange objects, uh . . . half-moon shape, dancing about, with coloured lights on ‘em. But, uh, guess it has to be about five to ten miles out, maybe less. The half-moons have now turned into full circles, as though there was an ellipse or something there for a minute or two.”

There is a break in the tape at this point. Halt now recalls that the objects to the north were between one and two miles away and were higher in altitude and smaller and that they were moving in synchronization together . . . and again, they displayed multicolored lights.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> “The best way I can describe them – they look like a half, or a Cherokee moon, and they are well-illuminated, with multiple colored lights, and they were moving about in sharp, angular, patterns – very fast, and as we watched them, they turned, from the equivalent of a Cherokee moon into a full circle.”[cccIxiv]

It appears that the lights to the north then turned from what appeared at first to be crescent shapes into full round objects. The objects still displayed multicolored lights and were moving in unison together at high speed and making sharp angular turns. Halt adds it was like they were in formation and perhaps doing some kind of grid search.[cccIxv]

“Is this a warning? Is this a weapon? A Signal? What is it?”

Col. Halt then continues his account with one of the most dramatic incidents out of all the events that took place on the ‘third night,’ and we need to note what was recorded on the cassette tape as a lead up:

> HALT: “Three-a.m.-fifteen [03:15] Now we’ve got an object about ten degrees directly south . . .”
> NEVELS: “There’s one to the left . . .”
> HALT: “Ten degrees off the horizon. And the ones to the north are moving. One’s moving away from us.”
> BALL: “Movin’ forward!’
> NEVELS: “It’s moving out fast.”

> HALT: “They’re moving out fast.”
> BALL: “This one on the right’s heading away, too.”
> HALT: “Yeah, they’re both heading north. OK, hey, here he comes from the south . . . he’s coming in toward us now.”
> BALL: “Holy Shit!”

Col. Halt says that at this point (the time estimated to be around 3:16 a.m.), one of the two bright objects from the south flies to the team’s position in the second farmer’s field at high speed, and very rapidly it stops dead overhead at an altitude of around three thousand feet.[cccLxvi] Halt says he could not really discern a shape, although he says the glowing bright white light surrounding it made it appear round. However, the object then sends down what he describes as the equivalent of a *laser beam*, because the light did not radiate out like a normal light would do, but came straight down the same size all the way down the beam,[cccLxvii] and illuminated the ground at a distance of about ten feet away from his feet and that of the team. Halt gives an estimate of around ten or twelve inches in diameter for the beam . . . although it must be said that he has also said on different occasions that the beam was “twelve to fourteen inches,”[cccLxviii] “fifteen to twenty inches,” and “six to eight, maybe nine, inches in diameter.”[cccLxix]

HALT TAPE:

> HALT: “Now we’re observing what appears to be a beam coming down to the ground.”
> BALL: “Look at the colors . . . shit!”
> HALT: “This is unreal.” [Laughs]

Col. Halt says that he and the team were in shock with what could only be considered a display of some kind of supernatural power – especially with a light beam of this nature, and immediately he wonders if this is meant to be a signal, a form of communication, or if it was instead a demonstration of a weapon and therefore a warning.[cccLxx]

Quoting Col. Halt:

> “Well, that really had us upset because we weren’t sure whether it was a warning, whether it was, you know, a shot at us, whether it was somebody trying to communicate, or what it was. We had no idea, and we just stood there and looked, and nobody said anything and, all of a sudden, as fast as it came on, it was gone.

> The object receded."[cccLxxi]

Monroe Nevels:

> "A thin light was observed coming down to the ground, and although I didn't witness this myself, it was said that at one point it was almost by our feet. Apparently, this only happened once. I am not going to say that this happened, as I didn't see it myself. But of course this is possible. And if Lt. Col. Halt and others said this happened, well that rests with them. I had my camera, and so if I saw it, I would have tried to take a photo of it.[cccLxxii] Apparently, the light was like a laser beam, but no one knew what a laser beam was at this time."[cccLxxiii]

Col. Halt says that the beam that was being aimed close to the team, as if acknowledging their presence, suddenly cut out like someone had flipped a switch, as in a light bulb being switched off. They looked up at the bright object directly above them and saw it move back towards the south.[cccLxxiv]

Although Lt. Col. Halt was being told through his radio contact with the Command Post that nothing was being seen from the towers on the base and the radar towers, it was at 03:25 hours GMT – just several minutes after the object had sent down a beam at the feet of Lt. Col. Halt and his team – that a logbook entry was made at RAF Watton dated 28 December 1980, reporting that the Bentwaters Command Post had contacted Eastern Radar (RAF Wattisham) requesting information of aircraft in the area. Indeed, a sighting had been reported and logged.[cccLxxv]

The team then watched the objects both in the north and the south for some time. The object in the south that was above them was seen to be losing altitude. But feeling tired, cold, wet, and shocked by what they had seen, Halt decided they should head back to the base and said this into his mini-cassette recorder before stating that the object to the south was observed to be still beaming down lights to the ground:

> HALT: “Three-thirty, or zero-three-thirty.” [03:30] “. . . and the objects are still in the sky, although the one to the south looks like it’s losing a little bit of altitude. We’re turning around and heading back toward the base.”

Break in Tape.

> HALT: “The object to the sou . . . the object to the south is still beaming down lights to the ground.”

Break in tape.

Beams of Light directed down on the Bentwaters Base

Col. Halt continues his account, telling us that that he and the men then observed the other object that was in the south fly north over the Bentwaters base to then send a similar laser-like beam down to the ground. As soon as they saw this, the radios erupted with excited chatter. Halt adds: *“The people over there could actually see the beams of light, too . . . .”*[cccLxxvi]

Monroe Nevels:

> “In the distance, and while the objects were over Bentwaters, we then saw very faint, pencil-thin beams of light against the black sky that appeared to be directed downward to the ground from the objects. I said to Lt. Col. Halt that it looked like something was trying to tap into what we got, and wondered what it was they were trying to find.[cccLxxvii] As we continued trying to keep up with the action, we had several witnesses comment about how quiet it all was. No sound of animals or cattle. It was eerie. Also, no sounds were heard from these objects, and the movements they made were so quick and silent – it was

> way beyond ANYTHING we had in our arsenal. Again, it seemed they were observing us."

In various interviews, Col. Halt has mentioned that he and the team then watched the activity of the objects towards the north sending beams of light down to the ground, as if doing a grid search:

> "It was very amazing … and the way they were going, it appeared that they were doing some type of grid search, or doing some type of a pattern, or seemed to be some type of logic to their movement – really wasn't sure. We probably watched them for twenty, thirty minutes."[cccLxxviii]

Burroughs, who was with the other patrols whom Halt had told to remain back at the post, was also quoted as having said that the radio chatter erupted when the beams began hitting the Bentwaters base.

Weapons Storage Area

Col. Halt says that he could then hear the chatter on the radio from the police radio located a mile to two miles away north and in the vicinity of the WSA (Weapon Storage Area) on the Bentwaters base, and that he and the rest of his team could now see beams in, near, or somewhere around where the weapons storage area was.[cccLxxix]

Quoting Col. Halt: *". . . we could see beams of light coming down there, near the weapons storage area, and we could hear the chatter on the radio."*[cccLxxx]

Monroe Nevels:

> "It is said that at one time these beams were also seen being directed down over the Weapons Storage Area at Bentwaters, but from our distance and perspective, the beams of light only SEEMED to be over the bunkers. No one could be certain. I

> have been quoted as saying that the beam from one of the objects 'burned' a hole in the bunkers. This is not true. Instead I said that I HEARD this is what had happened."[cccLxxxi]

Col Halt also clarifies his own position on this:

> "Contrary to what has been alleged I never told anybody any structure was penetrated by beams. I was several miles away. From my view, a beam or more came down near the Weapons Storage Area. I don't know for a fact that the beams landed there. I know they were in the area. I was too far away but relied on the radio chatter, which indicated the beams landed there."[cccLxxxii]

It is true that the WSA on the Bentwaters base is not visible from the forest, but from what was said amidst all the commotion over the radio, it was obvious to Lt. Col. Halt that the light beams were being aimed down over that area.

Burroughs has said in recent interviews that several blue balls, or spheres of light, appeared to come from the direction of where Lt. Col. Halt and his team were, and started moving towards them where they were at the staging post. Burroughs says that one of these blue lights passed over the vehicles causing a reaction in the defunct lightalls, which suddenly lit up. This solitary blue sphere of light then moved through the open window of a truck, causing those inside to panic. As soon as these blue balls of light had passed over them, the lightalls went out again.[cccLxxxiii] Burroughs is the only person that night to report blue lighted objects, and he is mistaken when he says that Col. Halt had been quoted as having observed lighted objects with a distinctly blue color, when in fact. Halt had reported objects that were multicolored.

"Revisiting the Landing Site"

The time was now around 3:45 a.m., and the team prepared to head back to the staging post. According to Burroughs, who had been at the staging post all this time, he was then given permission to go forward to where the team were in the forest. If so, then his permission to finally go forward was timely,

as it appears that he met the team coming back after things were dying down, and the more remarkable phenomena that night had virtually ended.

Quoting Burroughs:

> "From that point, I got permission to go forward. I meet up with Colonel Halt and his party. One of the things that always sticks out to me was the look on their faces. They were in shock. They weren't themselves. They were really shook up. They were a little bit rattled. The only one that really didn't seem to be that rattled was Lieutenant Englund. He was kind of crazy anyway. He was an ex-Marine. But he didn't seem to be a shook up. But the long story short on that was eventually . . . Colonel Halt talked to me about what happened, asked me if some of what happened to him happened to me. He pointed out some of the blue lights flying around, and at one point the blue lights . . . when he talked about beams, like going down onto the Bentwaters site, there was a blue light that was flying towards the weapons storage area, and I actually saw the light shoot down into that area, too. Now, the difference between what people have said, and others, is I haven't found anybody yet that said it actually went into the area, okay? But there was a light that shot down in the area."[cccclxxxiv]

As quoted above, on the tape. (2:44 a.m.) Lt. Col. Halt says: "We're at the far side of the farmer's . . . the second farmer's field and made sighting again about one-hundred and ten degrees. This looks like it's clear off to the coast. It's right on the horizon. Moves about a bit and flashes from time to time. Still steady and red in color."

It would appear that this same object later became the focus of another dramatic incident, this time involving both Airman Burroughs and Sgt. Bustinza.

According to Col. Halt, it was when he and the team returned to the staging post and after he had sent most of the personnel back to the base, and there were only two or three airmen remaining, that Burroughs approached him. Halt says that Burroughs was continually "bugging" (nagging) him half to death to allow him to go to the landing site to see where the craft had landed earlier, and this is said as if Burroughs merely wanted to see the evidence there – even though he had already examined the site several times since the incident.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "When we came back to the lightalls and the cops, I sent most of them back to the base and Burroughs was bugging me half to death. *'I want to go back out to the site where this supposed craft had landed two nights earlier.'* I said, 'OK,' and he said. *'Bustinza come with me,'* and he and Bustinza went forward."[cccLxxxv]

Nothing is said about the lighted object that was first observed towards the east on the horizon near the coast, and which, according to Burroughs, had moved closer inland to where he, Lt. Col. Halt, and the others were by this time. Burroughs says that after the incident with the light beaming down over the Weapons Storage Area, a large white-orange light appeared in the distance towards the east coast – obviously the same object Lt. Col. Halt had noted earlier on his mini-cassette recorder at 2:44 a.m. Burroughs tells us that Lt. Col. Halt then asked him if it resembled what he saw on the first night, even though Burroughs had said that Halt was pointing to blue lights that were still moving about in the night sky. (Burroughs is the only person to have reported distinctly blue lights or objects.) In any case, as to the white-orange light, Burroughs says he responded with the following and admitted that he lied to Halt so that Halt would allow him to go out towards the lighted object to see if he could get closer to it:

> "And I, I, I, it was sort of, but I kind of lied to him because I wanted to get out there and get closer to it? So, I said to him, *'I don't know. Can I go look at it?'* And he, reluctantly . . . but he did allow me to go forward, and the guy that went with me was Adrian Bustinza, and he was in uniform; I wasn't."[cccLxxxvi]

When Burroughs said he lied to Halt, one would assume this means that he had asked Halt to go forward to the landing site, as this is what Col. Halt remembers him asking . . . although his intentions were to go forward to the white-orange lighted object he claims to have seen, and which he says had moved closer to where they were. However, Col. Halt does not mention seeing the lighted object again.

In the 2015 Phenomenon radio interview hosted by Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs, Adrian Bustinza says he remembers standing with Lt. Col. Halt, talking momentarily to Lt. Englund and MSgt. Ball, when Burroughs began talking to Halt, *". . . pressing the issue about going back*

out to the forest." Bustinza says that Lt. Col. Halt told Burroughs he could go and told him [Bustinza] to go with him.[cccLxxxvii] However, in the quote by Col. Halt given earlier, Halt did not say that he had told Sgt. Bustinza to go with Burroughs, and instead said that Burroughs had told Bustinza to go with him.

Burroughs, who says he still had his radio and says he was in contact with the personnel in the Weapons Storage Area tower, then says that as he and Bustinza moved towards the lighted object, *which only he mentions*, it came even closer towards them. Col. Halt says that he and the others, who still remained at this point, could see Burroughs and Bustinza the whole time through the gaps between the tall Corsican Pines, *and that they headed towards the landing site.* Halt does not say anything about the two men moving towards a lighted object.

Here's two quotes made by Col. Halt, the first in 2017 and the second in 2019:

> "We could see them the whole time because the Corsica Pines have their canopies high. You can see right through them. He went forward to the site . . . him and Bustinza . . ."[cccLxxxviii]

> "When we came back to the vehicles, John asked to go to the site where he and Jim confronted a craft. I said, OK, but make it quick; he and Bustinza did so. It was less than a hundred yards, and they quickly came back. They didn't mention anything and were never out of our sight."[cccLxxxix]

So, from these quotes it would appear from Col. Halt's account that Burroughs and Bustinza had gone to the landing site. And according to what Halt is quoted as having said above, he and the few personnel who were still at the staging post could see Burroughs and Bustinza heading towards the landing site. But from what Burroughs has said as recently as 2010, based on what he said during the hypnosis he underwent in 1988 (see closing commentary for this chapter below), his real intention was to go towards the lighted object that was first observed on the coastal horizon, and which had since moved closer. Burroughs says that he and Sgt. Bustinza had not headed towards the landing site, but was somewhere due-east in one of the fields and that it was there that Burroughs had an encounter with the lighted object, which Sgt. Bustinza will later say he had also witnessed after he came forward in 1984 to talk about his experiences.[cccxc]

From Col. Halt's perspective, nothing spectacular happened. Halt, who says he and the others watched them go to the landing site and could see them, did not report having seen the lighted object that Burroughs and Bustinza later claimed to have encountered.

And then we have Halt saying that when Burroughs and Bustinza came back (from the 'landing site'), they reported nothing unusual, which infers that Halt did not see what Burroughs and Bustinza later claims they saw and experienced, as he would have known – although Halt adds, *"that doesn't mean nothing happened."*

Quoting Col. Halt:

> ". . . and they come back and they said nothing to me about anything unusual. That doesn't mean nothing happened, but nothing unusual, and we all went back to the base."[cccxci]

Well how could anything have happened when according to Halt, he and the others could see Burroughs and Bustinza all the time through the trees?

The last recorded entry is at 4:00 a.m. And noted is the aerial activity of one of the objects that is now seen over the Woodbridge base:

> HALT: "Zero four hundred hours." [04:00 hrs]. "One object still hovering over Woodbridge base at about five to ten degrees off the horizon, still moving erratic and similar lights and beaming down as earlier."

End of tape at the 18:13.080 mark.

Aftermath

By around 5:00 a.m., everyone had left the forest and had returned to their homes and dormitories. Col. Halt says that he went straight to his home on the Bentwaters base, took a shower and had something to eat, but that he couldn't sleep. He then decided to head over to the Base Command Offices. Monroe Nevels went back home, escorted again by Lt. Englund, and it's likely that they were preparing to leave the forest either before or while Burroughs came forward to make the request to Halt if he could visit the landing site, as Monroe has no memory of ever having seen Burroughs, and

would have remembered if he did, as his extra height made him stick out from everyone. Monroe told us what he did following the events:

Monroe Nevels:

> "I had taken photographs back at the site. I processed my own, as I was a professional photographer and had my own in-house photography lab. I processed color and color slide film at home, and I made sure I had fresh chemicals and everything as accurate as I could to get the best results. So, when the photos came out fogged with no images, I was surprised. After a few years I realized the reason: There was, of course, radiation detected around the landing site and on the trees, so I realized they must have become fogged due to radioactive exposure in the area. There was enough static and radiation to fog the film, just as would happen with an X-ray film exposure. This is why none of the photos could be viewed. Anyone claiming to have un-fogged, clear-image photos of these events is lying."

The next day, Monroe reported to the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad, with the results of the mission he had been given. Conrad asked questions and wanted Nevels to give his own thoughts on the events, and Nevels explained that although he was keeping an open mind on what he had witnessed, there was no doubt that what he and the others had encountered that night was inexplicable and difficult to explain. Conrad then asked that SSgt. Nevels keep an eye on things in the forest and to keep him updated on anything out of the ordinary. We shall quote the last words Monroe had to say:

> "A 'trained observer' will always be able to gather more facts than fiction. Myself,

and several others in the Security Police, were able to do our jobs because that is what we were trained to do. We practiced these skills not only daily, but we were tested frequently to focus in on the mission at hand.

As for UFOs, sometimes issues of such are blown so far out of proportion, based on what people want to believe, that they are no longer believable. I had an open mind as to what I witnessed, and I still do to this day. Please note that my story of this event will never change for anyone, and this will be evident in any future interviews I accept to take part in. I am not in this for any personal recognition, but purely to set the facts straight."

As for the incident involving Burroughs and Bustinza . . . *did something extraordinary really happen to both of them and to Burroughs especially?*

Well, as we have discovered, much of the account given by Burroughs today was largely gathered from what he said during a hypnosis session he had agreed to undergo on November 11th, 1988 to find out if he really did have an encounter with the lighted object/craft – and even whether he had been momentarily "abducted," as was claimed later. This, along with what Adrian Bustinza had told him, was added to what little Burroughs had consciously remembered about that night. It is Jim Penniston's view that Bustinza's version of what had happened is disinformation based on the containment story that emerged after the incidents, and he takes the view that Burroughs and Bustinza simply visited the landing site to see if they could see or find anything, and that nothing extraordinary happened, all as Col. Halt remembers it.

Radiation Report by
Jaime E. Demick, Assistant Professor of Physics, Huntingdon College

On December 28, 1980 radiation measurements were taken in an area of Rendlesham Forest, Suffolk, United Kingdom, adjacent to the RAF Bentwaters and Woodbridge Air Bases. The radiation was measured with a calibrated AN/PDR-27 Radiac set by Sgt. Monroe Nevels, a Disaster Preparedness Technician who was certified by the Air Force and trained in nuclear, chemical, and biological detection equipment.

The data were not recorded on paper at the time, as the goal of this particular measurement phase was to determine the presence or absence of an object in the forest and the data were being used to qualitatively decide if an object emitting radiation was or had been present or if the residual presence of such an object could be detected. In addition, during this Cold War era, and as such was a military and not a scientific expedition, judicial use of secrecy was employed unless orders were made by command staff to record information in writing. However, due to a report of the presence of an object in the vicinity on December 26, a tape recording of the expedition was made to chronicle what was measured and encountered when military staff went to the forest to investigate the second report on December 28.

What follows is a detailed account written by the men who were there. The reader will judge their training and credentials and will draw their own conclusions about what was responsible for the reports of strange activity in the forest on the nights in question.

My part in this fascinating story is simply to clarify and verify the radiation readings made on December 28, 1980 by Sgt. Monroe Nevels. Many and varied interpretations have been made of the significance of these data, and in my opinion when one compares the transcript of the tape recording, the Radiac instrument itself, and the speculations in literature and the media, a great amount of error is in play. I immediately noticed these errors when viewing media and written accounts of the night in question, as my background as a physicist and engineer prepared me to interpret the data myself, and the numbers in the literature did not match what was actually measured by the instrument and discussed in the tape recorded event. Therefore, I took it upon myself to research this further, to the extent of contacting and meeting with Sgt. Nevels to recreate what occurred that night.

My goal was to discuss the data that Sgt. Nevels measured, to understand his reported numbers as heard

on the tape recording, and to recreate those readings on a similar Radiac device such that Sgt. Nevels could confirm his readings in my presence for my interpretation. Sgt. Nevels had ample training at the time by both the Marine Corps and Air Force in nuclear, chemical and biological detection, and was an instructor in the use of detection equipment and emergency procedures for nuclear, chemical and biological threats. Therefore I had no doubt as to the veracity of his measurements. What needed to be clarified by Sgt. Nevels was his reporting method for the data, which was misinterpreted when transcribed from the audio tape recording. Thus, the numbers bandied about for decades regarding the radiation measurements have been incorrectly reported and interpreted, resulting in many calling the readings insignificant when they are in fact quite interesting and important.

The result of our meeting and experiment using radioactive materials to recreate the Radiac readings of 1980 confirmed that what Sgt. Nevels measured was significantly elevated above background levels.

In addition, my interview with Sgt. Nevels indicated that these elevated measurements were acquired from burn marks on trees oriented in a rough circle around three depressions in the ground. The prior confusion about these measurements came from how Sgt. Nevels called out the Radiac readings. He did not call out the exact numbers from the scale, but instead referred to tenths and units on the scale as this was the training at the time and it also concealed the actual measurements in the event that the incident became classified. When the tape recording was transcribed and interpreted, it was done so without or interpretation input from Sgt. Nevels, so errors were propagated from the beginning.

A more detailed analysis of the significance of these data will be published in a scientific paper at a later date. Suffice it to say that a new interpretation of the correct radiation measurements is called for since previous analyses were based on incorrectly reported data. *The measured data were significantly above the background radiation of the region and were present in the highest values on trees and not on the ground as has been widely been reported.*

It is unfortunate that care was not taken in the past to understand the measurements recorded that night, but now that the data has been clarified true scientific analysis can begin to understand the source of such readings. (Our emphases).

Jaime E. Demick, Assistant Professor of Physics,

Chapter Nine

Afterburn

Sunday, December 28, 1980

Jim Penniston:

After a night of interrupted sleep, which left me shattered and disturbed, and after I felt forced to confront the upsetting reality of these ridiculous ones and zeros that had emerged from my mind, the rest of the day was uneventful for me as I decided to stay at home. However, I later learned that a helicopter with three or four Los Alamos Scientists had been dispatched from a base in Western Europe, as well as a containment study group from Langley Air Force Base in Virginia, USA, and that they had begun examining the landing

site on this day. Apparently, the area had been cordoned off, and from the testing that had been made with the ground temperature and soil composition, it was finally determined that whatever had made those three depressions in the ground must have been between 7.5 and 8 tons.

At the Base Command Offices, Bentwaters Base

The rest of the day may have been normal for SSgt. Jim Penniston, but behind the scenes other events were unfolding.

Following his return home from the forest on the morning of December 28, 1980, between 4:30 and 5:00, Col. Halt says he took a shower, and because he couldn't sleep and was hungry, he then had something to eat and decided to return to the Command Offices on the Bentwaters base. The Command Offices building was a *Quonset hut.*[cccxcii] As one entered the building, there was a common foyer. The Wing Command offices (Colonel Gordon Williams, and Vice Wing Commander, Colonel Brian Currie) were on the left, and the offices of the Base Commander (Colonel Conrad) and the Deputy Base Commander (Lt. Col. Halt) were on the right. In various interviews, Col. Halt will say that just as he was entering the front door, Col. Williams had arrived in his car, and that he and Williams had a brief discussion about the incident which had happened only hours earlier.

Quoting Col. Halt, from two radio interviews conducted in 2017:

> ". . . and he [Col. Williams], overheard part of my conversations because most of the five or six senior officers had what we call the Command Radios, we were all tied in on a net and he never turned his radio off. I don't think even when he slept, and he heard most of my conversations and he made a comment to me – something to the effect…."[cccxciii]

> "So, I stopped to talk to him [Col. Williams], and he, he made a comment to me. He said, *'Well, that was some night you had last night,'* because he overheard my conversations on the Command Radio Net, asking for, you know, the eastern radar to look and do this and do that. I said to him *'Boss, things happen that I don't believe.'* And he said, *'Oh yeah, I understand.'* I said, *'But I made a tape of some of it.'* He said, *'Tape? Let me hear it.'"* [cccxciv]

Halt will add that he then walked into the Wing Commander's office with Williams and briefed him on what happened, while playing him the tape, which was still in his micro-cassette recorder and which he had brought to the offices with him.

However, in other interviews, Col. Halt will say that it was after entering the offices that morning that he first briefed his superior, Base Commander, Colonel Ted Conrad, telling him he had managed to record himself describing the events as they unfolded by talking into his mini-cassette recorder. We are told by Halt that Col. Conrad then asked him to make him a copy of the audio tape. Halt says he did this by taking both his recorder and Col. Conrad's recorder into the conference room, and by laying the two recorders side by side he then made Conrad a copy.[cccxcv] Then after discussing the events of the 'third night' with his superior Col. Conrad, it is then that Halt then talked with Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon Williams (now a retired three-star General), who Halt says had asked him to explain what occurred when he went out to the forest. It is more likely that Lt. Col. Halt had gone in to see Col. Conrad after meeting Colonel Williams at the entrance and briefing him in his office.

In any case, after Halt briefed Williams, he then played him the mini-cassette tape on which he recorded the unexplained events he witnessed only hours earlier. Apparently, while listening to it, Colonel Williams raised his eyebrows. Lt. Col. Halt quotes the Wing Commander's response as, "Gosh, can I borrow the tape?" Or "Let's have it." Halt said that he had no choice but to comply and told the Wing Commander, "Of course you can borrow the tape boss."

Col. Williams explained that he would like to play it for the Third Air Force staff at RAF Mildenhall during their weekly staff meeting, which usually took place on Wednesday. Hearing this Halt says he was concerned about the reaction but knowing that he couldn't really refuse, he then handed the mini-cassette recorder with the micro-cassette recording inside it over to the Wing Commander, Col. Williams, so he could play it.[cccxcvi] But it's possible that due to memory failure, Halt had seen Colonel Williams first but had really handed it to Col. Williams AFTER going in to see Col. Conrad to be briefed on what had happened, and after having played Conrad the tape. (See Note 406).

In one or two of his interviews, Col. Halt also tells us that he took Col.

Conrad and his family to the site in the forest that same afternoon (December 28, 1980) and showed them the depressions left by the object/craft.

> "I took Conrad and his family to the site in the forest and showed him the depressions."[cccxcvii]

In the same interview, Col. Halt adds that *"His* [Conrad's] *only trip to the site was when I took him and his family out to look."*[cccxcviii] It is more than likely that Col. Conrad had not told his Deputy, Lt. Col. Halt that he had actually gone out to the forest already to view evidence at the landing site just an hour or two following the first incident – meaning December 26, 1980. This is to be expected because Halt did not know that his boss, Col. Conrad, through Lt. Englund, had ordered SSgt. Monroe Nevels out to the landing site on the afternoon of December 27 to check the site after he himself had been out to the site the day before with Major Drury, MSgt. Gulyas, Captain Verrano, SSgt. Coffey, and possibly also Lt. Englund, and after the first three had met SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs out there.[cccxcix]

Jim Penniston:

It was early in the evening that I received a call from Sergeant Hudson from the Security Police Squadron (SPS) Orderly room. I was told that the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler, had instructed that the next day I was to report to the building of the Air Force Office of Special Investigations (AFOSI – also known as OSI) to give a statement on the incident.[cd] The task of the AFOSI is to investigate Air Force personnel crimes and other sensitive matters. It is the only organization that can legally intrude into the command structure at any level without commanders having full knowledge.[cdi]

Sgt. Hudson told me that I was to be there next day at 09:00 hrs. I didn't ask any questions and simply told him I would comply. The funny thing is that Sgt. Hudson never asked any questions, either. *And there I was, hoping it was all over and behind me . . . some chance!* All that night it had been going through my mind how to deal with this. I knew why I was being called in: it could only be about the incident I was involved in.

At Home in Ipswich

Morning of Monday, December 29, 1980

Jim Penniston:

The following morning, I was relieved and thankful that I had a restful sleep and no thoughts or images in my mind of this 'ones and zeros lunacy' I had been experiencing. I was free of any compulsion to write things down. I still thought it must have been the result of trauma from the shock of all that happened three days before. I was even ashamed that this compulsion had 'got a hold of me' like it did. As I continued to reflect, I then realized that we all have our moments in life when we are confronted by something that could take us over the edge, and this incident had almost done just that.

Before leaving for my meeting at the AFOSI building, I decided that I would tell everything to the OSI agents. Knowing how serious this situation was with them, I knew they would want me to tell them the truth, and I really couldn't risk holding anything back. I even considered handing in my notebook to them. I now found that I just wanted to get it all off my chest.

I then took the notebook out of the drawer and leafed through it again. However, when I came to the pages of ones and zeros, a feeling of despair came over me, as I knew I was caught in a dilemma. I really didn't want to have to explain them or how I had come by them. I had all kinds of scenarios going through my mind. I suspected that because I had been a witness to something that had long been a problem for the established 'powers that be,' I was also a problem, and so my superiors would waste no time in looking for an excuse to declare me mentally unfit for duty, and those pages would be enough to give them the excuse to do just that. So, seeing as the notebook had a ring binder, I thought the best thing to do was simply to remove the pages of ones and zeros. I felt like ripping up the pages and throwing them in the trash, as they now disturbed me whenever I saw them or thought about them . . . *but instead, something told me to hide them somewhere safe.* I placed the pages of ones and zeros in a small box I had and secreted the box away. All in all, it seemed like I had dodged a bullet.

I then sat at the dining table and did a sketch of the triangular craft I saw, which I also planned to take with me to the meeting. I sketched three different views of the craft – a top, front, and a side view, complete with the location of the glyphs/symbols on the left side of the craft towards the front, and which I referred to in my sketch as *"Inscriptions"* and *"Etchings."* I

dated the drawing *"29 Dec 80,"* included the words, *"RAF Bentwaters Wood SITING*" (as in location, not 'sighting'), and also included my address, which was 12 Blenheim Road in Ipswich, Suffolk, as the drawing had been completed at my home. I then placed the notebook and sketch in the inside pocket of my jacket so I could take them to the AFOSI meeting.[cdii]

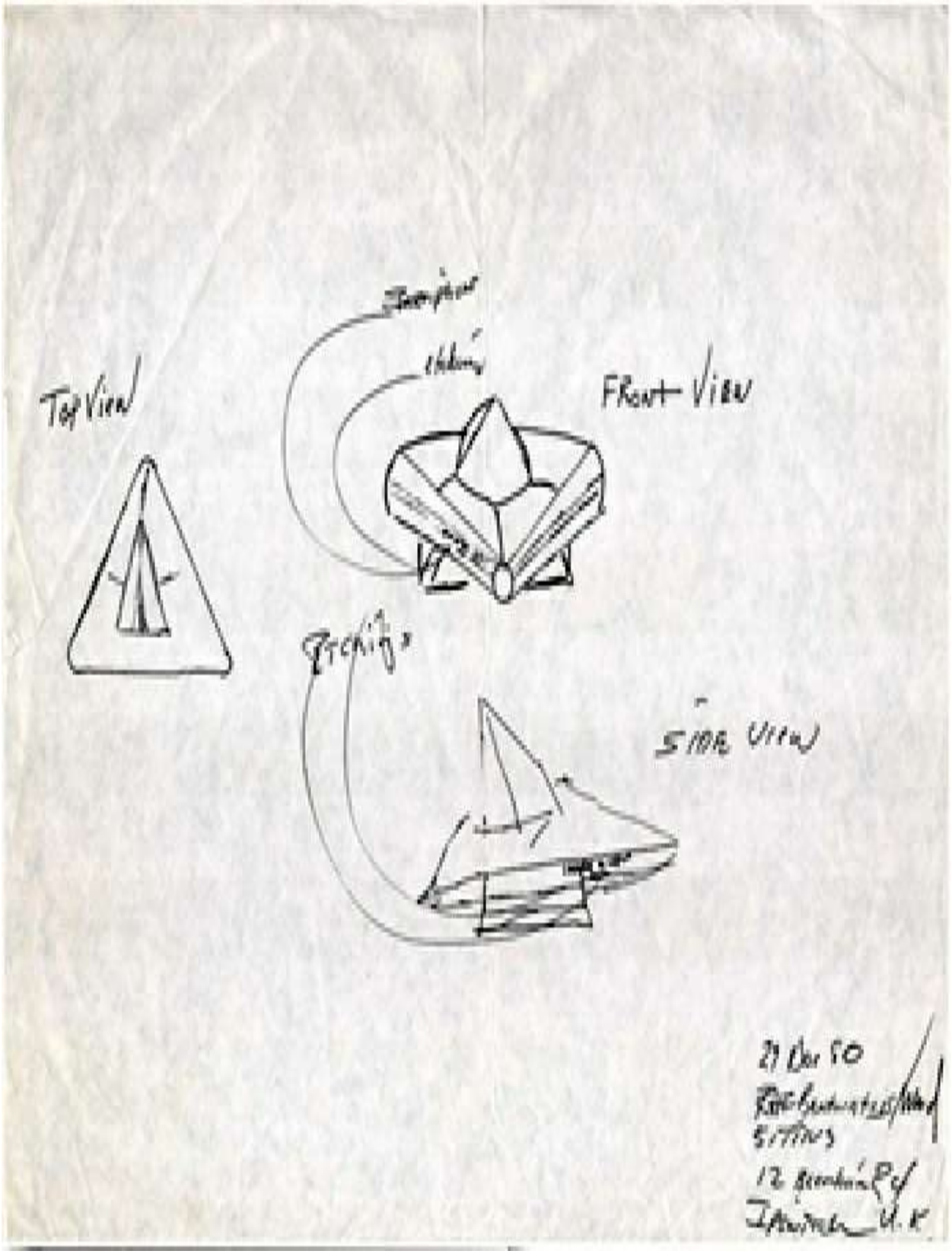


Fig 31: Pen drawings of the shiny, black, unidentified triangular craft of unknown origin

made by Jim Penniston on the morning of Monday, December 29, 1980, while at home in Ipswich, Suffolk, UK.

That same morning, Burroughs and I had planned to go to the Bentwaters base early because he said he had some things to do (run some errands) prior to the swing shift. As normal, I picked Burroughs up from his home to give him a ride to the base. After a few minutes of silence, I asked him if he had any trouble sleeping. Still thinking about what had happened when I touched the large symbol on the craft, which I had never told Burroughs about, and the compulsive writing of the ones and zeros the morning after the day of the incident, I was curious if Burroughs had experienced any problems or weird episodes since. Burroughs didn't answer straight away, so I told Burroughs that I had some strange things happen to me while at home on Saturday morning, the morning after the incident. I didn't mention the ones and zeros . . . that was strictly a 'No-no,' but not getting a chance to finish what I was about to say, Burroughs immediately answered my first question with, "You know I went back out there last night…." He said it as if I should have known. My first reaction was anger. No wonder he had taken some time to answer me.

"Why the fuck would you do that John?"

Not giving him a chance to reply, I continued to berate him.

"John, why would you go back out there after what happened? Why? Why would you do such a thing? Wasn't the first night enough for you?"

Burroughs became highly agitated and said, "I just had to. I was trying to sleep, and I had this impulse to go . . . I had to go out there. I had to be there. I was compelled to, so I went."

His excited state was the same as the night of our encounter.

When he said the word "compelled," I stopped questioning his motives and thought about it.

In view of the ones and zeroes I was 'compelled' to write down, I had to concede that whatever had happened to both of us was making us act strangely, and no doubt Burroughs also wanted answers. I then calmed down and said, "It's OK, John, I understand."

I could only put my angry reaction down to the trauma I must have suffered. Burroughs then said, "It came back." Before he said anymore, I interjected and said I did not want to hear about it right now and told him he should have left it alone. I then took over the conversation and I reminded him I had an appointment I needed to go to, and he said, "Fine!"

"I have things to do to," I said. I then told him I would meet him over at the snack shop around noon, if not earlier. Burroughs nodded. Burroughs then walked towards the main Contonement area[cdiii] which is where he wanted to go so he could do his 'errands.'

After arriving at the base, because it was still early, I made my way to the chow hall to grab some breakfast. Also at the chow hall that morning was A1C Lawrence Warren, whose voice dominated the group he was having chow with. He was talking about the incident. I heard him mention something about "UFOs." This angered me, especially after the last 72 hours I had experienced, so I walked across the hall to his table and said, "Hey, Warren . . . shut the fuck up!" His response at first was a mixture of shock and embarrassment, and then he stared at me in silence. I eyeballed him with a stone-dead look on my face so that that he had no confusion that I meant it. He then shrugged his shoulders as if to say, "OK, man," and then he stood up and walked out while everyone watched.[cdiv] I could have cut the atmosphere with a knife. From that point on and for the rest of the time we were in the chow hall, everyone remained quiet.

After leaving the chow hall, I headed to the SP Orderly room. It was there I met Sgt. Hudson, and I asked him how long the AFOSI meeting would be. He said he had no idea, but added that the Deputy Base Commander, Lieutenant Colonel Halt, wanted to talk to us, and that was scheduled for this afternoon at 13.00 hrs. I asked, "What about?" Hudson just said it had to be about what I witnessed on the last midnight shift . . . *I thought as much.*

It was now approaching 9:00 a.m., so I walked straight to the AFOSI building. I was self-assured that this wouldn't be a problem, as I knew most of the agents, and of course the AFOSI Commander, as we had received many classified security briefings from them at Commanders Call and other times about the terrorist threat and updates.

Meeting at the AFOSI Building

09:00 hrs, Monday, December 29, 1980

Meeting me in the waiting area was an OSI agent, who I had often seen on base. He thanked me for coming over, and he said that this was really about getting further information from me about the incident over the weekend. I told him that I figured as much. He then had me follow him down a short

hallway to a larger room.

In the room we entered was a grey office chair and a small table with two men I didn't recognize, sitting in much more comfortable-looking chairs on the other side of the table. They stood up and greeted me without introductions. I thought this odd. They told me to take the seat at the table, and then we could get started. They introduced themselves as agents assigned to investigate the weekend's events. My thoughts at the time were actually much simpler. I wanted it to go away, and I had no need to talk about it, either. However, *this was obviously not to be the case.*

It is never a good thing to be at the AFOSI building – even worse being asked questions – especially by two agents whom I did not recognize. I thought I knew all the OSI agents on the base. However, I wasn't familiar with the two agents now sat before me . . . *or was I just assuming they were OSI?* They did not seem like they belonged to AFOSI, but one was British and the other American, and they were investigative agents of some kind. I thought that they were more likely from the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA), whose main base was out of RAF Chicksands, about seventy-five miles away. They could have been OSI from HQ, Third Air Force at RAF Mildenhall, or the British guy could have been, and the American from the National Security Agency (NSA), which had offices in London. Perhaps I was just in a state of panic, and by this time I was quite paranoid – not knowing whom to trust now. Rethinking the situation, I knew that AFOSI worked with the Department of State while in the U.K., and so they could have both been agents working out of London.

The agents told me that Major Zickler (81st Security Police Squadron Commander) and also Colonel Williams (81st Tactical Fighter Wing Commander) were well aware of my assistance in this investigation. They continued to reemphasize that they wanted all the details of what happened, no matter how trivial, and all written in a statement by me. They added that nothing would be considered too bizarre to write down . . . *for they understood things that I did not.*

That in itself was quite revealing.

One of the agents then handed me a pencil and a yellow legal pad of paper and told me to write out a complete account of what I had witnessed a few days ago and before my shift ended, and that I was to hold nothing back, and not omit a thing . . . just as I thought.

Because I wanted to see their reaction, I then said, “I will write it all, but it can only be a career- ender doing this.” One of the agents said, “Don’t worry about that; this is a confidential investigation, and we have no ties to the USAF. The statement won’t ever be viewed by anyone at the base.” He then added, that if I did this, then my part in this investigation would be over and that this would be the last time I would be questioned by them. “This would all just go away,” he said. “You could then go on with your Air Force career as if nothing had happened.”

Well, hearing that it would be over, and I would not see these guys again if I wrote out a detailed statement was like music to my ears. With that reassurance, I said I appreciated that and would comply with their request. They then told me to take my time.

The two agents left the room, and I then began writing what turned out to be a four-page, written statement – all told in meticulous detail, from the close-up inspection I made of the craft and its description, to the glyphs and symbols I saw on the side – which was also included in the sketch I had done that morning and had with me . . . although I hadn’t yet shown the agents the sketch at this point and continued to keep it on me. I also had the notebook with me with the intention of handing that over to them, as well, as evidence of what I had witnessed.

But first, I would write the statement and then observe what would happen afterwards. I was very descriptive in my written statement and kept only to the facts of what I observed. I mentioned the date being the morning of December 26, 1980 and the time it began for me, and that I had used up my film snapping all the photos I could of the craft and also the fact that I had made written notes of everything I was observing while I was observing it, including the times of each part of the investigation. I remember covering everything . . . *all except the most significant part of my experience.*

Although I mentioned the glyphs and other details about the craft, I deliberately left out the part of getting up as close as several inches away from the craft and touching it, as I didn’t want to reveal that I had touched the large glyph, which triggered a bright light in my brain/mind through which images of ones and zeros were communicated, and as if they had been transferred telepathically somehow to my mind’s eye. Although this seems to be what really happened, I didn’t want anyone on this Earth knowing about that – especially the AFOSI. That was definitely a career- ender – *as even I*

was questioning my sanity over that aspect of the experience.

I just wrote that after taking the photos, a blinding white light emitted from the craft that whited out my vision, and the light dimmed again just as I was aware of Burroughs coming up behind me. I wrote that the craft then began to move slowly back through the trees to a distance of some forty to sixty feet away, while ascending to a height of some two hundred to two hundred and fifty feet above the canopy of the trees, where it stopped for a few seconds, rotated a little to the left and from there finally shot off in a blink of an eye.

After I finished, I began rereading what I wrote when one of the agents came back into the room and perused the statement. He didn't seem perturbed by what he read. He then ripped the four pages from the pad and told me to sign the four-page statement on the last page and put the date and my name and rank on it. I then dated it and signed it and added my rank. I also noted down on each page the following annotations (1 of 4), (2 of 4), (3 of 4), (4 of 4), also adding my initials on each page under those annotations. When I had finished, the agent then took the statement and asked me if I wanted a Coke or coffee. I said Coke would be fine. After fetching me the drink, he said he would be right back, and I should just sit tight. I then sat there for twenty minutes or so. Then both agents returned, and one of them said they appreciated my cooperation.

Both agents remained standing while I sat at the table. I was then told that this was now an on-going investigation, and I was now part of strict measures to ensure this investigation could be conducted without interference. It was then that one of the agents placed in front of me a single page of white bond paper with typed text on it and asked me to read it and to remember it. I was perplexed by what he said. I then began reading the statement that was now the length of a quarter to a half page of typed text, all lines singularly spaced.

Note: Below is a photocopy of the edited and sanitized witness statement, as typed up and brought in and given to SSgt. Jim Penniston by the two agents. It should be noted that some of what you read here is based very loosely on some of the details provided in Jim Penniston's handwritten four-page statement, but is made to appear mundane, as if nothing out of the ordinary can or could be determined – which is in stark contrast to the account that Jim Penniston says he provided originally:

STATEMENT

Received dispatch from CSC to rendzvous with Police 4 AIC Burroughs, and Police 5 SSgt Seffens at east gate Woodbridge. Upon arriving at east gate directly to the east about 1 ½ miles in a large wooded area. A large yellow glowing light was emitting above the trees.(refer diagram) In the center of the lighted area directly in the center ground leval, there was a red light blinking on and off 5 to 10 sec intervals. And a blue light that was being for the most part steady. After receiving permission from CSC, we proceeded off base pass east gate, down an old logging road. Left vehicle proceeded on foot . Bomroughs and I were approx. 15-20 meters apart and proceeding on a true east direction from the logging road. The area in front of us was lighting up a 30 meter area. When we got with in a 50 meter distance. The object was producing red and bl ue light. The blue light was steady and projecting under the object. It was lighting up the area directly under [redacted]exstending a meter or two out. At this point of positive identification I relayed to CSC, SSgt Coffey. Postitive sizing of object...l..color of lights and that it was defidently mechaniclal in nature. This is the closes point that I was near the objct at any point. We then proceeded after it. It moved in a zig-zagging manner back through the wood then lost site of it. On the way back we encounterd a blue streaking light to left lasting only a few seconds. Afterb a 45 min wal k arrived at our vehicle.

Fig. 32: The typed, unsigned and undated witness statement given to Jim Penniston at the AFOSI

Jim Penniston:

The statement they gave me to read was NOT the statement I had written and had given to the agents some twenty minutes earlier. It was now very generic, generalized, and vague. There was no date or times on it; it left out most of what I called the 'meat and potatoes stuff' and was very limited on the details – even wrong (totally untrue) in places. For example, my observation that the object was "mechanical in nature" was given, as SSgt. Coffey had obviously heard me say that during our investigation . . . *but now I was saying that I didn't get further than just within "50 meters" of it, and that this was the closest I was near the object at any point.* Furthermore, in my handwritten statement, I had not used the term "meters," but "feet," which was a habit with me while staying in the UK. Naturally, they expected my response, having no doubt already observed my puzzled and upset facial response.

I turned to one of them and said, "This is not what I wrote."

The agent replied. "Yes, we know that."

"Where is the rest of it?" I asked.

From the other side of the table, the other agent bent down to look directly in my face and said, "This is the containment story we are ordering you to use." He then stood up straight again and said, "No doubt you will be asked about this by your chain of command, and this is what we want you to say."

I was now becoming stressed. I sighed under my breath and acquiesced by nodding, and the same agent continued.

"An official investigation is now underway, and again, you are to tell all who may ask or inquire the cover story that has been provided to you in this new version of your statement."

As I was reading it, I was instructed by the agent not to tell anyone that I had gotten up close to the craft. I was just to say that whatever we saw was from the 50-meter distance given in the statement.

I nodded again and tightened my mouth trying to stifle my uneasy feelings about this.

The other agent took over, "So, SSgt Penniston, we want you to read it again and memorize it so that in any future questioning, this is what you saw and did. This is an on-going investigation, and it is classified – meaning that this is a valid need-to-know, and there is no one outside of our agency that

has a valid need-to-know. If you are asked by anyone, this is what you will say."

The agent who stood opposite me paused for a moment to look at me and see if I was going to object. I still had my mouth tightly closed, just in case I let out what I really felt.

He then said, "Are we clear about this?"

"Yes," I responded.

The agent who stood to the side of me then smiled and said, "Don't look so grim about it. This is to protect you, as well as your career."

"I understand," I said.

He then said in a more reassuring tone, "It will go away, and of course you are one of thousands who have had a UFO sighting."

Hearing that, I was now both stressed and irritated. My view was that this was not a so-called 'UFO' sighting, but much more. The acronym 'UFO' (Unidentified Flying Object) only technically refers to the object I engaged with. I knew that what I witnessed held more of a mystery to me than something others would instantly label a 'UFO,' which implies 'aliens' or 'extraterrestrials' from other planets. *How could anyone really be certain of that and even take it for granted?* At a deeper level, I knew that what I experienced had nothing to do with humanoid creatures from other planets or star systems.

Anyway, the agents just wanted me to read the statement over and over again until I knew I could remember it, and repeat only this story if ever I was asked what happened during the events which transpired that morning. Although, I still felt irritated and under stress, I thought it was prudent forethought to minimize any personal risk, and so I agreed to their demands. I could only do as they told me. I then read the typed statement several times. They emphasized again that this statement was now my response until I was told otherwise, *by them.*

I then pointed out the fact that after the words, *"A large yellow glowing light was emitting above the trees,"* the statement contained the words, *"refer diagram"* in brackets. I asked, "What diagram?"

I was then given a piece of paper and a few colored pencils and asked to draw what was described and as observed from where we parked the vehicle at the end of the logging road. I then drew a sketch of the forest with a dome-like light over the canopy of the trees at the center of the forest, as seen from

our viewpoint. Above the dome, I drew an arrow pointing down to it and wrote the caption, *"Glowing Yellow."* Then underneath the dome of light, I drew another arrow pointing up to it and wrote the caption, "*Red & Blue Blinking & Steady*" in reference to the singular lights we saw within the trees under the dome of light.

As I had kept the first drawing within the top half of the page, I was then asked to draw a simple map of the 'East Gate Road' and the logging road approach to Rendlesham Forest from the East Gate. I then sketched out a rough drawing of the map on the bottom half of the same paper, also including the parked vehicle at the end of the logging road. When I finished, the agents stood over the table and looked it over. They seemed satisfied with what they had now achieved.

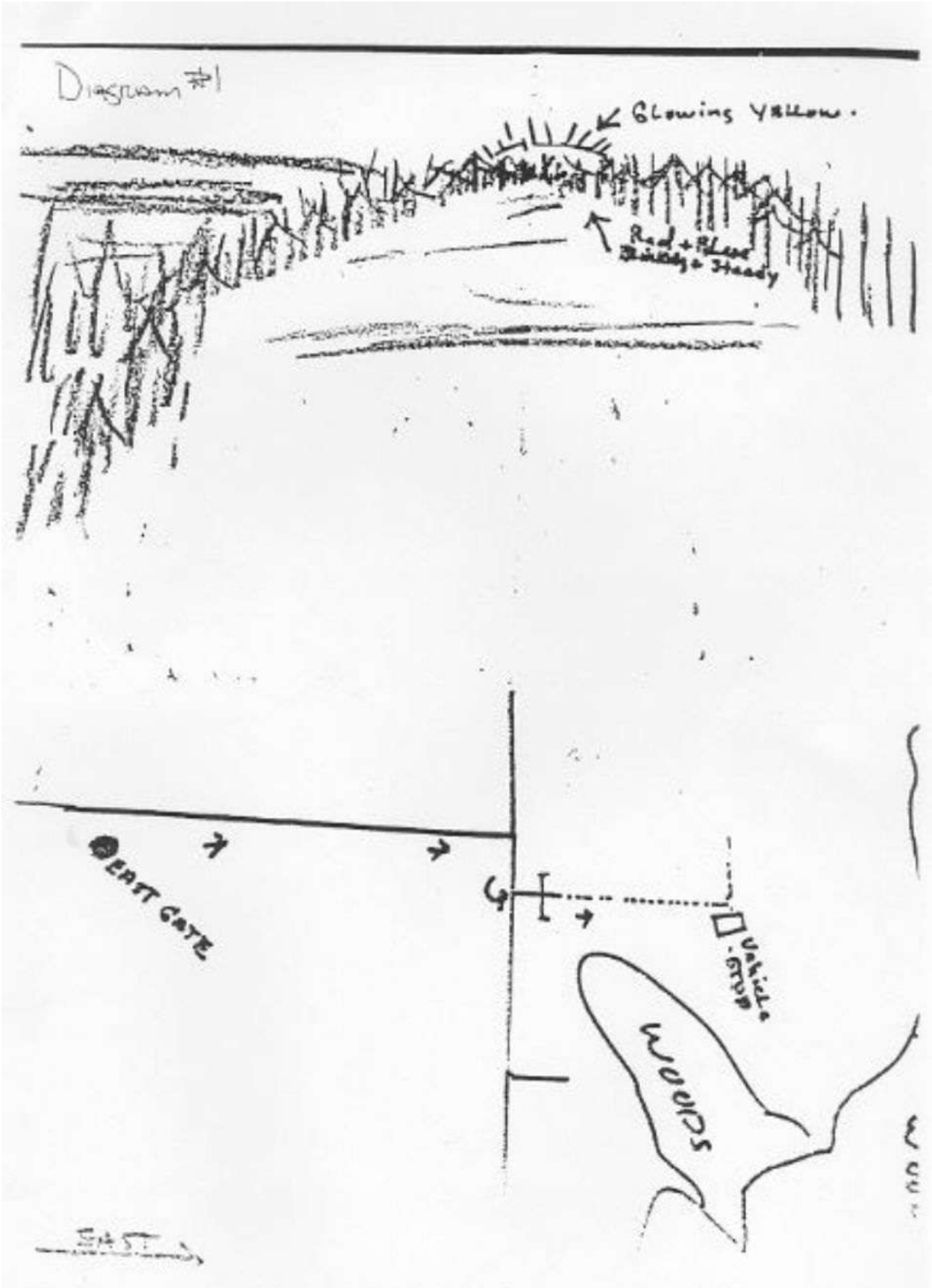


Diagram #1
Glowing Yellow.
Red + Blue
Bluish + Heady
EAST GATE
VEHICLE GATE
WOODS
EAST

Fig. 33: Two drawings on one piece of paper, sketched by Jim Penniston at the AFOSI building, Monday, December 29, 1980.

I was belittled and offended and felt I wanted to get back at them for putting me through this. It was all so typical. I just wanted it to go away. Instead, I was now part of the containment and was being asked to lie. Looking back, although I had agreed to do what they asked of me, in my mind I knew that ultimately this was never going to happen, as I knew there would come a time when I would be free to tell the truth. I still had on me the notebook and the sketch I did of the three different views of the triangular craft that morning while at home, but I didn't say a word about these items, and strangely enough, although I had mentioned writing down notes of what I was observing during the incident, *I was never asked about that, nor was I asked about my notebook.*

What was stranger is that they never asked me to sign or date this false, sanitized statement that they were going to attribute to me, and I had already noticed that there was no date and no times given on the statement. *This is not following proper protocol* . . . I thought.

I knew that any time a statement of witness is written, it is usually completed on a form, or if not available, then it is completed on lined paper. All witness statements should be dated, signed, and the signing witnessed by an official. If a statement is not signed and dated, *it should be questioned as to whether it was actually made by the witness.* I was puzzled as to why they were leaving this wide open. *Could they really be that careless?* If this statement was submitted as factual evidence in a case, it would immediately be thrown out of court. They must have known that without a signature or date, the statement wasn't worth the paper it was typed on. I was relieved by that at least, but the thought of 'Why?' has always stayed with me. Initially, I thought that perhaps the purpose of the typed statement was not for any other reason than for me to read it and remember exactly what they wanted me to say if asked about the incident.

I was then notified by one of the agents that after leaving the AFOSI building that myself and the other witness – A1C Burroughs – were to attend the Deputy Base Commander's Office at 13:00 hrs, which I had already been informed about, and then immediately after that we were to go to the Wing Commander's office. The statement I was given to memorize was then placed in a white envelope with the paper that had the two drawings on it, and I was

instructed to make sure the envelope was handed in immediately after entering the Base Command offices so that it would be handed on to the Deputy Base Commander, Colonel Halt. This concerned me, as it was now clear that the bogus statement they gave me served another purpose other than having been typed up for me to read and memorize. After the envelope was handed to me, I noted that Col. Halt's name was on it. They then allowed me to leave, telling me to have a great day.

Laughable as that was, I left the AFOSI building that morning with almost a feeling of liberation over their assurances that this was going to go away. And although being given a false statement that was to be passed to the Deputy Base Commander disturbed me, it wasn't signed or dated. *"It was now out of my hands,"* I thought. But then the unwelcome, depressing thought hit me that I now had to visit the Base Command offices with Burroughs, *. . . it wasn't over yet….*

Base Command Offices

I had been in the AFOSI building for over ninety minutes. It was now going on 11:00 a.m., and I was thirsty and hungry again. I got in my car and headed to the main base of Bentwaters to pick up Burroughs in front of the snack shop. Upon seeing him, I suggested we take away something to eat from there. Burroughs said he was really hungry and wanted something more substantial to eat and suggested we go back to the chow hall on the Bentwaters base. Burroughs had the appetite of a horse, and I really didn't relish the thought of having to sit across from him watching him eat with his mouth open – as was his habit, so I had discovered. However, I agreed, and so we went to the chow hall. It was while we were eating that I told Burroughs we had an appointment at 01.00 hrs with the Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt, at his office. Burroughs did not seem surprised, and was rather unemotional about the whole thing . . . *a definite change from his normal excitable behavior.* I didn't mention to him that I had been called to the AFOSI building that morning.

After our meal, we then made our way to the Base Command offices, and I was surprised to see Burroughs dash inside ahead of me. As I walked into the foyer, I saw the 81st CSG secretary, along with Colonel Williams's

secretary. I then handed in the envelope addressed to Lt. Col. Halt with the statement and the page with the two drawings inside.

Colonel Theodore "Ted" Conrad then appeared, standing in the doorway to his office and motioned for me to come in. After closing the door, he then put his hand on my shoulder and said, "Hang in there, Staff Sergeant Penniston, the Deputy (Col. Halt) is going to talk to you first and then Colonel Williams and myself." I just responded with "OK, sir."

Col. Conrad invited me to sit, and we began a brief chat, during which he asked me some questions – not as a Commander would, but more like a fellow airman. He also gave me the encouragement I needed for the future and told me that I had his support. At one point, he asked for a description of the object. But remembering what I was told to memorize and quote from the statement given to me by the OSI agents if ever I was asked about what I witnessed, I had to tell Conrad that I really didn't get close enough to the object to be able to describe it properly.[cdv] I felt uncomfortable with that, as his request may have been a test on behalf of the OSI agents, which would mean he knew I had succumbed to lying deliberately. Looking at him and telling him this, while thinking he was in on the lie, only made me feel weak and under 'their' control – such was the paranoia I now felt. In any case, he seemed satisfied with that, and soon afterwards I was dismissed to go and see the Deputy Base Commander, Lieutenant Colonel Charles I. Halt.

Meeting at the Deputy Base Commander's Office

As I got to the entrance of Lt. Col. Halt's office, Burroughs was already there sitting outside, wanting to go in no doubt. Upon seeing me, he quickly stood up and then assumed his normal excitable manner. Perhaps like me, he just wanted to get this over and done with.

Lt. Col. Halt then came out to greet us. He also appeared very excited and told Burroughs and me to come into his office. On entering, he told us to each take a seat. Halt then looked at me and said, "It came back!" I said, "What?" He said, "It came back Saturday evening [the 27th], and whatever it was in the forest was out there through to yesterday morning" [the 28th]. I said, "You are kidding me?" "No," he said. He then told us that his intention was to debunk the whole thing and lay it to rest, but like us, he had now seen things he couldn't explain. Now I knew what Burroughs was telling me

earlier when he said that he felt compelled to go out there again the other night and that "It" had come back – meaning the craft.

"*I also have something for you to listen to,*" he added.

Lt. Col. Halt then had us both listen to extracts from his voice recording of the 27th/28th night's events as it all happened, and all recorded on the micro cassette recorder he had taken out to the forest with him.[cdvi] Halt said he had been out there with the Security Police and Disaster Preparedness personnel, and they had all observed several craft in the sky. Halt would start the tape, we would listen to him commenting, and then he would stop the tape to explain more on what was happening during each of the moments we had just listened to. As I listened to the tape, I smiled thinking this was now on the back of a person of much higher rank, as it was clear that it was now the Lieutenant Colonel and his team who had seen some interesting Unidentified Aerial Phenomena buzzing around the skies.

Halt then described the unidentified craft, which matched what we heard described on the tape – an oval-shaped craft with a dark center that was blinking on and off, and which looked like an "eye" that was "winking."[cdvii] He added that at one point, the craft had even shot a "beam of light" down to their feet. That was the most unusual part. The burden of the last few days was now lifting off my shoulders. I began to feel immensely better about everything.

Lt. Col. Halt then looked at both of us and asked, "Does this [craft/phenomena] match what you had seen?" When Halt had first told me, "It came back," I thought he had assumed that the phenomena or craft he had witnessed on what would later be referred to as "the third night" after our incident was the same unidentified, triangular-shaped craft we had witnessed, even though the descriptions he gave – i.e., like an oval-shaped "eye" that was "winking" or "blinking," made me think it had to have been another craft, and *only possibly* under the same intelligence. Also, it seemed that Halt wasn't aware, or decided not to say anything about Burroughs having also been out there, as Burroughs had claimed earlier that morning on the ride to the base. I decided not to say anything, as Burroughs responded first about the first night's events we were both witness to, and hesitantly described what he referred to as a "structured craft." He went on to tell of our discovery of whatever it was having landed in a clearing in the woods, of which there was evidence as we had later found, and then our subsequent pursuit of it after it lifted into the air again.

Burroughs then struggled to say something else, but because I knew what we were really there for, I quickly interjected and got straight to the point, "What do you need from us Lieutenant Colonel?"
Halt was taken aback by this and just stared at me. I then toned it down by breaking into a smile while asking him if he wanted us to write statements. Halt responded with, "Great idea!" Then he added, "I would like you to write statements and draw what you have both seen from the first night because I am now investigating it" – which told me it was his intention for us to do this all along. Burroughs and I both agreed, and so gesturing to the long conference table in his office (wooden and measuring at least 15 feet long), he asked Burroughs to sit at one end and me to sit at the other. With no further discussion from either Burroughs or me, we then wrote out our statements.[cdviii]

Before these investigations began, I really wanted to control how my part in this was being played, and at first, I had my own reasons to 'play down' what I had witnessed and simply to keep my job. But now that I had written a four-page statement earlier that morning, divulging everything I had witnessed, and afterwards being assured by the OSI agents that my job and future career in the USAF would remain intact if I towed the line, I now knew I was being controlled and was party to a cover-up. I really wasn't happy about any part of the orders I was given . . . *not at all.* Hell, I didn't even know if the men giving me those orders *were* OSI agents.

In any case, now in Halt's office, I followed those orders and wrote down all I could remember from the short statement I was given to memorize at the AFOSI building – even writing that I *never* got further than just within "50 meters" of the object, as was stated on the typed-up statement I was given, and which I was instructed to take to the Base Command offices so that it could be handed on to Col. Halt. I suspected that writing out another statement was a *compliance test,* to see if I was going to follow orders and write down what I was told to memorize by the OSI agents.[cdix]

Obviously, it was important to them that I stated that I never got further than just within one hundred and sixty feet ("50 meters") of the craft I had witnessed, as everything I had already written in my original four-page statement that was taken from me – i.e., *the close examination of a LANDED, unidentified craft of unknown origin, the mysterious glyphs and symbols on the side of the craft, also that the craft appeared to be resting on beams of light,* and everything else I had described, which revealed I had experienced

something truly *not of this world.* It must have panicked them to the core – knowing that one of their own professionally-trained, USAF personnel, who was also a trained observer, was witness to this and was conveying what he experienced in detail was something they could never allow to be made public. They had to contain it, which meant from now on, *I never got further than within fifty meters of it.*[cdx]

The fact that Col. Halt now had the bogus witness statement that was given to me by the agents to hand to him meant that he and my other superiors would be comparing what I wrote now with what was in that statement, which again, was not written by me, but *attributed* to me.

Afterwards, I did two drawings, again, on the same piece of paper as I did in the AFOSI building, but this time upside down from each other. In the first drawing I included a sketch of the craft I saw in the clearing in the woods – but largely based on what the agents had instructed me to describe. On one end of the paper, I did a drawing of the lights emitted by the object with the "bubble" of light surrounding it – obviously generated by the craft – and two "X" positions with the word "us," indicating Burroughs and me, who were both far away from it but approaching it.

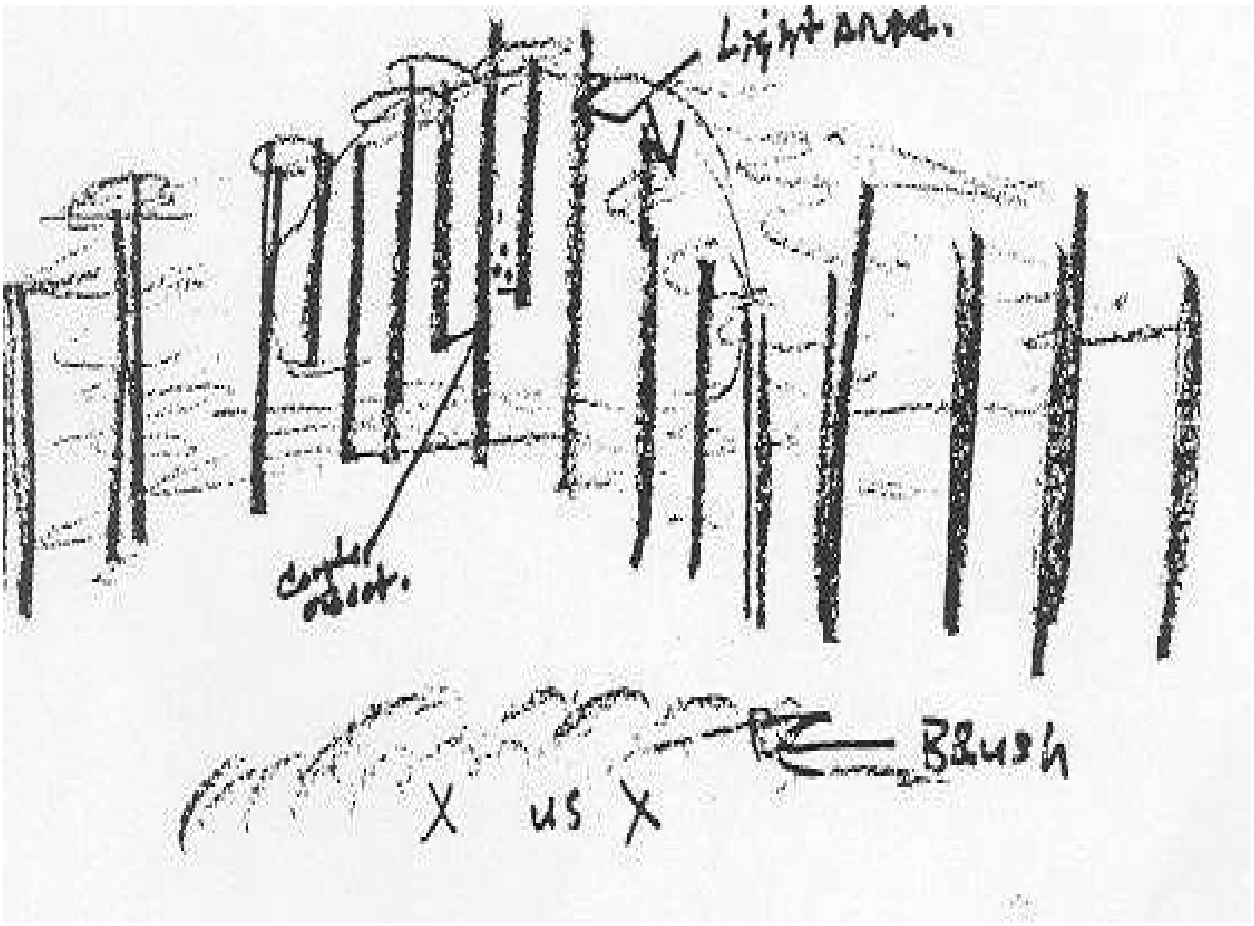


Fig 34: Sketch of the observed lights in Rendlesham Forest made by Jim Penniston in Lt. Col. Halt's office, Monday, December 29, 1980.

Turning the paper around, on the other end I then did two impressions of the craft and the lights it was emitting in the woods as seen from 160 feet (50 meters) away – a little closer than the first sketch I did. What I drew was the triangular craft when looking at it side-on (rectangular) with lights on it and the glow of the red and blue lights surrounding it . . . very simple.[cdxi] Again, I was told by the agents earlier, that if asked, I was to give just a general description of the object without going into detail.

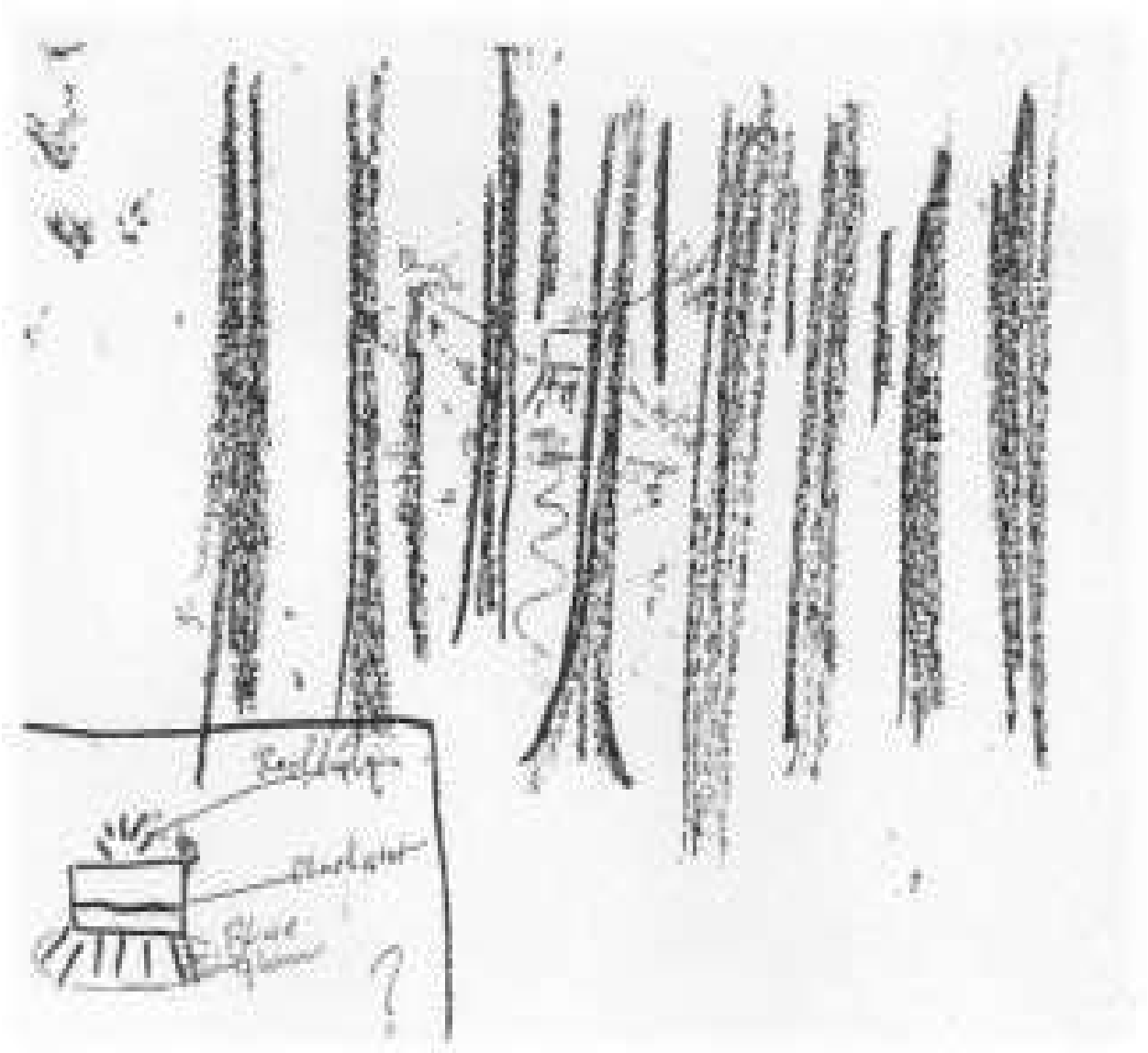


Fig 35: Sketch of the observed object as seen in Rendlesham Forest from 160 feet (50 meters) away, made by
Jim Penniston in Lt. Col. Halt's office, Monday, December 29, 1980.

After what the agents had ordered I do if I were asked, what I drew gave no indication that it was triangular, BUT *the rectangular shape is what the streamlined triangular craft looked like anyway from that distance.*[cdxii]

Burroughs drew his own interpretation of what he had already told Halt was a "structured craft" from the first night's events, and wrote a statement which I never got to read at that time.[cdxiii] All the time we were writing our statements and making sketches, Colonel Halt was sitting at his desk doing some other paper work. I left mine unsigned. There was no way now that I

was going to sign my name to a false or even sanitized statement, even if I had been ordered to write it. My mind had changed since I first entered CSC after the incident with the intention to sanitize what I witnessed while preparing my notes in the notebook to copy them into the AF1659 form for the Security blotter.

I then stood up and told Halt I was done and turned my paperwork over to him. Colonel Halt took the papers with no concern as to the absence of my signature and thanked me for taking my time with it. Shortly after, Burroughs turned his in as well, which he had signed. The Colonel told us to have a seat again, and he immediately left the room with the papers we had just completed. About five minutes later, he returned and said we were now to see Colonel Conrad and Colonel Williams. So, now, it was time to tell the Base and Wing Command what happened, no doubt.

I will also have to give them the AFOSI version of the events I witnessed, I thought. *Just plain lie my ass off.* It was all now a "game," as they would obviously know I was lying . . . as ordered.

The sanitation of the event started the day when I had left the AFOSI building. I found it terribly unsettling, and again, I struggled with the orders I was given. Although I knew I still had my job, I also suspected that it wouldn't go away as promised. The whole thing now caused a conflict in me, as I knew I was being forced into a dilemma to lie through my head, when in my heart I wanted to tell the truth, and this was something I had always wanted, even though I knew my place and respected national security.

Meeting at the Wing Commander's Office

Burroughs and I were then taken into the Wing Commander's Office. Colonel Conrad and Lt. Colonel Halt followed and took seats positioned at the side of the room. Burroughs and I stood to attention in front of the Wing Commander's desk, and being the senior ranking person, I reported for both of us.

"Hello gentlemen," Col. Williams said. "Tell me what happened."

I then briefed the Wing Commander, Colonel Williams, quoting the sanitized version passed to me by the agents. He was attentive, listened closely and never said a word – just an occasional nod of understanding.

Even upon finishing my report, Colonel Williams never asked one question or asked us to clarify anything. *Of course, he didn't.* He was most likely aware of the AFOSI investigation – *if that's who the agents were* – and this could also have been a test to make sure I was complying with the agent's demands. It was apparent that the agency men – whoever they were (AFOSI? . . . CIA? . . . NSA . . . DIA?) – had already spoken with Col. Williams, as they must have done with Col. Halt and possibly also with Col. Conrad. At the end of this debrief with the Wing Commander, his only comment was that he appreciated all that we had done and thanked us for a good job well done, adding that they would take it from here. It was just as I had predicted. I saluted him and prepared to leave the office. Col. Halt then took me to one side and said he wanted to see me in his office for a second.

What now? I thought.

After entering his office again, Halt surprised me by saying that it had gone well and told me to treat all discussion about Rendlesham as "Top Secret" – therefore ending all conversation on the base by those who directly witnessed the event or who were involved in it in some way. As I left Lt. Col. Halt's office, I was assured that this incident would never see the light of day and that names would be sanitized from all reports. Hearing this, I remembered that my name wasn't even on the typed-up bogus witness statement given to me and neither was it signed, and again, I was relieved by that, because it could be anyone's, and the truth is *it is*, because it was created by someone else using only several of the mundane details that I had expressed in my handwritten statement.

It now seemed to me that the incidents were being treated as classified, and I assumed that the four-page witness statement that I had written and signed and was taken from me would remain classified and in high confidence. I left without further discussion, and Burroughs and I went to work our shifts – Burroughs in 'Law Enforcement' and me in 'Security.'

What I find very understandable now is that I was never questioned by Major Malcolm Zickler, who had Major Drury investigate the landing site of the first night's events, along with Captain Verrano. It was Major Drury who had told me to go home and forget it, as he was now in charge. Perhaps it was because Zickler knew that this was now an active external investigation under AFOSI – or to whatever Intelligence Agency the agents whom I had encountered in the AFOSI building really belonged.[cdxiv]

Again, at the AFOSI building I was told and was promised, “Tell all, and tell it correctly with no omissions, and it would be the last of these questions on the incident.”

How untrue this would become as the years passed, because from the next day and over the following few weeks and months, I would be consistently and methodically interviewed and even interrogated by people – not only within my chain-of-command – but also by other Air Force agencies, and those who belonged to various branches of service and other departments – both in the United States as well as the UK. And every time, I was promised, *“This was the last interview,”* and that, “It would be absorbed into the classified annals of data, and I would need not talk about it anymore.” This was certainly not the case.

The debriefs were always the *“last one,”* and were all for the *“last time.”*

If it was not AFOSI, it was to be everyone in my chain-of-command, and I would often be met with an inquisitive question or two. I don’t believe the command element was anything more than people obtaining some knowledge of what happened. But, the interrogations conducted by the agents of various agencies were for much more, as I have said, and of that I was truly afraid at times.

It’s laughable that skeptics had been given the impression that the USAF was not interested in investigating the incident, which convinces them more that it never happened. The fact is I went through at least fourteen debriefings, and two by non-Air Force personnel, and many more than I could remember. And it has to be said, that in my experience, the AFOSI agents were joined in the investigation by agents from other intelligence agencies, namely the CIA, the NSA, and others. As mentioned, someone had taken the AF1659 accident and complaint reports from the Law Enforcement and Security blotters, and the latter, I knew, had included the accurate date and times of the first incident. As for the notebook, when I got back home, I placed the notebook in the same box I had put the notebook pages of ones and zeros. As we were approaching the New Year, I already had a new notebook available to use for work.

Tuesday, December 30, 1980

Jim Penniston:

Some fourteen years later, it emerged that I had taken another visit to the AFOSI building on December 30. This information came out during the second of two hypnosis sessions I undertook in August and September 1994, and largely because of the sleep disorders I had suffered with since the incident. Much of what happened during that second meeting had been blocked from my conscious memory. While under hypnotic regression, I began talking about the sinister, seven-hour long interrogation I underwent in a room at the AFOSI building. (See Chapter 14: *Regression.*) Surprisingly, I later discovered many years after the hypnosis session that this was the day that followed the events at the AFOSI building, as presented in this chapter, and which began at 09:00 hrs, on Tuesday, December 30, 1980. Obviously, the nightmares I had been suffering from and which had forced me to undergo hypnosis to treat my sleep disorder in the first place were also the result of what had happened on this day.[cdxv] And it is interesting, that although I divulged a lot of information at the AFOSI building, both from my conscious memory of the incident and also while under the hypnosis the agents administered, *at no time was the subject of the notebook ever brought up, and at no time was I ever asked for it.*[cdxvi]

On this same day, Vince Thurkettle a young, junior harvesting forester who cared for both the Rendlesham and Tangham forests and lived in the forest a mile away from the landing site where Penniston and Burroughs had encountered the craft, was out chopping wood when he was startled by two smartly-dressed men in civilian attire who approached him in the woods. He was so surprised that he didn't ask who they were, or where they were from, and found it odd that they were there to talk to him personally. The two men, who never identified themselves, asked him if he had been out in the forest at any time over the last four nights. When Thurkettle asked why, he was told that there had been a rumor going around the area of some unusual activity in the forest and also reports of colored lights in the sky and that they were questioning the local residents to see if they had seen or heard anything. Thurkettle, who was intrigued by what he had heard, said that he wasn't aware there had been any kind of activity, especially not of that nature. The men then left. Thurkettle thought the two men may have been from the press, but says he never saw anything reported, and from this he realized later that they were not journalists. However, the brief conversation with the two

strangers remained with the young forester, who was interested enough to keep an ear open for anything else related to what he had been told.[cdxvii]

Wednesday, December 31 (New Year's Eve), 1980

In various interviews, Col. Halt tells us that it was on the morning of this day, Wednesday, January 3, 1981, that the Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon Williams, had taken Halt's micro-cassette recorder with the recorded cassette of the third night's events to the staff meeting, as he had told Lt. Col. Halt he would. The staff meeting took place at RAF Mildenhall, and there Col. Williams played it to General Robert W. Bazley, the Third Air Force Commander, who was also the Commander for the US Forces in England.

After visiting RAF Mildenhall, Col. Williams returned to the base. Lt. Col. Halt, who had waited and worried for three days, was waiting at the door of the Base Command Offices when Col. Williams came back from the staff meeting around lunch time. Halt said Williams stepped out of the car, came up the steps, and gave Halt the mini-cassette recorder and tape. Lt. Col. Halt then asked, "Boss do I still have a job?" And Col. Williams laughed and summoned Halt to his office for a briefing. Williams then said that although the officers accepted the events that had been recorded, they had no idea what to think of it and just wanted to distance themselves from the incident. According to Colonel Williams, General Bazley listened to it and then turned to his staff and said, "Well, what do we do now?" The General's words were met with silence. General Bazley then told Col. Williams, "It happened off the base and on British turf, so it's a British affair." Col. Williams then told his Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt, "Tell the Brits about it."

On hearing this, Halt says he was relieved, and then asked Col. Williams if there was anything more he had to do. Seeing as the incident happened on British territory, Halt was directed by Col. Williams to go and see Donald Moreland, and see what he wanted to do about it, reiterating that this was

really a British affair. Halt says he then planned to do just that.[cdxviii]

Whited Out

Jim Penniston:

An uneasy end to the year became evident when on Wednesday, December 31, 1980 (New Year's Eve), I went back to the Base Photo Lab to pick up the developed photos. I had been looking forward to this. However, I was told that unfortunately there was nothing to see, as all the photos had come out "fogged . . . all whited out." I took a look through the pack that was handed to me and couldn't believe what I was seeing, as the USAF camera we were issued with was the *Canon A-1*, considered good quality military stock. To say I was upset and disappointed is an understatement. What I had photographed that morning was no less a miracle, but now . . . *nothing.* It was so typical. I had to live with the fact that after all that happened, I had no photographic evidence or proof of the incredible things I had witnessed. I left without the photos.

Incredibly, at this time I wasn't thinking and didn't consider the rational possibility that the fogged photos were the result of radiation or other physical effects emitted from the craft. I mean, that possibility wasn't something I wanted to think about. No, after what I had experienced at the AFOSI building, I strongly suspected that I had just been given fogged, whited-out photos and that the real photos I had taken on Boxing Day morning of the craft had been taken and placed somewhere else.[cdxix]

Chapter Ten

Containment

January to April 1981

Jim Penniston:

In the days and weeks following the incident, there was a lot of talk about "UFOs" on the base. No matter where I was, I would hear the buzz and chatter about the "BIG UFO incident." What made the attention on this more concentrated was the fact that a week after the initial events of the first night, I was told that a special team would be doing some electronics work on the perimeter of the Woodbridge base and that I was to brief personnel to ignore the activity. I thought it very odd that this special team were not wearing military uniforms but were dressed in civilian attire. The fact that USAF personnel on the bases had noticed that visitors were arriving in unmarked aircraft and that some of these people were wearing suits, it was no wonder that the word got around that there were "spooks" on the base. This was not entirely speculative, as I later learned that the special team which had been flown-in from the States and had visited the landing site in Rendlesham forest as early as December 28, 1980 – the same day that the events involving Lt. Col. Halt had taken place that morning and were still doing work on the perimeter of Woodbridge – *were actually a containment study group from Langley AFB, Virginia . . . the CIA research center.*[cdxx] Although there was no doubt there were intel agents on the base, this only fuelled the far-fetched gossip also going around which had completely distorted the events that had taken place in this area. Throughout the weeks that followed, I would remain silent and would only listen to what was being said, thinking *if only those spreading this 'scuttle-butt'* (gossip) *knew what had really happened.*

I was now part of something I could never talk openly about with anyone, and I assumed Burroughs was in the same position as I was. But because we both held back from discussing the incident we had both been involved with, I didn't know at this stage that I was basically alone with the memory and knowledge of the things that only I had witnessed.[cdxxi]

Halt's Meeting with RAF Squadron Leader, Donald Moreland
Monday, January 5, 1981

All USAF installations in Britain were required to have a British RAF officer on base to act as a liaison between the USAF and the MOD (Ministry of Defence) at Whitehall, London. There were two British officers stationed at Bentwaters – one of these being RAF Woodbridge Liaison Officer and RAF Squadron Leader, Donald Moreland – whom the Americans called the 'British Base Commander.' As mentioned in the previous chapter, it was on Wednesday, December 31, 1980, that Lt. Col. Halt was told by the Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon Williams, to approach Liaison Officer, Donald Moreland, about the incidents, as this was really a British matter, having happened off-base and on UK territory.

Halt immediately went to see Don Moreland, whose office was on Bentwaters base, but was told by a male assistant that Moreland was still on leave, finishing his two-week, Christmas break at his home in Wales. Apparently, the assistant's response was that he personally "didn't want to touch it with a pole"[cdxxii] and asked Halt that he wait until Moreland returned.

We are told that according to his diary, RAF Squadron Leader Moreland returned to the base on Monday, January 5, 1981. However, it wasn't until a week later on Monday, January 12, that Halt finally went to see Moreland.[cdxxiii] In an interview conducted by Georgina Bruni in August 1998, Donald Moreland said that the Deputy Base Commander, Halt, *". . . seemed agitated; he had something to discuss and the matter was of a serious nature"* (Bruni, p. 205). Halt explained to Moreland the incidents that had happened just off-base in the forest, and after listening to everything the troubled Deputy Base Commander had to say, Moreland asked to see the suspected landing site. In the many interviews he has done since he retired in 1990, Col. Halt has said that he then took Moreland out to the landing site where Penniston and Burroughs had encountered the craft. Moreland confirms this in his 1998 interview with Georgina Bruni, but added that he saw nothing unusual out there.

After more discussions, Lt. Col. Halt then urged, "Don, why don't you make some calls and see what your Government want. I'm sure they'd want to investigate this."[cdxxiv] Being the British Liaison Officer, Moreland acquiesced, and according to Halt, Moreland phoned the MOD (Ministry of Defence) in Whitehall, London. If we rely on the information given in the

literature – i.e., that Halt had first seen Moreland on January 12 – we have no choice but to accept the view that it was on the same day that Halt had asked Moreland, and more than once, if there had been a response.[cdxxv]

In any case, each time Halt called Moreland, the British Commander replied that he hadn't heard anything back. Don Moreland then suggested that Lt. Col. Halt write a short memo and hand it to him so he could send it to the DS8c (Defense Secretariat) UFO desk office at the MOD to see what they had to say about the matter. At first, Halt didn't want to commit to writing anything, but being pressured by Moreland that the MOD should be informed if there was an unusual occurrence on the base, especially one that could have serious defence significance, Halt agreed.

Halt then told the Wing Commander, Col. Williams, and the Base Commander, Col. Conrad, that Squadron Leader Moreland had suggested he write a memo to give him so Moreland could then forward it the British government (MOD). Halt was given the 'go ahead' but was instructed by Col. Williams that neither he, nor Col. Conrad wanted their names mentioned with the incident. It was then that Lt. Col. Halt discreetly summoned SSgt. Jim Penniston to his office for an unofficial meeting. After assuring Penniston that this incident would never see the light of day, Halt was concerned with what Penniston thought about him writing a memo on the suggestion of RAF Squadron Leader Moreland to be sent to the Ministry of Defence in London.[cdxxvi]

Jim Penniston:

Around the middle of January, [this was likely Monday, January 12 or 13, after Halt had seen Moreland] the Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt, summoned me to his office and told me that he had just been informed to write a brief memorandum report on the incidents to be sent to the MOD in London, as it happened outside the twin bases and on British soil. He told me he would prepare it with hopes of a major investigation. To dispel my fears, Halt emphasized that the memo would be just a one-page overview of what happened on the night that Burroughs and I were involved and also some mention of what happened on the third night in which he was involved, adding strongly that this was not for public dissemination and would remain within channels. I was surprised but said I was fine with it as it was the right thing to do, seeing as it happened on British territory and in the Queen's

Forest. I then asked that our names not be mentioned and that he should make it as brief as possible with as few details as necessary, since we were naturally worried about our careers.

Lt. Col. Halt then initially hand-wrote the memo, which he says was a brief, one-page, cleaned up version of what had happened to see how much interest there was and to see what would happen. The handwritten memo was then typed out by either Col. Conrad's secretary or Lt. Col. Halt's secretary, Peggy Ross (both secretaries have been mentioned in the accounts of the memo as having typed it). The memo was typed on an official Department of Air Force Headquarters letterhead, dated 'January 13, 1981.'[cdxxvii]

According to Col. Halt in subsequent interviews throughout the years, when completed, the memo was then handed over to the Base Commander, Col. Conrad, to read and then handed to the Wing Commander, Col. Williams, who also read it, adding that both commanders approved it. (See Note 661).

> "I did the memo. It was typed in the office. There was no copies made, just a carbon copy there – what they called a typing manifold. Conrad took it down the Wings office and came back and he laughed and he gave it back to me, says, 'Give it to Moreland.' So I gave it to Moreland, and in fact I don't even know what happened to the carbon manifold."[cdxxviii]

Lt. Col. Halt then sent the memo, which was never meant for public dissemination, to RAF Squadron Leader, Donald Moreland. On receiving it, Moreland then sent the memo to the DS8c UFO desk officer, Simon Weedon, at the MOD (Ministry of Defence) in Whitehall, London. The memo was actually sent two days after Halt had written it, as with the memo was included a brief cover letter dated "15 January 1981."[cdxxix] The cover letter was titled, UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS (UFOs) based on what Col. Halt had told Moreland.

Without Lt. Col. Halt's knowledge, a copy was sent by Squadron Leader Moreland to his superior at Third Air Force Headquarters, RAF Mildenhall. [cdxxx]

Burroughs' AFOSI Appointment

A day or two after my meeting with Lt. Col. Halt about the memo, I ran into Sgt. Adrian Bustinza outside of Security Police Operations. This was just after I had picked up Burroughs from his home and dropped him off at the base, which had become a normal routine for me almost every day. Bustinza engaged in some small talk about nothing really. Burroughs then came out of the Orderly Room and interrupted us. I could see he was in a nervous, agitated state.

"You can leave me here Staff Sergeant Penniston," Burroughs said.

For a moment I just looked at him, remaining silent with curiosity. "OK," I finally responded.

Burroughs then said he was going to the AFOSI building for an appointment.[cdxxxi] That was something I had already expected, although on the surface it was a long time coming, as I really didn't know at this stage if Burroughs had already visited the AFOSI building, and he was being called back. I suspected it, as it was obvious we were both keeping quiet, and we had both left a lot unsaid. We were now past the second week since the incident and the OSI agents wouldn't have wasted time in their investigations. In any case, Burroughs left without further comment.

I didn't know that this meeting would be the last I would see of him on the base and that almost fourteen years would pass before we would meet again and finally talk in some depth about the incident fate had handed us.

Intimate Liaison that Set Off a Chain of Events

It is said that some two weeks after the strange events in the forest, a scandalous incident took place on Bentwaters base in January 1981, which set in motion a chain of events which led to Lt. Col. Halt's tape recording being released to various researchers and investigators of the Rendlesham Incident and then to the public, as we will see. While reading through the literature of the Rendlesham Incident, one will note that the Vice Wing Commander at the time of the incident, Colonel Brian Currie, is hardly mentioned.

According to Col. Halt, it emerged that the Vice Wing Commander had a drinking problem as well as a women problem – uncontrollable 'vices' that landed him in trouble with the USAF in the first few weeks of 1981 and cost

him his job. According to former Security Police Squadron Commander, Malcolm Zickler, during his 1998 interview with Georgina Bruni, it was one of his Law Enforcement patrols that had arrested the Vice Wing Commander for breaking Air Force etiquette by being caught in the act. In other words, he was observed in intimate engagement with a young female Lieutenant from the Disaster Preparedness Office on a front lawn on the Bentwaters base. It's not certain whether Currie was arrested while actually engaged in this compromising situation after someone had alerted the police, or after the act had been observed and reported. The Vice Wing Commander had been certainly preparing for disaster, as he was then ordered to appear before the Wing Commander, General Williams, who disciplined him, had him confined to his quarters for five days before relieving him of his position, and finally had him shipped back to the States and re-allocated. According to Georgina Bruni, the Bentwaters police log carried an entry of two people having been charged with sex offences, but omits their names (Bruni, p. 120).[cdxxxii] It is assumed that the former Vice Wing Commander, who could have been made a General from the highly-responsible position he was given, soon retired from the USAF.

In any case, as a consequence of this incident, the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad, who had only been promoted to the position of Base Commander two weeks before the Rendlesham incidents, was then promoted to take the position left by the former Vice Wing Commander – a position that Conrad actually felt uncomfortable with, having preferred being Base Commander. Ironically, it was possibly because of being promoted that Col. Conrad soon retired from the USAF. Deputy Base Commander Lt. Col. Halt then temporarily replaced Conrad as the Base Commander until a new replacement was made, and he moved into the office that Col. Conrad had previously occupied.[cdxxxiii]

Around the same time, Colonel Gordon Williams was promoted to General and moved to a new assignment in Germany, and Colonel Richard M. Pascoe (later General) replaced Williams as Wing Commander at Bentwaters.

UAP Incident, January 17, 1981

Two weeks after the December incidents, Steve La Plume, a young nineteen-

year-old assigned to Law Enforcement from late 1980 to early 1981, was with 'B-Flight' – the same Flight for which Lieutenant Englund was Shift Commander. On the morning of January 17, 1981, La Plume was on the midnight shift with Senior Airman Wendel Palmer. Ironically, according to what Steve La Plume had told investigative researcher Georgina Bruni, who had been interviewing him since April 1998, he and Palmer were discussing UFOs. After all, they were patrolling the East Gate where it had all happened two weeks before. While they were talking, La Plume's eye happened to catch an object moving rapidly across the sky at a remarkable speed. The two airmen then watched the object race across the sky, while at the same time observing its rapid change of its altitude – a difference of a few thousand feet in seconds, as claimed. Palmer checked with the Air Traffic Control Tower. Although he was told there were two active aircraft flying in the area, neither fitted the description of what the two airmen had reported.

After only a few minutes, Lieutenant Bruce Englund rang the East Gate shack and wanted to know what the two Security airmen had just seen. The object was still in the sky, and now appeared to be some fifteen miles distant. Englund then ordered them to stay at their post until he arrived.

Lt. Englund then showed up and told the airmen not to be nervous, as Wing Commander Colonel Williams, who had just been promoted to General, was on his way to the East Gate. Deputy Base Commander Lt. Col. Halt also drove up in his orange sports car with his wife and teenage son. Apparently, they were eager to see the UFO and had cameras ready to take photos. However, by this time, the object had disappeared. General Williams had arrived with other senior officers. Lieutenant Englund then told La Plume and Palmer to remain at the East Gate with a night-vision scope, telling them they were to contact him if they saw the object again. Then leaving their cars behind, all the high-ranking officers, along with Lt. Englund, got into an Air Force station wagon and Jeep and headed off down the East Gate Road into the Rendlesham forest.

After an hour later, the officers, including Williams, returned to the East Gate, and then getting back into their cars, they drove to Bentwaters base.

La Plume and Palmer stayed at the gate for the remainder of their shift, after being told to keep Lt. Englund informed if the object came back.

Half an hour after the officers with Englund had left to return to Bentwaters, the object returned. This time it was moving slowly and came closer to where the airman were. La Plume described the object as emitting

green, red, and blue lights from underneath, adding that the lights enveloped him as the craft went overhead. La Plume said the object was cigar-shaped, and from his line of sight estimated its size to be approximately a hundred yards in length or 300 feet! La Plume told Georgina Bruni that the next thing he remembered was that the object was right over his head and that there was a gap in time from when it was overhead to when he saw it back in the southern sky and departing, adding that this had always bugged him. He says he asked Palmer if he wanted to report it, and Palmer said no, and they then made an agreement not to tell anyone about the second sighting, knowing what the personnel involved in the December incidents had gone through. Georgina Bruni writes that she spoke to Colonel Halt about this specific incident, and he confirmed that he and Gordon Williams were there that night, but when she asked General Williams, he had neither confirmed nor denied that he was there. Georgina ends her discussion on this particular case by saying that she trusts Steve La Plume's testimony (Bruni, pp. 328 – 329).

"There's more players in this than you can count"

Quoting radio host and author Kevin Randle:

> ". . . you've just got the one, the one tape, and that's been released to everybody apparently."
>
> Col. Halt:
> "Well I didn't release it. Believe me. If you had two hours or three hours I could explain the whole thing to you. This is a very involved thing with a lot of players. There's more players in this than you can count."[cdxxxiv]

We are told by Col. Halt, that some two weeks after Colonel Conrad was promoted to Vice Wing Commander, Colonel Williams, then nominated Colonel Sam P. Morgan to be the new Base Commander. Samuel Morgan was a fighter pilot who was assigned to RAF Bentwaters and Woodbridge in 1980 as Deputy Chief of Maintenance. Apparently, Williams and Morgan were very close friends for many years, having served in the USAF together. Lt. Col. Halt returned to his position as Deputy Base Commander, and Corporal Sam Morgan became his new boss. However, Halt had reservations about the new Base Commander.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "This [Col. Morgan's promotion to Base Commander] caused me some personal concern. Colonel Morgan was a 'gung ho' officer who went around boasting he was the world's greatest fighter pilot. He even passed out wine bottles with his own label stating he was the world's greatest fighter pilot. You may think this is a personal grievance or maybe a clash of personalities – not at all, but it may be important to bear certain facts in mind when looking at the overall big picture here with regard to the way in which this matter was originally handled . . . ."[cdxxxv]

According to what Sam Morgan later told researcher Georgina Bruni, when Conrad vacated his office to take the Wing Commander's office, Lt. Col. Halt had used Conrad's old office for a few weeks while assuming the position of temporary Base Commander. After being made Base Commander, Col. Morgan then moved into the same office. Morgan says that while he was rummaging through the trash in one of the desk drawers one day, he found the tape on which Halt had recorded his commentary about the events he and his team were witnessing on the third night. It has been said that Morgan had found the original mini-cassette, but according to Col. Halt, this was in fact the first copy made of the original mini-cassette tape. Apparently, it was the copy that had been made for Colonel Conrad by Halt which had been simply left in the drawer. Morgan played it, and discovered it was a recording of "Halt chasing lights through the forest" (Bruni, p. 211).

It was obvious that by this time, and because he hadn't received any response from British Liaison Officer Donald Moreland or the MOD, that Halt simply resigned himself to the possibility that no one was going to do anything about the incident and thought it best to just forgot about it.

Apparently, having listened to the tape, Colonel Morgan then questioned Lt. Col. Halt. According to Morgan, Halt was evasive. Morgan then says that out of frustration he told Halt, "I'm not asking you to volunteer the information, I am ordering you to tell me the story" (Bruni, p. 213). It is not known what Halt had told his new superior in response, but it is said that Morgan then went to see RAF Squadron Leader Donald Moreland to see what he had to say. Moreland then assured the new Base Commander that he had sent a memo written by Halt to the British MOD in London. Based on the fact that there had been no response from the MOD, Moreland added that he

did not think there was much evidence to back up Halt's story (Bruni, p. 213). From this, we can deduce that Moreland didn't know about the tape at this stage.

In any case, we are told that Morgan made more copies of the tape by the same method Lt. Col. Halt had used by laying two tape recorders side by side, and according to Halt, Morgan had done this without his knowledge. From then on, Colonel Morgan would often play the tape at cocktail parties and other social events.[cdxxxvi]

"Congratulations SSgt. Penniston, you've got the job . . . ."

Jim Penniston:

Moving towards the end of January 1981, on the outside, things seemed like they were going back to normal . . . *well, as normal as could be.* I was personally thankful that I had no more episodes like the four days I experienced after the incident, especially with the ones and zeros and the intimidating AFOSI meeting. It seemed I was back to my normal self. The initial trauma was over, and I was back to work as usual. My security work was focused on air operations and the security for it, and this in spite of what happened that night.

One morning after going into work, Lt. Fred 'Skip' Buran took me over to the side and said, "Staff Sergeant Penniston, there is a back-office job opening up for NCOIC, of Plans and Programs, and I think you should apply."

"OK . . . what do they do?" I asked.

"They write defense, contingency, and war plans for the base, among other such things" Buran said. I laughed and said, "You've got to be kidding me!"

Buran looked somewhat startled, so I continued.

"I know nothing about that kind of stuff," I explained, ". . . especially about writing and developing plans and things. I am an Operations Field cop."

"Well, I still think you should apply" Buran said. "I will give an outstanding recommendation for the job."

"OK . . . If you really think so," I replied. Buran then said he would

arrange it.

I thought, *how curious was that? Out of the blue, the Lieutenant. wanted to help me advance on the base.* Of course, I approached it with some hesitation and bewilderment.

Two days later I was then given a date and time to show for an interview. I thought, *Wow, that was expedient.* I figured I could at least talk to them about it and see what the work entailed. After all, what did I have to lose? With this opportunity for normal work shifts, which also included weekends off and holidays, I could only gain from it. I then said I would be there for the interview as scheduled the next morning. In fact, I arrived ten minutes prior to my appointment time – something I always do. As I was taught many Moons ago, "To be early, is to be on time, to be on time is to be late, and to be late, is never to be." On arriving, I immediately introduced myself. I was met by TSgt. Dave Shirah who was the assistant NCOIC. As Shirah asked for my résumé, TSgt Bob Biordi stepped out of his office and said, "He does not need one." Both then asked me some general questions, which I answered.

I told them I had no previous experience in this job and knew nothing about it or the mechanics of it. Shirah said, "Well. that is not a problem because we will train you." (I soon learned that both Shirah and Biordi were rotating back to the States in the next sixty days). TSgt. Shirah had me fill out an update for my current Top Secret clearance, which I did, and was told to leave it with TSgt. Biordi. They told me they would be in touch when I was approved for the position. I simply thought, that would be that. *How could they hire me with the lack of background for such a critical job?*

The following day, Lt. Buran came up to me after Guard Mount and said, "Congratulations Staff Sergeant Penniston, you've got the job as NCOIC of Plans and Programs."

I stood there in shock. "Report to Plans and Programs Monday morning," he said.

Again, my response was, "You've got to be kidding me, Sir!"

Buran smiled and said, "No, Staff Sergeant Penniston, you start Monday."

Wow! I thought . . . *was that it?* All too simple and fast for me. And then I thought, surely it *does not work this way, and so fast?* My common sense was telling me that it could not possibly work this way with these types of 'back-office' jobs. The feeling that all this had already been arranged behind the scenes was overwhelming. It was the only possible explanation for my

unqualified selection into such a critical and responsible position. *But who had arranged it?*

I figured that it would be a way to monitor me and keep a close watchful eye on what I was doing, at least that was my guess.

As the beginning of the year progressed, the chatter I was either overhearing or had been told about had largely begun with non-security police personnel. However, before shift one day and while having lunch at the chow hall over at the security police table (used for on-duty security police, because it had weapons racks and a direct line to CSC there), like earlier with Larry Warren, I heard a group of young airmen talking about the incident. Again, I got up and told the airmen to shut up because the information was classified.[cdxxxvii] And again, all the airmen sitting at the table immediately stopped talking and sat there in silence with sober looks on their faces. It seems I had control over the irresponsible security police chatter, but not the gossip that was going around the rest of the base populace, obviously. Anyway, I figured that by silencing the men on the base it would keep them from losing the one or two stripes they had. In my view, it was a sensitive situation for all of us.

What I found somewhat odd is that outside of the initial report I had given to Captain Verrano on the morning of our return to CSC after the incident, and also what I had experienced while at the AFOSI Building and at the Base Command Offices on December 29, 1980, NO ONE from the Security Police Squadron, and this includes the Squadron Commander, Major Zickler, ever interviewed me or talked to me about the incident – nor did they request any statements from me.[cdxxxviii] I thought that someone would, *unless they were instructed otherwise.* I had a feeling that after the incident I was 'radioactive' – a 'no touch' subject. Obviously, the investigation the agents had told me about during my visit to the AFOSI building had been effective and powerful, and little did I know how deep my interrogations with the AFOSI agents had been. However, the full knowledge of that would not come to me until fourteen years later, when of my own accord, I applied for hypnosis therapy to relieve myself of the nightmarish, sleep disorder problem I began suffering with and which became more intense as the weeks, months, and years went by.

" . . . nothing strange or unusual had happened there."

During the first week in February 1981, the young forester, Vince Thurkettle, was given the opportunity to examine the area in the forest where he was told a craft had landed. According to Thurkettle, after he had talked to the two strangers who had approached him on December 30, 1980 to ask him questions about the incidents, he was excited and expected something to happen, *but it never did.*

Thurkettle says that after some four weeks, one of the forestry guys asked him if he had seen the burned area in the forest. This got Thurkettle's attention, and after asking about it, the forester told him that his wife had been out shopping with the wife of one of the Commanders from the base who told his wife that there had been a lot of fuss made of a burnt area in the forest. Later, a local saw-miller also told Thurkettle about there being a burnt area, so Thurkettle made an inquiry about it at the Forestry Commissioner's Office. The man on duty told the young forester that *"they" didn't want the story to get out, but that it was out now anyway.* In response to this, Georgina Bruni, who interviewed Vince Thurkettle in 1998, writes, "So now we learn that the Forestry Commission was somehow involved in the cover-up" (Bruni, p. 248).

Then six weeks after he first heard about the incidents, on or around December 30, 1980, as relayed to him by the two inquisitive strangers, Thurkettle was taken to the alleged landing site.

Quoting Vince Thurkettle from October 2005:

> "There were odd rumours going about the forestry workers about a burnt area and stuff. Then about six weeks later, I was brought and shown the site. And I looked and to me as a woodman, a forester all my life, it was just a simple clearing in the woods with three marks where rabbits had scraped for roots or something. There were some chips on the trees, but it wasn't the impact of anything. It was a guy called Bill Briggs who'd marked the trees to be felled. I went from extreme excitement that I was going to experience close encounters to extreme disappointment that everything I was seeing could be explained by normal forestry and wood craft."[cdxxxix]

During her interview with Thurkettle, Georgina Bruni asked how he knew this was the site and if he had actually seen a burnt area. Thurkettle replied

that *he didn't know it was the correct site and that he merely assumed it was* because of the military vehicle marks and Pepsi cans – adding "Americans always drink Pepsi." Thurkettle said that the landing site had sticks marking the three depressions, which were roughly in a triangle as if marking the site, *and that, "No," he "never saw a burnt area."* The forester then told Bruni that the three marks were not all at the same angles and that they seemed like ordinary depressions, like rabbit marks" (Bruni, p. 248). Thurkettle later reported that he had sketched the triangular pattern of the three marks on-site and that they had not form a symmetrical triangle,[cdxl] adding that the marks were also oval in shape – again, concluding that the marks were nothing more than rabbit scrapes: ". . . they certainly weren't the feet marks of some craft having landed." According to Thurkettle, ". . . the site was just ordinary and natural, nothing strange or unusual had happened there."[cdxli]

It's not clear who had "brought and shown" Thurkettle the alleged landing site, but it's been stated by one investigative researcher, who says she interviewed him a few times at the alleged site, that the forester was told by some men from the base that the holes were the marks left by the UFO[cdxlii] . . . which infers Thurkettle was taken to the site by base personnel. *But was he really taken to the true landing site?*[cdxliii]

Plans and Programs

Jim Penniston:

I started my new job in Plans and Programs on a Monday morning, and like TSgt. Biordi said, I would be trained by him and TSgt. Shirah, and also the Wing Plans Officer, Major Chad Smith at the Wing Command Post. 'Wing Plans' had a vault-style room to the left of the Wing Battle Cab. It was there where the Major instructed me on the writing of the base plans. My reporting official was Chief Master Sergeant Hill, whom, I had later discovered, *just happened to work directly for Major Malcolm Zickler, the Security Police Squadron Commander for both bases.*[cdxliv]

Once settled in, I would do a monthly classified readiness report (UNITREP) for Colonel Halt, plus a monthly meeting with the combat support group, the Weapons Security Review Group, of which I was OPR ('Office of Primary Responsibility'). This group consisted of the Security

Police Commander (Zickler), the Base Commander (Morgan), the Wing Commander (Williams), and a half dozen full Colonels and staff officers from key Squadrons on the base. In addition to that critical meeting, I was also OPR for the annual meeting of the Base Security Council, which was made up of a dozen and a half or so O-6 (full Colonels) from the base. I had a full list of minor duties, such as being responsible for the Host Nation Support Agreements for the UK and the bases, and the Forward Operating Bases (FOB) in Germany and an operation location in Egypt. I also handled all Temporary Duty Assignments (TDY) for security police, deploying to those locations and also contingency deployments, as well as a list of other duties that were simply too staggering for someone new to this position and with my experience level.

My assistant NCOIC was SSgt. Lew Butler, who was junior to me, and he had started a few weeks later. We were also given a typist to help write up the plans. The Airman that was assigned to our office was A1C Greg Battram. He was relieved of Security Police field duties because his PRP (Personal Reliability Program) and weapons card authorization had been pulled. This was normal for Airmen who were either 1), awaiting administrative discharge, 2), under investigation, or 3), having their PRP being pulled permanently or just temporary i.e., reviewed or suspended.

Our office at Bentwaters on what is now called *Thompson Drive* was about twenty feet from Security Police Supply, which was run by MSgt. Fred Smith, the NCOIC, and his assistant SSgt. Mark Reese. They had an Airman doing the shelves and the restocking . . . whom we called a “gofer” (slang for an airman who was told to go here, do this and that and other menial tasks). Like Greg Battram, the Security Police Supply’s Airman was also relieved of duty (SNAP) and awaiting administrative discharge. He had his small arms access taken away and his PRP (Personal Reliability Program) had been suspended . . . *his name was AIC Lawrence (Larry) Warren.*[cdxlv]

About two hundred feet down and across the street (again, now ‘Thompson Drive’) was the AFOSI building, as was also the Security Police main operations buildings, such as Law Enforcement (Law Enforcement) desk, Law Enforcement Operations, Reports and Analysis. The Security Police Commander/Operations Officer, Security Operations, Security Investigations, Resource Protection and the Orderly Room were all much farther down the road, adjacent to the base gate entrance area. My supervisor,

CMSgt. Hill, was located in the Operations section.

My ‘on the job training’ was progressing well. I was shadowing TSgt. Biordi with all the duties until he started his ‘out processing’ from the base. He told me I was well on my way with the job, and I would be fine. He said, “Take every challenge as an opportunity to do the best work you can.” It was good advice indeed.

One of the first events that I had to do myself was to complete the UNITREP report. This was a classified report on the war and peacetime readiness of the Security Police at the Base. I finished my report and took the report to the Base Command Section. I told the secretary I had the UNITREP report for Security Police. Having heard me, the Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt, stepped out of his office and said, “Bring the report in, and we will go over it.”

“Yes, Sir,” I said.

This would become a monthly occurrence with Halt. He would review my reports and ask questions if needed, to clarify or to see how I came up with each rating.[cdxlvi] One thing that usually happened with Halt is that once the report brief was done, the conversation always went onto something that was related to the Rendlesham incident. It would often begin with just a basic question on how I was doing, which then led to Lt. Col. Halt asking me to clarify certain things, or if I remembered any more details or information about the incident. This put me in a precarious situation. Perhaps I was being tested. I was still under orders, and by virtue of what little I was told and had gone through in my debriefs and interrogations, it was an on-going investigation by the OSI and other intel agencies, so I told him all I was supposed to say about the incident and minimized the conversation whenever the subject of the incident came up.

Major Malcolm Zickler, SSgt. J. D. Ingalls and the Containment Story

Within a few short weeks, both SSgt. Lew Butler and I started to fit in to our new jobs. Everyone in the squadron made us feel welcomed. I would routinely have the ‘Reports and Analysis’ guy stop in – sometimes on his way to AFOSI, but usually on his way to the SP Supply office. His name was John David Ingalls, and he was a Staff Sergeant. His office was roughly fifty

yards down the street from mine (again, the street now called 'Thompson Drive'). SSgt. J.D. Ingalls would often stop in for a cup of coffee and a chat. As friendly as he was, after a while, all he seemed to want to talk about was the incident, which bothered me. I told him that I really could not talk about such things because it was all classified stuff, and he needed to respect that. [cdxlvii]

However, on another day and during one of our conversations, Ingalls then surprised me by telling me that since his office had all the blotters, he was privy to what was in them – especially those during the time of the incident. Well, I doubted if that was true – at least where the Security blotters and AF1569 reports were concerned. Those I knew were now classified 'secret' and had been removed out of the normal process. I reasoned that Ingalls could only have had access to the Law Enforcement blotter, which had been replaced and was cursory at best – but his telling me this was just a ploy to get me to open up to discuss things I knew about the incident. Again, I told Ingalls that the matter was being treated as Top Secret, and that I couldn't and wouldn't comment on it. Ingalls response to that was, "Well, we both have Top Secret clearances."

I shot him a glance that showed my patience was wearing thin and said, "Yes, that may be true J D, but you don't have a valid need to know," adding, "There is a difference between having Top Secret Clearance and what you are told and need to know from it."

Ingalls told me he understood that.

I already knew that Ingalls held a Top Secret clearance for his job. How did I know this?

During this time, I was the author of *Bentwaters Regulation 207. 1.* It covered all security operations for A, B, and C areas and resources, including Woodbridge, Martlesham Heath, and the FOL. And so, of all people, I knew who had the clearances to do what, and what clearances they needed to access certain areas. I was the Security guy working the WCP during alerts and war games with the Wing Commander and the Base Commander. So, I knew who had Top Secret clearances and who didn't.[cdxlviii] Those who had 'Top Secret' clearances in the Security Police were: Major Zickler, Captain Verrano, CMSgt. Hill, MSgt Fail, TSgt. Biordi, TSgt. Shirah, SSgt J.D. Ingalls, *and myself* . . . Just these eight in Security Police.

In any case, in hindsight, it was not what I said, or did not say to J. D.

Ingalls that was important. What was important, was *WHAT he was telling me,* as he began to open up on what he knew and what he was involved in.

In short, SSgt. J. D. Ingalls had told me that he had been tasked to give out a 'disinformation story' around the base and in the local area just days after the incidents. My response to him was, "Why in the world you would want to do that?" He then said that this was what he was told to do by the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler.

Ingalls then added that he then gave out the story in conversations around the base and in the surrounding area and would then report back to Major Zickler to let him know how the story was being received and consumed by people on the base and by the locals.

Finding this quite interesting now, I asked Ingalls to elaborate.

Ingalls said that he was told that the disinformation story he would be putting out about the incident would evolve as just another UFO story, and that this was the best solution to hide what had really happened. He added that he was told to assume the identity of a security patrol airman and spread the disinformation around on base and at the local pubs he visited regularly. J. D. Ingalls then said something important. He told me he thought the disinformation he was ordered to put around was to take the focus off the first night with hopes of focusing on the third night involving Lt. Col. Halt. "By embellishing Halt's story with disinformation would make the whole incident just another sensational UFO story, which would be seen by many as being too ridiculous to be true," he said. I asked about the disinformation and what exactly he had been saying.

Ingalls said that he had given out stuff about an "alien/ET" related, saucer-shaped, UFO crash landing and contact with three 'one meter' tall, floating aliens with large heads in silver suits, and how people on the base had helped them repair their craft after it had hit a tree– finally adding that this assistance also involved the Wing and Base Commanders. He also gave some other details which I would not see or hear about until some years later. I was shocked that the Wing and Base Commanders had been implicated in his story. It was now getting out of hand, I thought . . . *Was this really necessary?*

As mentioned, after his chats with me, SSgt. J. D. Ingalls would either go over to the AFOSI building, or to SP Supply and shoot the breeze with MSgt. (Fred) Smith . . . *where Larry Warren was also working.*[cdxlix] All these things I would not connect together for another few years, and even more

substantially and in more detail, ten or so years later.

It made logical sense to me that the Security Police Squadron Commander Major Zickler would have taken SSgt. Ingalls into his confidence. As mentioned, Ingalls had a Top Secret clearance, and if it is true what Ingalls told me, then he *did* see the initial reports such as the AF1569 (incident and complaint reports), and this means he saw both the LE and Security blotters, as apparently he had access to both and from all three incident nights of December 1980. Also, it wouldn't surprise me that the story SSgt. J. D. Ingalls was putting about under an assumed identity was a 'containment' (cover) story, which would result in refocusing people's attention from the true facts of the incident and confound and confuse researchers to the point where they would then give up on it . . . as was hoped. Ingalls told me that Major Zickler had told him, "Make it like another UFO story," and he did.

It sounded a lot like what I was told by the agents at the AFOSI building some days after the incident. In a matter of time, it would be just that – *another UFO story* like thousands of others. I remember thinking that it was more than interesting that Major Zickler was involved. Zickler himself must have been directed to do this. There was no other productive reason for Major Zickler to tell SSgt. J. D. Ingalls to spread this story around the base and in the surrounding area.

I then asked Ingalls where he actually spread this fabrication on base. He said through casual and random conversations at the Law Enforcement desk and in Security Police supply.

I laughed and said, "I don't see Fred Smith or Mark Reese as gossipers."

Ingalls smiled and responded with, "You never know who will say what Jim."[cdl]

I then laughed loudly. "Well, laugh if you will about it," Ingalls said. "I am only doing what I was told . . . and besides I see some benefit in it for me, as well."

"Benefit?" I exclaimed. "How is that then, J.D.?" I added.

Ingalls smiled and said, "Well, there are a couple of UFO women investigators visiting the pub I go to just off base, and they are eating this stuff up like sugar. I think I will get laid by this one who is all over me when I go there on the weekends."

I have heard it all now, I thought….

Unwitting Disinformant

As said, for some reason, and like Airman Warren, our airman who worked in Plans and Programs, Greg Battram had been relieved of Security Police field duties. He, too, appeared desperate in wanting to be involved with the incident, He was always asking questions upon questions about the incident and offered me embellished stories, some of which bordered on fabrication to complete lies. No doubt, because of his willingness to tell tales, and because he was a friend of Larry Warren's, it is probable that, like Warren – whom I suspect had been selected to be part of Zickler and Ingalls' containment operation, whether he knew it or not – Greg Battram was viewed as another prime candidate to be another useful, unwitting disinfomant for these agents of deception.[cdli]

SSgt. Lew Butler had a big problem with the airman's constant lying and gross fabrications. One of the big lies, among many that bothered Lew, was that the airman had said he was 'prior service' and used to be in the Marine Corps, which by itself could have been true. However, he then said he was an officer in the Marines and flew the back seat of an F-4 Phantom, which was hard to believe. *Why would a guy who was once an officer come to the Air Force from the Marines and not still be an officer?* Instead, he became enlisted and was a low ranking A1C at that.

It bothered Lew so much that he went to the base personnel records section and checked Battram's personnel records. A few days later, Lew took me to one side and said that he had looked at the records and had discovered that Battram was not 'prior service,' nor had he been anything other than an A1C in Security Police. Lew then said he was going to confront him, but I told him not to bother. "Just tell him to shut up when he starts his story telling," I said, and added, "Besides, Lew, thoughtful conversation is not the reason why we have him here. We just want him to type up our plans." Lew hesitantly agreed, but I had seen no need for arguing within the office and us all falling out over Battram and his compunction to invent things, just to bolster his self-esteem. It wasn't productive.

As the weeks went on, it became apparent that the gossip on base was designed to fuse BOTH the incident of the first night (which involved me and an unidentified LANDED craft), and Colonel Halt's UAP (Unidentified

Aerial Phenomena) investigation (which was really Monroe Nevels' mission on the third night), *into one night.* Not only that, but the containment story was further contaminated with details that were totally absurd – based on fantastical UFO tales. I had observed that information about the first night was being overlooked and excluded more and more from what was being mentioned. The incident was now about 'UFOs' and 'alien visits' and other related hooey . . . a 'UFO entertainer's' dream.

As the Spring of 1981 approached,[cdlii] I would still hear chatter about the incident on the base at times, and I would also hear the incident being discussed in the pubs in Ipswich town on a few occasions, and from what I was hearing, I could only conclude that the containment story was working and that the incident was dissolving into nothing more than a stereotypical UFO myth involving levitating alien beings with large heads and small bodies dressed in slivery suits. It was also apparent that the people who were really involved with the Rendlesham Incident, were now being protected in their anonymity to the event, while others were spreading disinformation.[cdliii]

Chapter Eleven

Lifeline

Summer 1981 to October 1984

Jim Penniston:

During the summer of 1981,[cdliv] many people who were involved with me on that fateful morning in December 1980 started rotating back to the States or going on to other assignments. The list included Burroughs, Coffey, Chandler, Preston, and many others. However, for Lt. Col. Halt and me, we were not destined to leave to go back to the States until the summer of 1984.

Through the course of my duties, many times I had to go up to see the

Command Officers. Of course, I had two debriefings within 72 hours after the incident – one at the AFOSI building and one with the Base and Deputy Base Commander and Colonel Williams.

But there were another twelve or so 'informal briefings.' These were done by chance or within passing conversations. For example, this happened when taking correspondence to the Command offices or to brief Colonel Halt on duty reports. A few times, Colonel Conrad, now Deputy Wing Commander, would get up from his desk and come to his door and motion for me to come to see him. I would, and Colonel Conrad would always ask about how I was doing or if anyone was bothering me about the incident. I always told him, no, but I considered these debriefs with him, also. All in all, with the two formal ones for which I gave accounts, I would estimate having gone through a total of fourteen debriefs before I left in the summer of 1984 – *well, those of which I had full conscious memory.* However, one of the most mindful and open discussions I took part in would be just a few months down the road, and it would come in the replacement of the 81st Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler.

Meeting with Security Police Squadron Commander, Lt. Col. Charles J. Heubusch

During the summer of 1982,[cdlv] Major Malcolm Zickler rotated on assignment back Stateside to Elgin Air Force Base, Florida.[cdlvi] Zickler's replacement was Lt. Colonel Charles J. Heubusch. Chuck Heubusch became a member of the Air Staff at the Pentagon in Washington DC. As an Action Officer, he was responsible for convincing the Air Staff to fund Air Base Ground Defense units within the Air Force Security Police. He was now back in Field Operations as the 81st Security Police Squadron Commander.[cdlvii]

It was only a few days after Colonel Heubusch took over command of the squadron that I received a phone call from Security Police Operations to report to the office of Colonel Heubusch, so that I could brief him on some base defense plans as well as our main contingency plans. I took a couple of classified plans with me as support material for any question specifics the Colonel might have. Having been in Plans and Programs for quite some time now, I was confident that I could give him a complete overlay of our Wing, Base, and FOL (Forward Operating Locations) operations.

I arrived at the Orderly Room, which was just outside the Commander's office. The admin officer announced I was there, and I went in to report as ordered. I thought this was going to be just a formal report and conversation, but how wrong I was. Colonel Heubusch shook my hand and told me to sit down and relax. He then got up from his desk and went over to the room door and asked for two cups of coffee to be brought in. He then turned and asked how I wanted mine. "Black please, Sir," I said. He then shut the door and sat at the chair next to me. The conversation immediately went to being very casual. "I am Chuck Heubusch, and I have wanted to meet and talk to you for some time now," he said. I was taken by surprise and must have had an odd look on my face, as he then stopped and asked if I was alright. I told him, "Yes sir, I am alright . . . just a little confused." I then asked the Colonel what plans he would want to be briefed on first. The Colonel smiled and said, "I don't need to be briefed on the Base plans; it was only a way for me to have you meet with me without a lot of questions."
At that point, the Orderly Room officer brought in the coffee, and the Colonel thanked her and said, "Please shut the door when you leave and hold all phone calls and interruptions while I am with Staff Sergeant Penniston."

Colonel Heubusch then told me about his job at the Pentagon, working for Air Staff. He said he had his main duty of convincing and working the Air Base Ground Defense (ABGD) to Air Staff, and for funding, but that he also worked within Security Police Intelligence, as well. That, of course, was a surprise to me, since I knew nothing of any such section within the Security Police field like that. I just listened and sipped my coffee as he continued. Then he said something that completely took me off-guard.
"I have read the classified reports on the incident with the craft," he said and then relayed to me parts of the four-page witness statement I had originally written at the AFOSI building – information that no one on base knew, or for that matter, not even those who were in my chain of command. I was stunned. Colonel Heubusch was certainly privy to the now classified statement I had written on December 29, 1980. He talked about the review at the Pentagon's Air Staff and how the report was given to them from above their office, which is never the case on a report from one of the Air Staff airbases. This would mean that the report had to have come from the Department of Defense (DOD) or even higher? I was beginning to see the magnitude of the effect of the written statement I had given at the AFOSI building and handed to whom I had then perceived to be agents from the

Department of State and the National Security Agency, among others, and now the routing to Air Staff. But, from all the things the Colonel said to me during that meeting, I think the most moving part and the most reassuring words, which gave me immediate comfort and would turn out to be my lifeline in my future Air Force career, was when he said, “You’re no longer alone with this incident. If you have any issues, or if you ever need anyone to talk to about it, I am here for you, Jim. I assume you have had a rough go with this, and I completely understand.”

My face must have showed relief. I told the Colonel I really appreciated that. He seemed to be ‘in the know’ about the investigation, and then I pressed him on the two questions I had since the incident, and even to present day – i.e., “Where did the craft come from” and “Who are they?”
He told me that he simply did not know and that he was sure that the answers to those questions were well beyond his paygrade. So, with that said, we were now on an ‘even knowledge level’ in our conversation.

I then went on to tell him about things that had happened to me on the base since the incident and other things that I had been told and had observed – in particular, the part about Major Zickler and his efforts on putting out a false narrative on the incident through a young Staff Sergeant named J. D. Ingalls and all on behalf of the AFOSI no doubt, who wanted to contain it. Colonel Heubusch listened intently and said, “Well, we all follow orders Jim. No matter what the personal cost and no matter who we are in the Air Force.”

This was a resonating statement to me from the Colonel. In my understanding, it meant that all the things I had thought about and had heard from SSgt. Ingalls was now confirmed as true. I was not surprised, but I was intrigued by the intricacy of the containment with the investigation and the diverting of attention from the real ‘landing’ of an unidentified craft of unknown origin on the first night.

That meeting with the Security Police Squadron Commander, Colonel Heubusch, changed everything. It was a ‘game changer’ for me and how I would handle things in the future. I truly felt I was not alone with this. I was also told there would be ‘safeguards’ if I felt I was being unfairly treated, or if a security concern would come up on how to handle it in the future if it ever occurred. I had never received this support with the former Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler. I look back at that day in grateful appreciation for my meeting with Colonel Heubusch and what he told me that day in his office. What he said gave me the support to continue

my Air Force career, knowing about what happened at Rendlesham that night. I had another two years with Colonel Heubusch as my Commander while I was at RAF Bentwaters. We never did speak about the incident or our conversation again while he and I were stationed there.

At this point in time, I absolutely knew I was being supported by others. My career was intact, despite the immediate trauma after the incident (i.e., the ones and zeros), which had not occurred again. I was very content and pleased with how the Air Force was handling it now. However, in the years to come, Colonel Heubusch and I would meet several times while we were both stationed in Europe.

The rest of 1982[cdlviii] and the first four months of 1983 progressed nicely without incident as far as I could see – although I later discovered that there were things going on behind the scenes that were no doubt a direct result of what SSgt. J. D. Ingalls had been up to.[cdlix] All that was transpiring behind the scenes throughout the Spring of 1983[cdlx] would come out later through discreet discussions I had with Halt, who by this time had been promoted to Colonel.[cdlxi]

Search for the Halt Tape

Since early 1983, rumors had been circulating about the existence of the tape recording made by Lt. Col. Halt during the third night's events (December 27/28). Many of these rumors had most likely originated from the occasions when Colonel Sam Morgan had played the tape at cocktail parties and other social events as a source of amusement after finding the tape in a drawer in the office previously occupied by the former Base Commander, Col. Conrad, as early as January 1981.

All attempts made by Larry Fawcett of CAUS (Citizens Against UFO Secrecy) to locate and secure the release of this tape in April 1983 had failed. However, rumors of the tape persisted, and it was later discovered that the reason why the researchers had failed in their efforts to get their hands on the Halt tape was because it was Colonel Sam Morgan who had possession of the desperately sought-after item.

A FOIA Request for the Release of the Memo

Jim Penniston:

Sometime in May 1983, Colonel Halt called me at the Plans and Programs office where I worked. He seemed troubled and told me to come up to his office right away, adding that I was to use the back entrance, like I usually did. I wondered what it could be, as he did sound stressed. As soon as I entered his office, Halt told me that he had just heard that the memorandum he had written back in January 1981, and which he thought had only been sent to the MOD, was going to be released to the public through a FOIA (Freedom of Information Act) request, adding that any day now all hell was going to break loose.[cdlxii]

To say I was shocked is an understatement, as we both knew that this could get out of control really fast.[cdlxiii] Halt explained that apparently, and unknown to him, a copy of the memo had been sent to the Third Air Force Headquarters, and a Commander of the 513th Combat Support Group was releasing it. He then asked me if I had been contacted in any way. I told him, "No, and I don't want to be contacted." Having noted my grave concerns, Halt again assured me that my name had been kept off the memo. As far as I was concerned, this was Col. Halt's problem, and I just put it out of my mind over the next few months.[cdlxiv]

"We must wait until we are out."

During September 1983, I was again summoned to Colonel Halt's office. Halt was excited about a national UK newspaper doing an article about the incident. He said they were offering a huge amount of money for the details . . . $50,000![cdlxv] He immediately asked me if I was interested. I was stunned. I knew there was now an active investigation going on outside of the base, due to the memo being released, yet I still had my orders to keep quiet. In fact, I wondered what the hell Halt was doing. I wanted nothing to do with this 'hair-pulling' plan – although I said nothing about the things that were going through my mind. I merely composed myself and said, "Colonel, as far as I know . . . if you are still on active duty, and you are talking in public about an event that happened while on active duty, then you are prohibited to do that under AFR 30-30."

Halt looked surprised, and asked, “Are you positive about that?”

I said I was quite certain about that regulation.

Looking somewhat perplexed, Halt thought for a moment, and then jumping up from his seat, he said he needed to check out something on that. He then made a phone call, requesting to see someone. Apparently, the answer back was yes, because he then hung up and turning to me said, “Come with me.” I thought, *Great! Now I am stuck with the Colonel’s quest.*

I wanted nothing but for him to leave me out of this. Nevertheless, within minutes I found myself stepping into the Colonel’s private vehicle, a Triumph sports car, which was parked just outside the private entrance door to his office, and then we were on our way to the Base Judge Advocate Office (JA).

I remained in the car while the Colonel went in and talked to them. He came out shortly and said, “You are right, Staff Sergeant Penniston. We can’t do this while we are on active duty. We must wait until we are out.”[cdlxvi] In this instance, I could only feel relieved that I was not going to be compromised with the instructions I was given by the agents, which was to keep my mouth shut about the incident.

It was very awkward at times with Colonel Halt. I did walk a fine line with him, and there were many instances when this kind of thing would occur. I would have many monthly meetings involving my work duties with Colonel Halt, and there were also the less frequent meetings with both the Wing and Base Commanders. My observations with Halt, especially his constant questions with me, made me suspect that he really knew nothing of the cover story or the containment efforts made to obscure the events of the first night, and which I was instructed to say nothing about by the agents after the incident, other than what they had told me to say. Of course, at this point I only suspected it. However, I had questions, too, about what I had witnessed that morning. *Is the investigation still a work in progress? Or have they concluded who “they” are? Who could create this type of technology? What was the purpose of the craft?* My questions went on and on. For me they were endless.

News of the World

A few weeks had passed after the bizarre meeting with Colonel Halt and the

Judge Advocates office ordeal, and I awoke one Sunday morning enjoying the peace and solitude of my home in Ipswich. While having my morning coffee, I went to my front door to deposit the used milk bottles and picked up my morning newspaper. I was certain it was going to be a nice, lazy Sunday morning where I could relax and put everything to the back of my mind for a few hours, but my quietude would soon be disrupted. It was October 2, 1983, and the newspaper was the *News of the World,* a popular UK Sunday newspaper, which mostly specialized in sex scandals and other exposes and had a reading audience of four million.

As I sat in my living room, I opened the folded paper, and to my utter shock and dismay, the headline on the front page in bold text, read . . .

"UFO LANDS IN SUFFOLK And that's OFFICIAL."

Below was a photo of Colonel Gordon E. Williams with the caption, "NO HOAX SAYS THE AIR CHIEF."

How could this be? I thought . . . *I was told it was a classified investigation . . . .*

NEWS OF THE WORLD

- Colonel's top secret report tells the facts
- Army melt in shocking wall of colour
- Animals flee from strange glowing object

UFO LANDS IN SUFFOLK

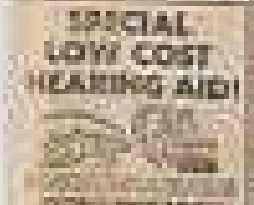
And that's OFFICIAL

The Street won't die says boss

NO HOAX SAYS THE AIR CHIEF

SUPERDAD'S LOVE TANGLE RUMPUS

SPECIAL LOVE COST HEARING AID!



VEHICLE

WIN IT TODAY!

£2000

INSTANT BINGO

Our GOLD CHAINS on sale Oct. 31st

Fig. 37: Front page of the UK national newspaper, *News of the World,* October 2, 1983.

With apprehension, I began reading the newspaper article, which had been written by Keith Beabey. I read that Col. Williams did confirm a landing of an unidentified craft in the forest, but denied he was involved.

Featured was a copy of the memorandum sent to the British Ministry of Defence about the December 1980 incidents written by Col. Halt, dated January 13, 1981 – again, not meant for public dissemination, so I was told. I was astonished. I then realized why Halt had told me a few weeks earlier that he had been contacted by someone from a national UK newspaper, whom he said had offered him £50,000 for his story.[cdlxvii] I knew Col. Halt had nothing to do with the main story that was put out in the newspaper, as he had been told that he could not divulge anything in public regarding a time during which he was on active duty – especially while he was still employed by the USAF.[cdlxviii]

Then on page three, I noticed an additional column article by Bob Smith, the American correspondent for the *News of the World*. It had the title, *"An Airman's Story."* The name of the airman was undisclosed, but he was given the pseudonym, "Art Wallace." It was almost immediately apparent that what was being reported was based on the 'scuttle-butt' containment story which had been deliberately passed around the base and in the local pubs by SSgt. J. D. Ingalls, as he had told me himself.

After a dramatic start, with a description of the forest having been ablaze with light, the airman, who says he was a security guard, is reported to have said that the craft he saw, which he says landed in the forest with an explosion of red light, resembled a spaceship from the movie *Star Wars.* It's possible the reporter had added this in himself and was sensationalizing it as they always do, but still, with mention of that movie it was already bordering on the ridiculous.

The airman is then reported to have described the craft as triangular, being 20-feet across the bottom with sloping sides up to the top, between 12 and 15 feet high, much like a pyramid. Apparently, this craft was covered with pipes and valves, etc., according to the airman. Also, the events described were said to have happened in the early hours of December 27, 1980, which was the night/morning that airman Lori Buoen, from her position at the East Gate,

had her sighting of a lighted object north of the Woodbridge runway. However, to the best of my knowledge, having been told about this incident while working in 'Plans and Programs' by MSgt. Hill, the sighting of the lighted object which had come down in the forest north of East Gate was all that was reported about that incident.

The airman says that while on-duty with his M-16 rifle, he was first ordered into a Jeep at RAF Bentwaters, where he was then driven in a convoy towards nearby R.A.F Woodbridge. The patrol then pulled up on the edge of 'Tangham Woods,' where they were told to hand in their weapons. He says the patrol were ordered to take lights (lightalls) into the woods. However, the fuel gauges on the vehicles – and we can assume the lightalls too – registered empty when it was known they were full. I was told this did happen, but on the third night, so it appears that the airman's story here relates to the third night's events, which involved Lt. Col. Halt and SSgt Monroe Nevels.

The airman continues saying that the patrol then proceeded to the forest, and on the way, he noticed animals running in panic from the forest. He says the patrol then approached a clearing or field, where they could see several very bright lights. This statement about "several very bright lights" contradicts what the witnesses (Halt, Bustinza and Burroughs), had said concerning the third night: *that the lightalls in the forest were not working.*

Anyway, the airman adds that he and the men were all a bit shook up to come across a medic treating a security policeman who had appeared to have broken down and was crying. He then goes on to say that the clearing was "full of RAF and USAF security people . . . about 200 of them" . . . which was absurd. Apparently, and according to the airman, around the clearing, there were several movie cameras that had been set up, and helicopters were flying above. No movie cameras were ever mentioned. The only person with a camera was SSgt. Monroe Nevels, and no helicopters were reported flying that night or any other night during the time of incidents and would not have been flying as it was the Christmas holiday.

The airman continues, and we would ask the readers to think of Monroe Nevels' testimony regarding what he witnessed on the third night while reading this, as it is completely at odds with what Monroe and Col. Halt had reported happened:

> "Then we saw an object it appeared to be resting on the ground and looked like a giant aspirin. It was transparent. We were in awe, never having seen anything

like this. Nearby there was an airman carrying a radio. Suddenly we heard a chopper pilot telling him, here it comes. We looked up and saw a red ball of light coming towards us from over the trees. In the distance, it looked about 100ft high and appeared to be coming in to land. It came down right over the transparent object on the ground. There was no sound at all. We were all mesmerised.

All of a sudden, the red light exploded. The place was filled with an explosion of all kinds of colours. We were blinded. When the colours died down we looked again and there was a machine there. A Captain motioned us to approach the ship. We walked up close enough to touch it. It was giving off a metallic bluish light. There were about three groups of four security men circling the thing. Could see our shadows on the craft as we walked, they moved. But when we stopped the shadows seemed to take another pace, it was weird.

Suddenly a green light came on top of the spaceship it moved down the side of the craft until it reached our heads then bounced from one to the other along the side, just like the ball bounces in a video game. Then I realised the vehicle was inhabited. There were beings aboard. I didn't see them because I was on the other side of the craft, but others did. They said there were three and they were wearing silver suits, I had a strange feeling and seemed to black out. The next thing I knew it was 5 a.m. and I was waking up, lying half across my bunk, I still had my uniform on and was up to my knees in mud. To this day I don't know how I got back to the barracks, or what happened after I saw the green light bounce off our shadows. My roommate said I had been brought into the room by some people, he didn't know who, and just dumped on the bed."

Art Wallace – that isn't his real name – was honourably discharged from the USAF in June,1981. He is now aged 22. If named, he could be jailed for saying what he saw."[cdlxix]

Good grief! I thought . . . *who was the undisclosed airman from the base who was passing this embellished cover story as actual fact?* Although some of the details described in this account correlated with the third night, overall the events described had no correlation with what Lt. Col. Halt and others had told me had happened. Also, none of this was on the tape recording Halt had me and Burroughs listen to.

I again thought back to what SSgt. J. D. Ingalls had told me.

Was J. D. Ingalls the "undisclosed airman?"

After rethinking what Ingalls had said, I realized that the word “LANDS” in the headline was obviously the part of the embellished UFO containment story relating to what really happened on the first night but mixed with the third night’s events. Although it was laughable, I was in a state of confusion and anguish.

I had taken what Ingalls had told me with some amusement at first and really didn’t consider his disclosures as seriously as I should have at the time, as it didn’t seem to affect me personally. But now I was angered by seeing such deceit in print. I guess it never hit me like that before during discussions and such, but the starkness of it now in a national newspaper was disturbing, to say the least. I realized that the absurd nonsense being put out in this national newspaper was compromising any opportunity I would have one day of coming forward with the truth of what really happened. It simply ‘muddied the waters,’ and after all, that was its purpose. I was angered by this typical human behaviour to want to veil the truth all the time and place blocks on the path of our own future progress and greater understanding. *Why is it that part of the collective consciousness of humanity feels it necessary to do that to itself as a whole – i.e., obstruct the path of its own evolution?* I was living a paradox. There I was, a military guy who worked for the established order that did this kind of thing daily and for reasons which I understood, while at the same time, I found it easy to step out of that conditioned thinking to rightly view it as wrong, as it went against my personal moral obligations.

I re-read that paper several times, as well as the local Suffolk paper, *East Anglian Daily Times* which had published more details on the Rendlesham Incident the next day. I found that the story was credited to two local researchers and whistleblowers, named Dot Street and Brenda Butler – an independent paranormal investigator from Leiston in Suffolk. It then became obvious that whoever it was who had thought up the containment story and was spreading it (and of that I suspected J. D. Ingalls on the orders of Major Zickler), was possibly also using another airman to spread the story but with slightly different or altered embellishments to confuse any likely investigators and researchers. No doubt, this airman was a ‘useful idiot,’ either ordered or messed with to eagerly pass on this self-attention-grabbing story to the national newspaper before these local reporters/whistleblowers could determine what really happened. If this ‘other airman’ wasn’t told to pass on the story, then without his knowledge he was set up to do it and at this time to cloud and obscure things and make a mess of the research being

done by these independent investigators.

I'm certain that it was from the featured article in the local paper that contact information was given for anyone who could provide more information to the two women investigators. This is something I immediately considered. Even if it was a containment story, my conscience wouldn't allow me to live with the public believing such a lie – especially after the truth of what I had witnessed.

I would take the next 24 hours to decide and finalize on what I was going to do.

Lighthouse

We are told that within only a few hours of the story breaking that same Sunday, reporters of the UK newspaper, *The Times*, travelled to Suffolk to talk to the young forester, Vince Thurkettle, who told the reporters that it was about time someone thought about an explanation less fantastic than UFOs. [cdlxx] Apparently, after seeing the Rendlesham UFO story splashed over the front page of the *News of the World*, Thurkettle, immediately invited the press to come and talk to him about his theory and also his past observations of the supposed UFO landing site.

Then on October 7, 1983 – just five days after the story broke, amateur astronomer and astronomy writer, Ian Ridpath, who was a regular face on the BBC *Breakfast Time* show, was initially asked by the BBC, through the team that produced the show, to investigate (actually, to debunk) the "Bentwaters UFO sighting," which is what the Rendlesham Incident was known as at the time.[cdlxxi]

Ridpath had obviously been told about the 'Lighthouse theory' mentioned by Thurkettle, who had no doubt become a 'person of interest' when he was doing his own investigations in February 1981 and had been shown the alleged landing site. After being told, and/or reading or hearing about this, Ridpath wasted no time in contacting Thurkettle by phone and asked him what he thought the flashing light in the forest was, and says he was astonished when Thurkettle said it was the Orfordness Lighthouse. For Ridpath, that explained everything.

Excited by this, Ridpath then asked if he could visit the forest at night with a BBC TV camera crew to interview him, and especially to film the

lighthouse flashing, as seen from the alleged landing site area where Lt. Col. Halt and his team claim to have seen the UFOs. The fact that Halt and the other witnesses that night saw multiple lighted objects high in the sky, beaming down straight laser-like lights over certain locations, did nothing to deter Ridpath and those who had asked him to investigate:[cdlxxii]

> "It was gone midnight when Vince Thurkettle took us to the site of the alleged landing, and it felt spooky. The area had now been cleared of trees as part of normal forest operations, but enough pines remained at the edge of the forest to give us a realistic idea of what the airmen saw that night."[cdlxxiii]

The report was shown the next morning on *Breakfast Time.* After Vince Thurkettle is shown standing in the darkness of the forest explaining his theory about the Orfordness Lighthouse, the light beacon of which could be seen behind him, a voice-over narration from a BBC reporter with Ridpath is heard saying: *". . . the only mystery remaining is why UFO researchers in two and a half years of investigations failed to spot this most obvious of explanations."*[cdlxxiv]

Now that the story was out, which would have been viewed as inevitable sooner or later, the containment operation was obviously now in full swing with the help of the media . . . .[cdlxxv]

My first attempt at coming forward

Jim Penniston:

After thinking it through as best I could, I figured I could contact the women investigators (Brenda Butler and Dot Street) and tell them the truth about the containment story. At least that would stop the disinformation spreading like wildfire throughout the general public. I had the account of the first night that was given to me by the OSI agents in the AFOSI building, and which they said I was allowed to tell if questioned. Anyway, although what the agents had given me to say was not the whole truth, it was closer to the truth than the absurd story in the national newspaper, which focused mostly on the third night's events. It seemed like a plan to me, so I wasted no more time and made the phone call to Brenda Butler to set up a meeting.

The phone call was somewhat brief. I just told Butler that I was involved in the Rendlesham Incident and was a primary witness on the first night. She asked only one question. *Who was I with that night?* Since the two airmen who were with me had long since rotated back to the States, I answered her question without giving away more details than I felt I had to.[cdlxxvi] The meeting was scheduled a few days later. Butler then said we could meet at the parking lot, which was adjacent to the base coffee and snack shop. She thought that would be a neutral location for the three of us – adding that the other woman researcher would be accompanying her. She told me the make and model of the car she would be driving, and I did the same.

It was about 7:00 p.m. when I arrived at the designated rendezvous location. It was known that the base would be empty and void of people on the day and time selected. Upon arriving there, Brenda Butler's car was in the center of the parking lot, towards the front of the snack shop. I exited my car and introduced myself. The two women introduced themselves, and I recognized them both from the Suffolk paper article. We then entered Butler's car to talk. I told Brenda Butler that I was working on the first night and gave her a general outline on what happened. I was talking for no longer than five minutes, and before I could finish what I had to say, Butler then interjected with "I have a question."

"What is it?" I asked.

"Do you have nuclear weapons on this base?"

I put my hand up. "Well, this conversation is now over," I said.

I then immediately exited her car. Their faces looked dumb-founded as I walked back to my car. I wondered if they knew what had just happened. *How stupid,* I thought. I was going to give these two investigators the best information that either of them had heard 'to date,' or would possibly ever hear, and one of them asked about nuclear weapons, which was seriously classified information. And I didn't even get the chance to tell them that a lot of what they had heard and were reporting was all part of a containment story to cover up the truth. They had the perfect opportunity to finalize much of their research on the Rendlesham Incident, and it just walked away from them.

In any case, what I did get from the newspaper articles I had read and from this brief meeting with Brenda Butler and Dot Street was an impression of what the public knew, *or would know,* about the Rendlesham Incident. I knew the investigators were all clueless about what had really happened. The

cover story and containment efforts seemed to have been working, and even though I was concerned that the public would not learn the truth of what really happened for a long time – if not at all – *could I have done anything at that time to set things straight?*[cdlxxvii]

Colonel Halt was later promoted to Base Commander after Colonel Henry J. Cochran had left the base. With his new position, I interacted less and less with Colonel Halt. I saw him once at the Base Security Council meeting, and then occasionally on base. Fortunately, and as time went on, the questions about the incident aimed at me from Halt and others in Command soon faded away. I suppose that this was partly due to the change of Command leadership, which came and went. The other reason was my stubborn reluctance to answer anything in detail. It seemed that what was promised at the AFOSI building a couple of years earlier was now coming to fruition. I concentrated only on my work duties. I kept busy, and with the appearance of normalcy having returned, I actually started to enjoy my assignment at RAF Bentwaters immensely in the last several months I was there.

During the winter of 1983, I had received notification of orders for a new assignment to Ellsworth Air Force Base, South Dakota, for July 1984. It was a mixed blessing. I enjoyed the present assignment, but now I could not wait to be out of England, so I could put this incident fully behind me.

January 1984

Soon after the Rendlesham Incident had been published in the UK press, the story quickly spread to the Japanese media. Apparently, a great number of Japanese people had become so fascinated and obsessed by the case that in January 1984, an NTV (Nippon Television) crew, headed by TV film producer Jinishi (Jimmy) Yaoi, traveled to the UK and visited the twin bases and Rendlesham Forest to begin filming on location in the area for a planned NTV Special documentary. UFO investigator and author Jenny Randles says that one day in January 1984 she visited RAF Bawdsey with the entire film crew from Japan, who were allowed to film inside the entrance gate at the base.[cdlxxviii] Various interviews were conducted with researchers and the few witnesses available associated with the incident. Among those interviewed at this time were Dot Street and Vince Thurkettle (who were both filmed and interviewed in the forest); Ralph Noyes, Brenda Butler, Harry Harris, and UFO researcher and author Timothy Good. Others would be contacted and interviewed later – among them being former Base Commander Ted Conrad; former Base Commander Colonel Sam Morgan; witness Steve La Plume, and journalist Eric Mishera, who wrote the *OMNI* article that featured Col. Ted Conrad, who was Vice Wing Commander at the time.
Although he wouldn't be contacted until later in the year, the star witness of the Japanese NTV documentary would turn out to be "Art Wallace," (Larry Warren), the airman whose story featured in the national UK newspaper, the *News of the World.*

Back in the USA

Jim Penniston:

In April 1984[cdlxxix] I decided to get my home in Ipswich listed with the realty company and sold before going back to the States. I was fortunate with this, as I knew of a person who worked with North Sea shipping who had expressed an interest in it a year before. When I contacted him, he was still interested, and we quickly expedited the sale and the agreement that he would gain possession of it in July. That part worked out perfectly, although I still had a variety of different things to do with the preparation of leaving, and the summer months were fast approaching.

June came fast, and our household furnishings were packed and shipped to

my new assignment to Ellsworth AFB. The one thing I did was to keep two of the three plaster casts of the landing "pods" of the craft I witnessed from the first night with me, along with the sketches I had made and other documentation material I had kept since the incident. They all fit in my attaché case, with the exception of one plaster cast, which I packed in with my household goods that were being shipped to the States. I felt better carrying them because I did not want to risk having them damaged during the shipment process, since shipping was done by both ground transport and sea shipping. Normal time for shipping was about 45 to 60 days – two months at the most. That gave me plenty of time with some vacation back home, and when I eventually arrived at Ellsworth, I could have all my furniture and property ready to move into our new home shortly after arrival at the base.

I then enjoyed a few weeks that summer at my home town and at my parents' home before taking off on my trip with my family to Ellsworth. After arriving at the new base in July, we stayed in temporary billeting, and within weeks we were given on-base housing. We took possession of it, but our furniture and possessions had still not arrived, so we rented furnishings and got some help with what we needed from the base services.

I kept checking with TMO (base shipping), and they sent out several inquiries with no results on the whereabouts of my household possessions. It was to no avail, as we got no answers.

Release of the 'Halt Tape'

It was during the summer of 1984 that Colonel Sam P. Morgan left his position at Hill Air Force Base, Utah for an assignment at Peterson Air Force Base and NORAD and the US Space Command in El Paso County near Colorado Springs. It was while he was at Peterson AFB that Morgan was contacted by phone by Manchester UFO researcher and attorney, Harry Harris, and then researcher, Dot Street, who was still investigating the RFI for the book she was writing, along with Brenda Butler and Jenny Randles. Both had asked Col. Morgan for any information he might have on the Rendlesham Incident, and specifically the tape.[cdlxxx]

In fact, Dot Street had telephoned Morgan regularly and had struck up a

friendship with him. It is likely that other researchers had approached Morgan at this time.[cdlxxxi]

Quoting Col. Sam Morgan in an interview conducted by Georgina Bruni in 1998:

> "Some of them seemed to think there was a connection between the incident in the forest and my position in Space Command and they were sure I was not being totally forthcoming, but that was not the case."[cdlxxxii]

Morgan then made more copies on regular cassettes and began to give them out to anyone who requested a copy, but was soon tired of this when demands for the tape became time-consuming and troublesome.

> "I did send copies of the tape to several people . . . [. . .] Making copies of the tape, as well as the expense of mailing the tapes, became a bit of a burden and I was getting behind in my mailing."[cdlxxxiii]

Apparently, Harry Harris was the first to receive a copy of the Halt tape from the Colonel in August 1984. We are told that the next day another copy of the tape was released directly from RAF Bentwaters to investigator Jenny Randles by a contact of hers on the base.[cdlxxxiv] Soon after this, Col. Morgan sent a copy to Dot Street at her Oulton Broad address in Suffolk.

Quoting Col. Morgan:

> "I understand one person sold the tape to a Japanese TV station for a considerable amount, but I never got a penny out of it . . . ."[cdlxxxv]

It is said that having become acquainted with NTV producer Jinishi (Jimmy) Yaoi while being interviewed for his NTV documentary on the Rendlesham Incident, Manchester-based solicitor and UFO researcher, Harry Harris, had offered a copy of the cassette tape he had been given by Col. Morgan to the Japanese Nippon Television company through NTV producer Jinishi Yaoi, who paid £2000 to Harris for the tape.[cdlxxxvi] Obviously, it was thought that the tape would make a splendid addition to the documentary in terms of evidence.

The book *Clear Intent: The Government Coverup of the UFO Experience* by Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood, and which featured the account

given by “Art Wallace” (Larry Warren), was published on May 1, 1984.[cdlxxxvii]

Jim Penniston:

While I was at Ellsworth AFB late in 1984, I was told that the book *Sky Crash* authored by Brenda Butler, Dot Street, and Jenny Randles, had been published. I had heard that myself and Burroughs had been cited in the book under pseudonyms,[cdlxxxviii] but having been told that what was being portrayed in the book was far from the truth, I really wasn’t interested in reading it.

Sky Crash

The first edition of *Sky Crash* by Brenda Butler, Dot Street, and Jenny Randles was published in October 1984. The few witnesses of the Rendlesham Forest Incident who had been tracked down earlier in the year had their recorded accounts published in this book and in various articles by the authors. In the review by Walt Andrus, Jr., the book and investigation was considered as “one of the most significant cases of the modern era,” and that this “superb work, aided by the outstanding research of fellow investigators in the United States, should shine like a beacon for all of international ufology.”[cdlxxxix]

One of the witness accounts presented in the book was that of “Steve Roberts,” the pseudonym given to J. D. Ingalls by Brenda Butler, to whom he had confided as early as January 6, 1981 – only nine days after the events – that a UFO had crash-landed in Rendlesham Forest on the night of December 27, and that three, small, silver-suited alien beings, suspended off the ground in a shaft of light, had been witnessed by him and many other military personnel carrying out repairs on the craft, which was a typical “flying saucer” going by his descriptions and the drawings he provided.

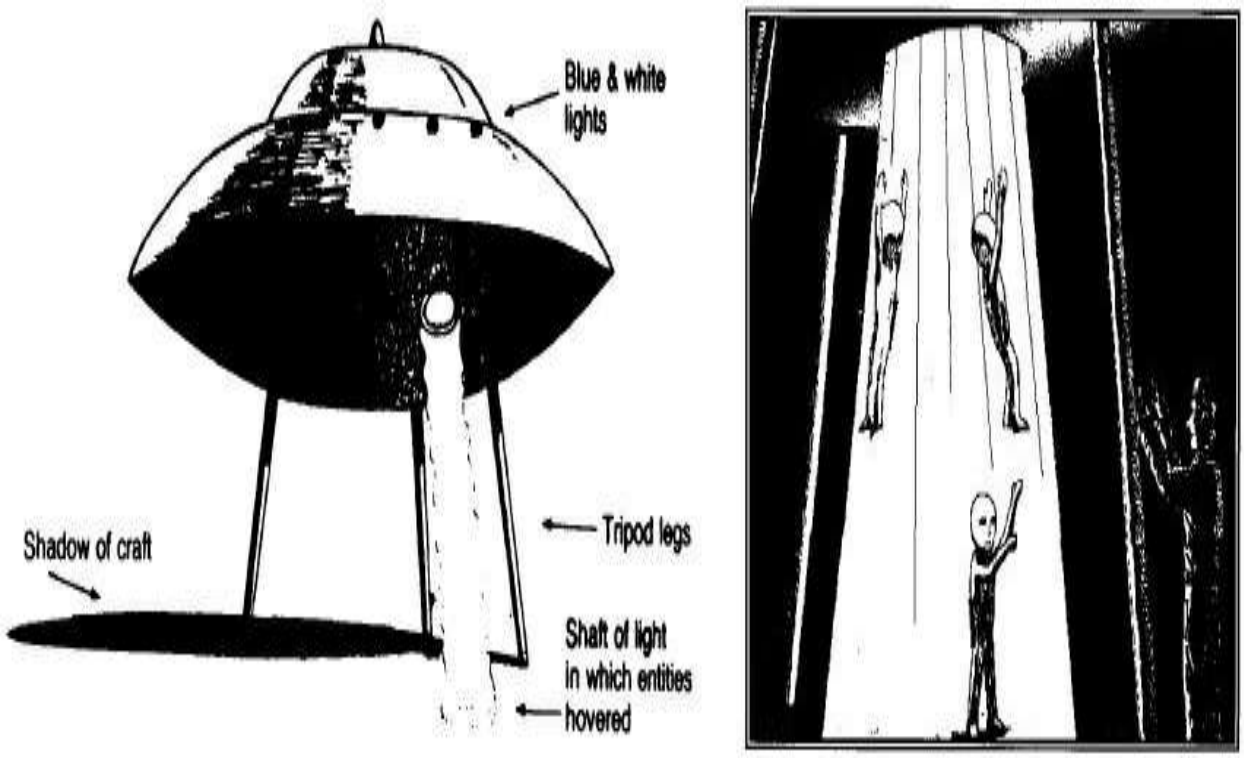


Fig. 36: Drawings by Steve Roberts (SSgt. J. D. Ingalls), as had appeared in several newspapers and articles.

"Roberts" claimed the craft had remained on the ground for four hours, and that during that time, Wing Commander Colonel Gordon Williams had communicated with the alien beings, adding that films and photos were taken which had been confiscated.

If Jim Penniston had read the book, he would have recognized the story, as was told to him by J. D. Ingalls, and would have suspected even then that Ingalls was "Steve Roberts."

It is known that John Burroughs had first come to the attention of researchers in late 1983, when Brenda Butler and Dot Street were told he was a primary witness, and it is likely that Burroughs' name first came up when Brenda Butler had asked Jim Penniston who was with him during the first night's events. Brenda Butler asked Jim Penniston this during the phone call Jim Penniston had made to Butler to arrange a meeting with her and Dot Street in October 1983, with the intention of being interviewed by the two investigators to set the story straight after "Art Wallace" (Warren) had his incredulous tale told in the UK national newspaper, the *News of the World*, which was then lapped up by the media. What little the authors had been able

to gather from SSgt. Jim Penniston, who was given the pseudonym “James Archer,” was also published in the book.

When Burroughs was tracked down by Ray Bouche in April 1984, Burroughs refused to say anything about the incidents he was involved in, as he was still in the USAF.[cdxc] However, the authors of *Sky Crash* were also able to use what little SSgt. Penniston had given them and also cross-reference others’ accounts to include Airman John Burroughs under the pseudonym “John Cadbury.”

From ‘Not there’ to Everywhere

It is debatable whether the containment story was working as planned. As mentioned, when news of the incident reached Japan, soon after the story was published in the UK, the Japanese Nippon television company immediately sent its crew to visit Suffolk in England in January 1984 to film in Rendlesham Forest and the twin bases. And even though it would later be said *that he was never there that night, or on any of the nights* relating to what was first being reported as the “Bentwaters incident,” ironically, the “gofer,” according to Jim Penniston, who worked in the back-room at “Plans and Programs” and had been given the name “Art Wallace” to protect him, had virtually reached celebrity status in that part of the world.[cdxci]

Larry Warren (aka “Art Wallace”) arrived in Tokyo, Japan, on October 10, 1984, initially to be interviewed extensively by NTV producer Jinishi Yaoi for his documentary, but while there, he also appeared on various TV shows for interviews – such was the interest in the incidents.

The NTV Special documentary about the incident was televised in October 1984.[cdxcii]

Chapter Twelve

Disinformation:

Emergence of the Containment Stories

January 1981 to June 1997 and onwards

> **Disinformation:** "Containing intentionally false and misleading material, often combined selectively with true information, which seeks to mislead and manipulate either elites or a mass audience."
>
> Richard H. Shultz, Jr. and Roy Godson.

What really began with his mention of a UFO encounter off-base and in the surrounding forest in a letter to his mother[cdxciii] – all of which he says he had heard from another airman on the base – eventually led to claims by Larry Warren that he had been personally involved in an extraordinary UFO event off-base himself.

It was inevitable that after his story had made it into the *News of the World* one year to the month prior, Larry Warren's account would also make it into the book, *Sky Crash* under his pseudonym "Art Wallace" – although in his book, *Above Top Secret* (1988), UFO author, Timothy Good writes that he was told by Jenny Randles and Dot Street that they were far from satisfied with Warren's version of events.[cdxciv] In fact, their co-author, Brenda Butler, suspected that Warren had constructed his story from what he had heard from someone else and/or others on the base – a suspicion also shared by Rendlesham researcher and investigative journalist, Georgina Bruni, who, after interviewing Warren herself in 1997, asked, "*Did Larry get the story from someone else?*[cdxcv]

As mentioned, Warren had first talked about the UFO incidents associated with the twin bases of Bentwaters and Woodbridge, England, to Bob Luca and his wife, 'alien-abductee,' Betty Andreasson when Warren visited the couple at their home in Cheshire, Connecticut, USA. Warren says this visit was in either December 1982, or January 1983. It would appear that during his talks with the couple, Warren had told them he was personally involved in one of the incidents because Betty Andreasson then advised Warren that he should talk to two friends of hers who were presently writing a book about the government UFO cover-up. These two friends were Larry Fawcett and Barry J. Greenwood, who were also founding members of CAUS (Citizens Against UFO Secrecy). Fawcett (now deceased), was the assistant director of

CAUS and also a Lieutenant and Deputy police chief in Coventry, Connecticut. Barry Greenwood is at present the director for MUFON in Massachusetts.

Warren said that he met Larry Fawcett in mid-February 1983, but from what Warren wrote in his book *Left at East Gate* (1997), it is possible that it was after reading the article about the Rendlesham incident by Eric Mishra in the March edition of *OMNI* magazine – also featuring an interview with the former Base Commander, Colonel Ted Conrad – that Warren, saw an opportunity for himself and felt anxious enough to come forward in public and say he was also involved in the incident. It was perhaps then that he decided to take Betty Andreasson Luca's advice in talking to Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood.[cdxcvi]

Betty's husband, Bob Luca, then phoned Larry Fawcett. A meeting was then set up between Warren and Fawcett, and upon hearing Warren's story, Fawcett gave Warren the pseudonym, "Art Wallace" to protect him, even though it is doubtful that Warren had ever been debriefed or interrogated during his brief time in the USAF over these incidents or told to sign papers that restricted him from talking about the incident after he was discharged from the Air Force, as claimed, as according to the primary witnesses . . . *he was never involved*.[cdxcvii] In fact, when it later became known who the airman was who had been telling all these 'tall tales,' along with his claims of being involved in the events, the primary witnesses said that Warren could not have been on duty, as he was still completing his six-to-eight week training, having joined RAF Bentwaters on December 1, 1980. Warren later produced Air Force documentation that showed he had completed his training and was assigned to official duties on December 11, 1980. However, evidence has since come to light in January 2017, that two of Warren's documents had likely been forged (See Note 634).

How Warren then became known to the UK researchers was through Jenny Randles.[cdxcviii]

Another brief account that emerged in April 1984 was that of Sergeant Adrian Bustinza. His account later made it into the book by Jenny Randles, *From Out of the Blue* (1992) under the pseudonym "Alan Benson." Sgt. Adrian Bustinza had also come to the attention of Larry Fawcett and Dot Street through Larry Warren. Apparently, even though her phone bill ran into hundreds of pounds, Dot Street would phone Fawcett in the States regularly so that both could share what they had on the case, and this is how she

learned that Warren had mentioned Adrian Bustinza by his asking Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood to find Adrian Bustinza in order to back up his story (Bruni, pp. 97 – 98).

On page 139 of *Left at East Gate*, we are told Warren had supplied Fawcett with Bustinza's phone number. Also, Warren had mentioned Sergeant Adrian Bustinza twice on the phone to *News of the World* reporter, Keith Beabey, who was visiting Dot Street's home when the call to Larry Warren was made late in the evening of September 28, 1983.[cdxcix] Much of what ended up in the published literature on the case attributed to Bustinza had already been transcribed by researchers Ray Boeche, Scott Colborn, and Larry Fawcett from the phone interviews they had conducted with Bustinza some six months earlier in April 1984, and then cross-referenced with whatever information the investigators and authors of these publications (mainly, Randles, Butler and Street) were able to gather from the other witnesses and people in the area surrounding the twin bases.

Since his story was published in the *News of the World*, as a result of his coming forward to meet with Larry Fawcett during the Spring of 1983, Warren had been the only person willing to speak out publicly about the Rendlesham Forest Incident (known back then as the "Bentwaters/Woodbridge UFO incident"). But this was largely because Warren had the advantage over the primary witnesses of having been discharged from the Air Force and was now back in the States to say whatever he liked.

At this time, and until the early '90s, the primary witnesses involved in the incidents – some of whom had been interrogated and were still working for the USAF – could not say anything about what they had experienced or witnessed in public. While the world was unknowingly waiting to hear the real truth about the incidents from the primary witnesses who had been there, Larry Warren was active and busy doing interviews with the media, and had appeared on BBC TV, Nippon TV in Japan, and the Cable News Network in the States.[d]

The Testimony of Adrian Bustinza ("Alan Benson")

As mentioned, Sgt. Adrian Bustinza was the D-Flight, Security Police 'Acting Commander' at RAF Woodbridge at the time of the incidents –

information that had emerged through the several interviews conducted by investigators Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, beginning with the first phone call to Adrian Bustinza on April 11, 1984, and ending with the last contact the two investigators had with him on April 25, 1984.

Apparently, Boeche began the phone conversation on April 14, 1984 by reading the copy of Lt. Col. Halt's memo to Bustinza, asking him if it was accurate.[di] Oddly, Bustinza became fixated on the disturbed animals from the part in the memo, which reads: *"As the patrolmen approached the object, it maneuvered through the trees and disappeared. At this time the animals on a nearby farm went into a frenzy."* Even though in his memo Halt was describing what had happened on the 'first night' and not the night that Bustinza was involved, Bustinza responded with:

> "That's about right because I remember the animals very clearly because I bumped into the animals myself . . . For a while there, we sort of tried to forget everything and joked around about the animals . . . But I was kind of glad I bumped into the animals!"[dii]

This gives us some insight into Adrian Bustinza's state of mind at the time, and possibly shows how traumatized he had been by the incidents. Gently encouraged by Ray Boeche, Bustinza opened up a little more. Much of what Bustinza had told Boeche and Larry Fawcett in April 1984 regarding the first stages of the incident – i.e., how he got involved, who he was with, his handling of the lightalls on the night of the incident, etc., – has already been cited in previous chapters, so we will return to the strange "yellow mist-like object" Bustinza said he had witnessed on the night when Col. Halt and SSgt. Monroe Nevels were involved, and which we had first introduced in Chapter 8: *UAP Activity.*

Based on his phone call conversations with Bouche and Colborn, Adrian Bustinza said that he and the men with him were following the lighted object which was moving through the trees. And although this is quoted as having happened earlier, based on Bustinza's chronology – which does not always follow in the right order – this could only have been AFTER Sgt. Bustinza and his patrol had refuelled the lightalls *a second time.* As we have now established, after again failing to get the lightalls to work, Bustinza then returned to the landing site area in the forest to catch up with Halt's patrol –

the object being searched for being the same red-orange-yellow “fiery” ball of light seen by Col. Halt and his team, which of course consisted of MSgt. Ball and Lt. Englund.

Adrian Bustinza said that while searching, they came upon a “mist-like-object” about two-or-three feet off the ground, adding that it was yellow and looked like dew, but like nothing he’d ever seen before.[diii] He says that he and the others with him ignored it, saying that they were more worried about the [other] object to see if they could locate it. This was obviously the red oval object, that was observed to have moved into the tree line by Halt and his team and which was seen to be “blinking like an eye.” (Again, see Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*.)

Later, Bustinza said he saw the yellow mist-like object again, saying it was hovering low, about knee height, and was moving up and down, anywhere between ten and twenty feet.[div] Bustinza then added a curious descriptive detail, as was quoted by Ray Boeche: “The thing had a pulsating red light on top of it, and several blue lights underneath it.”[dv] This is much like the description Airman Burroughs had given to the “lights” he claimed to have seen in his witness statement and accompanying sketch, and which SSgt. Jim Penniston had also described from 160 feet (50 meters) away when approaching the craft he encountered on the first night. We will again quote Jim Penniston from Chapter 3: *Discovery*:

> “Again, we observed what seemed to be a bright, white/yellowish dome of light clearly emanating from something on the forest floor, but now we could see a strong red light pulsating just above whatever it was, and a bluish-white light shining beneath.”

As already mentioned, what is interesting here is the comparison Bustinza’s “yellow mist-like object” makes with the “yellowish/white, dome of light” that Jim Penniston says was generated around the craft he encountered – with only the red and blue lights visible on approach.

During his interviews with Boeche and Colborn, Adrian Bustinza then adds that every time they got close to the object, it would move away from them through the trees, then they would try and catch up to it again. Finally, he and the others followed it into a clearing where it had landed:

> “Suddenly the object was just there. It was a dark silver-colored metal, with plenty of rainbow colored lights on

> it. I couldn't tell if something was breaking the light up, like a prism, or if that was the actual color of the lights."[dvi]

Again, this dramatic and sudden transformation from an indistinct, abstract, yellowish, mist-like object with a red light on top and blue lights beneath, to a solid, dark, metal object with "colored lights on it," also correlates with what Jim Penniston described in Chapter 3: *Discovery:*

> "From my perspective, this distinctive dome or 'bubble' of white/yellowish light that had been obscuring and distorting my view of the object then seemed to 'collapse' around me as I entered it. [. . .] I then saw what appeared to be a *fully-intact, black triangular, streamlined, craft* [. . .] while colored shapes and globular forms of light were emerging and moving throughout the surface of the body."

However, according to Bustinza, unlike the craft that Jim Penniston had encountered, the object that had emerged in front of him was of a tremendous size, adding that it surprised him that it was able to fit into the clearing – the location of which hasn't really been determined. And again, unlike the triangular craft that Jim Penniston encountered, Bustinza then describes a typical, disk-shaped craft . . . *"round, circular shape,"* adding that he hates to say, like a *"plate, but it was thicker at the center than it was at the edge."*

Bustinza then says that he and the other patrol members were ordered to form a perimeter around the object (presumably by Lt. Col. Halt),[dvii] each standing at about fifteen-feet from each other. Bustinza then tells Boeche and Colborn, that he recalled two British policemen ("Bobbies") present in the field and mentions Colonel Halt, who was a Lieutenant Colonel at the time:

> "There were two British policemen, two Bobbies, standing off to the side taking photographs of the object. Col. Halt came to myself and another Airman, and told us to approach the Bobbies and that Col. Halt came over to him and another Airman, and told them to approach the Bobbies."[dviii]

Bustinza had told Boeche and Colborn that these two British policemen had some very sophisticated camera equipment, adding that Halt told him and the other airman standing next to him to take the camera/film equipment away from the policemen. Apparently, when they confiscated the film and turned it

over to Colonel Halt, he put it into a plastic bag, saying it would be dealt with at a higher level of command.[dix]

Five days after telling Boeche and Colborn that two "Bobbies" were standing off to the side taking photographs of the object, on April 20, 1984, Bustinza told Larry Fawcett that he "did recall the bobbies." After Fawcett asked what they were doing, Bustinza said that they were in the background and then added:

> "As a matter of fact, I don't think they were even close enough to see there was a craft. They were in the wooded area. I guess they were like a perimeter security."[dx]

The contradiction evident in his given accounts regarding the two British policemen tells us that something is not right and that Adrian Bustinza is not a credible witness, and this should be apparent to everyone who has gone through these testimonies and recorded statements.[dxi] Bustinza also claimed that two American Law Enforcement officers had also taken photographs, but he couldn't recall their names – adding that he didn't know where the film went . . . "it might have gone to the photo lab on base, or it might have gone to intelligence."[dxii]

After observing the object for about thirty minutes, Bustinza said it suddenly took off. *"It was gone in a flash,"* he said, *"almost like it just disappeared,"* adding that when it left, he and the other airmen were hit by a cold blast of wind which blew toward them for five-or-ten seconds. *"It was a really scary feeling. . . . I was just frozen in place at first . . . my life actually passed in front of my eyes."*[dxiii] Again, this is what SSgt. Penniston and Burroughs had experienced on the first night, although Penniston says that when the craft "took off in a blink of an eye," there was no air displacement and no sound.

When Boeche and Colborn asked Bustinza if he had seen the craft's occupants, he said he would neither deny nor confirm seeing them, but when pressed, he said, *"I saw something very strange, stranger than the craft landing, and all the rest."* During the first phone conversation with Ray Boeche on April 11, 1984, Bustinza was asked about the presence of Wing Commander Gordon Williams on the night of the incident, which the Air Force has consistently denied. Bustinza then said, "I know Williams was there, because I was standing right next to him." Then three days later on

April 14, 1984, Boeche asked again about the presence of Wing Commander Gordon Williams during the incident, and this time Bustinza seems to have chosen his words carefully, saying, *"At some point, I don't remember when, Col. Williams arrived at the site."*[dxiv] As noted, J. D. Ingalls told SSgt. Jim Penniston that Wing Commander Gordon Williams was included in the UFO containment (cover) story he had already been spreading around the bases and in the surrounding area during January of 1981.

The Testimonies of "Art Wallace" (Larry Warren)

"Well, I did change the story and I did lie intentionally twice."
"I lied about the fact that I blacked out."
"If I said that, then I lied for some reason."

Extracts from Larry Warren's interview with Linda Moulton Howe and Benton Jamison, May 18, 1986, (*Earthfiles.com*).

Larry Warren has long said that the incident he claims to have been involved in began on the evening of Sunday, December 28, 1980. In the first account published in the *News of the World* on October 2, 1983 by their American reporter, Bob Smith, the date given was December 27, 1980.

During his phone conversation with *News of the World* reporter Keith Beabey, only hours after he had given his story to Bob Smith, it was determined that the incident was December 29, 1980. Then in the book, *Clear Intent* by Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood (May 1984), which dedicates four pages to the Rendlesham Incident, the date given was December 30, 1980.

Actually, Warren has said that he has never really been certain of the date and is quoted as having said that the event happened "sometime after Christmas, but before New Year's Eve, 1980."[dxv] Warren's specific date of Sunday, December 28, as later given in the book he co-authored with Peter Robbins, *Left at East Gate* (1997), along with the confusing chronology of events in the accounts given by Adrian Bustinza, has led various researchers to entertain the theory that there was a *fourth night of events*, beginning on the evening of Sunday, December 28, and ending during the early hours of Monday, December 29, 1980.

However, from what Larry Warren has described in the numerous

interviews he has conducted since he first came forward in the Spring of 1983, the events he claims to have been involved in – and it's remarkable that this event happened during the only security shift he had worked on all the time he was stationed at Bentwaters – seems to have taken place on the 'third night' (December 27/28), which also involved Lt. Col. Halt, SSgt. Nevels, MSgt. Ball, Lt. Englund, Sgt. Adrian Bustinza, and Airman Burroughs.

In fact, it could only have been the 'third night,' because during a radio interview hosted by John Burroughs and Linda Moulton Howe in 2015, Warren had said that when he got to the staging area in the forest on the night he claims he had his UFO encounter, he saw Lt. Col. Halt and Lt. Bruce Englund walk off together to the landing site, and that he could see their activity [through the gaps in the pines] when they were examining the trees at that site.[dxvi] Also, during the same radio interview, and when he was talking about the people he saw out at the staging area in the forest, Warren told Burroughs directly, *"I did see you . . . you can't miss you."*[dxvii]

It is evident in the literature on the Rendlesham case and also stated by Burroughs himself, that he (Burroughs) had only been present during the events that happened on the nights of December 25/26 and 27/28, 1980, and seeing as Warren could not have been present during the first night's events, [dxviii] he could only be talking about the 'third night,' which has now been established to have taken place between Saturday afternoon/evening (December 27) and the early hours of Sunday morning (December 28). This evidential fact has to be made clear before we even begin to analyze Warren's account.

Now, when reading through the different versions of his account, it becomes clear that Warren had heard about the events of the 'third night' from Sgt. Bustinza, who is said to have been his rooming companion at the dorms on the Bentwaters base. Bustinza is really the "airman" that Warren referred to in his letter to his mother, written January 6, 1981. And as we will see, this conclusion has not gone unnoticed by researchers and investigators of the Rendlesham Incident. Even Warren is on record as having said that he got most of the story from a traumatized Adrian Bustinza, who told him about his own experiences and what he witnessed on what could only have been the 'third night,' involving Col. Halt and SSgt. Monroe Nevels[dxix] – but more on this later – suffice to say that Warren says that he simply combined Bustinza's account with his own – emphasizing that he was still present during the incident with which he claims to have been involved. However, as

we will see, there is much that is amiss and just plain 'off' in Warren's account, as the story he relates is seen to collide in mid-air with the events as described by Col. Halt, Monroe Nevels, and John Burroughs on the same night, and just doesn't fit. It does not even match what Bustinza has said, and over the years, Bustinza, in different interviews and public posts, has vacillated between stating Warren was NOT present on the night in question, and stating that Warren WAS there.

Among the online 'Rendlesham Incident' files, belonging to CAUS member and UFO researcher, Barry Greenwood, there is a typed testimony titled: *The Story of Art Wallace.*[dxx] This is obviously an account given by Larry Warren. The document is undated but is most likely the transcript of a taped interview conducted with Warren by Larry Fawcett. It contains more information than the "Art Wallace" testimony published in May 1984 in the book *Clear Intent*, and includes alien or humanoid-type "beings" and other sensationalized details, which is more in keeping with what was later presented in *Left at East Gate* – so it may date to a time after the book *Clear Intent* was published.

Throughout this chapter, we will refer to this testimony as *'The Art Wallace Story.'* In this testimony, Warren says he began his shift with 'D-Flight' as a security guard for the 81st Security Police Squadron on RAF Bentwaters at 10:30 p.m. Warren begins his account by saying that after doing 'guard mount,'[dxxi] he was then dropped off and positioned at post number eighteen on the perimeter of the Bentwaters base.[dxxii] Warren also added the following information: "My flight destinations was D-Flight, Sargent Ball was the Shift Commander, my reporting official was Senior Airman Greg Batrum [Battram]."[dxxiii]

During his phone conversation with UK reporter Keith Beabey of the *News of the World* on September 28, 1983, Warren says that they [he and the others in D-Flight] were "grouped at 10'oclock" that evening. In his 1997 book, *Left at East Gate*, Warren attempts to clarify things and be more specific, saying that he joined the rest of D-Flight at 10:00 p.m., then did 'guard mount'; checked out his M16 rifle from the armory at 11:15 p.m., and was dropped off at his post for his seven-hour shift, which began at 11:30 p.m., and ended at 6:30 a.m.[dxxiv] Also in 'The Art Wallace Story' testimony, Warren is quoted as having said that Post 18 was manned during a "State of Readiness" or "Alert." In *Left at East Gate*, Warren writes that this post was

at the end of the Bentwaters flight line at the very end of the runway. Warren adds that he was alone but did have a Motorola radio for communications, and further adds that the weather was mild for late December . . . "the temperature was in the forties. It was a very dark night with no moon visible and a few wisps of clouds."[dxxv]

In "The Art Wallace Story," Warren says that after maybe half-hour to an hour while at his post, he then heard communications over the walkie-talkie coming from the WSA (Weapons Storage Area) tower on RAF Bentwaters, stating they were seeing some sort of red light over the forest at Rendlesham between the twin bases. The light, they said, seemed to be bouncing up and down and could be seen moving into and out of the trees. Warren says that from time to time he did notice some animals (deer) running out of some forested area near the Bentwaters post where he was stationed and which was very close to the forest area.

In *Left at East Gate* (1997), Warren writes:

> "A radio check from Central Security Control would be made to my post every fifteen minutes. I recall having responded to two of them when I overheard a glut of radio transmissions originating from the Bentwaters weapons-storage area's observation tower and the Woodbridge flight tower. The transmissions took place between cops who were observing "some funny-looking lights bobbing up and down" over the forest near Woodbridge base some five miles away. Whatever they saw, they had a great vantage point since the WSA tower is eighty feet high. Cops began making jokes about what was being reported. Our flight chief came on the open channel and warned everyone to stop. I strained to see anything unusual and was frustrated to see nothing. I was not aware that very strange things had been taking place in the base's vicinity on previous nights."[dxxvi]

During his conversation with reporter Keith Beabey on September 28, 1983 – unaware that this conversation was being taped by Rendlesham researcher, Dot Street, and which for us makes it the 'Joker in the pack' of all Warren's accounts over the years – Warren doesn't mention this earlier incident heard over the radio.

In his interview with Boeche and Colborn in April 1984, Adrian Bustinza had named MSgt. Ball as his 'flight chief' for D-Flight, the team Warren said he was with. However, it's possible that Warren is making a reference to Sgt.

Adrian Bustinza, who is on record as having said that he warned everyone to stop talking over the radio. In Chapter 6: *"It's Back,"* we mentioned the 2015 interview Bustinza did on Phenomenon Radio, KGRA. Again, Adrian Bustinza says he had contacted CSC on the Bentwaters base by radio to report the strange lights in the forest that the sentry on the East Gate had seen, and remembers one of the personnel in the 'Whiskey Tower,' which was at the WSA (Weapons Storage Area), had also come on the radio, stating that they too had seen strange lights. Bustinza says that this generated a lot of excitement on the radio, and he had to tell everyone to calm down, saying that they would communicate by landline if they had to. It appears that Warren had mixed up Bustinza with the 'flight chief,' even though Warren is on record elsewhere as having said his 'flight chief' was MSgt. Bobby Ball. (See Notes 521 and 523.)

However, the problem with this particular incident *is the time frame.* From what he says, Warren had heard this communication from the WSA control tower soon after he had been stationed at his post between 11:30 p.m. and 12:00 a.m., as given in his account in *Left at East Gate*. In the account given by Col. Halt – and it is evident by what he said into his mini-cassette recorder – the red-orange-yellow, lighted object was observed moving inside the tree line of the forest, zig-zagging and moving up and down, after the animals had begun making a noise having been disturbed by something at 1:48 a.m. The light was then likely observed around 2:00 a.m. Also, the commotion over the radio net made by those in the WSA control tower did not really begin until around 3:00 a.m., when three lighted objects were observed in the sky making what had been described as a "grid search" over the Bentwaters base. These separate incidents, which Warren seems to have mistakenly placed together at an earlier time, along with the animals running out of the forest, appear to be based on what Warren had heard from one or two people who were there that night, *and namely, Sgt. Adrian Bustinza,* as will become evident.

In "The Art Wallace Story," Warren says that a "police security, pick-up truck" had pulled up at his post. He was then told to get into the back of the pick-up truck, while a man had got out to take his place at the post. In the back of the truck was a black senior airman. Warren was then told he was going with them to the motorpool to pick up some lighting equipment, which he later discovered were lightalls.

We are not told why Warren was selected over the airman whom he says took his place at the post.[dxxvii] However, in "The Airman's Story," based on the interview Bob Smith did with Warren (published October 2, 1983), and in the book *Clear Intent* by Fawcett and Greenwood (May, 1984), it is stated that "Art Wallace" (Warren) was ordered into a "Jeep," NOT a pick-up truck, which we would assume to be the trucks used to carry lightalls. There is of course a vast noticeable difference between the two vehicles, and if Warren really had been picked up from his post as claimed, he shouldn't have had any trouble keeping with just one of these vehicles in the accounts he had given in his interviews.

During his phone conversation with reporter Keith Beabey on September 28, 1983 – the same day he gave his interview to Bob Smith, who reported in the *News of the World* that "Art Wallace" (Warren) was picked up in a "Jeep" – Warren said that it was Sgt. Bustinza who had arrived with "another officer" (whom Warren will later say was Lt. Englund, as Adrian Bustinza had also said he was riding with Englund), and this time in a "truck" . . . and that he was told to get into the back of the "pick-up," having been relieved by "another kid, another individual" who took his place.[dxxviii] Warren then told Keith Beabey that one of the patrol had told him he was to go with them to the motorpool to pick up a lightall (not lightalls) and that they then proceeded to the base motor pool on the Bentwaters base.

As noted in Chapter 6: *"It's Back,"* based on what Adrian Bustinza had said on the 2015 Phenomenon radio show, it is now fairly-well established that before the events of the third night had begun and before Lt. Col. Halt had arrived, Sgt. Bustinza was ordered by Lt. Englund and MSgt. Ball to take a pick-up truck from the staging area in the forest and collect up the lightalls that had already been deployed at the staging area and take them to the Woodbridge base to refuel them – *NOT the Bentwaters base.* It was much later, and just before the UAP activity began, that Bustinza was ordered again to go and refuel the lightalls and at the same time also pick up fresh lightalls from the Bentwaters base (see Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*.)

As already noted, in his interview with Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn on April 14, 1984, Adrian Bustinza had said that he and his patrol went to Bentwaters and grabbed *two* lightalls, but Bustinza may have been referring to the *second time* he was ordered to refuel the lightalls and also pick up fresh ones from Bentwaters, which was between 1:30 and 2:00 a.m. So, for Warren to say that he was picked up in a Jeep at Bentwaters by Bustinza between

11:30 p.m., and midnight, as reported in these early published accounts, is wrong, as Bustinza would have been on his way to Woodbridge in the pick-up truck as ordered by Lt. Englund. It was MSgt. Ball who commandeered Bustinza's CJ-7 Jeep to go and pick up Lt. Col. Halt. Similarly, from what he had heard from Bustinza, it looks as if Warren had also mixed up the chronology and details of Bustinza's two trips with the lightalls. Not only that, his account is not consistent – having stated that he was picked up in a Jeep and then by a pick-up truck while also stating that another guy had taken his place at the post, while on other occasions he has said that the post was deactivated.

In a live TV interview in 1993, Warren said that the information that he was being picked up was forwarded to him by radio before Bustinza had arrived. He says that Central Security Control had called him, telling him to deactivate his post when a certain Lieutenant Bruce England and sergeant Adrian Bustinza arrived in a vehicle with other personnel, and that he was to go with them to the motor pool and get lightalls, adding that no explanation was given.[dxxix]

In his book, *Left at East Gate* (1997) Warren writes that a security police pickup truck arrived at his post and that Sergeant Adrian Bustinza was driving with Second Lieutenant Englund next to him. He adds that two other Security Police were in the bed of the truck. Then Warren writes that the Lieutenant told him to announce over his Motorola radio that he was being relieved from his post and that he had to wait for clearance from Central Security Control. After CSC acknowledged his request, the post was deactivated, and Bustinza told him to get in the back of the truck, saying they were heading to the Bentwaters motor pool to get lightalls. In these later accounts, no airman had exited the truck to take Warren's place at the post, which was deactivated.

As we can see, Warren's account is not consistent; there are already problems at the beginning.

Next, in the "The Art Wallace Story," Warren says that upon arriving at the base motor pool at Bentwaters, he saw a Captain and a few other enlisted personnel hooking up lightalls to the backs of similar vehicles that were there and that he and others were told to fill up two of the lightalls with gasoline – even though other accounts say the vehicles and lightalls were refuelled at Woodbridge. In any case, Warren says it was very strange because the gauges

on the lightalls were not registering they were full, even though they were full, adding that the Captain then came over and looking at the meter gauge on one of the lightalls, had said, "How come you haven't filled it up yet?"[dxxx] During his phone conversation with reporter Keith Beabey Warren said, that he *"had a bit of a standoff with the officers. They were saying they weren't full when they were."*[dxxxi]

As mentioned in Chapter 6: *"It's Back,"* after we contacted Col. Halt by email to ask him a few questions, Col. Halt wrote back saying that he had been driven to the motor pool to fill up the Jeep with gas and that several cops there were complaining the lightalls needed gas, as they wouldn't run in the forest. Going by the accounts, after Halt had been picked up by MSgt. Ball, Halt was driven to the Woodbridge base to refuel the Jeep, and tells us it was there that he and Ball met the patrol that was refuelling the lightalls (as led by Sgt. Bustinza), and although Halt is not certain, he said that the Jeep he was being driven in by MSgt. Ball may have picked up Sgt. Bustinza from there. (See Chapter 6: *"It's Back"* – especially the account given by the on-duty gas pump attendant, Tony Brisciano, who said he had to drive over to Woodbridge to assist with filling up the vehicles and the lightalls.)

Again, although he knew about this incident, which happened at the Woodbridge gas pumps, it appears that Warren had mistakenly mixed up the details, which he was likely given by someone else who had been where he claims to have been – namely Adrian Bustinza – saying that the lightalls were picked up at Bentwaters and fuelled there, when it looks likely, based on others accounts, that the lightalls had been on the 'pick-up truck' driven by Sgt. Bustinza, having been collected from the staging area in the forest, and from there were taken to Woodbridge and refuelled.

In "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, Warren says that after hooking up the lightalls to the back of the vehicles, they then left the motor pool area and the flight line area to go down to the main gate of RAF Bentwaters, which would, in reality, be the long way into the Rendlesham Forest, adding that this was the way they went. Warren told Keith Beabey that they took the lightalls and met with a convoy at the gate, adding that there were around seven vehicles in total and that they then drove six miles to the East Gate at Woodbridge – again, the long way.

Warren obviously had some knowledge of the area, but his account of having gone with Sgt. Bustinza's patrol to the Bentwaters base to pick up a lightall (or lightalls) soon after having been stationed at his post on the

perimeter of the base at 11:30 p.m., does not fit the timeline we have now determined, based on the various accounts given by others who were there. It seems that with his mention of the motor pool at Bentwaters, a mixed up Warren is referring to the time when Bustinza was ordered to refuel the lightalls that had been deployed in the forest *a second time*, and when Bustinza was told to also pick up a fresh couple of lightalls from the motorpool at the Bentwaters base. However, this second trip involving the lightalls was much later and closer to the time between 1:30 and 2:00 a.m.

In "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, Warren says that after passing the East Gate at Woodbridge, he saw flares in the road and that some civilian cars had stopped on the side of the road. Warren says: "I saw somebody who I did not recognize as living in the same dorm as I was telling someone in the car – later a woman and child – that there was unexploded ordnance in the area," and adds that at the other end of the road block he "saw a similar set of fires and more vehicles."[dxxxii] In his 1994 interview with Omar Fowler, Warren is quoted as having said that he could see flares and red surveyor tape around the trees and he and the five guys he was walking with into the woods, along with a Lieutenant, all heard over the radio: "We want you guys to avoid those hot spots." Warren adds that to him that meant radiation areas.[dxxxiii]

None of these details, which suggests a much larger planned operation that night using more personnel than was necessary, were given in the accounts of Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels.

In "The Art Wallace Story," Warren says that after turning down a narrow dirt track, they drove up to a staging area where there was an armoury vehicle with gun racks on it and a number of other security police personnel. It was there that he and the other airmen were stopped and told to leave the vehicle and not to converse or talk to anyone. Warren adds that after dismounting the vehicle they were told to turn in their M-16s and give the numbers off the M-16 rifles, which had been assigned to them throughout their time on the base.

During his phone conversation with Keith Beabey, Warren said that it was about half a mile to a mile from the gate (East Gate) that they turned down a dirt road (one of the forest's logging roads) and that there was "a circular area, a staging area, where all the vehicles were parked" and that was as far as they could go. Warren adds that they all had M16 rifles, and that he checked in his with the armorer, and that they had no side arms, adding that they then took flashlights and broke up into four-man groups. In "The Art Wallace Story," Warren said that one radio was assigned to them, adding that

they were told by the commanders, who were a little way ahead of them, that in the clearing they could see some very bright lights.

As was noted, it would be difficult to accept this if the lightalls deployed in the forest were *not working.* However, in the same testimony Warren explains that a number of lightalls were not working, but that he did see some hand-carried, "Big-Jim" type lights or lanterns. These were never mentioned by the witnesses involved in the third night's events – only flashlights were mentioned – although it could be possible that these lanterns may also have been used. Warren also says that he could see silhouettes of some individuals out that way moving around with some kind of fog or very bright light coming through the forest, adding that it brightened the forest.

How many personnel were out there?

In "The Airman's Story," published in the *News of the World*, Warren as "Art Wallace" is quoted by reporter Bob Smith as having said, "*The clearing was full of RAF and USAF security people . . . about 200 of them."*[dxxxiv] During his phone conversation with Keith Beabey some hours after his interview with Bob Smith, when Beabey asked how many personnel were out there, Warren was taped saying: *"Would have to say at least one hundred people. I don't want to say two or three hundred . . . yeah, there were quite a few."*[dxxxv]

During the interview Larry Fawcett did with Adrian Bustinza on April 20, 1984, Fawcett asked how many personnel did Bustinza figure were there. Bustinza's reply was: *"Oh, I estimate at least thirty people."* Fawcett: *"Thirty?"* Bustinza: *"At least thirty."* Then in *Left and East Gate* (1997), Warren appears to have thought it sensible and more realistic to bring the number of personnel down, writing that there were *"forty-odd other men already in the field, just looking at the bizarre object on the ground in front of them."*[dxxxvi] Finally, in the "Earth Mystery News" interview he did with Sid Goldberg in 2016, Warren said, "*there would have been about thirty to thirty-four. There were a lot of off-duty people that were showing up then."*[dxxxvii] Again, when asked this information or when he attempts to address it, Warren's re-telling of how many people were involved while reciting his account each time is not consistent.

Disk-Shaped Craft OR Triangular Craft?

Continuing with "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, Warren says that when he got to the edge of the clearing, Sgt. Bustinza was standing to his left, and

that Bustinza had said that this was just like what had happened to him in Alaska. Warren says he remembered Bustinza saying this, but then adds that apparently Bustinza had meant California, and that he wasn't certain of this and could have been mistaken. Even this small detail does much to cast doubt on the truth of Larry Warren's testimony, as it is evident that Bustinza had discussed his previous UFO sighting at Mather Air Force Base, California with Warren and others before this incident and that Warren had misheard what Bustinza had said and got it wrong, as Bustinza's sighting had nothing to do with his tour of duty at the USAF Air Force listening station in Alaska, which was merely Bustinza's last assignment before being stationed at RAF Bentwaters.[dxxxviii]

In *Left at East Gate*, Warren again mentions Bustinza telling him the same, *"As we approached the field, Bustinza said to me in a half whisper, 'This is just like what happened to me in Alaska.'"*[dxxxix]

Next, in "The Airman's Story" published in the *News of the World*, "Art Wallace" (Warren) is quoted by Bob Smith, describing what he saw in the clearing:

> "Then we saw an object it appeared to be resting on the ground and looked like a giant aspirin. It was transparent. We were in awe, never having seen anything like this."[dxl]

In "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, what Warren claims Bustinza had said to him precedes what Warren reports next:

> "What we saw in front of the us was this disc shaped fog on the ground it had no certain form but it resembled a disc very low to the ground maybe a foot in height but attached to the ground. There was a fog inside . . . ."[dxli]

As we can see, Warren describes a "disc-shaped fog," and then later a "mist on the ground." Although he doesn't say it was yellow in this testimony, it seems to have been based on Bustinza's "yellow mist-like object," which in turn seems to have been somehow based on Jim Penniston's dome of light . . . "white/yellowish, effervescent blur."

However, during his phone conversation with Keith Beabey on September 28, 1983, Warren describes this mist or fog as being of a "yellowish glow:"

> "It was sort of a Yellowish glow and it glowed from inside, it was like there was a fog inside it was like it was encased in Plexiglass. It was about a foot off the ground, it wasn't hovering it was uh, flat on the ground. I think I was just in awe. [. . .] I only can describe it as an aspirin, maybe like a Plexiglass cut out thing, maybe 20 ft. across and very low to the ground. It didn't strike me as being Alien or anything, uh, inside . . . ."[dxlii]

And now with Warrens' description of a yellowish, glowing fog encased inside something that looked like "plexiglass" some 20-feet in diameter, we are closer to what Jim Penniston and Richard Bertolino had described during the initial stages of the incident on the first night – i.e., a strange glowing white/yellowish light in the forest as observed over the canopy of the forest. Again, the light didn't diffuse outwards from the source naturally as one would expect, but resembled a light shining inside an upside glass bowl/dome. (See Note 61.) It seems that with his description of the yellow mist or fog being contained inside "plexiglass," Warren was attempting to describe this same lighting effect.

In the book, *Clear Intent* by Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood (May 1984), the yellow mist-like object is also described by "Wallace" (Warren), and as much as it was presented in the *News of the World* . . . like a "transparent [soluble] aspirin."

In his taped conversation with Keith Beabey, Warren said the mist/fog-like-object was 20-feet in diameter and "flat on the ground" and then "very low to the ground." During Warren's hypnosis session on October 17, 1983, conducted by Fred Max and organized by Larry Fawcett, Warren is asked "What is its diameter? Warren replies, "It's about 25 feet across." In the Fawcett and Greenwood book, *Clear Intent*, Warren is quoted as having said that the object was hovering one foot off the ground, *was 50-feet in diameter* and that he and others approached it to within 10 feet:

> "The "something" was an object – taking the appearance of a transparent "aspirin" tablet, hovering about 1-foot off-the-ground. Wallace estimated that the object was 50-feet in diameter and had a bright, pulsating, yellow mist inside. It did not move from its position. Wallace and some of the men approached the object to within about 10-feet."[dxliii]

In the interview with Omar Fowler in 1994, Warren said, "It was self-

illuminated. you could see through it at times" and "I can only describe it as a "solidified mass of light."[dxliv] If the transparent, plexiglass, yellow mist-like aspirin-object was 50 feet in diameter, it would have required ten men surrounding it at "15-feet intervals," as Adrian Bustinza had described the scene as claimed.

In *Left at East Gate*, Warren writes that the object was one foot in height and yellow-green:

> "They [numerous military personnel] seemed to be walking around something on the ground, something illuminated. It would grow bright enough to light up the forest, then dim. [. . .] Now, I could see what was in the field: it looked like a ground fog, but was somehow lit up from within. It glowed very brightly, with the definition of a roughly shaped circle approximately one foot in height. It was yellow-green and at times appeared almost transparent. that the light was yellow-green and at times appeared almost transparent."[dxlv]

According to Warren in later interviews, he identifies the site of this yellowish mist, or *contained* fog-like object, to have been in the lower part of the farmer's field, which was adjacent to and to the right (south) of the farmhouse/home of the Boast family. This was the same field that Lt. Col. Halt and SSgt. Monroe Nevels had said they saw the red-orange-yellow lighted object hovering in the air dripping what appeared to be molten metal. *Surely, this cannot be the same thing described by Col. Halt and Nevels?* The yellow mist or fog-like object, which Warren said was 50-feet in diameter, was laid out flat upon the ground, according to both Warren and Bustinza.

In his conversation with Keith Beabey, Warren continues with what happened next:

> ". . . I could see an individual to my right with a camera and also a little further down the tree line an individual with a camera on a tri-pod. I heard some radio communication which I believe to have been from possibly aircraft or a helicopter of some sort. It seemed that no time had passed . . . ."[dxlvi]

Both Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels deny most strongly that nothing military was flying in the sky during the 'third night' they were involved, and not on any night during these events. As noted, like Adrian Bustinza, Warren also

mentions people with cameras, and in "The Airman's Story," published in the *News of the World*, Warren as "Wallace" is quoted as having said, "Several movie cameras had been set up" – which has since been seen as an important part of his account.[dxlvii] However, Bustinza didn't mention 'motion movie cameras' to Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn.

This inclusion by Warren seems to have been based on Steve Roberts' (J. D. Ingalls) story, as mentioned in Jenny Randles' article, "The Rendlesham Forest Mystery," *Flying Saucer Review* (Vol. 26, No. 6, March 1981), where Randles writes that the base newspaper had heard about the UFO in the woods, "*and went to the scene armed with still and movie cameras, and in fact is said to have filmed the object on the ground!"*

In the testimony by "Art Wallace" that was sent to Jenny Randles by Barry Greenwood, and which was later published in the Fawcett and Greenwood book, *Clear Intent*, Warren is quoted as having said: "*The first thing the men noticed when they had a clear view was that large movie cameras had been placed surrounding a field in the clearing."* This is one of the reasons why Randles suspected Warren had read her article, which had been around since March 1981, and had based his story on what he had read.

Red Light

Continuing with Warren's conversation with Keith Beabey:

> ". . . but about that time to the west I could see what looked like a pin point of red light to the left side of a pine tree in the far distance which would have made it over the North Sea. I could hear what I thought was aircraft talking about this light maybe saying "Here it comes, here it comes" something in that effect. The light did not seem to move it just seemed to get more intensively bright but before we could really tell it swooped down over the field and came right up to us and sat right over this mist on the ground."[dxlviii]

Warren then goes on to say that the red light, which was the size of a basketball, then hovered above the mist/fog-like object on the ground some 20 feet in the air.

Again, this seems to be a hybrid of: 1) the red light above the object which had blue lights beneath it seen by Burroughs and Penniston from 160 feet (50 meters) away, 2) the object that Bustinza claimed to have seen – again a yellow mist-like object with a red light on top and blue lights beneath, and 3)

the same red-orange-yellow "fiery" lighted object that Lt. Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels described in the farmer's field and in the tree line. Like Col. Halt, who said he observed the lighted object suddenly explode into five smaller white lights which then disappeared, Warren said that the red object hovering over the plexiglass-contained, an aspirin-shaped, yellow fog or mist-like object, also exploded into shards of light and that he was almost blinded by the light that issued from this "explosion," which gave the effect of a rainbow of cascading lights down onto the surface of the aforementioned object. This is how Warren described it in his phone conversation with reporter Keith Beabey:

> "As we were watching this red light burst. It seemed to explode, but silently into multi colours. It's very hard to describe, but it just burst, and it went down onto this yellow thing on the ground. [. . .] It did this maybe in two seconds or so. And right after the light and all that cleared, there was a ship on the ground at the same spot as that yellow object. Just like that."[dxlix]

A Solid Machine/Craft Appears

Again, Warren describes the same dramatic transformation from something indescribably abstract and unspecified into a solid machine, ship or craft. During his interview on the Japanese NTV Special documentary (October 1984), Warren as "Art Wallace" says that before their eyes appeared an "alien space craft."

> "And it was transparent and it was like a yellowish mist inside it. This thing came down, the red light over it, and sat there maybe two seconds. It was just a ball of light in the air, maybe twenty feet off the ground or thirty feet, and it dispersed into a multitude of colors, and they all seemed to fall on top of this thing, and before our eyes – uh, its almost indescribable but there was a craft, an alien space craft or whatever."[dl]

Like the time distortion effects experienced by Penniston and Burroughs, Warren also describes the same, saying: ". . . and just every movement was distorted very slow and thought and voice was at half speed."[dli]

In "The Art Wallace Story" testimony,' Warren then says he saw a huge *"triangular-shaped"* craft emerge from this explosion of light, which again is based on the landed triangular-shaped craft that Jim Penniston encountered

on the third night. Halt and Nevels never mentioned anything about a large triangular craft, and especially not in the way that Warren had described it – although others, like the personnel in the air-traffic and WSA control towers, did come forward later and said that through binoculars they saw triangular craft within the indistinct spheres of light that were flying around above them on that night.

In Fawcett and Greenwood's book, *Clear Intent* (May 1984), Warren as "Wallace" is quoted as having said the craft that suddenly appeared in place of the red light and the aspirin-shaped object was a "domed disc" with "delta wings."

> "Suddenly, in the place of the red light and the aspirin-shaped object, another vehicle appeared. Wallace said it was a domed disc, bright white in color, with an intricately detailed surface much like the models used in movies like "Star Wars" and "Close Encounters". It had 2 appendages on 3 the lower flange of the disc which seemed to be the beginning of delta wings but not quite."[dlii]

In *Left at East Gate*, is this description:

> "The explosion produced no noticeable heat. But now, right in front of me was a machine occupying the spot where the fog had been. It was big and almost the shape of a pyramid. *At the top of the object was that same off-red glow.* The main body was pearl white, with a rainbow-color effect. Its image was constantly distorting; its shape was best seen by peripheral vision. *At the base was a bank of extremely bright cobalt-blue lights.* Below that, I thought I could make out what looked like dark landing gear. Covering the entire surface were what looked like boxes, pipes, and strange extensions. The thing looked solid and very heavy. I'll never understand why, but it seemed old and advanced at the same time. With no identifying markings, flags, windows, or doors, it was unlike anything I'd ever seen."[dliii] [Our emphasis.]

Again, we have the red light on top of the craft and the blue lights beneath. Warren's story appears to be a hybrid mixture of the first night's events – i.e., the explosion of light, and then the emergence of a landed, triangular-shaped craft, as was described by SSgt. Jim Penniston, and the third night's events with the explosion of the red lighted-object in the air observed in the same

farmer's field location.

Like the solid craft that Jim Penniston claims to have touched, Warren says that the triangular, or pyramid-shaped "space craft" that had emerged in front of him and the other airmen, was a "definite vehicle of solid form," but had a "very rough surface with pipes, valves and raised blocks of some sort on it;" had three landing gear and was approximately "15-20 feet across and 15-20 feet in height being taller than it was wide."[dliv] How the craft could be the same height as it was wide – i.e., both being approximately 15-20 feet – but was "taller than it was wide" isn't explained, especially when it was reported in the *News of the World* story that the triangular craft was 20 feet across the bottom with sloping sides up to the top between 12 and 15 feet high, which would make it wider than it was tall! In his interview with Omar Fowler in 1994, Warren says the craft was thirty feet across at the base and that "the sides rose up sharply to about twenty-five feet in height"[dlv] – a huge difference between heights of 25 feet and 12 to 15 feet. In any case, this craft was much smaller than the 50-foot, yellow-mist-like-disc-object, which it replaced.

To be clear on Warren's descriptions of the craft, during Warren's telephone conversation with *News of the World* reporter Keith Beabey, Warren was asked what shape the craft was. Warren answered: *"Um, maybe a triangular shape. It was nothing like a spaceship or a saucer shape, anything like that."*[dlvi] Beabey then asked if it was a delta shape, and Warren responds with: *"In a way. It did not have a smooth surface, it had wings . . . a delta, yes that's right. It looked like it had wings that were bent down towards the ground, but maybe not."*[dlvii] So now we know from where Warren had appropriated the term "delta," which has become a regular term in his description of the craft ever since. Keith Beabey then asks, "What colour was it?" Warren: *"It was like a silverfish white. It just glowed."* Beabey: "Did it look like it was standing on legs? Or was it flat on the ground?" Warren: *"No, I thought it was flat on the ground, but the way the ends were turned down, that could have been supporting it like landing gear, very possible. But I didn't see any giant tripod or anything like that."*[dlviii]

In "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, Warren also gave the same description of the red and blue lights on the craft: "There was a very bright glow of fluorescent glow of red from the top looking down to the bottom. There a very bright fluorescent blue but there was no specific lights as you would imagine a light to be."[dlix]

During his phone interview with Adrian Bustinza on April 20, 1984, Larry Fawcett asked Bustinza to describe what the machine (craft) looked like. Bustinza said that he won't forget it, and it was the first time he had seen something like it, describing the craft as having *"a circular shape"* and that it was flattened *"like a pancake – thick in the middle,"* but tapering, *"narrowing out towards the edges."*[dlx] It was ascertained from what Bustinza had said, and who claims he was standing within six to ten feet from the craft, that the craft was around forty-feet wide and twelve feet in height.

Bustinza added that the lights were so bright he could *"only see certain parts of the craft, and there were a bunch of little gadgets on it too, like some planes got, and other little gadgets"* that he had never seen before.[dlxi] Bustinza said that the colors of the craft were constantly changing – *"different colors, and they just, like, go on and off or go to a lower shade,"* and that when the machine/craft was down on the ground it was a *"blackish grayish."*[dlxii]

Isn't this the same colored light activity that Jim Penniston described with the craft he encountered?

Fawcett, who kept referring to the craft as a machine, asked if it was made of metal, and Bustinza said he was pretty sure it had to be metal. Fawcett asked if it glowed when it took off, and Bustinza said, yes, and that the whole machine/craft turned into a ball of light with a glow around it when it took off.[dlxiii] Again, this is what Jim Penniston had described – the surface of the black triangular craft had transformed into a glowing bright-white-light before taking off.

The Crying Security Policeman/Airman

Something else Warren adds to his account is seeing a security policeman or airman crying. In "The Airman's Story," published in the *News of the World*, Warren as Wallace is quoted as having said: *"We were a bit shook up to come across a medic treating one of our security police who had appeared to*

broken down and was crying."[dlxiv] This was mentioned before the "red ball of light" episode. Warren mentioning that he saw this as he approached the field and that a medic had seen to this security policeman was repeated in Warren's conversation with Keith Beabey, and also in his testimony published in Fawcett and Greenwood's book, *Clear Intent*. However, in "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, Warren states the following, which he places *after* he claims to have seen the mist transform into a craft after the red light exploded over the yellow mist-like object:

> "Some people did break down upon arriving to the scene, I did see somebody crying hysterically and somebody very close to him sent him away possibly Sgt. Ball. Some people ran away when this thing transformed and some again got very irate at these beings, it was not a very controlled situation at all, very high tension."[dlxv]

And lastly, in *Left at East Gate*, Warren writes that it was near the fence line that he saw an airman leaning against a tree, crouched down, head in hands, crying, and that a master sergeant was trying to console him. Well, this part in Warren's account of the upset and crying security policeman also appears to have been taken from what Adrian Bustinza had told Warren, and it's notable the few times Warren had mentioned Master Sergeant Ball, when he is really referring to Sgt. Bustinza. As quoted in Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*, Bustinza said that he recalled a "couple" of airmen that actually cried and said that they were scared, never going back to the point, and he calmed them down and returned them back to the checkpoint.[dlxvi]

Shadows and Blacking Out

In his taped phone conversation with Keith Beabey, Warren said that he and the other airmen had to break up into three or four-man groups (although during another interview, Warren said they split into "five-man groups"[dlxvii]) and that they were ordered by Major Zickler, Chief of the Security Police, to walk towards the object and "circle it" – surround it. As noted, in the testimonies of Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels, Major Zickler was not present in the forest on the third night, nor any other night during these events. Col. Halt is emphatic on this matter, saying that Zickler did not want to get involved and stayed at the Officer's Club. Again, Warren saying Zickler was present seems to be based on what Adrian Bustinza had said to Larry Fawcett during his phone interview on April 20, 1984. Although what Bustinza said

was ambiguous and could be taken either one of two ways, as is usual when he gives his account, it can be construed from the transcript of that discussion that Major Zickler was present in the forest.[dlxviii]

Warren then told Keith Beabey he went forward with his Lieutenant, even though in the "Art Wallace Story" testimony he says he went forward with Sgt. Bustinza. During his conversation with Keith Beabey, Warren says that they stood only a foot away from it. Quote: *"We were only maybe a foot away from it. We were very close."*[dlxix] In other interviews and given accounts, Warren is quoted as having said that they stood within ten feet (specifically "five feet" during his hypnosis session with hypnotist Fred Max on October 17, 1983), also some ten to fifteen feet and fifteen to twenty feet away from the craft. On page 46 of *Left at East Gate*, Warren writes that he was twenty to twenty-five feet away when an officer approached him and Bustinza and asked them both to walk with him very close to the object. Warren says a Disaster-Preparedness man – one of two DP technicians with Geiger counters[dlxx] – led the way with a Geiger counter in hand and that they then got to within ten or fifteen feet of the thing.

Warren then says that as they walked around the craft, they cast shadows onto the side of it, as if the craft "pulled" their shadows onto it, and that every so often they would stop, and they would see their shadows take another step as if there was a strange time-anomaly effect.

In the Fawcett and Greenwood book, *Clear Intent* (May 1984) is the following, based on Warren's account as "Art Wallace":

> "Wallace and the men with him walked around the object and noticed an interesting effect. Their own shadows were cast onto the object, probably the bright "lightalls" in the field." [dlxxi]

Again, the lightalls on the third night were not working, as was reported.

As quoted earlier from "The Airman's Story" published in the *News of the World* (October 2, 1983), Warren, as "Art Wallace," is quoted as having said that after walking around the craft a few times and watching the strange shadow phenomenon, they then stopped still, and it was then that a green light moved down from the top of the "spaceship" and down the side of the craft until it reached [the shadows cast on the side of the craft by] the airman's heads, and that it bounced from one to the other "just like a ball bounces in a video game.

It is then stated that it was at this point that "Wallace" (Warren) had *blacked out*, and the next thing he knew it was 5 a.m., and he was waking up, laying half across his bunk in the dorm – adding that he still had his uniform on and was up to his knees in mud.[dlxxii] Warren as "Wallace" is then quoted as having said that to this day he doesn't know how he got back to the barracks, or what happened after he saw the bouncing green light activity on the side of the craft. He adds that his roommate had said that he had been brought into the room by some people he didn't know, who then dumped him on the bed and left him. (See transcript of "The Airman's Story" in Chapter 11: *Lifeline.*)

Warren's account of having *blacked out* was also given in the *News of the World* update of the story on November 6, 1983, after a hypnosis session he underwent, which was arranged. It was from this hypnosis session, which Warren later said he had faked, that it was discovered that there were SEVEN aliens in total – *not three,* as Warren has always said in his accounts – were seen floating just above the ground.[dlxxiii]

Apparently, after one of them floated over the UFO near to where "Wallace" was standing, he blacked out. The report said that the next thing "Wallace" remembered, he was back in his barracks – finally adding that "Wallace" believes the craft needed repairs after it hit a tree. (See Note 475).

The "black-out" part of Warren's account, which conveniently ended his "recollections" of what happened that night, was also presented in the 1984, Fawcett and Greenwood book, *Clear Intent*:

> "Additionally, the 3rd time they tried this, a light came over the head of a shadow and moved from one head to another. Wallace recalled turning to say a few words to one of the men. The next thing he knew, he woke up in bed, fully dressed and muddy up to his knees. Wallace asked one of his companions in the barracks what time he had come in. He replied 4:00 am. At that point he did not remember what had happened that night."[dlxxiv]

However, in "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, there is no "blacking out" and no "waking up on his bed in his room." In fact, after his account of the "green strobe light" that came down the side of the ship and bounced from head to head of the shadows of each airman, Warren is quoted as having said he and the other airmen had backed away from the craft.[dlxxv]

The fact is, Warren later admitted he lied about this part of his story in

1986, as we will see.

In “The Art Wallace Story” and in his later accounts we find that Warren doesn’t say that he passed out or blacked out because he is then able to tell his story about the three humanoid or alien “beings” and the presence of a commander who communicated with them. This is why in “The Art Wallace Story” testimony Warren states the following in the quote below as a kind of lead up to the presence of this commander *just after* the green strobe light had bounced off the heads of his and the other airmen’s shadows who surrounded the craft:

> “At this point we backed away from the vehicle that was on the ground, upon standing back another vehicle pulled up an acess [sic] road very close to this clearing, some people got out which I knew were very high ranking.”[dlxxvi]

Apparently, as we will see, one of the high-ranking people that got out of the vehicle which pulled up on an access road (logging road) close to the clearing, as claimed by Warren, was Wing Commander, Gordon Williams . . . .

Alien Beings and Commanders

Initially, during Larry Warren’s phone interview on September 28, 1983, with *News of the World* American reporter Bob Smith, based on what he had heard from Warren as “Art Wallace,” Warren is quoted as having said:

> “There were beings aboard. I didn’t see them because I was on the other side of the craft, but others did. They said there were three and they were wearing silver suits . . . .”[dlxxvii]

Later that same day, during his taped phone interview with reporter Keith Beabey, who wrote the headline story in the *News of the World*, Beabey asked Warren if there were any aliens, people, or beings on board.

Quoting Larry Warren, and again, he wasn’t aware the phone call was being taped:

> “OK. Yeah, there was, and I heard that from almost everyone that was involved. They were on the ground and they were on the outside of the craft. They said there

> were three, but I myself don't remember seeing them. I remember feeling a presence to this day that they were there and I think that I couldn't comprehend seeing them and blocked it out of my mind."[dlxxviii]

Bustinza was also evasive about this part of the incident and had told researchers Boeche and Colborn that he wouldn't commit himself to saying he had seen any "beings." However, in "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, which seems to have been taped and transcribed by CAUS assistant director, Larry Fawcett, Warren had said that he *saw* three beings that resembled children:

> "It seemed that there were three things inside this very bright solid light, it wasn't an individual it was just one massive light above the ground and it looked like three children I thought. My mind was saying why were these children here but that's exactly what it was inside a very bright glow of light."[dlxxix]

Apparently, going by this testimony, which isn't dated, it must have been quite some time before Warren had told Larry Fawcett that he had actually seen "beings" or "aliens," as is seemingly evident in this testimony. In the same testimony, Warren even says that he was *close enough to touch the beings:*

> "We stood and looked at these things for awhile at that point I could have probably touched them at one point and then backed off further and further."[dlxxx]

In a later interview with CNN reporter Chuck DeCaro, which was being filmed around the time when *Sky Crash* was published in October 1984, Warren had said that these "beings" – three of them – again looked like children, but dressed in snow suits.[dlxxxi] This gives a possible dating for "The Art Wallace Story" testimony that was kept in Barry Greenwood's files, and which contains a similar narrative to the more detailed account that went into *Left at East Gate*, some thirteen years later.

In the same testimony, Warren said that the three beings communicated with a high-ranking officer on the base, going as far as saying he was certain this officer was Wing Commander Colonel Gordon Williams:

> "One man who I was told first of all was Gordon

> Williams who now possibly maybe would not have been Gordon Williams maybe it was Ted Conrad Base Commander from Woodbridge, I don't know they look similar. To me I would think it was Gordon Williams because I had seen him at close range pervious and after that. They stood and looked just like everyone else was at this thing on the ground. I don't know how much time had passed really but the next thing we noticed was a very bright glow coming around the side of this vehicle. [. . .] They moved somewhat out of the vehicle away from it and Williams or the other officers that were nearby moved very close, I don't know if communication took place this was something I was told by other people and maybe it was a rumor maybe it wasn't, it could have happened. We stood and it was just basically a stare off I mean we just looked and they looked and it didn't seem like they wanted to be there by any means it seemed like it was all quite accidental and were surprised as much as we were."[dlxxxii]

Georgina Bruni said that Warren was the only "witness" *to go public*, claiming that Wing Commander Gordon Williams was involved in the incident, and again, this was a detail that was revealed to Jim Penniston by J. D. Ingalls early in 1981 concerning the containment (cover) story. In his earlier accounts, Warren had said that the senior officer there that night was the Base Commander, which seems to have been based on what he had heard or read in the early accounts given by "Steve Roberts" (J. D. Ingalls), and as reported by Randles, Butler, and Street, but then he changed his story to say that it was Wing Commander Gordon Williams who was out there. Why Ingalls initially cited the Base Commander instead of Williams, which is how he had relayed the containment story to Jim Penniston, remains a mystery.

As we have noted in the chapters about the 'third night,' these details concerning "alien beings" and a communicative Wing/Base Commander on site do not appear anywhere in the testimonies presented by Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels, and it should be noted that like Warren, Adrian Bustinza had also mentioned the Wing Commander Gordon Williams being out there during the night of the incident, telling Boeche and Colborn on April 11, 1984, that he "knew he was there as he was standing right next to him" – even though he had since maintained that it was Lt. Col. Halt who was out there standing with him, as it was Halt who had ordered him and the other airmen to surround the craft that Bustinza said had landed in the field. In his accounts, Bustinza, seems to have confused the Wing Commander, the Base

Commander, and Deputy Base Commander Halt.

" . . . they would possibly have to get the part from another world."

During his phone conversation with Larry Fawcett on April 20, 1984, Bustinza says that after saying "Oh, no, not again," in reference to his involvement in an earlier UFO incident while stationed at Mather AFB, California, he and Lt. Col. Halt began walking towards the craft. Bustinza does not mention being with Larry Warren at all, and instead says Halt started talking, and says it was "instant communication between personnel."[dlxxxiii] Fawcett asks, "Between the men?" Bustinza affirms by saying, "The men." When Fawcett asks the inevitable question, "How about the beings?" Bustinza says that he remembered seeing the craft and could remember Halt talking *but couldn't see who he was talking to* and *"couldn't see nobody."* Bustinza then further explained that he couldn't see who Halt was talking to, but he remembered Halt saying he would contact the electronics division, which Bustinza thought would be CRF, adding "I think it was the call letters for the group."[dlxxxiv]

It's more than likely that when Bustinza said he saw and heard Halt talking but couldn't see to whom he was talking that he was possibly walking behind Halt but wasn't aware that Lt. Col. Halt was talking into his mini-cassette tape recorder or into his radio. When Georgina Bruni interviewed Bustinza in 1998, she also came to this same conclusion. (See: Bruni, p. 191.) It is also possible that Bustinza had misheard what Halt was saying, and that instead of hearing him say, "electronics division and CRF," being the call letters for the group, Halt was really contacting the Command Post, and describing what he was seeing, asking if the men in the Air Traffic Control Tower at Bentwaters could see what they were seeing. Bustinza says he thought he heard Halt say, " . . . they would possibly have to get the part from another world." But again, Bustinza may have misheard Halt, who had likely said, *that the object looked like it was possibly from another world.*

Mistakes like this would be natural in such a situation – the men's minds racing and imagining all kinds of things while all this adrenalin-driven excitement was going on, especially being presented with the "unknown" in front of them. And this is exactly what Bustinza then tells Fawcett: *"It was like, when something like that's happening right before your eyes, you want to try to keep track of everything, but it's hard because everything is happening so fast."* (See Note 584.)

However, a whole myth has grown up around this misunderstanding by Bustinza, leading to gullible people believing that the aliens of a damaged UFO that crash-landed in Rendlesham Forest and hit a tree, needed a part from the technical division, and that a crucial machine part was flown in from Germany so the craft could be repaired, as we will see.

When Fawcett pressed Bustinza on this recollection of his, asking if Halt just said that they could get parts from the electronics division or that they'd try to get parts, Bustinza replied:

> "The electronics division, that's all. I'm sure, I remember. Because I looked at him [Halt] real funny, I remember, I said, 'Electronics division, who is he talking to, what is he talking to?' I asked myself those questions."[dlxxxv]

If it is true that Bustinza had misheard Deputy Base Commander Halt, then Bustinza simply put two and two together and got five, as he then suspected that the part was needed for the craft to be repaired:

> "What I thought afterward was that these supposedly UFOs, with beings and stuff, they're far more intelligent supposedly than we are, how is the air force going to help them fix the machine? How are they going to help? I remember the words Colonel Halt said: "We'll get you the parts from our electronics division." And that kept ringing a bell and ringing a bell, like how can we help them? You know?"[dlxxxvi]

Fawcett then asked Bustinza if he saw them fix it there. And Bustinza replied, "No, I didn't see them fix it."[dlxxxvii] It appears that after the incident, Larry Warren had listened to Bustinza describing what his Commander (Halt) was observed doing when he was out in the field during the event, Bustinza possibly telling him that the Commander was communicating with something while in front of the object/craft, adding that he had heard a part was needed to repair what he had imagined to be a damaged craft. This seemed to fit with the story J. D. Ingalls was spreading, and it is certain that Warren was aware of some of the details of this story, as he had used these same details after his "hypnotic regression," some of which was then published in the November 6, 1983 update in the *News of the World* – i.e., repairs made with the assistance of a Commander of the USAF to a craft which was damaged after hitting a

tree.[dlxxxviii]

It's known that when Warren had begun presenting Bustinza's account as his own to Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood, he first played down the alien element. But after gauging people's reaction to his story, which was more positive than negative, he then upped the stakes by later exaggerating Bustinza's account, making that "something," which Bustinza says Halt communicated with, all about "alien beings," while also substituting Halt for Wing Commander, Gordon Williams – saying that the Wing Commander was communicating with the "beings" . . . all of which made a more sensational story, and anyway, *wasn't this part of the containment story that was being spread by J. D. Ingalls, just days after the events?*

Now, what Warren later did with his account was replace the "green strobe light" part of the incident with a "bluish-gold ball of light," which like the green strobe light, came down the side of the craft and split into three floating "bubbles," each with an alien being encased within, who then communicated with Wing Commander Gordon Williams.

First of all, in *Left at East Gate*, Warren writes that while the motion cameras continued to roll, a staff car arrived at the end of a trail – again, one of the logging roads leading into the forest. Out of the staff car stepped Colonel Gordon Williams and other staff officers. Williams then spoke with the officers already on site. By this time, Warren would have heard of Col. Halt's testimony, as Halt had come forward in public soon after he had retired in 1990. He would have known that Halt had gone out to the forest that night after being told the UFO was back while he and the commanders had been attending a party at the Officer's Club . . . because Warren now says that most of the officers "were not in uniform, and that some, including Williams, appeared to have been pulled from some official function or party."[dlxxxix] Again, this could only have been the 'third night,' which was the evening of Saturday, December 27 into the morning of December 28, 1980.

Warren then writes that a glowing ball of light, bluish-gold, came down slowly from behind the right "delta wing" side of the object, adding that it moved about one foot above the ground and stopped some ten feet away from the machine. He then claims that this one ball of light then broke into "three separate glowing cylinders," each containing what appeared to be a living creature, which he says resembled children, as they were small, about three to four feet tall and somewhat ghostlike in appearance. Oh, and did we mention

“bubbles”?

Quoting Larry Warren:

> “These things were inside light. It wasn’t like aliens walking around in the field. The whole thing just split apart and there was one of them in each, and this thing like . . . you know you blow a bubble? You know, off those rings, and you blow the bubble, there’s a bubble . . . That’s how this thing came off the craft.”[dxc]

In *Left at East Gate*, Warren writes that Bustinza had asked him under his breath, “Can you see them?” Warren claims he saw the creatures’ eyes and definitely knew that they were not kids and not even human. Warren writes that he could not see their facial features, but they had large heads and catlike eyes. He adds that each wore very bright, almost silvery clothing. In *Left at East Gate*, Warren mentions the arrival of Wing Commander Colonel Gordon Williams before describing what happened when he saw the glowing bluish, golden ball and aliens emerge from the craft.

Warren then claims that Colonel Williams slowly walked to a distance of five feet in front of these floating beings, adding that he could not hear any conversation but says he believed they were communicating. He then writes that another officer gave something to Colonel Williams before his group was told to return to the trucks and wait.[dxci] However, in the interview Warren gave on May 18, 1986 – some ten years before the publication of *Left at East Gate*, Warren told Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe that the appearance of the three alien beings preceded by the “glowing, bluish/golden ball” activity had happened some time before Wing Commander Col. Williams had arrived.

Warren: “Col. Gordon Williams was not there when the beings first came out.”

And again, although Bustinza had already told Boeche and Colborn on April 11, 1984 that he knew Williams was there because he was standing right next to him, Georgina Bruni, who interviewed Adrian Bustinza in 1998, wrote that Bustinza disagreed with Larry Warren, and was in no doubt that Williams was NOT involved . . . although she writes Bustinza did remember Halt mentioning Williams’ name during the encounter (Bruni, p. 89). Well, this is very likely if Gordon Williams was on the Command Post net listening to Halt’s radio transmissions.

Bruni also adds that Bustinza had no memories of Larry being at the

landing site, either, and explained the difficulty of trying to follow what was going on at the time:

> "I don't recall seeing him [Larry] out there, but there was a lot of confusion going on. There was tunnel vision. After the incident Larry was very upset and paranoid, and I had to try to calm him down. He wanted to talk. I remember us walking down the dorm and he was saying, 'I wonder if they are watching us now, if they have cameras watching us.' He got me scared. Even back then he was determined to get the story out. Larry wanted to talk, he was talking to everyone."[dxcii]

If we didn't know better, it would appear that Warren was merely projecting – i.e., playing on Bustinza's own paranoid fears so that a scared Bustinza would hand over the responsibility of getting the story out to him.[dxciii]

Also, there is another classic 'Bustinza contradiction' here – one of many we have noted. After telling Georgina Bruni in 1998 that he didn't recall seeing Warren out there that night, it was while being interviewed by Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs on the Phenomenon KGRA Radio show in 2015 – and it should be noted that Larry Warren came on as a guest in the last half-hour of the show – Bustinza said . . . *"At one point, uh, Larry Warren, uh, was out there . . . ."*[dxciv]

Bustinza then goes onto to say that he didn't know if Warren had told Col. Halt that some people had cameras, and recorders out there or something, or if he told him (Halt) when they saw them as they were driving up. This, of course, contradicts the view that Bustinza was driven to the forest by MSgt. Ball and Lt. Col. Halt after they picked him up at Woodbridge. In any case, Bustinza then says:

> " . . . but I do remember seeing when we were driving up, all kinds of police officers, and we called them bobbies, and then Colonel Hall instructed us to go confiscate and we went. And I remember confiscating several cameras and we took them back and gave it to them. [. . .] Uh, I lost track of Larry at that point. Everybody was moving about everywhere. I was by Colonel Halt. I remember talking to Lieutenant Englund momentarily and Sergeant Ball at that point. I remember John [Burroughs] was talking to Colonel Halt and John was pressing the issue about going out back out to the forest."[dxcv]

Bustinza is saying that the confiscation of the cameras took place just before Burroughs and he were allowed by Lt. Col. Halt to go forward to the landing site, and before Bustinza claims he saw Burroughs run towards an object or craft and disappear temporarily in the light of the craft only to re-emerge again. Here's Bustinza's full account:

> "And, he [Halt] told John that he could go, and he told me to go with him. And, at that point we go out into the forest and we weren't very far from each other. I'd say couple of arm's length as we were walking, and at one point, that's when, John got in front of me and he was like in between some trees. There was a little clearing but it was in between some trees. And, a light from above just shined on him. I mean, it's just like somebody just turned the switch on. And, uh, I remember I looked at him. And, I don't know . . . I couldn't remember if I was trying to say something to him, or . . . but I remember I said, you know, something . . . and then I felt like I got pushed down. I got like I got pushed from behind and that's when, you know . . . I mean I've tried to break my, uh, my, fall . . . and my hand, my left hand went into the lighted area and stuff and that startled me and I jumped back up, got back up and at the same time I felt like I was being pulled back up by my pack.
>
> Uh, I looked at John, and John was trying to look up to the light and he was looking. Uh, I remember him looking at it himself that is like his arms and his hands, and the light was . . . it was like fuzzy like when you get a snowy TV, but it was like . . . particle. It looked like particles in the light, like even you do when you get into a dusty road and you see the particles from the light, and it was, it was . . . I couldn't tell you exactly how long . . . maybe five ten minutes, uh, maybe longer. I don't know. Uh, uh, I was more startled than everything else and, and, I'm sure John was too at that point. And, uh, my reaction was to call out to him, and, you know, uh, it was in my mind, it crossed my mind to run, but where do you run? . . . You know, what was I running from? Uh, and then the light went out. And, I remember the light being, you know, very bright. Um, I even felt it kind of, kind of warmish. You know, kind of like everything was warm like, uh, like a spotlight. And, then we returned back and that's when I, uh, I . . . I have issues, uh, remembering some of the things that happened thereafter. Um, where we went, who we talked to. But I remember ending up back in the base and back in the barracks."[dxcvi]

Burroughs, who cannot consciously remember very much about this incident,

other than what he was able to recall through the hypnotic regression he underwent on November 11th, 1988, most of which is vague,[dxcvii] tends to believe, or accept at best, Bustinza's account of this incident – even though he has a problem with the rest of Bustinza's account, as he does with Warren's.

For example, after reading out a full summary of Bustinza's account on the Phenomenon Radio show he hosted with Linda Moulton Howe, with guest Ronnie Dugdale, and trying to get his head around the chronology issues with the lightalls, Burroughs says: ". . . that's a lot different than what happened when I was out there . . . what came over the radio, and then what happened when we went forward and met up with Adrian Bustinza and Halt's team when we were allowed to go forward."[dxcviii]

But again, Burroughs is inclined to believe what Bustinza has said about the incident concerning him. Perhaps he wants to believe it, as it places him in the light, (no pun intended), as regards the third night's events,[dxcix] and this is evident in what Burroughs had said about this particular incident with Bustinza during his hypnosis session, as he talks about Lt. Col. Halt not being surprised to see him out there and who tells him (Burroughs) to bring the lighted objects to them, as if he was somehow destined and "chosen" for this purpose – a regular theme that is characteristic of Burroughs. (See Note 616.)

Burroughs has worked out that the incident he had supposedly experienced with Bustinza had taken place between 3:20 and 4:00 a.m.,[dc] which was during the time when Halt and his team had terminated the investigation for the night and were on their way back to the staging area.

The reader can see that the chronology here doesn't make sense because Bustinza had told Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn on April 14, 1984 that, after the cameras were confiscated, he and the other personnel remained positioned around the craft for thirty minutes before the craft, which he describes as circular, took off. And as for Warren, he says that this issue with the cameras took place before the main events he claims to have witnessed.

For example, in a live TV documentary televised in 1993, Warren says: ". . . we got to a farmer's field; there was an airman very upset next to a tree in the field beyond that were motion picture cameras and a video camera with bulky technology in 1980, but nevertheless present two British bobbies with a still camera taking pictures."[dci]

Warren says this before mentioning his claim of seeing the 50-feet-diameter yellow mist-like object close to the ground. And in *Left at East*

Gate, Warren writes: “To my right were two English policemen from the town of Woodbridge. One had a camera and was snapping pictures. An airman was ordered to take it away; he did so forcefully and an argument ensued.”[dcii]

This airman could only have been Bustinza, seeing as he claims that he and Warren were told by Halt to confiscate the cameras. In any case, Warren now places the incident of the camera being confiscated *after* the sudden appearance of the triangular, delta-winged craft, which emerged when the red light exploded above the yellow mist-like object, and *before* the arrival of Wing Commander Gordon Williams.

In his book, Warren says the time was 1:30 a.m., when the red light appeared from the direction of the North Sea. So, where and how does the incident that Burroughs claims happened that same night, based largely on what he was told by Bustinza, fit into this? It clearly doesn’t. Burroughs was justified when he said, “. . . that’s a lot different than what happened when I was out there” . . . and we can be certain that for Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels, these accounts are clearly a whole lot different than what happened when they were out there.

Return to CSC for a coffee and back to the dorms

In “The Art Wallace Story” testimony, Warren says that towards the end of the event, he and the airmen who were with him in the field were told to go back to where they came in, and that they left while the craft was still on the ground with these “things” (“beings”) outside of it.

Warren then offers a string of consciously-remembered events from the time he says he left the field with the landed craft to when he got back to the dorms – adding that he got back on a pick-up truck to CSC, where he drank coffee until shift change, (which would have been 6:30 to 7:00 a.m.), and then got on a bus and headed back to his dorm:

> “Somewhat towards the end of the event we were told that we were to go back to from where we came in and the vehicle was still on the ground with these things outside of it. I left and went back to the pick-up trucks. We all got in and no one said a word to each other were just so shocked at what we were seeing and drove away. We got to the Central Security Control and sat around drinking coffee until shift change. We were getting ribbed by alot [sic] of guys on A Flight coming on duty that morning that were out there already preparing for

> the day. Saying did you see little green men, what did you see, and laughing. Steve Laplume [La Plume] happened to be in this group of people coming on duty during the day shift and happened to be making jokes to us saw it all happening. So everyone heard some account of what happened that night. We sat around drinking coffee and staring at each other. The very next hour or so we got the bus and went back to our dorms."[dciii]

It is difficult to take Warren seriously when he is quoted as having said in his earlier accounts that, to this day, he doesn't know how he got back to the barracks or what happened after his experience with the green strobe light on the side of the craft, especially when we continue reading "The Art Wallace Story" testimony, which appears to be an early account that has not been quoted as often as the others, and also his book, *Left at East Gate*.

So, in the earlier accounts, we have Warren telling us that he blacked out in the field next to the object after the green strobe light did its bouncy thing with the head shadows of the airmen, and that the next thing he knew, he was waking up at 5:00 in the morning on his bunk in his dorm still in uniform up to his knees in mud. During his conversation with Keith Beabey, Warren says he had woken up between 5:30 and 6:00 a.m., and the mud was only up to his ankles:

> "And it would come to each head and when it got to the last one. That's really all I remember. I woke up in my room the next morning, oh about five-thirty to six, as my roommate was leaving. I was still in uniform with mud up to my ankles, and he said I was brought in by some people about an hour or so before maybe an hour and half."[dciv]

As said, by the time *Left at East Gate* was published in 1997, there has been no mention by Warren having blacked out, nor any mention of the "green strobe light" and its strange bouncing activity with the heads of the airmen's shadows in his earlier accounts. It would appear this was just a fabrication used to end the account quickly, just in case he made a mess of the story and contradicted Bustinza's account, as there is some mention of Warren saying that he needed Adrian Bustinza to come forward first before saying any more.[dcv]

In any case, during the interview Larry Warren did with Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe on May 18, 1986, Warren admitted that this part of his

testimony was false, as he felt it best to end it there. When asked about waking up muddy and wet in his room after he blacked out after seeing his shadow move, Warren responded with:

"It's not true." [...] "The easiest way to omit an alien or any life form was to say I blacked out."

Jamison/Howe: "So, your saying that you saw the shadow and then blacked out was your first lie?"

Warren: "It was to protect me. I lied about the fact that I blacked out. But I was just not saying what happened." And: "*There was never any unconsciousness for me. I was conscious the whole time* – unless something happened I'm not aware of. But my saying I blacked out saved me at that time from having to talk about any life form when this Bentwaters case was not that well known."

Even if Warren is able to convince many that in this instance he had a good reason to lie, the fact remains he deliberately lied, and to any intelligent person this means that everything else he has said is under suspicion and cannot be trusted – not alone 'believed.'

There was also nothing in *Left at East Gate* about the underground facility, which Warren later says he had heard from Bustinza in the story that Warren gave Bob Smith for the *News of the World – however*, he did mention it to Keith Beabey that same day when Beabey asked him if he had learned what had happened to the craft after Warren said he had blacked out. Knowing what we now know, Warren, who didn't know the phone call was being taped by Dot Street, blatantly lied to Beabey, telling him he thought he saw it again the next day and the day after that. Beabey then asked him under what circumstances.

Warren then told the reporter that he and the others who were with him were taken to an underground facility on the base at Bentwaters and shown some "very high technology equipment"[dcvi] – adding that he thought he was in a drugged state at that point and that he had lost three days of his time there, but other people had verified he was on leave. As we now know, Warren has since said that there was *never any unconsciousness for him and that he was conscious the whole time.* He then says that he and others were taken to a large area and that the craft that they had seen out in the forest was down further underground below them. When Beabey asked what it looked like, Warren said that it was all dark, and that he and six or seven others had been allowed to observe that only for a short time, but there was a light shining on

it. When asked why he was taken down there, Warren said he didn't know. Warren then changed the subject, saying that for years he had "been trying to push this thing," meaning he had been trying to get the story out.

To conclude this chapter, the likely scenario is that Sgt. Adrian Bustinza was debriefed after the third night's events, and also interrogated in the same manner that SSgt. Penniston was by the administered use of the truth serum sodium pentothal or sodium amytal and hypnosis – even Bustinza has said as much (see Chapter 15: *The 'Hold Forth' Years*) – and if so, then it is possible that false memories were planted in Bustinza's mind, not only to mix up the events of the third night, but to also add a false narrative with him and others being ordered to surround a disk-shaped UFO, while aliens communicated with commanders, policemen clicked cameras, with everything concluding with a visit to a secret underground facility containing UFOs, which also came up in Larry Warren's initial testimony. If true, then Bustinza simply handed on this story to Warren, who simply ran with it.

As is evident in this quote from "The Art Wallace Story," testimony found in the files of Barry Greenwood, Warren had said that he was possibly told "counter information," more-or-less saying that other people – and he obviously meant those at the top – had gotten Bustinza and "these other men," whom he says he had first met in March 1981,[dcvii] to give him information so as to discredit the whole story.

> "When I met with Bustinza and these other men I was told possibly counter information for what reasons I don't really know but I was really outspoken about it so people possibly got them to tell them to give me information to bring out here to discredit the whole story."[dcviii]

Warren obviously said this to cover himself, especially after Bustinza had let Warren down and had left him hanging "high and dry" by denying any knowledge about being taken to an underground facility as Warren had claimed. However, in saying this, Warren had unwittingly admitted that he had been used as a pawn – a "useful idiot," as Jim Penniston had expressed it – in the 'containment program' ordered by Major Zickler, as was passed down from those above him.

It could be said that
if Jim Penniston had come forward earlier about what SSgt. J. D. Ingalls had

told him in early 1981 concerning the containment (cover) story that he had personally spread around the base and the surrounding area – even admitting that he had been ordered by Major Zickler to do this – then Warren would not have gotten away with saying he was involved in the events of the third night for as long as he did, as his initial story of floating silver-suited "beings" communicating with Wing Commander Gordon Williams, and having repaired their craft after having hit a tree, is basically the same story – the only difference is that Warren described a triangular craft, and Ingalls, under the name "Steve Roberts," described and sketched a typical saucer-shaped, bubble-topped craft with three legs.

At the end of the day, if Warren and Bustinza really had experienced something out of the ordinary, then they have made a right mess of it and cannot complain if the more intelligent people who have read and heard their testimonies refuse to take them seriously. After analyzing the accounts of Adrian Bustinza and Larry Warren in some detail, which is far more than their accounts deserved and really wasn't our intention to include them when initially planning the layout of this book, the only witnesses we can rely on to give us a logical, rational, realistic assessment of what happened on the third night are Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels, with Nevels' testimony being the most consistent and trustworthy.

However, the only witness who would be capable of giving us a clear, definitive account/picture of what happened on the third night – but to date has refused to talk about it – is former Lieutenant, Bruce Englund.

We shall end this chapter with two quotes: the first by author Kevin Randle from an email he sent UFO skeptic, James Easton in June 2002, and the second by Jenny Randles, who always knew that these stories by Warren, Bustinza, Ingalls, and the story told to her source, the Watton 'radar operator' she named, "David Potts," back in January 1981, were all . . . *disinformation:*

> *". . . I have a copy of the audio tape discussion with Colonel Halt in which Warren says that he doesn't know if he was a real participant or if he invented the whole thing in his head."*[dcix]

> "The big question is why the three initial sources of information – Steve Roberts, Watton radar and Larry Warren all provide the more fantastic version of events. My guess has always been that Roberts fed his line to a paranormal enthusiast [Brenda Butler] hoping that a wild

version of the truth would kill off any immediate serious attention from people who mattered. Ufologists are not people who matter since they are generally only listened to by other ufologists and tabloid newspapers. The staff at Watton would – in my estimation – never have been told about aliens communicating with a wing commander whilst repairing their craft if this had really happened. They had absolutely no need to know and the radar film could have been taken from them on any pretext. To be told this was to me a dead giveaway that this story was disinformation."[dcx]

Chapter Thirteen

The Coda Decade

April 1984 to April 1994

Shipment Compromised
("They were after the Notebook")

Jim Penniston:

It was now January 1985, and I had received a call from base shipping telling me my possessions would be delivered in two weeks. It had now been an unbelievable six months-plus since the shipping of my furniture and possessions in June 1984. However, I was told they had shipped my household goods to New Orleans via St. Louis instead of New York or New Jersey! The clerk at base shipping was scratching his head over the huge time delay, saying it was the first time in his career for him to ever see that happen and added that what was even more strange was the lack of response to all the inquiries that he did.

Finally, the movers then arrived as scheduled and unpacked all of our goods. I was going to put the two plaster casts of the landing pod depressions left by the craft that I had hand-carried from the UK together with the one shipped in my household goods. However, the one plaster cast I had placed in the box was nowhere to be found! I went through all the boxes over the next few days, and I could not find it. I was bewildered, thinking it mysterious and strange at first. For it to be missing from the shipment was eerie and unsettling. I have often wondered how this could happen, but then I thought about the strangeness of the whole shipment being delayed for as long as six months and what the clerk had told me. As all possible scenarios ran through my mind, I was now sure that someone had the full shipment of our possessions thoroughly searched and sorted through prior to its arrival at

Ellsworth, and that the plaster cast evidence of the landing pod of the craft had been taken. That would certainly explain the huge delay in time and the deafness to all the inquiries that had been made. I was thankful I had hand-carried all the other artifacts and documentation with me on the plane instead of shipping them. But, then I thought, *why would they take the landing pod casting?* It wasn't as if it held some proof. It was just evidence, and one that could easily be discounted. It was obvious to me then, as it is now, that the motive for delaying the shipment and rifling through my possessions was to take any documentation or physical evidence of the encounter no matter how mundane. However, it looked as if what they were really after, if they had now realized it, *was the notebook* . . . .

The more I thought about, the more it seemed obvious . . . *they were after the notebook.*

I then determined that my only fix to this situation was to avoid it ever happening again while I was in the Air Force. My solution was to remove all my things from any possible reach of the military in the future. I corrected this the following summer when I was planning a vacation to see my parents again. I made sure I had boxed up several containers with anything that could be considered Rendlesham-related. I took all of my journals, the notebook, drawings and the two remaining plaster pods and other personal notes I had. I knew that they would be safely stored at my parents' home back in Illinois. It would be there that they would remain until after my retirement from the Air Force. I kept these things mainly as a reminder of that night. I had envisioned even then that I would continue my own personal research on what had happened in Rendlesham that night when I retired and had ample time to do it.

CNN Special Assignment

Between January 23 and 27, 1985, a *CNN Special Assignment* documentary-news program, hosted and produced by Chuck DeCaro, was aired on US TV, with the title *"UFO – The Bentwaters Incident,"* The program, which was originally filmed in the autumn months of 1984, featured interviews with

Captain Mike Verrano, MSgt. Robert (Bobby) Ball, MSgt. Ray Gulyas, Airman Greg Battram, researcher/author, Larry Fawcett, British civilian witnesses Jerry Harris and Gordon Levett, forester Vince Thurkettle, and Larry Warren. Aside from Warren, all the former USAF personnel stationed at RAF Bentwaters/Woodbridge during the incident in 1980 were filmed in shadow to hide their identities. DeCaro was successful in contacting and tracing others who were stationed at the bases in 1980, included Charles Halt, Bruce Englund, Edward Drury and Adrian Bustinza . . . but unfortunately, all had refused to talk to him on camera.[dcxi]

Call from Korea, February 1985

Jim Penniston:

It was now February, and I was settling into my job at Ellsworth AFB, working in Aircraft Security, when around 9:00 p.m. one evening and while I was on patrol, I received a radio call from CSC to return to their locations to pick up a phone call made to me by a VIP. After arriving at CSC, I asked who was calling me. I was told that it was a Colonel from another base. The call came in, and it was Colonel Halt, who was now a Base Commander in Korea.

Col. Halt and I had a fifteen-minute conversation, which mostly consisted of "small talk." He wanted to know how I was, and, of course, I knew he was after any small piece of information from me about the incident, which would tell him what he needed to know – i.e., my being involved in any talks with others about it . . . but I avoided saying anything about it. Calling me from various bases would become common practice with Col. Halt. Throughout the next few years, I would receive Col. Halt's calls from his assignments at Tinker AB, Oklahoma, Florennes AB, Belgium, and his Air Staff assignment in Washington D.C.

I later applied and worked in 'Security Police Group Pass and Identification,' and then moved on to 'Group Plans and Programs' at Ellsworth, where I remained until being reassigned. During 1986, I had put back in for a reassignment, and put Germany on my 'wish list' to work and live.[1]

Senator Exon

At this time UFO investigator and Nebraska MUFON's state director, Raymond Boeche, had been making Freedom of Information requests to Air Force departments on the Rendlesham Incident. It was apparent to Boeche that this had proven ineffective and so faced with more Air Force stonewalling on this issue, he approached U.S. Senator J. James Exon, once an office-supply business man who was elected Governor of Nebraska from 1971 to 1979. Exon then went on to become a US Democrat Senator for Nebraska and served on the Arms Services Committee until his retirement in 1997.

With research associate Scott Colborn, Boeche met with Senator Exon at his Lincoln offices in February of 1985 and talked with him about the Bentwaters UFO incident. Boeche described the Senator's initial response as one of disinterested skepticism, and that he then stated that if any information of a significant nature existed, he would have been apprised of it. Knowing that the sub-committee that Exon chaired was responsible for the protection of nuclear storage areas, Boeche then brought the Senator's attention to the incident involving a landing of unidentified aerial objects at Kirtland Air Force Base in New Mexico and gave Exon a 1980 Kirtland Air Force Space complaint form about UFO's intruding in Cayote Canyon where nuclear weapons were stored east of Alburcurque back in 1980. While Senator Exon took some minutes to look through the document, Boeche asked the Senator if he had ever been briefed on this, and Exon replied, "No, I've never heard about this." Boeche then said, "Don't you think you should have?" The Senator replied, "Absolutely." Senator Exon then said he was willing to assist in Boeche's enquiries but needed more proof before he would proceed with an investigation. Boeche then left the Senator with the 1984 book, *Sky Crash* by Rendlesham Incident investigators Brenda Butler, Dot Street and Jenny Randles, the 1984 book, *Clear Intent* by Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood, and a copy of the tape recording made of some of the third night's events by Col. Halt.

On March 18, 1985, Senator Exon sent a letter to Ray Boeche on his Washington Senate stationary, it read: "As you have requested, I have asked the Air Force for their assistance."

Then two weeks later on April 2, 1985, Boeche received another letter by

Senator Exon:

"Frankly, I am not convinced that the incidents you are concerned with did in fact occur. Nor have I found any evidence of a cover up by the government. If you have any evidence to substantiate the validity of the audiotape, I would appreciate you forwarding that information."

On the afternoon of April 10, 1985, Boeche called Colonel Charles Halt at Tinker Air Force Base, Oklahoma, and made notes as they talked. Initially Boeche mentioned his meeting and correspondence with Senator Exon and asked Col. Halt if he would talk to the Senator. Halt said he would be willing to discuss the case with Senator Exon and would be glad to answer any of his questions.

Boeche then asked Col. Halt about the existence of soil samples taken from the landing site, and Halt replied. "Yes, soil were taken. As a matter of fact, I have one here on my desk." Boeche then asked Col. Halt about the plaster casts that had been taken of the depressions at the landing site, and Halt said, "Yes, plaster casts were made of the landing impressions." Boeche asked if Col. Halt had those plaster casts, and Halt replied, "No, I don't have them here, but I know where I can put my hands on them in short order."

Boeche then asked Col. Halt about General Gordon Williams' alleged involvement in the incidents . . . if it were true that an officer (Captain Mike Verrano), had driven Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon Williams from the UFO landing site back to a waiting jet fighter at Bentwaters with a cannister of film of a landed UFO. Col. Halt then replied, "Yes, I can verify that. I can substantiate that for Senator Exon."

Some thirty minutes after his conversation with Col. Halt, Boeche then called Brigadier General William's office at Norton Air Force Base in San Bernadino, California, but got General Williams' aide, Major Verke. Boeche explained to Verke that the US Senator James Exon had asked Ray Boeche to get him more information about the RAF Bentwaters/Woodbridge incident, and asked if General Gordon Williams would be willing to speak with Senator Exon. Boeche was then told that General Williams was away until April 22, 1985, but upon his return he (Major Verke) would ask the General about speaking directly with Senator Exon. Ray Boeche then called General William's office again on April 24 and Major Verke told him: "The general has no comment."

Then having put Colonel Halt in touch with Senator Exon, Boeche tried to call Senator Exon but failed to reach him. It appeared that Exon was avoiding

him. After several more calls, Boeche was told by the Senator's aide that Senator Exon and Colonel Halt had talked several times, but that a condition of Halt's was that the Senator had to agree not to discuss their conversations with anyone else.[dcxii]

Boeche had now been "shut out of the loop," and has been mystified over this ever since. On page 112 of her book, *"You Can't Tell the People"* (2001), Georgina Bruni asks, *did Halt confide to Exon the details of Williams' involvement?*

In July 1992, Col. Halt denied that he had told Ray Boeche what Boeche had later reported.[dcxiii]

Ray Boeche's view is that he should have been told that the subject was classified, not to then be treated as he was with a stone wall of silence with nothing more being said about the matter. Boeche then reasoned that if he had been told it was simply classified then this would have meant someone was covering up something and that would have incited even more investigators to get to the truth. However, it can be further argued that saying it was classified *justly* by saying it compromised national security, would have at least been the better option, but no one was saying anything back then.

Bitburg Air Base, Germany, Spring 1987

Jim Penniston:

It was at this time that I then received orders for a report date, which would be late August 1987. I got my first choice, which was Germany. The base was Bitburg Air Base, which was close to the city of Bitburg in the Rhineland-Palatinate state of Germany and located along the Belgium and western German border.

After arriving in Bitburg AB at the end of August 1987, I worked as Flight Chief on Base Security, and did that for about a year. After about six months, a Tech Sergeant named Kevin Rice arrived at the base, and he replaced me as Flight Sergeant. All went well, but it was somewhat awkward going from Flight Sergeant to Assistant. I soon let the Security Operations folks know how I felt about the situation. They told me they completely understood and said they would keep me in mind for any openings which might come up. Two weeks later, MSgt. Edward Clay, the Security Superintendent, met me in

the hallway of Security Operations. He said that there was an opening which had just recently come up in the Air Base Ground Defense (ABGD) Security Police Supply warehouse. He recommended that I apply for the position – adding that he thought I would be a great asset to the section. I agreed. I then got my work resume together, submitted it, and soon attended an interview. In less than a week, I received notification that I had been selected for the position.

The position was for the Non-Commission Officer in Charge (NCOIC) of Air Base Ground Defense Supply. Within a couple weeks, I also had two other sergeants assigned there to help with the section and other work. Both had previously worked with me on Echo Flight Security. These were Sergeant Steve Cirfus, who was one of my Security Response Team Leaders, and Sergeant Scott Meyers, my Security Flight Controller. Scott outranked Steve by a few months' time in grade, so I made Scott the Assistant NCOIC of the section. It was there that I worked with getting the equipment from the Florennes Air Base, which was a Ground Launch Cruise Missile (GLCM) base. With the ending of the Cold War, the base would no longer be in use, and so all the equipment would be sent to other USAFE bases for redistribution of unit resources to be used elsewhere.

Call from Colonel Halt, October 1987

It was during the course of making the requests for unit equipment and supply that I received another phone call from Colonel Halt. He told me he was now the current Base Commander of Florennes Air Base in Belgium. He added that although he had not been there very long, his tour of duty there was going to be cut short. Apparently, he was due to rotate back to the States after the scheduled closing of Florennes Air Base, which was only months down the road. He said he was going to keep in touch. I knew that would definitely be the case, as he had kept in touch with me since the Rendlesham incident. But, all the same, it was a nice gesture on his part to phone and to tell me he was going to Washington D.C.

Of course, during our phone conversation, the subject of the incident did come up. Col. Halt asked if I had any contact from anyone with regards to the incident. I told him that outside of a few incidences around the base with my having heard security police folks talking about it, no one had contacted me

except him. I said that it seemed pretty much behind me at this point. I could tell that he was pleased to hear that. Not much more was said, and after we both said our goodbyes and hung up, we did not talk again for two years.

Meetings with Colonel Charles Heubusch at Ramstein AFB and Bitburg AB, Germany

Soon after my phone conversation with Col. Halt, I was given a message by the office of Squadron Command that I had received a phone call from Colonel Charles Heubusch. The people in the office were eager to hand me his message, which included his phone number. The Operations Officer delivered the message to me with curiosity – asking how I knew the Colonel. I told him that I had worked for Colonel Heubusch at a previous base and just left it at that. The Operations Officer was obviously frustrated with my short answer, but that's me. I have always been careful with information – especially with someone who had no business knowing. I made the call, and it was answered by a secretary . . . "Chief of Security Police Office, may I help you?" I told the secretary that I was returning a call from the Colonel, and she immediately put me through.

I had a lot of respect for Colonel Heubusch, and it was wonderful talking to him again. He said he had been reassigned to USAFE Security Police, and that if I ever got down to Ramstein AFB that I should look him up. He seemed to have a sense of urgency to see me, so I said I would make it happen.

"*Afternoons are best to see me,"* he said.

He then added that he worked at Security Police Headquarters, and that I could ask anyone there, and they would provide directions to his office.

As it so happened, within that same week, an opportunity came up for me to go to Ramstein to deliver some equipment. I then gave Colonel Heubusch a call and scheduled a time with his secretary to meet with him. I took Sgt. Steve Cirfus with me for the day trip. The distance from Bitburg to Ramstein

was only an hour and half drive.

Upon arriving and taking care of our delivery, I then told Steve that I had to stop by the Security Police Headquarters building to see someone. We then drove across the base and arrived at the HQ building within minutes. We both walked into the building, and as instructed, I asked the first person I saw where Colonel Heubusch's office was located. We were then escorted down to the Chief of Security Police USAFE's office. I never thought that was the Colonel's position, but after all, he was a full Colonel. I went in and informed his secretary as to who I was and that I was here to see Colonel Heubusch. I hardly got that said when I heard Colonel Heubusch, *"Sergeant Penniston, how have you been?"*

The Colonel was standing in his office doorway. I went over and shook the Colonel's hand, and he showed both Steve and me into his office for what became our traditional cup of coffee while we talked. The conversation was mostly what he and I had both been doing over the years. He never asked about the Rendlesham incident, but he did ask if I was OK with everything after the years I had spent in the UK, and I knew what he was alluding to. I said, yes. It was a short visit, but after leaving the Colonel's office, Sgt. Steve Cirfus expressed how impressed he was. He said that he had never seen anything like it. "How cool and casual was that with the top cop in Europe?" he mused. It's true that Colonel Heubusch was the Chief of Security Police of United States Airforce in Europe (USAFE), which was a big deal.

Steve then asked why I hadn't told him I had known Colonel Heubusch. I said that I knew a lot of people and that I just didn't think it was that important to anyone. But, as was always the case, following the last orders I had been given by the investigators at the AFOSI building, I remained silent about Bentwaters and Rendlesham – especially the incident. The heaviness I felt due to my having to keep silent about the incident was often unbearable. There were occasions when I would overhear conversations by others on base about Bentwaters and the so-called 'UFO incident.' It was only natural, as by this time the incident had passed into folklore and word had got around that I was one of the primary witnesses. No one approached me about it. Perhaps word had gotten around that I didn't respond kindly to people inquiring about it or questioning me.

The gossip I was hearing was largely based around the 'containment story' that had been put out by SSgt. J. D. Ingalls, on the orders of Major Malcolm Zickler, as told to me by himself and soon after the incident. It was

incredible to see how this story had been successful in having such an effect on people's views, opinions, and beliefs many years later. Although I felt a need to speak out about what had really happened, I could still only listen in silence until my retirement.

In any case, I had my own issues that lay in the darkness of sleep, chaotic dreams, and nightmares. It seemed that whenever I was reminded of the incident, I would then have the strangest nightmares – sometimes lasting over two or three nights.

After my meeting at Ramstein AFB with Colonel Heubusch, it was no different. The same things were always re-occurring in these dreams. I would dream of the event I witnessed, and then the ones and zeros. I would dream of the craft . . . that it was here alone and unmanned; that it was here by design; and that it was Time (dimensional) related. Although it was alien to me in technology, in a familiar sense, it seemed like it has always been a part of us. While having these dreams, I always experienced the same fear and trauma I had experienced that night in the woods at Rendlesham. I kept the dreams and nightmares to myself, telling no one of them, or the re-occurring mystifying elements which composed them.

The days and months went by at Bitburg, and time just flew as I got more and more into my work. I had been working heavily on a 'readiness report' issue one morning, which I was trying to resolve, when I received a call from the Squadron Operations officer, Captain Kuhn. He said I needed to be at the Commander's office at 11.00 hrs, which was 45 minutes away. Reluctantly, I told him that I would be there. Putting all that I thought was important back into the classified storage safe, I headed to the Commander's office, stopping by the post office on the way.

I arrived at the Squadron building. The building was, in a dark way, historic. It was built by the "Hitler work program," with forced labor during WWII. I headed straight to the Commander's office. As soon as I knocked on the office door, and before getting a chance to speak, I heard the Squadron Commander telling me to come in. On entering, I saw Colonel Heubusch, and greeted him with a hand shake. I smiled and said, "What a surprise seeing you here."

The Colonel laughed and said, "Well, it's sort of business Jim. I am visiting the Base because I am rotating back to the States."

He then added that he was getting ready for retirement. I thought that was

wonderful and wished him well. Colonel Heubusch then wanted me to join him at the Officer's Club for lunch, where we could talk privately. "Sounds good to me," I said.

I suspected that whatever he had to say would surely be about the incident, for we had not talked about it since that first meeting in his office almost eight years earlier.

On arriving at the Officer's Club, there were six round tables, which sat about eight people each, and a head table, which had five seats surrounding it, and which faced all the other tables. It looked like there were many 'key Squadron' people there. I then saw my supervisor and went over to his table and asked if I could join him. "Absolutely," he said. The Operations Officer had a seat at the main table, along with the Squadron Commander and the Base Commander. Colonel Heubusch was in the foyer talking to the Wing Commander, who apparently was unable to make the luncheon.

When he at last came in he shouted across the room, "Sergeant Penniston! Come up here and sit by me."

This was an awkward situation for me, since Colonel Heubusch was offering me the seat next to him, which belonged to Captain Kuhn, my Operations Officer. I have always felt uncomfortable with being singled out for that kind of recognition, which just wasn't for me. I often felt the people around us watching and wondering why. In any case, I sat down on the seat to which the Colonel had gestured. To my surprise, Colonel Heubusch then reinitiated the conversation from so many years ago, by first questioning me on my well-being and how I was doing. We then talked about the Rendlesham Incident without naming it. It must have all seemed quite cryptic to the people surrounding us in that room, as we talked very low and almost to a whisper.

I told the Colonel that outside of the typical chatter engaged in by the board cops, I hadn't heard anything from anyone about the incident, or of anyone knowing of my involvement. My thoughts were that I suspected it, but I didn't tell the Colonel that. Since our first meeting eight years before, Colonel Heubusch had seemed concerned for me. And even though I truly needed it, I then thought I would ask him why he had this personal concern and support for me.

After I asked him, a soft grin came across the Colonel's face, and he said, "I figure it this way Jim. When I was at the Pentagon, and we became aware

of the incident at security police, we found out – not from up-channeled reports, or alerting from any one below us in the chain of command – but from the chain of command above us. One could assume that it was not from Air Staff, but rather another agency, like DOD, NSA, or even the CIA."

The Colonel then told me that with 'heavy hitters' like that, he was sure that I would possibly need help with this due to the nature of it. He then went on to say that he was always an officer who cared about the well-being of the men and women he commanded. He said that he always put them first and foremost.

I smiled and said, "Colonel Heubusch, thank you so much for your support."

He seemed reassured and pleased, and we then relaxed from the deep conversation to eat our lunch. After my lunch with Colonel Heubusch had ended, we said our good-byes . . . but, little did I know at the time that our plans to talk again after our retirements would never come to be, for this would be the last time that I would see or talk to the Colonel again . . . .

On August 26, 2006, Colonel Chuck Heubusch passed away, after a long battle with cancer, and so my plans to meet up with him again after my retirement passed with that, too. With just the thought that I could always talk to him if I ever needed to, for many years, the Colonel had been my 'life line.' I was now alone once again with my knowledge of what had happened at Rendlesham, just as I was at the beginning.

1990
Burroughs' first published interview

John Burroughs retired as a Tech Sergeant from the USAF in February 1988. After his retirement, Burroughs did try to get the story into the public domain and agreed to be interviewed by researcher Jim Speiser in 1989, but according to Burroughs, Speiser went after another story instead.

In 1990, science writer Antonio Huneeus did an extensive, three-part interview with John Burroughs, which was later published in *Fate* magazine titled, "Bentwaters, the testimony of John Burroughs." We have already quoted some of the more relevant snippets from this published interview with Huneeus in the first three chapters.

Jim Penniston says he never read the interview and wasn't aware it had

been published. But if he had then, he would have learned that what Burroughs had to say didn't corroborate with what he had witnessed. Penniston would not have known what Burroughs had or had not witnessed because the two men didn't discuss the incident in any great depth after their encounter.

As presented in Note 14 in the end notes of Chapter 3: *Discovery*, Burroughs is quoted in the article by Huneeus as having said that during the actual encounter, he only saw a bank of different colored lights that "threw off an image of a craft," but he didn't see "anything metallic or anything hard," and that he only recalled hitting the ground (all three of them – meaning him, Penniston, and Cabansag) when the woods had lit up, to then see "whatever it was" move back towards the open field, and that after a minute or two they got up and moved into the trees and out into the open field. Burroughs also mentions being out in the forest on the third night with Col. Halt, and on this Antonio Huneeus writes:

> "Perhaps a bit obsessed with his experience on the night of December 26, the airman [Burroughs] went to the forest on his own, encountering the patrol under Col. Halt and several other soldiers in charge of the trucks with light-alls, which were not functioning well. He explained in our interview that "there was something out there that was intelligent" and that "blue transparent type lights came off the main craft" and were "able to do different things and flew over the top of us and flew through a pick up truck." He is however, in strong disagreement with Larry Warren's account of three small humanoid aliens which allegedly floated from the main craft.[dcxiv] "It depends on what you consider aliens," said Burroughs, "I consider that could be intelligent life, but I would say they weren't aliens as we would see green men and stuff like that, but they did do stuff that could lead you to believe they were intelligent."[dcxv]

However, what is significant about this interview is that this is the first time that Burroughs mentioned a taped hypnosis session he had, saying that he had "sent the tape to someone." However, no details of this had been made public at this time.[dcxvi]

Unsolved Mysteries, September 18, 1991

Jim Penniston:

Throughout the summer of 1991, I was actively involved with *Desert Shield* (Preparation for War with Iraq). 'Desert Shield' was a time to preposition and prepare for the likely event of war in the Middle East. It looked inevitable that we would soon be going to war in Iraq. This was the focus of my work, and so my thoughts about the Rendlesham incident were virtually nil. And although the dreams and nightmares still continued unabated, they were less frequent now.

On September 20, 1991, I received a long-distance call from the States. It was from my younger sister, Jan. She was in a very confused state. She said that two days earlier she had been watching a show called *Unsolved Mysteries* and it was about the base where I had been stationed in England, adding that it had involved a UFO. (The *Unsolved Mysteries* episode Jan was referring to had first aired on TV on September 18, 1991.) I remained quiet for a moment. I then asked her some questions about it. Jan answered as best she could. I was in total dismay over it because Jan mentioned both Burroughs and Col. Halt. She then said I had been mentioned by name as being one of the witnesses to the incident. Inevitably, Jan then asked me what had happened. I had never told my family up to this point, and I told her that I couldn't talk about it. She pressed me by saying, "Why not?"

"I just can't Jan; it is classified," I replied.

"Well it can't be that classified . . . it was on national television," she said rather indignantly.

I then moved to change the subject, which I did. Justifiably, Jan was frustrated with my lack of cooperation. However, my thoughts had been disturbed, and I was overwhelmed with confusion. *Why would Colonel Halt and Burroughs do a TV show?*

Jan then told me about the night of Colonel Halt's investigation and went on to talk about the first night, which included myself, along with Airmen Cabansag and Burroughs. I was shocked.

I was in a state of confusion about what to do next. Now, my family would know about the incident through the television show, and that I was involved. I could foresee myself having to deal with questions from them about it in the future. It was definitely the making of a bad situation for me. And what made it worse is that, from what I had learned from my sister, the series was actively being shown on the Armed Forces Network (AFN). It

would only be a matter of time before this *Unsolved Mysteries* episode would also be televised on AFN in Europe, and then all the personnel at the European Bases would view it . . . including everyone at Bitburg too. This I just could not deal with or have happen. After all, the AFN was watched by all military in non-English based countries. It was the only TV broadcast in English for the military and their dependents.

Colonel Heubusch was now Stateside, and it would be impossible to talk over open phone lines about this. I was caught in a huge dilemma. I knew I was going to be at my wits end with trying to 'problem solve' this myself, and it was apparent I could not do it alone. I needed assistance. *But, from whom?* I needed advice, and because it would be impossible to talk over phone lines with Heubusch or anyone else, it had to be someone face-to-face. I had only one option available, and I was going to do that with someone who had a Top-Secret clearance and background with Air staff.

My current supervisor was Master Sergeant Mark Little. Mark's assignment before Bitburg was with the 89th Security Police out of Andrews AFB, where he had special duty assignment at the Pentagon. Mark had a Top-Secret clearance, so I thought he was my best chance for some direction and advice on how to handle this situation, and I trusted him. So, the next day at work, I told Mark I needed to talk to him about a delicate situation. Mark agreed, and we met in his office alone.

I told Mark that what I was going to tell him was Top-Secret, and I needed to talk about it only with him. He looked at me seriously and said, "Well, keep it basic as possible, and I will try to help you out Jim." I then told him that there had been an incident at RAF Bentwaters involving a 'craft' that had landed in the woods by the base, and that I was the first responder to the incident.

I also told him about the on-going investigation, and it being treated as 'Top-Secret' via my debriefing at the AFOSI building. I then told Mark about the call from my sister and what she had told me concerning the *Unsolved Mysteries* episode, and how the witnesses being interviewed on the show had talked about it and had mentioned my name as being on the first response.

Mark stopped me at this point and said that he had got the gist of the issue. He said he knew about the incident, and that he had heard quite a bit about it – enough to know that he had to help me out with it. He recommended that I go to the local AFOSI office on base and tell them what I had told him. Also,

he told me to let them know that because of the mentioning of my name, this situation would cause a frenzy of questions to be directed at me about it that I should have to deal with. Mark then added that since it is now part of Security Police chatter and folklore, that I should also tell them that it would be compromising to me being here when it was televised.

I thanked Mark and was very grateful for his help with pointing me in the right direction with this. Even though I hated the thought of going into AFOSI and discussing this, no matter how distasteful this was or how troubling, I just had no other choice available. I did not want to contact the local AFOSI and go through it all again, but it was the better of two evils for me.

I walked into the AFOSI office and told the agent who greeted me that I needed to talk to the Detachment Commander. When questioned why, I told the agent that it was about Top-Secret information which was going to be televised in the coming months on AFN. He immediately alerted the Detachment Commander, and soon the three of us were sitting in a conference room.

I introduced myself, and they did the same. The first agent was taking notes while the Commander and I were talking. I told them exactly what I had said to Mark Little. The agent then told me to go out into the waiting room, which I did. After ten minutes, the door was opened, and I was motioned to come back into the conference room. The interview was short and quick. The Commander said, "We will take care of the airing of the TV show on AFN in November" – adding that I should not talk about this with anyone and that I should also report back to them if I am asked about the incident while at the base. I agreed and thanked them for their help.

That was just too easy, I thought.

I wondered how they could make that guarantee so fast . . . *and who in the hell did they talk to?*

More astonishing was the fact that they never questioned one thing I had said. They were actually being helpful and reassuring.

I got back to my office, and as I walked down the hall, I heard my name being called . . . "Sergeant Penniston!" I turned around, and it was Mark Little. He motioned me to go with him to his office, and after we both entered, he quickly shut the door behind us. I then told him exactly what the AFOSI commander and agent had told me to do. "Well, that's that then," he

said, smiling. I thanked Mark again for his help.

The weeks went by fast. It was now the middle of November 1991, and the previews for the *Unsolved Mysteries* show had been numerous in the weeks before the premiere of the episode on the Bentwaters incident. The show appeared as if it was going ahead as scheduled. I thought, *So much for my visit to AFOSI for help.* I was worried and could only focus on how I was going to have to deal with it when it was televised and the questions that would surely arise. I didn't know then that this concern of mine would be unfounded and a waste of my time thinking about it . . . .

On the night of the showing of the *Unsolved Mysteries* episode about the Rendlesham Incident, I turned on the television just before 8:00 p.m., when it was scheduled to be shown. At exactly 8:00 p.m., the television broadcast was interrupted with the AFN going off the air. All that was showing on the TV was the snow effect. I left the TV on. Then exactly one hour later, AFN came back on the air and just when the *Unsolved Mysteries* show would have finished.

AFOSI had clearly come through with their promise, I thought. I then thought that I need not worry about the show ever being broadcasted again while I was in Germany. The next day, Mark and I had a couple of laughs about the AFOSI coming through with their promise to me. Mark and I never talked about the incident or my visit to AFOSI or the *Unsolved Mysteries* episode again. I often wondered if Mark ever watched the show on any of the re-runs. Knowing Mark, I would bet he did.

As for me, I eventually received a VHS copy of the show from the States several weeks later from my sister Jan. I did watch it, and for the most part it relayed what had happened from Burroughs' own perspective. What was comical to me was that Burroughs was being portrayed by the actor playing him as the guy in charge of the investigation. He was shown leading me and Cabansag (the actors playing us), while talking on the radio to CSC, *which he never did.* The scene then cut to Burroughs being interviewed and he talked about having received a transmission telling him that Heathrow tower in London had reported radar contact with an object over the base, which had then disappeared.

In fact, the radar transmission came through to me while I was talking to CSC at the East Gate, which was a good while before we had even begun walking out in the forest. Burroughs was Law Enforcement, and through his

direct line to the Law Enforcement desk would have only been required to communicate with them, NOT CSC (Central Security Control), that was the protocol.

While watching myself being demoted to the rank of a subordinate airman, I had to remind myself that I was the ranking officer in charge, and it was me who had been ordered out there to lead the investigation.[dcxvii] Also, while the actors playing Cabansag and me were following close behind the actor playing Burroughs, he was even shown putting his hand out to take the radio off me and to put it up to his mouth to talk to CSC.[dcxviii] There I was being portrayed as his subordinate, when Burroughs wasn't even my first choice to go out there with me. It was laughable.

It was obvious to me that the account was being shown from Burroughs' own perspective, as if he had dictated what was going to be portrayed in the show. After all, out of the three of us, he was the only witness who had come forward with his own account of what had happened that night, and so it was perhaps assumed by the TV production team that Burroughs was in charge throughout the investigation. If this was the case, then Burroughs decided to say nothing to the contrary and allowed them to portray him in charge, perhaps thinking I was long gone, that I would always remain silent about what happened, and, therefore, wouldn't be around in the future to object to this false portrayal regarding rank.

Then there were the inconsistencies in the accounting from Burroughs on what exactly had happened. Burroughs said that he, Airman Cabansag, and myself were all together on the approach, which was fair enough, but did not say that only he and I had continued on without Cabansag, whom I remember having ordered back to the logging road where the Jeep was parked to act as relay for our communications with CSC. Although Cabansag wasn't with us when we came upon the landed unidentified craft in the clearing, Cabansag was portrayed as being present in the documentary. Burroughs then said that in the clearing he saw an object, and that it had a bank of blue lights on it and was strobing.[dcxix]

All Burroughs said next is that we all hit the ground and that "it" (the craft) went up into the trees. The three actors playing us were shown laying on the ground, even though Cabansag wasn't there at this point. And as if to add to the confusion, all three of us were shown looking up at a stereotypical, 'saucer-shaped' UFO, arrayed with banks of different colored pulsating lights, flying away from us and above the trees. This portrayal was totally

wrong, as the unidentified ‘object’ or ‘craft’ I witnessed *was black and triangular, and NOT saucer shaped.*

Surely, I thought, *Burroughs would have mentioned what the craft looked like?*

The ridiculous saucer-shaped craft was then shown *slowly* rising up into the sky above the canopy of the trees and moving off *slowly* – which is not what happened. After I had examined the triangular craft and when it had ascended and moved to hover at a point some 200-feet above the trees, I then witnessed it rotate slightly, only to then shoot off and disappear in a ‘blink of the eye’ instant . . . *an experience I will never forget.*

Burroughs also mentioned the time anomaly effects we both experienced (that part was true), and also that we had followed the craft for some time afterwards.

Burroughs gave no accounting of me and my ‘on-the-ground’ investigation of the unidentified triangular craft. Aside from either he or the producer/director making it appear that I was his (Burroughs’) subordinate that morning when we were sent out to investigate, as well as the absurd discrepancies, I must say that in a way I was mostly pleased with Burroughs’ public accounting of the incident. Again, it was told from his own perspective, and it did not jeopardize the containment measures that were in place. In fact, I was somewhat surprised at this time that Burroughs had the common sense NOT to tell everything about the incident. In my experience, he was not reliable, and he was often referred to as a “loose cannon” by the officers and NCOs appointed over him – especially by Col. Halt. Despite this, on seeing that Burroughs left out my close-up investigation of the craft, I could only assume he was safeguarding some of what had happened as per the instructions given to him by the agents during the debriefing.

In any case, the television show mainly concentrated on Colonel Halt and his team’s accounting of what had happened during the incident he and they had witnessed in general. I was surprised that Col. Halt’s accounting was mostly about lights in the sky. Of course, there were some exceptions, like the laser-like beam they had witnessed, and the appearance of a craft that was shaped like an eye and had what looked like “molten metal dripping from it” as well as the description of this eye-shaped craft winking at them. But, it was clear that no landing had taken place on the third night like what I had witnessed on the first night.

I wondered if Colonel Halt had been given instructions to minimize his

story, as some of it contradicted what I had been told by Colonel Heubusch. What I had heard about the third night was perplexing, and I was alone to speculate and make my own evaluations based on what I had witnessed. What I found the most disturbing, though, was why Burroughs and Halt went public on these incidents – especially after the impression had been clearly left with me that everything we had witnessed was deemed a *highly-classified event* . . . .

In the aftermath of the debriefings and interviews I had experienced before leaving the base – the most current being my contact with the local AFOSI at Bitburg and them helping me by somehow having it blocked from being broadcast on the Armed Forces Network – I was thinking that the only conclusion to this was that neither Burroughs nor Col. Halt had any knowledge of the containment story I had been told about by J. D. Ingalls. I then had the piercing thought, *"Why me then?"* I concluded that it was quite possible that they were not told anything of that I had been told. That seemed to fit with what Halt had conveyed . . . *but it did not fit with what Burroughs had said.* After all, he was only about ten to twenty feet behind me, and there was no way he could NOT have seen the 'on ground' investigation I had conducted with the craft. However, the answer to this is something that I would only discover years later when I finally met up with Burroughs again and in a situation where we could talk alone – just the two of us, face-to-face.

The viewing of the VHS film that night was a disturbing event indeed. I had the most real nightmares of the incident. I relived the incident again in absolute detail. After waking up in a cold sweat, I would then regain sleep each time only to have the nightmares begin again. It was a long and complicated night for me. The next morning, my wife commented on the restless night I had just had. I brushed it off by saying that I must have drunk too much coffee before bedtime, and it was left at that. I then called Cosgrove-Muir, the production company for *Unsolved Mysteries* and demanded that the production company remove my name from the show, which they did.

January 1992

The following months at Bitburg before and after the end of 1991 were busy. It was the middle of January 1992, and we were now at war with Iraq. Operation 'Desert Shield' became Operation 'Desert Storm' (the Iraq war in the Middle East). After the war, I began having issues with my sense of balance and repeated feelings of dizziness, as if I was going to blackout. I visited the base hospital for help with this recurring physical problem. My doctor did several tests, and then she asked me if I was ever exposed to radiation. Rolling my eyes in surprise, I said, "No." This was the second time I had told a doctor that, knowing it was not entirely true, but I had no proof that I had been exposed to radiation . . . and anyway, it was not a subject I could talk about. It did not sit well with me at all, for I desperately wanted to be treated for this condition and get back to duty. I was then referred to a civilian specialist in Trier Germany, and it was the specialist's recommendation that I be seen by a neurologist.

I went to the USAFE hospital at Mannheim Air Base and was seen by a neurologist there. A startling and devastating diagnosis was given to me for which I was not prepared. The neurologist said that he believed I had the beginning of the disease known as *Multiple Sclerosis* (MS), along with the gloomy prognosis of having only five years to live! I was shaken by the doctor's remarks.

I returned home and said nothing to my family about the diagnosis. The only thing I said was that I was going to be treated over the next few months or so to see what treatment would minimize the sense of balance and dizziness issues. I saw no reason to worry my family or any work associates with this impending burden, which I was hoping was a wrong diagnosis.

I underwent an MRI and CAT scan. Then a week went by, and I was told to report to the base hospital and to see my physician, which I did. She asked me to sit down, and she then calmly told me that the neurological MRI and CAT scan results had eliminated the previous diagnosis of my having MS. I

was so relieved. I could no longer be angry about the anguish I was left with since the specialist had told me what he had suspected. My physician then said it was more than a probability that it could be *Meniere's Disease* with the primary condition being Vertigo. I was actually relieved with those words – at least it wasn't life-threatening, and I could live with that. I had been living with worse since the incident – especially the dreams and nightmares.

A regimental treatment of valium was given to me, which had a decreasing dosage as the weeks went by. After taking the valium, my condition improved, and things became better. I could function normally. By summer, I was back working, and it seemed cured. This was wonderful timing, as I then received rotation orders back to the States and was told I would be stationed at Grissom AFB, Indiana, at the end of January. The time sped by, and my family and I were soon on our way to Grissom after a short leave at home.

Grissom Air Force Base, USA, Early 1992

Call from Colonel Halt . . . Rendlesham Incident NOT Classified

At Grissom AFB, I was assigned to the Security Flight as a Squad leader. Working at Grissom was quite basic. It was very 'laid back,' and compared to what I had experienced on other bases, it seemed the staff there had nothing to do but to worry about small, trivial things. I was working one night on patrol, and I received a call from Central Security Control (CSC) that I had an incoming call from a Colonel Halt . . . I was not surprised. Again, this had become normal behavior with Halt. I went into CSC and waited for the call. The call came in shortly, and I was talking to Col. Halt once again. He was now retired from the USAF and had been since 1991.

I wasted no time in mentioning the *Unsolved Mysteries* episode, and asked if his appearing on it had been approved with the Air Force. Col. Halt then said that when he was going through the 'out processing' stage when he retired, he did ask them if the incident was still classified and that the reply was that *nothing about the so-called "incident" he was referring to was classified.* It was as if the attitude was now being taken that it had never happened. So, with that answer, Halt said that he had decided to do the show.

I found that very strange, since the information seemed to have been

handled completely differently from what I had been told and what I had experienced over the years. But none-the-less, I trusted what Colonel Halt was saying. He also mentioned that he had decided to write a book on this with two other gentlemen and wanted me to be part of it. I asked why he wanted to do a book. Halt's response was that there was a huge amount of disinformation going around about the Rendlesham Incident and that this disinformation was primarily being spouted by a "disgruntled airman who was discharged from the USAF after only having been assigned for a few months at RAF Bentwaters." Colonel Halt expressed his wish that he now wanted to set the record straight.

I said I would do what I could to help with that. He expressed his appreciation. However, the fact that me being a Non-Commissioned Officer (NCO) and he being a Colonel was so out of the ordinary in the culture of the Air Force, I was amused, if not perplexed as to how this would play out. Also, based on what the Colonel was telling me about the disinformation he was hearing and reading, it was clearly becoming obvious that he knew nothing about the cover or containment story that had been put out around the base and in the surrounding area back in England, and was unaware that the "disgruntled airman" could be exploiting this story for his own ends, which of course would reinforce the containment story even more.

The consistent telling of this by Halt definitely painted the picture clearly in my mind that he knew nothing about the containment story, and so the likelihood of Halt putting the record straight seemed unlikely – especially having no knowledge of the fact that he was really dealing with the disinformation that had been put out by 'useful idiots,' some of whom were airmen that were virtual teenagers at the time, on the orders of the officers above him. Because of this, he was most likely going to end up muddying the waters even more. To rationalize it, I thought that the whole thing had to be on a 'need-to-know' basis. It was as if Col. Halt – clearly not knowing that what he was attempting to put straight – was all part of the containment story, in that he was actually being allowed to come out and try and put things straight, not knowing that like the "disgruntled airman," (Warren) he would in fact be adding to the confusion and reinforcing the containment story. *What else could it be?*

Summer 1992

I was contacted again by Colonel Halt to talk to a guy name Ben Jamison – one of the partners whom Halt had assembled for his book project. I agreed to talk to Ben Jamison, and a week or so later I was contacted by him to arrange an interview with him 'off-base.' I met Jamison at a local diner, and he asked if he could tape the interview. I said, "No."

He then asked me questions about the incident without his recorder. I gave him a brief summary of what I had experienced and also information about the craft, along with the fact that symbol glyphs were etched on its side. Naturally, after having been told that I couldn't talk about the incident, I was quite guarded about the more extraordinary things I had experienced during my encounter with the craft and gave simple answers to his questions without going into too much detail. My ability to talk and give virtually nothing away was a 'learned art' for sure. After a couple of hours, my meeting with Benton Jamison, a Professor of Mathematics at Albany New York, was over. My impression of Jamison was that he was just a hobbyist on the Rendlesham Incident and that he would research these types of things during his summer breaks when not teaching.

Some two weeks later, my mom, my dad and sisters came to Grissom to visit me and my family. It was the first time they had all visited me at a base where I was stationed. It would be their last chance, since I was retiring from active duty the following year. Time with my parents and sisters was short, and they would only be with us for a week, so I was trying to spend as much as I could with them during their short stay. We all went to an airshow at the base, which I had to work, and they all seemed to enjoy that, what with the Army parachuting and the Blue Angels.

One day, I was preparing the van for a local trip with them to do some sightseeing, and I was cleaning out the van with my dad. While I was getting some cleaning supplies, my dad had turned on the van radio. He then came over to me and said, "I want you to hear something very odd." I followed him over to the van, and I could hear activity inside my house, which happened to be my wife and others talking.

Dad then said, "How in hell is that possible?" I was speechless.

We soon found the source during a 'sound search' of my family walking around the house and when their activity got louder and stronger. We homed in on the phone line and the wall connection, which was found to be loose. I

then found a small black device, which measured about one inch by three inches. It had a long black wire on it, which was wrapped around the phone line. After removing it, I saw that it had a small ‘on/off’ switch on it. I switched it off and checking with the van radio outside, it was now silent.

It was obvious that I was being monitored . . . *but by whom and why?*

For the first time ever, I then told my dad about the incident. He was supportive, and he was concerned. After my family returned, I got hold of a Sergeant I knew in the Base Audio and Visual Lab. I took the device to him and asked if he could help me out by telling me what this device was and where it was manufactured. He said he would do me the personal favor of looking into it.

I then met up with the Sergeant over lunch later that week after he called me and said he had some answers. He first asked me where I had gotten this device. I said, “Don’t ask.” He then said, “The only reason I am asking is this is high-tech stuff.” He told me it operated on a ‘fix FM modulation frequency’ and had a range of several hundred feet to possibly a quarter of a mile. It also had an internal power supply by battery, which in his opinion could last several months. He said it was completely void of any manufacturer or part numbers. Again, he asked where I had gotten it from. I said, “My home, on the base.” “Well,” he said, “I don’t want nothing else to do with this Jim, because it is obvious you are under surveillance by someone, and I think it’s pretty high up since this isn’t cheap technology.”

Disturbing as that was to hear, it left me with no other conclusion. It had to be about my being monitored because of the incident in December 1980. In particular, perhaps the meeting with Jamison had sent up red flags. I really did not know for sure as to the ‘whys’ and ‘hows.’ I could only guess. One thing for sure, I could not wait for my retirement date. It could not come fast enough.

Soon after this, I then had another bout with what I was told was vertigo and assumed it had to be stress related. A regimen of very low dose valium was reintroduced. It caused me to temporarily go on the ‘no weapons’ list, so I was assigned to First Sergeant, and was placed in charge of the Security Police dormitories. This was a very ‘laid back’ job and very light duty. It actually worked out for me, since I was now beginning my ‘out processing’ and retirement briefings for my impeding retirement from the USAF. By this time, I had purchased a house back in my home town, and my family had

moved ahead of me.

One of the things all Air Force people did before retirement was to get a copy of their full medical records. I requested a copy. It was about an inch thick, but I was satisfied it would ensure a complete record if ever needed. The Veterans Administration was a huge monster, where the left hand did not know what the right hand was doing. So, I took the standard initiative to safeguard my records. As I went through the retirement 'out processing' from the Air Force, I was signing paperwork at the Base Personnel Center, and one of the statements was my confidentiality agreement on classified information I had gained within the Air Force. It covered all things from weapon systems, contingency plans, operational documents, and nuclear weapon information. The one thing that was not on that list was the investigation into the Rendlesham Incident. I asked the sergeant if he could check that, and I gave him the dates and some information about the event. He told me he would send a message off to HQ USAF and see if there was an inclusion for the signing.

A few days later, he got a message back from USAF, and he said we could go on with the 'out processing.' While I was there, he handed me the so-called 'updated document,' which it clearly was not. Nothing had been changed on it. I then asked him what the Headquarters' response to his message to them had been. He said that it was all very odd. He showed me the document that said nothing classified happened on the dates in question, and therefore *nothing was classified.*

A very strange response, I thought. It seemed that the people in the Air Force who once had me living in complete secrecy about Rendlesham couldn't care less now if I talked about it . . . .

I finished my 'out processing' and was off to retirement and my new job.

Retirement . . . October 31, 1993

My retirement date came quickly, and all seemed perfect. I had retired with twenty-seven military honours and a letter of appreciation from the then President of the United States, Bill Clinton. I had secured a good job working for a private investigative security company, *Stewart and Associates*, which was working the Tristate area, and I was hired in a new position for the company as the Vice President of Security Operations. I was to develop a

Security Department and obtain contracts with future clients, which included defense contractors as well. *Honeywell* was one of these contractors. I was working twelve to fourteen-hour days getting the section up and running.

It was a job for which I was well suited after just coming out of the Air Force, familiar with the new 'cutting edge' technology and developments within the Security field. I also continued with college courses, working within the Human Resources field.

An offer from Colonel Halt

A few days after this new career start, I received another call from Colonel Halt. His first words to me were that he was really bothered with the disinformation that had been put out there about the Rendlesham Incident. I then told Halt what I had learned concerning what he had told me during our previous conversation and what the Air Force had said about Rendlesham when I retired – that basically they were saying that nothing had happened and so nothing about it was classified.

Colonel Halt said it was fully understandable, that this was the case when he first learned of it himself. He then repeated what he had told me previously, that it was the same for him when he retired because he had then inquired about it at the Pentagon to get confirmation. In any case, we continued to discuss the situation and the most puzzling thing about this, which was the glaring fact that all the Air Force had to say at the time was that the Rendlesham Incident was classified, and we would never talk about it or go public with it again. The Col. Halt said, *"Well, for some reason, it is now open for discussion,"* as if emphasizing the fact. I knew he wanted my collaboration on something he was involved in.

I then learned that the call from Colonel Halt was really about an opportunity to straighten out the Rendlesham event while being interviewed in a TV documentary that was being planned by a British television company. He asked me if I wanted to be involved with the show being filmed back in the UK. I said I would have to think about it since I was just starting a new job. Col. Halt expressed that he understood my position, but I could tell he was anxious. He also said that Burroughs had already agreed to do the show with him, as if that would help change my mind. I then asked myself, *why on Earth does the Colonel need me if he already has Burroughs?* The whole

thing seemed redundant. We then left it, with me saying I would think about it. But after several more phone calls from the Colonel, I finally agreed to do it on unpaid vacation time.

Freeport Pilots Association Conference
November 18, 1993.

I was contacted by an old friend of mine, John Blum of the Annapolis Naval Academy, who asked me to speak at a conference he was organizing about the subject of what was then referred to as the RAF Bentwaters/Woodbridge Incident. Seeing this as the first opportunity for me to come forward to speak about my experiences since I had retired, I agreed to attend.

The conference took place at the *Freeport Pilots Association,* close to the airport at Freeport, Illinois, on November 18, 1993. This conference, which took place eighteen days after I had retired from the USAF on October 31, 1993, was the first time I had come out in public to talk about my account of what I had truly witnessed and experienced during the incident, which was my up-close examination of an unidentified, black triangular craft of unknown origin. I brought my notebook with me to show the audience because I had included what I had written in the notebook in my lecture notes about the craft I had encountered during the investigation that Boxing Day morning some thirteen years ago. This was the first time I had shown the notebook in public.[dcxx] I keep all my notes, even lecture notes and presentations I have given. Below are included photo images of the 'lecture notes' which are still in my possession, and which detail what I discussed that day:

TALKING PAPER
ON
RAF BENTWATERS/WOODBRIDGE INCIDENT

INTRODUCTION BY JOHN BLUM OF THE FREEPORT PILOTS ASSOCIATION

NOVEMBER 18, 1993

INTRODUCTION:

THANK THE FREEPORT PILOTS ASSOCIATION AND MR JOHN BLUM FOR INVITING ME.

PRELUDE:

HISTORY - THE INCIDENT HAPPENED IN DECEMBER OF 1980

RAF WOODBRIDGE ENGLAND - TWIN BASE WITH RAF BENTWATERS 3MIL

VARIOUS ACCOUNTS OF THAT NIGHT SINCE INITIAL PRESS RELEASE 1980

SEVERAL ACCOUNTS WERE TOLD OF THE ENCOUNTER SINCE THEN
BBC, CNN, CBS, NBC, AND FOX TELEVISION NETWORK PROGRAMMING

THE ACCOUNT YOUR ABOUT TO SEE IS ESSENTIALLY 80% CORRECT
SOME OF YOU MIGHT HAVE SEEN THIS SEGMENT FROM THE ORIGINAL BROADCAST LAST YEAR ON UNSOLVED MYSTERIES. REMEMBER IT IS ONLY ONE VERSION FROM THE OTHER AIRMAN WHO WORKED FOR ME THAT NIGHT

WHEN IT WAS TELEVISED I WAS STATIONED IN GERMANY AND I DID NOT GIVE PERMISSION FOR MY NAME TO BE USED IN THIS FILM CLIP. UN FORTUNATELY IT IS MENTIONED ONCE DURING A SEEN.

SHOW THE VIDEO CLIP-

THE INCIDENT - TIME OF HAPPENING 0006 HOURS GREENWICH MEANS TIME

CALLED BY POLICE TWO (JOHN BURROUGHS) OF POSSIBLE HAZARD INCIDENT

ARRIVED AT EAST GATE. APPEARED TO BE AN AIRCRAFT DOWNING, ASSUMED A/C WAS ON FIRE. NO SMOKE OBSERVED.

CALLED CENTRAL SECURITY CONTROL BY DIRECT LAND LINE. ADVISED THEM OF SITUATION. STOOD BY FOR INSTRUCTION

INSTRUCTED CONFIRM BOGY FROM BENTWATERS TOWER, LOSS SIGHTING FROM SCREEN 15 MIN AGO. TRIANGULATED RESULTS FROM EASTERN RADAR RAF BRAWDSY AND LONDON.

Fig 1: Page 1 of the lecture notes from Jim Penniston's archive.

INSTRUCTED TO INVESTIGATE

OBJECT 3 X 3 METERS AND THREE METERS HIGH.

BLACK GLASS LIKE APPEARANCE

SMOOTH

COLORS RED BLUE YELLOW WHITE (BRIGHT)

ETCHING ON SIDE MEASURE FOUR INCH HIGH APPROX 3/4 METER LONG

PHOTOGRAPH 72 PICTURES 35 MM - CAMERA NORMALLY USED FOR PERIMETER ENCROACHMENT PHOTOGRAPHY

LANDING SITE IMPRESSIONS TRIANGULAR 1 1/2 INCHES DEEP

FOLLOWING DAY CONTAINMENT TEAM FROM STATES ARRIVED. USING GROUND TEMP AND SOIL COMPOSITION TEST DETERMINED THE CRAFT WEIGHT TO BE BETWEEN 7 1/2 AND 8 TONS

OTHER PEOPLE CONCERN - GORDON WILLIAMS WING COMMANDER AT TIME NOW WORKS AS A VICE PRESIDENT FOR A MAJOR AIR CARRIER

CHARLES HALT - DEPUTY BASE COMMANDER NOW WORKS FOR THE NATIONAL SECURITY AGENCY.

BRUCE ENGLAND - SECURITY POLICE SHIFT COMMANDER NOW WORKS IS IN AIR FORCE INTELLIGENCE IN THE GRADE OF MAJOR.

JOHN BURROUGHS - POLICE TWO PATROLMAN NOW OWNS HIS OWN CORPORATION IN ARIZONA.

WITH THE EXCEPTION OF COLONEL GORDEN WILLIAMS , RET, ALL THE PEOPLE MENTION HAVE ALL DEVELOPED SEVERE VERTIGO AND MIDDLE EAR PROBLEMS SINCE THE INCIDENT.

OFFICIAL AIR FORCE RESPONSE 1983 CLASSIFIED TOP SECRET

OFFICIAL AIR FORCE AND
DEPARTMENT OF STATE
RESPONSE 1993 INCIDENT NEVER OCCURRED.

CRIMINAL ACTIVITY

JOHN BURROUGHS 4 HOUSE HOLD ROBBERIES 2 ELECTRONIC WIRELESS TRANSMITTERS FOUND IN HIS HOUSE

Fig 2: Page 2 of the lecture notes from Jim Penniston's archive.

OBJECT 3 X 3 METERS AND THREE METERS HIGH.
BLACK GLASS LIKE APPEARANCE
SMOOTH
COLORS RED BLUE YELLOW WHITE (BRIGHT)
ETCHING ON SIDE MEASURE FOUR INCHES HIGH
APPROX ¾ METER LONG
PHOTOGRAPH 72 PICTURES 35 MM – CAMERA
NORMALLY USED FOR PERIMETER ENCROACHMENT
PHOTOGRAPHY
LANDING SITE IMPRESSION TRIANGULAR 1 ½ INCHES
DEEP
FOLLOWING DAY CONTAINMENT TEAM FROM
STATES ARRIVED USING GROUND TEMP AND SOIL
COMPOSITION
TEST DETERMINED THE CRAFT WEIGHT TO BE BETWEEN 7½ AND 8 TONS

The conference was just after starting my job as Vice President of Security for Stewart and Associates. It was my boss Brian Stewart's idea to have me speak, and he scheduled the meeting and conference. Brian Stewart was the State Senator for the 89th district in Illinois, having been appointed in 2013 and re-elected in 2014 and 2016. He is now State Senator for the 45th District.

A.J.S. Rayl, Winter 1993

A few weeks after agreeing to do the TV documentary with Colonel Halt, I was then contacted by a female journalist with the pen name, *A.J.S. Rayl.* Her real name was Salley Rayl. She had vast professional writing experience and worked for many national newspapers and magazines. Although it was still the age of paper and print, Salley was now doing a project for Microsoft – a first in the infancy of on-line productions. She contacted me via a referral made by Colonel Halt, whom she had already approached to interview. Salley had expressed to Chuck Halt, (which was how I addressed him, since we had become close), her wish to interview me also, so Chuck asked me if he could

pass my phone number on to Salley. Now that the "coda years" had passed, I was open to discussion, and I was eager to inform the public as to what had really happened during the first night's events and what I had personally experienced. I was now willing to go into greater detail than I would have been allowed to before, or even allowed myself to. I was also spurred on by the fact that the event was for the most part 'unknown' in the United States, and so a great many people would be hearing about it for the first time. Although I was now working as a Vice-President for a large Security firm, I was sure I could find the time between my part-time college classes and work to accommodate Salley Rayl and any questions she had.

The initial phone discussions with Salley took place on the weekends, and as is natural, each conversation lasted longer the more we talked and became familiar with each other. Salley wanted an interview for the new online Microsoft project, which was named *"Project Open Book."* The project was the idea of Bill Gates, who had founded Microsoft, and was a 'watched' project of his, which was given the name *"Watchfire."* This was to be a new and unique 'Internet innovation project' for the newly-commercialized development of what was fast-becoming the World Wide Web.

Salley Rayl was an interesting journalist for sure. She was a Stanford graduate in Journalism, and I could tell she was very skilled at conducting interviews. Salley had written a published book on The Beatles, titled, *Beatles '64: A Hard Day's Night in America* (1989). I must say that I had not encountered this high degree of professionalism before or since with anyone else. Salley Rayl tells it like it is, and to me she was the epitome of what a highly-skilled investigative journalist was.

We did the 'Open Book' interview,[dcxxi] and then Salley wanted to develop it further. She wanted us to do a book, but in much more detail than the 'Open Book' article. Salley talked to both Col. Halt and to me, and we signed an 'intent contract' with the venture. Salley was a stickler for detail and always wanted to cover all her bases when writing. She already had a knowledgeable grasp of what had taken place during the Bentwaters Incident, which by this time was commonly known as the *Rendlesham Forest Incident.* The discussions I had with Salley Rayl only concentrated on the first night's events, as this was the night when I was involved.

Salley said that she was conducting interviews with the men who were in charge on each of the nights relating to the Rendlesham Incident to talk about

their experiences and thought it best to concentrate on the events of each night separately. I would talk about the first night, and Col. Halt would talk about the third night. I agreed. Being totally left out of the conversation about the third night suited me, as the simple fact was . . . *I wasn't there* – although from what I understood and had witnessed, I was certain that Col. Halt and the other witnesses with him had observed UAP (Unidentified Aerial Phenomena) of some kind.

As said, Salley and I first did the project through a series of phone conversations. However, this later culminated with her coming out to my home with the Microsoft crew. I vividly remember the day in December when Salley pulled up to my house. She and the team arrived in five Black SUVs. I had not seen such a convoy since observing the arrival of the secret service at Ellsworth during a Presidential visit. We completed the film shoot that day and went to a local supper club for dinner and relaxation. With all the Microsoft folks who came along with Salley, it felt like a huge family of twenty. We all sat at a large table in a semi-private area of the restaurant. It was then I asked if she had already filmed Colonel Halt for this project. She said she had done several telephone interviews with Halt, but there were no plans to film him. I was perplexed by this, since we were all involved on the newly-signed book project.

Salley then said, "Let me be frank with you Jim. I know the Incident at the twin bases was all about the first night. The third night is secondary, as, at best, it only involves unexplained lights, and an intelligently-directed light beam. The core of the incident rests with the first night and what YOU witnessed and experienced."

I felt uneasy, since Salley's words highlighted the kind of 'smoke and mirrors' effect that the government agents had implemented so many years before . . . to have everything and everyone focused on the third night's events so that what happened during the first night appeared and remained a 'low-level incident,' which would hopefully become less relevant as time went on. This is why the containment (cover) story that had been spread by J. D. Ingalls was focused on the third night, with other disinformants and 'wannabes' saying they were there on that night, making it appear more significant than it was. It was known that the 'aliens from outer space' believers and 'extraterrestrial hypothesis' subscribers would lap it up and

cling to it endlessly, which made me wonder if the people who instigated this knew what the phenomenon we had encountered really was and why they felt they needed to cover it up with a typical UFO story – phenomena that the US and UK governments and the US Air Force had tried to deny and explain away in the past anyway. However, the fact they had made the cover story a ludicrous, typical Alien/UFO yarn with small grey-skinned, bug-eyed alien entities floating in shiny suits showed they were willing to make an exception when it suited them.

Although I felt uneasy, at the same time I could now see the light of truth emerging through Salley's astuteness and how ironic the eventual outcome would be if she said what she was going to do – i.e., place more importance on the first night's events in this project. I was amused by the thought that the questionable ethics of the government agents – i.e., altering everyone's attention or 'point of focus' towards the events of the third night, and really to hide and obscure the more significant phenomena that was witnessed during the first night – might end up having the opposite effect . . . .

I then thought about the many conversations I had with Colonel Heubusch so many years before. I then turned to Salley and said, "I find your conclusions interesting."

Salley only responded by lifting an eyebrow while smiling, and the conversation ended there.[dcxxii]

During the weeks that followed, Salley and Microsoft were concentrating their efforts on the book research. Those weeks then turned into months, and Col. Halt became impatient with Salley's progress on the book. At first, I thought, *what was the rush? We were both out of the Air Force, and we both had plenty of time.* I could not see any reason to be impatient or to rush the book. But as the days went by, the bickering grew worse.

It was then I realized that the Colonel felt stifled by the contract because he was eager to do other projects, such as documentaries and interviews – one of which I had also agreed to do. However, in our contract with Salley, doing other interviews or documentaries was forbidden. It did not matter to me because I saw this as an opportunity to finally present the public with the truth of what had happened, and this was the first time that telling it all in a book appealed to me. During every phone call I had with him – which ranged into the dozens – Halt had expressed his discontent about this. I was caught in between both he and Salley and was feeling under pressure with it. I had no

problem with Salley. After all, she was the author, and that was fine with me. However, Halt was very impatient, and I witnessed him constantly trying to push her into a more irresponsible pace of writing and investigation of the facts, which would only compromise the quality of the book.

On several different occasions, Salley had talked to me about Halt and his impatience, that they were 'butting heads' all the time. At the same time, I was also receiving numerous telephone calls from Halt complaining about Salley. I saw the friction between them only growing. It was also evident that Salley had strong opinions on the Rendlesham Incident as a whole, and again, her main focus was the first night's events with which I was involved. For her, it was the first night that defined the Rendlesham Incident, and Col. Halt obviously now knew this. Again, I saw the irony in this, seeing as there had been a concerted effort by the government to obscure the first night's events by focusing more on the third night.

During the first few months in 1994, I visited Washington DC and had arranged to meet with Colonel Halt. After having lost one of the plaster casts taken of the three depressions made by the craft, I wanted to make sure the evidence of at least one of the two remaining plaster casts survived, so I kept one plaster cast and packaged the other one to take with me to Washington DC to give to Col. Halt, who asked me if he could have one so he could have analyzed for radiation. When I went through security at the airport, the TSA (Transportation Security Administration) pulled me to the side and to test for hidden explosives. I told one of the TSA guys what the package was. I said it's going to be hard for you to believe this but this is a plaster cast of one of the landing pods that was taken from the landing site of the Bentwaters/Rendlesham Incident. The TSA were fascinated by the story. Halt drove to my hotel in DC from his home in Woodbridge Virginia to pick up the plaster cast. When I handed the plaster cast to Halt, he agreed to give it back someday, but to date, he hasn't. Anyway, the radiation analysis according to Halt was negative, which I thought it would be after fourteen years.

Strange but True? April 1994

As arranged, I met Burroughs at O'Hare Airport in Chicago, where he had

just flown in from Arizona. Both of us then made the trip together from Chicago to the UK, where we would meet Col. Halt. On the trip over, I was a captive audience to the constant questions aimed at me by Burroughs. Some were just bizarre and 'off the wall' – especially considering the fact that he was there with me that first night of the incident, and it was obvious to me that he should already know the answers to the questions he was asking anyway. However, I didn't ask him the questions I should have at this time. Those questions would have to wait another fifteen years!

One thing for sure, it was clear that Burroughs was his same old self from the last time I saw him at Bentwaters. Burroughs was more concerned about the money for an honorarium for the trip. I said nothing. I was receiving the paid trip and expenses with nothing more needed. I was interested in seeing Rendlesham Forest and the bases again while I was there. These were the things that really motivated me in joining this trip, and of course talking to Colonel Halt again.

After arriving in London, we all stayed at the same hotel. It was nice meeting with the Colonel, Chuck Halt, again, and seeing him face-to-face, after all the distant phone calls. Burroughs, for the most part, said nothing, even when we were having breakfast together. The three of us then traveled to the pre-production meeting at London Weekend Television (LWT). Soon after arriving, we were shown the 'story boards' for what was going to be an episode of the *Strange But True* series about the event.

It was apparent that they were going to focus more on the events of the third night, which involved Halt. I didn't know how I was going to even begin to explain the fact that my account of what I had truly witnessed and experienced that night or morning was more significant than the account they had up on their story boards, and which kept to the accounts given about the first night in the witness statements that had surfaced three years later. At the time, I didn't pay much attention to the fact that what was in Burroughs' statement later became his accounting of the events, and that was all he had remembered.

As we broke up the meeting, I remembered I had my 1980 notebook with me and thought this would be a perfect lead-up into talking about what I had really experienced. Choosing my moment, I asked the director if he wanted to use my notebook in the show.

"What is it?" he asked.

"My notes, taken on the night of incident," I said.

He grabbed the notebook – the only other person ever to hold the notebook, I should add. He glanced through it quickly and gave it back to me, saying, “Maybe in a follow up show or something, but not with this one, as the storyboards have already been written.”

Although feeling somewhat discouraged, I simply said, “OK.”

I actually regretted bringing up the subject of the notebook. What I described in the notebook and on the night in question was surely important, I thought, and it was typically ironic that the documentary people found no interest in it.

On the other side of the conference room stood Halt and Burroughs, talking to some other production folks. Apparently, the itinerary surrounding where we were going for the shoot and how we would get there was being laid out for us.

It was planned that we film at Dunstable, a nearby WWII Base just outside London. Burroughs had insisted on sitting throughout my accounting of the event we had witnessed during the shoot, which I found odd. But, as things turned out, Halt was the only one filmed that day. The production team then asked Halt and me to do a shoot at RAF Woodbridge. We agreed. We were then told that Burroughs had gone back to stay in London and was going to catch his flight back to the States. I was not really sure what his purpose was in being there. Although I could only speculate at this point, I assumed that the production company had the first night’s events covered, since I had been in charge that night, and, therefore, the third night and its aftermath was covered with Col. Halt, who had taken charge of the third night’s events.

We were driven to RAF Woodbridge the next day. Most of the trees at Rendlesham Forest had disappeared in the freak storm of 1987, while others had been cut down. After almost fourteen years and due to the absence of much of the forest, I was very disorientated as to where the actual landing area was. The production folks found a grouping of standing pines and used that as the landing area. My first issues with film companies regarding their complacency with the facts and loose interpretation of the truth came to the forefront immediately. They tend to place more emphasis on the visuals, which are often far from accurate than the factual details. First of all, they used a site that was not the original landing site. Next, on many occasions some of the words and sentences in my account were substituted for their own words, which they felt would give a more sensational edge to the story

and would correlate with some preconceived view or belief, and/or words that the viewers would understand or could relate to more easily.

For example, in the show I *did* mention that I had gotten up close to the craft, which I said was triangular. But when I began talking about pacing off the size of the craft in feet, I was told to forget that and just describe the craft as being the size of a tank, so the viewers could relate to it better. Even though I would say that the craft I witnessed that night was more-or-less the size of a tank, still, I was frustrated with their rejection of a more detailed description. Also, the dates of the two main incidents – night one and night three – were not mentioned.

I also mentioned that on the upper left side of the craft was an inscription, which measured six inches high (including the large one) of symbols. I remember mentioning other things, like taking photos, which later came out fogged and making notes, but these must have been considered superfluous and most likely ended up on the cutting room floor . . . as has been my experience with a lot of TV documentaries since then. These are just some of the examples of the way in which the production team will edit out things and bend the facts for the sake of what they think viewers WANT to see.

I was kind of relieved in a way that my account didn't take over the show, and I maintained a low profile. I had just done the magazine interview with Salley Rayle and reliving what truly had happened was traumatic for me – it always is when I think about the true version of events – not alone recount it to someone else. Well, that was just a magazine. However, this was a TV DOCUMENTARY THAT WAS GOING OUT TO MILLIONS OF VIEWERS . . . and I wasn't comfortable, and neither was I ready to have all the details of what had happened to me personally shared with such a huge audience. This was still too early a time for me to be this exposed. I had lived with this quietly for years and had only just been retired a year. For now, and until I was absolutely ready, I could do without the media circus that would have surely resulted from being seen as ripping apart the account people were used to and replacing it with what had really happened.

So, although I was able to get a few things in there that I did while I was up-close to the craft, I have to say, that, just as I allowed people on the base to believe the watered-down version of events put in place by my superiors, I simply allowed the film crew to go ahead with largely conveying to their viewers the version of the first night that people who had been following the

case knew up to now, and which was based largely on what very little Burroughs says he had experienced or remembered.

Anyway, to say I wasn't happy with the show is putting it mildly. Again, the portrayal of Burroughs and myself made by the actors – also what they said, and how they said it – was overly-dramatic and comical. The actor who played me pathetically walked up to the actor playing Burroughs who was staring ahead, then looked into the distance to where the former was staring and asked in a Southern drawl, *"What IS that?"* The actor playing Burroughs continued staring ahead, muttering, *"I don't know, and I don't want to know."* The actor playing me then asked quite meekly, *"Was it an explosion, John?"* At this, the actor playing Burroughs slowly shook his head, and while still staring ahead in an exasperated manner and almost gritting his teeth, said, *"It didn't crash . . . it landed."*

That's not what happened at all. Most of the time while I was at the East Gate, I talked with my senior law enforcement counterpart, SSgt. Budd Steffens, asking him direct questions, and it was Steffens who first told me that whatever it was in the woods had landed. However, since the incident, and to date, Steffens has never made himself available, which is unfortunate.

At the end of the day, much of what I did throughout the show was answer questions, and I said very little. But as usual, people do not ask the right questions, which, if answered, could have steered things in a totally new direction in terms of their understanding.

Again, I really wasn't happy with how the TV documentary was handled, but the interesting thing for me while taking part in this show was that I was becoming very aware that Colonel Halt was NOT aware of the existence of the containment/cover story. He just thought that the disinformation that was put out about the incident was the result of the mad rantings of a disgruntled airman whom he did not name to me at the time. So, by observing this situation with Col. Halt, I then eliminated the possibility that Halt wanted to extract information from me, as it was now clear that he simply was not aware of what was really going on.

I say this because during our time together on the filming of *Strange But True?* Colonel Halt handed me his first edition, hardback copy of the book, *Sky Crash,* by Brenda Butler, Dot Street, and Jenny Randles, published almost ten years earlier in October 1984. It was the first time I had seen the book, and Halt was giving me the book to keep. I still have it to this day, and

Halt's name and signature, *Charles I. Halt,* is written at the top inside the back cover.

Col. Halt and I discussed what had been presented in the book, and how much of it was not only grossly inaccurate and just plain wrong, but was chock-full of well-crafted disinformation that had been intentionally spread around the base and the surrounding area of Suffolk, and which then found its way to the authors of *Sky Crash.*[dcxxiii] Halt mentioned that the main 'problem-person' concerning the fortification of this disinformation – especially in the mind of the public – was the airman (Lawrence 'Larry' Warren). And what surprised me is that by the description Halt gave me, (since I had never seen any photos or video of him, as I would often shy away from any public mention of the incident), I then realized he was the young kid . . . the "gofer" in the back room when I worked at Plans and Programs in early 1981. So, it was him who had been spreading this rubbish about "silver-suited, floating aliens" communicating with the Wing Commander.

But one of the more significant things that Col. Halt told me – and this was long before it became public knowledge – was that the name "Steven Roberts" – who was cited as one of the sources that had relayed much of the disinformation presented in *Sky Crash* about the Rendlesham incident – was a pseudonym. He then told me that the true identity of "Steven Roberts" was in fact, SSgt. John David Ingalls . . . now it all made sense.

However, it was apparent to me that Col. Halt hadn't been aware of the past associations I had with Ingalls, and was not aware that in the first week after the three-day incident, Ingalls had actually been ordered by Major Malcolm Zickler to spread a hackneyed, UFO-related cover/containment story around the base and the surrounding area of Suffolk.

After what I had read in the book, in effect, SSgt. J. D. Ingalls was actually the first person – the first "whistleblower" – to bring the incident to public attention, even though it was a well-crafted tale and a grossly, false version of what really happened.

In any case, when I returned back home, I later heard from Col. Halt that Burroughs was being harassed by the AFOSI and his mail was being tampered with. On returning from England after being filmed for the *Strange But True?* Burroughs discovered his home had been totally ransacked, and this wasn't the first time. The only things missing were his files on Bentwaters and a videotape of the CNN documentary on the incident. I was told that nobody had been able to locate him, and apparently he had

disappeared from his home in Arizona without a trace. My thoughts were that he had most likely gotten scared and packed up and moved somewhere else to get away.

Chapter Fourteen

Regression

Jim Penniston:

Soon after arriving back in the States in May of 1994, I began having a horrible time sleeping. The dreams and nightmares were getting worse and more intense, which meant I had less and less sleep every night, and that was not a healthy situation. This went on all through the summer of 1994. I was back to working twelve-hour days, and I had absolutely no time for anything, not with the family or even myself. I would just get home from work, eat, and try to get some sleep. My sleep problems were interfering with my work, so I decided to tell my general physician at the Veterans Administration Clinic. I told her about the sleep difficulties, and she said she could do a referral to a specialist, and hopefully that would help with the sleeping disorder.

I then visited the specialist. After the initial appointments and some attempts with taking different medications to help, she said that it was in her opinion that I have had a traumatic experience way in my past, possibly childhood, and she wanted me to undergo hypnotherapy by transgression from my first memories in life to adulthood. I said, “Sure, I will do anything to solve these sleep issues.”

I scheduled the hypnotherapy session on a Friday to keep to a minimum any interruption to my work schedule. I was actually quite skeptical and thought that this was a “fool’s errand.” I always thought hypnosis was an

uncertain area at best and not something I ever wanted to participate in. However, she was a fully-qualified expert. I noted her qualifications and degrees, which were displayed on the wall. I then reminded myself that this was not some Las Vegas show act; she had only one goal in mind, which was to restore me to restful nights and uninterrupted sleep, so I went with it.

First Hypnosis Session

(Friday, August 26, 1994)

As the doctor prepared for the hypnosis, she had me sit on a couch which looked as though it had been made during the ’60s, and most likely was. I was still doubtful about the hypnosis, but I was also experiencing feelings of hope, too. I remember her telling me to relax, and while using a small light, which she told me to fixate my eyes on, I was continually told to relax and finally to close my eyes, saying that I would remember none of what would transpire during this session.

I then awoke! Having felt that I must have dosed off for a few minutes. I then started to stretch my arms and locking my fingers together, I popped my knuckles. I looked over to my therapist.

She was just sitting there with a peculiar look on her face, like her jaw was sagging.

“Sorry for dosing off,” I said.

“You were not dosing,” she said, “You have been fully hypnotized for the last hour and thirty minutes.”

I looked at my watch. To my astonishment, she was right. *This hypnosis stuff must be the real deal,* I thought. I could not recall a thing. It felt like I had just dozed off for a minute or two. Although I was disorientated by the time loss, I found this treatment more than just interesting.

My therapist was overly quiet and subdued and sat quietly just looking at me. She then looked at her note pad. Then breaking her silence, she looked up and asked me a question.

“Tell me about RAF Woodbridge.”

I sat there stunned for a moment, and without really thinking, I responded to her question with two questions.

“RAF Woodbridge? . . Uh, what did I say about that?”

She explained that during the hypnosis session she took me back to early

childhood, and from there to adulthood, adding that when it came to my career in the UK, I then began to make some strange comments.

"Like what? I asked. "What did I say?"

"Well," she said, "it is obvious that the trauma is from when you were in your mid-twenties and at a place called RAF Woodbridge. It all came out about an extraordinary experience you had while stationed there, and until we address all of it, I cannot help you."

She looked at me sternly and then told me about things relating to my account of the incident I had witnessed and the descriptions I had given that convinced her that I had contact with something very extraordinary and possibly non-terrestrial-related. She was very cautious about what she said and how she said it, as she told me she had not believed in any of this UFO stuff . . . although, looking perplexed, she told me *she was a believer with me.* Hesitant at what to say next, as a lot of things were racing through my mind, all I could say was "OK."

She then told me that what came up in the session was an *obvious jump in time.*

She said I had described being near a craft, examining it, and then suddenly I said I was standing thirty feet away from the craft but next to Airman First Class John Burroughs, who went with me to investigate the scene that night. As mentioned, after the incident, we learned that this sequence of events left about 45 minutes unaccounted for.

The doctor then told me that a second hypnosis session was required because she had run past the time that she wanted me under hypnosis.

"What about confidentiality?" I asked.

The doctor said she was already bound to confidentiality with all her patients, and it would not be an issue for me. She then said she wanted to set up another session, and that this time she would video the session, which I agreed to – although I was still reluctant about it all. But, then I thought, *what can I do but do what she asks?* After all, I needed to fix this problem with sleep at any risk. Upon retirement from the Air Force, I was told that there was nothing classified about the incident. Although I thought that whole response from the day of my retirement was BS, the document that stated the incident wasn't classified would be my protection.

The doctor then reassured me that, once she had her notes written to paper, I could have the video recording of the session and that she would eventually turn her video notes over to me – adding that I should watch the

video when I felt more comfortable with the Woodbridge subject and after I was medicated to sleep better. I told her thanks, and I would comply with all that.

She also had recommendations with my general physician which she had written out. She said that the medication I was given would be looked at, and I should schedule a follow up visit with my primary doctor. I did as she said and scheduled it for the following week. With some optimism, I was hopeful about the effects of the hypnosis on my sleep problem. We then arranged for the second hypnosis session on Saturday, September 10, to explore that seeming discrepancy with the apparent 'jump in time.'

Before the next hypnosis session, I went to my follow-up appointment with my primary physician, and she had a report in front of her that she kept looking down at while she was talking to me. She said that we were going to start a treatment with Prazosin. "It is an interesting medication," she said. "It is usually given for blood pressure issues . . . but it has an interesting set of side effects of the product."

I was then told that it was an alpha blocker, which had properties that work on the central nervous system, and that the effects are the blocking or easing of nightmares. The doctor added that it would also treat my post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD). I raised my eyebrows. *So, I had PTSD from Rendlesham? Wow, that sucks,* I thought. Although the sleep disorder I was suffering with indicated it, this was now news to me. It's not something I felt comfortable in admitting I had, but I didn't say anything and allowed her to carry on. She said that Prazosin was a potent and *adrenergic receptor inverse agonist.* She then went on to tell me that this drug appears to be the most promising at present as an effective treatment for PTSD-sleep related disturbance, including trauma related nightmares, as well as overall anxiety and PTSD symptoms.

The doctor then said that we would start at a regimented dosage from higher to lower level until we met what she called the "Goldilocks level" (balanced level) with the medication. She said I needed to be patient, but that I would immediately see some positive results with my sleep disorder, and if I didn't see any change in a week, she would issue a higher dosage.

Second Hypnosis Session

(Saturday, September 10, 1994)

For her own notetaking purposes, my therapist said she would videotape this session. I fully agreed, because at this point in time I was at best only getting two to four hours sleep at night, and with the multiple and sudden 'sit up in bed' wake-ups I was experiencing, it was dangerous for me to drive or operate any type of machinery while suffering this sleep disorder.

What was strange is that after my hypnosis sessions my dream states during sleep were even more intense, and in a sense worse than before. However, I was told this would be a temporary situation.

The procedure with the second hypnosis session was the same as the first. After coming out of the hypnosis, the therapist had the same look of bewilderment on her face as after the first one. What I found interesting about the hypnosis sessions I underwent, is that to this day, I remember absolutely nothing from them. However, this was as-per the therapist's instructions, and to keep me calm, she had instructed me to tell all as if I were a *"third person watching a movie."* I did find it fascinating. A great deal of information unknown to me consciously had emerged from this second hypnosis session.

* * *

In the interviews Jim Penniston conducted soon after he retired from the USAF at the end of October 1993, he would automatically leave out this part about the telepathic transfer of ones and zeros (binary code). Although he had always remembered writing down the ones and zeros the following morning after the incident, he would skip this part, and it should be noted that it was *not always* a 'conscious' decision to skip this part when he told his account of what had happened while he was examining the craft in the forest. It was as if this short segment in time of his experience had been blocked from his conscious memory.

As mentioned, Jim Penniston underwent the first of two hypnotic regressions on Friday, August 26, 1994, and the second on Saturday, September 10, 1994 – the second of which was filmed. Jim recounted the same events that he remembered consciously and which he had described in his interview with Salley Rayl in December 1993.

Here's an example from the interview Jim Penniston did with Sally Rayl

in December 1993, which was almost two months after he retired from the USAF and some eight months before he underwent hypnosis on August 26, 1994 to treat the sleep disorder he had suffered with since the incident and which became increasingly worse over the years:

> "I touched the symbols, and I could feel the shapes as if they were inscribed or etched or engraved, like a diamond cut on glass. At that point, I backed away from the craft, because the light was starting to get brighter. Still, there was no sound. There was no physical contact with any kind of life form, but there did seem to be a life presence. It was mechanical, this ship, and it seemed to be under intelligent control.
>
> The next thing I knew, I was standing about 20 feet away from the craft with Burroughs, who I thought I had left back near the tree line."[dcxxiv]

The session turned up the same anomalous 'jump in time,' where Jim said, "The next thing I knew . . ." Again, while under hypnosis, Jim describes being near the craft, examining it, and then when noticing the craft had become active again, the next thing he knows, he is suddenly standing thirty feet away next to Burroughs, with no memory of how he got there. This jump in time appeared to be hiding something significant, and it was suspected that a post-hypnotic block had been deliberately-placed on Jim Penniston's conscious memory.

It was then decided to try another hypnosis session to explore that seeming discrepancy, then get around the block, and hopefully remove it.

Again, the second session took place on Saturday, September 10, 1994.

Now, while undergoing the second of his two hypnosis sessions, Jim goes through the same event. He recalls touching each of the symbols which he describes, and then the next thing he knows, Burroughs is there, and he is standing thirty feet from the craft.

> Hypnotist: WHAT ARE YOU TOUCHING?
> Jim Penniston: "The side of it. The symbols. Uh . . ."
> WHAT DOES IT FEEL LIKE.
> "Braille!" (Jim smiles).
> RAISED ABOVE THE SURFACE?
> "Yes." (Pause). "I'm just touching it lightly." (Jim's right hand is still extended and waving as if touching).
> IS IT WARM, COLD?
> "Can't tell because of my fingers." (Jim rubs his fingers together, as if he felt a tingling sensation, and then clenches his hand).

WHAT DO THE SYMBOLS LOOK LIKE?
"I know some. The first one's a triangle." (Jim is now moving his left hand over something). "The second one looks like a musical note." (Pause). "The third one like a triangle with a flag on it . . . a flag pole on it." (Pause). "The other one looks like a target . . . that we shoot at with a head."
WITH A HEAD?
"Yeah." (Pause). "Oh, that's strange. At the top is a large triangle . . . with . . . a . . . It's not a circle, as it's not completely round. It's off. It's . . . it's laying egg shaped . . . it's laying on top of the circle. Another . . . circle . . . on the egg symbol . . . the size of a half a dollar. The other one is a size of a dime, both on the egg-shaped circle. Another shape in the middle . . . egg shaped circle. That's in the center. I . . . they're raised. I got my hand on them."
DID YOU DRAW THESE
"Oh Yeah. Now it's Warm!"
DOES IT FEEL LIKE METAL OR PLASTIC?
"No smooth . . . very smooth." (Pause). "I hear noise."
WHAT KIND OF NOISE?
"The background . . . branches. John's here."
JOHN'S WITH YOU?
"Yeah . . . I don't understand."
HOW LONG HAS JOHN BEEN THERE?
"I don't know. He just . . . he's there. And I'm not by, over by the craft anymore."
WHERE ARE YOU?
"Thirty feet away?"
DO YOU REMEMBER GOING THIRTY FEET AWAY?
"No."

This is the 'jump in time' where a block had obviously been placed on Jim Penniston's memory to hide the 'binary-code download' part of his investigation/experience.

It was at this point that the hypnotist dug deeper by taking Jim Penniston back to when he was touching the symbols on the side of the craft.

Hypnotist: LET'S MOVE BACKWARDS A LITTLE BIT. LET'S GO BACK TO THE CRAFT. AND YOU'RE FEELING THE SYMBOLS. AND WHAT HAPPENS?
Jim Penniston: "Oh." (Pause). "There's a bright light."
WHERE'S THE BRIGHT LIGHT?
"The ship. The black is white, it's bright."
GLOWING BRIGHT?
"Oh! Gotta squint."

HURTS YOUR EYES?
“Yeah.”
ARE YOU STILL STANDING NEXT TO IT?
(Jim shakes his head).
WHAT DO YOU SEE JIM?
“I see nothing . . .”
SOMETHING’S HAPPENING. WHAT’S HAPPENING?
“Not sure.” (Long pause, as Jim screws up his eyes). “I, I see, the symbols OK. But not on . . . they’re not there on the craft.”
WHERE ARE THE SYMBOLS?
“Inside.”
INSIDE THE CRAFT?
“No. In my head.”
INSIDE YOUR HEAD?
“Hm hmm.”

It is obvious that the hypnotist has broken through the block and that Jim is now describing the transfer of binary symbols, which are in his head – his mind’s eye.

Hypnotherapist: HOW DID THEY GET INSIDE YOUR HEAD?
Jim Penniston: “I don’t know.” (Long pause). “It’s awful bright.”
THE SYMBOLS?
“No, no, I can’t see nothing but light.”
ALL LIGHTS
“All light.”
AND THE SYMBOLS ARE STILL IN YOUR HEAD.
“Different ones.”
NOT THE SAME ONES YOU SAW ON THE CRAFT.
“No, it started that way.” (Jim continues to squint). “I don’t know what, what they mean.”

Again, this confirms that the symbols which are in Jim’s head being different than the symbols on the side of the craft, are the ones and zeros, which he still refers to as symbols.

Hypnotherapist: CAN YOU UNDERSTAND IT? CONCENTRATE ON IT.
Jim Penniston: “I ain’t got nothing to worry about. I know that.”
HOW DO YOU KNOW THAT?
“I Feel that. I feel . . . I feel safe.” (Long pause). “Uh . . . I don’t. I don’t know.”
WHAT DON’T YOU KNOW?

“I don’t know what’s going on.”
TELL ME WHAT’S HAPPENING.
“It’s that light. Everywhere I look it’s what I see. Jeez.” (Jim takes a deep breath). “How can it be that bright?”
IT’S SO BRIGHT YOU HAVE TO SQUINT YOUR EYES?
“Yeah, and it’s awfully bright.”
AND THE SYMBOLS ARE STILL THERE?
“No.”
WHEN DID THE SYMBOLS LEAVE?
“When I started looking around.”
WHEN THE SYMBOLS WERE, WERE IN YOUR MIND, DID YOU GET A SENSE THAT THERE WAS AN ENTITY ATTACHED TO THE SYMBOLS?
“Yeah . . . communication.”
COMMUNICATING WITH YOU? OR TO YOU?
(Jim interrupts) “Want to!”
WANT TO . . . DO YOU WANT TO?
“Sure! I don’t understand them. I don’t understand.”
SO, IT’S LIKE YOU DON’T UNDERSTAND WHAT THE SYMBOLS MEAN?
“No. I, I’m safe though.” (Nodding head).
DID YOU GET A SENSE THAT YOU’RE SAFE?
(Jim nods). “I, I have, I don’t have the camera anymore either.”
WHERE’S THE CAMERA?
“I dropped it.”
CAN YOU ASK THE ENTITY WHO PUT THE SYMBOLS IN YOUR MIND TO TELL YOU WHAT THEY MEAN?
“Can’t do that.” (shakes head). “Can’t . . . can’t respond.”
THE ENTITY CAN’T RESPOND?
“There’s no people there!”
NO . . . PEOPLE . . . THERE?
“No.”
IS THERE . . .
(Jim Interrupts) “Machine.”
A MACHINE . . .
(Jim nods).
DO YOU GET THE SENSE THAT, A PERSON, OR A LIVE BEING, PROJECTED THESE SYMBOLS, OR WANTED THESE SYMBOLS PROJECTED TO YOU?
“I, I don’t know that. But I think so. They, they . . . there’s too many of them.”
TOO MANY . . .
“There’s too many symbols to remember.”
CAN YOU SLOW THEM DOWN?
“No.” (Shakes head). “They’re fast.”
SO, THEY’RE GOING THROUGH YOUR MIND

VERY FAST.
(Jim nods). “Yeah . . . Flashing.”
HOW DOES THAT FEEL WHEN THEY FLASH REALLY FAST?
“I can’t, un . . . I can’t, understand. I’m supposed to understand it though. I can’t understand.”
HOW DO YOU KNOW YOU’RE SUPPOSED TO UNDERSTAND IT?
“I feel . . .”
YOU FEEL BADLY BECAUSE YOU CAN’T UNDERSTAND?
“Frustrated.”
FRUSTRATED . . . RIGHT.
(Long pause).
WHERE ARE YOU PHYSICALLY?
“I’m outside.”
NEXT TO THE SHIP . . .
“Next to a light next to it.”
RIGHT NEXT TO IT . . .
“Lights gone. It’s back, black and colors.”
AND THE SYMBOLS STOP.
(Jim nods).
ARE YOU HEARING ANYTHING?
“No. I feel better though. I . . . walk away. I pick the camera from the ground. About twenty feet or so (pause) . . . that’s when I heard John.” (Pause). “I . . . I don’t understand. What I remember is, I don’t know . . .”
WHAT DO YOU REMEMBER?
“A nursery rhyme!”
WHAT'S THE NURSERY RHYME?
(Jim Smiles). “*Mary had a little lamb.”* (Jim laughs with disbelief).
OK, SAY IT.
“Mary had a little lamb, its fleece was white as snow, and everywhere Mary went the lamb was sure to go.” (Jim smiles as he says the nursery rhyme and shakes his head).
WHAT WAS THAT CONNECTED WITH?
“The ship.”
WITH THE SHIP.
“No. No, the ship. I was told that.”
WHO TOLD YOU THAT?
“I was told I wasn’t supposed to talk about that. I don’t know.” (Jim takes a deep breath before pausing). “I, I want out of here, I know that.”
OUT OF WHERE?
“That room.”
WHAT ROOM?
“Over at, in Bentwaters.”
HOW DID YOU GET TO THE ROOM AT

BENTWATERS?
“I . . . I was told to go there.”
WHO TOLD YOU TO GO THERE?
(Indecipherable) “. . . Orderly room.”
OK, WHAT TIME WAS THIS?
“It was two days . . . four.”
FROM DECEMBER 26TH.
“Yeah, it’s December thirtieth.”

OK, LET’S GO BACK IN TIME. LET’S GO BACK TO DECEMBER 26TH, AND YOU’RE IN THE WOODS WITH JOHN.
“With John.”
AND THE NURSERY RHYME COMES INTO YOUR HEAD. *MARY HAD A LITTLE LAMB* . . .
“And its fleece was white as snow, and everywhere that Mary went, the lamb was sure . . . I, I learned that! I learned that, from the time of the light to . . . to John.”

From the *“time of the light, to John,”* is from: 1) when Jim touches the large circled-triangle and sets off the blinding light which results in the transfer of ones and zeros to Jim’s mind, to 2) when Jim is aware of John. The most significant part of Jim’s experience was when the binary code was transferred to his mind telepathically, and this was the part of his memory that was blocked by the nursery rhyme, as administered through post-hypnotic suggestion given by the agents who first injected Jim with the truth serum *Sodium Pentothal* or *Sodium Amytal* to get him to release that information, and having also placed him under hypnosis, they then blocked his memory of it.[dcxxv]

Now, it is true that in later interviews after the hypnosis sessions and before he felt free to talk about the binary code, that when asked what he felt when he touched the craft, Jim Penniston would say, “I only received a sensation,” or that “nothing happened,” and he would automatically skip the part about the telepathic transfer of ones and zeros again. He would then say that the next thing he knew that he was standing twenty or thirty feet away from the craft and Burroughs was there standing with him, as if Burroughs had suddenly appeared. It seems that some residue of the block is still operating in his mind, and sometimes it still does to this day, as Jim still has difficulties mentioning the binary code transfer or download. And it should be emphasized that whether Jim mentions the binary download or not when reciting his account, actually *depends on how the question is asked* to get him to relate this part of his experience that morning back in December 1980.[dcxxvi]

Hypnotherapist: WHO TAUGHT THAT TO YOU?
Jim Penniston: “I’m not sure. It wasn’t the ship.” (Shakes head). “That was all symbols.” (Pause). “I’m back in that room, again.”
LET'S GO BACK TO DECEMBER 26TH. IN THE WOODS . . .
“Yes.”
. . . WITH JOHN.
“With John.”
AND *MARY HAD A LITTLE LAMB, ITS FLEECE WAS WHITE AS SNOW, AND EVERYWHERE THAT MARY WENT THE LAMB WAS SURE TO GO.* (Jim with his eyes closed silently mouths the words of the rhyme as he hears the hypnotist say them). BUT JIM IS CHOOSING TO STAY IN THE WOODS WITH JOHN RIGHT NOW. (Pause). ARE YOU WITH JOHN?
“I’m standing beside him.”
OK, WHAT’S HAPPENING?
“He, the ship was moving up.”
IS, IS IT UP IN THE AIR?
“A couple of feet! The lights were off the ground. Back and forth. Into the woods.”
WAS IT SWAYING BACK AND FORTH?
“Yeah.”
UP IN THE AIR.
“Moving back to the trees.”
IN A STRAIGHT LINE? OR WAS IT WOBBLING?
“It’s wobbling.”
RIGHT.
“WE lose sight . . . of it. The light’s gone.”
THE LIGHT’S GONE . . .
“We were looking at it, but when the light went we didn’t see it no more.”
WHERE DID IT GO?
“Well John . . . he is pointing at the Orford[ness] lighthouse. It’s the lighthouse, John. Yeah. It’s completely in the wrong direction, too. We walk. We decide to walk . . . back into the woods. It’s a long ways. We’re not walking, we’re running.”
RUNNING INTO THE WOODS?
“Uh-huh, (nods head) further into it, yeah. We’re running. I’m not in good shape.”
WHAT ARE YOU RUNNING AFTER?
“To see if we can get closer, to finding it. We see it, though. It’s . . . it’s above the tree line.” (Jim looks up with squinted eyes) “Fifty feet . . . sixty. Two hundred feet?”
ARE YOU UNDER IT?
“No. It’s about two hundred feet in the air and sixty,

seventy feet from us." (Pause).
"We blink, we blink our eyes and it's gone. It's fast. No sound. John, John and I are looking at each other, and . . . we're not talking."
WHERE ARE YOU NOW?
"We walk back."
ARE YOU TALKING?
"What we got to say? It's, uh, yeah, we were wondering what to say."
WHEN YOU GET BACK TO BASE.
"Let's go to, let's go towards the scene. We're looking around. Can't really remember exactly the spot. John hollers at me that there's, it's over there. And over near him there's impressions in the ground. We got to go back and report it. We get back to where Cabansag's at. He's there."
LET'S STOP FOR ONE MINUTE, JIM.
THINK BACK. ANY TIME YOU WERE IN THE WOODS. WAS THE CRAFT ABOVE YOU? WAS THERE EVER A LIGHT THAT SHONE DOWN ON YOU? DID YOU EVER FEEL DRAWN . . . PERHAPS PULLED UPWARD?
"No . . . no. It was bright like the sun. And that's . . . I could feel the warmth from that."
OK, SO GO BACK TO WHERE CABANSAG IS . . .
"We pick him up. He's scared. He doesn't want to talk to us. He won't answer at least. No, he won't answer."
WHAT DO YOU FEEL LIKE.
"Tired, exhausted." (Pause). "We have no way to explain it . . . this."
IS THERE ANY FEAR CONNECTED, OR ELATION, OR . . . ?
"We can't tell the truth."
WHAT'S THE TRUTH?
(Long pause as Jim shakes head and seems to struggle with answering the question). "I can't tell the truth."
WHY CAN'T YOU TELL THE TRUTH?
"I was told not to tell the truth."
WHO TOLD YOU THAT?
"The man in the room."
THE MAN IN THE ROOM. WHEN DID YOU GO TO THE ROOM?
"December thirtieth."
DECEMBER THIRTIETH?
"Nine a.m.."
NINE a.m. . . . WHO SENT FOR YOU?
"The Commander was notified by OSI. I was told from the Orderly room to go over there. They didn't say why. I thought it might be for drug testing." (Pause). "It wasn't a drug test." (Pause). "I was given a cup of coffee

by the two. The two agents were asking questions."
WHO ARE THESE AGENTS?
"OSI agents. Burns . . .
BURNS . . .
. . . "Gallagher."
WHAT DO THEY WANT?
"It's about the incident. They want me to go through the whole thing. I told them there was a report on it. I talked to Halt. They don't care about Halt or the report. They won't hear me say it."
DID THEY SAY WHY THEY DON'T CARE ABOUT HALT?
"He's not involved."
NOT INVOLVED . . . DO THEY SAY WHY YOU'RE INVOLVED?
"I was there."
THERE WITH THE CRAFT.
"We seen something we weren't supposed to see."
WHO DECIDED YOU WEREN'T SUPPOSED TO SEE IT?
"They, they decide that."
THE AGENTS, THE OSI . . .
"No, the other guys."
WHAT OTHER GUYS?
"Those two other guys in the room."
WHO ARE THE TWO OTHER GUYS?
"They don't have names."
WHAT DO THEY LOOK LIKE?
"They're British."
BRITISH . . .
"Hm-hm." (Jim nods). "Yeah, D, I hear them talking. They're, they're agents too. DS8? C8? Something. I can't hear it very well. I can't hear it. Something eight. I don't know what it is . . . "

Before Jim Penniston had heard this segment from the hypnosis video, when it was made into one of the clips that featured in TV documentaries and also posted on *YouTube*, Jim Penniston wasn't aware of the department in the British Ministry of Defence, named, DS8, which stands for "Defense Secretariat 8." This was the department or desk that dealt with UFO reports, and had received Lt. Col. Halt's memo, via RAF Liaison Officer, Donald Moreland. A British agent being present at the interrogation would therefore make sense, even though in his 2010 article, *The Rendlesham Files*, Dr. David Clarke had mentioned that the DS8 desk officer at the time, Simon Weeden, had spoken to him exclusively in 2005 and revealed to him that in 1980, ". . . DS8 staff were under instruction from MoD that it was

“inappropriate” for desk officers to conduct interviews with UFO witnesses. This rule was also followed by the two other branches with an interest in UFOs, DI55 and RAF Air Defence (Ground Environment).”[dcxxvii]

Hypnotherapist: THEY’RE IN THE ROOM AND THEY WANT YOU TO TELL WHAT HAPPENS.
Jim Penniston: “I tell them that . . . I trust them . . . sort of.”
DID YOU TELL THEM ABOUT MARY HAS A LITTLE LAMB?
“No!”
“WHY NOT?”
“I, I don’t know anything about Mary.”

It can be assumed that at this stage, SSgt. Jim Penniston had not been hypnotized by the agents as yet.

Hypnotherapist: SO, YOU DIDN’T KNOW THAT IN THE WOODS?
“No, I didn’t . . . No, I didn’t know that.”
Jim Penniston: SO, YOU TELL THEM WHAT HAPPENED.
“Tell them what happened in the woods. They listen to it. They tape it. I say, uh, it’s OK to tape it. They leave the room. I’m in there an awful long time though.”
ALONE?
“No, the interview.”
THE INTERVIEW GOES ON AND ON.
“Three hours? . . I’m awfully tired. Hungry.” (Pause). “They leave me in the room.”
ALONE?
“Yeah. They were OK leaving. They come back and they’re mad. Angry, upset.”
FOR WHAT?
“I’m lying to them.”
ABOUT WHAT?
“Well, what happened.” (Jim shakes his head). “I’m not lying. I’ve got to prove that I’m not lying. The guys come in. The eight guys. They don’t introduce themselves, I don’t know. I got to go through this again! I got to tell them all; I got to start over. Tell them all of it. It’s afternoon.” (Pause). “I can’t; I can’t tell anymore.”
WHY CAN’T YOU TELL ANY MORE?
“I had been told I can’t tell anymore.”
WHAT WILL HAPPEN IF YOU TELL THEM?
“Punished.”
WHO WILL PUNISH YOU?
“The government will punish me.”

AND HOW WILL THEY PUNISH YOU?
“Jail.”
JAIL . . . DOES THIS APPLY FOR THE TIME THAT YOU’RE IN THE MILITARY?
“I can never say. I can never tell about it.” (Pause). “This is between us.”
BETWEEN US . . .
(Jim nods).
YOU AND WHO ELSE?
“The OSI agents. The other two.”
DID THEY SAY WHY THEY DON’T WANT YOU TO TELL?
“It can’t get out. It’s . . . not in the best interests of national security. There will be panic.”
WHO WOULD PANIC?
“People.”
WHY WOULD THEY PANIC?
“They can’t find out.”
WHAT CAN’T THEY FIND OUT?
“About them.”
THEM . . .
(Jim nods).
THEM WHO MADE THE CRAFT?
“Them who made the craft.” (Jim nods in affirmation as he says this).
DO THE OSI PEOPLE KNOW THEM WHO MADE THE CRAFT?
“No, the other two do.”
THE TWO BRITISH AGENTS?
“Yeah, that’s funny, too.”
WHAT'S FUNNY?
“They look British. One . . . one sounds a little British, sort of. Maybe Australian, but I don’t know. Maybe he isn’t British. They look British. Though the one is British, the other one isn’t. Only one of them is British.”
WHAT DO YOU THINK THE OTHER ONE IS?
“The other one’s from London.”
FROM WHERE?
“London?”
BUT HE’S NOT BRITISH?
“No, he’s American.”
OK. DO YOU GET THE FEELING, JIM, THAT THEY KNOW WHAT YOU SAW THERE?
“The American does.”
THE AMERICAN DOES?
“And the British guy does, too. The OSI? They’re asked to leave.”
DO THEY?
“They leave.” (Jim nods).
AND THEN WHAT HAPPENS?

(Long pause). “I don’t know.”
YOU DON’T KNOW.
“Oh, I know . . . I just can’t talk. Can’t tell anybody.”
WAS IT PAINFUL?
“Yeah.” (Jim nods).
DID THEY DO SOMETHING TO YOU PHYSICALLY?
“Yes.”
WHAT THEY DID TO YOU? WOULD IT HELP MAKE YOU FORGET?
“That’s why they gave it to me.”
GAVE IT TO YOU?
“Shot.”
A SHOT?
(Jim nods).
WHERE DID THEY GIVE YOU THE SHOT?
“Right in my arm.” (Jim grasps his left arm with his right hand).
WAS IT PAINFUL?
(Jim shakes his head) . . . “Hot.”
WHEN DID THE NURSERY RHYME COME?
“They told me about the nursery rhyme.”
WHAT DOES THE NURSERY RHYME DO?
“Uh . . . I can’t talk about that.” (Jim shakes his head).
IS THE NURSERY RHYME A CONTROL . . . TO GIVE YOU A BLOCK?
“It’s a warning.”
A WARNING . . . OK.
“I can’t . . . I can’t disobey the warning.”
WHAT WOULD HAPPEN IF YOU DISOBEYED THE WARNING?
“I don’t know . . . bad, awful bad.”
BAD FOR YOU?
(Jim nods once in affirmation). “Bad for me . . . and, everybody else.”
EVERY . . .
“It would incur everybody else.”
IN THE WORLD? OR . . .
“In the world. I would hurt everybody. It, it can’t . . . I can’t talk about it. I can’t discuss that. It’s too important.”
TOO IMPORTANT?
“Yeah.”
WAS THERE SOMETHING THAT HAPPENED TO YOU WHEN YOU WERE BY THE CRAFT BEFORE YOU WENT OFF WITH JOHN THAT YOU CAN’T TALK ABOUT?
“That’s right. I can’t talk about that.”
SO, YOU CAN TALK ABOUT WHAT HAPPENED UP TO THAT POINT . . . OF TOUCHING THE . . .

“Light! yeah.” (Jim interrupts).
“WHEN THE LIGHT CAME ON . . .”
“Right.”
“. . . SOMETHING HAPPENED?”
“Right.”

This is obviously the ‘binary code download’ part of what Jim Penniston experienced that night/morning.

Hypnotherapist: AND YOU CAN’T TALK ABOUT THAT?”
Jim Penniston: “Oh no . . . forbidden.”
OK. THINK JIM. YOU HAVE TALKED ABOUT THE LIGHT RECENTLY. HAS ANYTHING HAPPENED AS A RESULT OF THAT?
“Nothing concrete. It’s . . . not, not recently.”
LET’S GO BACK TO THE ROOM AGAIN. AND YOU’VE BEEN TOLD ABOUT THE LIGHT.
“Yeah, I’ve done this before.”
YOU’VE DONE WHAT BEFORE JIM?
“Went to sleep.”
WENT TO SLEEP . . .
DID YOU GO TO SLEEP AFTER YOU HAD THE SHOT?
(Jim repeatedly nods).
YOU WENT TO SLEEP . . .
“Yeah, but I . . . I knew I was there . . . in the room.”
YOU WERE KIND OF SLEEPING AND KIND OF WEREN’T?
“Right.”

This is clearly the point during the interrogation when Jim Penniston was hypnotized by the agents.

Hypnotherapist: “FADING IN AND OUT . . .”
Jim Penniston: “Yeah, I had to give my permission. I was scared, I signed, I signed a release.”
WHAT WERE YOU SCARED OF IF YOU DIDN’T SIGN A RELEASE?
“Career. They threatened me with my career.” (Long pause) “It’s, it’s got to be alright though. I’m . . . I’m talking to . . . the government. So, it’s got to be OK. It’s . . . national security.”
SO, YOU BELIEVE THAT THIS, WHAT YOU’RE DOING, AND WHAT’S BEEN DONE TO YOU IS IN THE BEST INTERESTS OF YOUR COUNTRY?
“Yes.”
OK. I WANT YOU TO UNDERSTAND JIM, THAT EVERYONE HAS CHOICES, AND YOU HAVE A

CHOICE. YOU CAN CHOOSE TO KEEP THE SILENCE AND KEEP THE CONTROL OF THE RHYME, OR YOU CAN CHOOSE TO BREAK THAT AND TALK ABOUT WHAT HAPPENED WHEN THE LIGHT CAME ON FROM THE SHIP. THAT'S YOUR CHOICE.
"It's not my choice."
WHY IS THAT NOT YOUR CHOICE?
"I can't make that choice. That's not my decision."
WHOSE DECISION IS THAT?
"No, no ONE person's."
LET ME ASK YOU. HAVE YOU BEEN CONTACTED ABOUT THIS BEFORE SINCE THE DAY IN THAT, IN THE ROOM?
"Yes."
WHEN WAS THAT?
"Nineteen . . . eighty-nine."
AND WHAT WERE YOU TOLD AT THAT TIME?
"Remember the orders."
WHO TOLD YOU THAT?
"OSI. Military Police. Steve . . . Steve was the agent. Steve Ryder."
STEVE RYDER?
"With a Y."
AND STEVE RYDER WITH A Y . . . DID HE SAY WHY YOU HAD TO REMEMBER IT?
"Because of . . . the other day. What happened that day. I . . . yeah, I had to get back with him. I had to get back a couple of days later. And so, the . . . I wanted to travel. That's why I went to the OSI. I went to the OSI. And I wanted to travel . . . to the Eastern Bloc [Poland] . . . to, look at some cities, on vacation. I have to get their permission, 'cause of this."
DID THEY GIVE IT?
"No."
NO . . . DID THEY SAY WHY NOT?
"Because my presence is too hot."
OK.
"I don't know nothing."
SO, IT WAS IN NINETEEN EIGHTY-NINE WHEN YOUR CONTACT BEGAN?
"Yes."
WHEN'S THIS AT?
"Spring of . . . ninety-two. I get a call from this Air Force intelligence . . . person. He knows a friend of mine." (Pause). "But he didn't tell me his name. He says that . . . if anything should happen, Maria [Jim Penniston's wife]would need to contact him. No, (shakes head) my friend. Contact my friend."
IF ANYTHING SHOULD HAPPEN?

“I, I don’t understand this because I don’t know . . . understand why Bruce Englund would call me. I don’t know why I had this other person.”
DID YOU ASK HIM?
“He couldn’t . . . he says he can’t talk on the phone. I tell Maria, and she gets upset. I’m not worried, though. Then we find by accident, a, a listening device in the house, down by the corner by the stairs. I turn that over to . . . No, I keep it, and I contact Audio Visual on base and ask what it is.”
AND WHAT DID THEY SAY?
“Transmitter . . . powerful. Maybe three thousand feet. Works on FM frequency. No markings at all. He says it’s generic. He wonders where I got that from. I didn’t tell him.”
WHERE DID YOU THINK IT CAME FROM?
“The government. I don’t know where though.”
HAVE YOU HAD ANY MORE CONTACT SINCE 1992?
“Not from the government. Only from friends and past associates.”
DO, DO YOU FEEL, THAT, TALKING ABOUT THIS INCIDENT NOW IS DANGEROUS?
“No.”
BUT WOULD IT BECOME DANGEROUS IF YOU TALKED ABOUT WHAT HAS BEEN CONTROLLED BY THE NURSERY RHYME?
(Jim nods). “It’s dangerous.”
IT’S DANGEROUS . . . OK. ARE YOU MAKING A DECISION TO NOT DELVE INTO THAT?
“I, I can’t.” (Jim screws his face up). “I can’t. That’s all I know.” (Pause). “It’s that rhyme.”
ARE YOU HEARING THAT RHYME NOW?
“Yes.”
WHOSE VOICE IS SAYING THE RHYME?
“Male . . . male voice.”
WHAT DO YOU FEEL WHEN YOU HEAR THE VOICE?
“Don’t like it.” (Jim shakes his head). “It’s a warning. I don’t know why they . . . I got, I got a warning.”
DO YOU FEEL THAT JOHN BURROUGHS, OR ANYONE ELSE THAT WAS WITH YOU THAT NIGHT, GOT THE SAME WARNING?
“Yes. John . . . especially John.”
HAS JOHN BROKEN THE WARNING?
“Yes.”
AND WHAT’S HAPPENED TO JOHN?
“Nothing.”
OK. SO, JOHN HAS BROKEN THE WARNING, AND NOTHING HAS HAPPENED TO HIM . . . THERE

HAS NOT BEEN A PANIC, AND THERE HAS NOT BEEN PAIN AND PROBLEMS FOR THE WORLD. DOES THAT MEAN THAT YOU'RE ABLE TO BREAK THE LOCK?
(Jim shakes head). “Alone, alone, John means nothing.”
OK. IF YOU, JOIN JOHN, BY BREAKING THE CODE, THEN WHAT?
“We’re at risk.”
AT RISK FOR . . .
“I can’t tell you.”
OK.
“We’re at risk.”
ARE YOU WANTING TO STOP TALKING ABOUT THIS SUBJECT? OR DO YOU WISH TO PURSUE IT FURTHER?
“I can talk about it. I just can’t talk past the nursery rhyme.”
OK. LET'S MOVE BACKWARDS TO THE MORNING OF DECEMBER 26TH, IN 1980. WHEN YOU HAVE COME BACK TO THE BASE AND YOU GO TO REPORT IN . . . WHAT HAPPENS?
(Jim smiles).
YOU’RE SMILING.
“I remember Chandler.” (Pause). “He’s worried.”
WHAT’S HE WORRIED ABOUT?
“We had no contact with him for two and a half hours.”

Approximately two and a half hours is compatible with the investigation having begun around 12:00 midnight, and SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs having lost radio contact with those listening in who were out in the field when Penniston and Burroughs were 50 meters away from the craft at around 1:00 a.m., which lasted until around 3:45 a.m., soon after the craft had finally departed east across the North Sea.

Hypnotherapist: FOR TWO AND A HALF HOURS . . . DID IT SEEM LIKE TWO AND A HALF HOURS FOR YOU?
Jim Penniston: “No, twenty minutes . . . maybe thirty.”
WHAT DID CHANDLER THINK HAPPENED TO YOU?
“He’s not sure. He says he trusts us. He believes that everything we say will be accurate.”
OK.
“He thanks me.”
THANKS YOU FOR . . .
“Staying calm.” (Pause). “I wasn’t calm.” (Jim smiles). “He thinks I was calm.”
HERE, YOU’RE CALM NOW. (Indecipherable).

TELL ME WHY HE THOUGHT YOU WERE CALM.
“I trust him.”
DID HE EVER SAY THAT HEATHROW TOWER THOUGHT THEY SAW SOMETHING BEING BEAMED UP?
“They got triangulated . . . radar sighting . . . Heathrow . . . Bentwaters . . . and, Eastern. There’s another name for Eastern though . . . we don’t call it that. It was triangulated to correspond at the time. And they all lost sight of the signal. Heathrow don’t keep, um, tape records . . . only.” (indecipherable).
“The tower at Bentwaters, the control tower . . . and the rest of the people at Bentwaters observed . . . observed it.”
OBSERVED WHAT?
“The take off.”
OF THE CRAFT . . .
“Yes. It . . . they said it hovered in the dark.”
WERE THEY AFRAID THAT THEY HAD LOST YOU IN THE DARK?
“Yes, yes.”
HOW DID THEY THINK THEY HAD LOST YOU?
“Through . . . through the ship.”
THAT THE SHIP HAD TAKEN YOU?
“Yes.”
WERE THEY RELIEVED THAT THEY HAD NOT TAKEN YOU?
“Yes, they were scared.”
OK.
“They all were scared.”
DO YOU REMEMBER FEELING AT ALL THAT YOU COULD HAVE BEEN TAKEN BY THE SHIP?
“Not today.”
HOW LONG DID YOU STAY ON BASE WHEN YOU CAME BACK?
“An hour and a half. I gave John a ride home. Dropped him off. Went to my friend’s house to get some plaster . . . for, for rising damp in my basement. Got a bucket. told me how to mix it. Took it out there.
YOU WENT BY YOURSELF?
“Yes.”
DID YOU HAVE PERMISSION TO DO THAT?
“No. No, I contaminated the scene by pouring the plaster.”
AND YOU MADE PLASTER CASTS?
“Yeah.”
AND YOU TOOK THEM?
“Yes.” (Pause). “I numbered them.”
OK. HOW MANY DID YOU HAVE?
“Three.”

THREE . . .
“WHAT WAS THE SITE LIKE WHEN YOU WENT OUT TO POUR THE CASTS?”
“Impressions . . . branches, broke. a lot more damage. I, we, we . . . we . . . (pauses, struggles with what he wants to say and shakes head). “We seen . . . something we weren’t supposed to see.”
OK. DO YOU BELIEVE THE GOVENMENT KNEW THAT THIS EXISTED BEFORE YOU SAW IT?
“Yes.”
BUT IT WASN’T SUPPOSED TO COME DOWN THERE . . .
(Jim screws up his face). “No . . . it . . .” (Shakes head). “I can’t answer that.” (Jim smiles).
OK.
“I know I can’t answer that as I hear the rhyme.”
OK.
SO AFTER YOU POURED THE CASTS, THEN WHAT DID YOU DO?
“Waited for it to dry. Took them home.”
OK. DID YOU TELL MARIA ABOUT WHAT HAD HAPPENED?
“Yeah, we did that together, John and I.”
OK.
“And there’s other people there, and they, they didn’t believe us.” (Jim laughs).
THEY THOUGHT YOU WERE, YOU WERE GOOFY?
“Right, they thought we were idiots.”
OK.
“Though, it was sort of funny.”
OK. SO, THE NIGHT OF THE 26TH. WHAT DID YOU DO THAT NIGHT?
“I.” (Pause). “I stayed home. I, had hot chocolate.”
WAS THAT YOUR NORMAL NIGHT TO STAY HOME? YOU DIDN'T HAVE TO WORK?
“No? We didn’t have to work. We were supposed to be on break anyway.”
ANYTHING SIGNIFICANT HAPPEN THAT NIGHT?
“I was on leave.”
OK. ON THE NIGHT OF THE 27TH . . . DID YOU GO BACK TO THE BASE?
“No.”
WERE, WERE YOU CONCERNED THAT THIS CRAFT MAY COME BACK?
(Jim nods). “I knew it would come back.”
YOU KNEW IT WOULD COME BACK . . .
(Jim nods).
DID YOU HAVE A DESIRE TO GO AND SEE IT AGAIN?

“No.”
OK. WHAT WAS COLONEL HALT’S ATTITUDE AFTER HE SAW THE CRAFT?
“Like ours. He was a believer.”
HAS A CONTROL BEEN PUT OUT ON HIM?
“No.”
DO YOU KNOW WHY NOT?
“He didn’t get close enough to it.”
SO, HE DIDN’T HAVE AS MUCH CONTACT AS YOU?
“No.”
DO YOU THINK JOHN HAD MORE CONTACT THAN YOU DID?
(Jim screws up face and struggles). “No, I . . . ah, see I can’t remember. All I hear. I can’t remember, I hear only . . . I don’t know.”
YOU HEAR ONLY WHAT?
“The rhyme!”
OK. AT WHAT POINT . . .
(Jim continues). “I don’t know.”
AT WHAT POINT WERE YOU SUMMONED TO THE OSI – TO THE ROOM WITH THE MEN WHO TALKED WITH YOU?
“Nine o’clock in the morning.”
OF WHAT DAY?
“The thirtieth.”
OK.
“Of December.”
DECEMBER. HOW MANY HOURS DID YOU END UP BEING IN THAT ROOM?
“Over seven.”
OVER SEVEN. AND WHEN YOU LEFT THERE DID YOU HAVE ANY MEMORY OF WHAT TOOK PLACE IN THAT ROOM?
“Some.”
SOME. NOT A LOT?
(Shakes head). “No.”
I GET THE FEELING THAT YOU’RE HAVING SOME UNPLEASANT MEMORIES.
(Nods head). “Yeah.”
OF THE SHOT, AND GOING KIND OF ASLEEP?
“Yeah.”
IS THERE ANYTHING ELSE ABOUT THAT ROOM WITH THE SESSION THAT YOU HAD WITH THE OSI THAT YOU WANT TO TALK ABOUT?
“I can’t talk about it.”
BUT WHAT TOOK PLACE IN IT – IN THE ROOM WITH THE OSI – DOES THAT HAVE ANYTHING TO DO WITH YOUR INABILITY TO REMEMBER CERTAIN THINGS THAT HAPPENED IN YOUR

EVERY DAY LIFE?
“Yes.”
DO YOU THINK IT’S AS A RESULT OF THE SHOT? OR OF THE CONTROL?
“The control.”
OK. DO YOU FEEL THAT YOU WERE HYPNOTIZED?
“Of the symbols, yes.” [Meaning Jim Penniston was hypnotized to place a hypnotic block on the Binary Code download part of his experience].
AND THE NURSERY RHYME IS A POST HYPNOTIC SUGGESTION?
“I don’t know.”
YOU DON’T KNOW . . .
“It’s a warning.”
IT’S A WARNING. OK. THAT’S WHAT A POST HYPNOTIC SUGGESTION IS. IT’S A WARNING. CAN YOU ANSWER SOME QUESTIONS FOR ME? ARE YOU COMFORTABLE WITH THAT? IF YOU’RE UNABLE TO ANSWER THEN SAY YOU’RE NOT.
“It’s alright to ask the questions.”
OK. DO YOU HAVE ANY MEMORY OF BEING CALLED TO, TO THE SHIP?
(Jim nods). “Yes.”
OK . . . WHAT WAS THAT, THROUGH WORDS? OR WAS THAT THROUGH THE SYMBOLS?
“The symbols.”
THE SYMBOLS . . . OK. UM, DID YOU MAKE A DECISION TO FOLLOW THE LIGHTS OR WERE YOU JUST COMPELLED TO FOLLOW?
“We never discussed it. We both knew what we had to do.”
OK. YOU JUST KNEW THAT YOU NEEDED TO DO IT.
“It’s . . . it’s because of the . . .” (Shakes head). “We can’t talk about it. That’s the reason.”
OK. WHEN YOU WERE NEAR THE SHIP DID YOU HAVE A TINGLING FEELING?
“Electric.”
ELECTRIC, YOU HAD . . .
“Static . . . ” (Jim coughs). “. . . electricity.”
OK. UM. ABOUT HOW FAR OUT WERE YOU OUT IN THE WOODS THAT NIGHT?
“I don’t know. I was tired.”
I’M GOING TO TELL YOU A NAME, AND I ASK IF IT MEANS ANYTHING TO YOU, OK?
ADRIAN BUSTINZA.
“He worked D Flight Security.”
OK. WHAT WAS HIS ROLE?

“Nothing.”
NOTHING, OK. UM, DID YOU HAVE CONTACT WITH SOME LIGHT FORMS?
“Intelligence.”
INTELLIGENCE. A BODY ATTACHED?
“No.”
YOU WERE NOT THERE THE NIGHT THAT COLONEL HALT AND JOHN BURROUGHS HAD CONTACT TOGETHER . . . WERE YOU TOLD ABOUT THAT?
“Through other people, yes.”
WHEN WERE YOU TOLD ABOUT THAT?
“From Colonel Halt. Uh, Thursday . . . the twenty ninth. The twenty ninth. Uh, shortly, uh . . . no, shortly after.” [Again, the 29th was a Monday].
WHEN YOU WERE IN THE WOODS WITH THE CRAFT WAS THERE ANY BLUE LIGHTS?
“Yes.”
DID THOSE BLUE LIGHTS HAVE CONTACT WITH YOUR MIND?
“The symbols.”
THE SYMBOLS. THEY WERE THE ONES THAT WERE GIVING YOU THE SYMBOLS . . .
“Yeah.”
OK.
“That’s white, it was bright . . . yeah.”
DID (indecipherable) TAPE RECORDING OF THE NIGHT HE WAS WITH JOHN BURROUGHS DID YOU HEAR THAT HALT TAPE BEFORE ANY EDITING WAS DONE?
“Yes.”
DO YOU HAVE MEMORIES OF THE COMPLETE TAPE?
“No.”
IS THAT PART OF THE NURSERY RHYME BLOCK?
“No, we didn’t hear the whole tape. He played parts of it.”
HE PLAYED PARTS OF THE RECORDING. FOR JUST YOU AND JOHN? OR WAS THERE OTHER PEOPLE?
“Just John and I.”
OK. DOES HE STILL HAVE THAT TAPE?
“Yes.”
DO YOU BELIEVE THAT TAPE HAS BEEEN ALTERED IN ANY WAY?
“Yes.”
DID YOU AT ANY TIME HAVE A SENSE THAT THIS CRAFT CAME FROM ANOTHER PLANET?
“No.”

NO. FOR INSTANCE, DID IT COME FROM MARS?
“No.”
SO, DID IT . . .
“Us!”
IT’S US?
(Jim nods. Jim then shakes his head as if struggling to say something).
WHAT’S HAPPENING JIM?
“I cannot. I want to but this . . .”
YOU WANT TO, BUT YOU DON’T WANT TO . . .
“I want to.”
YOU WANT TO . . .
“Not this . . . but I can’t.” (Jim puts his hand to his head as if in pain). “Ahh.”
WHAT’S HAPPENING?
“I don’t want to remember this.”
OK, YOU DON’T HAVE TO. IF YOU FEEL THAT YOU SHOULDN’T YOU DON’T HAVE TO . . . YOUR CHOICE.
“Oh, safe . . . safe now.”
OK, SO YOU’VE MADE THE CHOICE NOT TO REMEMBER?
“No, it’s made for me.”
OK, BUT THE CONTROL IS WORKING?
“I want to remember. I can’t remember.” (Long pause). “It’s that . . . this is what this this is about, is not to tell this.”
IF YOU DO WANT TO KNOW THERE’S A WAY THAT YOU CAN DO THAT.
“How?”
PICTURE A LARGE TV IN FRONT OF YOU.
“A large TV.”
OK, AND YOU CAN REACH OVER AND YOU CAN TURN THE KNOB ON IT. AND WHAT’S PLAYING ON THE TV IS WHAT TOOK PLACE THAT NIGHT . . . THE EARLY MORNING OF THE 26TH. AND YOU CAN SIT THERE, UNCONNECTED AND WATCH IT PLAY OUT.
(Long pause).
CAN YOU DESCRIBE WHAT YOU SEE?
(Jim nods). “It’s a . . .” (Pause). “I, I think I know why. I know why.”
YOU KNOW WHY? YES.
“It’s, it’s a (indecipherable) . . . it’s not from outer space. No, no. It belongs to us. It, no . . . that’s impossible!”
WHAT’S IMPOSSIBLE JIM?
“I, I, I, don’t really believe that.”
BELIEVE WHAT?
“They, they can’t talk about it. Because, it’s, it’s us that’s why.”

> US . . .
> "All the time . . . it's all the time."

And perhaps now we know the reason why a ridiculous UFO tale, as would have once been reported in the *National Enquirer*, was used in a containment or cover story.

As Jenny Randles writes:

> ". . . there were no public revelations from any of the military eyewitnesses – just the dubious saga fed out to Watton and Brenda Butler that smelled to me exactly like disinformation. But if UFOs were disinformation then what was this story trying to hide?"[dcxxviii]

To put it briefly, and it must be said that a whole book could be written on this subject alone, with all the nuances and complexities of what we can only imagine we would be faced with here . . . *the realization that time travel exists and that time travelers – ourselves – from the future are visiting us and have been visiting us and our past many times.*

In many ways, this is far more complex than the notion or belief that other species are visiting us from outer space. It suggests that if there is a future US, then our species has survived the threat of what could easily have been its own mass destruction, and really this has long been the fear that controls us, and an enemy is always needed to reinforce this fear.

Time traveling humans from the future just doesn't cut it as an enemy that we should have to fear, as 'they' are 'us,' and if time travel is a reality in the future, then surely the priority would be to visit the past to make controlled and carefully-planned adjustments to the timeline so as to ensure our own survival.

However, such a reality also compromises the view – and one which we are all now being subjected to slowly through propagandist media, as theorized – that the UFO phenomenon, which many have been led to believe is 'ET-related,' is potentially hostile and, therefore, a threat to our very existence. It has been said that since the end of the Cold War, the 'alien/ ET' hypothesis has long been primed to be introduced slowly into the consciousness of every one on this planet as a 'threat,' *and 'the new enemy'* by the governing elite that controls the US industrial complex and arms production mostly for profit.

However, what is unsettling is what Jim Penniston says later while under

hypnosis, which indicates that the human time travelers from our future are a species in trouble . . . .

Hypnotherapist: WHAT'S HAPPENING?
Jim Penniston: "I see the craft. The light dissipate. They [the Interrogators] want to know what symbols I'm seeing. I don't want to tell them, but I tell them. They want to know what I did next. I said I felt the symbols because they were raised. Tell them about the lights. White light. They already know about the lights. They are asking me if I see the binary code. They are slowing me down."
WHAT'S HAPPENING?
"I understand."
WHAT DO YOU UNDERSTAND ABOUT THE CODE?
"I'm the interpreter. They need interpreters. The lights."
THE LIGHTS. SO WHAT IS THE CODE SAYING?
"You can't read these codes unless you have an interpreter. I understand what's going on now."
WHAT'S GOING ON?
"The symbols."
THE SYMBOLS – WHAT DO THEY MEAN?
"Oh, it's information being exchanged. That machine – that's for interpreters, there's lots of interpreters."
YOU ARE AN INTERPRETER?
"Yes."
DO THAT NOW.
"Explain. Mission. Purpose."
AND THE MISSION IS?
"Contact."
DO THEY SAY CONTACT WITH WHAT?
"Us."
PURPOSE?
"Research."
FOR?
"To help them."
TO HELP THEM WITH WHAT?
"Themselves. They are time travelers. They are us."
THEY ARE US FROM?
"The future."
HOW FAR IN THE FUTURE?
"A long time. Very long time."
WHAT DO THEY NEED FROM HERE?
"They need something from all interpreters."
WHAT DO THEY NEED?
"Not sure, but it has to do with chromosomes? Or something like that."
AND HOW DO THEY GET THAT?

“They take it.”
FROM WHERE?
“From the other people’s bodies.”
FROM WHAT PART OF THE BODY?
“Depends.”
WHERE DID THEY TAKE IT FROM YOU?
“Didn’t.”
BUT YOU WERE AN INTERPRETER.
“We only interrupted. They (time travelers) were interrupted. They are having problems. The program’s . . . I understand what they are saying, but they weren’t supposed to be there. They are having problems. The odds are against them.”
YOU WEREN’T SUPPOSED TO UNDERSTAND THE PROGRAM?
“No. By touching these things (raised symbols on surface of craft), I activated these things.”
YOU TOUCHED THE SYMBOLS AND YOU SET OFF A PROGRAM?
“Yes. It was repairing itself. All they wanted was a place to stay while it repaired itself.”
AND BY TOUCHING THE SYMBOLS, YOU DISRUPTED THE REPAIR PROGRAM?
“I activated a binary code. The two men want to know why.”
AND WHAT DO YOU ANSWER THEM?
“They ask if I ever had any other encounters with them. I haven’t. They are discussing it between themselves. The situation. They’ve got a problem.”
WHAT’S THEIR PROBLEM?
“Their problem is because I can’t tell anybody. They ask no more questions about the craft. And they want to know what to do with me.”
THERE COMING AND GOING, IS IT GOING TO HAVE ANY NEGATIVE EFFECT ON US?
“No, it won’t hurt us at all.”
WILL IT ALTER OUR FUTURE AT ALL?
“Not sure.”
IF FOR SOME REASON THEY CAN’T GET THESE CHROMOSOMES, WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO THEM?
“They will die.”
THE RACE WILL DIE. CAN THEY REPRODUCE?
“This is a problem.”
REPRODUCING IS A PROBLEM. DO OUR CHROMOSOMES HELP WITH THAT?
“Apparently.”
ARE THEY USING US SOMETHING LIKE BREEDING STOCK?
“No. Like Band-Aids.”

BAND-AIDS? BAND-AIDS FOR THEIR PROBLEM?
“Increase … they are going to be increasing. We haven’t noticed them . . . it’s becoming more cumbersome.”
THEY ARE GOING TO INCREASE THE AMOUNT OF WHAT?
“Visits.”
DO THEY EVER TAKE FETUSES?
“If it’s tasked, they do. There are different ships for tasking. Everyone knows about this.”
HOW DO YOU KNOW THIS?
“That’s what they are talking about. That’s why they want to contain the situation.”
WHO WANTS TO CONTAIN THE SITUATION?
“Damage control.”
WHO HAS DAMAGE CONTROL?
“The Americans and the British.”
THEY SEE YOU AS DAMAGE CONTROL?
“They see me and John, and they’re worried about Colonel Halt. They know all about us.”
WHY ARE THEY WORRIED ABOUT COL. HALT? DO THEY SAY?
“They have options. They were going to discredit him, but the UFO [containment] story is fine.”
WHEN YOU WERE COMMUNICATING WITH THEM, DID THEY EVER SAY THEY COME IN PERSON?
“Oh yes.”
THEY HAVE MANNED CRAFT?
“They have different tasks. Initial tasks are to find interpreters.”
DO THEY EVER TAKE CHROMOSOMES OR CELLS OR THINGS FROM ANIMALS?
“They have, but not for them.”
FOR WHOM?
“Study. It doesn’t help them. … Sometimes they make different chemicals.”
WHAT WOULD THEY MAKE DIFFERENT CHEMICALS FOR?
“I don’t know. They’ve had their problems, too. This time they were having problems, but they got it off. They have to be out in space to travel. I thought they just had to sit there. They’ve got to be in space. They need speed to travel.”
TO TRAVEL THROUGH TIME?
“To go backwards. They can’t go forward.”
THEY CAN’T GO INTO THEIR FUTURE? BUT THEY CAN GO BACK INTO THEIR PAST?
“They go to their past. It’s impossible to go into the future.”
HOW FAR INTO THE PAST CAN THEY GO?

“These ships can go forty or fifty thousand years. They can’t go back much further. They might not be able to get back.”

SO THEY DON’T HAVE THE CAPACITY TO GO BACK TO THE BEGINNING OF TIME?

“No, they can’t generate that kind of speed. It takes a lot of speed.”

HAVE THEY HAD VERBAL CONTACT WITH THE GOVERNMENT TO EXPLAIN THIS SITUATION?

“No. Only through interpreters.”

ONLY THROUGH INTERPRETERS LIKE YOURSELF?

“That makes it hard for our government. They’re not sure what the problem is. That’s why I’m being debriefed.”

DOES THE GOVERNMENT BELIEVE WHAT YOU ARE SAYING ABOUT THEM COMING FROM THE FUTURE?

“Oh, yes.”

THEY BELIEVE THAT?

“Oh, yes.”

DOES THE GOVERNMENT FEEL THAT THEY POSE ANY THREAT?

“No military threat.”

WHAT OTHER TYPE OF THREAT WOULD THEY BE?

“Sometimes they become impatient.”

AND THEN WHAT?

“They take what they want because it does help their study.”

SO SOMETIMES THEY TAKE PEOPLE?

“Sure.”

SO IF THEY TOOK GENETIC MATERIAL FROM SOMEONE TODAY, THEN YOUR CHILDREN COULD BE BORN WAY IN THE FUTURE?

“I play a very small part depending on the offspring. I might be responsible for their offspring, but if it is thirty or forty generations down the road, who is responsible for parenting? That’s the person who would accept the timeline?”

WHY DO THEY COME BACK SO FAR?

“So, it doesn’t affect the timeline. The farther it is, the better, the least effect it has on changing the future, They don’t want to change the future.”

SO, IT’S NOT THAT IT’S NOT POSSIBLE TO CHANGE THE FUTURE. THEY DON’T . . .

“They can’t control it. It’s too cumbersome. They’re not tampering with it. That’s why they come back so far. Does that make sense?”

YES OK, LET’S MOVE FORWARD TO WHERE

YOU HEAR THE AGENTS TALKING ABOUT WHAT THEY'RE GOING TO DO WITH YOU.

"They are going through their check list. They have a scripted check list."

WHAT'S THE SCRIPT?

"They tell me when I was at the East Gate with John, they have five different stories to tell. Important to scramble dates. That's the unique thing about this – all stories are the same. They just have different dates."

WHAT'S HAPPENING?

"They are reading my story to me. The dates are just different. I'll remember. They're going to give me a warning."

WHAT'S THE WARNING? WHAT HAPPENS IF YOU DISOBEY THE WARNING?

"There is nothing they can do. They tell me that I will hurt the world. It will breach national security and can destroy the system, cause wars, chaos in the streets. That's why it's important to keep it quiet . . . it doesn't make any difference if I talk about the story. They could care less. It's too unbelievable."

. . . and if ever it became believable, it is not the kind of fear that would be profitable and could be utilized, especially if we and our actions are being monitored and watched from the future, or from a point outside time. This is a whole different ball game. Everyone who has an interest in the UFO phenomenon is asking when the day will arrive when full disclosure of the phenomenon is finally announced by our government. Most people need this; it is as if they need the government to tell them this before they can move forward, much like parents telling their children when they become adults, that in fact, Santa Claus does truly exist. However, the reason why 'Disclosure' has never been considered an option before is that there has always been the fear of a global upheaval, including a worldwide stock market crash that could never recover, political discord between nations, and the chaos that would ensue from fears for our mass extinction, signaling the beginning of the end of our civilization. The whole religious and political power infrastructure of our society from institutions and corporations to all individuals within our global society would be financially and politically affected, faced with the fear of an unknown, common threat to humanity that awaits our future.

If there has to be Disclosure, then with it would have to come the announcement that it has long been known that the intelligence behind the

phenomenon is inherently ‘evil’ *and a threat to our survival* (‘Santa is really Satan’), so that this would unite us and rally us together to fight and to overcome the ‘threat.’ It would not surprise us now if a ‘false flag’ event involving what appears to be an attack by “hostile aliens” is staged in the future to convince us of this.

It seems no coincidence that the global seed vault, Svalbard, and the 23.5-degree tilt angle of the Earth, are referenced by and connected within the revelatory message of the coordinates of the binary code, as will be discussed in Book Two, which could be a message from our future selves, or an intelligence outside our spacetime reality construct, and therefore a wake-up call.

The realization that time-traveling humans from our future are visiting us for what they need because our species is facing extinction could possibly have the same effect on humanity and its power elite as the disclosure that ‘ET’s have been visiting the planet,’ but ET’s seem the easier explanation because they are an unknown, a less extreme threat than the permanency of human extinction. How can we fight against our fellow humans as a common threat, when they are trying to save us from extinction? Therefore, throughout the years there seems to have been a subtle ‘misdirection story’ in play – in that people have been allowed or prompted to believe through Hollywood movies and the entertainment media, that the UFO phenomenon is “alien” or “extraterrestrial” in origin, while the news media has been treating the subject with wry amusement, which is what many would expect. And if there has to be Disclosure, than ET’s are the more convenient story to promote as the ‘evil threat’ for humanity to fear, in order to maintain the ‘status quo’ with political and economic power structures, such as the stock market and the ‘arms production profit machine,’ to keep these power brokers ticking along, *establishing unity through fear with the message that ‘the ET’s are our enemy.’* It is a carefully-crafted game of ‘smoke and mirrors’—look over here at the aliens so that we disregard the realities of our human existence and the possibility of a stark, futureless reality, which is existentially hopeless and final.

However, having said this, Jim Penniston and I are certain this phenomenon goes way beyond all our usual theories about it, including ‘time-traveling humans from the future’ . . . but this does not rule out the possibility that there could be a future problem we are being warned about . . . .

After having transcribed Jim Penniston's hypnosis video, which was provided to me by Daren DeBoy, Jim Penniston and I went through the entire transcript during a Skype call. It was extremely difficult for Jim to listen to what I was reading from the transcript I had typed up, and at times it became very emotional for him. There were occasional silences while he absorbed what I said and tried to process it. He told me he had never watched the videoed sessions in full. He could only stomach watching a few minutes here and there over the years, which also included the one or two-minute segments that had been featured in a few documentaries and on YouTube. I could see it was and still is deeply and genuinely traumatic for him to have to relive the experience of what happened that Boxing Day morning and also the interrogations he underwent according to what had eventually emerged during the two regressions he had with his doctor – especially the block placed on his memory which hid the binary code download part of his experience with the craft . . . *and this was the crux of the whole thing.* [dcxxix]

It was now apparent to both of us that the most important aspect of the incident, and something the agents were attempting to suppress and remove all knowledge and trace of, was *the Binary Code* . . . .

Chapter Fifteen

The ‘Hold Forth’ Years

1995 – 2010

Jim Penniston:

Around the time of the second hypnosis session, I started the medication that was prescribed to me and the results were immediate. I was sleeping. Now, the most interesting thing I observed with this was the fact that I was not

dreaming at all. That was very odd and strange to me at first, but very welcomed after what I had gone through. Amazingly, it took about eight months to almost a year to find the so-called 'Goldilocks' dosage with this medication, which was two mg's. At last, I was experiencing peaceful, restful sleep. As a result, I then turned down some of the workload so I could spend more time with my family.

It was now the beginning of Summer 1995, and I had only been retired from the Air Force for two years. Since the diagnosing and treatment for PTSD, I was finally getting my life back to normal. I indulged in simple things, ranging from shooting hoops in the driveway with the kids, to summer family trips, all of which shows how much I was relaxing and now enjoying life. It was like the Sun was brightly shining through the windows of my life again. I even got rid of cable TV because the kids had been complaining about the dismal number of channels within our area. I then got them the satellite service from Direct TV. I did not have time for TV very often, but the kids loved it, although I mostly watched the channels in the Sports package.

With my newfound relief from this miracle medication, I was a changed person. My wife said that I was still having restless nights – even talking in my sleep – most of it garbled and indiscernible. She would routinely ask what I was dreaming about the night before. My honest response was always that I hadn't dreamed at all as far as I remembered . . . a peculiar effect from the medication. Although it appeared that I did have nightmares, according to my wife, I really had no memory of them. I was happy with that . . . it was indeed a godsend.

June 1996

Finally, and sadly, in June 1996 the project with Salley Rayl and Col. Halt's continuing criticisms all came to a head. A decision was made by Col. Halt to sever the contract with Salley. I reluctantly agreed, but I had to go along with my former Air Force colleague out of our common bond with the Air Force. On July 9, 1996, I wrote to Salley Rayl, telling her that I no longer wanted to co-author a book we had planned to write together due to the agenda of her connections in New York, and that the answers she was seeking would have to wait until fourteen years later in 2010, and thirty years after the

Rendlesham Incident:

> ". . . I am afraid the answers you want will just have to wait. I don't have them. I will share this one part of Rendlesham, that I have never told no one. It's not because I did not want to, however, I just don't have facts to back any of this up. As you well know, I have said there was communication made in some form, I just can't explain. But the impression of feeling left with me is we will have to wait. The crazy part is we will have to wait fourteen more years for the answers. What they will be, I do not know. We will be around, I hope so."

To this day I don't really know why I said back then in 1996 that we had to wait fourteen years. Little did I understand this feeling, or should I say impression on my mind, which I felt had been left in my mind from the contact I had experienced on December 26, 1980. Now, and as I write this, I know why, but it seemed like a 'pie in the sky' thought back then.

Salley was not happy, but as a professional, she was at the end of her tether with Col. Halt and must have expected it, as she thought it was best for us all. Needless to say, even though our book project and contract plans had ended, my professional relationship with Salley would continue.

Salley went on to work for the Jet Propulsion Laboratory, JPL near Malibu, where she lived. She was the writer for the JPL Mars rover missions. She loved that job and told me many times that working with the Mars Rover people was fascinating . . . "It's like working on Mars from the confines of the rover control room," she said.

LMH

Not long after the book project with Salley Rayl had ended, I was contacted by another researcher who was writing a book – but this time she was a fully-entrenched Ufologist and investigative reporter . . . Linda Moulton Howe. She told me that she was writing a book about unexplained UFO-related phenomena which would include a section about the military. For that book, she also wanted to include the Rendlesham Incident.[dcxxx]

At first, I was hesitant, but after much debate, I told her I would collaborate with her. After the book project with Salley Rayl had failed – during which my enthusiasm to finally get the truth out about the incident had

been fired-up – I thought that Linda, of all people, with her track record, could help me present the truth to the public about the incident I had witnessed. It seemed the right thing to do. As things turned out, I could never have been so wrong about my collaboration and working relationship with Linda, which, in fact, was strained from the beginning.

In brief, the truth and justice I was seeking was not accomplished with Linda. My observations were that she was an opportunist; that she could be very controlling and had an agenda from the beginning to make my experience fit her own 'extraterrestrial' hypothesis.[dcxxxi] I first relayed the account to Linda over the telephone and told her about the trauma of not sleeping and the referral to a specialist and hypnotherapist for medical help. Linda's attention then became focused on the hypnosis sessions, which I had told her had been filmed and then transferred to video.

Once Linda heard about my recorded hypnosis she became relentless – persistently asking me if she could have a copy of the video, so she could then have my commentary transcripted. Although I was put off by her controlling manner, I thought that this might work. After all, I could never bring myself to watch the hypnosis video. I tried once and could only watch five minutes, and even that was just too much for me.[dcxxxii] But, I thought if I could have it transcripted, well, that would be helpful. I would rather read what I said, than watch myself saying it.

The hypnotherapist had made sure that I would not remember the hypnosis sessions afterwards, which worked quite well. For me, I felt that reliving and remembering exactly what I did that night would needlessly add to the trauma I was already experiencing, and of which I was trying to rid myself, so I could live a normal life. But, at the same time, I dreaded going through it again. Yet, I was also inquisitive, and I wanted to see what I had said. It was a dilemma. Again, I was never successful in watching it. I could always only manage a few seconds of what I was describing, and then I would turn it off. I had to rely on others to tell me what I had said, and they would only concentrate on certain aspects that were interesting to them. In fact, since I had allowed the video to be viewed by various researchers, some short clips – the more dramatic moments – had been taken from the full video to be presented in documentaries. In any case, I thought that reading the transcript would be a much less emotional way to engage with the content of these hypnosis sessions. So, with those thoughts, I agreed to have Linda Howe do this.

A contract between Linda Moulton Howe and myself was written up, which stated the transcript of the hypnosis sessions was mine, and I would have the final say and edit on what went into the book. To all this Linda had agreed, and then we signed it. After I received the transcript of the hypnosis sessions a few weeks later, I read a few paragraphs and felt like I was reading a science fiction novel. What I read was as equally disturbing to me as my trying to watch the hypnosis films. However, I told myself that I would read all of it in the final edit copy in the hope that what was edited would be less traumatic for me. It was apparent that Linda was concentrating more on what I had said later during the hypnosis sessions instead of my account of what I had experienced during the actual incident. It smelled to me of 'sensationalism,' rather than an honest account of the facts I had given to her from my actual memory of what I had encountered that night.

As a skeptic, and as a result of the part of the hypnosis sessions Linda had concentrated on – as she hadn't transcribed the whole session as I assumed she would – I concluded from what I had read that hypnosis was not a valid or reliable source for information. When I had eventually read the full transcript many years later, it was evident that I had been mistaken about hypnosis.

The book that Linda was writing took on a life of its own regarding myself and the Rendlesham Incident. It left the real world and focused on what was said during the hypnosis sessions – things like *what I had experienced was from the future; the time anomaly around the craft, and also seeing a code.* Although I had dreams and mental impressions of what I had recalled during hypnosis, what I had said was foreign to me. It was as if a part of me had known more about the reality of what I had witnessed than my conscious mind did. All that was odd enough. But, then there were the weird insertions by Linda with what she believed was being said by me and what she perceived – i.e., her own interpretations. Also, her workings of my account of the event did not reflect what I had actually conveyed to her. Linda added things that related more to the extraterrestrial hypothesis she favored, including comments about the hypnosis that were just 'head scratching' and perplexing – all of which just made what was, for me, a bad situation even worse . . . and on top of that she had no education in psychology or a doctor's degree.

Unfortunately, a final edit or review was lost within the edits, which didn't instill confidence, and I was not happy with my private medical information

being made public, and so I almost called an end to it. However, with Linda continuing to persuade and goad me about how important it all was, and that I had of course signed the contract between us, I finally succumbed into allowing things to go ahead – hoping I could deal with putting this right in the future.

LAEG

"My Aston Martin used to be parked right in front of those lights."

Larry Warren, *Left at East Gate.*[dcxxxiii]

Jim Penniston:

The book *Left at East Gate* (LAEG) by Larry Warren, co-authored with Peter Robbins was published in June 1997. *Did I purchase a copy?* No. *Did I read it?* No. I didn't read much about the Rendlesham Incident, and only read whatever had been passed on to me by others to read. I certainly would not have gone out of my way to read this book. I had no time for Warren's nonsense . . . he simply wasn't there. I knew who had completed their training on base, which would, on average, take six to eight weeks. This was a NATO requirement, and he hadn't completed his training, even though I had later heard that he had in his possession Air Force documentation that said he had, and this seemed to have stalled the truth for a while.

But I suspected even then that that he had faked and forged his documents, and now we find that his own co-author on the book has accused him of forging various documents, which he should have checked and rechecked when he went into partnership with him on his book.[dcxxxiv] I knew that, before he was forced to part ways with Warren and finally admit that he had been duped, that Peter Robbins had known for almost two decades that Warren was a fraud.[dcxxxv]

Five Witness Statements
(May 1998)

It was in May 1998 that extracts from the five witness statements, taken within a week after the first night's events of the Rendlesham Forest Incident (December 25/26, 1980), were first introduced to the public in James Easton's dossier: *Rendlesham Unravelled.*

The five witness statements in the chronological order they were completed, are as follows:

- Typed witness statement one sheet of plain paper (UNDATED) but SIGNED: *"Edward N. Cabansag, A1C, USAF 81st Security Police Sq."*

Note: Ed Cabansag is on record as having told investigative reporter Georgina Bruni in an interview in 1999 that this statement – which was neither prepared or typed by him and which he never even read – was given to him to sign in Lt. Col. Halt's office, as witnessed by Lt. Col. Halt on the morning of December 26, 1980.

- Typed witness statement (half a page of text) on one sheet of plain paper, UNDATED and UNSIGNED.

Note: This statement has been wrongly attributed to SSgt. Jim Penniston, who says he neither wrote nor typed it, and so therefore it really has nothing to do with him. However, attached to the statement are two additional pages, each with two drawings admittedly made by SSgt. Jim Penniston.

- Handwritten three-page statement written by A1C John Burroughs, UNDATED but SIGNED: *"A1C John Burroughs 81SPS SPOL CFL,"* as he himself has claimed. By all accounts, the statement was completed in Lt. Col. Halt's office in the presence of SSgt. Penniston and Lt. Col. Halt on December 29, 1980. (The statement consists of two pages of written text and one plain

page containing a sketch of what Burroughs says he witnessed.)

- Typed statement on US Air Force Form 1169 (two pages). SIGNED: *"Fred A. Buran, 81 Security Police Squadron."* DATED: "Jan 2, 1981."

- Typed statement on US Air Force Form 1169 (two pages). SIGNED: *"J.D Chandler, 81 Security Police Sq."* DATED: "Jan 2, 1981."

The statements were first obtained by CAUS (Citizens Against UFO Secrecy) through FOIA (Freedom of Information Act) between 1985 and 1986 and had been kept on file in the CAUS archives. According to author Georgina Bruni, Massachusetts researcher investigator and CAUS founder Barry Greenwood had told her that the copies of the five witness statements were first offered to his colleague Larry Fawcett, (assistant director of CAUS), adding that these copies of the statements most likely came via Colonel Charles I. Halt, who had the originals on file.

In any case, it was during Spring of 1998 that Barry Greenwood decided to forward the statements to UFO enthusiast, Jan L. Aldrich, who in turn later sent them to Scottish UFO skeptic, James Easton.

Witness Statement of John Burroughs

Below is the account of the first night's events given in the witness statement handwritten and signed by A1C John Burroughs, and which by all accounts was written in the presence of SSgt. Jim Penniston and the Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt in Halt's office at Bentwaters base on December 29, 1980 – some 72 hours after the events described:

> "On the night of 25–26 Dec at around 03.00, while on patrol down at east gate, myself and my partner saw lights coming from the woods due east of the gate. The lights were red and blue, the red one above the blue one, and they were flashing on and off. Because I've never saw [sic] anything like that coming from the woods before we decided to drive down and see what it was. We went down east-gate road and took a right at the stop

sign and drove down about 10 to 20 yards to where there is a road that goes into the forest at the road. I could see a white light shining into the trees and I could still see the red and blue one [sic] lights. We decided we better go call it in so we went back up towards east gate. I was watching the lights and the white light started coming down the road that lead [sic] into the forest. We got to the gate and called it in. The whole time I could see the lights and the white light was almost at the edge of the road and the blue and red lights were still out in the woods.

A security unit was sent down to the gate and when they got there they could see it too. We asked permission to go and see what it was and they told us to [sic] we could. We took the truck down the road that lead [sic] into the forest. As we went down the east-gate road and the road that lead [sic] into the forest, the lights were moving back and they appeared to stop in [illegible] bunch of trees. We stopped the truck where the road stopped and went on foot. We crossed a small open field that led into the trees where the lights were coming from, and as we were coming into the trees there were strange noises, like a woman screaming. Also the woods lit up and you could hear the farm animals making a lot of noises, and there was a lot of movement in the woods. All three of us hit the ground and whatever it was started moving back towards the open field and after a minute or two we got up and moved into the trees and the lights moved out into the open field. We got up to a fence that separated the trees from the open field and you could see the lights down by a farmer's house. We climbed over the fence and started walking toward the red and blue lights and they just disappeared. Once we reached the farmer's house we could see a beacon going around so we went towards it. We followed it for about 2 miles before we could [see] it was coming from a lighthouse. We had just passed a creak [sic] and were told to come back when we saw a blue light to our left in the trees. It was only there for a minute and just streaked away. After that we didn't see anything so
we returned to the truck."[dcxxxvi]

"Burroughs is a straightforward and honest cop. He does have the ability to take an incident and turn it into a disaster. (He comes on too strong.) There's no doubt in my mind his statement is accurate. He really became obsessed with this. Now he's worried that this might affect his career."

[Handwritten comments added at a later date. Most

likely written by Lt. Col. Charles Halt.]

Since first coming forward with his account of what really happened in 1991, John Burroughs has said that his own account of what he witnessed, as presented in his written statement, was 'watered down' – *sanitized* – and that he deliberately did this to protect his career in the USAF. Naturally, his belief was that his plans for the future could easily be compromised by telling the truth and unveiling what he had really experienced.

However, what additional details Burroughs remembers about the incident as presented in various interviews throughout the years does not really alter or change very much the summary of the events he related in his original witness statement. It would appear that he had deliberately left out certain 'compromising' details in the statement, and this he has admitted to:

> "All 3 of us were told to turn in statements to Halt when we came back to work. I did hand write mine Penniston typed his and they helped Cabansag type his. We did not put everything in it [sic – Burroughs means each of the statements] because we were told it was for Halt not for a police or official report. Also Halt told me only to talk about the first night not the second because he was there."[dcxxxvii]

Burroughs is mistaken when he says that Jim Penniston had "typed his" statement, as again, the account given in a half-page of typed text and which people still believe was the witness statement authored by SSgt. Jim Penniston is *bogus.* The account given in this statement is only loosely-based on some of the details given in the four-page witness statement SSgt. Penniston had written some 20 minutes before and which was taken from him before he was handed this bogus statement typed by someone else. (See Chapter 9: *Afterburn.*)

But returning to the quote above by Burroughs. As we can see, he writes, *". . . they helped Cabansag type his."*

Who are "They?" *Who helped Cabansag type his statement? Did Burroughs witness someone else typing Cabansag's statement? And was Cabansag also with the person who was typing his statement?* Burroughs says this as if he had been there, although it is likely this is second-hand information and he just heard this from either Ed Cabansag or someone else. It would be interesting if Cabansag had told him this, as Cabansag later said he was just handed the statement and was told in Lt. Col. Halt's office to sign

it, and he hadn't read the statement before or after signing it, and didn't even know what it was he was signing!

In any case, we shall now return to Burroughs' statement, and the things he later claims he witnessed and experienced, but had excluded from the statement. For example, although Burroughs writes that the *"woods lit up,"* it isn't clear that this is what made "all three" of them (meaning himself, SSgt. Jim Penniston and A1C Edward Cabansag) *"hit the ground,"* which Jim Penniston says was caused by an intense burst of light from the craft as they approached it. And Burroughs didn't mention that *"whatever it was"* had lifted off from the clearing in the woods at an unbelievable speed, as he had later described it in subsequent interviews, which agrees with what Jim Penniston witnessed.

Quoting Burroughs:

> "It was like a blink of an eye. [snaps fingers] It went from being there and gone [snaps fingers again] just like that, snap!"[dcxxxviii]

In his statement, Burroughs simply writes that the lights moved back and out into the open field, which could be considered true, as it did move back before taking off and disappearing from view for some minutes. Burroughs then had a visual of *"whatever it was"* now in the sky some distance in front of them, as if it had suddenly reappeared, and we can assume it was then observed moving slowly eastward in the direction of the farmer's field, or some way over it.

Witness Statement signed by A1C Edward N. Cabansag

Below is the undated account of the first night's events given in the witness statement typed on plain paper and signed Edward N. Cabansag, A1C, USAF 81st Security Police Sq. The account is presented as if from the perspective of Airman First Class Edward N. Cabansag:

> "On 26 Dec 80, SSgt Penningston [sic – name wrongly spelled] and I were on Security #6 at Woodbridge Base. I was the member. We were patrolling Delta NAPA when we received a call over the radio. It stated that Police #4 had seen some strange lights out past the East Gate and we were to respond. SSgt Penningston [sic] and I left Delta NAPA, heading for the East Gate code two. When we got there SSgt Steffens and A1C Burroughs

were on patrol. They told us they had seen some funny lights out in the woods. We notified CSC and we asked permission to investigate further. They gave us the go-ahead. We left our weapons with SSgt Steffens who remained at the gate, , Thus the three of us went out to investigate. We stopped the Security Police vehicle about 100 meters from the gate. [actually 832.4 meters] Due to the terrain we had to go on by foot. We kept in constant contact with CSC. While we walked, each of us would see the lights. Blue, red, white, and yellow.
The beckon [sic] light turned out to be the yellow light. We would see them periodically, but not in a specific pattern. As we approached, the lights would seem to be at the edge of the forrest. We were about 100 meters from the edge of the forrest when I saw a quick movement, it look visible for a moment . It look like it spun **xxxxx** left a quarter of a turn, then it was gone. I'd advised SSgt Penningston [sic] and A1C Burroughs. We advised CSC and proceeded in extreme caution. When we got about 75–50 meters, MSgt Chandler/Flight Chief, was on the scene. CSC was not reading our transmissions very well, , so we used MSgt Chandler as a go-between. He remained back at our vehicle. As we entered the forrest, the blue and red lights were not visible anymore. Only the beacon light, was still blinking. We figured the lights were coming from past the forrest, since nothing was visible when we past [sic] through the woody forrest. We would see a glowing near the beacon light, but as we got closer we found it to be a lit up farm house.

After we passed through the forrest, we thought it had to be an aircraft accident. So did CSC as well. But we ran and walked a good 2 miles past our vehicle, until we got to a vantage point where we could determine that what we were chasing **X** was only a beacon light off in the distance. Our route through the forrest and field was a direct one,**x** straight towards the light. We informed CSC that the light beacon was farther than we thought, , so CSC terminated our investigation. A1C Burroughs and I took a road, while SSgt Penningston [sic] walked straight back from where we came. A1C Burroughs saw the light again, this time it was coming from the left of us , as we were walking back to our patrol vehicle. We got in contact with SSgt Penningston [sic] and we took a walk threw where we saw the lights. Nothing. Finally, we made it back to our vehicle, after making contact with the PCs and informing them of what we saw. After that we met MSgt Chandler and we went in service again after termination of the sighting."[dcxxxix]

I'm convinced this is a 'cleaned-up' version of what happened. I talked with Amn Cabansag and can say he was shook up to the point he didn't want to talk. From talking with Chuck Decarlo (C&N)
[sic] *I can say he is still working today. He might talk if approached right.* [signed] H

[Handwritten comments added at a later date. Most likely written by Lt. Col. Charles Halt.]

It came to our attention that the statement attributed to and signed by Airman First Class Edward N. Cabansag, was possibly constructed by a British military agent, associated with the incident. As we recall from Jim Penniston's second hypnosis session discussed in Chapter 14: *Regression,* it emerged that he was interrogated on December 30, 1980, by two agents – one British and one American. The day before, Jim Penniston had simply been debriefed inside the AFOSI building on Bentwaters, and one of these agents had taken his four-page, handwritten statement, which had been signed, and later returned with a concocted statement that was handed to him to read and memorize, having been told that this was the story he was to tell anyone who asked him questions about what he had witnessed during the incident.

In examining Cabansag's statement, it is apparent from the language used that there are certain expressions more common to British usage than American. For example, the hyphenated words: *"go-ahead,"* and *"go-between."* In addition, the distances are given in *metres* – although expressed in the American spelling ("meters") – rather than feet or yards. Furthermore, the phrase, "woody forest," is not common to American usage, and the word 'forest,' is spelled with two r's, "forrest," which is a common English/Scottish surname.

Also, the use of punctuation is in keeping with British usage such as comma splices, the use of extra periods, periods with spaces, and double commas ", ," at the end of sentences, which is sometimes evident in British colloquial writing. These observations were made by my wife, Heather Elizabeth Osborn, who is an English Professor and writer.

As we can see, in the statement signed by Cabansag, Jim Penniston's name was misspelled as "Penningston" by whoever had typed this statement. It was noted that a similar name associated with the incident, is that of Chris Pennington, who was Brenda Butler's partner, and this is too much of a coincidence, when we realize that Chris was known to J. D. Ingalls, and it was Chris who Ingalls first confided in about the incident, which was really

the containment story he was spreading at the time when the last two statements signed by Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler were being typed up. It is possible that whoever typed up the statement that Cabansag was given to sign, had received the name "Penningston" from J. D. Ingalls, who may have been present and complicit in the typing of these statements to perpetuate the containment story, and that the name was mixed up in translation with the name he knew as "Pennington," based on his friendship with Chris. He may have thought that the spelling or pronunciation of Jim's surname was the same or similar. This is a compelling theory in any case.

Anyway, we shall continue with our analysis as to how the statement fits with what Cabansag said he witnessed and experienced.

During an interview with the late investigative reporter and author Georgina Bruni in 1999, Edward Cabansag said he had no recall of ever being ordered back by SSgt. Jim Penniston to the end of the logging road where the Jeep was parked to act as a radio relay:

> Edward Cabansag:
> "I've read all that stuff about me being a com-link, but I can't remember any of that. I remember being with Penniston and Burroughs, there were only three of us, Sergeant Chandler stayed back with the jeep."[dcxl]

This would appear to support what Burroughs has long maintained, that Cabansag was with him and Jim Penniston when they entered the woods and encountered the craft (the source of the lights so Burroughs believes), and that Cabansag was also with them when they chased after the lights towards the east coast.

However, in the statement signed by Airman Cabansag, are the words: *"I'd advised SSgt Penningston and A1C Borroughs. We advised CSC . . ."*

One would ask, what had Airman Cabansag advised them about? This sentence seems to indicate that Cabansag was saying he was advising the men on what he was seeing and from a distance – i.e., *separated* from them. This indicates he was indeed acting as radio relay between SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs and CSC at Bentwaters. However, the statement continues with the following, indicating that Cabansag was now with the two responders going into the woods, and that MSgt. Chandler was now at the vehicle instead of Airman Cabansag. "*When we got about 75 - 50 meters, MSgt Chandler/Flight Chief, was on the scene. CSC was not reading our*

transmissions very well, so we used MSgt. Chandler as a go-between. He remained back at our vehicle."

Again, Burroughs has maintained that Cabansag also accompanied him and SSgt. Penniston when they later chased after the lights (craft) for "two miles" after it took off in the air from the landing site. This is also described in the official witness statement signed by Edward N. Cabansag, *"After we passed through the forest, we thought it had to be an aircraft accident. So did CSC as well. But we ran and walked a good 2 miles past our vehicle, until we got to a vantage point where we could determine that we were chasing was only a beacon light off in the distance."*

However, what should be noted is that Ed Cabansag has since said, and during the interview with Georgina Bruni in 1998, that he didn't have anything to do with the typed statement, which was typed by someone else and given to him to sign, and neither did he read it before or after signing it. Furthermore, Cabansag's memory of what had happened is sketchy and unclear, and what little he does remember is contradictory. It is as if a chunk of his memory of the incident had been erased or blocked:

> "You know, I don't remember any of that. It seems like I have a blank there somewhere. I don't recall walking the two miles either. I would have remembered that. It couldn't have been two miles; it was cold out there. I know what they're saying, but I can't recall, maybe I was told not to discuss it, maybe they blocked it, I don't know."[dcxli]

Also, *why would Cabansag say that MSgt. Chandler was with the Jeep parked at the logging road, acting as the radio relay?* Other than what Cabansag has said, there are no witness accounts or testimonies that have MSgt. Chandler acting as relay next to the Jeep. According to the witness testimonies, Chandler was still enroute to the East Gate when SSgt. Penniston, Airman Burroughs, and Airman Cabansag had left to drive into the Rendlesham forest.

It is difficult to make sense of what is being described in the statement attributed to and signed by "Edward N. Cabansag A1C." We must keep in mind that if Cabansag did not construct or type up the statement attributed to him, then what we read is more likely a mix of what Cabansag may have said about the incident during a debrief beforehand, and what had been added to the statement so as to confuse any potential researchers if the story ever got

out.

That seems to be the purpose of these so-called official witness statements. And so, to make sense of what the statement is telling us and what facts may be included in the statement based on what Cabansag may have said, or had been heard saying right after the incident, it is possible that after driving to the East Gate, MSgt. J. D. Chandler had then decided to drive to the end of the logging road to see what was going on and had stopped where the Jeep was. And if so, then the question is, *how would Ed Cabansag have known this? . . Unless, Cabansag was ordered by Chandler to give the radio over to him so he could act as relay while Cabansag was sent off to find Penniston and Burroughs?*

If true, and if Cabansag *did* find the men in the woods and had rejoined them, then it's possible that Burroughs was aware, and this would explain why Burroughs remembers him being there. However, it is obvious that if Cabansag had joined them then Jim Penniston was not aware of this, as he told Georgina Bruni in one of his interviews with her in 1998:

> "It was a confusing time. I don't even know if Cabansag was there. I only cared about what was 180 degrees in front of me, an unidentified."[dcxlii]

What little Cabansag may remember is also weakened by the fact that Cabansag's mind appears to have been blocked between the time when he left the Jeep with Penniston and Burroughs and then the time when he said he was walking back with them after the investigation had been terminated by Lt. Buran at 3:54 a.m., according to Buran's witness statement.

Quoting Edward Cabansag:

> "I'm very confused. I may have been with Chandler, but then I can't remember separating from Burroughs and Penniston. Why do I just recall? – I have a blank. I really don't remember anything about the thing landing."[dcxliii]

In his interview with Georgina Bruni in 1999 for her book, Ed Cabansag also discussed memories of seeing a "cone-shaped – egg-shaped craft," with blue, white and red lights running around its belt from left to right, sometimes rapidly flashing and sometimes slow – as well as seeing flakes of metal coming off it. He appears to have placed his sighting of this unusual craft AFTER the incident that took place at the landing site and when he,

Burroughs, and Penniston had chased the object for some “two miles” after it took off. But again, in the quote above, Cabansag says he doesn’t remember having walked the “two miles.”

I have placed quotation marks around the statement “two miles,” because this distance, supposedly covered after the craft took off from the landing site, only exists in the witness statements signed by Burroughs and Cabansag, both entries expressed as “2 miles.”

This detail is interesting because the witness statement that bears Burroughs’ signature was handwritten, and it has been determined that Burroughs wrote the statement on December 29, 1980 and in the presence of SSgt. Jim Penniston and Deputy Commander Lt. Col. Halt in Halt’s office. However, the typed witness statement that bears the signature of Edward N. Cabansag is said by Cabansag himself to have been signed on the morning of December 26, 1980, and just after the incident – again, in Col. Halt’s office and in the presence of Col. Halt. In the interview he did with Georgina Bruni, Ed Cabansag is quoted as having said that he did not type the witness statement that was put before him to sign and did not even read it.

One wonders if Cabansag had been messed with, and if these are false memories having been planted within his mind to confuse any potential researchers and investigators of the case, as these descriptions of the craft bear no resemblance to what Jim Penniston claims he saw up close.

Ed Cabansag told Georgina Bruni in his interview with her in 1999 that he was never interviewed by the AFOSI:

> “‘That morning everyone was talking about it, but it soon went quiet,’ said Cabansag. He claims he was never interviewed by the AFOSI but Lieutenant Colonel Halt told him it was ‘very hush-hush’ and advised him not to talk about it on the base. Cabansag says he was left alone and not bothered by the AFOSI agents. He believes this was because he followed advice and played dumb.”[dcxliv]

Could Cabansag have been lying to protect himself, having been told not to say anything, even at this late date during his interview with Georgina Bruni in 1999?

The other possible, and most likely scenario, is that Airman Cabansag WAS interviewed and even interrogated by the AFOSI around the same time that Jim Penniston was (December 29 and December 30, 1980), and that the reason why Cabansag says he wasn’t is that he can’t remember because he

had been placed under hypnosis and a block had been placed on his memory – not only of the events, but also on the fact that he had been interrogated.

In any case, Jim Penniston says that much like the statement the OSI agents had given him and which he was instructed to hand onto Lt. Col. Halt (see Chapter 9: *Afterburn*), what little about the incident that Cabansag had remembered and told Georgina Bruni, as well as the information presented in the statement attributed to Airman Cabansag, are full of inaccuracies and are misleading. What Cabansag said and what was in the statement attributed to him, also contradicts what Jim Penniston says really happened in the forest that morning. As we will see in the following chapters, it is also possible that Burroughs had been messed with and that his memory of Airman Cabansag accompanying them throughout the investigation is a false one – again to confuse people.

In a summing up of her interview with Ed Cabansag, here's what Georgina Bruni has to say:

> "The problem now facing Cabansag is the realization that he experienced missing time during the encounter. This has clearly bothered him and he can find no solution as to what happened to him during that period. The remarkable thing is that he has unknowingly lived with it all these years, and it was only when I asked him to piece together his story that he realized there was a blank in his memory. It is certain that this missing time took place during Penniston and Burroughs' encounter with the UFO and, although he was not in close range to the object, it is just possible that he was also drawn into the encounter."[dcxlv]

Georgina Bruni points out that Halt's secretary, or anyone from Halt's office, could not have typed the witness statements, because apart from the bad spelling and typing errors, the typewriters used to type these statements were not as sophisticated as the one used to type out Halt's memorandum over a week later.

This probably means that the statements were not typed in Halt's office but were prepared earlier.

It must also be noted that the witnesses did not have easy access to these facilities. The typewriter used to type Cabansag's statement is also a different one than that used to type Penniston's. Whoever typed these statements made sure there were enough errors to make it look like the witnesses, whom it

must be remembered were not adept at using typewriters. In fact, police personnel always used notebooks. However, Chandler's and Buran's statements appear to have been typed on the same machine, the only one that was handwritten was by Burroughs. Assuming Penniston's and Cabansag's typed statements are bogus, then whoever was responsible for them must have had a good reason for going to all that trouble.

Time Discrepancy

The two remaining witness statements – those of Lt. Fred A. "Skip" Buran[dcxlvi] and MSgt. J. D. Chandler,[dcxlvii] are the only other statements that include the time of "03:00 hrs," the same time given in John Burroughs' handwritten statement ("0300") and these were both signed on January 2, 1981, some five days after Burroughs completed his statement on December 29, and eight days after the incident on December 26.

While speaking at *The Rendlesham Forest Incident Presentation* conference on Saturday, May 19, 2018, at the Woodbridge Community Hall, Suffolk, England, Burroughs mentions the time discrepancy, and what he says demonstrates he is still convinced that he is right about the 3:00 a.m. time when the incident began:

> "Yeah, early on when this first broke, that some of the stories that Jim was talking about was he had the dates wrong, and he actually had it starting right around midnight. But when evidence started coming forward over the years [he means the witness statements – i.e., his, Lt. Buran's and Mst. Chandler's] it became clear it started around 0300 on the twenty-sixth of December."

On the strength of the information provided by Jim Penniston – long considered by Georgina to be an "amazing witness" (see here) and someone whom she trusted – Georgina then began to inquire into this time discrepancy, and in her book published in 2001, the author gives her own logical reasons why she believes that the 3:00 a.m. time first given in Burroughs' handwritten witness statement is incorrect.[dcxlviii]

The late Georgina Bruni was a smart woman and a diligent researcher, and I, too, would have to conclude that the time of "03:00 hrs" for the initial sighting is *incorrect*, and that rather than assume that the other witnesses were correct and Jim Penniston was wrong, *it is the other way around, and Jim Penniston was always right about this.* This error seems to have begun

with John Burroughs. And during a radio interview he did in 2014, even Burroughs cannot get his head around the apparent fact that he was wrong about the time.[dcxlix]

What is important to note here is that the bogus witness statement that Jim Penniston was given *does NOT include the time of 03:00 hrs,* and neither does the typed witness statement signed by Airman Ed Cabansag, which Cabansag says wasn't typed up by him, and which he states he had never even read before or after signing it. In fact, no time or date is given on the 'official' Penniston and Cabansag witness statements. However, the four-page, witness statement that Jim Penniston had handwritten did include the times and the correct date, but this was taken away and the bogus one, which is now in the public domain, replaced it.

In view of all the above, it is quite telling that Burroughs' handwritten witness statement, *appears to be the FIRST statement to include the time of 3:00 (a.m.)* Therefore, it can be intuited that what little his statement contained – because Burroughs only describes lights (which is all he could remember, so he states in subsequent interviews) – was most-likely used as a workable 'template' for the others, along with what was written into the statements attributed to SSgt. Jim Penniston and Airman Cabansag.

It can therefore be further theorized that the accounts given in the statements signed by Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler appear to have also been based on what was mostly described in the earlier statements.

For example, the statement attributed to Airman Cabansag appears to have been the earliest statement that was typed up and signed. And it's interesting that in it, the word "beacon" – which appears to have been chosen and included to lead the reader into thinking the airman is confusing the phenomena he is describing with the light from the Orfordness Lighthouse – is mentioned five times. In 2003, Ed Cabansag was interviewed and filmed for the Sci-Fi Channel TV documentary *Invasion at Rendlesham,* and the following clip/quote from it was used in the James Fox DVD documentary *Out of the Blue* released in 2011:

> "I was told to sign some paperwork stating that what I saw out there was just the beacon that was out there, and that, and that it was nothing out of the ordinary."
>
> Edward Cabansag interviewed on the DVD documentary, *Out of the Blue* by James Fox, September 9, 2011.

Burroughs' handwritten statement, also mentions the beacon light, which he later says was coming from the "lighthouse." And in the statement signed by Lt. Buran, "marker beacon" is mentioned.

Quoting Georgina Bruni:

> "It is interesting how Chandler emphasizes the 'beacon light' and, along with Buran, refers to the event as having taken place much later than it actually did."

As mentioned in Chapter 3: *Discovery,* it was Burroughs who was fooled by the beacon of the Orfordness Lighthouse, and this was relayed to Lt. Buran, who was monitoring the radio transmissions at CSC, and we discussed the likelihood that this is 'when' and 'where' *the plot to use the beacon of the lighthouse to explain away the incident first came into play.* And of course, the skeptics only need the inclusion of this one detail in four out of five witness statements as an excuse to discard the whole event as nothing more than a light shining through the woods from a lighthouse and its investigation as a 'fool's errand.' Taking into consideration the likelihood that the agents of deception, having already anticipated that blind acceptance of this absurd explanation would be inevitable by the majority of people who have already been indoctrinated into a certain world view in which strange, unexplained things do not exist and are to be avoided at all costs, *and that this view would assist in the cover up*, the following scenarios come to mind:

> 1) Some of the details Burroughs had written down on December 29 in Col. Halt's office, as well as some of the details in the statement given to Penniston earlier that morning at the AFOSI building and which was then handed to Col. Halt the same day, were mentioned in the conversations that were going around the offices on the base, and that Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler also used these details in their accounts. After all, as stated at the start of the witness statement signed by Buran, it is said that the "*following statement is general in nature and may be inaccurate in some*

instances due to the time-lapse involved and the fact I was not taking notes at the time of the occurrence."

2) Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler were advised exactly what to type based both on what Burroughs had described in his statement in Col. Halt's office on December 29, 1980 – including some of the details already given in the substituted statement handed to Jim Penniston by the AFOSI agents, and which Col. Halt had in his possession from that same day.

3) The accounts had already been typed up for Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler to sign.

Personally, I do not endorse the last scenario, and would say the truth is more a blend of the first two, and it is more-than-likely that the information given in the statement signed by Airman Cabansag, which Halt also had in his possession was perhaps also used as a source of information by Buran and Chandler so that they too would include certain key descriptions, like "beacon," for example, which leads the reader to conclude that the witnesses merely confused the lights they saw with the beacon light of the lighthouse. And if this was not entirely apparent to anyone reading the witness statements, mainstream, scientific-minded skeptics like astronomer writer Ian Ridpath would no doubt be *indirectly* approached in some way and brought in to point it out as a logical explanation, thereby diverting attention by making a great deal of fuss over it. It is a fact that five days after the Rendlesham Incident first hit the headlines in October 1983, Ridpath was contacted by BBC TV's *Breakfast Time* program to investigate the Rendlesham Incident.

In any case, considering the hypothetical scenarios given above regarding the facts surrounding the official witness statements, and what Jim Penniston describes had happened at the AFOSI building, there must be a reason why it was important that the public also be directed to accept and believe that the events of the 'first night' began around 3:00 a.m., as opposed to beginning

soon after midnight. In other words, there must be a motive for covering up this truth if the incident was ever made public.

And then we discover that the 3:00 a.m. time was seen to 'conveniently' coincide with a meteor that was observed over southern England, and which was later reported in the *British Astronomical Association Meteor Section Newsletter*, no. 4, dated February 1981. Being an amateur astronomer, Ian Ridpath quickly jumped on this celestial event to make his readers accept or believe that this meteor was what had "apparently sparked the Rendlesham Forest UFO incident."

Quoting Ian Ridpath:

> "The BAA report notes that this fireball was seen at 02.50 UT (± 5 minutes) on Boxing Day 1980 by four witnesses, locations not given but seemingly in southern England, all of whom estimated its brightness as comparable to the gibbous (i.e. three-quarter) Moon and of 3 to 4 seconds duration. In that bare information lies the genesis of one of the most celebrated UFO cases of all time."[dcl]

So, the timely phenomena surrounding the 'meteor,' and also the light from the 'lighthouse,' appear to have already been acknowledged and considered as explanations, and these were then set up in the witness statements for skeptics like Ridpath to jump on.[dcli]

In any case, it is now clear that Jim Penniston's account of the events, as is evident in his notebook, and which tells us the investigation began *just after midnight*, is correct:

- SSgt. Monroe Nevels says that Lt. Englund told him that the radar sighting of an object over Woodbridge *took place close to midnight* on Christmas – December 25, 1980.
- The testimony of A1C Timothy Egercic of D Flight states that his patrol received the first call during shift change, which occurred between 23.00 and midnight on December 25, 1980.
- Buran agreed that being *closer to midnight* (December 25, 1980) could be possible.
- Georgina Bruni writes that Burroughs once claimed *it began after midnight.*
- USAF Law Enforcement officer A1C Chris Armold remembers the call from John Burroughs to the Law Enforcement desk *as being after midnight.*
- Col. Halt states that the desk officer, Sgt. "Crash" McCabe, who took calls at the flight desk of CSC, referred to the time of the incident as being *'sometime around midnight.'*
- In an email sent to Jim Penniston, dated April 4, 2012, David Coffey (SSgt, USAF. Senior Central Security Controller, December 1980) writes: *'Here is what I remember of the incident.*

You called CSC that night around midnight . . . .'

Furthermore, the "12:20," the "12:51" and the "2:45" times Jim wrote in his notebook are consistent with the time he says the investigation began at 12:02 for him and when things proceeded chronologically from there right up until when the investigation was finally terminated by Buran at 3:54 a.m., as was stated in the witness statement that Lt. Buran had signed. As mentioned, according to what Jim recorded in his notebook, the craft lifted off at 2:45 a.m. . . . *all of which rules out any possibility that what the witnesses saw over Rendlesham forest, and all that Penniston and Burroughs experienced in the woods, was related to the meteor that was supposedly seen over southern England between 2:50 and 3:00 a.m.*

It is now apparent to me that a cover up was in place from the very beginning, in which only some of the truth is made to remain 'in the pot,' mixed with a dash of disinformation.

Quoting Georgina Bruni:

> "There are large chunks of information missing from the statements and there appears to be a certain amount of disinformation mixed with facts. [. . .] Assuming Penniston's and Cabansag's typed statements are bogus, then whoever was responsible for them must have had a good reason for going to all that trouble. They appear to be a clever combination of fact coupled with a fair amount of disinformation. A typical exercise carried out by covert agencies in order to confuse the truth?"[dclii]

Indeed, if there are several witnesses to such an unexplained incident as this which could cause problems for the 'powers that be' – especially on, or within the vicinity of a military base – then a cover up as part of 'damage control' will ensue and a containment story provided, as has been established throughout these chapters. Knowing what humans are capable of, it's not at all an uncommon practice, that to safeguard against the events of the incident being made public, the statements which the witnesses are formally obligated to provide will surreptitiously be altered with inconsistencies and conflicting pieces of information added to confuse any potential investigative researchers and reporters – even in the company of those witnesses whose statements are the most truthful and problematic, and who are then told that they are to

comply, and even lie if need be, as this is now a “national security issue.”

And so, knowing this kind of control and manipulation of the facts *does go on at the highest levels*, it could be surmised that if this story ever got out, then to create some confusion for any potential investigative researchers or reporters, it was important that the witness statements signed by Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler on January 2, 1981, and which included the same time of 03:00, also *agreed* with the same recorded time that Burroughs had said he and SSgt. Steffens had first reported the strange lights in Rendlesham Forest. And again, perhaps because it was discovered that this time coincided with the time a meteor was seen over southern England, which would be something the skeptics could use to explain away this UFO incident as just another mundane event in which the witnesses had been fooled.

For the sake of keeping up the appearance that the ‘established order’ is in control, it is an unfortunate fact that even the reputation of professionally-trained observers and skilled individuals, who would otherwise be revered, admired and respected and ironically a shining example that reflects the proficiency of the established order, will be sacrificed by being made to appear incompetent, irresponsible, foolish and reckless, when it suits and *if that’s what it takes.*

The agenda to confuse researchers is evident in the fact that this detail would then be seen to contradict what SSgt. Penniston would say if he ever came forward with his true account. The typed up statement given to Jim Penniston by the agents at the AFOSI building had no recorded time for when the incident began and no date, but it’s likely that the agents were aware that Penniston had given the time as being just after midnight, and again this was included in his original statement according to him. So, again, if Jim Penniston came forward one day and tried to state in public that the investigation for the incident began just after 12:00 midnight, he would not be taken seriously, because it would be seen to go against the consensus view of the other witnesses, who had stated that it all began around 3:00 a.m. And of course, this is what has happened, as many people have now been taken in by it, while there are others who only *appear* to be taken in by it.

But let’s stay focused on this time discrepancy . . . .

As mentioned, the official witness statements with the time of 03:00 and 3:00 (a.m.) surfaced in 1997, only four years after Jim Penniston came forward in public to tell the truth of what he experienced and only three years

after his first interview with Sally Rayle for *OMNI* magazine was published, *which of course also included his time of 12:02 a.m. for when the investigation of the incident began.*

It was as if the witness statements were obtained and made public at this time on purpose, and we should note that they were obtained by a UFO skeptic, so that what they contained would not only contradict this detail . . . *but contradict almost everything Jim Penniston is now saying.* And of course, this is exactly what is happening, which bears witness to what I am describing here as being most likely true.

It is obvious that the 'agents of deception' did not reckon on Jim Penniston's notebook. But even the existence of this has come under attack with the ludicrous assertion that the notebook, believed to be a later addition, was created by Jim to corroborate his account of what had happened. *But why would he go to all that trouble?* Isn't it simple 'Occam's Razor' logic to just accept that he had his notebook with him that night and recorded what he saw? And, in any case, it makes sense that Jim carried a notebook with him all the time, and had his notebook with him that night.

Quoting Jim Penniston:

> "It's standard security procedure for security force supervisors to carry notebooks for recording shift activities – especially if we have a situation like an aircraft crash or other in-flight emergencies. It is essential to record particular dates and times and other details when these things happen, so that when we do further reports, we can do accurate 1569's which is an Air Force incident report and where we then write things out in more detail. It's just normal procedure that we did that. I carried my notebook everywhere. But when I was at the AFOSI Building being interviewed, and it was apparent that the incident was now being contained and that I was being ordered to lie, I decided to keep the existence of the notebook to myself and didn't mention it for years in case it would have been taken from me – either by order, taken by force, or stolen . . . and I would never see it again. It was the only evidence I had of having been out there and having witnessed what I did, and so it was very personal to me and I guarded it by not ever mentioning it until I retired from the USAF in October of 1993."

Now that we can see the likely truth of what happened and when, we can now see through the following paragraph written by folklorist and skeptic, Dr. David Clarke, who presents the "3 a.m." time as fact, *and see it for what it*

truly is and what writing it was meant to achieve:

> ". . . during the Christmas holiday period astronomers logged three fireball meteors (lumps of rock burning up in the atmosphere), the largest and brightest at 2.50 a.m. on Boxing Day morning. Can it be just a coincidence that in their original statements the USAF airmen describe seeing "lights coming down [into] the woods" around 3 a.m.? The rest, as they say, is history – or legend."[dcliii]

And now we have to ask ourselves, could Burroughs' time of 3:00 (a.m.) really be relied upon as the true time when the investigation began, and which was most likely seized upon by the 'agents of deception' who thought they could use it to their advantage – coinciding as it did with the supposed "fireball/meteors" seen over southern England at that time?

Quoting Jim Penniston:

> "Any time a statement of witness is done, it is usually done on a form, or if not available, on lined paper. All witness statements should be dated, signed, and witnessed. If they are not, it should be questioned as to whether they were actually made by the witness. I personally believe the only statement that was actually authentic and not tampered with is the one from John Burroughs. I was never asked by the Security Police Squadron to do a statement. This is because they knew it had already been accomplished at the base AFOSI building. *Burroughs' statement was asked for by Colonel Halt and not by the Security Police Squadron.* I believe that the other statements were either the product of coaching, or written by others, which they had the witnesses sign. Case in point, Ed Cabansag's statement; it was prepared, and he was told to sign it. So, was there containment? Absolutely . . . ." [Our emphasis.]
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret),
> Thomas Dunne Books, 2014.

Lastly, the agents who interrogated and hypnotized Jim Penniston some four days after the incident on Tuesday, December 30, 1980 to get the truth out of him and then to mess with his memory to both confuse him and any potential researchers and investigators, *did not reckon on the notebook* – i.e., that in his

notebook Jim had already recorded the time on several occasions during his investigation, amongst other things they did not want to be made public, as we will discover in the next chapter.

Georgina Bruni, 1998

Jim Penniston:

It was in 1998 when I was contacted by a woman claiming to be a researcher who was currently writing a book about the Rendlesham Incident. Her name was Georgina Bruni, a business woman who had turned her talents into being an investigative reporter and author. Although I was reluctant to get involved with another research/author, she appeared earnest in trying to find the truth about the incident. After dozens of phone calls and conversations with Georgina, and mainly due to her persistence and positive perseverance – as she just did not take no for answer while at the same time being very charming and witty with it – I was persuaded to be a contributor to the book she was planning to write. After all, listening to what she had to say about her research and picking up on her overall attitude towards getting to the truth was all very refreshing to me.

As the weeks progressed, Georgina would give me tidbits of information – telling me who else was 'on board' as a contributor in her book project. Rendlesham witnesses like Monroe Nevels and Col. Williams were a few. I felt good about agreeing to assisting her. Our inter-continental calls always lasted around two hours, and they would vary from one session a week to sometimes two, depending on her questions. Georgina asked me for any visual support, like drawings of the craft, and I complied with that. I would always comply with what she asked for, or what she wanted if I was able. I also relayed to her the many impressions I had experienced about the incident.

With what she was relaying to me in turn, I noted that she also had been given erroneous information – some of it including elements of the cover/containment story that was put out in the days following the incident. During one of our first discussions, I pointed out to Georgina that some of the information she had was false and left it at that. We also talked about the rumor of an underground tunnel system on the base. I told her in absolute

confidence that there was simply no such thing – for example, the water table was only two to three feet on the base. Of course, a few facilities did include a basement, and told her that these were built out of the necessity for the occupants of those buildings to survive and carry on operating in the event of an attack by Soviet or Soviet pact countries.

Georgina and I talked about many things, and she always took notes, and I'm sure she did this even when our conversations were not always about the incident. The interviews were mostly by phone and would start out with a few clarification questions, or a further study question, following up on a previous phone conversation. This is where I learned about the airman who had clearly taken the containment/cover story and developed it into a book that he had published with a co-author. Those things that were not part of the cover story were clearly embellished – and most likely by him to fit his own personal agenda in coming forward about the incident in the first place.

During one of our conversations, Georgina discussed some of the negative things that had been told to her by the people she had questioned – especially regarding their own personal dealings with the airman in question and what had transpired and had come to light. Her opinion was that this airman had a 'narcissistic personality disorder' of some kind, and unfortunately knowing who he was, I had to agree with her – even though I had not had a personal encounter with this airman since the few short months he had been there before being relieved of Security Police duties and was filling in his time prior to discharge at Bentwaters Security Police Supply. I also openly shared what Salley Rayl, and others whom I respected and trusted, had said about him in my many conversations with Georgina.

However, what I thought was now important to get across to Georgina was the fact that the first person to spread this disinformation around the base and also the pubs and clubs of Suffolk was the airman who went by the pseudonym Steve Roberts. Georgina already knew about him and said that she was told his real name was Dan. I said that Dan or Daniel could be the 'D' in his name.

I then told Georgina that Col. Halt had told me his real name was J. D. Ingalls, a staff sergeant, who held a Top-Secret clearance for his job and with whom I had casual conversations back during the early months of 1981, when I was working on the Bentwaters base as NCOIC of 'Plans and Programs.' We left that particular topic of conversation at that for the time being and agreed we would return to it after Georgina had conducted her research and

investigations.

Glimpses of Other Realities . . .

In 1998, the book by Linda Moulton Howe, which included my own account, along with what I had said during the hypnosis sessions, *Glimpses of Other Realities Vol II: High Strangeness*, was finally published, and when I received my copy, I was extremely disappointed with my portrayal in it. I had allowed it to go ahead . . . a huge mistake for me, *but a lesson was learned from this experience.* Linda had clearly thought less about the truth than voicing her own theories, which were based on the alien or ET hypothesis.

There was a point made from my contact, and it's an impression or message, I have always had with me, both consciously in the waking world and also in my dreams . . . a message I have only actually said once publicly and this was at the Madison, Wisconsin lecture in 2013. (I haven't said it since because Darren DeBoy, my friend and assistant who was with me, said that you could hear all the air being sucked out of the room by the audience's gasp!) I said, and I would emphasize that this message came to me even before I had undergone hypnosis and when all this 'time-travelers from the future' scenario came out:

> "The message that takes me back the most is that even in their future . . . they still await first contact!"

. . . Meaning contact with another species or civilization from another planet, solar system or galaxy in the vast universe. I would emphasize that this message from the intelligence behind the craft I had encountered came to me even before I had undergone hypnosis and the 'time-travelers from the future' scenario came out, which is why I could never really accept the alien/ET hypothesis, and also because we don't have all the answers to make this conclusion, which many will state and take for granted as if it is a fact. I even question the 'time-travelers from the future' hypothesis, and accept that the intelligence behind the UFO or UAP phenomenon could be something beyond that and the ET hypothesis.

Although I went into this thinking that she was going to present information from me that had not yet been given to the public, I could not help feeling some resentment; that with her emphasis on what I said during my hypnosis sessions, which I couldn't even bring myself to watch, she was out to make money – not only off of what I had witnessed, but also off of my own grief at that time. I actually felt violated that my medical information was out there in the public domain. By the time I had received the book, Linda and I had already parted company on a sour note. I now viewed her not as someone who remained an objective researcher, but again, as an opportunist who would do anything to promote her own personal beliefs and agendas.[dcliv] Those were my personal thoughts on her then, although time tends to change and soften one's views. Our paths would cross once more in the future, with Linda being reintroduced back into my life again, and this time by Burroughs. This was during the time when he and I had agreed to collaborate with each other in the months approaching the 30th anniversary of the event to exchange information about what we had experienced over the years and hopefully discover more of what we had both witnessed that night in December 1980. (See Chapter 16: *Hunted by Lions, Tigers and Bears*.)

Revelations, 1999

During our discussions at this time, and which had been in session since 1998, Georgina Bruni told me that Brenda Butler had divulged the real identity of "Steve Roberts" and that the information I had given her concerning "Roberts" being J. D. Ingalls was correct, but that she had promised Brenda that she wouldn't reveal his name in her book. To date, unless I am mistaken, it has not appeared in any publication. Georgina then told me that that she had actually been in contact with J. D. Ingalls and that she had learned that he was in the SPI (Security Police Investigations) – a special unit within the Security Police Squadron equipped to deal with local crimes and incidents – which made her think that he may have also had some association with AFOSI.

I said that was interesting because during the time I knew him, SSgt. J. D. Ingalls was a 'Reports and Analysis' guy, and that he would occasionally drop by for a cup of coffee on his way to the AFOSI building and the SP Supply office (see Chapter 10: *Containment*). Georgina then told me that he

was still in the security business, employed by a government contractor whose role it is to secure classified projects.

I then divulged the fact that it was during these 'drop in' coffee breaks, that J. D Ingalls had told me that he was spreading disinformation as part of a containment story on the orders of Major Malcolm Zickler, the Security Police Commander on the base, who happened to be directly in charge of my reporting official at that time, who was Chief Master Sergeant Hill.

Georgina wasn't really surprised by this. She said that Ingalls had actually owned up to this in 1987. Seeing my surprised reaction, Georgina and I then discussed what she had learned about "Steve Roberts" (aka SSgt. J. D. Ingalls), as well as Larry Warren, whom we had first discussed from her research. She also told me how the story first broke and found its way into the national UK newspaper the *News of the World* on October 2, 1983 as written by Keith Beabey, and how it all went into the book, *Sky Crash,* published almost exactly one year later in October 1984. The authors of that book, Brenda Butler, Dot Street, and Jenny Randles were no doubt responsible – albeit unwittingly – for conveying to the public the false, cover/containment story created by high-ranking officers of the USAF and the OSI stationed at the base. But how were they to know?

During further discussions, Georgina Bruni told me how Brenda Butler, one of the authors of *Sky Crash,* first learned about the Rendlesham incident from J. D. Ingalls, and that she first learned of this directly on January 2, 1981 . . . only a week after the incident began on Boxing Day morning. This is what actually got the ball rolling on her research and investigation of the Rendlesham Incident. This meant that, in effect, SSgt. J. D. Ingalls was the first 'whistleblower' of the incident, divulging information about an event having taken place off-base and involving military personnel from the twin bases of Bentwaters and Woodbridge to a civilian investigator, who would then share it to the public. (Larry Warren had only told his mother written in a letter on January 6, 1981 and sent the next day, and she was not an investigator, so he could hardly have been the 'original whistleblower' on the incident, as he has long claimed since he came forward over two years later during the Spring of 1983.)

Since 1975, Brenda's long-term, live-in partner had been Chris Pennington. By this time, Chris and Brenda had been sharing a home in the Suffolk village of Leiston for almost twenty years. Chris was a Country and

Western singer/musician, who had regular bookings to perform at the USAF base and also the pubs and clubs throughout Suffolk and East Anglia. His stage name was "Chris Penny" and Brenda would often go along to the venues as support. It was at these gigs that J. D. Ingalls first met Brenda and Chris. Apparently, he told the couple that he had a love of Country and Western music, and that this was the reason why he had often gone along to watch Chris perform. Ingalls then got to know Brenda well and learned of her interest in the paranormal via the fact that Brenda had been running a successful ghost hunting club called, *"Paranormal activities here and beyond."* During the few years since he had gotten to know her, Ingalls would offer Butler any UFO-related stories that he had heard on the base and in the surrounding area.

On Wednesday, December 31, 1980 – five days after the three-day Rendlesham Incident began on that fateful morning of Boxing Day; the day after my interrogation by unknown agents in a room at the AFOSI building; and the same day went to I pick up the photos from the base photo lab, which had come out fogged – J. D. Ingalls turned up at a New Year's Eve party that Brenda and Chris were hosting at their farmhouse. Chris had invited some friends from the twin bases, and so it was no wonder that Ingalls had also turned up there. While the party was in full swing, Ingalls approached Chris and ushered him into the hall to talk to him privately. He then told Chris he needed to speak to Brenda about a UFO he had witnessed that had landed in Rendlesham Forest and which involved alien beings or extraterrestrials. What was actually discussed initially on this date has not been made clear, but Chris later said that "the airman" had something important on his mind and he seemed haunted:[dclv]

> "He [the airman] shared an incredible story with Chris of how he had witnessed a strange encounter in the forest a few nights earlier, where alien entities were seen repairing their spaceship. Chris listened with interest as the airman recounted a series of events that could have come straight out of the pages of a science-fiction novel."[dclvi]

Georgina was told that only Chris Pennington was told about this at the party on New Year's Eve, with Ingalls telling Pennington that he should really talk to Brenda because of her interest in UFOs. As mentioned, even though his 'whistleblowing' had been sanctioned at the highest levels, SSgt. J. D. Ingalls should be considered the first 'whistleblower' who had come out in public to

talk about the Rendlesham Incident. This would also mean that Chris Pennington was the first civilian on record to have heard about the Rendlesham Incident from a USAF airman who worked at Bentwaters base, and he wasn't comfortable about it.

And as also mentioned, the same initial information given to Chris Pennington on New Year's Eve was then given to Brenda by the airman on January 2 – which happened to be the day when the witness statements were signed and dated by Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler.

Then on January 6, 1981, Ingalls returned to give Brenda more details. Before he did, he asked Brenda not to reveal the source of her information, or to mention any of the details he had given her, at least until the information became available elsewhere. Brenda, who saw Ingalls as a friend she could trust, consented to this – hence the pseudonym "Steve Roberts."

"Steve Roberts" (J. D. Ingalls) said that he was part of a security patrol that was sent out to investigate something that had crashed inside the woods of Rendlesham Forest on the morning of December 27, 1980. (Although, according to Jenny Randles, at first "Roberts" told Butler that this happened during the early morning hours of December 26, and that it was in the later conversation that he gave the date of December 27.[dclvii] It was as if he had changed the date deliberately to confuse researchers, as he realized he shouldn't have said the 26th, and this would seem right, because the December 27th date, is between the two main incidents).

"Roberts" (Ingalls) added that shards of light had lit up an area there and claimed to have driven to the landing site in a Jeep with three other witnesses. He said that once they got into the forest, his team came upon a landed craft and added that next to the craft were strange, child-sized beings, about three-feet tall with large heads, suspended in beams of light. Apparently, the aliens were busy repairing their crashed spacecraft. He then claimed that he and the men he was with were then ordered to surround the damaged craft and to keep guard of it. "Roberts" then went on to tell Brenda Butler that Colonel Gordon E. Williams, who was the Wing Commander of the 81st tactical fighter wing at RAF Bentwaters/Woodbridge, had arrived on the scene and that soon afterwards he saw Col. Williams communicating with the alien beings using sign language. Apparently, the beings had experienced some difficulty with their craft and were in the process of repairing it. "Roberts," the "airman" then added that when eventually the beings had repaired the

craft, they then entered it, and the craft quickly took off. “Roberts” (Ingalls) went on to say that the incident had lasted three or four hours, during which time photographs were taken of the craft and that the craft had also hit a tree.

Having recounted this amazing incident to Brenda, for the sake of his career, “Roberts” (Ingalls) again asked her to keep his name out of it, suggesting that she try and contact other witnesses. After hearing his story, Brenda then telephoned researcher Dot Street. Dot already knew the source, having met him at one of Chris Pennington’s parties in 1979. The two women then discussed how they should carry out the investigation.

Obviously, the story that the airman (SSgt. J. D. Ingalls, aka Steve Roberts) gave Brenda Butler was totally false and appears not only to be based on the two main events – i.e., the first and third nights, but also to be a compilation of other reported incidents – the intention behind it to spread disinformation and to bring ridicule to the rumors that were going around the area just after the incident. One can also assume that Brenda was the woman that Ingalls thought he would try his luck at seducing, as told to me back in the first months of 1981, while Ingalls was in the process of spreading this ridiculous story, even though Brenda already had a long-term partner with whom Ingalls was also close friends.

I told Georgina what J. D. Ingalls had told me concerning his intentions to seduce one of the women. Hearing this, Georgina then said she had questioned Brenda whether she thought he was genuine. Brenda said that her first thought was that he was an ‘attention seeker,’ but that she and Dot had placed “a question mark next to him because he was a bit of a ladies’ man” and that he had thought he could impress them with his stories. *Well, that confirmed that,* I thought. The women had already figured out his own personal motives.

I asked how Georgina knew that SSgt. J. D. Ingalls was in the SPI (Security Police Investigations) unit, and she told me she had discovered it as part of her research, especially after Chris Pennington had told her that he thought Steve Roberts (aka Ingalls) was an AFOSI agent, which he later denied to Georgina, although he added that he had something to do with them.[dclviii]

Georgina told me an interesting side story.

Also on New Year’s Eve, the same evening as Brenda and Chris’ party, a barman at the Bentwaters officers’ club, named Sam Bowman, had overheard a conversation between two officers at the bar. He later told Chris Pennington

that he had heard the two officers saying that something had landed in the forest, causing the area to be severely scorched. Although, this was all the barman had heard, it was nevertheless true as regards the 'first night' – indeed a craft had landed in the forest, and there were scorch marks found on the trees the day after. However, this was the last time Chris would see Sam Bowman, who seemed to have disappeared without anyone knowing what had become of him, and, if true, then this is quite telling, as it is likely that the two officers were talking seriously about the facts of the incident and were not there to spread a concocted UFO story or disinformation. I wasn't surprised to hear that Chris Pennington was naturally worried by all this, because if it was discovered that he had knowledge of what had occurred in Rendlesham Forest, the best that could happen is that he would lose his base pass and wouldn't be able to perform on the base again. Georgina later told me that this is what indeed happened.

Georgina told me the story that emerged later from Larry Warren was virtually identical to that of "Steve Roberts" (Ingalls), in that Warren and other military members also surrounded the craft at close quarters and that Warren says he, too, witnessed a type of exchange or communication between General Gordon Williams and the occupants of the craft – exactly what J. D. Ingalls had already declared to Brenda Butler on January 6, 1981. In her book, published in 2001, Georgina had written:

> "According to a former British Intelligence source, the best way to discredit the truth is to create several different stories. This then becomes so confusing that the real facts lie buried among the fiction. Is this what Steve Roberts was involved with? If so, which part of his story is fact and which part is fiction?"[dclix]

What is particularly interesting – especially considering the story that Warren had later told – is that Brenda also told Georgina that "Steve Roberts" had said that he had been taken to an underground facility where he was interrogated and shown films. She said these details are, again, exactly the same as those given in the story Warren had told and had later touted in the book he co-authored with Peter Robbins, *Left at East Gate*, published in 1997. (See the account Adrian Bustinza gave Georgina Bruni in 1998 below.)

Georgina then told me that sometime in 1987, Ingalls, who had been stationed in Germany for several years, had returned to England and had turned up at Brenda's home on a motorbike. He then told Brenda that the

story he had given her had been a hoax, perpetrated by the USAF. In Georgina's own words:

> "As Brenda listened attentively, he went on to explain that he and several others had been ordered by their superiors to go out and spread the UFO stories among ufologists. He further explained that something did happen, and one day he would tell her the truth, but it was nothing of any importance and she should waste no more time on the case. Brenda was devastated; after all, he was the only witness she had truly trusted. For seven years she had relied on his word and, when all else seemed hopeless, his testimony alone had inspired both her and Dot to continue their investigations."[dclx]

Lastly, Georgina told me that, based on the stories that had emerged from Ingalls and Warren, who placed the then Wing Commander Colonel Gordon Williams at the scene of what was surely the third night's events, she had asked Gordon Williams, who had retired as a two star General on August 1, 1988, if he had been in the forest on any of those nights in December 1980, and he said, "No," adding that he was the Wing Commander and it was not his place to go chasing through the forest, adding that his job as the Wing Commander was to be in charge of the base installations and the flying missions, not investigations.[dclxi] I personally knew that Gordon Williams could not have been there, I told her.

"You CAN'T tell the people," November 2000

Georgina's book, *"You Can't Tell The People,"* was published in November 2000 by Sidgwick & Jackson. As soon as it was released, Georgina sent me a copy. After being upset with what I had read in Linda's book, I was delighted to find that Georgina Bruni's book was a more factual portrayal of what I had relayed to her, and her investigative research and findings breathed something more rational into the case – something that was closer to the truth than anything else that had been published about the Rendlesham Incident up until that time in book form. The ill-fated fact was that by the time Georgina's book was released, the public – especially those who believe in the alien/extraterrestrial hypothesis – had bought and eaten-up the 'cover-containment' story hook, line and sinker, and sadly and unfortunately many still believe it and cling tenaciously to it to this day.

Bustinza Underground

While on the subject of the containment story and the disinformation that was added, mixed and stirred into the narrative of what happened, an updated testimony given by Sgt. Adrian Bustinza was also included in Georgina's book. In an interview she conducted with him in 1998, Bustinza had told Georgina that he had been debriefed but then taken to a secret underground facility on the Bentwaters base and interrogated – finally admitting what he had previously denied and said he knew nothing about when he was first contacted by researchers in 1984, which had left Larry Warren hanging high and dry with his own story about the underground facility, based on what was originally told to him by Bustinza. Again, it's likely that untruths were mixed in with the facts, and that Bustinza was indeed interrogated, and this was when Bustinza was messed with and why he has a problem with talking about the incident and doing interviews

Now eighteen years after the incidents, Adrian Bustinza said that later that morning, after the events which took place between the evening of December 27 and 28, he was instructed to report to the office of Security Police Squadron Commander Major Malcolm Zickler for a debriefing on the incidents that had occurred in the forest some hours before, adding that this was the only comfort he had received, as he was told by Zickler that any information he gave would be confidential. He was told that a 'gag order' had been placed on the incident and that what they all saw was a lighthouse beacon – which makes sense of the witness statements having been messed with and manipulated, as the Orfordness Lighthouse 'beacon' is conspicuous in the statements. The Lighthouse beacon had either been added to those that were just signed – for example the statement signed by Ed Cabansag – or the witnesses were told to include references to it.

Bustinza was also told to report to the Base Commander Colonel Ted Conrad and was later summoned to the office of Wing Commander Colonel Gordon Williams.[dclxii]

Chapter Sixteen

Hunted by Lions, Tigers and Bears

November 2009 to April 2011

Jim Penniston:

It was during November of 2009 when I received an email from someone saying he was John Burroughs. The last time I had talked to Burroughs was some fifteen years earlier in 1994, while shooting the UK documentary, *Strange But True?* This was a very odd thing to happen, I thought. *Why in the world would he be trying to contact me after fifteen years of no contact?*

I thought of all the times during the mid-nineties when I would ask Col. Halt about him. Halt's responses were always the same . . . *that he had simply lost contact with Burroughs as if he had been swept off the face of the Earth.*

Now, I was reading an email from someone who claimed to be him, and I was suspicious.

I quickly gave the sender a personal security question that only Burroughs would know, and immediately received an email with the correct response. Burroughs was obviously annoyed that I had questioned who he was.

He then asked for my phone number, so we could talk, but I decided to wait to give it to him until a week or so later. I needed time to think about this. Well, as I predicted, from the very first phone call I had with him since I last saw him fifteen years previously, he had not changed since our days at

Bentwaters. He was still just as excitable and troubled as he was during that time.

I told Burroughs that I had asked Col. Halt about him back in 1995, "Chuck Halt said you had dropped off the face of the Earth and that he could not get a hold of you." I then added, "Halt said you were once in Chandler, Arizona and that it was rumored that you had gone to Alaska to live." Burroughs answered, saying that it was true that he had once lived in Chandler, but added that the rest was bullshit.

I found it odd that Halt would make a mistake like that. There was the uncomfortable possibility lingering in my mind that he hadn't made a mistake and had deliberately lied to me for purposes which were only known to him. Either way, it was unsettling, but racing through my mind was a huge WHY? Perhaps he didn't want me attempting to track down Burroughs, which is why he had said that Burroughs had since gone to live in Alaska.

I eventually contacted Col. Halt by phone and told him that Burroughs had initially contacted me by email, and I was now in regular contact with him. Halt was somewhat indifferent about it at first – although he did want to know how Burroughs knew my email. I told him that I had used the same email address since 1992. Halt then expressed his thoughts as to why, after fifteen years, Burroughs had suddenly decided to contact me. He then cautioned me about Burroughs' motives, which could have been anything at this point in time. Halt ended the conversation with me by asking what Burroughs' email address was. I gave it to him. He then hung up, after asking me to keep him informed.

December 2009

The documentary by James Fox was released on December 1, 2009 and went out under the title, *I Know What I Saw*. When I eventually viewed it, I could honestly say that, even though it was on a small budget and didn't take long to prepare, that it was the best documentary I had taken part in to date.

During the transition from 2009 into 2010, Burroughs and I talked often. Burroughs would always call me. I never initiated the calls. Burroughs was always urging me to write to certain people or post on Internet forums about the Rendlesham Incident. Burroughs had even tried to get me to talk to the British amateur astronomer/skeptic, Ian Ridpath, who believed we had

merely seen the light from the Orfordness lighthouse. Very bizarre, considering what we had both experienced and had seen in the forest that night. I could not figure out why Burroughs wanted me to talk to such people. Surely, he knew that he didn't have to entertain these people or explain anything to them?

While on the phone with Col. Halt, I brought up this issue about John wanting to discuss the incident with cynics, doubters, and debunkers. Halt then proceeded to get me up to speed with it all. What he said also confirmed my long-held suspicions that these people were mostly concentrating on the 'third night,' just as Halt was, which of course was natural for him, as he was there. But, it was just what the cover/containment story was designed to do . . . *to obscure the importance of the first night's events by getting people to focus on the third night's events instead.*

Again, all this was interesting – especially what Halt had to say about Larry Warren.

We also discussed the book Warren had co-authored about the incident with UFO researcher/investigator, Peter Robbins, as if Warren was one of the primary witnesses to the third night. I found it astonishing and ironic that up to this point Warren's story had become the foundation upon which the views of the public about Rendlesham had largely been based . . . at least the UFO enthusiasts in England who staunchly believed in galactic-traveling aliens and were interested in the incident.

It was clear that the public really did not know much and had been misled by buying into the disinformation given out about the Rendlesham Incident. To me, it also clarified why the TV documentary production companies in the past were difficult to work with – especially when it came to me trying to present what had really happened during the events of the first night. It hadn't really dawned on me that in general people were instead confusing the investigations of the first night's events with the investigations of the third day and night, which had been ordered by Base Commander, Colonel Conrad. It was clear that over the past three decades, the disinformation campaign that had been laid so many years before was still working as intended, which was basically what Colonel Heubusch had predicted would happen while talking about this with me in confidence so many years before.

On Wednesday, May 13, Burroughs called me on the phone and told me about an event he had just been involved with at Washington DC over the

weekend that had just passed.[dclxiii] He then told me he had attended the event with Linda Moulton Howe, who had also interviewed him.[dclxiv] What he said indicated that he still seemed pretty much tied to Linda at this point. It would appear he had avoided telling me before the event, as he knew how I felt about Linda. I had already told him my own thoughts about Linda: that she was an opportunist trying to exploit Rendlesham for her own purposes. But having heard he had just attended a conference with her, I began reminding him.

Burroughs said he had no illusions about Linda and her self-serving motivations. I then told him more details about the experiences I had with her years before, adding that she could not be trusted. Burroughs said he fully agreed with me on that, but then added that she knew a lot of people who could help us get our accounts out about Rendlesham. Knowing of his collaboration with Linda, which I could tell he would be continuing to pursue and even try to get me involved again, I terminated the discussion by saying I had things to do. While saying goodbye, Burroughs said he would send a DVD of the event to me through the post when it became available.

I then remembered I had already received an extensive email from author and researcher Leslie Kean before the May 2010, Washington DC conference. In the email Leslie had told me her concerns about the event and the people involved. She was giving me a 'heads-up' on some of these people and was warning me about them, as she suspected that they would contact me or involve me in some way. I wrote back to Leslie telling her that I had already been involved with some of those people at the event, and luckily Col. Halt and I had avoided getting tied with them. I promised to keep Leslie's email and what she had said to me confidential, which I continue to honor today as I write this. But I will say, that in retrospect, and in regard to one of the individuals at the event with whom I ended up getting into a relationship, I only wished I had listened to my friend Leslie Kean . . . .

"Annie Wilkes"

A few days after the conversation with Burroughs, I was then befriended by a woman on Facebook, whom I will refer to as "Annie Wilkes." Shortly after accepting her friend's request I was then contacted by her via Facebook private messaging. The first conversation I had with her was cordial.

Annie told me that she was a “professional counselor” and “hypnotherapist,” as well as a UFO researcher and had written about the recent Washington DC conference Burroughs had told me about and which she said she had also attended. Annie told me that, while there, she had met Burroughs and Howe and went on about her meeting with them at some length. I detected that she was making her involvement with Burroughs and Howe appear more important than it was. The woman was clearly embellishing things and made it appear like they were all old friends and that she had a deeper involvement with Burroughs than could possibly be true. She said she had worked with the South African police in the past, and had earned references from them, due to her work. She also said that most UFO researchers are opportunists, which was something I was already well aware of, seeing as it’s all part of human nature and not just limited to the UFO community.

It was obvious that she was exaggerating her social status within the UFO field so that I would accept her. This was also evident in the fact that she had introduced herself as a “professional counselor” and “hypnotherapist.” It was as if she was desperately trying to sell herself as such, which sent up a few red flags. She asked numerous questions, which I answered . . . *and then finally in a subsequent message came the reason why she had contacted me.*

Annie said that she had investigated many UFO-related cases and that her intention in contacting me was to ask me if she could begin a study of the dreams I was having. That surprised me. I then asked Annie about her education in the field. She said it was extensive, that she was qualified and that she had been practicing for almost twenty years. She reiterated that she was sure she could help me with my dreams and nightmares. I answered, telling her that the dreams and nightmares were always very intense but had become manageable since being treated by my physician, whom I had initially consulted about the sleeping issues I have had since the incident. Annie responded to this, saying, be that as it may, she had extensive ‘specialist’ experience in helping people with traumatic events, or in simpler terms, ‘contact events,’ and that she was positive she could eliminate any sleep issues as a result of what I had witnessed at Rendlesham.

The truth was that I was getting reasonable sleep with the PTSD medication – especially after my doctor had finally determined the right dosage that I needed. One thing that did occur was that if I read, watched, or heard something that reminded me of that night in Rendlesham, I would most

certainly start dreaming about it – often abruptly waking, which is why I mostly avoided any books, shows or media coverage of it. But for the most part, these inconveniences with the nightmares and dreams were minor considering where I had come from to where I was at during this point in time. I thought to myself, *wouldn't it be fantastic if I didn't need any medication whatsoever and eventually had a self-corrected condition with my sleep issues. I could then go forward with a normal life.* I was certainly thinking about taking Wilkes up on her offer, but needed time to get to know her.

It was then that Wilkes dropped a small bombshell, by asking me to keep our correspondence confidential, especially from Burroughs. I thought it indeed odd that she would request that from me, and that just made me more suspicious. After all, I didn't know her, and to me she clearly had an agenda. I asked her why I had to keep our contact from Burroughs – especially as I considered him a friend at this time and was in regular contact with him, and after all, she had already said that she and Burroughs were close. Still, Wilkes was adamant that I should not discuss our contact with John Burroughs or anyone else for that matter, adding that my sleep issues did not involve anyone else, that this was *a private matter between us*, and I needed no involvement with others *but only her*, as she would be my therapist for treating my sleep disorder.

The way I saw it, she was the person asking me to hand over my trust to her, even though I really didn't know who she was. So, despite her wishes that I keep our contact from Burroughs, I actually did the opposite. I then phoned Burroughs and asked him what he knew about this woman.

At first, he wanted to know how I knew her. I said she had just contacted me through Facebook and added that Wilkes had told me that he (Burroughs) and she were friends, and that she had attended the event in Washington DC to see him. Burroughs said that he certainly remembered her, "Everywhere you looked, she was there," he said. He agreed with me that she was most likely a UFO investigator and that he knew her only because she was there at the Conference in DC, and they had talked, but that they were not friends as such. Burroughs said that Wilkes was British and was often seen with a retired British Police detective – now turned UFO researcher – named Gary Heseltine, who was one of the speakers at the conference that weekend and with whom he was staying at the hotel.

He then went on to say that Heseltine's quest was to become a primary

researcher on the Rendlesham Incident, adding that Heseltine had already met Col. Halt and was thinking that Halt knows more than he is telling because of his rank. I just listened.

Burroughs then returned to the subject of Wilkes again and told me that, during the conference, both Wilkes and Heseltine seemed to be trying to get close to him and to Howe and would make a point of turning up wherever they were. “When Linda and I would have dinner,” Burroughs said, “Gary Heseltine would also be there with Wilkes.” He continued, “Wilkes never really talked much; she just listened and took in everything like a dried-up sponge experiencing moisture for the first time and only occasionally she would comment during the conversation.” Burroughs also said it seemed that Wilkes and Heseltine had a thing going, or at least Burroughs thought Heseltine was attracted to her.

I then told Burroughs almost everything Wilkes had said in the messages – i.e., that she had told me she was a qualified counselor and that she wanted to help me with my sleeping issues. I said that I had decided to carry on the contact with Wilkes to see where it might lead. Burroughs, who knew he couldn’t assist me any further with my request for more information about Wilkes wished me good luck with the sleep issues and solving them, and said he had to go, so we ended the call there.

Armed with this information from Burroughs, during the next email discussion with Wilkes, I simply asked her about Heseltine. It had most likely caught her off guard, but she just said that Heseltine had invited her to the conference and that was it.

In a subsequent email, and as if as a result of an afterthought, Wilkes then confessed that she had thought Gary Heseltine wanted more from their friendship. She then went on to tell me that after dinner one night and on the way to their rooms, Heseltine had made advances towards her in the elevator. Of course, this was all gossip and was none of my business really, but I was able to draw an impression of Heseltine’s character from that. From what I had heard or read of Heseltine, it was apparent that he had set out to do a book and even a film with Col. Halt and that he was transfixed with the rank and file of Rendlesham over that of the lower-ranking witnesses. I never spoke to Heseltine, and it remained that way for years until 2013, when we had a brief meeting and a total of seven words exchanged between us, which I will relate later.

As the weeks went by, Annie Wilkes, who was becoming more confident with me, also became more persistent on questioning me while still giving me the impression that she wanted to help me resolve the consistent dreaming of this incident, with the hope of putting all the things that she said was negative about the Rendlesham Incident totally behind me.

Naturally, I am a reserved person and so over the years and mainly as self-protection, I would make what I call 'self-defense fences' or 'safety fences,' of which there were five, and so I said that if I were to collaborate with her, I would want her total confidentiality, in that anything being passed between us would remain private.

In an email dated May 14, 2010 at 12:46 a.m. "Annie Wilkes" had reassured me that there was "no chance that any email" she receives "would ever be shared," and that she "worked in a very serious manner over the years, very quietly and discreetly," adding again, that there was "no way" she "would ever disclose the information of another."[dclxv]

I should mention that even then at this early stage, Wilkes' controlling manner was quite visible in her writing, and I will say more about that later. At the same time, though, I was also eager to be rid of any baggage with Rendlesham, and it seemed like it was only possible through therapy. I was so hopeful with the thought of normalcy with my sleep issues that I was set on finding relief from anywhere to end these haunting issues. I then received what looked like supporting documentation of Wilkes' claims, showing she had been schooled as a certified therapist. After a time, Wilkes was very convincing in her approach, so I took down my third 'self-defensive wall,' which I usually kept up to protect me from the outside world and succumbed to her offers of expertise and help. Wilkes had asked me to write down all my difficult dreams and nightmares immediately after I had woken up. By doing this, she could get to the core of the sleep issue problem. I still had concerns about privacy, but again, she guaranteed all would be confidential, and in any case, she came across as an attractive woman giving me attention, and I was curious to see where this was heading.

A few weeks had gone by, and Wilkes had talked to me on Skype and told me that I was not dreaming enough for her to help me. She suggested that I needed to dream more so I could document the information I had received from the dreams in the morning. She said it was the only way to help me. To be honest, I hadn't bothered following her instructions at first, as the truth was I only ever dreamed occasionally because of the PTSD meds I was

taking. From the start, I had decided to go along with what she wanted, just to see why she wanted me to hand over information from my dreams. It actually put me off that she would often express herself and what she wanted in a very *controlling* way, as if she felt it her right that I keep her informed and that I owed it to her to do so. I observed the way she was trying to control me, often thinking this association with her wasn't going to end well, while at the same time I wanted it to continue. It was a strange situation, but one which I thought I could control.

In any case, I then told Wilkes about the PTSD meds, which were *Beta blockers* – prescribed to help me sleep soundly and to stop me from dreaming, *which didn't always work*. Wilkes said I should stop taking the meds and see if I could recall the dreams any better without them. Annie added that I would need no medication, as she could assist me in remembering more things about the incident and would then analyze them with me.

I often thought about trying to face life without taking the medication, and so, again, wondering where this was leading with her, I allowed her to think she had convinced me that it was the only course of action. I actually stopped as she had instructed, and as the days progressed I started to dream more. I began to have vivid and almost realistic dreams/nightmares, and began waking up a few times on most nights. Some of these dreams were very bizarre and made no sense to me at all. It was true what she said about having more unrestricted dreams. I found myself asking, *where were we going with this?*

The weeks went on with me waking up and writing my dreams down, or at least what I could remember about them.

June 2010

Throughout this time, Burroughs had become a 'needy' person, and the longer I was communicating with him, the more it seemed he was exactly like he was in 1980, and in the brief time that I had gotten to know him. He was now becoming more bothersome, always asking me for favors and things and asking that I do this or that. He wanted more information about

Rendlesham, and also wanted to know what radio shows I had done, whom to contact, and *how* I had been contacted to do documentaries. I had agreed earlier in the year to join his Facebook group page, called, *Justice for the 81st SPS.* His membership was low in subscribers, and he said it would be a good place "to get the word out." *Why?* I thought. I did not understand his 'need' to get the word out. Why would anyone want to get the word out? However, getting true and factual information out would be a totally different thing – or at least it was an ethical motive I could agree to. However, I suspected only self-serving motives on Burroughs' part, which soon became clear to me the longer he talked about such things.

I had kept quiet for so long about Rendlesham that I seriously considered getting factual information out, but distinctly about the first night in which I was involved. I still had a need to tell the truth about that, and, of course, Burroughs could talk about that and the third night, in which he was also involved. The fact is he hardly ever talked about the third night with me. My thoughts were that people would know more about the third night from just listening to one of the documentaries Halt and I had done, than learning from the scant generalities that Burroughs had given about the third night, as it was clear that he didn't remember much at all.

In June of 2010 Burroughs sent me an email asking me to help him with his "81st Justice" group page on Facebook, which I agreed to do. He then made me an administrator of the site. Burroughs wrote, "Jim, I noticed your personal site has over 1200 friends, that's only 500 behind the Justice site. What can I do that you're doing to pick up the numbers?"[dclxvi]

I told Burroughs I was doing nothing to pick up friends, and added that it's not how it works. I then said that I would invite my friends or any new friends who had befriended me to join his group. Like a puppy dog with a bowl of milk, he was ecstatic over that. And by me just doing that, the numbers on the "81st Justice" group page grew exponentially in a very short period of weeks, but for him to think that the numbers of people engaging with the page took priority over everything else spoke volumes.

Soon after this, I received an interesting call from Burroughs, who said he was coming back to Illinois and that he wanted to meet up with me. I thought meeting up with Burroughs again was inevitable, especially since his family home was only a three-hour drive south of where I lived. I agreed and said I would meet him half-way between Bloomington-Normal and Freeport in Illinois.

I was actually looking forward to meeting Burroughs and talking to him face-to-face because there were some things that had bothered me from that night which I had told no one about. Because I assumed that we had both experienced the same things during that event, I thought there was a good chance that Burroughs might be able to answer some of the concerns I was having, as well as the impressions I have had since the incident that have stayed with me with absolute clarity. After all, who else could I share these thoughts with other than Burroughs, the only person I shared the more intense part of the night's events with. We never really discussed what we had both experienced in any depth, not even over the phone. That was partly down to me, as I only really open up to people when I'm talking to them face-to-face, not just because I know that people could be listening in, having had my home bugged since the incident, but also because I can observe their expressions and reactions. That way I can gauge whether I can trust them or not – especially with anything sensitive that I might relay to them. There have been a few exceptions to that rule – especially investigators whom I knew I could trust and just wanted to get to the truth – like Georgina Bruni, Salley Rayl, and Leslie Kean, for example. My instinct to discuss things seriously with Burroughs solely through a face-to-face conversation told me that I couldn't really trust him, even though he was the only person out there with me that night.

The Halt Affidavit

It was also in June 2010, that Colonel Charles I. Halt wrote and signed a two-page notarized affidavit, committing to paper his memory of the extraordinary event he was involved in on the night of Saturday, December 27 – Sunday, December 28, 1980. The signing of the affidavit was witnessed by Katherine C. Shaw, a Virginia public notary. When news of this affidavit was released, the last paragraph of Col. Halt's statement went viral around the world in the UFO-related media, and was being quoted by almost every UFO author/researcher:

> "I believe the objects that I saw at close quarter were extraterrestrial in origin and that the security services of both the United States and the United Kingdom have

> attempted – both then and now – to subvert the significance of what occurred at Rendlesham forest and RAF Bentwaters by the use of well-practiced methods of disinformation."

That paragraph caused some controversy at the time within the UFO community but failed to break the surface with the mainstream media and soon fizzled out, even though a high-ranking US military man had signed a statement, saying he had reason to believe that extraterrestrials existed. I didn't know what to think when I read that statement – other than I thought that he was entitled to his opinion. In my view, Col. Halt had put his neck out by saying he believed that the phenomena (objects) he saw were "extraterrestrial in origin." The truth is that we just don't know. Of course, the end part about the well-practiced methods of disinformation was something I did agree on, as this was clearly a fact, since I had experienced and had been given inside knowledge of this in the days, weeks, months, and years following the incident in which I was personally involved.

Meeting at Interstate 39
June 2010

It was a sunny, warm day in June, and Burroughs and I had arranged to meet at a 'truck stop' restaurant/diner which was on Interstate 39. It was a friendly, '50s-style place. I arrived first at the ample parking lot in front of the restaurant and sat for a few minutes before Burroughs arrived, who parked in a different row from me. We both exited our vehicles and a tall, now overweight Burroughs came over and shook my hand, smiling. We then walked inside and ordered our lunch. Our conversation did not begin with us catching up with what had happened to us both over the years the way that I had thought it would, now that we were meeting in person. Instead, straightaway, Burroughs was anxious to criticize Col. Halt, while at the same time expressing a very pronounced anger towards Warren, who had written a book on his claims. As I sat across from Burroughs, it was obvious this man had not changed since his years at the Bentwaters base . . . *a troubling start,* I thought. I listened attentively to Burroughs, waiting for my chance to ask the questions I was there to ask face-to-face.

However, Burroughs did not stop talking. After running down Halt, he

spent most of the first half-hour trying to convince me to work with Linda Moulton Howe. I was adamant that I wanted nothing to do with Howe since my experience with her more than a decade ago. Just like our phone conversation in May, Burroughs was being his normal, pushy self, saying he believed that working with Howe could help us with our own research. To stop Burroughs' relentless talk about the issue, I said I would think about it and would keep the suggestion open. That seemed to calm him down a little.

Burroughs then wanted to talk about the missing time during the incident. He said that he had noted his watch had been forty-five minutes off when he had returned to the East Gate. Of course, mine had been, too, and I had already said this in several interviews and TV documentaries. It was apparent that he wanted to make it a big issue, but it made no sense to me considering what I believed we had both experienced in the forest that night together. However, the house was about to fall on me with what he said next . . . .

After the usual 'heehawing' about something he found funny, Burroughs then blurted out the strangest question he had ever asked me up to that point . . . and believe me, there were plenty he had asked, but this one was ground shattering . . . .

"Jim . . . um . . . when touching the craft and examining it . . . um . . . is that what you remember? Or is all that from the hypnosis?"

I was caught off-guard. I just sat back in my chair, staring at him across the table, while at the same time thinking, *"WTF is this idiot Burroughs saying, and where is he trying to go with this?"*

He was questioning my memory. I could not believe that this guy – the same guy who was with me that night and knew what had transpired – was asking me this question . . . especially as he had given both Col. Halt and me an accurate description of what had occurred in Halt's office just after the incident. I also remember thinking, *What the hell has happened to Burroughs since the Unsolved Mysteries show where he announced to the world that what we both saw was a structured craft?*

That US TV documentary was made in 1991, and before then I had not talked to Burroughs since the spring of 1981, and certainly not until 1994, when we were both on the set of the *Strange but True?* TV documentary shoot in the UK with Col. Halt.

Burroughs was still sitting there with his usual 'deer in the headlights' stare.

Finally, I answered him.

"I remember all of this from being OUT THERE John, NOT from the hypnosis."

Burroughs then responded, "Well, Jim, all I remember about being out there with you are the lights . . . um . . . I don't remember you at the craft, or you touching it."

I just sat back again in total disbelief, that Burroughs who had always told others about the landed craft, was now saying he "only saw lights?" I reasoned that this guy had always been a 'wreck,' and it was apparent that he believed what he was now saying to me.

After a few long seconds, I leaned forward again and looking at him directly in the eyes I finally answered, "John, I have no idea WHY you are saying that. But I want you to know that I will continue to tell people what really happened out there that night, and YOU can say anything you want about it because it really does not matter to me whatsoever now."

Burroughs literally bit his tongue and showed me he acknowledged what I had said by not looking at me, while slowly nodding his head up and down. It was not a good moment.

After we ate our desert, Burroughs asked me about my hypnosis. I explained that I had only agreed to it because of a sleep disorder, and that it was under my doctor's recommendation. Burroughs told me he had undergone three hypnosis transgressions – the first one in 1988 arranged by a guy named Robert Emenegger, and the others twenty years later in 2008, conducted by Linda Moulton Howe and her surrogates.

Immediately on hearing this I thought, *Good God! . . he sat down with Robert Emenegger, who was under a funded government project and was the guy who hired the hypnotherapist, and then Linda Moulton Howe, a clear UFO opportunist and UFO circuit speaker . . . .*

Another thought then came to mind concerning what Colonel Halt had said in 2004, which applied like a glove' to Burroughs for sure – especially now. It was only now that I fully understood what Halt was telling me back then. Halt had said that Burroughs is the only guy he knew who could take a bad situation and make it worse. I could easily now apply that statement to Burroughs and the highly-suspect hypnosis sessions he had taken part in.

We finished lunch, and I told Burroughs I would think about all he had said to me and also the things he wanted me to participate in. This did not sit well with him. He seemed agitated and wanted me to agree to everything he had

asked, which I would never do straight away without time to think it all through. I said I needed more time and that was it, and at one point I had to tell him to quit pleading with me, that he simply couldn't rush me into making decisions I had not thought through thoroughly. This ended our conversation that day. We then said our goodbyes and drove out of the parking lot.

The thoughts running through my mind made the two-hour trip home one of the longest drives I had ever had. The questions Burroughs had asked me were unreal and impossible after the emotional encounter I had in Rendlesham Forest that night. As I continued contemplating on what was said at the restaurant while driving, I could not help myself going over Burroughs' words of not being able to remember anything out there but lights. I was just dumbfounded by what I considered an asinine statement by him. It would have been impossible for him not to see everything I did. Up until now, Burroughs had supported my account of the incident and consistently during interviews and while on film shoots, never contradicting or correcting me on anything.

I was perplexed, while trying to figure out in my own mind who may have messed with him, because that's what it looked like. Another thought that occurred to me was that I was always under the impression that he was not the most stable guy I knew, not even in 1980. So, the thought of his mind just 'snapping' was a possibility. Who would know? I was so disturbed with all of this. After all this time, the only person whom I thought I could depend on and whom I had planned to finally discuss face-to-face all the things that had been persistent in my memory since that night, *and he tells me he can only remember lights?* He was there that night, and for forty-five minutes must have seen me examine a landed, unidentified, black triangular craft – an event I have relived hundreds of times in my mind even during sleep, *and he tells me he can only remember lights?*

How is that even possible?

I was floored, and now I had a thousand questions that I did not have before our meeting that day. For me, this situation with Burroughs, who was claiming he only ever saw lights, made no sense to me at all. Although looking back at our telephone conversations, *what he had said and how he said it* did seem to indicate that something strange had occurred with him. Well, I was going to have to try and figure this one out.

A few days after the trip to meet Burroughs, I then contacted Colonel Halt. I explained to Halt what had happened during our meeting at the diner on Illinois 39. Halt said he was not at all surprised with Burroughs, which actually surprised me. Halt then told me that while he was at Bentwaters with Burroughs, there were two occasions when he was forced to contemplate on whether or not he should relieve Burroughs of duty because of his recklessness and erratic behavior – adding that he almost had Burroughs' PRP (Personal Reliability Program) pulled.

I found this interesting, considering the only time I had ever worked with Burroughs was during the five hours we had spent together on the night of the incident. This was because we were in different career fields. I was in Security, and Burroughs was in Law Enforcement. The only exception to those five hours I was with him was when, as Security Supervisor, I was dispatched to the Woodbridge NCO Club to support Burroughs, who had foolishly become involved in a domestic situation at the club. In hindsight, that situation was an indication of what Halt had said about Burroughs . . . *that he could take a bad situation and make it worse*.

After arriving at the club, it was immediately apparent to me that Burroughs had escalated the situation to a level where several people would have had to have been apprehended, and most likely after Burroughs had gotten his ass kicked. After my arrival, I quickly handled and diffused the situation. This event happened only a few months before the first night of the Rendlesham Incident in which we both found ourselves involved, and from that situation in the club, I knew Burroughs wasn't the most reliable or dependable cop, especially in a high-tense situation.

I also told Col. Halt about Burroughs' collaboration with Linda Howe.

In an email following up on our conversation, Halt told me again to be careful and went on to say that when he had agreed to meet Burroughs in Washington, he was led to believe that the meeting would just be between him and Burroughs. However, Linda Moulton Howe had then showed up, and he was convinced that it had been a 'set-up' arranged by Burroughs. Halt wrote:

> "He [Burroughs] has a lot of strange ideas and associates with many on the fringe of reality. Nonetheless, you might learn something as he's certainly pestered everyone and anyone for information. Let me know how it works out.

Chuck."

In the weeks following my meeting with Burroughs, I had numerous nightmares of our encounter in the forest that night. These nightmares were happening almost every night. My thoughts were that it was finally meeting up with Burroughs again that must have triggered them. I really didn't know. But spurred on by the possibility of having total recall at the location where it all happened, I was anxious to revisit the so-called 'crime scene' again, and this would mean I had to go there with Burroughs. I knew I would have to fund this myself and was willing to do so because, again, I was looking for answers, and perhaps that memories of what had happened might be triggered in Burroughs' mind – things of which even I may not have been aware. This is one of the reasons why I was disappointed with Burroughs saying that he only remembered lights because I had long looked forward to talking to him face-to-face about what he remembered.

I then mentioned the plan to Burroughs, and he said he simply could not afford it, and he would try to come up with some kind of plan. He always seemed desperate and lost when I talked to him. He was now calling me three to four times a week and relentlessly, as if I was his lifeline.

My initial feelings after our meeting again had now dissipated.

I actually felt sorry for him – the way he would latch on to every UFO opportunist, including people that sought to exploit him for their own benefit. Burroughs seemed like a little kid running blind-folded with scissors, and I could see that he did need my help. I was also hopeful that with him being around me and talking with me, maybe, just maybe, he might eventually remember. For myself, I now had no one to talk with about the particulars of the event, well, not until Burroughs finally remembered, which might never happen. It was heartbreaking to see him like that. Everything he was searching for, he already knew deep down, and he did not know it. Over the next three years my common statement to him, was, "John, all you have to do is remember!" However, this would always place him in the same subdued, 'deer in the headlights' stare that I first saw during the night of the incident.

Summer 2010

All through the summer of that year I was in contact with Annie Wilkes.

Again, she had convinced me to write all the dreams down in the morning. I would send them to her regularly, and ninety percent of our email and message exchanges were about her treatment of me concerning my dreams. The dreams were so real. They had disturbed me so much that I found myself waking up a couple of times every night. When I brought up this concern to Wilkes, she would respond with, “This is all normal . . . we are making progress.” As if to quell my concerns, her emphasis always was that she was a certified therapist, and everything would be alright. But what was crazier is that ten percent of our emails and Skype calls were moving in a strange direction with her talking about herself, especially her needs and wants. I listened attentively, however. I was slowly letting another personal defense fence down. I started to talk to Wilkes in a personal way. I was concerned over this, and I brought it up to her as a valid concern of mine. Annie always gave me a logical and common-sense response, “There is nothing wrong with this, because after all Jim you are a man and I am a woman.”

Wilkes insisted this was all normal and okay. She was merely telling me what I wanted to hear. I have had failed relationships in the past, and this appeared to be different in some way. She seemed to know just what to say and when to say it. However, what bothered me the most was that this seemed unnatural. It was like being personally involved with my medical doctor or a client getting involved with their trial lawyer. Moving things from a professional relationship to something much more personal was unethical and troublesome to me, especially as I was allowing it almost enthusiastically. Many questions did exist, though, and I had confusing thoughts as to whether this was just a natural course of events, or manipulation on her part. Although I thought I could control my association with Wilkes, I was now at a loss to know for sure.

September 2010

Around this time, Burroughs and Linda Moulton Howe had contacted Colonel Theodore (Ted) J. Conrad, who was living in Texas and went to visit him. Burroughs then sent an email to UFO researcher Robert Hastings about his and Howe’s meeting with Col. Conrad, and for some reason Burroughs copied me in as a recipient. Apparently, Robert Hastings was writing his own book about the numerous UFOs that had been witnessed over nuclear bases,

with Col. Halt as a contributor at this time.

As usual, Burroughs does not write with clarity, but it is interesting the aggressive way that Burroughs and Howe had obtained the information from their meeting with Col. Conrad and his wife (who was herself a Lieutenant Colonel in charge of personnel at Bentwaters), along with Texan, SSgt. Monroe Nevels also being present, as he didn't live that far from Conrad, and both he had Conrad had become friends who had kept in touch.

Burroughs began with his usual "bugbear" by mentioning Col. Halt's memo – that the date of 'December 27' on it was wrong, and that Col. Conrad also had the date wrong. However, Burroughs went on to say that Conrad's wife was present and had corrected her husband on the date, so that when Conrad realized that he could not get away with it (according to Burroughs), Conrad finally agreed with her . . . the date was wrong.

Burroughs then went on to say that Conrad had said that: 1) he didn't remember talking to him [Burroughs] and to me in his office after the incident, 2) that he did not see our witness statements, and 3) that Major Malcolm Zickler had met with me and had me do a witness statement.

If, according to Burroughs, this is what Conrad had said, then Conrad is wrong. I never wrote a witness statement for Major Zickler, and nor did I ever meet with Zickler and was not debriefed by him over this incident. I wrote my statement at the AFOSI building on the morning of December 29, 1980, and again that handwritten statement, which ran to four pages, was taken from me and substituted with a typed statement not made by me, after which I was told that I had to memorize it and use it as my account.

Burroughs then mentioned Monroe Nevels, telling us that Monroe had told his story just like he had before, and Col. Conrad agreed with what he had said, but was not happy about Monroe's account being made public.

Burroughs then wrote that Col. Conrad had said that after TWO nights of activity, that it was then that he, via Colonel (later Major General) Gordon E. Williams, wanted this incident looked into, which is why Col. Conrad ordered SSgt. Monroe Nevels to investigate on the afternoon of Saturday, December 27. In other words, Burroughs is saying that Conrad had said there was an incident on the second night, meaning from the night of December 26 to the morning of December 27, which Conrad had said involved MSgt. Robert Ball, Lieutenant Bonnie Tamplin, AND Col. Halt – even though Col. Halt had stated that he didn't know what had happened on the second night, which he also said involved Tamplin and Ball, until he heard about it some

five or six years after the incidents took place. (It was claimed by Airman Lori Buoen that she heard Lt Col. Halt's voice over the radio when she heard Bonnie Tamplin having a breakdown while out in the forest. See Note 171).

Burroughs then wrote that Col. Halt had always maintained that he was only out there on the third night (27th), but that now Conrad was saying Halt was out there on two nights – the night of the 26th into the 27th, and the night from the 27th in the 28th – and that several other people who have talked about another incident which took place on the second night (26th) between the two known incidents, had also mentioned Col. Halt being out there on the second night. Who these people were who had said this, Col. Conrad and Burroughs didn't say.

In this same email to Robert Hastings, Burroughs then asked how Lieutenant Bruce Englund had known where to take SSgt. Monroe Nevels to the landing site associated with the first night's events. Burroughs then mentioned that Major Malcolm Zickler, who was working with the OSI and other Intel agencies, was "running the show," and that Col. Williams and Col. Conrad were staying out of it, only ever receiving short briefings about what was going on – also adding that Conrad confirmed this was true.

According to Burroughs, Conrad went on to say that he was concerned about one OSI agent named Wayne Persinger, who was a *"mean son of a bitch when it came to doing interrogation."* Burroughs said he had contacted Persinger, and that Persinger did respond at first, saying he was aware of the incident and saw the statements, but then said he would not comment on any further questions.

Burroughs then ended his email by saying that he then discussed Lieutenant General Charles A. Gabriel – a former member of the Joint Chiefs of Staff and part of the elite group that acted as military advisors to the US Secretary of Defense, the National Security Council and the President of the United States of America. (At the time of the Rendlesham incident Gabriel was Commander in Chief of the US Air Forces in Europe and Commander of Allied Air Forces in Central Europe).

In her book, *"You Can't Tell the People,"* Georgina Bruni mentions General Gabriel having been flown into Bentwaters from Ramstein Air Force Base in Germany (Gabriel was stationed at Ramstein Air Force Base in Germany from August 1980 to June 1982), and this could have been the night of events that involved Lt. Col. Halt. In fact, there is the rumor attributed to RAF Liaison Officer Donald Moreland, that Gabriel was handed a copy of

the ‘unedited’ tape recording that Col. Halt had taken of the third night’s events.

Now, Captain Mike Verrano had told investigator Ray Boeche by phone on December 4, 1984, that he had driven Wing Commander Colonel Williams to a waiting fighter pilot on the runway of Bentwaters, so he could hand over a reel or canister of film, which was to be flown back to Ramstein AFB, Germany. However, one possibility is that Verrano had misheard or had mistaken what was said, and that it wasn’t a reel of film that was being flown to Ramstein, *but was a reel of audio tape* . . . the tape that had recorded all the radio transmissions that went on that night through the Command Post. And if it was this tape that had been handed over to General Gabriel, along with other classified items of interest associated with the incident, then there’s no reason why Williams would not have been present when this tape was handed over, as it is likely that being the Wing Commander, it would have been the protocol for him to have handed the tape over personally to General Gabriel with the opportunity of meeting and talking with him.

However, Burroughs wrote that Col. Conrad had told him that General Gabriel was not notified and had nothing to do with the incident. Then finally at the end of his email Burroughs wrote that he had noticed the reactions of Conrad’s wife as Conrad spoke, and that he could tell that she knew her husband was lying.

This is interesting because, in 1998, while researching for her book, Georgina Bruni was told by former Master Sergeant Ray Gulyas that Captain Verrano had been given a video film *taken by a military wife living on the Woodbridge base.* Could this film have been taken by Jean? – Col. Conrad’s wife *. . . a military wife, who was herself a Lieutenant Colonel in charge of personnel at Bentwaters?* If Conrad’s wife Jean *had* taken the film of the UFO, then could this have been during the time when Conrad and his wife and others were standing outside their home on Woodbridge, listening to the radio and looking for the lights Halt was describing during the third night’s events? But, as was mentioned, it was later in his interview with Dr. David Clarke in January 2010, that Col. Conrad had said that he and his wife saw nothing that resembled Lt Col Halt’s descriptions, either in the sky or on the ground.

It should also be mentioned that by cross-referencing the information she had been given, Georgina assumed that the aircraft that took the film – as was handed to General Gabriel by Colonel Gordon Williams, who had been

driven to Bentwaters runway to personally hand over the film – was a C-130, which was guarded by the patrol with D-Flight, which also included Sgt. Adrian Bustinza who says he was there. But, apparently, this was three days after the events of the 'third night,' and this C-130 had landed at Woodbridge, not Bentwaters. Apparently, this was the C-130 plane that Bustinza suspected had delivered the "part" that was needed to repair the craft he claims to have witnessed in the forest on the third night, based on what he thinks he heard Col. Halt say. However, everything about this story is ridiculous and illogical. (See Chapter 12: *Disinformation.*)

Jim Penniston:

Soon after I received Burroughs' email to Robert Hastings, I received a phone call from Burroughs. He told me that he wanted both of us to go to the UK together, adding that we could use Linda Howe to do that. This was another example of my being shocked by this guy's thought processes. I have always found it personally offensive using anyone in that way, and I let him know that. He then quickly changed his tune and said, "Well, it benefits her, too, and if we do a book with her, it will be a laurel leaf to her, and we will gain from being at the scene of the event together, just like witnesses returning to a crime scene."

I gave this some thought. I was definitely leaning towards an investigative trip back to Rendlesham, even though at this point it seemed highly unlikely. From what Burroughs had said, it appeared that Linda Howe wanted to do this with Nick Pope being present.

I then received an email from Linda Howe, dated 09/03/10 at 3:12 p.m., which she had also sent to Burroughs. She must have gotten my email address from Burroughs. In the email, Linda wrote that she was surprised that 'Nick Pope would be affiliated with what seems like a flakey guy with a flakey background and a half-baked, flakey TV idea.' I later learned that she was referring to Paul Wookey, whom Nick Pope was involved with in an up and coming 'TV show' project scheduled for December that year. Apparently, the show would involve psychics who would try to use their psychic skills in 'seeing' what had really happened during the Rendlesham Incident.

In the same email, Howe then mentioned the TV company based in LA, which I later learned was *Prometheus Entertainment,* and whom she said

were still thinking about her proposal for a part in their TV series *Ancient Aliens*. Howe told us that if the LA company went 100% with her proposal, then it would be better to withdraw from the "Wookey project" and to go entirely with the LA production team, adding, ". . . ours for ourselves and book covered by L. A. crew for reasonably credible series." She then asked for our feedback before signing off.

I had no idea that Howe had asked Prometheus Entertainment in LA to be involved with us.

My thoughts were that this went back to what Burroughs had said a few weeks earlier in regard to using Linda Howe – especially her contacts and influence to make things happen. As conniving as he was being, it seems that Burroughs had secured the means and the funds needed for us both to return to Rendlesham.

Much was going on with the confirmation of the Phoenix trip in October to do the film shoot for Prometheus Entertainment. Then it looked like there was going to be a trip to the UK in December, as Burroughs was working feverishly with Howe on also doing a one-day conference at Woodbridge during the film shoot, which looked like it would be a sponsor trip. And with that looking promising at this point, it worked well for me. We could charge a nominal fee to pay for the hall, and our friend Gordy Goodger said he would take care of that, according to Burroughs, and we could have the proceeds for the conference go to a local children's charity.

The notification for both trips soon came from Linda Howe in an email dated September 12, 2010, in which she began by telling us about a positive phone call she had with producer Paul Wookey, and that she was pleased that the three of us (Howe, Burroughs and myself) had a valid reason not to participate in Wookey's pilot 'psychics' show with Nick Pope in December, as on Friday September 10th she had received confirmation of a firm production deal with the Los Angeles production company she had worked with the previous year (Prometheus Entertainment).

Howe added that she would be assisting Wookey with some high-strangeness cases she had reported about in England this year and that he was pleased with that. Howe then addressed me personally in the email and asked if the weekend of October 1 – 3 in Phoenix worked for me for both individual and group interviews, and with whoever else could get to Phoenix – one of these people being Monroe Nevels. She also asked what date I would like to

travel from Chicago O'Hare airport in December, if we were meeting the LA production crew in Ipswich, Suffolk, England on December 24 for the thirty-year anniversary at Woodbridge, and which return date I preferred – i.e., December 30 or December 31? She said she was asking because she would like to write a memo to the Executive Producer about our preferred travel dates and times for October 1 – 3 for the film shoot in Phoenix, and also from December 28 in Woodbridge, Suffolk, England, to whatever preferred return date. She signed off with "Thanks a lot, Linda."

Ancient Aliens, October 2010

The Phoenix trip for the film shoot with Prometheus Entertainment – the production company for the *Ancient Aliens* series – came up fast, and I soon found myself at the hotel in Old Scottsdale, Phoenix. I met Burroughs there first, who told me Linda Howe would be in the hotel that evening. Although I had close involvement with Linda in the past, I had never actually met her. When she arrived, she seemed pleasant enough, but I still had some negative memories of her dealings with me while contributing to the book she wrote and had published in 1996. In any case, all went well, and the next morning we took a limo to the film site, which was in a rented house set up by Prometheus Entertainment.

Linda did a full morning of the film shoot, acting like she was working while being interviewed.

I was bored and went outside for fresh air. It was becoming hot with the Phoenix heat. I went back in and found myself a comfortable spot to watch all the filming. After doing some 'B-roll' with Burroughs, I was next to be interviewed. I had been asked by both the production company and Linda to bring the notebook, which I did.

During the middle of the shoot, the camera man indicated it was time to change the batteries, since it was a digital shoot. I remained relaxed, sitting in the filming chair and drinking from a bottle of water. Burroughs, who can't sit still and remain quiet for long, then started asking me a series of questions about what I had just said on camera. He then asked if there were any dates in the notebook that I could find. *"I don't think so,"* I said. Burroughs seemed eager to talk about the notebook. It was things like this which drove me crazy with Burroughs. The notebook is important of course, but from his

perspective, *why care about something as insignificant as notes I had made in a notebook, when he was standing close to me that night in Rendlesham Forest, and should have observed mostly everything I had done?* It was always a case of me saying to Burroughs that all he needed to do was remember. It was that simple. However, saying that would always place Burroughs in a weird state, again much like a deer staring at headlights. It was all very odd indeed.

Well, I did what Burroughs asked, and I began thumbing through the notebook. Burroughs was standing behind my chair, looking over my shoulder. As I thumbed for a page with a date, I flipped back through a section of the notebook pages. By doing that, I had flipped almost to the back of the notebook and accidently opened to the pages that I had written at home on my dining room table some twenty-four hours after the incident . . . *the pages of ones and zeros, reflecting what was for me a time of insanity and possible breakdown.*

Writing down those ones and zeros was a most embarrassing time for me, and something I had never talked about with anyone and thought I never would. I looked at it as having emotionally 'dodged a bullet' after the incident. I was hoping on the hopeless possibility that Burroughs hadn't spotted them, and I began to flip forward again.

However, as if expecting it, Burroughs cried, "Wait! Go back," while almost moving my hand back through the pages for me. *Oh, for goodness-sakes,* I thought. I realized that snatching the notebook away at that point and saying "no" to Burroughs would only generate more curiosity. I was angry inside and mostly with myself. Reluctantly, I went to the back pages directed by Burroughs, who then pointed at the ones and zeros on the page that was opened and said, "What are those?"

Well, there really was no hiding it now, I thought. *I'm now going to have tell him about my mental breakdown. A brief time of mental trauma just after the incident is about to be known and made public . . . an embarrassing time of weakness and despair.*

I took a few seconds at self-composure, and then figured it was as good a time as any to tell him something I had kept secret to myself for almost thirty years until that day at the Phoenix film shoot. *Perhaps it was meant to be,* I thought. Now amused by how Burroughs might respond to these lines of ones and zeros, I simply told Burroughs that this is what I wrote down after the incident at home . . . "NOT my best day," I quickly added.

As I looked up at him to see his response, Linda Howe then came over to see what the fuss was about. After looking at the page of ones and zeros the notebook was open to, she then pointed at it and said, “That is binary code, Jim.” I took a pause . . . “This is binary code?” I asked, looking back at the page. “Yes,” Linda said, “. . . binary.” Linda’s mouth then fell open in realization, and she exclaimed, “What! you actually wrote them down???”

Immediately, we were both thought back to the hypnosis sessions I had undergone in 1994 – especially the part in the transcript of the hypnosis session ‘where’ and ‘when’ I had actually said the words “binary code.” (See Chapter 14: *Regression.*) However, my conscious mind had never made the connection between these pages of ones and zeros and this term, as used by the agents who had interrogated me. In other words, while under hypnosis, I merely repeated out loud what I had heard the agents say, without knowing what binary code was or even knowing the term. This part of the transcript had been published in Linda’s book in 1996. I looked again at Howe and Burroughs, and said, “Well, I’ll be damned . . . what about that?”

It was then that Linda Howe said, “We need to get that translated.”

I laughed when she said “translated.” I assured her that it was just the result of a moment of madness from the trauma, and that there was nothing to decipher. “It will only turn out to be gibberish; I am positive,” I said . . . Well, *that was what I had hoped.* I had always struggled with an internal conflict about this. Although my subconscious/subjective mind, to which I often refused to pay any serious attention, had always known that what lay behind the ones and zeros WAS indeed a message of some kind, my rational mind did not want these ones and zeros to be a decipherable message, as it would make everything far too real, especially after what I had heard and read concerning my hypnosis and what I had said.

Linda then talked to the producer about the code. The producer told me to contact Kim Sheerin, the Executive Producer in LA, since he was only a contract hire for the show. Linda said that we would talk about it later. I told her to email me with what she wanted to do when I got home. Everything was happening fast, and people were excited. It was now out of my control.

Strangely, Burroughs never asked another question about the ones and zeros, or the notebook.

I should mention that I have never allowed anyone to thumb through the notebook. However, I did offer the notebook to Annie Wilkes and my friend Darren DeBoy to look through it. This would be in the future, though. Both

of them declined it. In fact, Wilkes seemed uninterested and even annoyed, but Darren was worried about damaging the brittle pages. No one has ever looked through this notebook, even though there are a few who have made that claim, for some unknown reason.

Upon ending the film shoot and returning home to Illinois, I received an email from Linda Howe, saying she had people who could decipher the binary code. These were a professor in Australia and a professor in the Carolinas. The same day, I then received a phone call from Kim Sheerin, the executive producer for Prometheus Entertainment. Kim had been told from the producer about the alleged binary and said she would like to send it to one of her contracted experts to review and to decipher. Again, relying on what my rational mind had always told me, I told Kim that it was just gibberish, and that it came from a time of extreme trauma, right after the incident. She said, “Well that’s fine, if that is what it turns out to be. At least we can test it.” I told her that I was highly embarrassed by it, and that I did not want her doing anything in the up and coming show with it. Kim told me she fully understood and would keep it all private with me. I agreed. She then said she should get back to me within the week.

After a few more days I decided to scan those pages Linda had seen in Phoenix for her. She was happy. I thought, well, this second independent verification would put those ones and zeros to rest. It always seemed that Burroughs and Howe were grabbing at invisible straws and showing their opportunistic tendencies every chance they got.

Four days later I received an excited call from Kim. She said they had results with the binary. I responded rather hesitantly with, “OK . . . what?”

“Jim, they actually deciphered something,” she said.

“No way . . . how could that be?” I responded. “I only scribbled them down because it felt good at that time . . . .” I was then interrupted by Kim. “Jim, I want you to get on chat on your computer, and we will go through each page, page-by-page . . . .”

I agreed and turned on my computer and called her back on my phone. She went through each page. What my rational mind was hoping to be nonsensical rubbish for thirty years turned out to be real. It became apparent that what was deciphered matched many of the impressions I had from the landing site. I was in dismay. Halfway through, Kim asked if I was still on the line. I responded, “Yes Kim, I am.”

I still had doubts with her production company. I thought to myself, well, if this matches Howe's analysis, then what?

Kim then said, "Well? What do you think of it?"

"Kim, I am dismayed and speechless . . . I don't know what to say," I said. I then asked her if there were any possibilities of a mistake with the decipher. She responded, "No chance."

I sat there motionless and speechless, thinking of the impressions which matched part of this binary decipher.

Kim then said, "We would like to use this."

I told Kim, "You're going to have to give me some time to absorb and think about all of this." She agreed. "No rush, let me know in a week or so, Jim, that's fine."[dclxvii]

After the phone call with Kim, I looked at all the binary from the notebook. So, *what happened out there that night to allow this to happen?* I thought. After sitting silently for a while, trying to remember what my subconscious had already known, I then spent the rest of the day trying not to think of it. I then went to bed, only to violently awake two hours later, sitting up in bed in a sweat. I was dreaming in more vivid detail of my night in Rendlesham. This happened twice that night, but the next morning I wrote nothing down about the dreams/nightmares, as Annie had wanted me to. I wanted to forget it.

A day after the call from Kim I then received a phone call from Linda Howe. She was exploding with excitement and words fail to describe the extent of her enthusiasm. She said she had gotten the results back from her people and was more-or-less saying that it was a "message from aliens." I sat there and listened to her go through the same deciphered results that Kim had told me 24 hours earlier. After she finished, Howe then asked, "What do you have to say about this?"

Without deliberately wanting to do it, I burst Howe's 'balloon bubble' of discovery with the following words: "I know Linda. I had Prometheus Entertainment decipher it and was given the results yesterday. I used your sources for verification, just in case Prometheus was wrong, or in case both results didn't tally. I was actually expecting (hoping) both of you to say that the code of ones and zeros contained nothing."

There was a deafening silence on the other end of the phone. After a few seconds, Howe's tone turned from jubilant discovery to one of anger and

frustration. Firing question after question, Howe appeared insulted that Prometheus Entertainment had beaten her to deciphering it. After she calmed down, she then became more conversational and talked about the impact of all this and advised that we should include it in the show. I told Linda what I had told Kim: that I would have to think about it. Linda ended with, “Well, let me know.”

Typically, Burroughs was messaging me daily, urging me to put the code and the decipher of it out in public, telling me, “It was the responsible thing to do.” He was relentless with it. My thoughts and response to him were, “What if the code was exclusively for me, or for a certain few, and that the wrong thing to do was to put it out?” Burroughs would have none of that and said it was my duty to give it to the public. Again, I said I would think about it.

I didn’t know what John’s agenda was. I didn’t know what Linda’s agenda was, but whatever their agenda with it was, I really didn’t want that binary to go out, and their interest wasn’t my interest.

None of them knew that those five pages were the first five of a complete total of sixteen, the total number of which I later realized, as I had never even counted the pages. I was actually dreading having anyone decipher the rest of them. I really didn’t want to know. However, after several conference calls and tons of emails with Burroughs relentlessly urging and nagging me to put them out in public, I finally gave in and agreed to it. After all, the public release would go out in the show. I called Kim and told her that she could include the binary code in the show. It was done, and the code was now going public . . . but I felt like a person having agreed to this under pressure.

Dreams of “23.5”

Some six weeks after the Prometheus film shoot, I had a relentless, reoccurring dream that seemed to come from the time of the incident. In these dreams were spoken references being made to the numeral phrase, “23.5 degrees,” and I had the impression that this was important as regards what lay behind the Rendlesham Incident. I told Annie about these dreams around the first week in November 2010, and now looking back, the one good thing that was put into motion through my association with her was her advice to contact the only person she knew who had done research into the very thing

my dreams were pointing to.

I only knew from Annie that Gary Osborn was an author and researcher in the UK. She told me that after looking through his work, she had befriended Gary on Facebook around April 2009, and that she had been observing the postings of his research work while trying to understand it. She said his work is about deciphering ancient symbolism – especially ancient Egyptian – and that he had made a few major discoveries about the Great Pyramid of Giza. When I later checked his research work myself, I was told that he was the first to match components of the 'Eye of Horus' symbol with the centralized thalamus and the pineal and pituitary glands within the human brain when the symbol is superimposed over a cross-section image of the brain.

I contacted Gary by Facebook private messaging on November 18, 2010 with the subject line title *"23.5"* although in the first email I said nothing about it and just introduced myself, while also inviting him to the 30th anniversary conference in December at Woodbridge in England so we could talk in person. Gary got back to me, saying that he was surprised by my having contacted him, and that he would be delighted to discuss whatever I wished, and would try and make the conference, but because it was just after Christmas, it might not happen then as he had planned to spend Christmas with his family.

He then asked why I chose that subject title for the email. I wrote back saying this came up in a recurring dream I had, and that I was deeply curious in finding out what it meant, adding that I thought it had something to do with *temperature* on various regions of the planet. Gary responded with, "No, 23.5 degrees would be the 'tilt angle' of the Earth's axis of rotation" – adding that although it is closer to 23.43 degrees at present, the obliquity (tilt) degree value of 23.5º is an all-round figure given in most astrophysics textbooks and other literature on the subject. On reading his response, I thought, *of course!* But it wasn't something I had retained in memory since I first learned about it in school.

A few days after contacting Gary, Annie told me that she was going on a trip to South Africa for a medical checkup and screening, and that she would be back in England around December 22. She hinted at how she would like to meet me at Woodbridge, Suffolk, England in December to see how that would go. I thought it would be exceptionally nice to have a therapist with me when I returned to the site of the incident with Burroughs. That aspect of

it would not hurt, and I could finally meet Annie, after months of her suggestive talk and flirting. I told her I could talk to Kim Sheerin about taking care of her hotel stay at Woodbridge for part of the two weeks we were going to be there, which would be December 22, 2010 through to January 3, 2011. Immediately, Annie indicated that it was a wonderful idea. I then emailed Kim, saying my therapist and I thought it a good idea for her to be there at Woodbridge. Kim readily accepted to take care of Annie's hotel bookings while there. I then gave Kim my therapist's name, the info concerning her arrival in the UK, and how long she would be staying.

'30th Anniversary of the Rendlesham Incident' Conference, Woodbridge, December 28, 2010

We all arrived at Heathrow on the evening of Wednesday, December 22, and drove up to Woodbridge in Suffolk. We checked in at the Ufford Park, Woodbridge Hotel, and met up with the conference organizers and others. It was there we met up with Gordy Goodger, one of the organizers. We told Gordy that we wanted no filming of the event, unless the people or production companies who wanted to film the event agreed to donate whatever money that would be paid to the children's charity we were supporting-- the same with the other speakers. Again, we requested there would be no honorariums for them and that they would need to speak pro-bono because of the charity we were supporting. Later, Gordy said that all of that had been relayed to the other speakers. I asked who the other speakers were. Gordy told me that Nick Pope and Peter Robbins would be there. I immediately took objection to Robbins speaking because disinformation was the last thing we needed, and in any case, we already had Linda speaking, and now we were adding another opportunist. To date, and like many other UFO researchers and investigators, Peter Robbins has never interviewed me.

Gordy said that Robbins was in the UK already and that he was scheduled to only do an introduction for Burroughs and me . . . "No more than fifteen minutes," he said. I was irritated due to lack of REM sleep, but nonetheless and although somewhat hesitantly, I agreed to it. We also had a quick preproduction meeting afterwards, which was the schedule for a film shoot the next morning.

I was looking forward to a good night's sleep, especially with the 'jet lag'

kicking in. This was not to happen. I woke up three times that night, even after being up all day upon arrival in the UK. I made it to breakfast with the others, but was concerned about doing the conference with the lack of sleep creeping in. Also, I had brought no medication because of Annie Wilkes' instructions.

The most interesting situation that happened while there at Woodbridge was the day trip into Rendlesham Forest when we went to the exact landing site. I was expecting some recall of the event and details – especially being there with the person I was originally with that night in the forest. However, what happened was far more than I could have ever anticipated.

As we made our way through the forest with the film crew, and as we approached the landing site, the most remarkable thing happened. I could feel the magnetic 'drawing' or 'pulling' sensation again. I could also smell the same odors in the air as I had the original night – the smell of hot metal, mixed with the winter dampness of the forest and the pine needles. This I kept to myself, but these sensations and experiences were becoming stronger. I was also seeing things I could not imagine. I could see the same things that I saw during contact night. As I gazed to the right, I could see Burroughs just as I did that night, who was some ten to twenty feet behind and to the right of me. And in between us and some distance behind us was Airman Cabansag. It was surreal, and the 'seeing' of these things were not like any fuzzy, grey-picture memory, but much more. I could see exactly how things appeared that winter night in December 1980. I was shocked, thinking, this can't be real. To me, the visuals were in high definition.

As all these things were occurring, I started talking about what I could see. I suppose this appeared very strange to the film crew and Linda Howe, but I thought if I was being given this type of recall by just being there, then surely Burroughs would finally remember all that happened out there that night. I could see the berm of earth in front of me and the brilliant light cast over it. As I climbed up and over the five-foot berm, I could see the craft as I had on contact night. A chilling feeling encompassed me. The quelled sounds and the smell of hot metal from an aircraft engine were clearly evident in the air. I was elated with the total memory recall, which offered more detail to my memory of the incident of 1980. As wonderful as it was, it was also disturbing.

As soon as it began, it stopped, with the interruption of the film crew

talking to me. I was back in the present. All I could say was, “Wow!” Like I did back in 1980 . . . incredible. Personally, it was more than I could have ever hoped for. *This trip to the UK was culminating in success,* I thought, making it well worth the journey. I was very pleased and elated, but I was also anxious to get back to the hotel, where Burroughs and I could perhaps compare notes on this revelation, initiated by our return to the forest. It was clear in my own mind that this traumatic event from 1980 was seared into my deepest memory recesses of my experience of what is now called the Rendlesham Forest Incident. One thing that I had no doubt about was that the Rendlesham ‘contact night’ I experienced had nothing to do with the phenomenon of UFOs or UAPs, as has often been interpreted.

After arriving back at the hotel, Burroughs and I went to the bar area for a few drinks and some discussion of the day’s events. I felt great and was excited and anxious to talk about the total recall I had experienced at the landing site earlier that day. I was sure Burroughs had total recall, too. After both of us sat down with our drinks, I asked Burroughs what he had experienced out there earlier.

Burroughs looked at me in an unemotional stare. “I felt nothing, nor did I remember anything,” he said.

WTF! How can he not remember? I thought. After a few seconds, I calmly asked, “So, you don’t have any memories surfacing?” Still, Burroughs had the same unemotional stare and responded, with a sharp “Nope!” It was as if a trap door had slammed shut.

How could this be? I thought. It was at this moment that my fears and suspicions were being confirmed. I was now certain that the Ufologists who had conducted hypnosis sessions with Burroughs – one of which for sure was sponsored by the U.S. Government – had somehow and deliberately changed his memory from what we had both experienced to mere “lights in the sky.” Even though Burroughs would rarely mention a “landed craft,” a “structured craft,” or “an object” in his interviews and documentaries when talking to him face-to-face, he would often say he could not remember, or that all he saw was lights. I was so disappointed, my enthusiasm about what I had experienced that day left me feeling deflated like a punctured tyre.

After a long silence of just watching him drink up his beer, I then said to Burroughs, “Perhaps you will have memory recall at some point while staying here at Woodbridge.” “That would be nice,” he said. I thought *Nice? . . What a word to use?* The seemingly, detached response he gave me while

feeling sorry for himself, infuriated me with extreme frustration. Saying nothing more about it, I asked if he wanted another pint of beer. “Yes,” he said . . . .

One thing remained consistent with Burroughs, although he was out there with me as a supporting team member in 1980-- he was useless to me back then, and unfortunately, he remained that way today.

Annie Wilkes later arrived in a strapless dress. Obviously, she had made sure to dress provocatively for me. We had talked several times before that, and it was as if she was too busy to pay me much attention at first. However, that night she showed up at my hotel room with a bottle of wine. Wilkes and I would then have breakfast or dinner together, and for some reason seeing us being close seemed to irritate Howe and Burroughs.

The morning of the conference, Tuesday, December 28th 2010 – which was exactly thirty years to the day of the incident which became the third night involving Colonel Halt – a German film crew from *Exopolitik* arrived to interview both Burroughs and me at the hotel. During the interview, I discussed the origin of the binary codes that I had received by touching the craft in Rendlesham Forest on Boxing Day morning 1980.

Then the evening of the conference arrived. It was at Woodbridge Hall, which held a maximum of 500 people. It was packed full to the brim. I was rather surprised to see this ‘medium to large’ crowd in this little village in the middle of nowhere have such an attendance. The conference began at 6:00 p.m. The first person to speak was Linda Howe, who gave a two-and-a-half-hour presentation.

The long-ago ‘disgruntled airman,’ Larry Warren was there and had been drinking. It was the first time I actually remembered him from his SNAP (relieved of duty and awaiting separation) days working at Security Police Supply. When I met him, I was going to shake his hand and move on. Instead, Larry grabbed my hand and kissed me on the left cheek. The smell of alcohol on his breath was overwhelming. I ignored his strange behavior. Warren then told me he was happy to “pass on the stage he had built about the Rendlesham Incident” to us guys. *WTF?* I thought. But I said nothing. I did actually feel sorry for him. He looked to be in a sad physical and mental state.

After Linda Howe finished, a fifteen-minute break ensued, so I was waiting for the introduction from Robbins for Burroughs and me to enter the

stage. Well, 'WAITED' we did. It was like Robbins had never seen that amount of people before.

Let me set the stage for you (no pun intended) . . . .

Here, we had five hundred people show up to listen to the accounts of the 'first responder' witnesses in person. It was planned that Burroughs would talk about the third night, and I would talk about the first night. But Robbins was now up there talking about the incident, which he was not there to do initially, and in reality, he had no 'first-hand,' 'second-hand,' or even 'third-hand' information on the incident, as he had not interviewed any of the primary witnesses, and for two decades had supported someone who wasn't even there. Robbins had talked for one hour and forty-five minutes. Having been told that he was only supposed to introduce us and would be up there for fifteen minutes at the most, I complained to Gordy because his stint was going to extend into the precious time we had to talk that evening, and furthermore, we would not be able to do the East Gate tour, which had now been moved to midnight. Gordy said, "Hopefully, it won't be too long now." "The hell with that!" I responded, "These people donated good money to charity to hear us witnesses talk about our experiences!" After another five minutes, I literary had to go on stage and announce to the audience that Robbins was done talking, and everyone needed to take a fifteen-minute break. After Robbins and I left the stage, I also went backstage.

Peter Robbins sat in a chair and started telling me how he knew what we had gone through and how hard it was as a witness. I just could not take his BS anymore. I am a retired Technical Sergeant, and, therefore, have a ranking structure on my "Alpha Charlie" ("Ass Chewing" or scolding) levels. Level one is the most "mild chewing," while level ten is a full blast "ass chewing." Well, after thirty years of the kind of disinformation that Robbins had subscribed to and had presented and promoted – someone whom I was pretty much assured had learned by this time that his co-author Warren had not been totally honest with him on a story that both Robbins and he had used for their own claim to fame – I began a "level four Alpha Charlie." I figured a "level four," since Robbins was a civilian and was "spoon-fed" up until that point. I gave him a good minute of it. He said nothing. Then after a five-minute "Alpha Charlie," I saw tears running down his face. *Wow*, I thought, *a grown man crying, because he is confronted with the truth. How sad.* Then when he began to cry like a baby, it was so embarrassingly pathetic that I felt guilty for having laid into him. After some coaxing from the others who had

witnessed it, I went back over to the sobbing Robbins and apologized for making him upset. He shook my hand and said he accepted my full apology.

The blame really lay with the organizer, Gordy Goodger, whom I now suspected had lied to me to pacify the situation. It was now obvious that Robbins had been booked by Gordy to be one of the speakers, and when Gordy realized that I didn't want him up there speaking at this event, had then told me that Robbins was merely there to introduce Burroughs and me – allowing it to go ahead. On top of that, Burroughs was meant to talk about the third night's events, which he certainly did not. Instead, he 'coat-tailed' me on what I had to say about the first night's events. This was the first demonstration of his 'coat-tailing,' something he would continue to do, not just with me, but also with others. During my talk, I released my information to the public about the pages of binary code, which wasn't received well – the main criticism being *why the hell did I wait 30 years before coming forward with the code?*

On the surface, the answer to that was simple. As I had said, I didn't want to release any information about the ones and zeros I had written down. To me, it was a moment of madness, and I was basically ashamed. I had no intention of making the code public – and certainly would not have told anyone had it not been for Burroughs seeing the ones and zeros while I thumbed through the notebook to find a date Burroughs inquired about on the film set of *Ancient Aliens.* I guess it was meant to come out when it did, and really I had no control over that. (See *Epilogue.*)

After the conference, we made another trip to the forest that evening, late into the early morning hours, all of which was videoed. But in my opinion Linda Howe was now into 'opportunist mode,' excited by the entertainment and attention this trip offered, and both she and Burroughs were joined at the hip. Also, they went out and made a test with equipment, which produced results they thought were groundbreaking. To me, it was like children laying on the grass looking up at the sky and creating images out of the positions and shapes of the clouds

One of the funniest and most entertaining things Burroughs and Howe latched on to is the belief that a house adjacent both to the landing site and Capel Green had *disappeared,* and in the paranormal sense of the word, *just like a ghost* . . . or UFO. This story is the stuff of folklore. The truth is that a third house had been there near the farmhouse at the time but had since been

demolished and removed due to disuse and 'rising damp' issues. But to Howe and Burroughs, the disappearance of the house, which was also believed to have happened at the time of the incident, was somehow a condition of what had happened over those three nights in 1980. For me, such stories, which have obviously been fabricated from nothing and then sensationalized, are the kind of thing that UFO opportunists and entertainers, who present themselves as serious "UFO researchers" and "experts" will often seize on to and exploit for their UFO lecture circuit without bothering to do the required prerequisite of due-diligent research into the facts . . . amazing. Unfortunately for me, Burroughs would grab onto any new information passed to him or discovered by him, and would use it as if he was following the same status-building tactics as the UFO entertainers. This would be normal behavior for him over the coming years.

The following afternoon, Gordy had planned to take Burroughs and me to Rendlesham forest. I asked that Wilkes come along. Gordy became angry about that, and I wondered why. I thought he knew her from the spring event in Washington DC. Burroughs explained that it was because Wilkes was seen as just 'a groupie,' wanting to be involved with the whole Rendlesham thing. Even though I had my suspicions about this myself, especially after what I had heard from Burroughs when she first contacted me, I really hoped this was not the case in reality, since I was growing emotionally attached to her now. However, like everything else I had heard, I filed that statement from Burroughs in my head for later. I knew what everyone was thinking. As I said, I did have my suspicions about Wilkes' motives, and I had openly discussed this with my brother-in-law, Herb Miller, who at one time held a Top-Secret clearance in the army. He also had an Army Intelligence background, even though this was decades earlier. I had expressed concerns about Wilkes to Herb, and we agreed to see how the trip went first and would discuss it later.

December 30, 2010

While we were still in Suffolk in the UK, at the place where it all had happened thirty years before, the *Ancient Aliens* TV documentary (Episode 15 of Season 2: "Alien Contacts"), had first aired on December 30, 2010. This is the same episode that introduced the existence of the binary code and

the deciphered message from the first five pages to the public for the first time, and it is noteworthy that this revelatory TV program about the binary code *was publicly-aired exactly thirty years to the day when I was interrogated for seven hours by anonymous agents inside a room in the AFOSI building on December 30, 1980.*[dclxviii]

Only the last seven and a half minutes of the show were dedicated to the binary code. The full deciphered information from the first five pages of binary code in '8-bit ASCII,' was shown, and the first line of text that had been deciphered by Nick Ciske on behalf of Prometheus Entertainment was shown first:

Exploration of Humanity
Conti[nuous]
For Planetary Advance[ment]

We are then told that within the string of binary code that was deciphered, a set of coordinates was found (52.0942532N 13.131269W) which target a mythical or legendary but now *submerged* island called *Hy Brasil* off the west coast of Ireland.

Exploration of Humanity
8100
52.0942532 N 13.131269 W
Continuous
For Planetary Advance
Fourth Coordinate
Continuous
CEPR
Before

Joe Luciano

On January 1, 2011, I received a long Facebook message from Joe Luciano, a retired 'Computer Systems Engineer' with over 50 years of professional computer experience. Joe had befriended me on Facebook in July, 2010, having become interested in the Rendlesham Incident after watching the *Unsolved Mysteries* TV documentary in 1991. Joe and his wife Cathy had already met and casually chatted with Burroughs at the July 2010 International MUFON Symposium in Denver, Colorado – not too far from where they lived.

Joe listed his qualifications while offering his assistance with deciphering the binary code. He told me he had watched the *Ancient Aliens* program aired on December 30, less than two days before, and said that binary code was his field of expertise and knew he could decipher my pages of binary code properly.

I did't answer straight away, as we were still busy in the UK. But in that time before I returned to the States, Joe had written his own web-based, 'Binary Decoder Program,' which he said used the most popular encoding schemes to take raw binary code and decode it. From what he sent me, I was convinced of his skills and enlisted his help. I then asked Linda Moulton Howe to send Joe the photocopied images of the first five pages of ones and zeros that I had given over to her. I then sent Joe photocopied images of additional pages from the notebook – 6 to13 – to decipher, which had not yet been made public.

Relationship, January 2011

On January 3, 2011, Annie Wilkes went with us to Heathrow to see us off and told me she would journey to the States to see if our relationship could develop and work. I said I would have a 'property management agency' contact her. I thought, *why not? Nothing to lose with this.* But I also thought, I wanted the 'home field' advantage, just in case this went south. In my mind, I consulted the old adage . . . *if it looks too good to be true, then it probably is.*

After arriving home from O'Hare Airport, I tried to put together all of the

things that had happened during this trip to the UK. At this point for me, the forest answered many things I only had impressions of since the incident. I was also dealing with the phenomenon of having my senses and memory enhanced, which at times seemed clouded over the years. Now, I saw things in crystal clarity. For that, I was very pleased. The disappointment and 'fly in the soup' was Burroughs, whom from my observations seemed to have messed with the wrong people during the years following – you know, the people with agendas of their own. Why would anyone have hypnosis done with tainted Ufologists? – Especially those whose funding was from government sponsorship. Perhaps that, coupled with his mental instability to deal with certain issues, were a contributing factor.

The truth is that, throughout the last ten to fifteen years (and even now with his active search to recall those memories), I have seen nothing whatsoever that could shed light on what really happened to Burroughs on the first and third nights *from his own perspective.* But I was willing to keep talking to him with the hopes of him actually having total recall of the event.

Both Burroughs and I were seriously ill after the trip in the UK, and Burroughs had an extremely bad cough and chest problems, which also affected his heart, so he rested up as best he could. He was convinced he had caught this recent affliction after being out in the Rendlesham Forest while we were over there.

Annie Wilkes and I talked often while we were apart, and arrangements for her short-term rental had been made. She was due to fly in on January 7, 2011 to arrive at the O'Hare shuttle stop at the Clock Tower Resort in Rockford Illinois.

I had already promised a Texas podcast person to do an interview with Burroughs and me after finishing the UK film shoot. There was so many things up in the air with the discoveries over the last ninety days – especially the binary code. Some of the things were whether to wait on putting the entire information out or to go with it. I was vacillating with the thought that it might be a huge mistake to mention the binary code in that show. I still had impressions that it might only have been for me to know. However, the reason for these impressions also eluded me and made no sense at all. That, along with the fact that I had come off the meds and was now having major difficulties at night sleeping, meant I was now no better off than I was twenty years ago. I was frustrated and irritated with the whole situation. Rendlesham

and my life was now more complicated than ever, especially with the reappearance of this binary code, which actually creeped the shit out of me whenever I thought about the time I wrote it down after the incident, and when I thought I was having a mental breakdown from the trauma of the event and nothing more. I remember my whole body and mind wanted to resist it. It was now apparent to me that the binary code contained a message that actually had meaning and that it had to have a possibility of purpose.

On the day that Annie Wilkes arrived, I picked her up at the airport shuttle stop. I took her to her apartment. More than anything else, I was hoping that she could help me with these issues and these now troublesome nightmares. Everything at first was somewhat normal. She actually spent more time at my place than hers.

Soon, Annie's one-month lease was running out, and she said she was unable to pay for another month's stay – hinting at me to consider her staying with me, no doubt. I said that she could and that I did have an available guest bedroom. She quickly jumped at that and soon brought her suitcase over and was then staying in the guest bedroom.

Angelia Joiner Show, Thursday, January 13, 2011

The radio/podcast interview that Burroughs and I had agreed to do with Angelia Joiner, the Ufologist/radio presenter from Texas, had now come up, and I was still sick, having no doubt caught something in the UK. I was weak with a fever. Just an hour before the interview session, Burroughs, who also had a fever, had said he was too sick to do to the interview and dropped out.

I said I could do it by myself and did. Annie was hovering behind and over me during the interview, which made me feel anxious and uncomfortable. It was a rather short interview, but I had promised the presenter, and it seemed like it went well from my point of view, although no one else seemed to think so. I later heard that my words had been misunderstood and taken out of context, but perhaps that was my fault, I didn't feel 100-percent anyway.[dclxix]

Annie was now asking numerous questions, and the only subject matter that she wanted to discuss was the Rendlesham event and what I had dreamed. It seemed to me that this was all she was there for. I simply told her I do not want to talk about Rendlesham 24/7. It was not always an interest of

mine, and wasn't right now. After saying that several times over a period of as many days, Annie brought out a business card and a business overlay sheet for a UFO investigation organization that she said was hers. She said first and foremost that she was an investigator and her job was to debunk UFO cases. I laughed.

She then said she had a hard drive in storage from an old obsolete computer system, and that it might contain a binary message which was similar to the binary code I had written down. She said she needed someone to access it. She said that a string of binary code had just suddenly blinked up on the monitor before the hard drive malfunctioned.

I didn't know whether to believe her. The yellow flags were now all turning towards amber/red with me, and so the first chance I was alone, I called my brother-in-law Herb Miller, and told him what had happened with these recent announcements from Annie. Herb was concerned and told me that it stunk to high heaven and that she was not what she had claimed to be, or that it went far deeper than what she had said. "Don't tell her any new information or any information which is not public right now," he said. He added that I was to keep him updated with anything new and that he would get back to me. It was his thoughts that she was not what she has claimed to be, which shook me. I also let Burroughs know. He basically told me to continue feeding her BS and watch her – not something I felt comfortable about doing, as I was being as deceptive as she surely was, but I could do it, as I now felt my privacy was being threatened.

Earth's Axis Connection? January 15, 2011

Two days after I did the Angelia Joiner show, I contacted Gary Osborn again on January 15, 2011, asking him if he would assist me with a message that was discovered in a number of pages of raw binary code data. I didn't say much at this stage, only that the results of the deciphered pages turned up seven sets of geographical coordinates, and that the location of one was deciphered and that the remaining six sets of coordinates I would soon be sending to him to take a look at, to see if he could derive any meaning from them. It must have seemed strange to him and a bit 'out there,' but he wrote back saying he was intrigued, also asking why I was requesting his assistance on these codes . . . "Why me?" he asked.

I wrote back, saying that it was because he had been working on ancient symbolism and codes, as was told to me by our mutual friend (Annie Wilkes), since she had told me, "You should contact Gary Osborn, as he might be able to help" – especially after my dream about "23.5." I also offered my own thoughts as to the meaning of the coordinates, and what the "23.5" reference in my dream could be, saying that my thoughts about this now were that the locations given in the code could have possible high and/or anomalous EM (electro-magnetic) activity, and that they may be interdimensional "portals" of some kind that are used by the "intelligence(s)" behind the craft I came into contact with on the early morning of the December 26 1980.

Gary then wrote back saying that he had done some research into these "portals," which he termed "Neutral Points" within the Earth's positive and negative lines of force, where both cross each other and cancel each other out – *neutralized* – leaving a kind of hole, portal, or dimensional window area. He was careful to tell me this was just a theory, and that he was always cautious in arriving at premature conclusions and refrained from believing in anything totally, as this placed limits on further potential possibilities. He then asked me how all this would relate to the "23.5 degrees" theme in my dreams, *which points to the Earth's axis* . . . which of course was the connection he had offered me in November.

Gary then told me that seeing as this had come up in my dreams, that he should explain.

He told me that he had been finding many encoded references made to the Earth's axis tilt angle in many different sources throughout history – especially paintings from the 17th century. He said these encoded references consisted mainly of swords, daggers, spears, staffs . . . in fact anything that was linear and had a straight edge would be at the angle of 23º or 23.5º. Of course, these references remained invisible to the eye, until the angle of these items were measured, and even then you had to know that they had been intentionally placed at an angle to measure them and derive the meaning. I asked Gary what the meaning of this was . . . *why would people have encoded references to the Earth's titled axis at that time?*

He said, the answer was quite simple, and said he would get back to me. He then added that funnily enough, he had once bumped into Nick Pope and seemingly by chance in his local pub at the time, back in 1997 and had subsequent meetings with Nick in the same pub to talk about his own

experiences. He asked if I knew about that. I was surprised and said I didn't. Gary then said, he expected that would be my response, but that it was a peculiar coincidence seeing as I had been working independently alongside Nick Pope and ever since that time period. I told him I knew nothing about his prior meetings with Nick and he had never told me.

A few days later, Gary sent me an extract from a draft of a chapter he had written concerning my questions about the Earth's tilted axis angle references in history, and which he said was hopefully going into a book he was presently writing with Scott Creighton.

In the extract he sent me, Gary wrote that it was Scott's theory that these references which he (Gary) had been finding since the early 2000's were encoded at the time by those who defied the wrong and staunchly-defended views of the Church, which espoused the doctrine of the 'Concentric' or Geocentric view offered by Claudius Ptolemy (100–165? AD) . . . that all heavenly bodies – including the Sun – revolved around the Earth . . . that the Earth was the center of all creation . . . Each body was fixed upon a series of rotating celestial spheres, and according to God's plan, the Earth was perfectly stable, did not rotate and was therefore 'upright' and in every way we would use the term.

And so, Gary said, with any struggle for Truth, there were initiates, 'illumined ones' who had scientific knowledge of the Earth and who were active as part of a secret 'covert resistance' against the Church, and these people also 'encoded' the tilt angle of the Earth in many different sources, thereby bringing to light for those who had the eyes to see it, the true condition of the Earth and its place in the universe and all in accord with the knowledge and wisdom of the ancients. "In a way," Gary continued, "with these encoded references, these people were putting a finger up against the wrong and irrational teachings of the Church.

However, Gary writes, and then adds:

> ". . . what comes to mind when viewing the many sources in which this angle is evident is that these angle references accentuate the truly heretical truth that God's plan is not perfect; that the tilt of the Earth which was seen as unnatural also indicates that the fate of the Earth is uncertain and that its tilted condition may be the result of a global cataclysm in the past. This of course means that rather than the Earth being a superlative example of

> God's creation in which 'certainty' and 'order' reign and are maintained throughout the universe, that on the contrary, this imperfect image of a 'skewed' Earth in orbit around the Sun reveals our planet has an inferior position in the universe and in God's plan; that it is also vulnerable to 'uncertainty' and 'chaos' and is therefore prey to the random wanderings of smaller celestial bodies and any series or periodic cycles involving natural cataclysms that may befall it."

So, it was believed that the tilted Earth was an unnatural condition, and Gary told me that it was believed to reflect an *imbalance* not only in the system, *but also in human consciousness,* and that there was a desire expressed in the symbolism to see the axis of the Earth returned to its rightful *upright* position, which is why we find these references in numerous paintings of Christ carrying the Crucifixion Cross at the precise angles of either 23 or 23.5 degrees before he is raised upright with the cross (balanced vertically) so he can then enter the "Heavenly Kingdom." Gary said that the Christian Crucifixion, which is celebrated at Easter – being the first Sunday after the Full Moon following the Spring Equinox – was based on the ancient Egyptian god, Osiris, who was ritually resurrected – raised up. Osiris was raised up on the day of the Spring Equinox when the *Djed Column,* which symbolized this god's spine and also the Earth's axis, was raised up straight and vertical.

This is what lays behind the whole *Messiah mythos,* Gary said . . . that there was an underlying *astrotheological* narrative, now missing, which was likely based on the collective desire to return the Earth to the same conditions that were enjoyed during a believed *'Golden Age,* because with an upright Earth, there would be no 'life' and 'death' periods as we have with the opposites of Summer and Winter in the annual cycle. Instead, and at certain latitudes – most likely 30 degrees, above and below the Equator – it was believed the Earth would enjoy a *perennial Springtime paradise* – continual Spring all year round . . . a virtual *Garden of Eden.* The reason why the Spring Equinox was significant was because the Spring and Autumn Equinoxes *are the only two days in the year when the Earth makes a return to the same balanced, equal day and night conditions as would result if the Earth were upright.* And that is the crux of it, because the message, he said, is really *all about balance . . . reaching a state of equilibrium and balance.*

I found that fascinating. So, the Earth being out of balance due to a global

catastrophe that upended it long ago in the past was the key to the universal belief in a messiah or savior that would right and correct that imbalance, reflected in the system – in that correcting, it begins with the change in human consciousness and an awakening in the collective towards a state of equilibrium and balance – meaning *no wars, no conflict.* It was logical.

Gary then said that ultimately it is about reaching a state that is beyond the world of duality and opposites, and where both are *neutralized.* He then used the idea I had relayed to him, that the coordinates could be where interdimensional "portals" are located, saying ". . . much like how the male and female, positive and negative energies *cross* and *neutralize* (neutral point) to create a hole, portal or void through dimensions or to a higher realm," he said, and this is why certain people will experience certain things at these locations and why they marked them as sacred places, which is why we find stone circles, temples and churches built on them as places to meditate and pray and to experience enlightenment. I was told that the crossing of opposite energies symbolized by bringing the two hands (opposite sides of the body) together in prayer, expresses the same union/fusion experienced, as in the sex act between a male and female, which can produce a child, and enlightenment is experienced as a rebirth.

Gary added that whatever the reason, it appears that the encoding of these specific angles associated with the Earth's geophysics has largely been a tradition with artists for hundreds of years, because he said he had found *that even today* there are artists who appear to be encoding the same angle(s) in their works, even though the Church and the Inquisition are no longer active. He said that one can only conclude from the sheer volume of references made to this angle, that the people behind them – artists especially – belonged to a secret fraternity spanning many generations. If having been passed down by tradition, it's likely that these angles were used by artists who were initiated into the meaning behind them.

In any case, I was delighted to think Gary could possibly shed some light on why I was dreaming about this angle, *but what did all this have to do with the Rendlesham Incident?* Although at the time it only seemed like a step on a rung of a very high ladder, the open contact with Gary turned out to be hugely significant because I discovered that it had a lot to do with why I was given the binary code message, and why it was passed on to Gary to interpret and discover what we were supposed to find. Knowing what I now know and understand, he was correct, because at the most fundamental level, *it is all*

about balance.

However, it was some time before I realized this, as I was in a very 'unbalanced' personal situation that needed to be dealt with.

Operation Mushroom

By this time, Burroughs and I had several conversations about Annie, and like me, he clearly didn't trust her. Again, I was only going along with her wishes to see where it was going to lead. I still felt confident I could control the situation. However, to gauge what her real agenda might be, I invited Burroughs in on a group correspondence with Wilkes, and the three of us soon engaged in a whole series of back and forth messaging.

Burroughs and I used a technique to withdraw information by controlling the discussions – both of us initiating and allowing Annie to talk about herself and her background in the hope of discovering any inadvertent disclosure by her. We also fed Annie disinformation to see what she would do with it. Burroughs and I worked in unison with this. I called it "Operation Mushroom" and developed my own personal version of what we were doing in hopes of determining more about Annie and her motives – or at least the operation with her until I could prove her safe or not.

In the tradition of my military days, I took my objective word literally. Mushrooms develop better when you place them in a darkened space and feed them manure. So, we handled Annie like one handles the mushroom. She seemed to eat up the BS from the start. Of course, I never felt right doing it. It seemed unfair to do that to someone, but at this point and all as a result of what I witnessed at Rendlesham, I often felt like I was being hunted by *lions, tigers, and bears.* Again, Burroughs and I had agreed to make up stories for Annie, as it was possible that she was working for someone and just gathering information . . . but I also wondered if Burroughs actually believed some of the 'hooey' she was spouting. This I kept to myself. I am a private person, and all this recent involvement with Burroughs and his self-serving relationship with Linda Howe to further his own ambitions did not sit well with me, either. Even though he said it was about finding the truth, my view was that it was really about how he could capitalize on the incident we had experienced.

'Operation Mushroom' had worked well over the last seven months. By

this time, and due to the amount of deception and lies that had emerged, of which I had been keeping track over the last one hundred days, I did not feel guilty at all about doing it, as I was sure Annie was working for someone, and suspected she was being funded to gather information. I gave Burroughs only general details about how I was handling Annie, but I told my brother-in-law Herb in a lot more detail what I was doing, as I could trust him. Herb thought it was a good idea, but was concerned about all things safety-wise.

After a few days, Herb called me and said that he and his wife (my sister) would have us both over to their house, and we could go out for dinner. This was an opportunity to give Herb a chance to evaluate Annie. Herb and my sister lived in Loves Park, Illinois – just a short 45-minute drive from my home.

Annie and I arrived at my sister's house, and after the usual greetings, we all went out for dinner.

Before the main course could be served, Herb turned to Annie, smiled and said, "Well, tell me, what agency or government do you work for?" Annie, who was caught off-guard, looked at us all with dropped jaw and went to answer but kind of stuttered, "Ah . . . hmm . . . ." Then she smiled and said, "Is this one of your favorite restaurants Herb?" She never answered his question, but she didn't appear to be clueless about having an answer for such a question, either. Also, she didn't try to deflect his question by saying, "What in the world are you talking about?" or "What kind of question is that?" She simply side-stepped the question after trying at first to answer, but then stopped, and instead then asked him a non-related question. Obviously, Herb had surprised her flat out. However, answering a question with a non-related question is a clear case of deception.

Six Coordinates, Thursday, February 3, 2011

Throughout this time, I had been in email correspondence with Gary discussing his previous research work, which impressed me so much I was reading the articles he had posted on his website. I told Gary I would be sending him the remaining six sets of coordinates, which were still being deciphered, but added that this stage of the process was almost completed. I actually received the remaining six coordinates from Joe Luciano on the same day, that evening, and as soon as I had received them, I sent them to Gary via

a short email around 10 p.m. on Wednesday, February 2, 2011, which happened to be Gary's son's birthday, but because of the time zone difference, he would have received them around 2:00 in the morning on Thursday, February 3rd.[dclxx]

The six coordinates I sent Gary by email were the following and this is how they were laid out in the email:

16.763177 N 89.117768 W
34.800272 N 111.843567 W
29.977836 N 31.131649 E
14.701505 S 75.167043 W
36.256845 N 117.100632 E
37.110195 N 25.372281 E

Gary then placed these with the first set of coordinates that had already been deciphered, and which was found to point to a location off the west coast of Ireland, of the lost and submerged island of *Hy Brasil*, then presented and discussed on the *Ancient Aliens* episode televised on December 30, 1980.

52.0942532 N 13.131269 W

A video segment of this program had already been placed on YouTube, to which I sent Gary the link.[dclxxi] This made seven sets of coordinates in total. Gary told me that he would study them closely and would let me know what he found . . . if anything.

February to April 2011

More red flags presented themselves with Annie Wilkes, but I had already become emotionally attached. She must have known I was becoming suspicious, as her way to pass any time of the day was for us to go to bed. Another strange aspect to this relationship was the fact that she would go to bed with me, then when she thought I was asleep, she would slip silently into the guest bedroom and spend hours talking on her mobile or typing on her laptop . . . to whom, one can only speculate. The next day she would always say something like, "I had to leave you because you were talking very loudly in your sleep," adding, "Some of it seemed to be about what you witnessed in Rendlesham, and no normal person can sleep with all that going on."

None of that seemed right to me. I always eventually slipped off to sleep, but it did not seem to mesh with what she was saying. I remembered I had a voice-activated microcassette recorder. So, the next night, I put the microcassette on to record on voice activation. The next morning over coffee, Annie reiterated the same blurb on how I had talked about Rendlesham all night in excessive detail. My first thought was that this was manipulation, but, it was now easy enough for me to see if she was telling the truth or lying yet again.

One afternoon I told Annie I had laundry to do, and that I would take my laundry down to the community complex laundry room and would be back in a couple of hours. Annie looked at me and smiled, and in a wry, sarcastic tone of voice said, “What are you going to do, watch the laundry wash and dry?” Then managing a little laugh, I looked at her with a dead-pan stare, as if she was being immature and just said, “No,” and grabbed a paperback to read. Once I got my laundry all started, I brought out the microcassette player, which according to what she was saying, should have recorded me talking in my sleep. I played it back, and what I heard was not me talking, but sleeping, along with the typical snoring. I ran the tape forward in short bursts . . . but no talking. In fact, there was no talking at all anywhere on the recorded tape. Finally, I heard myself getting up in the morning and turning the microcassette off.

I thought, “Good God . . . why is she lying about this?”

There were only two possibilities: either I did not dream and talk in my sleep that night, which was evident, or she was lying . . . *she was obviously lying.*

After finishing the laundry, I went back to my apartment. As usual, Annie was on her laptop with a coffee. She spent so much time on the Internet, it seemed weird to me. It was the first thing she did when she got up in the morning. She would not even use the bathroom. She would pour a cup of coffee and immediately sit down and go straight on the Internet. I found this very strange.

While engaged in a casual conversation later that day, I inserted the question I had been waiting all day for Annie to answer. “Hey,” I said, “I just want to know . . . *did you hear me talking in my sleep last night?”* (Annie had slept in the guest bedroom). Wilkes went straight into dramatic mode and responded with, “Oh my goodness, you talked all night!” I smiled, looking as

if I was chuckling along with her and was none the wiser, and then I said, “Well go on . . . what did you hear me say?” She then stopped and thought for a moment and said, “Well, you talked about” . . . and then she went into a long descriptive report of what I had said, which although imaginative were obviously lies made up on the spot. She then ended with, “I hope you wrote down all you remembered so we can talk about it later today,” and smiled.

Well, she had just flat-out lied. I was aghast.

So, with all the other times she said I had talked in my sleep, I wondered if I actually had at all. I found the ease with which she lied very unsettling. I was so upset discovering this deception, it was now a code-red. The good news was that I had left my self-built, defense walls somewhat intact. I had taken down three of them, leaving the remaining two. But rest assured, the ones taken down would be put back in place. But this was one of the hardest things I had to do during my relationship with Annie because I was sure I was falling in love with her. What a dilemma for me. This meant it would take everything I had to fight her at this point.

I was scheduled to go to Phoenix to speak at the UFO Congress Convention in Fountain Hills, which was about an hour north of Phoenix. I asked Annie if she wanted to go, and she said, no, she was going to fly to Florida to see a friend. I said OK, but she cancelled a couple days before I was going to leave. And so again, I asked her if she wanted to fly to Phoenix with me. She laughed and said, “What? . . Do you want some fluff on your arm while you are there?” I said “No, not at all. I just thought that perhaps you didn’t want to be alone.” Actually, I wanted her to see Burroughs and Halt. I wanted to gauge Halt’s impressions of her and to obtain any advice he had about the situation.

So, this situation caused me to take some safety measures with her in my home by herself. I took the computer memory sticks that I had and any personal or Rendlesham-related info with me. I then left blank ones on my desk and photographed the desk so I could see if they were messed with. I then took the remaining papers and locked them in my safe. There was nothing that Annie could look at that could be taken or be given to others. She had use of my computer, which had nothing of use. I used it mainly for Skype, emails and Facebook. For these programs, she needed passwords, and I did not provide those or tell her.

After arriving at Phoenix-Mesa Airport, the driver of the limo was waiting

to take me to the hotel in Fountain Hills. After getting to my suite, I had messages waiting from Halt and Howe, among others. It was hectic, and almost every time I went into the public areas of the resort complex, I would be approached by someone who wanted to schedule an interview with me. I scheduled them around the itinerary which was given to me. Burroughs and I were to meet the following afternoon, as he was coming up from Maricopa. He said he was ill and feeling far from one hundred percent.

The next day, I met Colonel Chuck Halt in the reception area of the hotel getting ready to sign in. We had a short talk, and I had told him Burroughs was coming that afternoon. He said he thought it would be a good idea to meet again while we were all together. A rare event by itself. Halt had major concerns about me doing anything with Burroughs or Howe; he said they had an agenda, and it had nothing to do with what we wanted. It was clear that Halt and I did not always agree, even though we have done a lot of work together outside of the almost four years that I had worked for him in some capacity while at RAF Bentwaters, even though it might have been only occasionally or during alerts at the Wing Command Post battle cab. But even though we have had disagreements in the past years, I have always given him the courtesy and respect for his rank. To this day, and whenever I meet Halt, I give him the respect and courtesy salute, and he wholeheartedly returns it to me.

Burroughs arrived, and I told him of the meeting with Halt at 2 p.m. He was anxious and adamant he was going to "hold him to the fire" with the third night's events and how we were messed with. "I think Halt only has limited information, John," I said. Burroughs responded with, "Well I am confronting him with things that I have always wanted to." I guess that for Burroughs, the perfect opportunity had presented itself. However, Burroughs did not know what I already knew through Monroe Nevels concerning the third night's events and the plot that has been initiated to conceal the first night's events.

As Burroughs and I rode up in the elevator, he asked what was happening with Annie Wilkes. I told John that it was very complicated, and really because I had feelings for her. Burroughs did not miss an opportunity, and said, "Well, congratulations. I hope you are happy together." I knew at this point, there was a fox in the hen house, and Burroughs' response was the last thing I thought he would say. It negated the rest of the conversation in which I was going to share what I had discovered with "Operation Mushroom"

running in full force. Anyway, I remained silent.

I had to almost run behind Burroughs on the way to Halt's room, which was a considerable distance from the elevator. He did not seem ill to me, and I thought he should have been able to do this conference. We then both found ourselves in front of Halt's door. We both entered Halt's suite, which had a conference room and that's where we sat. It was all going well, and everything was cordial between us. Then, like night and day, Burroughs went from a calm demeanor to turning into an attack dog on Halt. Halt just took it in his stride, as if he had expected it, but as a retired career NCO, my moral compass would deny that, and I would not allow this attack to continue. I told Burroughs he was out of line with his attacks on our former commander. I said that we can all talk, but civility is the only way to do this. Halt then helped to bring it down a level. Burroughs must have known he was being an ass with the Colonel and calmed down.

We then left, and Burroughs arranged for us to meet with Linda Howe in her suite for brunch the following day. I did, however, see Colonel Halt later that day, and we had discussed Burroughs' bizarre behavior and his mental condition with the aggressive way Burroughs had attacked Halt with his questioning in his suite.

The following morning, and late as we were, we met for brunch in Linda Howe's suite. After brunch we went to her patio and were talking in the sunshine about different things – mostly things associated with the book she said she was currently writing, even though she had produced nothing for us in the last six months. At first, the discussion was civil, until Burroughs brought up the Halt conversation the day before.

I told Burroughs that I had a confidential conversation later with Halt after we left and that we could talk about some expects of that later. We were all standing at this point, and Linda jumped in asking what Halt had said. I said I could not share that conversation, for it was confidential. Linda became immediately angry and came over to me and said, "You have to tell me because we are writing a book together." I thought, *now it is us who are writing a book instead of just Linda?*

Linda Howe stood there in front of me. She was between me and Burroughs and was shaking her fist at me. Being so short, I just looked over her and ignored her screaming and threats and told Burroughs, "Well, I think it's time to leave," saying I would talk to him later. I left to go down the walkway, and Burroughs came after me and said he had to get back home,

too. We left Linda standing on the patio. I already knew at that point she was an opportunist, and that our relationship with any book was over. I actually made a point to tell anyone who was under the impression that Linda was writing an upcoming book with us and asked how it was coming along that I had fired her, and that it was not going to happen.

The four-day UFO congress went fast. It felt as if it was over as soon as it had begun. I flew out of Phoenix-Mesa and arrived back in Rockford, Illinois. Upon getting home, it was a strange situation. Annie had put a huge dent into the hard liquor in the liquor cabinet . . . three bottles in five days. *Yikes!* I thought. I also checked my photos with what I was seeing, to compare where I had placed my computer storage sticks and the things in the drawers of my desk. It looked like she had been a very busy woman indeed. Things were out of place, as if she had been snooping around while I was gone. Everything hung now under cemented red/black flags. She clearly had to go, so I talked to my brother-in-law Herb and other family members about this situation. It was hard to do, but it was time to listen to my rational mind and to take care of my self-protection, rather than to focus on what I felt in my heart. The decision I made went against everything my heart had told me, and so now after a little time to prepare, I was ready.

It was a Saturday morning in April, and it was my brother Dave's birthday. I would usually have a traditional breakfast with him. I told Annie that morning that I was going to go out, and that I would be gone for three hours and would be home by noon. I told her that when I got back, she had better be out of here, and if anything was missing, damaged, or out of place, then my next phone call would be to the police.

She was not stunned, but I could see what seemed more like 'mission failure' on her face, meaning it was nothing emotional or a heartbreak. It was like she had failed at her primary job. Very odd and not expected. She just said, "OK." It was like this woman never had a man reject her before, or had never heard the word "No." She said I was being abusive. A very strange reaction to all that was going on. I said, "Good bye," and left for my brother's house to pick him up.

While having breakfast with my brother Dave, I told him the whole situation. He said I had done the right thing, and he was also concerned about her. He said something was amiss with her from his vantage point and ended

his sentence with, “Good riddance!” Dave added that she was probably on a mission from the beginning. What Dave said next only made me realize I had made the right decision, “Well, this is simple Jimmy . . . short dogs don’t run through tall weeds.” We both laughed. Although heartbroken, I was very relieved at this point. Truly, aside from that night in Rendlesham, this was one of the hardest things I ever had to do in my life, as I had grown very fond of her.

In the days following, I received many texts from Annie Wilkes, telling me that she wanted us to be together and that she wanted an explanation . . . all of which I answered. She then turned to scorn me at best, or sink to being evil at worst. She contacted my daughters and other people who knew me and said all kinds of vile things about me to them. My daughters told her she was “whacked” and a liar about me, telling her that what she said about me was something they had never remotely observed or would ever consider as anything their dad would do or be like.

I then received an email from a person who was an associate of hers at this South African UFO research group. His name was Noel (last name withheld). Here is an excerpt from the rambling message sent from that guy – someone I didn’t even know – but the whole email made clear that Annie Wilkes had written things that were not true or had embellished in the attempt to sway others that I was not what I appear to be. Who knows what information about me had really been given to this person? But if it was anything like the lies and hatred she had sent to my children, I could only imagine. There is a saying that applies to insecure, jealous, controlling people – especially those with narcissistic personality disorder:

“If they can no longer control you, then they will control what others think about you.”

> 04/09/11 at 8:17 a.m.:
>
> “For a person such as yourself, prominently featured as an important witness in a very public event, supposedly reliable, trustworthy and of sound mind and judgement, you have sorely failed to meet the expectations of not only (real name deleted) but of other researchers who will now become aware of the unforgivable behavior you have displayed over these last few months. I wish to make it eminently clear that events over the past few months have not gone unnoticed and while they cannot be changed, a sincere apology to (real name deleted) and a valid explanation for your actions would go some way in

> mitigating consequences. I would also suggest most strongly but will all respect, that you seek professional assistance in managing your emotions and the various aspects of this case that you find overwhelming.
> Yours sincerely Noel" (name withheld).

Even Chuck Halt was concerned about Annie Wilkes. She had sent a couple of emails to Halt, and he forwarded them on to me. He gave me some warnings about her, which were all too late:

> April 12, 2011:
> "Jim: She just sent me a strange e-mail that I won't respond to. I read between the lines. I warned you about scorned women. Good luck – run fast! Chuck."
>
> June 27, 2011:
> "Jim, [Annie Wilkes] recently sent me a rambling e-mail that made little sense. I don't respond to them. I assume you managed to get rid of her. Have you moved yet? Chuck

It was a surreal situation, but immediately after her departure, I made an appointment with my personal physician. I told her about the stopping of the meds she had previously prescribed, and that I had been under the care of someone I thought was a professional therapist.

The mood then became ugly in that doctor's office. My doctor was angry, and she held no punches. She told me that the particular medication she had prescribed for me, needed, without exception, a weening of decreased dosage over six weeks to take a person off of it. She told me I was very fortunate I did not suffer an epileptic seizure, or worst-case scenario . . . death!

I just sat there quietly and took the scolding I deserved from my physician. She then put me back on the meds, and within two weeks I was sleeping again restfully. Humbled as I was by the whole episode, I thought, *what kind of person would put me in that life and death situation because she had her own selfish agenda?* Well, that person was Annie Wilkes, and it was a criminal offense to interfere, intervene and/or compromise a person's prescribed medication.

Since I kicked her out of my life, Wilkes has spent most of her time making public every private correspondence I had with her about my private life and the therapy I underwent as actual conversations or facts – even making the dreams I had told her about or had written down appear as if I

were talking about true events.

Gary Osborn, who was working on the coordinates from the binary code at the time and was already finding things, told me that he had received an email from Annie saying that seeing as he was preparing a report about his findings on the code and that it was she who had brought us together, that she did not want her name associated with any written work about Rendlesham, so, this is why I decided to use the alias "Annie Wilkes," which is from a fictional character in the book *Misery* written by Stephen King. After reading Stephen King's book, I saw the irony that the woman I now knew was very much like his character, in that what began as an innocent joy soon turned quickly into the protagonist's nemesis. I couldn't help but see that the elements of this woman's character clearly described the woman I had struck up a relationship with. Her actions were in many ways characteristic of the female character in King's book, as she at first seems sweet and guiltless. She was definitely not what she seemed to be the longer you were around her. Wilkes held her true self behind a façade of simple talk and rosy smiles, all of which were false. To me, she seemed paranoid, and her actions were suggestive of someone who was suffering from other possible mental disorders. I saw in her someone who was suffering from a bipolar situation, along with symptoms of narcissistic personality disorder.

Of course, I can only say this based on my own thoughts and observations during the relatively short time I spent with her. Who really knows? For me, she was only one of the many hunters, along with the "Lions," "Tigers" and "Bears" which had pursued me since the incident.

Jackson, Mississippi, April, 2011

Burroughs and I had been asked to do a conference with Linda Moulton Howe in Jackson, Mississippi. The organizer of the Mississippi UFO Conference was Pat Frascogna, who would later become our lawyer concerning Rendlesham. We had a commitment, and all agreed for the conference to be held on April 16, 2011. On tax day, April 15, I drove to the Rockford, Illinois, Clock Tower and caught the Van Galder Shuttle bus to O'Hare Airport. The flight to Jackson kept being delayed due to severe thunderstorms in the area. In my opinion, it should have been cancelled. We had extreme turbulence and landed right after a tornado was on the ground

just outside of Jackson . . . it was a hell of a ride. There was no time to check into the hotel before going to the reception.

We had been invited to a dinner party that evening, which Pat Frascogna had helped to arrange. The gathering was being held in a penthouse on the top floor of an old building in downtown Jackson. To add to the delay, myself and Myron Lockey, who picked me up from the airport, were stuck in the elevator. Apparently, you needed a code to get up to that floor. Patricia Bullock Williams came down with the code and got us up to the party. I was tired and sat down alone on the couch for a while, just chewing gum to try to depressurize my ears and observed the scene. Because I couldn't check into the hotel, I was wearing my travel shorts, while most everyone else was dressed formally for the occasion. It was a swanky place, with framed jerseys of famous football players on the wall. On offer to eat were chicken wings, little barbeque hot dogs, chips salsa, dessert things, etc., and lots of liquor and wine.

Across a 'sea' of men in suits and women mostly in evening dresses, I spotted Linda Moulton Howe across the room. She didn't even acknowledge me but just continued talking with everyone else. She was still angry with me. Burroughs was nowhere to be found at first. I later found out that he had been standing by himself in a far corner of the terrace. Obviously, this party had been going on quite a while before I got there. There were about twenty other people there, including Thomas J. Carey (co-author with Donald R. Schmitt on the book, *Witness to Roswell,* 2009), who was also going to speak at the Conference the next day.

Someone had finally told Burroughs that I was there, and he joined me on the couch to talk over a glass of wine. He asked me if I wanted to fly back out to Phoenix so I could write the book. I laughed and told him I simply couldn't afford to fly back again to Phoenix this year. He looked at me and said, "Well, what did you do with all that money that production company gave you for the film shoot and notebook?" It was then I knew he was transfixed with the cash that could be made doing conferences and TV shows, and I kind of smiled. I was thinking this guy is all about the currency of a situation. Trying not to shake my head, I turned to Burroughs and said, "Well I had uses for that money, and I can't afford to fly right back out to Phoenix." I was not going to tell this guy that I had actually donated the money. It was well beyond his thinking to do that, as it was always all about him, and that was it.

Our hotel was just down the street from the penthouse. We were put up in the King Edward Hotel, another swanky place, but this one was full of marble and ornate decor. At that time, it was one of the most luxurious, if not the most prestigious, places to stay in Jackson.

The next morning, since the weather had improved, I decided to walk to the conference, as it was only a block or two away. The walk showed a different view of Jackson than I had seen the night before. It was apparent that there were areas of poverty surrounding me with abandoned shops and neglected streets. But as I turned the corner, looming ahead was the Jackson Convention Complex – a massive modern structure that seemed like it was at least three blocks long.

The conference center was top notch – modern facilities with state-of-the-art equipment. As I walked past the ticket sales, I noticed that the tickets were only five dollars! What the heck? How could they put this thing on for only five dollars a ticket? I asked one of the ticket sellers, I think her name was Karen Parker, "Did you sell many advanced tickets?" "There were no advanced tickets… you just pay at the door," she answered. Yet, we had pretty much a 'sold out' crowd.

Tom Carey spoke first, and then after lunch was Rendlesham. Linda came to the stage and gave an overview of the RFI case, including scenes from both Burroughs' and my hypnosis. Then she said, "After the break, we will hear from both these two men." The whole crowd gasped. I laughed to myself, *did they not realize that we were there?* Our presentation was a hit. Pat Frascogna had even gotten in touch with Airman Dock Rhodes, who was there during the first night's events on the Woodbridge main gate. We invited him onstage to answer a few questions with us.

That same night after the Conference, there was a dinner for the speakers. Patricia Bullock Williams pulled up in front of the hotel in a big white van – not the 4-Runner that she had been using to ferry us around. All of the speakers, Linda, Burroughs, Carey and his wife, and I piled into the van. We headed north. Patricia seemed nervous and tense driving us there. She said she was uneasy driving someone else's van with the entire speaker lineup to an unknown location. That is when I found out that she did not have actual directions and only after she got to a certain mile marker was she supposed to call for further directions. It was getting dark. After driving for about 45 minutes, she called Pat Frascogna, who led her to a certain turn. Soon, we

were winding our way through a forest of birch trees. We came up to a large square house that seemed to be made out of cinder blocks. By now, we were all laughing and talking.

There were two servers at the door waiting for us, with two glasses of wine in each hand. They were very hip – one guy, Asian-looking, had partially pink hair. We all grabbed a glass and turned the corner. There, in the library, were about 20 to 25 people waiting for us, and as we later wandered through the hallways and living rooms, there were more – making around 50 people in all.

It was a weird gathering of people, to say the least. These people were very well-dressed and extremely knowledgeable and asked hard, probing questions – hard, deep, intelligent questions, not the usual run of the mill 'after conference' questions . . . but not for Carey. They had a guy with whom they had a common friend come talk to him to keep it light. He did not feel any of the 'high strangeness' we felt. I did not recognize these people from the conference. *Where exactly the hell were we?* I asked myself. I passed by Burroughs, who was talking about Gabby Giffords, saying she could be the Antichrist. *Good grief!*

The dining room was more of a dining hall, complete with large draperies or tapestries on the walls depicting soldiers and Kings. . . *were they their ancestors?* It felt like I was doing a tour of a very old ancestral castle in Eastern medieval Europe, and possibly even way beyond that in time. The place reeked of 'old money,' and seemed *archaic* . . . *ancient.* The questions continued. I went to use the restroom. The hall even had male and female restrooms side-by-side. I was trying to get a glass of water. There were two servers, and the maids were in the back, where no one could see them.[dclxxii]

Later, we were told that these people, who had asked us to attend the 'welcome party' the previous night at the penthouse and who were hosting the dinner, were the sponsors for the conference. What they originally wanted was to just have us attend this dinner, but they thought we would never have flown down to Jackson to attend the dinner by itself, so they organized a conference to mask that fact. The truth was I personally would not fly 700 miles for a dinner party, so their strategy worked. This was a strange gathering indeed. Rumors of survivalists and Illuminati were abundant, but I had the feeling these people were the 'real power' in America. What was truly unsettling were the questions I was asked by one of the gentlemen who

had arranged these events. He wanted to talk with me personally about the Rendlesham Incident and particularly, *the binary code,* which we did discuss.

At the end of the evening, and as we piled back into the van, Linda asked Patricia if she thought they were Illuminati or Presbyterians! Pat answered, "Illuminati." We couldn't help but engage in nervous laughter about what we had experienced, except Carey and his wife. Burroughs sat up front and started coughing. He was still ill after the UK trip. Carey freaked out, and Linda yelled "He is not infectious; he has congestive heart failure!" Carey then climbed over the back seat and sat by himself on one of the third-row seats. He never said another word for the rest of the trip.

These party gatherings and conference were the last events any of us would do together for a while. The next big event for us would be the *Citizens Hearing on UFO Disclosure* in Washington DC the following year.

Chapter Seventeen

Taking the Road Less Travelled

January 2012

In early 2012, I took Burroughs up on his offer to stay at his place for a short while and booked a flight from Rockford, Illinois to Phoenix-Mesa Airport. It was there that I met with Burroughs and stayed at his home in Chandler, Arizona, along with a prospective lead author, who had arranged to stay there at the same time. I thought I could also do some research while there and have some quiet time to go over things I had on my mind for the book we had both agreed to do. We had a productive time during my stay. I noted that the information we were discussing was being shared with another who kept messaging us throughout my visit. To this day, I still don't know who this could have been, but I must admit, it made me feel a little paranoid. I sent Joe Luciano, who had been working on deciphering the first thirteen pages of binary code since early 2011, freshly-made photocopies of the last three

pages of binary code from the notebook, which I had brought along while packing my bags to visit Burroughs.

Seeing the notebook, Burroughs was becoming more anxious to get the notebook authenticated. He said it was imperative. I agreed, but he was like a nagging and bothersome child about it. My answer was always the same. “Yes! Yes! We can do that,” I said, but it was cost prohibitive for me to do it at the moment, seeing as my personal expenditures had come to almost forty thousand dollars with the Rendlesham Forest Incident. Burroughs was silent regarding any offer to share some financial contribution to the expense.

Just as I was leaving to go back home after my stay, to alleviate his anxiety, I gave Burroughs the last page [page 16] of the ones and zeros I had written down. I told him to hold on to it for safe keeping until we could find a documentary expert with little or no cost to us. Of course, I had now scanned the pages of ones and zeros from the notebook, and so I gave the last page to Burroughs to ‘safe guard’ it in case something had happened to the notebook. He accepted it with no hesitation and said he would safeguard it with his life. He seemed pleased to have that page, but, I know it also creeped him out, too. I also told him that during negotiations with the next production company that made us an offer, I would stipulate that a condition of the contract would be to authenticate that code page from the notebook. He seemed rather surprised I would do that. I never figured that this would surprise him, unless he actually questioned the authenticity of when the notes and binary had been written. I kept these thoughts to myself, but I was ready to put any doubt from Burroughs to bed with the notebook; I just had to wait for the opportunity.

Group Skype Calls,

Penniston, Burroughs and Osborn

Since the last time we had gotten together, which was in Jackson, Mississippi, I had turned down four requests to do TV documentaries. Some just did not seem appropriate, although a few did. I was disenchanted with the British TV documentaries and the production companies that I had worked with so far, and truly thought that a more accurate accounting of the incident had been presented in the few American TV documentaries I had done. I was also further disappointed and upset with the number of “armchair” (self-

proclaimed) “researchers” and opportunists who had come out of the woodwork, especially in the UK. It seemed to me, that I was on a different page than everyone else who was involved with the Rendlesham Incident.

The one solid exception to this was author Gary Osborn, whom I had asked to look at the seven coordinates from the code in January 2011 to see if there was any additional information, and he had already begun finding some extraordinary data. I never wanted his work tainted or influenced. I knew it was important that the results be naturally and objectively arrived at, no matter how uncomfortable they might be. So, I kept myself completely out of his research, and let the chips lay where ever they fell.

However, because an offer of a conference came up in the UK for Burroughs and me, I thought it a good opportunity to have Gary also attend as a speaker, and then I introduced Gary to Burroughs. This was via email correspondence at first. A week later, the three of us moved onto engaging in Skype discussions, which became a habit every Sunday – each session lasting around two hours. During the first of these sessions, Burroughs and I invited Gary to give a talk about the code at the Rendlesham Conference, which had now been scheduled for June 2012 at Woodbridge, organized by Gordy Goodger. Gary agreed to that, as he had already made some findings from studying the seven coordinates found in the code, which he could talk about at the conference.

After several Sundays of Skype calls with Gary, Burroughs then took on a different attitude.

Although he said he would read through Gary’s work, it seemed that Burroughs was unwilling to even look at the previous documentation and research work that Gary had presented on his webpage, due to laziness mostly. It was apparent that Burroughs had never read any of Gary’s published works, either. I, on the other hand, tried to familiarize myself with the material that Gary had presented soon after my contact with him. Not an easy task, I must say. I had found myself reading his webpage articles five or six times, with the intention of absorbing and understanding his prior work. In general, I found his work on deciphering ancient symbolism to be in line with the impressions I have always had with what lay behind the Rendlesham Incident. I kept much of this to myself, even from Burroughs.

In any case, our three-way Skype conversations – Burroughs, Osborn, and me – become more and more uncomfortable. I found it perplexing how Burroughs would dismiss the progress reports from Gary. I thought for a guy

wanting some answers with Rendlesham, it seemed very strange he was so dismissive and at times belligerent with Gary, but Gary stood his ground and wasn't fazed with it. He owed nothing to Burroughs, and it was I who had asked Gary to assist me. I had observed Burroughs' modus operandi with dealing with people before. He would befriend them, then goad them on a relentless schedule, and then just turn on them and attack them . . . and then try and befriend them again. He could turn on a dime. This I would see as normal with Burroughs, as he did this to many people during my time working with him. I found it disturbing. His tendencies were to jump at the lights of every passing ship, rather than to stay focused on the main investigation with Rendlesham. An example of this was his fascination with ancient Native Americans of the Southwest, as he was during this time living in Arizona. Burroughs was now into Kachinas Dolls and Hopi folklore and many of the New Age concepts. There was nothing wrong with that, as one of the coordinates was Sedona, which is Hopi territory, but it was strenuous listening to Burroughs trying to interpret the findings Gary had made with the coordinates from the code with what he thought he understood, as if he wanted to be the one to decipher the hidden meaning and to control it. In any case, our joint Skype calls slowly degenerated to his goading of Gary and his constantly taking what Gary had said and then attempting to connect the dots to things that did not really exist. After the Skype sessions, I would often say to Gary that it was like Burroughs had his own 'connect the dots kit,' which was supposed to look like a tree when finished but would look like a bowl of pudding instead. Anyway, this became a habit with Burroughs during our Skype calls at this time and having him involved really wasn't productive.

Conferences with Burroughs

Throughout the last six months I had been persistently questioned by Burroughs as to why I had ignored or turned down TV documentaries and

conferences that had come my way. Burroughs seemed flabbergasted by my complacency. I said that I did not really like doing them based on what they chose to put in the documentary. It seemed the best part always ended up on the editing room floor. As I said, I had become disenchanted with the whole business. And as far as the conferences go, all I could see were the same old UFO opportunists and entertainers, who seemed to have carved out a nice little niche for themselves to make a few extra dollars. Anyway, after several weeks of Burroughs asking me each time the subject came up about doing documentaries and conferences, he finally came to the point and said he would love to help and take part in them. I figured, well, it's better than doing them alone, and because we had planned to do a book together, I said OK. He said that I should do them for that purpose.

To alleviate his concerns on public ventures, I told him, with any future requests I received from documentary production companies and conferences, that I would have them also contact him, which seemed to appease him for the moment. When the offers of conferences came up, I would tell the organizers to include Burroughs because he would be talking about the third night. I was willing to take only half of the honorarium and the rest could go to Burroughs. After all, I am sure my charities would survive that. It would also give Burroughs the exposure and attention he seemed to want so much. The unfortunate part of it was that at the conferences we did, it was like having a supporter standing beside me.

Burroughs would stand up there during my presentation and say, Staff Sergeant Penniston did this, or Staff Sergeant Penniston said that. The reality was that I was more than capable in speaking about my observations and actions on the early morning of December 26, 1980. Burroughs did not even talk about what led to me being dispatched to the East Gate that night. I eventually told Burroughs, "I got this with the contact night. I want you to talk about the third night," adding, "You can't remember anything of importance of the first night anyway, so talk about your experience on the third night." He never answered me when I suggested that. And when it came to it, he would never talk about the third night, even though he had always said he was the only guy who had witnessed both events. Well, that never worked for me, and it was like this with Burroughs at all the conferences we did during this time period.

February 2012

Around February 2012, I introduced Gary to Joe Luciano, who had decoded the 16 pages of binary code. It was Joe who had determined the seven sets of coordinates in the first 13 pages, which had been sent to Gary a full year before, on February 3, 2011. They were first introduced by email, and then they had a Skype session, during which Burroughs and I also took part. In the days following, Joe sent us the full decoded message from all 16 pages that he had deciphered:

Page 1: **EXPLORATION OF HUMANITY 666 8100**

Page 2: **52.0942532N 13.131269W** (Hy Brasil) **CONTIN**

Page 3: **UOUS FOR PLANETARY ADVAN[FS]!**

Page 4: **FOURTH COORDINATE CONTINU OT UQS CEPR BEFOR**

Page 5: **E**

Page 6 – 13: **16.763177N 89.117768W** (Caracol, Belize)

34.800272N 111.843567W (Sedona, Arizona)

29.977836N 31.131649E (Great Pyramid of Giza, Egypt)

14.701505S 75.167043W (Nazca Lines, Peru)

36.256845N 117.100632E (Shandong, Tai Shan Qu, China)

37.110195N 25.372281E (Portara, Temple of Apollo, Naxos, Greece)

Page 14: **EYES OF YOUR EYES**

Page 15: **ORIGIN 52.0942532N 13.131269W** (Hy Brasil)

Page 16: **ORIGIN YEAR 8100**

In return, Gary then sent Joe the additional information that he had initially discovered in the weeks following his receipt of the remaining six

coordinates, which he studied along with the coordinates that pointed to Hy Brasil. From the time they were introduced to each other and on a day-to-day basis, Joe and Gary worked closely together on refining what Gary was able to gather from the coordinates.

April 2012

Burroughs and I decided to pull out of the conference planned for June, and it was a painful decision to make, as we knew there would be consequences, after it had been announced over the last few months that we would be attending. It was explained to us that the tickets sold so far hadn't raised enough funds to pay for our flights and hotel accommodations in the UK. We received a lot of bad press for pulling out, which I knew we would, but it couldn't be helped. We were then told that the conference was still going ahead with or without us.[dclxxiii]

Authentication of the notebook Page

Around May of 2012, the opportunity came for me to eliminate the notebook authentication issue with Burroughs. I was getting many offers to do documentaries at that time, and I always included John as part of the condition of doing them. I received an inquiry from a Los Angeles-based production company who were eager to do a documentary with me. The 30-minute documentary turned out to be Episode 16 of the first season of *Unsealed: Conspiracy Files*, titled "Time Travel." This episode was first aired on May 22, 2013. The production company was Bellum Entertainment, Smart Dog Media. During my first phone call with Ali Dubrow, the show's producer, I gave her my list of requirements to do the proposed documentary. Along with the fees, expenditures and the usual things discussed, I said I wanted to include Burroughs in the documentary, but above all, I included a request for her to have a document expert authenticate a page from the notebook, and more precisely, the date when I wrote the binary code down on the page. She said she would run it all by her boss and get back to me.

The following week, Ali contacted me and told me that my requirements were all reasonable and the production company would comply. They would

get a highly-respected document authenticator from the LA area. I was told his name was Mr. Wood, who was most likely Dr. Robert M. Wood PhD (once a member of MUFON), who had authenticated the MJ12 documents and lived in Newport Beach, California. I was elated that it was so easy to have the costs of the authentication taken care of.

My next call was to Burroughs, and I called him saying that I had accepted to do another documentary from another LA-based production company, and that he was included, adding that they said they would fly him and his son out to Rockford, Illinois. This would be a way for Burroughs to come home and to see his adoption mom in the town of Normal, Illinois, which was two hours south of Rockford. I also told him that the authentication of the notebook page was included.

His reaction was not what I expected. He seemed dumbfounded by the authentication. After some minutes he asked, "With who?" I said the show's producer had told me it would be with a known documentation expert from the LA area. Burroughs then asked if it was a forensic analysis. I said it wasn't in that detail, but I would certainly ask her for that, but said that it would most likely be cost prohibitive for the production company. Burroughs said they have all kinds of money. "Well, that may be true from our perspective, but they have shooting budgets which they have to adhere to," I said. Burroughs seemed very surprised at my work on this and my cooperation. As much as he was head scratching over my agreeing to have the page authenticated, I was head scratching over his negative reaction. The normal reaction would be that he would have been elated that I had taken care of it.

The truth was that I was tired of him being seemingly supportive, but also with his passive/aggressive attitude and doubts about the binary code. I personally was not concerned, given the scope of what I had encountered and investigated that night in December 1980. Of course, I was not letting Burroughs go, either. I kept up hopes that he would remember what had happened and the observations from that night so long ago. After all, if he could remember the incident, all these fringe and inconsequential things would not be important, considering the magnitude of the encounter and the trauma of it. In a way, I envied Burroughs' memory loss with it.

I told Burroughs to bring the last page of the binary that I had entrusted to him for the last seven months. As things sometimes happen, we had another offer to be filmed by another company, and we worked it so that we could do

both film shoots in the same week in July at Rockford, Illinois.

In the first part of July 2012, with a heatwave hitting hard and the temperatures hovering around 102 degrees, I met Burroughs and his son at the Rockford Airport. I then took them over to the hotel-resort where we had dinner. Burroughs' son did not eat with us. Instead, he had a pizza ordered for him, and he stayed in their hotel room playing video games. As we had dinner, Burroughs returned the last page of the code to me.

Later, during the first group production meeting between Burroughs, Ali Dubrow, and me, I gave the binary page to Ali over dinner. I told Burroughs that the last page is the most important because it would indicate to him and the public that all the pages before it are authentic as well. He agreed. Ali added the binary authentication to the contract, and it was entrusted to her.

Burroughs confided in me, and remarked that he was now absolutely sure the code was authentic and written when I said it was. I looked at Burroughs with puzzlement, and said, "We have not had it officially authenticated yet, so why say that now?" He said, "Well Jim, when I suggested it to you and with absolutely no hesitation, you immediately agreed to the authentication with the film company. I knew you had nothing to hide with it, so it had to be written when you say it was, and so without a doubt it can only be authentic."

I said, "I am happy you don't have that bothering you anymore," while at the same time thinking to myself, *well that means Burroughs was giving me lip service on the codes since it was found out in October 2010.* I despise deception and dishonesty. But that was not the end of his dishonesty at dinner that night. He also said that he had told the second production company that he was driving out here to Rockford and they said they would pay him a per-diem to cover mileage, meals, and lodging. Burroughs then said, "So, I would appreciate if you would not say anything to the second production company about it." I said, "Well, I don't approve of it, but you're a grown man, and I guess you've made your decision on that." Of course, I was asked about the other production company when Ali was told by the hotel reception that they had messed up the billeting payment for the rooms. So, at the end of the day, Burroughs was caught out. It never pays to deceive or lie. It was times like this that it was clear to me that Burroughs and I had very little in common – even with this little incident, our own moral compass and integrity were miles apart.

We also had our friend and Rendlesham Incident Website administrator

Darren DeBoy with us on a few days of the shoot. Darren took time off from his job, and I was happy he did. He was in my room shooting some photos of the pages in the notebook for the webpage, and while he was doing that, Burroughs said, “You need to count the pages of binary in the notebook.” I said, “Why would anyone care about that?” He said the skeptics and naysayers care about it. I said, “Well, I simply don’t care.” I added, “You must put this into perspective. We experienced something so profound and life-changing that night at Rendlesham and now we are worried about how many pages of binary I wrote down in my home the next day?” Burroughs had his ‘deer caught in the headlights’ stare again. I emphasized, “I don’t think knowing the number of pages matters one bit.” “Well you have mentioned different binary page numbers in public at various times over the last two years,” Burroughs said. I admitted that, yes, off the top of my head, but said it really wasn’t important in the bigger picture.

Darren spoke up and said, “Just do it Jim. There are the three of us here, and then that will be over with . . . nothing else to be said.” I guess he was right. I just didn’t have the patience for trivial things like that, and my being stubborn and uncooperative at times was my way of making a point on the principle of it. I mean, why would I count the pages? For what reason? In any case, I took Darren’s advice and after counting the one that Ali Dubrow had, which I had given her, I then counted each page as I turned them over in the notebook. “That makes a total of sixteen,” I said. I looked at Burroughs. “Are you happy now?” He said nothing.

The film shoot took five days between the two productions with a weekend off in between them, and this is when Burroughs drove to Normal in a rented car to see his family. When the film shoots ended, we then said our goodbyes. Burroughs and his son took a plane back to Phoenix, and Ali flew back to L.A, with the last binary page, which I had given to her to have authenticated.

It did not take long for Ali to do what she said she would do with the notebook page, because about two weeks after the film shoot and on a three-way call between Ali, Burroughs, and me, we got the news that Mr. Wood had authenticated the document, and that they were just waiting on the report. Burroughs’ reaction was initially silence.

We then received this email from Ali on August 3, 2012, at 5:53 p.m.:

"Hi guys,

Hope all is well with both of you!
A few things... Dating the notebook page – I have gotten the notebook page dated and analyzed and have a report stating the results. The page, he says, appears to be 30 or so years old! More on that next week. Book release date / agreement – Any news on this? This is very important for us (and you, ha-ha)! We have the agreement which allows you to use the document results however you'd like drafted up, so just let me know when you know. Think that's about it for now. Talk soon, and have a great weekend!

Ali Dubrow, Producer,
"Unsealed Smart Dog Media"

Mr. Wood had said the paper and the ink was *circa* 1980, and the fading nature of the ink was consistent with having been written in 1980. It was his assessment that the page was authentic and written in 1980.

Thinking this was all over with the shoot and the authentication, the show's televised date was projected to be along with the then projected book finish within the upcoming spring. So, that was perfect to have a simultaneous full release of the Rendlesham book and all of the codes. Even though the notebook was authenticated by a Document Authentication Expert, due to prohibitive costs, they were unable to have it done at a lab on a molecular level like we wanted. I was happy with the findings from the document expert, but Burroughs was not. He kept whining about it.

Then Burroughs brought up the issue to Ali Dubrow that he wanted Mr. Wood to do a Non-disclosure Agreement with us. Mr. Wood then said he would not do an NDA. This finally generated a letter from our attorney Pat Frascogna, and then a response from Vince Rotonda, the attorney at *Smart Dog Productions*.[dclxxiv] It was short and very clear:

"Subject: Re: Penniston and Burroughs
From: Vince Rotonda
Date: Mon, August 20, 2012 5:02 pm…

Pat, this is a most unfortunate turn of events. I do want to point out that we did have the document authenticated though not by the vendor your clients had recommended. That person refused to participate and many other authenticators refused to sign an NDA. [Non-Disclosure Agreement] (Which Jim and John insisted on?) Vince."

Well, as things turned out, we did not get the written report from the now, highly-agitated Mr. Wood.[dclxxv] Burroughs then wanted the page to be run at a forensic lab in LA . . . the same one that did the OJ Simpson trial work. But it was cost prohibitive for the production company to do this. The cost was 8 to 12 thousand dollars, and they could not guarantee the safety of the notebook page during forensic testing – not to mention the chain of custody with the page from me to them. Burroughs went through all the gambits of the testing and kept moving the goal posts of what I had contracted with the production company. Their patience wore thin quite fast, as the brief email sent by Vince Rotunda showed. It was like Burroughs did not want the authentication out at all, and then there was his control over it and the binary. My thoughts were that it was always about money with him, so this could have been the underlying motivation, and as Halt had always said, Burroughs tends to take a bad situation and make it worse, or lights a fuse under everything . . . which is the excuse Halt gave to me when I confronted him on why it seemed he had always tried to keep us apart. "He will only mess things up for you, Jim."

Unfortunately, in the following month it was announced to us that the documentary would be televised in September/October of the next year instead. Not like we had planned at all.

We had made plans for us all to come out to Arizona in November of 2012 and do two MUFON conferences, and of course a Sedona hike, which would take us into the area of the binary code location in Sedona, Arizona. It was all part of the trip for when we returned to speak at the Phoenix MUFON meeting held at Arizona State University in a small auditorium.

Well, November came fast, and we found ourselves back in the Desert Southwest. We met in Darren DeBoy's hotel room and finished the PowerPoint for the lectures. At the Sedona MUFON conference, I let Burroughs take the lead on the PowerPoint. It soon turned into some kind of Sedona 'hippie' thing. Burroughs expected the public to be able to read his mind on what he wanted to say. Needless to say, that didn't work as planned.[dclxxvi] The one thing that was important was the transcript and CGI work that Darren DeBoy had done, which was included. It was a great piece of work, which actually triggered some recall of the incident. The CGI work that Darren and his friend Phil Longmeier had completed was also a PTSD trigger. I got choked up with it at the MUFON meeting when it was played, so much so that I had to ask Burroughs to take over. He didn't and just stood

there while I was unable to talk, just like he had been during the incident, immobile. He was always no help to me when I needed him. After composure, I again started talking about my account, with Burroughs standing on the side with an occasional, yes, that is what Sergeant Penniston remembers . . . Sergeant Penniston, this and that . . . again, nothing about the third night, which always made me wonder if Burroughs remembered anything about his limited involvement with that night. I was sure that I would discover this while we were in Arizona.

We had several people who attended the MUFON meeting in Phoenix, people who have followed the Rendlesham Forest Incident for a considerable time. Some came from the local area, like Tucson, and some from Georgia, and Washington D.C. One of these was Patricia Bullock Williams, who was with Burroughs' and my attorney. Then there was Cathy "Cat" Jones from Washington D.C., who is sadly no longer with us. The other was, again, Darren DeBoy, who lived within 90 miles of me back in Illinois. He was also the developer and web page owner for the Rendlesham Forest Official web page, which became the archive depository for all the Rendlesham written and audio-visual information. Darren had compiled tons of data and actual factual documents and testimony, as well. These people would also go to the Sedona MUFON meeting and along on the hike to the location found in the binary message in Sedona, Arizona.

Darren, with Phil Longmeier, was instrumental in creating a model replica of the craft of unknown origin, which became a four-month project. Darren actually brought it along with him, where it was used at the Sedona MUFON meeting. From the first time I had seen the end product of this craft replication, it creeped me out to no end, and still does today whenever I see it.

Fig. 38: A photo of the model replica of the *unidentified craft of unknown origin* encountered by Jim Penniston on the morning of December 26, 1980, by Darren DeBoy and Phil Longmeier.

I truly appreciated all the work Phil and Darren had invested, and especially

Darren's Dad, who had also contributed to the building of this model craft. All their combined efforts helped make this project come to fruition.

After the Phoenix MUFON meeting, we all went to Sedona, and more precisely, we went to the village of Oak Creek, just a few miles from Sedona. We stayed with Burroughs, who was rooming in his ex-wife's home. There, he had a bedroom, along with his son and ex-wife. His ex-wife had made sure she was gone visiting her relatives in Oklahoma while we were there. Darren and I shared a bedroom that was his son's. The room was equipped with double beds and huge amounts of gaming that his son used. The women who had followed the Rendlesham Forest event, and those who went to the Phoenix MUFON conference, had also gone to Sedona to hear us at the Sedona MUFON conference, and more importantly, they came with us on the 'Sedona Research hike' to the area of the Rendlesham code coordinates site. Cat Jones and Patricia Bullock Williams both got local hotel rooms during the stay, or stayed with another friend of theirs, Monica Parsley. We also had Joe Luciano and his wife come down from Colorado. Joe was the guy who had first deciphered the code pages into the full message. We all had made plans, along with Roger Daniels, who was the local MUFON director and also a friend of Burroughs, and Roger had expressed an interest to go out to the coordinates location site.

Joe Luciano, Roger Daniels, Darren DeBoy and I had a round-table discussion of the research hike we were going to do at Burroughs' kitchen table. Burroughs seemed to have little interest in it. We mapped out the hike to the area I wanted to go to, the one where I had felt the strong reaction towards months earlier.

Later that afternoon, we had a barbeque, which turned into an odd night indeed. Burroughs told Darren and me how he had planted a root in the sand in his backyard with the purpose of seeing a blue Kachina – which was a Native Hopi ritual. Darren and I just looked at each other. Burroughs talked about the Hopi folklore as it was absolute proof of 'visitors.' On another night, when we went to a dark area outside Sedona, Burroughs said he could draw the points of lights (presumably from aircraft) towards him. He did the same thing at his ex-wife's home that night, too, telling us he could bring in points of lights from the Northeast. It was a strange night with Burroughs indeed around the fire pit. Later, Darren and I talked about his strangeness with the root he had buried in the backyard and his wish to call points of light from the sky. Burroughs seemed very whacked over these things.

That next morning, Pat Bullock Williams, Cathy Jones, Joe Luciano, Roger Daniels, Monica Parsley, Darren DeBoy and myself went to the coordinates site. Burroughs stayed behind at the car park, where we had left our transportation. He said he didn't feel well and wanted to sleep while we went out that day.

The hike was beautiful and very scenic. Photos were taken to record the trip, especially when we reached an area of interest. Even though Burroughs, Larry Lowe, and I had been out on an earlier visit to the coordinates site at Sedona, as deciphered in the notebook nine months before, and were now within 75 to 150 yards of the precise area of the coordinates, I was drawn by an immense pull to an area about three hundred yards away from that site, which was located in the National Forest area. Pat Williams and I, along with Darren DeBoy, seemed very connected. I then said we should go to the area I had originally discovered months earlier. Interestingly enough, Pat and Darren separated from me. After ten minutes, and while still in view, they stopped. I then walked to where I felt I should be and realized it was the area of influence that I seemed pulled to. Standing there on the red soil, I looked at Darren and Pat, who then joined me. We formed a perfect triangle around this spot. I was beginning to experience the same effect I had at Capel Green in Rendlesham, which I experienced during the return visit there at the end of December 2010. It was like having second sight, and it was immensely moving. As I regained my composure, I asked Darren what he felt while walking up to this location. He said the feeling of being drawn was dwindling where he and Pat were, and it was apparent that he needed to come to where I was standing. I had asked Pat the same thing. She said she was drawn to the same spot where we stood. She said she was emotionally disturbed by it.

When the others came over, they felt nothing. Roger said he had to go back and pick up his grandchild and was going to head back. Along with him went Pat, Monica, Roger, and Cat. Darren and I checked out other areas in a dry creek bed, with both of us having the same sensation of an underground energy. We found cut stone and other things that were very out of place in the middle of nowhere. As daylight was only going to last a couple of hours at best, we headed back and caught up immediately with Cat. The others were far gone and not in sight anywhere. We helped Cat back, who was having difficulty with the walk. Darren and I took turns walking with her, while the other took the lead, making sure we were on the hiking trail back to the cars.

We were met in about forty-five minutes by Burroughs and the others,

who picked us up and took us back to the car parking area. I knew Burroughs hadn't been feeling well, but he seemed to have picked up since he had some sleep, and so I asked him, "Do you feel anything?" "Like what?" was his response. "Like anything?" I asked. "Nope!" he said and mentioned that we ought to be getting back to Phoenix. It was the same reaction he had exhibited in 2010, when returning to the landing site in the Rendlesham Forest. His reaction was nothing. I kept my thoughts and feelings to myself at the time. I was convinced at this point of the clear possibility that the areas like this one to which the coordinates from the code pointed were where there was a naturally-occurring phenomenon . . . possible open portals of very little resistance, or areas where a possible dimensional crossover took place, which I understood Gary Osborn had referred to as "Neutral Points" . . . also, a location and means for one to see and understand with clarity. I found it all fascinating. This was the reason why I felt I had to visit the area, seeing as it was in the States.

Each went their own way. Darren and I went back to Burroughs' house. We later all met for dinner and discussed the day's events. However, it was only Darren, Pat, and me who talked separately about it, as what happened to us while we were there was bizarre.

The following day, Burroughs and I had arranged to meet with General Gordon Williams, something I had set up a couple days before with General Williams by phone. We were to meet at a restaurant in Tucson, where the General lived. The drive to Tucson was about three hours or so from Oak Creek. Burroughs and I went alone, and he drove us there. Burroughs wanted to confront the General with two pages from the Condign Report – a low-level declassified document. Apparently, these were the only pages that Burroughs thought interesting out of the 460-page document, which I had never seen, because it was agreed on months earlier to have Burroughs verify all of the report, which I trusted he had. At this point, I had no reason to doubt him. Unfortunately, I was being misled, and this would come to light within the next few months or so. We arrived at the restaurant and met with General Williams. It was wonderful meeting with him again, as the last time I had actually talked with him face-to-face was in his Wing Commander's office, briefing him on the events of the first night. Burroughs had taken water pills, and this made him have to break every five to ten minutes or so and leave the General and me while he went to the restroom.

Burroughs was aggressive with the General for some reason, almost like he was with Col. Halt at times. I was befuddled by it. Burroughs said we had documents proving the Bentwaters phenomenon had been studied. The General said, “Don’t tell me you have stamped documents on this.” By that he meant ‘classified stamped.’ Burroughs said, no, they had been declassified. The General seemed very guarded and somewhat uneasy as he sat across from us. We showed the two documents on the laptop we had brought with us. He started reading the pertinent sentences line-by-line. Burroughs then interjected, saying he had to use the restroom and was off in hurry.

As soon as Burroughs left, the General’s demeanor changed to being relaxed and open with me – the way he had been when we were at Bentwaters. He said, “I thought you had something else. I have no idea about these things, Jim. It’s the first time I have ever seen anything like this.” I believed him; he seemed perplexed by what he read. Burroughs then returned, and the General’s demeanor changed back to being guarded and formal.

Burroughs then said to the General, “I have some questions for you,” and said this in an almost interrogating manner, like when we were interviewing someone who had committed a crime or something. The General maintained his composure and said to Burroughs, “You get five questions.” Burroughs then began spouting out the first question, and the General having answered it, ended with, “You now have four questions left.” Burroughs asked another, and the General answered it and ended with, “You now have three questions left,” and so on. At this point, Burroughs said, “Excuse me,” and was off to the restroom again. And again, the general’s demeanor changed back to being relaxed and unguarded.

The general then said, and I am paraphrasing here: “I know you were not treated fairly, Jim, and Persinger, (an AFOSI agent at RAF Bentwaters), was a tough guy, and he said he kept me informed routinely on the status of the investigation by his office and let me know what the other investigators were doing, even though he was not in any informational loop with them, since they were external.”

The General then told me to call him or email him any time, and he would be glad to talk to me one-on-one. He was really put off with Burroughs’ lack of respect or civility with him. Burroughs came back and he asked his remaining questions. The general answered them briefly, and all three of us

finished our meals. General Williams then picked up the bill, and we walked to the parking lot and said our goodbyes in the Tucson heat.

On our way back, Burroughs kept going on and on about how he had put the General on the spot, telling me he thought the General was lying. I remained silent, but I knew better . . . the simple reason being that the General just could not put up with Burroughs' mentality and disrespectful attitude.

After getting back and dining out that evening, we spent another day there, and the next day we got up early for the ride to the airport. We were lucky, as Pat Bullock Williams had a rental car, and she offered to take us to our flights. She was leaving for Tucson to see a friend, and so she dropped us off at each airport. Darren was going to Phoenix Sky Harbor airport for his flight, and I was going to Phoenix-Mesa Gateway airport.

Paranormal Witness, January 2013

As 2012 came to an end and 2013 quickly arrived, the year had already started a little unsteadily. Burroughs and I were now without a lead author. But as we looked for one and remembering the conversation Nick and I had had back in 2007 at the National Press Club together, I suggested to Burroughs we ask Nick Pope to write a chapter, although I didn't mention that we had already discussed writing a book together. I thought Nick could easily get on board with a book venture, considering his past ties with the Ministry of Defence in the UK. I told Burroughs that we should have Nick do a chapter or the foreword or something.

I flew back. I was then scheduled to go to Phoenix, Arizona, to do a film shoot with a London-based company; they were doing a show called *Paranormal Witness.* (The episode was later aired on November 27, 2013.) The shoot was going to take five days, which included travel. I did the shoot with Burroughs, and as the company had requested, they wanted to shoot the notebook glyphs, and other pages within it. They said they would pay me a usage fee for the photographs of the notebook. I think it was eight hundred dollars, which I planned on giving to my 'Wounded Warrior' charity, in particular for a 'track chair' donation towards the cost of one. Adrian Bustinza and Monroe Nevels were also supposed to appear in this documentary. Monroe was going to LA for the shoot, and Bustinza was

supposed to come to Phoenix, but at the last minute Bustinza cancelled, saying the reason was due to family issues. I suspected it was also cold feet.

We finished up the shoot, which was non-eventful really, and at the end, the producer said, “We have cash for the photos we took of the notebook” – even though they never used it in the final documentary. One of the crew then counted out eight hundred dollars in my hand, and as that was being done, I noticed Burroughs had his attention on what was going on. He was actually transfixed in watching me receive that payment. Afterwards, he then drove me back to the hotel where he dropped me off. I had to laugh; it is always about money with Burroughs, or maybe I was just imagining his interest in it. I would find out later that it had made a major impact on him in the coming months, with him accusing me of capitalizing on the notebook, even though the money went to a good cause.

We started to receive strange contacts and bizarre messages on Facebook, as well as ‘chance’ meetings with people that just simply made no sense. I had voiced my concerns with Colonel Halt about it. I also told him about the paranoid behavior I had observed with Burroughs. At this time, Burroughs was becoming more and more hostile in our communications and emails with Halt, but Halt took them quite well. Halt and I talked about the road Burroughs was pursuing, and Halt said, “Well, I will give him a warning on the course he is taking in an email.” Halt then sent an email to both Burroughs and to me, telling us we were now venturing down a slippery and dangerous path. Halt was trying to convey that we might attract the interest of the spooks, if it looks like we know something or are getting close to releasing what we knew publicly. The email seemed to make Burroughs think that Halt was worried about what he thought he knew. Nothing was further from the truth.

Nick Pope agreed to do a book with us, and for a number of months, Burroughs and I had been working patiently with our new lead author on what we hoped would be the *definitive* book on the Rendlesham Incident. Nick was already producing good results at this point, and I was personally optimistic that Nick would exceed the efforts of the previous authors I had become involved with through the years up to this point. We now had a firm and accepted offer from a major New York-London, publishing house, and Nick and I were busy writing feverishly every day to make this book a 'go to' book about Rendlesham.

The writing of the book with Nick was a badly needed step for me. While writing the book, I wanted ALL the information to finally go out to the public, and that also meant the recent findings of the binary code by Gary Osborn and Joe Luciano, and I was more than willing to let the chips fall and lay where they may. I believed it was also an excellent opportunity to 'separate the wheat from the chaff' with all the disinformation and just plain lies about what had happened during the Rendlesham Forest Incident. And because the Rendlesham Incident had happened in the UK, I thought it only right to bring it to the attention of the American public. I thought this could bridge many things with Rendlesham, and so I was pleased with Nick being the lead author.

I wrote my contributions for the new book using both my conscious memory and my journals from my time at RAF Bentwaters, 1980 – 1984. Some things I delegated to others to ensure were correct. One of these was the Condign Report, which I relied on Burroughs to research and to read fully – which he said he had.

According to Burroughs, the only two pages that had any possibilities of being related to the incident, and which we had showed General Gordon Williams in Tucson the previous year, could also explain what had happened at Bentwaters. Burroughs had been jumping all over it since he had read it. As odd as this was, I did not see it as 'the smoking gun' at all. I thought it as more of an afterthought in the document, as if it was being offered up to the reader to try and connect the dots and perhaps draw any conclusion that might exist, which would go some way in explaining what was being presented in the report. Of course, not knowing what was in the rest of the report, I relied on Burroughs to have done his homework with it.

Another page was a paragraph relating to the Wing Commanders, who had been briefed on the phenomenon, to be aware of it, and what was described in

the Condign Report. The amount of data was obscure, considering the report had 460 pages in it . . . and these were the two pages of which Burroughs and Pope had decided to make me aware. It led me to conclude that there could not be much else in the report. However, it was a very low-level document, which used to be secret, according to Pope, who seemed to be worried about the Official Secrets Act with it. I could never understand this, because if it was declassified, then surely nothing in it could be of concern to the Official Secrets Act. I was always suspicious of the Condign Report, mainly because it had been produced decades after Rendlesham, and actually thought it was an attempt to cover the mishandling of Rendlesham by the MOD and the RAF – something I will go into with more detail in the following chapter. After all, the UK had their airspace violated at least three times, as verified by multiple radar contacts during those December nights in 1980, and they did absolutely nothing in response, while most of the citizens of the UK were sound asleep. It was apparent the MOD and RAF had been sleeping, as well, so, it was my concern that the Condign Report was a last-ditch attempt by the MOD to patch things up through damage control when and where they could. However, I trusted Burroughs and Pope with the full vetting of this document – although I would later have my regrets about having trusted them, when it became obvious to me that Condign was a 'red herring' document.

Burroughs was also sending us cut, copy, and pastes of conversations and other people's works and use them as his own writing without crediting them. Obviously, Nick would have none of it, as it was blatant plagiarism. Burroughs was naïve and had no idea about writing a book, and I doubt if he had ever read a book before we began. I told Burroughs he had to write his own contributions, and Nick would put it together in the final manuscript. The book was now finished with the first draft, although it consisted mostly of what Nick and I had written.

"Citizens' Hearing on Disclosure" at the National Press Club

April 29 – May 3, 2013

We arrived in Washington DC, quickly checked into our hotel rooms, and were looking forward to the events. Besides our new attorney, Pat Frascogna, we would also have support by Nick Pope, who was also in attendance. I reluctantly did this event, because I knew the organizers and most of the

attendees were UFO opportunists and entertainers – the usual 'lecture circuit' speakers and self-proclaimed researchers who do between five and twenty conferences a year. But Burroughs had literally begged me to do this hearing, and, besides, it would also be helpful for Burroughs finally receiving some attention with the Senate's oversight Committee on Armed Services for military defense, or at least it seemed hopeful, since the Citizens' Hearing included a former Congressman and a U.S. Senator. We thought it might be a way into the actual Senate, with the possibility of having records released and files opened. The file I wanted was the one that contained my original witness statement at the AFOSI building, which the agents had taken from me. It had been almost thirty-three years since, and even if it was classified Top-Secret, then it would have been up for review in 2010, and there was a possibility that it had been downgraded to "Secret" or even declassified. Based on my extensive past work with classified documents, I was actually leaning towards the impact of the tell-all statement, although the reviewing agency would most likely extend the Top-Secret clearance for another thirty years. But who knew? There was a chance, no matter how small.

The speakers' dinner, where all of us first met, soon turned into a debacle. It was 'assigned seating' at dinner, and I was at a table of seven. Among the others seated was Dr. Steven Greer. This guy truly was in love with himself. I imagined his whole home having mirrors from floor to ceiling, just so he could look at himself. He was in a conversation, mainly with himself, and the rest of the table acted like they were interested. But actually, his 'love me' conversation was way too much for me to handle. After a few words and keeping direct eye contact with Greer, I excused myself from the table and said I was choosy about whom I dined with. I then asked those at the table next to us if I could join them, and they gladly made room. I thanked them for their kindness. Later that night, two of the people who had been captured at Greer's table said, "We wanted to do the same thing when we heard what you said," but they had not wanted to upset Steve, who had made the seating arrangements.

It was our first night at the hotel, and I was having a drink with Nick Pope, Burroughs, and another. In the middle of our conversation, Gary Heseltine came over to our table and interrupted us. It was the first time I had met him, and he was being aggressive and pushy. Heseltine said he wanted to be on the panel tomorrow, along with Pat Frascogna, Nick Pope, John Burroughs, and me. He kept pushing the issue, and it got to the point where I lost patience,

and I said, “Well, you’re not going to be on it, and that’s it.” Heseltine became angered at this, and at one point even pounded his fist on the table, saying he had every right to be on it. I said, “You have no right. This is not about us talking about the Rendlesham Forest Incident. It’s to help John plead his case with what he believes is an injustice, and I am going to be there to do my part in his support.” Heseltine then appeared to calm down, but soon left with little or no words.

What an arrogant ass! I thought . . . *Another Rendlesham opportunist and entertainer.*

I later discovered that they had formed another panel made up of these opportunists and entertainers. I was thinking that this was a complete waste of time, and in my opinion, a complete sham. The night did not end as soon as I would have liked, as Burroughs, Frascogna, Pope, and I all went into the bar and had more beers. Then saying our good-nights, we parted to get a decent night’s sleep before the event at the National Press Club the next day.

I had prepared an opening statement for the hearing, as the organizers had requested. But Burroughs said he did not want to write one, and so it was agreed upon for our attorney, Pat Frascogna, to read one a few days before, so I gave him my detailed opening. Then on the morning, while having coffee at the hotel, I met with Pat Frascogna, Burroughs, and a Lieutenant Commander in the Coast Guard, who was also a friend of Pat Frascogna’s. It was announced that each of us would give an opening statement. News to me indeed. I then asked what had happened to Pat giving our combined one? No response from anyone. I actually didn’t care; after all, why would we need a statement to read? I think it was just as easy to tell the panel why I was there and my purpose. So when the panel met, I listened to Pope, Burroughs, and Frascogna give their opening statements. I was last to speak, and when it came time for me to give an opening statement, I said, “Well they said it all, and I really can’t add to it.” I figured I could give them a brief overlay of the incident during the discussion about it from the former Senator and congressional members, which I did, and also did my best to support Burroughs.

It was really a circus of UFO opportunists and entertainers, and I felt like a fish out of water. What I always found consistent at any event that I might have attended over the last twenty years was this: Aside from Linda Moulton Howe, not one of these self-proclaimed, UFO phenomenon researchers had

ever asked me one question about Rendlesham. I always found this fascinating. Why would they not? To give a few examples, Richard Dolan and Peter Robbins have never approached me and asked me anything. In fact, the usual circuit speakers whom I have met and talked to, have not asked one question, either, in all the times I met them in the past in regard to Rendlesham or my involvement. What kind of researcher would not ask questions of the senior response person from the first contact night with Rendlesham? I found Peter Robbins was running around trying to capture a few morsels at this event. It was obvious he so badly wanted to be on one of the panels at the Citizens' Hearing. He found one eventually. Robbins never talked to me there, either. He appeared like a scared rabbit, avoiding Burroughs and me the whole time.

It seems that all this posturing by these people has nothing to do with discovery or even self-discovery. My fortitude and focus on what was going to come later would be as much as the challenge of handling Annie Wilkes three years before. My mettle would surely be tested in the coming months.

I was a witness of a phenomenon that did not fit in at all with Ufology. For me, personally, Rendlesham never had anything to do with UFOs in the 'ET visitors' sense . . . it never did. But it was distressing how the followers of this event and people in UFOlogy tried to tie it with aliens and ETs. Rendlesham had always been about something much bigger than the drums that were beaten at UFO conferences and by the UFO lecture circuit speakers. So-called 'Rendlesham experts,' and armchair researchers, who watched documentaries and information by hoaxers, never talked to me once about the incident. I was sure the book with Nick Pope would set it all straight for the public. I also found the writing of that book in some way therapeutic, and of course was deserving of public consumption. In the writing of that book, 'the road less travelled' was brought more directly into my life, where I would turn down many things that were offered to me that were only self-serving, and, at best, dishonorable and dishonest.

In any case, somewhere and somehow things changed from finding out what we could about the phenomenon to helping Burroughs and me with the Veterans Administration.

I openly expressed to Frascogna and Burroughs at the Citizen's Hearing that I had no problem with the VA since receiving the two letters, one from Colonel Halt and the other from Major General Williams to General Welsh,

saying we had been stationed there at the time, and that we had been dispatched into a situation which could have had possible effects on us. I simply told them that I had the VA letters from the two generals as they had copied them, and that I had not had any problem with the treatment since June of 2013.

The truth is, *Burroughs didn't either*, so I found out. During the hearing I was led to believe by Burroughs and Frascogna that Burroughs was NOT having VA treatment. However, I discovered that he was also receiving care from the VA – even more extensively than I was! I later discovered that he had several costly procedures done by the VA, like having a pacemaker fitted because of his heart problem. But still, Burroughs contended that he was not receiving what he deserved. I differed with both he and Frascogna about this issue which came up after I had also discovered that the whole drive of Burroughs was to corner Colonel Halt and to have a real Senate sub-committee review the Rendlesham case. The latter was the real reason why I was persuaded to go to the event, but again, during the course of talking with both of them, they had now fully disclosed a plan to sue the government for what had happened out there that night.

Burroughs wanted to tie the Rendlesham Forest Incident to a VA claim. *But why try to get capital when we were both now receiving stellar VA care?* It made no sense to me at all. I was seeing a picture develop that seemed that this was more about getting money or a disability rating from the Veterans Administration.

I also had experienced heart problems in the past, and had also suffered other health issues, and I knew the health issues were related to the incident. As I looked back, the two letters, especially the one from one General to the other, saying Burroughs and I had been stationed at Bentwaters when we had both been involved with something out of the ordinary and that there could be a remote possibility that our health problems were tied to the event, was unprecedented.[dclxxvii] But the VA had taken care of that for me, and I had no wish to sue the government over it to try and get a large settlement of money. *How deceptive.* Well, not to worry, I thought, as the VA would never allow that with their stringent requirements. At least that was my take on it. Anyway, this was something I kept to myself, and which I thought was self-serving and narcissistic, as it was also an attention getter.

It was obvious that Burroughs had a heart problem, and more-so over the last three years since we had gone to the UK, so I talked with him about it, as

I wasn't convinced his heart problem was linked to the incident.

When I finally asked Burroughs why he thought the incident was to blame for his heart problem, he said his view was based on what he had read in the conclusive documentation given in the *Condign Report.* I asked, "What conclusive documentation?" He said, "The two pages." I responded by asking if it was the *one sentence* in the report that said it could be postulated that this UAP phenomenon could have happened at Bentwaters? Again, the 'deer in the headlights stare' was his response, which meant he wouldn't answer and was instead going to walk away or change the subject.

But before he could, I quickly said, "Didn't you tell me that you were adopted at birth, and you have no idea who your birth parents are?" Burroughs responded, "Yes, well what of it?" "Well," I said, "my advice for you is to contact the county courthouse in the county where you were adopted and file a disclosure form on gaining medical information from them on your birth parents' medical history." I told him that in Illinois they could do that for a minimal charge, and that way he could find out if his health problems were in his family medical history, adding that this could be the cause of his recent affliction. And then I said, "Besides, it would be valuable to know, especially with your son, as well."

Well, just as I expected, I again got the 'deer in headlights stare' look from Burroughs, which is his reaction when he doesn't know something, or does not want to know or answer, and in this case, he never commented and went on to another subject of discussion.

It bothered me that Burroughs never appeared to have suffered with any trauma, PTSD, or sleep disorder after the incident like I had, but then again, and to this day, he cannot remember what had happened.[dclxxviii] As far as I could see, he was made immobile and put asleep, as if he had been anaesthetized all through the time I was examined the craft we had encountered, took notes and received a message, and right on up until the craft began to move away and disappear. It's as if at that point the craft had released its hold on him. Since then he could only rely on what he had said and what came out during his hypnosis sessions, which are not credible and hide things he would not like his audience to know. However, researchers have since blown out of all proportion what he thinks he remembers, convinced Burroughs had experienced more than he did, and that his consciousness had been lifted astrally out of body and taken inside the craft where that he saw "beings" of blue light, a large spinning or rotating black

hole into which his mind was being drawn and which turned into an eye and also a face, which blocked him from going any further and which he later said he recognized and now knows who it belongs to.[dclxxix]

In my view, Burroughs has encouraged people to believe these alleged memories of what he thinks happened, and it has earned him some attention with the Rendlesham audience through TV documentaries, which have portrayed his fantasy in wonderful CGI (computer generated imagery).

Pat Frascogna flew out the next day for Jackson, Mississippi, while both Burroughs and I parted company and also flew out of Washington DC.

"**. . . venturing down a slippery and dangerous path**"

In June, hardly one month after the Citizens' Hearing, Pat Frascogna was contacted by someone who sent his CV to him, and said he was interested with the phenomenon and Rendlesham. He asked to be put in contact with both Burroughs and me.

Then in July, I received a call by Frascogna, telling me he had been contacted by this man, who was claiming to be Dr. Kit Green. I knew that Green was an interesting person but whom I believed also had a dubious past. In a nutshell, he was once a CIA analyst in the early seventies, who worked with the CIA on special projects along with a group of individuals who worked out of Stanford Research Institute for the CIA – two of these being physicists, Hal Puthoff and Russell Targ. Green was involved in remote viewing, and the group of people with whom he became involved later became known as *the Aviary* – a name coined by a UFO researcher Bill Moore, apparently.[dclxxx]

Remembering what Col. Halt had warned us of in his email to both Burroughs and me, when he told us we were "venturing down a slippery and dangerous path," I told Pat I wanted nothing to do with this, for he was a either a spook or a former one, and really there is no such thing as a 'former spook,' as they never retire. To my surprise, Burroughs jumped on it, and said he was the real deal . . . *WTF did that mean?* I thought. Burroughs was now like a kid running blind-folded with scissors, chasing possibilities no matter how remote and dangerous their relevance was. In fact, both Burroughs and Frascogna seemed impressed with his credentials . . .

however, I wasn't, and I refused to have any dialogue with Green.

Kit Green then communicated to Pat Frascogna and Burroughs by email, and that seemed like it was all very OK with them. I allowed them their interactions, as I observed from afar by being copied in on or was forwarded the email discussions that were going on between them. It took the year to a new level in the meaning of the phrase… *Taking the Road Less Travelled.* I was certainly continuing to do this.

It was then announced to me that Burroughs and Frascogna had agreed to meet with Kit Green and one of his cohorts from Las Vegas.[dclxxxi] Apparently, they were both medical doctors, and the other one was an M.D., according to Frascogna. The plan was hatched that they would meet up together in Arizona. This plan apparently was for a serious conversation to start on the possibilities of the Rendlesham Incident being a contributing factor of Burroughs' recent medical afflictions, especially his heart problem, which he did have, of course, but which I found to be a fool's errand to be blaming it on the event, considering he had never contacted the county courthouse about his birth parents to find if his problem was hereditary-related, as I had advised. Besides, as I said, the VA was giving us sterling care.

Within a few days I talked to Chuck Halt about this and what Burroughs had done. He was concerned with him getting involved with these spooks. Chuck said, "No good can come of it." He recommended that Burroughs contact the VA mental health and seek treatment. I concurred with Chuck; it was sad but true. Both Halt and I knew what Burroughs was like, and I had supported him publicly for quite a while; however, we also knew that choices had to be made.

In any case, Frascogna and Burroughs then set up the meeting with Kit Green in Arizona.

I knew I was going to be next for Green, and that's exactly what happened. I was asked to meet him and was told that all I would have to do is agree to meet and to talk to him. The flags which had started out yellow that year were now turning red.

I gave the meeting with Kit Green a lot of thought, as I had now been asked a few times about this. I thought that if I did agree, I wouldn't be meeting him alone. So, after a lengthy time of reasoning this out, I talked to Pat Frascogna and said that I would agree to meet Green . . . but it had to be on my terms. The terms were that he (Pat Frascogna) would also be present. I also told him that the meeting would have to be in Rockford, Illinois. I

thought that this would not materialize, but within 24 hours, Green agreed to a two-day meeting in Rockford, Illinois in August 2013. Green would fly Pat Frascogna from Jackson, Mississippi to Chicago; Frascogna and Green would meet at the airport, and then rent a car and drive to the Clock Tower Resort in Rockford Illinois. I would then drive to meet them from my home, which was thirty minutes away from the Clock Tower. Upon hearing my acceptance to his proposition, Kit Green reserved rooms for all of us in Rockford, including a conference room.

Chapter Eighteen

The Rockford Colloquium and The Road Not Taken

All the arrangements had been made by my attorney Pat Frascogna and Christopher ("Kit") Green. The meeting was set up, and it was going to be a full, two-day meeting. On that day, I took the thirty-minute drive to the Clock Tower Hotel and Resort in Rockford and then checked into my room, which had already been reserved. Almost immediately, I received a phone call from Pat Frascogna. He said that he had met up with Kit Green, that they had acquired a rental car and were now on the 45-minute drive from O'Hare Airport to the hotel. I said I would meet them down in the hotel's reception area.

I was having a cup of coffee in the reception area when Pat Frascogna walked in alone. We exchanged some small talk, and then I asked where Kit Green was. Pat said that Green was on his cell phone outside and would be in soon. After several minutes, Kit Green walked in and checked into the hotel. When he had finished, Pat and I then walked over so I could introduce myself. Green and I shook hands, and after a few pleasantries, we all decided to meet in the hotel reception later, and from there go to the 'bar and grill' to talk.

I then met Pat Frascogna and Kit Green at the reception bar at the time we had agreed. The conversation was somewhat open with Green. He told me that in the late sixties and early seventies he had been an analyst for the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) through the Stanford Research Institute (SRI). He said he had also been recruited into the Remote Viewing program in Virginia – a project which, although had produced results, proved a failure as it could not be controlled effectively, and so the government felt it right to pull its funding on the project.

Green emphasized that he was actually a doctor and that was where his career was focused. He then added that he first heard of the Rendlesham

Incident and was also aware of our personal plight (Burroughs and me) during the Citizens' Hearing that was conducted at the National Press Club in Washington DC some months earlier, and that he had decided to help us with his services as a doctor and also use his associations to get us VA disability and treatment. His approach was, he said, that he wanted to help me obtain Veterans Administration (VA) help and assistance. This was interesting since both Burroughs and I were already receiving stellar care from the VA with the help of our letters from both General Williams and Colonel Halt. (See Note 677).

Kit Green then shifted the conversation to a more personal level by saying he was there solely to help me . . . *but, also in the same breath came an indication that there was a more grandiose reason.* I allowed Green to continue on about how he was there to help me. After all, this was his pitch, which Burroughs had already bought, hook, line, and sinker apparently, and I was not going to do that without knowing what it was I was being dragged into. After hearing about Burroughs' meeting with Green, it was already apparent what Green was doing, and I was not going to fall for it one bit.

To conclude with what he had already told me, I asked, "So the purpose of you being here is that you are here to help me?" Green stuttered and said, "Yes," adding that it also would help his own research with this phenomenon, especially where others who have had similar experiences are concerned. I then asked who the others were who were being researched, and also asked if he was working for any of the three sub-contractors who routinely do USAP (Unacknowledged Special Access Program) work. I then named the three major government contactors – the largest being Science Applications International Corporation (SAIC) – along with Bigelow Aerospace being the last.

Hesitantly, Green said that he had never heard of the first two, but not in the least very convincingly. However, Green then went on to say that he is working with a group who are exploring cases that needed to be looked at. I then asked, "Are you doing sub-contracting work for the government, then?" Green said, "Yes," and added that he was currently doing work for Bigelow Aerospace with a group of eight other scientists and medical professionals.

So, now his reason on being there to see me was beginning to take on a much different purpose than he had given earlier in the year, and this had become even clearer since we had begun talking.

Green then said that he was researching a project about propulsion with

these cases. I stopped Green mid-sentence, “Oh come on” I said, “It’s not about propulsion.” Green responded with, “I guess propulsion is the wrong word. I was only using that word, so you could understand what I am talking about.”

“Well, just humor me,” I said, “. . . and use the real words. If I don’t understand, I will ask.”

Green continued, “OK, so the real meaning from my point of view is that this is not only about the Rendlesham Incident itself but also aspects of the phenomenon we have seen in other witnesses. And rather than propulsion, we want to understand exactly how the technology enables dimensional travel. So, in a sense, it is propulsion, Jim.”

Green then said that Burroughs, and especially me, had been the closest of any of his subjects to one of these crafts related to the phenomenon.

“How many have you researched?” I asked.

“A group of around fifty people,” Green said, adding, “What we are looking for is this signature it leaves within our DNA and in parts of our brain.” My thoughts were . . . *Right, so that you could then use the signature to follow it back to the source of the phenomenon.* I didn’t tell Green what I was thinking.

“How many are still alive of those subjects?” I asked.

Green quickly responded by saying, “Two.” I was surprised. “Two?” I exclaimed.

“Yes, two . . . you and Burroughs” Green replied, adding, “Burroughs is very receptive to getting this research done. He will readily submit to the tests and a trip to Stanford Research Institute in San Francisco.”

“So, what do you need from me then?” I asked.

Green hesitated for a moment and said, “We would also like you to submit to MRI, blood tests that could be done through your local VA after you sign a release of all your medical information, allowing me to order these tests, and then I will review the results.” Green then added that Burroughs had already agreed to go to the Stanford Research Institute (SRI) in San Francisco and submit to the DNA research, MRI, and cataloging in the data base there, and that he could fly us in together.

“OK,” I said, “. . . so if I do all of the things you ask of me, then what is in it for me, Dr. Green?”

With no emotion Green responded with, “What do you mean? . . . you mean financially?”

I found that response interesting, and I gathered that the subject of money had also been brought up when he and Burroughs had first met. I said, “No,” while laughing at his suggestion and asked, “I mean what purpose or advantage do I have with this testing and going to SRI?”

“Well,” Green said, “You will become part of the data base, and your purpose will be helping mankind with this.” Green then added, “Of course, your name would not be involved, and you would be assigned a number only . . . and of course, we will get you your VA disability, no questions asked.”

Now knowing yet another reason for him being here, I told Green that I appreciated what he had told me, and I would try to help him with his requests, or at least consider it.

I then asked him another question. “What is in it for you then, Dr. Green?”

Green’s face, which had been emotionless since we sat down, now changed to what seemed to me to be a response of fake anger at my consistent questioning of his motives, as if he was acting.

He shouted a line at me that sounded like it had come straight out of the original *Star Trek* television series. Green in a raised voice, said, “Damn it, Jim, I am a doctor – I only want to help people!”

I just sat there for a moment in silence thinking, *yet again he has changed his purpose for being here. Now, he is just a doctor doing what he can to help a patient.* I could not help it; I had to smile after that “Star Trek”-related remark. The smile or grin on my face sent Green to a new level of angry. He jumped up, almost shouting that if I was going to be like this, then he would just leave and fly back home.

I responded immediately in a calm voice that it was ok with me, adding that I had only driven thirty minutes to get here and that I was more than willing to terminate the meeting if that was his wish. Green immediately calmed down; it was like a door shutting and opening again.

Green then said that he had scheduled a conference room for our discussions for the next day, and that we would meet at 9:00 a.m. *Now he is ok and wants to stay,* I thought. At the very least, I found Dr. Kit Green’s mood swings odd. I responded to him with “OK, will see you then.”

Green left the table like nothing had happened, all calm and cordial.

After Green left, Pat Frascona then turned to me and said, “This is nothing like the meeting with Burroughs and Green in Sedona earlier in the year . . . it’s like apples and oranges, Jim”

"How's that?" I asked.

Pat then said that right after Burroughs and he had met Dr. Kit Green at a motel in Flagstaff, Arizona, after only fifteen minutes, Green had said he had another doctor coming down to see Burroughs. But at that point, Pat said he had to leave the room to answer a cell phone call and was not gone for more than a few minutes when he returned to the room where Burroughs and Kit Green were – Burroughs was standing with his shirt off, being examined by Green, who explained that while he (Pat Frascogna) was gone, Burroughs had simply consented to a physical examination. Also, Pat was told that Burroughs had also agreed for Green to have the fellow doctor, whom Green had said he was currently working with and who was on his team, fly from California to Las Vegas the next day and then drive over three hours from Vegas to Flagstaff, Arizona, to collect Burroughs' blood.[dclxxxii]

I said, "Wow! Really?" Pat nodded, saying that Burroughs was eager to accommodate Green with a blood sample for DNA testing, and Green said it was important so they could complete their DNA testing. Frascogna then said that it was at this point that he had to slow it all down and had to stop what was going on, adding that he had told Burroughs not to give any bodily fluids and that he had to stop the other doctor from coming out from Las Vegas.[dclxxxiii] I thought how out of control this all was with Burroughs now being examined. I found it all really unsettling and disturbing. Pat then said that after a few hours, Green had left with nothing, but that the whole thing was chaotic and crazy compared to my meeting now with Green. Pat was actually relieved that I was calm and methodical in my questions to Green, while not taking any bullshit, and that I had listened intently while Green talked and explained himself. Also, Pat said that Green must have more respect for me, as he was giving me information and answers to things that he did not even offer to mention while talking to Burroughs in Sedona, and that Burroughs had just complied and went along with whatever Green wanted without any questions asked.

"You have not seen anything yet," I told Pat. "Green will answer all my questions; he just doesn't know he is going to yet," also adding that one thing was for sure . . . I was not going to let him examine me.

The next morning, I enjoyed an early breakfast and met both Kit Green and Pat Frascona outside the conference room. The conference room was locked. Green appeared angry and frustrated and called the front desk with

his cell phone. The security person immediately came down and opened the room. Green had his attaché case and some books, and he ordered coffee and pastries to be delivered. He then complained about the noise from across the hallway and the noise level of the air conditioner. I found that odd. To me, the noises were not that noticeable. Immediately, Green called the front desk again to ask for a different conference room. The same security guy arrived again and helped us move our belongings to the next conference room, which was very large inside. Twenty-five people could have sat at the conference table in that room, and so the three of us sat at one end of the conference table. Green then wanted to get started. I felt uncomfortable with his edgy demeanor. I was already suspicious of Green and suspected he was going to record this conversation. To make sure he didn't, I reminded Green that it was against the law in the state of Illinois to record a person without permission – especially if the person was unaware. Green then responded with, "I am not recording anything."

I said, "Fine . . . I would not have given you permission anyway."

As it turned out, during the whole two-day meeting, not one written note was taken. I found that quite astonishing.

I spent the rest of the day giving Green an account of what was already out about the Rendlesham Forest Incident. Nothing about my health came up during this conversation, and I noticed that, on occasion, Pat Frascona would leave the conference room, possibly texting or talking to Burroughs, although I couldn't be certain.

In any case, Pat confirmed this while we were on a break in the hallway, and after I had asked him, thinking it was business-related to his work as an attorney. Then Pat told me that Burroughs had been asking dozens of questions. "Well Burroughs had his chance," I said.

Pat then told me that Burroughs had pleaded with Green to have him secretly come out to the hotel meeting, and then in the middle of it, surprise me, adding that Burroughs thought we could then both team up on Green with questions. I told Pat again that Burroughs had already had his chance and had blown his meeting with Green. It was a classic 'Burroughs situation,' where he was throwing anything at the wall, hoping something stuck. I then said to Pat, "Well, it was a very good decision by both you and Green not to fly him in from Arizona while we had this meeting."

A puzzled Pat asked, "Why is that?"

I frowned at Pat, as if he was slow at getting it and said, "Because

Burroughs had his chance at questions with Green, and instead you found him with his shirt off, being examined by Green and ready to give bodily fluids for testing. And secondly, it's because I don't like surprises. I would have terminated my meeting with Green and would leave you guys to have your own 'love fest' meeting, and I would have left to go home."

Pat remained silent, then just sort of chuckled. I still don't know if he actually thought it was funny or his laughter was just a nervous reaction to my comments.

Later that night, we all went out for dinner at a local restaurant. The conversations were personal in nature – mostly about Green and his career. That was somewhat interesting to me, and I could not get over the part of him being an ex-CIA Analyst. My experience with CIA folks is that once IN, you're always IN in some way, shape or form. After returning to the hotel, Green said he had personal business to do and would retire to his room. Pat and I went to the bar and grill in the hotel and had a couple of drinks. Again, Pat brought up how different this meeting was with Green compared to the one in Arizona with Burroughs and was again astonished by how much Green was telling me about his life and business. I said, "Don't let things fool you. I am guarded with Green, and I hope tomorrow will bring more out."

I thought about what Col. Halt had told me many months earlier about Kit Green's initial contact. In an email to both Burroughs and me, Halt had said that we were both walking down a very slippery and dangerous path. This I kept in mind always, as Halt also warned me again by phone after the email.

As far as I know, Halt was very open with me. It was a trust factor with us. Perhaps it was because we both had high-level Top-Secret clearances at the time of the Rendlesham Incident – meaning we were either both vetted as 'trustworthy' with conversations and information, or maybe it was because of mutual respect. I really don't know. But this is something I had shared with all the officers appointed over me from the time of the incident to the present day. It depended on whether another witness was present or not, where I would see two sides of an officer's, attitude – in particular General Williams and Colonel Halt. They would be more guarded and official when another witness was present with me. However, when I was alone and on a one-on-one with them, the conversations were much more casual and open. It was always like this between the officers for whom I had worked and me. I found this very interesting, and Col. Halt's warnings – especially concerning any

interaction I might have with Dr. Christopher “Kit” Green were correct. I was told that I had to be vigilant when meeting with such people, as they would already have an agenda and would use me to obtain it.

I knew that this two-day meeting, which was supposedly sponsored by Dr. Kit Green, was really being sponsored by someone else, factually ‘unknown’ at this point. I could only surmise that based on Green’s conversations there was a bigger player in all of this, *and I had my suspicions on exactly who that might be.*

Again, I had told Green all I could about the Rendlesham Incident regarding what was public information at this point, and I could see the frustration in Green’s face as I told him what everyone else already knew. However, the second day was the most intense time I had with Green and also the most informative. A series of theories were presented that actually made sense with what I knew about the Rendlesham Incident.

One of the most interesting relating to this phenomenon was the theory as to why witnesses experiencing the same event will perceive different details from their perspective, and in some cases, a whole different set of circumstances and experiences, from “just lights” to more informative detail of something physical and real. For some witnesses, the appearance between what is being perceived and what it really is will somehow become fully distorted, and in most cases unrecognizable. Also, it is as if from a certain distance, or point of view in relation to what is being perceived, a witness will interpret the event or experience based on his or her own preconceived views and beliefs.

For example, if the witness was inclined to believe in ‘extraterrestrials,’ then that was what he or she would see and would experience. In reality, what the witnesses were actually viewing was nothing like the different interpretations that existed in each of their minds, and again, it can appear differently to each of the witnesses present at the same event. The interpretation of what is being witnessed also seems to depend upon how close or far away the witness is. One could only see a common safety mechanism with this part of the ‘theory.’ In effect, the phenomenon protects itself by confusing the perceptions of the witnesses to what it actually is, in that, whatever appearance is being interpreted seems to be projected into the minds of the witnesses, and again these interpretations are based on each individual’s belief system or world view.

For lack of better words, the phenomenon seems to be able to ‘mask’ or to ‘cloak itself differently with each viewer. It’s much like how esoteric knowledge or ancient symbolism works in closing itself off from the profane, remaining indecipherable to them, but will open itself up and become comprehensible to those with the ‘eyes to see.’ The possibilities were endless. This, of course, would be a technology that governments would die for, and all three of us sitting at the conference table agreed with this conclusion.

The most disquieting part for me, and which hit me hard personally, is that once an individual gets within the object’s sphere of influence, say ten of fifteen feet, then the object’s internal safeguard that would protect it at greater distances is neutralized. In effect, there would be a ‘neutral effect’ zone within this extended spherical (‘bubble’) area. One can see a common safety mechanism being deployed here, and any other witness who ventured as far as entering into the ‘bubble’ would observe the unidentified craft of unknown origin as what it truly was.

I found this a fascinating and remarkable theory indeed, as it was the most detailed and likely scenario concerning the unidentified craft of unknown origin that Burroughs and I had encountered, and it quite possibly explained the unexplained ‘one percent’ factor concerning this phenomenon and the observations that occur. In any case, this was one of many topics of conversation discussed.

Returning to the first sit-down conversation with Dr. Kit Green during this colloquium in Rockford Illinois, the focus of what he and the people he was working for seemed to want to obtain and develop was how this technology enters our reality and then leaves as easily as it entered. The phenomenon seemed to involve *inter-dimensional-travel,* and understanding this could be the ‘key’ to three-dimensional space and time.

I could see how this would be of huge military and socio-economic interest, which would clearly give the possessor of such technology absolute power to use it . . . a grim thought indeed. *“Power tends to corrupt, and absolute power corrupts absolutely,”* so said English Catholic historian, politician, and writer, John Dalberg-Acton (1834 – 1902).

This was a meeting which ended up having a much different purpose than was originally told to me, the topics of which were amended almost hourly as the conversations went on between Green and me. I had a lot of information to absorb at this point, and the two-day meeting ended with a plan from

Green that I would go to my local VA Clinic and sign release forms which would allow Dr. Green to be my doctor. I was to have all my medical information shared with him. He would also order testing to be done. In return, the huge carrot, which Green thought was an absolute, was that one hundred percent VA disability would be given to us. After all, he said, medical professionals giving the conclusion this was directly involved with the incident at Rendlesham would guarantee awarding of the VA disability. The other doctor involved with Green was the same doctor who was going to withdraw blood from Burroughs several months earlier in Sedona, Arizona – again, the doctor who was going to travel there from Las Vegas.

The things Green mentioned I undergo were Magnetic Resonance Imaging (MRI) and a series of blood testing with the analysis of *Deoxyribonucleic Acid* (DNA) to check my genetic information. Green again added that I was to go to Stanford Research Institute, along with Burroughs, to have the information from the tests entered into the encoding data base. I just nodded and didn't say anything. It was then time to leave. As we entered our separate vehicles, with Green and Frascogna going to O'Hare Airport and with me about to take the thirty-minute drive home, I slammed the car door, wound down the window and said to Green, *"I will think about it and email you."*[dclxxxiv]

As I drove on the interstate, the last two days replayed through my mind, especially the last part about the full release of medical information with a so-called former CIA analyst. I thought, *I can't believe what I was just asked.* No way was I going to do such a thing, even though tempting 'carrots' had been put in front of me, which no doubt would have helped me financially. Before I had even driven halfway home, I knew I wanted no part of this charade. There was no way on this earth I was going to *be bought and paid for* by Green and by whomever he worked for. Getting disability for now at this point, which was clearly not because of anything that had happened that night at Rendlesham, would at the very least be criminal, fraud, and worse yet, I would have been *bought and paid for* and would be in someone's pocket – not to mention other veterans who were in need of such things more than I – i.e., veterans returning with traumatic brain injuries, missing limbs, and internal scars, which would be with them for a lifetime.

Before I got home, I knew I would not be 'bought' like this. This would be selling out to the highest bidder, and no one with an ounce of integrity

would ever go along with this fiasco. Absolutely no one! This would all come to fruition, and to my disbelief, I was completely wrong about others whom I thought had the same values as I did, instilled in me from my career in the Air Force. Wrong I would be indeed. I was particularly disappointed in Burroughs, who had almost compromised both of us and what we had set out to do since our meeting again in 2009 – although by this time, not much had been achieved, except the writing of the book with Nick Pope, and even that wasn't living up to my expectations.

From late summer and well into the fall of 2013, the writing of the book *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest* was in full swing. I started to see strange developments with this book, which was supposedly going to be a definitive account on what had happened at Rendlesham those three nights in December of 1980. As I reviewed the edits of the manuscript, several clear developments became apparent. One was that no matter how many pages and chapters were sent to Nick, what came back were excerpts of a sentence here and a paragraph there. Where I was paraphrased, or where there was a paragraph that I had actually written, or a sentence had been used, Nick would be explaining it as a third person. Also, I noted that Nick was mostly concentrating his efforts on Burroughs' disability. I found this odd, since Burroughs and I were both receiving stellar care, and on any matter we took to the Veterans Administration. In the discussions to do with the book, it was quite clear that the incidents would be the entire thrust of the work. It would be discussed in great detail, covering all aspects of our involvement with those nights at Rendlesham, including also the binary message.

However, it became more apparent that our attorney, Pat Frascogna, was writing a chapter on the freedom of information act requests to such places as the Department of Defense, Department of the Air Force, the Defense Intelligence Agency, and the Central Intelligence Agency. He was also pushing for disability, just like Dr. Kit Green had been at the Rockford meeting.

Burroughs heard from a VA staff member that his medical records could be in the classified section of the VA. (Who knows? Maybe even by Burroughs' own prodding). This immediately ignited a fanciful conclusion by Burroughs – that his records were classified. Burroughs had zero documentation saying they were definitely classified in this section. This section for the records does exist, but it is only for classified operations and

injuries obtained in the performance of those mission(s) by personnel that were ‘Top-Secret’ operations, for example, injuries that would have been obtained during the Vietnam War that occurred in Laos. In military operations from the Vietnam days, these would have been Top-Secret, since the involvement of any US operations in a neutral country would be of grave damage to the United States publicly. Of course, these would never be unclassified and definitely were not for public consumption.

Then Nick was writing a whole chapter on the *Condign Report*, which I have always considered suspect and most likely a non-playing document with RFI. The report covered 460 pages, and only eleven copies of this low-level document were ever printed. That in itself is unique and unlikely based on the low-level security clearance with this document. Low distribution numbers were usually kept to Top-Secret documents. This left the obvious conclusion that this document was kept to a low-level document, which means it could be declassified and released in as little as five years after the study by the original classification authority. It was like they wanted it out for public release. The report was done on a study from 1996 to 2000, and in 2000 the study was finalized. Then the document was declassified in a very short period of time on January 1, 2005.

As said, during the writing of the book with Nick Pope, Burroughs was charged with reading and evaluating the entire document, while I worked on more pertinent matters with the manuscript. At the time, only two pages were shown to me. The pages included, as these extracts demonstrate, the purpose of the study, which out of the two pages, and was of some interest, encompassed a sentence on the first page and a paragraph on the second.

As stated by the Ministry of Defense:

> “The purpose of this study and the document on this was Unidentified Aerial Phenomena (UAP) in the UK Air Defense Region. During a policy review in 1996 into the handling of Unidentified Aerial Phenomena sighting reports received by the Ministry of Defense, a study was undertaken to determine the potential value, if any, of such reports to Defense Intelligence. Consistent with Ministry of Defense policy, the available data was studied principally to ascertain whether there is any evidence of a threat to the UK, and secondly, should the opportunity arise, to identify any potential military technologies of interest.”
>
> Ministry Of Defense.

Out of the two pages of this low-level, declassified 460-page document, which was released in January 2005, was the page that said in one Rendlesham-related sentence:

> "The well-reported Rendlesham Forest/Bentwaters event is an example where it might by postulated that several observers were probably exposed to UAP radiation for longer than normal UAP sighting reports."[dclxxxv]

It would appear that in just this one sentence that there was an attempt to validate the study being compiled in the Condign Report with what had happened during the Rendlesham Incident. The second page had a sentence that said, *"All wing commanders were briefed on this phenomenon,"* adding that they were to fundamentally ignore this phenomenon and to give it a wide berth if it was encountered during flight operations.

Based on my fifteen years of personal involvement with Air Force Security Police 'Plans and Programs' and intricate involvement with highly classified documents, operation and contingency plans that were Top-Secret, as well as personally writing those type of documents, I found the chance of there being anything related to the Rendlesham Incident as being of zero importance and most probably there is a zero chance of anything of value in relation to the incident. It was because of this understanding of the document, based on the two pages I saw, that I was more than happy to delegate the reading and extraction of information, which could be done by Burroughs.

During the early part of January 2014 – three months before the book was published, I started to get very strange details from Burroughs about things he said he could not talk about or write about on emails. So, I decided to find out why in the world he was acting so strange . . . I mean, stranger than usual.

Concerned by this, I then sent an email to Nick Pope:

> Message Received: Jan 12, 2014, 07:18 p.m.
> From: "Jim Penniston" To: "Nick Pope"
> Subject: Puzzling communication with John.
>
> "Nick, John called me yesterday and said that you and he had discussed a method that he could not tell me about on the phone, to increase sales with St. Martins? He told me he had to tell me in person. It makes no sense to me since he has talked to you on the phone about it? So, what is it Nick? I would like to know since I am part of the team.
> All the best, Jim."

I received a quick and a stranger reply from Nick which was as follows:

> On Sunday, January 12, 2014 2:50 p.m., Nick Pope wrote:
>
> "Hi Jim, John thinks some of the Project Condign MoD papers show that we've caught the government in a lie, and thinks this is one of our strongest cards to play, PR-wise. He's asked me to help him with some more FOI requests to the MoD on this.'
> Best wishes, Nick"

I had only read the two pages I was given, so I called Nick and asked him if he had the link for the archived Condign Report. I thought it was time that I read and reviewed this document myself and its content. Nick readily agreed and sent me the link to this study, of which I had only seen two pages. I opened the first page of the 460-page document, and low and behold the cover page had all over it, UK EYES ONLY!

My mind started to race with many thoughts. This was no U.S. document; it was a British one. I thought back to General Williams and our visit to him in Tucson, Arizona and now understood why he had no knowledge of such a document before we showed him. It was not releasable to anyone outside of the United Kingdom. There is no way anyone, other than cleared UK people, could ever have seen and read this document. I then reflected back on General Williams' confusing look as he perused this document when Burroughs and I had sat with him over a meal. It was obvious this document was a 'red herring,' which had been produced by the British. And again, tying that one sentence about Bentwaters into it, I immediately thought that this was simply a way for the British to cover up their ineptness and incompetence of ignoring the whole encroachment of their air space by several unidentified crafts of unknown origin over those three nights in December, and when the RAF and the MOD did absolutely nothing, while the British citizens slept in their own beds. That is something that is highly disturbing in itself, especially during the height of the Cold War.

Was the insertion of the word 'Bentwaters' in the Condign Report a chance for them to save face? Perhaps, but the question is, what does anything in the Condign Report have to do with Rendlesham? The simple and only answer is absolutely nothing . . . zero.

I had sent an email with corrections to the manuscript in early January 2014 to Nick, fixing incorrect things like first names, out of context quotes, and things like that. I shot another off with my concerns that the Condign Report was a 'red herring.' Nick said, "Well, there are two things going on with that. One, we must agree to disagree about Condign. Two, it is too late to change anything in the manuscript because it was sent to the publishing house and is now in queue for printing."

I was quite disappointed with Nick jumping the gun with this. But it did fit Nick's agenda to present a book to the American public, which made no conclusions and would allow the public to make their own conclusions about Rendlesham. Nick was always on the fence with what was being written from the start. He is a 'fence sitter,' not wanting to rock a boat or slash his opportunities in the Stateside market. I don't fault Nick for his motivations to be one of the UFO opportunists and entertainers. Actually, Nick is one of the good guys, but our priorities are just different. I suppose that for Nick, who once investigated the UFO/UAP phenomenon, Rendlesham was just another UFO case. Who really knows? I only criticize myself for not seeing it all sooner.

It was at this point that I was also wondering and questioning why Burroughs was not going into any details about the third night. I found that perplexing too. Instead, he was pushing this silly agenda about his disability. After all, the readers only wanted to hear our accounting about the Rendlesham Forest Incident. It was always a game-changer. I knew it from my first observation in the forest of the advanced craft. Then there is also the existence of the code, something that still creeps me out when I think of it.

In February 2014, I received an email from Adrian Bustinza, who was answering the questions I had put to him about Larry Warren's involvement, which I wanted to add in the book. According to Adrian, and it's not really certain, Warren was not working, was in the barracks, and was the first person Adrian saw when he came off duty after his incident on the third night.

Still upset from the happenings of that third night, Adrian also talked about the incident and the aftermath. Perhaps I should have told Adrian that his trauma was most likely the result of him being messed with, and the orchestrated efforts to erase the first night from history for those who study the Rendlesham Incidents, making sure they concentrate their efforts on the

third night, as was devised.

Following is the email from Adrian:

Adrian Bustinza III to Jim Penniston February 11, 2014 at 9:07 p.m.

"How you doing Jim, Listen ever since Linda [Moulton Howe] and John [Burroughs] contacted me and stated that they wanted to talk to me and then just showed up at my work site one day I kind of got spooked all over again. I did not invite John and or Linda and they wanted to talk so I gave them the benefit of the doubt and after they left I kind of kept contact with him. But he kept pressing the issue with Larry [Warren] and I am not interested in Larry. I know what Larry wrote and where he got this information from because I did convey to Larry everything that happened that night and then what else had happened with me and John [Burroughs]. We were all young then and I needed to talk to someone and Larry was the 1st person I saw that I recognized and I was scared at the time. However, I didn't tell Larry a lot of other things that did happen with me and I just can't and won't ever get those things out of my head. However, you are right I do know a lot more than I am saying and I will never come out because of the very reason of what John is doing. This contact that I experienced was not only life threatening at the time but has ever since been and will always be a part of me and those involved. The most dramatic thing of the entire situation was what happen afterwards and the interrogations and all.

But I sensed it then and like I said before I am sitting here just listening and watching everything and I just don't want to get involved with all the bickering, hateful back and forth melody of everyone befriending each other. I have more respect for myself than that and I am very involved in State government and I am not going to tarnish that. I can't speak for John and or Larry, but you are right. They need to stop and I am not going to be in the middle of it. I have respect for both of those men because I know and I have forgiven Larry in my Faith because of who I am. And yes Larry has a lot of issues, but John has quite a few himself and he needs to come to grips with himself and concentrate on himself. But I am not going to call anyone out and definitely not on center stage. I am who I am, Saw what I saw, lived through the pain and threats and maybe got to see something that I wasn't supposed to and heard something's I wasn't supposed to. And maybe this is why I am sought after so much by the government and, representatives, Senators etc... Yes, I have been having letter, calls and visitors from all sorts of government agencies, news agencies, and I said it then and I'll say it always. I went, I saw, I heard, I participated and I was interrogated and all for what? I still don't

> know! I have grandchildren and I enjoy them. I want to try and move on. I am able to kind of control my dreams and I am able to sleep a little better and I am moving along. I hope you understand. Adrian C. "Buzz" Bustinza III."

This also came in too late for the book, which was published on April 15, 2014.

Just before the book was published, a small conference was being held in the Ozark mountains, Eureka Springs, Arkansas, between April 11 and 14, 2014, and Nick Pope was scheduled to be there as one of the speakers. Being the lead author, Nick received his copies early, so he took the twenty copies he had to the conference. I was receiving emails and phone calls daily and even multiple times per-day from Burroughs. He was upset that Nick was using the conference to release this book and would be doing book signings. I told Burroughs, "Why in the world would you care if he does? . . Doing these public appointments is what Nick is good at. And even more to the point, Nick is the lead author and he is more than welcome to do this and should."

This petty issue went on and on with each phone call. I was totally perplexed with how Burroughs was handling it – especially since his participation with the book was almost non-existent to minimal. For the book, Burroughs had actually copied and pasted other people's work into his contributions without crediting them – he had no idea of the protocols of research and authorship. Nick had jumped in to keep that from happening, but I must say that Burroughs managed to write two or three pages.

By the time the book was about to be released, Burroughs was almost worshiping Dr. Kit Green. Burroughs thought he was the 'real deal.' Well, he got that right. But I saw he was a hindrance to the truth about the Rendlesham Incident, and also, he always seemed to have multiple agendas, and none of them were about discovering what had really happened at Rendlesham. Burroughs had been going on for weeks about how the key to Rendlesham rested with the Condign Report. I felt sorry for Burroughs at this point, because all he needed to do was to visit the mental health department at the VA to try to deal with his issues, and hopefully he might remember the event in the forest that night. Colonel Halt was also encouraging him to do this, too, but Burroughs had hatched a plan with Pat Frascogna to sue the Air Force and force Colonel Halt to raise his right hand at a Senate hearing. Of course, they apparently did not know that what they were attempting to do could not

be done. A service member cannot sue the military with an event that happened during active duty, or sue the officer appointed over them. We were all protected from any frivolous type of civil action. The appropriate thing to do was simply ask Halt questions with courtesy and respect, but Burroughs did not respect authority, and believed that the higher the rank, the closer the person was to the big conspiracy. I have dozens, upon dozens of emails which Burroughs sent Colonel Halt, all of which were nasty and disrespectful at the very least, containing issues that could have easily been asked with civility. Both Colonel Halt and I talked often about his bizarre behavior patterns, but Halt, who has a talent for maintaining his calm in any heated discussion, said there was nothing one could do. Nick Pope noticed Burroughs' behavior, too, and sent me his concerns in an email in April 2014, only days after our book was published.[dclxxxvi]

Soon after the book was published on April 15, 2014, Burroughs and I went our separate ways – amicably, so I thought. He said he was going to pursue the Condign Report. I said I was going to pursue the binary code and to wherever it led. I was later told by several people that John had told them he was "going to go after me," meaning he was going to try and discredit me and challenge my integrity in public. Then, just as I had been warned, over the course of just one month there were attacks aimed at me personally on the Internet by Burroughs, with Burroughs even teaming up with Larry Warren. Also, and ironically, soon after the book release, Burroughs refused to publicize the book; he wouldn't promote it on his Facebook page, nor in public.

Although Burroughs has acted appallingly, I guess his problem with me was partly that I believed the whole issue with him and the offer from Dr. Green was a 'bought and paid for' situation. Unlike Burroughs, I safe-guarded my self-integrity at the time, kept a low-profile, and didn't give in to the temptation to join the UFO opportunists and entertainers with their podcasts, conference circuit engagements, or succumb to their wishes. I always valued doing the right thing. I call it, taking *the road less travelled,* and in this case, *the road not taken.*

I was happy when it was finally published, but after reading through the finished product, I was disappointed with it. I found that the first lie with our book, *Encounter In Rendlesham Forest,* was on the front cover where it was written, "John Burroughs, USAF Ret." This was far from the truth. Burroughs was not retired from active duty. He would have been listed as

John Burroughs, USAFR Ret. The “R” meaning “Reserve” . . . “United States Air Force Reserve” instead of the full-time, active duty, United State Air Force. As I read through the book in its completed form, even more embellishments and untruths were presented throughout the book.

Also, eighty pages of my account didn’t make it into the book. What I had envisioned was a book that would detail certain facts that I had kept to myself for years and would be told for the first time. However, it fell far short of what I had envisioned. That is why this book was written, and why more books are to follow, all of which will provide a comprehensive account of what, for me, is *the Rendlesham Enigma.*

Last Words for this Book

With all I have said in my first-hand accounting of the Rendlesham Incident and the years following up to April, 2014 in this book, I have detailed things exactly as they transpired, using my notes, my journals, and my testimony of the events.

The knee-jerk conclusion that many witnesses and people have had about the incident – i.e., that the Rendlesham Incident was and is about the precept of classic UFO’s in the extraterrestrial sense, as if it is taken for granted as fact – is completely wrong in my assessment. As I have repeatedly said throughout the years since the incident, I cannot tell you with one hundred percent certainty that the *unidentified craft of unknown*-origin was alien or extraterrestrial. However, I can tell you what it definitely wasn’t. It was not an individual observing lights in the sky, or an aircraft by any country, or a misidentification of a proto-type aircraft, or the concocted belief now that it was plasma or another unknown occurring natural phenomenon.

You would think after the reading of this book that there is nothing else to tell. However, my answer to one of the questions I was asked on the *Ancient Aliens* TV show, accurately describes the situation today as it did then: *“Is there more? Yes, there is more.”* To discover more, you must determine what the focus of the Rendlesham Incident was.

So, *what is the Rendlesham Forest incident about? Is it about UFOs? Is it about the witnesses? Is it about an assertion of alien encounter?* All are fanciful and extremely doubtful thoughts, and I have often reflected on the previous books and the witness accounts I have read and wondered, what are

the real motives of these people? However, as our meticulous research over the last eight years has now brought to light, Rendlesham is not about any one individual, it is and always has been, about the binary code message, and more importantly, the seven sets of geographical coordinates it contained.

The message is of an intellectual nature, in that there is 'a code within the code' and this deeper-layer code is the seven coordinates. All credit for the in-depth study and research in which this information was uncovered must go to my co-author on this book, Gary Osborn. Each discovery he made confirmed another discovery he had already made, which became like links in a chain, with each link needed to uncover the next. There were times when we thought that a new piece of information could merely be a coincidence, but soon realized, due to the extreme accuracy of the math involved, that it would then lead to another extraordinary finding. The odds against these connections left us with no other conclusion that this message had a design and purpose for things to be told, providing answers to things that have remained a mystery for thousands of years. What the code does is provide us with these answers, and also points out and at the same time, helps us to understand what the ancients had encoded and were warning us about.

I wrote a chapter for this book titled, *"Taking the Road Less Travelled."* It has always been like that for me. I knew as soon I walked back from the forest that night, that what happened was special and unique. With that feeling came responsibility. I have always been careful not to speculate and endorse what is popular or even to capitalize on what was truly a life-changing event. I have always felt driven to seek out the answers to the Rendlesham Incident – never for financial reward, because the reward are the discoveries that my co-author and I have determined and established since we began working together.

I look forward to the second book in the Rendlesham Enigma about the findings of the binary code. Hopefully then it will finally be acknowledged why the Rendlesham binary code message is so important, and why it is important right now in this time period and not 30 years before it first emerged in 2010 and not even in 2010. The time is now.

Jim Penniston

Epilogue

A Code Within a Code About an Ancient Code

By Gary Osborn

One of the most frequently asked questions about the binary code is *why did it take thirty years for Jim Penniston to come forward in public about it?* Those who have read everything up to this point will know Jim's explanation . . . that when looking at the pages of "meaningless" ones and zeros after he had written them down in his notebook, he was naturally concerned about his own sanity; how people would view him, as well as the possibility of losing his Security job in the USAF.

These are natural reactions, and his decision to want to keep this secret was really no one else's concern and this should be respected. However, the code did finally come out, and if John Burroughs had not asked Jim Penniston about a certain date in the notebook, which then led to Burroughs noticing the pages of ones and zeros as Jim thumbed through it to find the date he wanted, it is a certainty that Jim Penniston would have kept the binary code a secret to this day.

Jim Penniston says that he had no control over what happened the day Burroughs saw the pages of ones and zeros; *it was as if it was destined to happen* . . . and so there is perhaps a deeper reason as to why the existence of the code wasn't made public until 2010, even though the binary code was mentioned when Jim underwent hypnosis on September 10, 1994, with this part of the transcript having been published in 1998 in the book *Glimpses of Other Realities* Vol II, *High Strangeness* by Linda Moulton Howe.[dclxxxvii]

Seven Sets of Geographical Coordinates

When you have studied the seven sets of geographical coordinates found in the message of the binary code like I have these past eight years, it soon becomes apparent that the coordinates are a code in themselves – a 'code within a code.' Each is an integral part of a 'bigger picture,' which contains a wealth of information, and each serves a purpose. It also becomes apparent that to extract the additional information contained in these coordinates, we would have first needed the kind of technology that most of us interface with today and take for granted – especially the online, satellite mapping programs

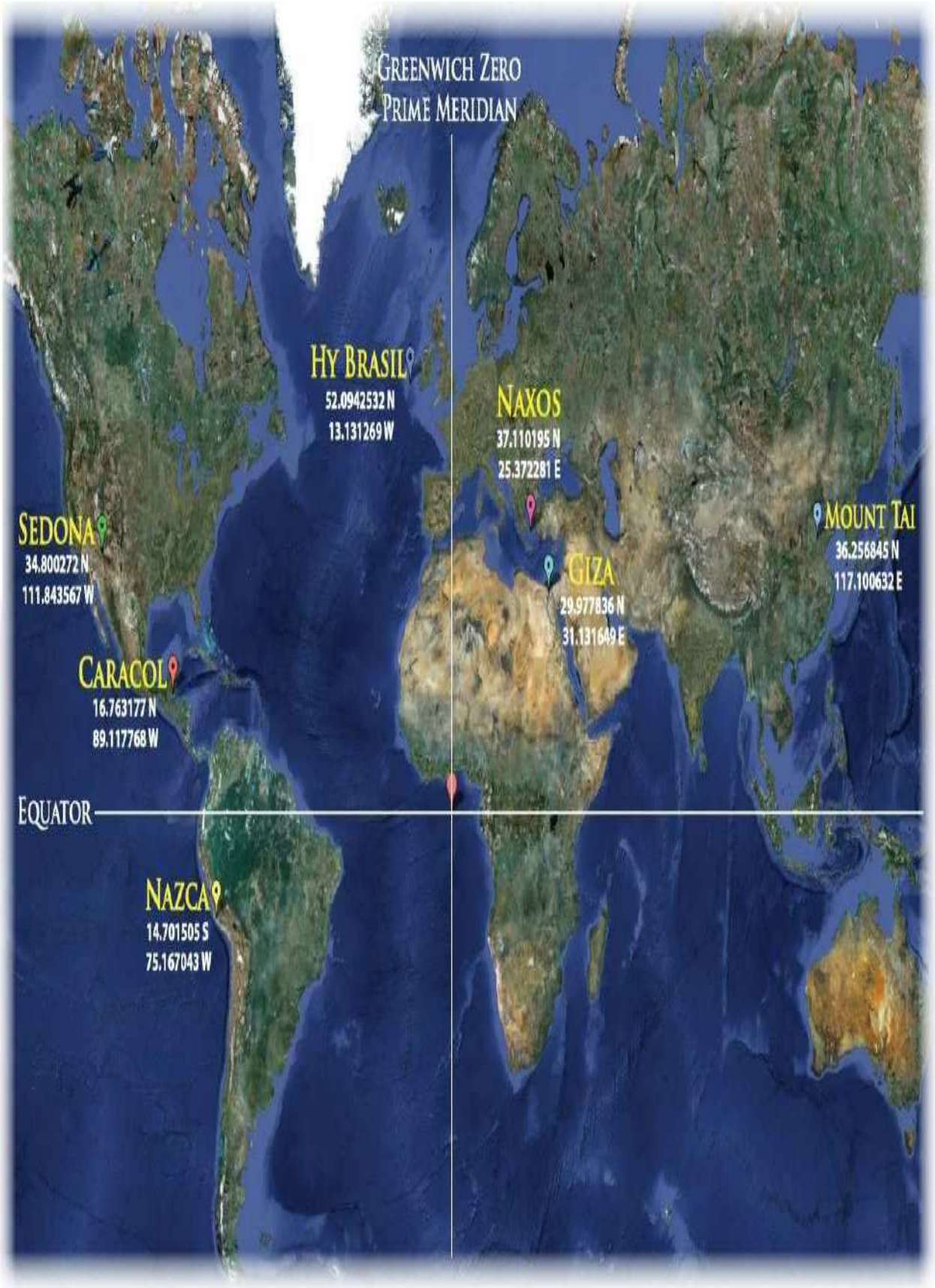
like *Google Earth* and *Google Maps*, which have only really been available since 2001 and 2005 respectively. Furthermore, the *Classic Google Maps* program I was able to use with the features it had and what I needed, was first made available in 2010, and because the interface of *Google Maps* had changed from its classic format to more-or-less its present format in 2014, it could be said that I was only given a 'window area' of some three years to extract this information. Of course, this could be done today, but not as simply and easily as I was able to and *intuitively* between 2011 and 2014.

The seven sets of coordinates; the names of their targeted locations, and the ancient cultures or races these locations are associated with, are as follows:

1. 52.0942532 N 13.131269 W
2. 16.763177 N 89.117768 W
3. 34.800272 N 111.843567 W
4. 29.977836 N 31.131649 E
5. 14.701505 S 75.167043 W
6. 36.256845 N 117.100632 E
7. 37.110195 N 25.372281 E

1. *Hy Brasil Island* (now submerged). (*Tuatha Dé Danann* – "Shining Ones").
2. *Canaa Pyramid:* Caracol, Belize, South of Yucatán Peninsula, Central America. (Mayan).
3. *Sedona,* Arizona, North America. (Hopi).
4. *Giza,* Egypt. (Ancient Egyptian).
5. *Nazca Plain:* Nazca, Peru, South America. (Pre-Incan).
6. *Mount Taishan:* Tai Shan Qu, Shandong, China. (Ancient Chinese).
7. *Temple of Apollo:* Portara, Naxos Island, Greece. (Ancient Greek).

The image below from *Google Maps* in 2012 displays all seven sets of coordinates, *together,* on a flat, 2D, map projection, satellite image of the Earth. Included are the 0º Longitude/Latitude lines, referencing the *Greenwich Prime Meridian* and the *Equator.* This is how we are meant to view the seven coordinates, which must be approached a certain way to extract the initial information they contain.


GREENWICH ZERO
PRIME MERIDIAN
HY BRASIL
52.0942532 N
13.131269 W
NAXOS
37.110195 N
25.372281 E
SEDONA
34.800272 N
111.843567 W
GIZA
29.977836 N
31.131649 E
MOUNT TAI
36.256845 N
117.100632 E
CARACOL
16.763177 N
89.117768 W
EQUATOR
NAZCA
14.701505 S
75.167043 W

Artwork by Gary Osborn using Google Maps © Copyright 2012. All Rights Reserved

Fig. 1: The Seven Sets of Coordinates found within the 16-page string of binary code, viewed together on a 2D Mercator Map Projection of the Earth in *Google Maps,* 2012.

The initial information that emerges from the seven coordinates could be described as 'homogeneous' in that the parts (coordinates) all fit together via the same key to produce a 'bigger picture.' The key is found in the clue Jim Penniston claims was given to him in a dream . . . *'23.5 degrees.'* From this key, the 'picture' that emerges is unmistakably familiar to many of us and does not require interpretation. It is there, it is obvious, and it is as factual as 2 x 2 = 4, which proves the results were intentional and not something that we are just seeing because we want to see it, like 'faces in clouds' (*pareidolia* or *apophenia*) and certainly not projected or cherry-picked data.[dclxxxviii]

Also, the deeper we go into studying this 'picture,' we find things that are more ambiguous, and this is where interpretation is indeed required. However, the information is so cleverly devised, we also find that it is multileveled and multifaceted in respect to the further meanings and associations we can derive from it – all of which can be seen to correlate with the initial information that emerges and which is pointing to something specific. The initial information formed by the coordinates remains invisible until one knows and understands the 'key.'

One is reminded of the scene in the movie, *Contact* (1997) based on the book by Carl Sagan, where the pages of primary numbers were totally transformed into a 3-dimensional cube when the cipher to unlock the code was given to Ellie Arroway by S. R. Hadden. It was the only way the code could be read properly.

Themes

The coordinates found in the Rendlesham binary code message were carefully determined to provide – both individually and collectively – specific information which leads us to certain themes that are connected to what appears to have been a global catastrophe in the past and also points to a timeline, or 'precessional cycle' clock that had been encoded at Giza in Egypt. This timeline is referred to as the *Giza Diagonal*, also known as the *Lehner-Goedicke Line*,[dclxxxix] and seems to provide us with 'cataclysm periods'

– re-occurring major events within the 25,920-year cycle timeline.

On February 19, 2012 – almost a year after I first received the coordinates from Jim Penniston – I found that embedded within the Giza coordinates from the code are another set of coordinates that target a location only 16.5 miles from the "Doomsday" *Svalbard Global Seed Vault*, situated in the Norwegian archipelago north of mainland Europe – virtually midway between mainland Norway and the North Pole.[dcxc]

Also gleaned from the seven sets of coordinates are the numerous references to the present 23.5-degree tilt angle of the Earth's axis of rotation, which is also the first key in unraveling this code.[dcxci]

What emerges initially from the careful placement of the coordinates from the binary code are TWO perfectly proportioned, *geometric templates* – one covering a large part of the Earth's surface centered in the Atlantic, and one at Giza, and both based around the *Golden Section proportions* of the *Phi*-ratio, determined by the number 1.618….

The larger *Phi*-ratio-related geometric template generates a perfectly-proportioned *golden spiral.* This is centered by its infinity-related *vanishing point* at the location of the islands of the Azores in the Atlantic Ocean, which can be used not only to derive more information – but at the same time also confirm certain alignments with Giza in Egypt and other ancient sites around the world. For example, *Easter Island* in the Pacific Ocean, the Azorean island of *São Miguel* in the Atlantic Ocean, and the archaeological site of *Göbekli Tepe* in Turkey, the earliest phases of which have been determined to date back to around 9,700 BCE – around the same era as that of the Sphinx at Giza, according to geologist and author Robert Schoch, who has dated the Sphinx back to *c.* 10,000 BCE.

We also find that the measured, kilometer and mile distance values between these ancient sites are either subdivisions of the precessional cycle of 25,920 years, according to the ancient estimate – i.e., 1,080 . . . 2,160 . . . or multiplications of the ancient Egyptian royal cubit of 0.5236 meters, thereby confirming this royal cubit length, which I found to be the key to unlocking the mathematical secrets of the Great Pyramid and the Giza plateau.

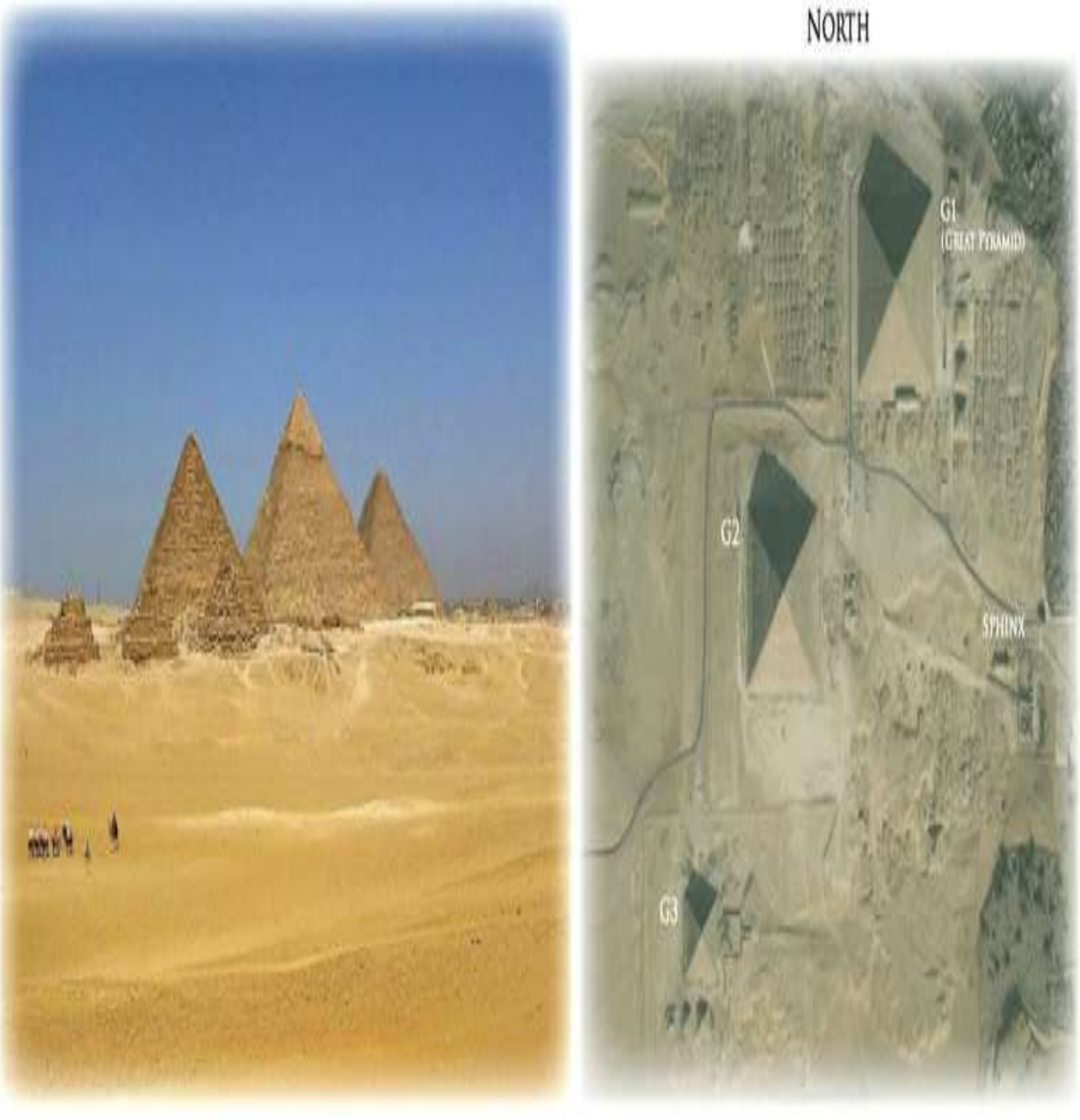
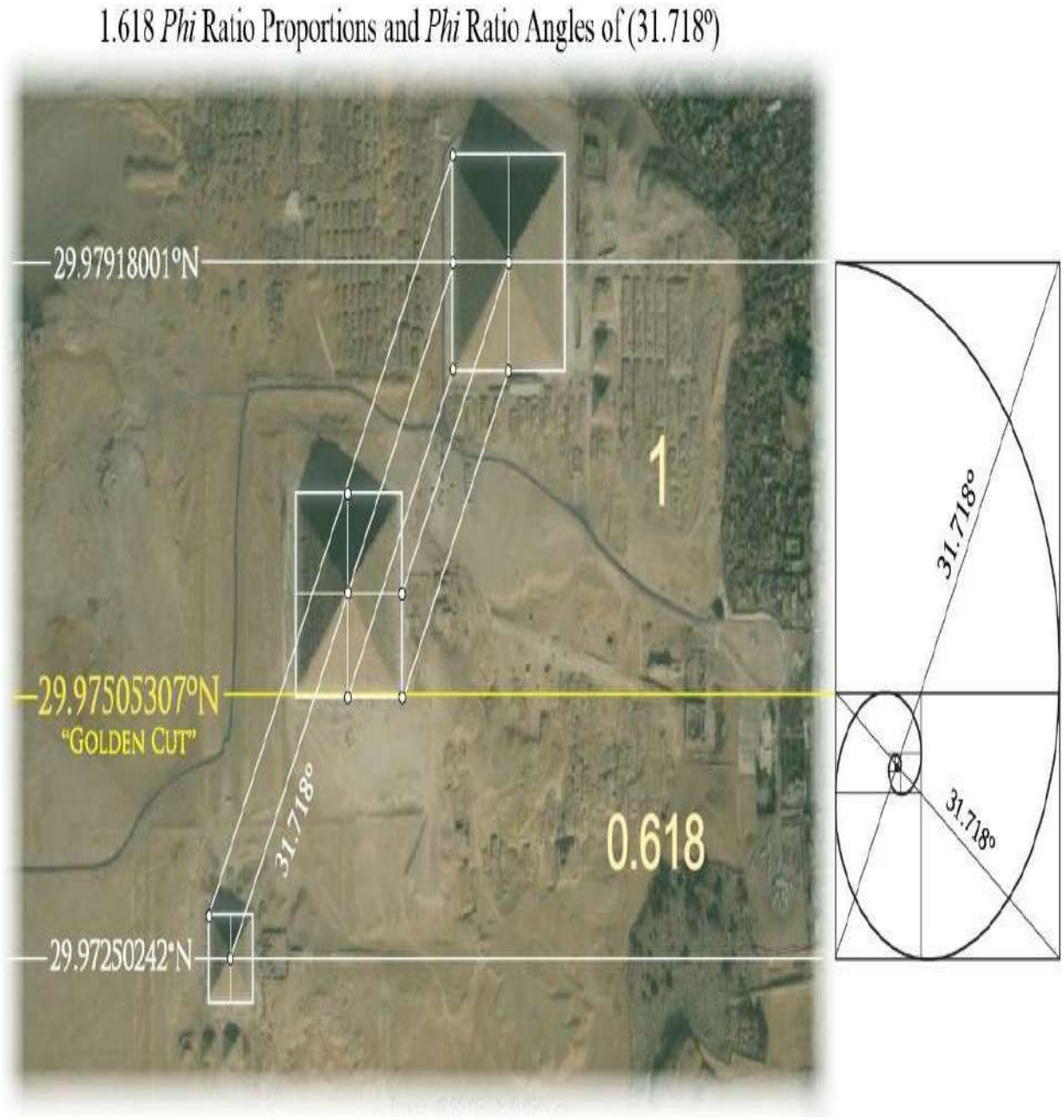


Fig. 2: Left: The Pyramids of Giza, looking north. "G3" left foreground. "G2" is behind in the center and "G1" (Great Pyramid) behind right. (Photo by Scott Creighton). Right: The west-to-east diagonal orientation of the three large Pyramids of Giza, "G1," "G2," and "G3."[dcxcii]

(Satellite aerial view of Giza taken January 2008, courtesy of *Google Earth Pro*).

Following the clues given by the geographical coordinates found in the binary code message revealed that the three Giza pyramids are arranged to the *Phi*-ratio, 'golden section' proportions of 1.618 (to three decimal places) and the *Phi* angle of 31.718 degrees. In fact, this is a major discovery and one

of many which have emerged as a result of my now eight-year study of the coordinates from the Rendlesham binary code.



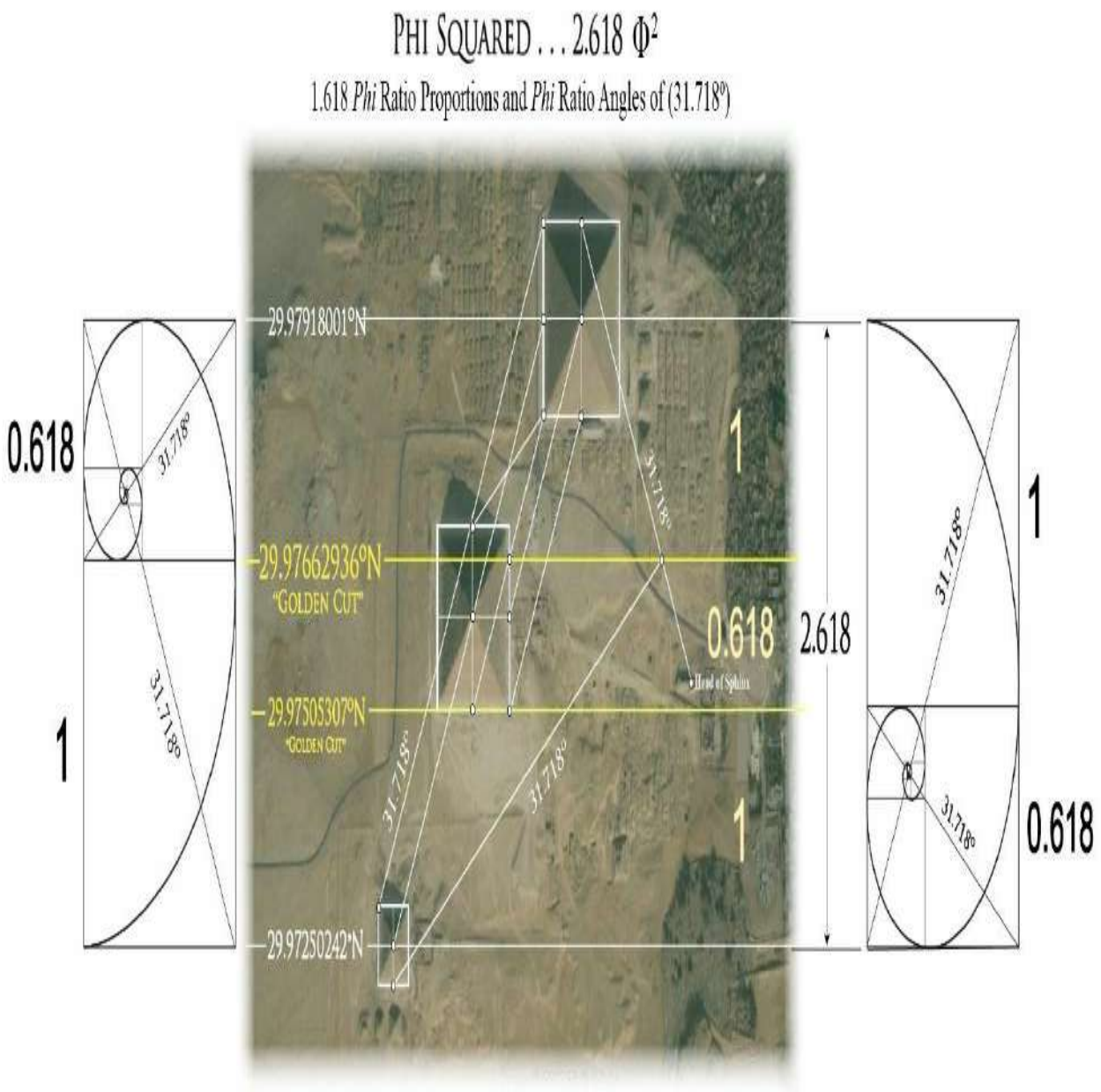
Artwork by Gary Osborn using *Google Earth Pro* © Copyright 2019. All Rights Reserved

Fig. 3: The major discovery that the three largest pyramids of Giza are placed in respect of the *Phi*-ratio 'golden section' proportions, as expressed by the golden spiral on the right and the *Phi* angle of 31.718 degrees.

The division of the golden ratio, as shown here represented by the latitude

29.97505307ºN, has long been known by mathematical adepts throughout history and since ancient times as the *"Golden Cut."*[dcxciii]

This *Phi*-ratio geometry encoded at Giza in the measured distances between the three largest pyramids, also expresses *Phi Squared* . . . 2.618 (to three decimal places), denoted as Φ^2.



Artwork by Gary Osborn using *Google Earth Pro* © Copyright 2019. All Rights Reserved

Fig. 4: The major discovery that the three largest pyramids of Giza are placed in respect of the *Phi*-ratio proportions, of 2.618 (*Phi* squared), and the *Phi* angle of 31.718 degrees. Curiously, the angle of 31.718 subtract 29 (or 3 – 1) = 2.718 *e*.

In this diagram, note particularly the numbers in the 'Golden Cut' latitude: **29.97662936ºN**, which divides the *Phi*-ratio proportions of 0.618 and 1. (The significant measured distances in both meters and royal cubits, which are multiples of 3.1416 (*pi*) and also subdivisions of the precessional cycle of 25,920 years, are presented in figure 8 in the end notes and provide logical reasons for adding this latitude).

To discover this latitude in the design containing numbers that prove highly significant as I will reveal later, is already evidence, if not proof, that the architect/designer of Giza was mathematically adept and of a highly-evolved intelligence. And there is much more that supports this conclusion that the design that went into the construction of Giza was the innovation of a truly gifted, mathematical genius, or an advanced intelligence unknown to us at present.

As said, all this information is provided by the seven coordinates found in the binary code and this was so meticulously planned that you simply cannot bring attention to one discovery without mentioning several others, as everything that has emerged so far has formed itself into a holistic, self-contained, interlocked grid of information, with one discovery correlating and confirming another discovery, and another, and so on, with the math and the distances between locations all being meticulously precise.

I think that the results, which point to an ancient 'system of knowledge' encoded thousands of years in the past, are going to surprise a lot of people who view the Rendlesham Incident as "just a UFO event."

For example, there is a spiritual, 'evolution of consciousness' aspect to all this which is based on the esoteric teachings and traditions associated with 'enlightenment,' which has also been encoded at Giza and used as a primary focal point in this regard. One of the major themes of the code is the central 'third point of balance' found in-between all and any of the two opposites or extremes of our dual reality. We are being told that it is this 'mid-point' in consciousness that we should understand above all else and where we should be focusing our attention, especially if we wish to reduce conflict, end all war and human suffering and evolve further.[dcxciv]

In my view, the coordinates found in the binary code were certainly not

lifted at random from a New Age Website, as if someone was "compiling a New Age holiday wish list" as Nick Pope had once described it.[dcxcv] And I can't see how Jim Penniston would have known what coordinates to pick to produce the vast amount of information I have only outlined above and which I know is way beyond his capabilities to even conceive, let alone strategically formulate so that it can all be tightly encapsulated within two precisely proportioned, geometric templates based on the *Phi* ratio, with everything then being factored and converted into a relatively short string of binary code.

Jim Penniston, who is a down-to-earth, no nonsense, military-minded person, wouldn't have the patience to even begin creating something like this. And really, why would Jim Penniston go out on a limb to jeopardize the sterling reputation he had earned throughout his years in the USAF by perpetrating such a hoax? Especially when we consider that he had kept the binary code to himself for thirty years and would have kept it secret until the end if it hadn't been discovered on October 2, 2010.

Cosmic Womb

While I was working on the seven coordinates from the binary code message, I was also writing a book about the new mathematical discoveries I was making concerning the Great Pyramid of Giza, much of it based on my own fifteen-year study of its dimensions and measurements. Among the many primary sources consulted was the data gathered by Sir William Mathew Flinders Petrie, as published in *The Pyramids and Temples of Giza* (1883); also, the measuring survey made on the Great Pyramid by J. H. Cole and published in his book, *Determination of the Exact Size and Orientation of the Great Pyramid of Giza* (1925); as well as the most recent survey conducted in 2015 by the US-based, *Glen Dash Research Foundation* and the *Ancient Egypt Research Associates* (AERA). I was planning to have this book published as a sequel to the book I had written with Scott Creighton, *The Giza Prophecy*, but it soon went beyond being a sequel, as what emerged was a fresh new look at this ancient structure. The working title for the book was *The Timeless Conception*, and I still plan to have this published one day.

For example, I had found numerous references to the mathematical constants, *pi, Phi, e* and *c* (the speed of light constant), in addition to what had already been discovered in the Great Pyramid concerning these constants.

Within the dimensions of the Great Pyramid I had found more than ten references to the speed of light in both miles and meters-per-second in a vacuum. This was on top of the fact that the latitude of 29.9792458ºN, which contains the nine numbers of the speed of light in a vacuum (*c*, constant: 299,792,458 meters-per-second) runs through the north edge of the truncated apex of the Great Pyramid some 7.5 meters from its apex-center. (See Note 720).

I had also gone some way into solving the mystery as to why concavities had been built into the four sides of the Great Pyramid, now noticeable in the exposed core masonry; the different 'base to height' ratios relating to a *spherical* object that I and others have now concluded was once designed to be placed on the apex-capstone of the Great Pyramid, but instead could have been secreted away inside it; the fascinating mathematical data that emerges when we apply various *circumcircles* to the dimensions of the Great Pyramid; the chamber shafts; the geophysical/geodetic-related angles in its cross-section angle geometry and which relate to the *Pythagorean Theorem;* the fact that the Great Pyramid was constructed on the apex of the triangular Nile Delta, which is exactly 1,000 times the size of the Great Pyramid; and the significant mathematical relationship that the Great Pyramid has with the true *Geographical Center of the Earth,* exactly 775 miles (1,247.34 km) distant, near Ankara, Turkey, as discovered by Holger Isenberg in 2003.

In the rather condensed summary of just some of my discoveries, which became one of the appendices for a new groundbreaking book which I will discuss in a moment, I hoped I had gone some way in defining the measurements relating to some of the pyramid's features, while at the same time demonstrating how these measurements work to produce the most remarkable, mathematical data yet seen to emerge from the Great Pyramid of Giza.

I could just as well have approached all this as if I were the architect myself, designing a pyramid which encapsulated the knowledge and understanding we have today concerning the measure of the Earth, the combined proportions of the Earth and Moon, the mathematical, universal constants mentioned above, and even the *fine-structure constant,* which is the most mysterious constant in physics. Once completed, then regarding the mathematical data and properties that I have factored into my designed pyramid, I could then take each of its features and compare the data each provides with the data provided by the Great Pyramid of Giza, and I would

wager that the comparisons between what I had designed on paper, and what was constructed at Giza and on the apex of the Nile Delta – which, although in a dilapidated state still provides us with a close indication of what was drawn-up in the initial phase – would be as accurate as 99.999 percent.[dcxcvi]

What is important to note here, though, is that some of the mathematical discoveries I was making *were naturally inspired by what I had found as a result of my study of the coordinates deciphered from the binary code.* In other words, what came up in my study would prompt me to look at certain aspects of the Great Pyramid, and I would then discover something new about it. For example, it was evident to me that the ancient Egyptian *royal cubit,* a standard unit of measurement by which the secrets of the Great Pyramid and Giza can be unlocked, was derived from the meter unit, which seems not to have originated in Paris in 1791, but reaches back far into antiquity, having somehow been determined as an 'Earth measure.' The royal cubit length of 0.5236 meters is 3.1416 *pi* divided by 6, as would have easily been derived from dividing by 6 the circumference of a circle with a diameter of one meter.[dcxcvii]

It was as if the findings I had been able to extract from the seven coordinates found in the Rendlesham binary code were also leading me to make these discoveries regarding what had been encoded or encapsulated within the structure of the Great Pyramid and also the layout of the other pyramids and the Sphinx on the Giza plateau by the designer/architect and builders.

Around 2015, these mathematical discoveries of mine reached the attention of renowned author, Robert Bauval, whose OCT (*Orion Correlation Theory*) – i.e., the theory that the three pyramids of Giza reflect the three belt stars of the constellation of Orion – had made a global media sensation in the mid-1990s with his 1995 book, *The Orion Mystery*. Robert is a friend of mine, as we are both authors in the same so-called 'alternative history' genre, and his co-author on several books, Graham Hancock, had kindly written a foreword on the book I co-authored with Scott Creighton.

After many discussions with Robert, he asked me to provide a summary of my findings about the mathematical properties of the Great Pyramid to use as an appendix for the new book he was currently writing with Sri Lankan-born British mathematician, astronomer and astrobiologist, Dr. Chandra

Wickramasinghe PhD, who was once a friend and colleague of the esteemed British astronomer, Sir Fred Hoyle, who passed in August 2001. In the 1960s, Wickramasinghe and Hoyle had systematically founded the new science of astrobiology, so I was highly honored and proud to contribute to Robert and Chandra's book, which was published on December 19, 2017 under the title, *Cosmic Womb: The Seeding of Planet Earth.*

The book expands on the *Panspermia* theory that Chandra developed with the celebrated astronomer Sir Fred Hoyle, and offers compelling evidence that all life, intelligence, and evolution on Earth were seeded by comets and cosmic intelligence; how life first came from interstellar dust and comets, and how later arrivals of cosmic dust and comets spurred evolution. The book also explores the possibility that universal knowledge may be stored in human DNA; how ancient cultures may have known a way to retrieve this knowledge . . . and reveals new discoveries about the dimensions of the Great Pyramid of Giza.

When the book was published, I was pleased to read one of the reviews about my contribution written by Alan S. Glassman, some of which is worth quoting here:

> "I found the most fascinating part of the book for me was contained in the three Appendices. Appendices I and II were written by Robert Bauval's architect brother, Jean-Paul, and dealt with specific geometric attributes of the construction. However, Appendix III by Gary Osborn was, frankly, a revelation in the amount of new information given about this most famous of pyramids. Osborn has meticulously calculated and solved many pieces of heretofore anomalous characteristics of the Great Pyramid of Giza that directly relate not only to the universal constants mentioned previously, but to recent discoveries in physics and in geography only possible today with advances in science and technology, like the capability of surveying the Earth from satellites.
>
> He proves that the Great Pyramid encodes within itself and in its placement on the planet the most accurate sizes of Mother Earth and her Moon and the distance between them. He shows how it represents the symbolic "squaring of the circle", demonstrates the fine structure constant α (alpha) so important in modern day physics, gives the exact number of days in a year and angle of the Earth's tilt, and answers the question of why the meter is considered a "divine unit" of measure.
>
> Osborn tells us he plans to elaborate on his findings soon in a new book. In the meantime, I recommend you

> visit his website at to find out more about the exciting work of this young man who presently resides in the U.K."[dcxcviii]

I am hardly a young man now and presently reside in the United States with my American wife Heather, but the reason why I quote this review is that no one knew – even Robert Bauval and Chandra Wickramasinghe – that a great deal of the discoveries I had made about the Great Pyramid of Giza, and which went into the appendix of *Cosmic Womb*, had been the result of the insights I had that were directly or indirectly related to what I had found while studying the seven coordinates found in the code since 2011 . . . a binary-coded message which is claimed to have originated during an encounter with an unidentified craft of unknown origin in Rendlesham Forest on Boxing Day, 1980.

Secret Chamber?

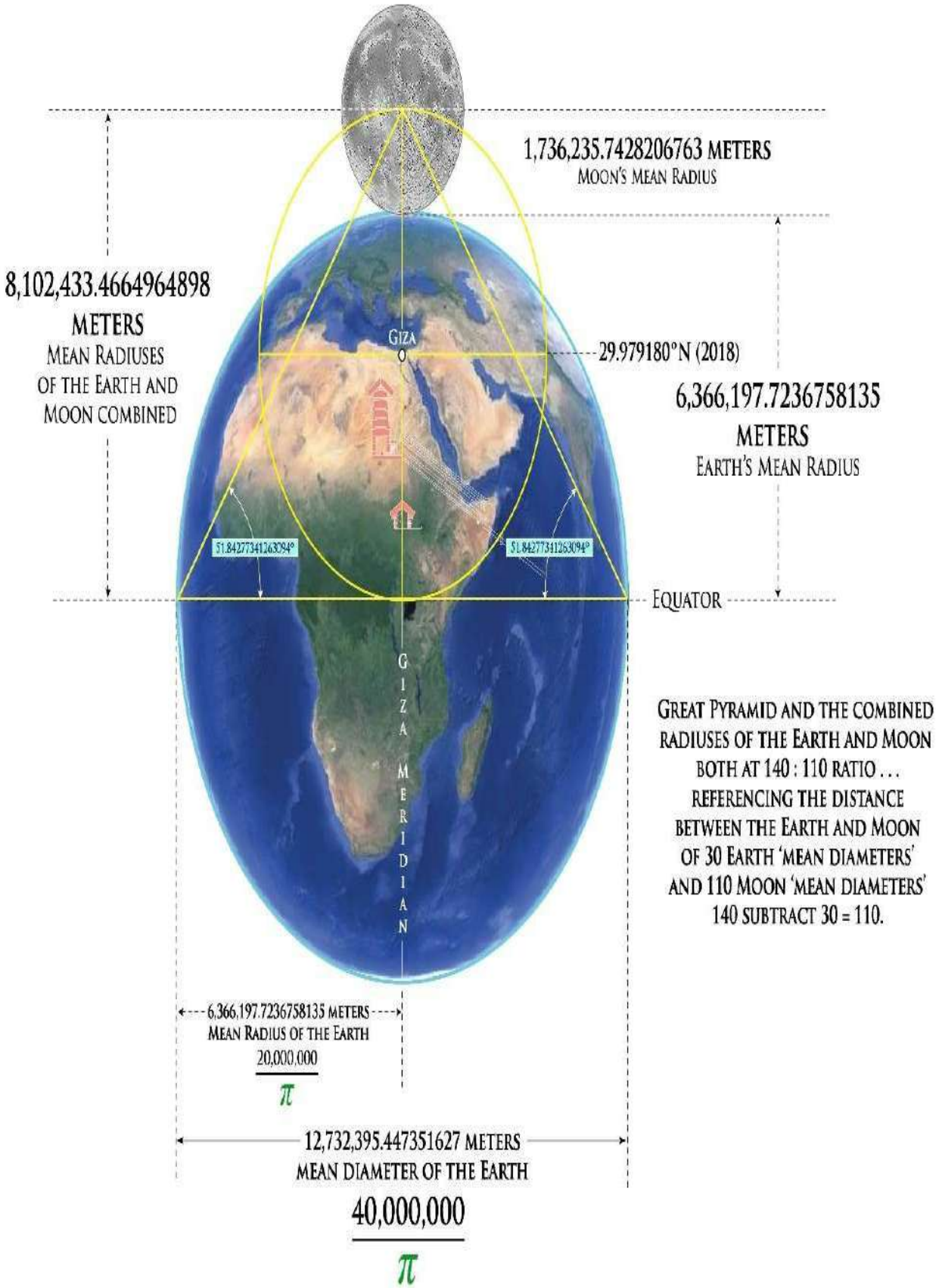
In the thirty-plus page summary of my work, which was completed in July of 2017, and which later became *Appendix III* published in the book *Cosmic Womb*, I had included the following discovery:

> "To appreciate WHY the architect had the north/south cross-section of the Great Pyramid constructed to the 14/11 or 140/110 'base to height' ratio dimensions, which also produces a precise side angle to fourteen decimal places of 51.84277341263094º, *we must view it all graphically by doing what the author John Michell first did.*
>
> (See *City of Revelation: On the Proportions and Symbolic Numbers of the Cosmic Temple* by John Michell, Garnstone Press, 1972.)
>
> One simply superimposes a cross-section diagram of the Great Pyramid over an image of the Earth along with the moon – with both placed in such a way that both the 6,366,197.7236758135-meters 'mean radius' of the Earth and the 1,736,235.7428206763-meters 'mean radius' of the moon are *tangentially joined* together to give a combined total of 8,102,433.4664964898 meters.
>
> (Again, these are long numbers, but these numbers are the result of setting a right-angle triangle calculator to 14 decimal places which gives us the precise side angle of 51.84277341263094º, and which I use here to demonstrate how accurate this data is, based on the

north/south cross-section side angles of the Great Pyramid derived simply from a 7/5.5 *seked* ratio.)

We also make sure that the base of the Great Pyramid aligns with the Equator, and that the Giza Meridian (once believed to be the world's Zero Prime Meridian in ancient times) is its centerline.

When we do this, we immediately grasp what we were meant to see . . . that the location of the Great Pyramid at Giza on the Earth is positioned right at the heart center of the image of the Great Pyramid superimposed over the Earth, and exactly where the Great Pyramid is located on the Earth.

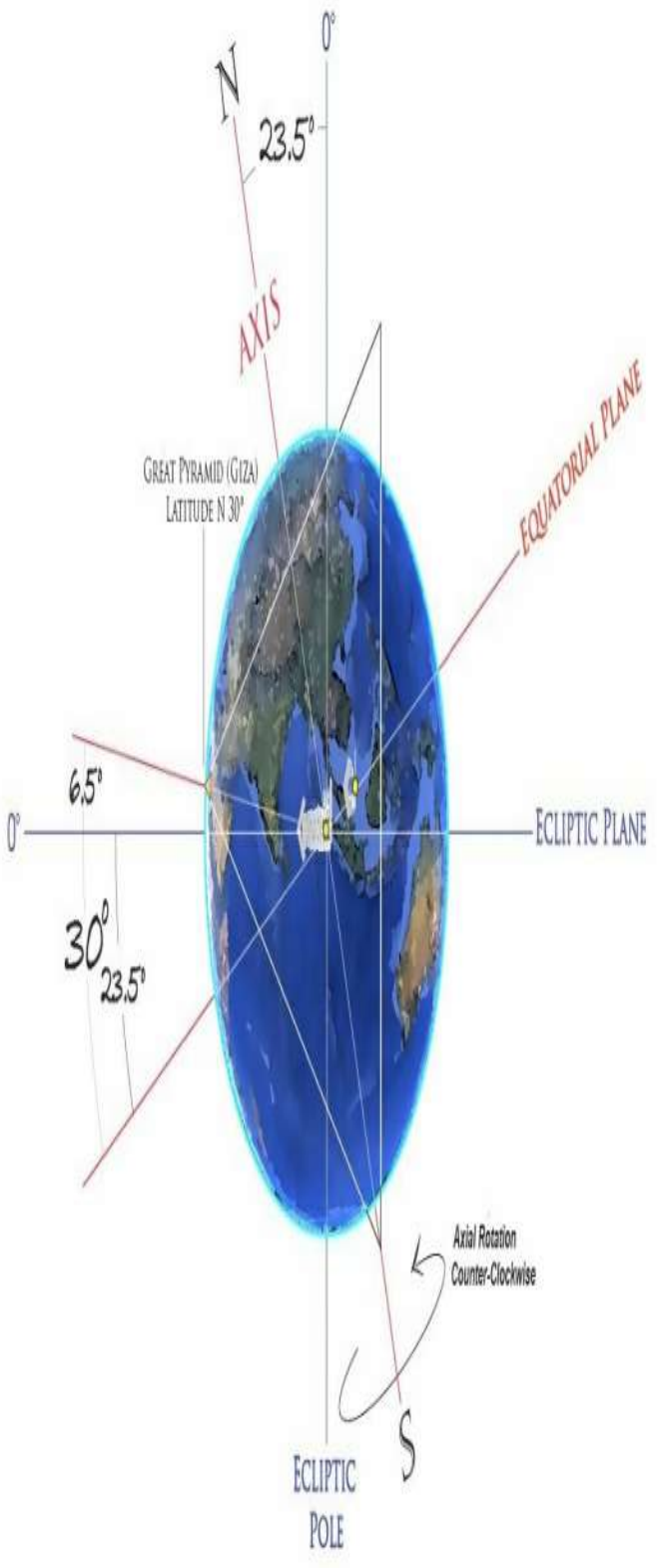


GREAT PYRAMID AND THE COMBINED RADIUSES OF THE EARTH AND MOON BOTH AT 140 : 110 RATIO . . . REFERENCING THE DISTANCE BETWEEN THE EARTH AND MOON OF 30 EARTH 'MEAN DIAMETERS' AND 110 MOON 'MEAN DIAMETERS' 140 SUBTRACT 30 = 110.

Fig. 5: North/south cross-section diagram of the Great Pyramid superimposed over a graphic of the combined proportions of the Earth and Moon, which then reveals Giza at the heart-center of the Great Pyramid.

During the Great Pyramid's inception phase, and to preserve the information encoded within it, it appears to have been decided that both the external and internal dimensions of the Pyramid be drawn-up to the combined proportions of the Earth and moon. However, the purpose was not just to preserve information and knowledge like an encyclopedia or almanac in stone . . .

As I had revealed in the book *The Giza Prophecy* (2012, co-authored with Scott Creighton), when a diagram of the north/south cross-section of the Great Pyramid showing all its internal features is superimposed over a graphic of the Earth, the apex of the Great Pyramid points towards its own location on the Earth via the geophysical/geodetic-related angles within its angle geometry.



Copyright © Gary Osborn 2008. All Right Reserved.

Fig. 6: The Great Pyramid geodetically points to its own location on the Earth via the significant angles, revealed when viewed in north/south cross-section and applied to the Earth

Quote:

"One of many spooky facts emerging from the geometry is that the Great Pyramid perfectly encodes its own exact position on Earth's surface. This achievement cannot be a coincidence and is far beyond the science of ancient Egypt as it is understood by Egyptologists."

Graham Hancock from the Foreword of *The Giza Prophecy* by Gary Osborn and Scott Creighton, Inner Traditions, Bear & Co, (2012).

As we can see, the result can be read like a map, just like the "map" above which is pointing to a specific location within the Great Pyramid – namely its *core heart center.*

What could be more accurate and as long-lasting and self-preserving than a 'map' that has been encoded within a stone-made mountain – especially a 'map' based on the combined proportions of the Earth and moon? Could this central point in the Great Pyramid be the location of another chamber? And if so, what would it contain?

The center-point of the Great Pyramid is on the Great Pyramid's *94th Course Level,* and it is interesting that 94 divided by 4 = 23.5, which is the all-round figure given to the obliquity (tilt angle) of the Earth's axis . . . 23.5º – an angle that is also evident within the north/south cross-section geometry of the Great Pyramid as I had first discovered in 2002, and as expressed in the last graphic above."

Why was I convinced of my discoveries, as summarized here?

What became apparent to me within the first year (2011) of working on the seven sets of coordinates found in the binary code, was that together all seven

coordinates are *pointing to the core 'heart-center' of the Great Pyramid of Giza,* as if there is a chamber or something important to be discovered there.

They do this, while also referencing the two internal chambers that have long been known for centuries. (How the seven coordinates point to the center of the Great Pyramid, as if alluding to an unknown chamber there while also referencing its known two internal chambers, is simple but very detailed. Detailing this discovery requires us to go through it thoroughly using a step-by-step process, and so this will be revealed and explained in Book Two of *The Rendlesham Enigma,* which will focus on the findings of the binary code.

When I relayed these findings about the coordinates to Jim Penniston around June of 2011, explaining and showing how all seven were pointing to the core center of the Great Pyramid of Giza, he was shocked by what I had found, and would keep repeating every time we discussed it that he was in awe of the fact that what he had received on Boxing Day, 1980 had contained this information and that he had no idea he had been carrying this around in his head all these years.[dcxcix]

We had many discussions on this initial discovery, especially what this could lead to and the practical logistics of it, and I mentioned that this conclusion was a "dead end" really, because there was no way we would ever be able to confirm whether this was true or not, as this would require a huge and costly-funded operation in which the Great Pyramid would have to be tunneled into to find this chamber, and this was nigh impossible with the current situation in Egypt, as the authorities there would never grant anyone permission to do this. I discovered many other things after that, but this was an ongoing concern in the five-plus years since I had made this initial discovery.

Then on November 2, 2017, almost two months before *Cosmic Womb* was published, in the *NewScientist, Daily News,* came the headline, which would make us think again….

"COSMIC RAYS HAVE REVEALED A NEW CHAMBER IN EGYPT'S GREAT PYRAMID"

The news story was written by Mika McKinnon (*see here*). It was reported that cosmic rays appear to have just unveiled a hidden chamber within

Egypt's most famous pyramid . . . the ancient Great Pyramid of Giza.

News of this was also reported by National Geographic the next day with the title: "MYSTERIOUS VOID DISCOVERED IN EGYPT'S GREAT PYRAMID" by Michael Greshko (*see here* and also view the diagram).

It was reported that without moving a stone, an international team, led by Kunihiro Morishima of the Nagoya University in Japan, were able to explore inside the core masonry of the Great Pyramid by scanning the whole structure using naturally occurring radiation – i.e., high-energy particles named *muons.* These muons originate from the collisions of cosmic rays (primarily protons emitted by stars) with the atoms in our upper atmosphere.

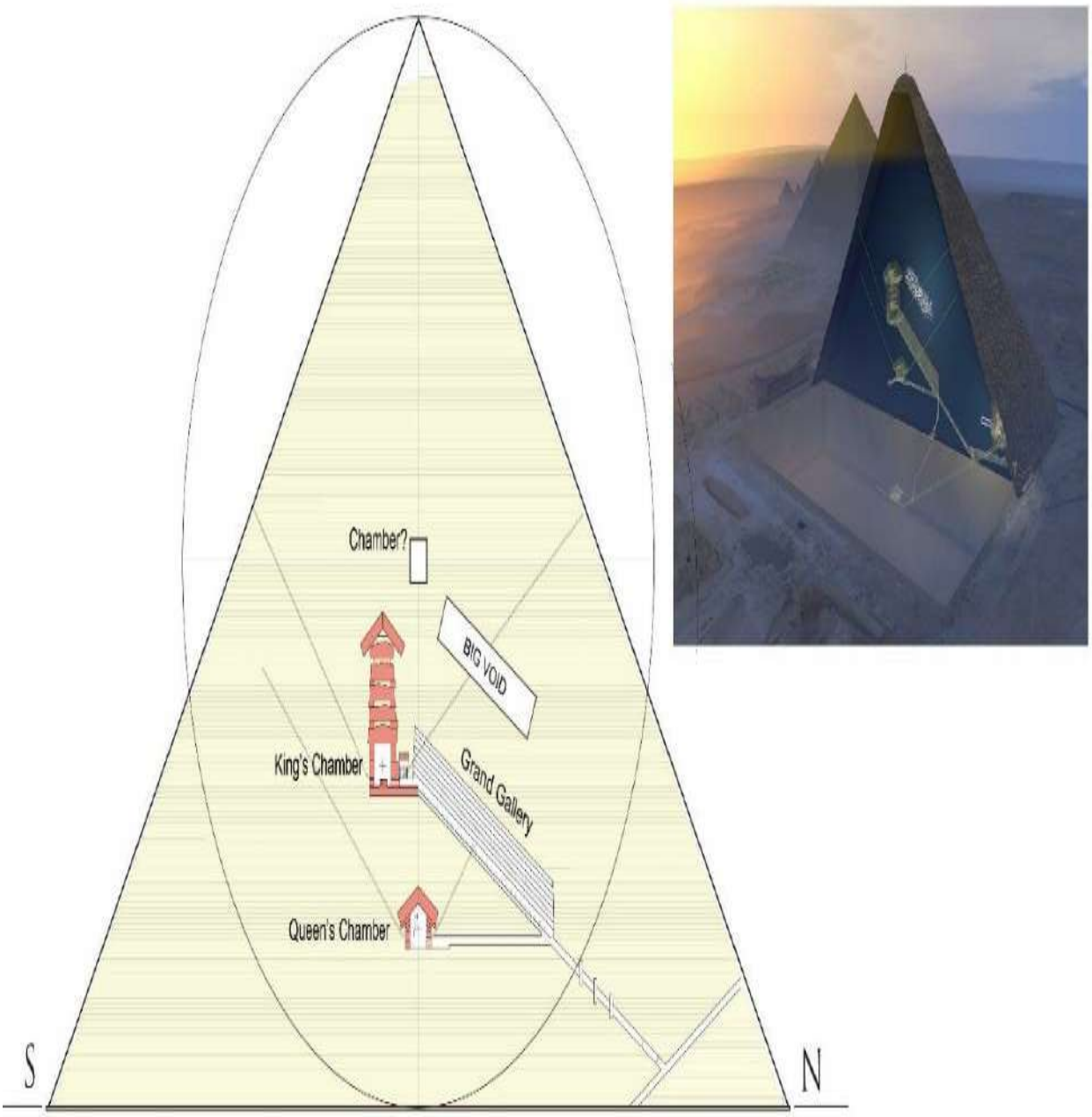
Muons can penetrate deep into rock, where they become absorbed at different rates, depending on the density of the rock they encounter. It was by placing muon detectors within and around the pyramid, that the team could see how much material the particles passed through. Christopher Morris at Los Alamos National Laboratory explained that the scanning of the pyramid in this way was similar to the technique used in imaging the internal structure of nuclear reactors, and added that when the muons encounter a dense area of mass then fewer muons get to the detector, and when there is less mass, more muons are able to reach the detector. So, by looking at the number of muons that had arrived at different locations and areas within the pyramid, as well as the angle at which they traveled, Morishima and his team were able to map out the cavities within the Great Pyramid.

The team used three different muon detectors to map out the interior of the pyramid starting with nuclear emulsion film within the Queen's chamber. Outside the pyramid, they also used detectors that recorded muons indirectly when the high-energy particles ionize the gas inside. With the detectors in position to record the muon particles, they were able to map the two internal chambers in the Great Pyramid, known as the "Queen's chamber," and the one above it, known as the "King's chamber," as well as all the connecting passage-ways and corridors. And it was after several months by using this method that the team was able to detect, through long exposure muon scanning, *a large space or void above the Grand Gallery.*

The Grand Gallery leads up at an angle of 26 degrees to the King's chamber, which is offset from the apex by 6.5 degrees (6.24º to be exact), and begins from the north end of a long corridor that leads eastwards and horizontally to the Queen's chamber, located on the vertical centerline of the

Great Pyramid. It was determined that this newly-discovered void above the Grand Gallery is 30 meters in length and has approximately the same volume as the Grand Gallery, which is 46.68 meters (153.1 ft) in length, and that like the Grand Gallery, it seemed to be leading upwards at the same angle.

Below is a graphic of the Great Pyramid in north/south cross-section, which I had first created in 2015. I have simply added the graphic from the article at the top right showing the location of the “Big Void,” as it has since been named, to illustrate that, like the Grand Gallery, which leads up towards the King’s Chamber, this large void could be leading upwards to the theorized ‘central chamber’ inside the Great Pyramid.



Artwork by Gary Osborn using © Copyright 2017. All Rights Reserved

Fig. 7: The unknown chamber at the center of the Great Pyramid, as targeted by the seven coordinates found in the Rendlesham binary code, and the "Big Void," which could be leading up to this chamber.

IF, as was being reported, the so-called "Big Void" is another gallery like the 'Grand Gallery' some distance below it, and IF this large rectangular space is

at the same inclination, which appears to be so but which has not been confirmed yet, then surely, like the Grand Gallery, this second "gallery" is leading upwards towards a significant destination, just as the Grand Gallery leads upwards to the King's Chamber. And if so, then just as I had predicted in my summary of my research work presented in the appendix published in the book *Cosmic Womb*, the location which this second gallery appears to be leading to could be *another chamber at the core-heart-center of the Great Pyramid*.

Again, this location is pointed at by the seven sets of geographical coordinates found in the binary code message that was transferred to Jim Penniston's mind, like a Christmas gift that had ultimately been offered to everyone on this planet when he touched the craft on Boxing Day morning, 1980.[dcc]

I think we can see already that there is a deeper reason as to why Jim Penniston kept secret the existence of the binary code for thirty years and why it took another seven years to be deciphered, as what would emerge from it seems to have been deliberately timed to coincide with certain things I had already discovered and documented and had become familiar with,[dcci] as well as events going on in the world today that are related.

And finally, in this regard it is worth mentioning another discovery I had made from my eight-year study of the seven coordinates found in the binary code, and one that is worthy of some serious attention, as it may go some way in proving that an 'advanced intelligence' perhaps from another space and time was behind the incidents that took place in Rendlesham Forest in December 1980 and why it has taken until now for the information contained in the message that Jim Penniston had received to finally be revealed.

". . . a case worthy of some considerable attention"

What follows is perhaps one of the most significant pieces of data to have emerged during my eight-year study of the seven coordinates from the code, as it relates to the present, demonstrating to us that information from the future sent back to the past, which then affects and alters the revelations that we are making with this information so that it only becomes relevant NOW in the present, is a reality.

First, I will quote the late astrophysicist and cosmologist, Carl Sagan from

his book, *The Cosmic Connection*, New York: Anchor Press, 1973. On page 205, Carl Sagan discusses alien/extraterrestrial intervention in prehistory and contemplates what might be the most compelling data to turn up in an ancient source, such as a myth, folktale or legend, that would warrant considerable attention and perhaps even convince us of this intervention:

> "There is only one category of legend that would be convincing: When information is contained in the legend that could not possibly have been generated by the civilization that created the legend – if, for example, a number transmitted from thousands of years ago as holy turns out to be the *nuclear fine structure constant*.[dccii] This would be a case worthy of some considerable attention." [My emphasis.]

It has been said that a signal or message received from somewhere else in the universe has to include a mathematical number so special that it leaves no doubt in making the receiver aware that the message was intentionally sent by an advanced intelligence. In October 2018, my attention was brought to one of the latitudes passing through Giza at a significant point by TWO of the seven sets of coordinates found in the Rendlesham binary code message. When I first saw this number turn up in the numbers of that latitude, I knew with certainty that the binary code SSgt. Jim Penniston received on Boxing Day 1980, was authentic.

This authentication came in the order of the 'fine-structure constant,' as mentioned by Carl Sagan.

But now, and only in the last few days as I write this having noted that this number relates to the present, it could only have originated from a technologically-advanced intelligence, either from the future or from a realm external to our time constraints.

It is important that I try and give the best summary as I can of this most fundamental of all mathematical constants so that the reader can at least grasp the basics and appreciate what is being revealed here and how all this relates to what has emerged by studying the seven coordinates found in the Rendlesham binary code.

The *Fine-Structure Constant*, also referred to as the *Coupling Constant* and denoted as 'α' (*alpha*), was originally named *Sommerfeld's Constant* after the German theoretical physicist, Arnold Johannes Wilhelm Sommerfeld (1868–1951), who introduced it in 1916 to account for the

splitting of atomic spectral lines. Alpha is referred to as the "fine-structure constant," since it shows up in the description of the *fine structure* of atomic spectra, and is described as the ratio of the square of the charge on the electron divided by Planck's constant and the speed of light. *Alpha* appears naturally in the equations relating to many electromagnetic phenomena and is central to relativity and quantum theory. It is the sum of certain fundamental constants of nature; allows life to exist on our planet, and is said to be *the fingerprint or DNA of each wavelength of light*.[dcciii] It is also considered the most fundamental of all mathematical constants, in that it is a dimensionless, pure number and not subject to our own Earth-based measuring systems.

Since 2014, the number of α (the fine-structure constant) had been determined at 0.007297352566355, shown here rounded-off to 15 decimal places, and this number is simply the result of 1 divided by 137.035999139.

137.035999139 is therefore the inverse (reciprocal) number of α (the fine-structure constant), denoted by the prefix α^{-1}.

Alpha . . . α = 0.007297352566355.
Inverse Alpha . . . α^{-1} = 137.035999139.

It is the inverse number that has led to the number 137 itself being *the most mystifying number known to physicists*.[dcciv]

The integer number 137 is often identified with *alpha* – easily memorized in the calculation 1 ÷ 137 = 0.0072992700729927, which gives a close approximation of the more precise value of alpha, the fine-structure constant.

According to the late astronomer, Carl Sagan, 137 is the quintessential candidate for the 'crown-jewel' of 'interstellar message' authentication, because knowledge of it presupposes a state of technology which allows a civilization to measure it. The more accurate the number is in terms of the number of decimals after 137, the more advanced the civilization. Thus, the string of numbers after the period (decimal point) following the number 137, becomes a measure of the level of knowledge and intelligence.

Author Robert Bauval has this to say about the number 137 in his book, *The Cosmic Womb:*

> "Notwithstanding the potential importance of 137 in the study of physics and cosmology, it also happens to be the 33rd prime number in the prime sequence, something that has not escaped

> the notice of mystics, who point out that it is the age attributed traditionally to Jesus at the crucifixion, [using Gematria the word "Crucifixion" also adds up to 137 – G.O.] and also the number of pearls in the traditional Muslim praying beads. The number 33 also happens to be the product of two primes, 3 and 11 (we shall later see how prime 11 was fundamental in the design of the Great Pyramid.) The number 137 also crops up in the Bible, where the age at death of three important patriarchs, Ishmael, son of Abraham and Hagar; Levi, son of Jacob; and Amram, father of Moses, is given as 137 years." [See Genesis 25:17; Exodus 6:16, and Exodus 6:20.][dccv]

Despite what we each believe concerning these religious and mystical connotations, the above connections related to the number 137 listed by Robert Bauval are mathematical facts. However, Carl Sagan's words regarding *"a number transmitted from thousands of years ago,"* – meaning the number 137, is just what I discovered within the dimensions of "G2," the second largest pyramid at Giza, which references the number 137 fourteen times in its height and base perimeter length in royal cubits.[dccvi]

But what is truly extraordinary is the fact that we find a close approximation of the inverse value of the fine-structure constant at 137.0357 in the Great Pyramid, in which it turns up a number of times, as I had discovered. And when we divide 1 by this number, we obtain the fine-structure constant *to seven decimal places.*

If I am proud of one thing that went into the book *Cosmic Womb,* it is this reference to the fine-structure constant, which I had found by studying the measurements and dimensions of the Great Pyramid:

> "Interestingly, author and intuitive mathematician Gary Osborn has also found this mysterious number 137 in the design of the Great Pyramid. In fact, he obtained 137.0357…, the inverse value of the fine-structure constant accurate to seven decimal places!
>
> Osborn used the measure of the east base side of the Great Pyramid, 230.3649 meters, and divided it by half the height of the pyramid, 73.304 meters. He then divided the result by 100 and multiplied the result by the constant *e*. The square of the result was 0.007297367733, which is the inverse of 1/137.035714326519. This result is 99.9998 percent accurate when compared to, 0.007297352566355 being the reciprocal of 1/137.035999139 . . . the fine-structure constant."[dccvii]

However, I discovered that the numbers in one of the latitude coordinates passing through Giza and at a significant point in the *Phi*-ratio geometry encoded there and to which the three Giza pyramids were positioned and constructed, *provides us with the fine-structure constant to eight decimal places.*

The "GOLDEN CUT" LATITUDE

Beneath figure 4, I asked that the reader take note of the north latitude value of **29.97662936ºN** which divides the *Phi*-ratio proportions of 1 from 0.618 in figure 4.

I would ask that the reader use a calculator to grasp and understand the full import of this.

> We simply multiply the numbers in the latitude – **29.97662936** – by **32**, which results in the number 959.25213952.
>
> Now, we can simply divide 959.25213952 by **7**, which gives the rounded-off result of, **137.03602**.

As with all the fundamental constants, every four years a new estimate or determination of the fine-structure constant (*alpha*) is presented by CODATA (Committee on Data for Science and Technology). For reasons of convenience, historically, the value of the inverse number of the fine-structure constant is the value often specified.

As mentioned, since 2014 and according to the CODATA Internationally recommended values of the fundamental physical constants, the inverse number of the fine-structure constant has remained at 137.035999139(31). This is the inverse number in its concise form, with the "(31)" at the end of the value representing the relative uncertainty in the value, which can be thought of as an "error range."[dccviii]

I would emphasize that when I began writing this concluding chapter in April 2019, so as to introduce the mathematical discoveries I had been making at Giza as a result of what emerged from the coordinates of the binary code, the 2014 CODATA value of 137.035999139 (first made available on

June 25, 2015), was still the determination of the inverse number of the fine-structure constant as presented in the *Wikipedia* article on the subject.

As regards the ever-changing estimates or determinations of the fine-structure constant the following is also significant and requires close attention:

- According to CODATA, in July 1969 (coinciding with the US Moon landing by Apollo 11), the determination of *alpha* (the fine-structure constant) was 0.007297351, with the inverse value of alpha being α^{-1} = 137.03602. The fine-structure constant determined at 0.**00729735**1455 was to 8 decimal places (shown here in bold) compared to the determination given by CODATA in 2014 and made available on June 25, 2015.

- In November 1981, almost a year after Jim Penniston received the binary code in December 1980, the determination of alpha was 0.007297354, with the inverse value of alpha being α^{-1} = 137.035968. The fine-structure constant determined at 0.**00729735**4 was also to 8 decimal places compared to the determination given by CODATA in 2014.

- In 1986, according to CODATA the inverse value for the FSC was given as α^{-1} = 137.0359895, again, producing alpha to 8 decimal places compared to the same CODATA 2014 determination.

We can see then that the inverse alpha result of 137.03602 calculated from the latitude numbers now passing through Giza (29.97662936ºN), and which is the same inverse alpha determination as was presented 50 years ago in July 1969, is only a close approximation in respect of the determined value given in 2014 of α^{-1} = 137.035999139.

We simply divide 1 by 137.03602, which results in 0.**00729735**1455… the fine-structure constant, as was determined in 2014 *to eight decimal places.*

But, really, to get this approximation of the fine-structure constant without calculating the inverse number first, all we need do after multiplying the

latitude numbers 29.97662936 by 32 – which again results in 959.25213952 – is then divide 7 by 959.25213952, which results in 0.**00729735**…

The Fine Structure Constant in Communication

> *'If "they" but know the seventh digit of the "fine structure constant," they are ages ahead of us (we know only the first five for sure, suspect the sixth.'*
>
> – Lambros D. Callimahos,[dccix] *Communication with Extraterrestrial Intelligence*, 1974. (Declassified NSA document).

It is now worth mentioning the plot of the 2018 movie, *UFO*, which starred Gillian Anderson and David Strathairn. The movie is about a talented college math student finding a binary coded message as a result of a UFO encounter (based on the O'Hare Airport Incident in 2008), which contains the fine-structure constant as a means of establishing that an advanced intelligence had sent the message.

During an interview in August 2018 by interviewer Robbie Graham, the director for the movie, Ryan Eslinger, was asked:

"What kind of research did you do for the movie?"

Ryan Eslinger:

> "NARCAP publishes technical reports on UFO sightings, including the O'Hare Airport sighting, and I also came across declassified documents that the NSA published online concerning potential methods of communication with other lifeforms. One document in particular talked about using things like the *Fine Structure Constant* in our communications, which informed the decoding of the signal. I also consulted with an astrophysicist at Ohio State University, Paul Sutter, who fact-checked the script (as much as you can fact-check a movie called "UFO"!). During our discussions, *the idea of using binary as a method of communication* came up." [My emphasis.][dccx]

Among these declassified NSA documents, which Ryan Eslinger mentions was surely the one written by Lambros D. Callimahos – the relevant quote from it given above. Also, like the quote by Carl Sagan presented earlier, what Ryan Eslinger says is also highly significant in light of the fact that the

Rendlesham Incident turned up a *binary coded message* with coordinates that included a reference to the fundamental constant of the universe, known as the *fine-structure constant*, that can easily be calculated from the numbers in the north latitude running through Giza (which the coordinates actually points us to) when the number is simply multiplied by **32**, and the result divided by **7**.[dccxi] Again, the result is the *fine-structure constant* to eight decimal places!

It was this which then led to my discovery of the *Phi* golden ratio data that had been encoded at Giza to which the placement of the three pyramids were aligned, *as the latitude that produces the fine-structure constant also divides the golden ratio between the proportions 1 and 0.618.* (Again, see figure 4.)

Shifting the Paradigm

According to mainstream/orthodox sources, the official coordinates for the Great Pyramid of Giza are given as 29°58'45.03"N, 31°08'03.69"E in DMS (degrees, minutes and seconds), which in DD (decimal degrees) are 29.9791750°N, 31.1343583°E – although the longitude coordinates are not realistic, as they fall 15.15 meters east of the center of the Great Pyramid. (See Note 716).

Those who believe that the *c* constant ('speed of light' in a vacuum) value of 299,792,458 meters-per-second is given in the latitude coordinates that pass through the center of the Great Pyramid, would no doubt be disappointed to discover that this is simply not true . . . *well not yet, in any case.* (Again, see Note 720).

Based on the data provided by Glen Dash during the Spring of 2018, the coordinates of the center of the Great Pyramid at ground level have been determined by ancient Egyptian researcher and author, Manu Seyfzadeh, as DMS: 29°58′45.04802″N, 31°08′03.12389″ E, which in decimal degrees are 29.97918001°N, 31.13420108°E.[dccxii] There is a difference of some 0.8056 meters between the coordinates determined above, which relate to 2018, and the center (ground-level) coordinates of the Great Pyramid 38 years earlier in 1980 of DMS: 29°58'45.0316"N, 31°08'03.1005"E (DD: 29.97917544°N, 31.1341946°E) when the binary code was received by SSgt. Jim Penniston.[dccxiii]

I shall explain:

Due to the recorded tectonic shift movements of the plates that make up

the Earth's crust, it is an established fact that the 'African plate' has been slowly moving in a general northeast direction over the last 100 million years. Although the data varies due to numerous factors, recent estimations give a gradual shift at the rate of approx. 2.15 centimeters a year.[dccxiv] According to the 'Plate Motion Calculators' I have consulted, Giza is moving at 2.12 cm a year at present, averaging at the azimuth heading of approx. 51 degrees.

The latitude and longitude grid coordinates of the globe are fixed and remain the same. It is the fifteen major plate landmasses and numerous minor plates which are moving, which means that over time and as we check the coordinates of certain locations on the extremely slow-moving land surfaces of the planet, the geographical coordinates – especially at seven or eight decimal places – will be seen to have changed in value at these locations. Our GPS (Global Positioning System) satellite technology uses real-time tracking to make the slight adjustments needed in consideration of these ongoing geologic changes and activities.

For example, the latitude of 29.97662936ºN which at present is passing through Giza, dividing the *Phi*-ratio, 'golden section' proportions of 1 and 0.618 encoded there, as shown in figure 4, extends to eight decimal places. The seventh decimal place measures an area of 11 mm, and any coordinates with eight decimal places measures an area of 1.1 mm. So, if the African Plate at Giza is moving in a general northeast direction at a rate of 2.12 centimeters per-year, then even over a decade of time there would be a noticeable change in the coordinates running through Giza and at certain significant points on the monuments constructed there.

According to this data, if we take the orthodox dating of the Great Pyramid, of say, 4,589 years ago (2,570 BCE), the coordinates of the Great Pyramid at that time would have reflected its position at a distance of 98.6635 meters at the southwest heading of 231 degrees from its current position. This is according to the data at present, as we really cannot be specific, because with the slow movement of the African Plate over this length of time there would be obvious variables to consider such as slight changes in the rate of speed as well as the azimuth angle of the northeast heading or direction. Nevertheless, this would mean that in 2,570 BCE, the latitude passing through Giza, dividing the *Phi*-ratio, 'golden section' proportions of 1 and 0.618 that had been encoded there and to which the Giza pyramids were positioned, would have still provided the fine-structure

constant to seven digits or six decimal places – i.e., 0.007297…

And even if the Great Pyramid had been built as far back as say, 10,000 BCE, (12,019 years ago – the same era that geologist, Robert Schoch gives to the dating of the Sphinx) – the result would be the same with the latitude in respect of Giza at this same position passing through Giza and generating the fine-structure constant to seven digits or six decimal places.

So, if constructing the pyramid monuments of Giza and the *Phi*-related geometry around these special latitude coordinates which then produces the fine-structure constant, *was intentional* – which seems likely in light of these new discoveries (see figure 12 in the endnotes section) – then the designer/architect must have known the first seven digits of the most fundamental constant in the universe, which we refer to today as *alpha* – the 'fine-structure constant' . . . which means "he" or "they," were/are "ages ahead of us," as Lambros D Callimahos states in the quote given above from the declassified NSA document, *Communication with Extraterrestrial Intelligence*, 1974.[dccxv]

It is an incredible fact that in 1916 – the year Arnold Sommerfeld had discovered the fine-structure constant of 1/137 (0.00729) – no one was aware that the 'golden cut' latitude passing through Giza (which would have been 29.9766169ºN based on this data), already contained the correct inverse number of the fine-structure constant and to a number of decimal places that hadn't been discovered as yet, easily unlocked by the "key" of these three simple calculations:

29.9766169 x 32 = 959.2517408.
959.2517408 / 7 = 137.035963.
1 / 137.035963 = 0.**00729735**... *alpha to eight decimal places.*

Authentication of the Binary Code Message

Evidence that Information from the Future sent back to the past, and which both predicts and affects the present, is a Reality

Now, it should be noted that the seven coordinates found in the binary code, as received by Jim Penniston in 1980, relate to the Earth's landmasses as they were in 1980. But what is particularly interesting – even astonishing – is the discovery that thirty-nine years ago in 1980, the 'Golden Cut' line at Giza which divides the *Phi*-ratio 'golden section' proportions of 1 and 0.618, had aligned and synchronized with the latitude coordinates of **29.9766248ºN**

which by the same mathematical formula with the numbers 32 and 7, produces the fine-structure constant to 11 decimal places according to the CODATA 2014 determination. (See figure 12 in the end notes section).

This discovery which came to me at the end of 2018, was made as a result of the fact that TWO of the seven coordinates deciphered from the binary code were pointing my attention to the 'Golden Cut' line at Giza as having aligned with the latitude of 29.9766248ºN back in 1980, and when the latitude passing through the center of the Great Pyramid in decimal degrees was 29.97917544ºN, which in DMS is 29°58′45.0316″N.[dccxvi]

Using the same formula, the latitude numbers of **29.9766248** x **32** = 959.2519936, divided by **7** = **137.0359990857…**

We then divide 1 by 137.0359990857 = 0.**00729735256…** – the fine-structure constant known as *alpha* to eleven decimal places! This produced a match with the fine-structure constant that was three decimal places more than is produced by the latitude of 29.97662936ºN passing through the same position at Giza today.

The Fine-Structure Constant to 13 Decimal Places expressed in the 'Golden Cut' Latitude at Giza, 1980

However, after a week of some contemplative thought on this, to my surprise I then discovered that the 2018 CODATA recommended values had just been made available on May 20, 2019, as published by NIST (National Institute of Standards and Technology). The inverse value of the fine-structure constant determined by Mohr, P. J.; Taylor, B. N.; Newell, D. B., is now α^{-1} = **137.035999084**, replacing the CODATA 2014 determination. This new determination was then published by *Wikipedia* on Sunday, May 26, 2019, only two days ago, as I write this and just when I thought I was completing this concluding chapter.

That this new data was timely is an understatement. It simply meant that the 1980 alignment with the latitude of **29.9766248ºN** passing through Giza as the 'Golden Cut' line dividing the *Phi*-ratio 'golden section' proportions of 1 and 0.618, produced a number that closely matches the new determination of the inverse value of the fine-structure constant that had just been published.

The numbers of the latitude passing through Giza in 1980 of **29.9766248** x **32** / **7** = **137.0359990857**…

The inverse value of the fine-structure constant, published May 26, 2019 is α^{-1} = **137.0359990**84.

As we can see, the matching value at eleven digits or eight decimal places is **137.03599908**.

Dividing 1 by the inverse **137.0359990857** (as was produced by simply multiplying the numbers in the latitude, 29.9766248ºN by 32 and dividing the result by 7), produces the fine-structure constant at, 0.00729735256919327369 46…, which we simply round-off to 0.**0072973525692**, *and which is to thirteen decimal places* according to the latest determination of 1 / **137.0359990**84 = 0.**0072973525692**838…[dccxvii]

Now I know why my completing this chapter was delayed until now when I had originally planned to have it completed before the new year, but due to unforeseen circumstances I had to begin it during the second week in April 2019. In fact, one could say that the book itself was delayed because what I had already discovered with the coordinates from the code concerning this latitude passing through Giza in 1980 was awaiting my noticing this new determination. Immediately after discovering this new determination of the fine-structure constant, I then had to revise what I had already written so far in this chapter to include it because now it all made perfect sense.

I could only conclude that the new determination of the fine-structure constant published by *Wikipedia* on May 26, 2019, and which now matches the alignment at Giza in 1980 – an alignment, which two of the seven coordinates from the Rendlesham binary code had brought my attention to – was simply a demonstration of some form of ‘time manipulation’ on behalf of whomever had devised the code.[dccxviii]

These facts are yet another indication that this part of the code was meant to be deciphered at this time, right now during the last week of May 2019, and not in the 30 years between 1980 and 2010, and not in the nine years since 2010, because it is only now that all of us can see this through utilizing the more advanced computer technology we have at our fingertips. And what’s more, we would have needed the most recent determinations of the fine-structure constant given in 2018, but made available to the public only recently on Sunday, May 26, 2019, to see the 1980 latitude alignment at Giza which produces a result that is commensurate with the determination of the

fine-structure constant today.

Whoever had devised the code knew this. In other words, the coordinates from the code received by Jim Penniston in 1980, as claimed, had predicted this new determination of the fine-structure constant published on May 26, 2019, by pointing us to the 'Golden Cut' latitude running through Giza, which produces this very same determination of the fine-structure constant when it was mathematically evident in 1980. It appears that it was also known that I would be writing about this revelation concerning the latitude that generated the fine-structure constant at Giza in 1980 when this new determination, which matched the 1980 results became available. I simply had to be working on this and at this time or I would not have searched the Internet to see if the latest determination had been given. And after noting that the new determination had been given, I then discovered that it actually reflected the latitude result at Giza in 1980![dccxix]

In any case, on seeing all this, Jim Penniston said, "*It seems by design and it shows the reason why the contact was made in 1980, and that it was all about the message.*"

As mentioned, this new determination of the fine-structure constant presented now in May 2019, was evident at Giza in 1980 to 13 decimal places, and this was almost a year BEFORE the inverse value of the fine-structure constant was determined in November 1981 at the much lower estimate of α^{-1} = 137.035968(23), which is 0.**0072973**42… – the fine-structure constant to only 8 decimal places (shown here in bold) compared to the new determination published today.

In contemplating these facts, it is mindboggling to think that whoever devised the binary code knew exactly WHEN the latitude of **29.9766248ºN** would be seen to synchronize with the abstract line that passes through Giza . . . *a line which divides the 1 and 0.618 proportions of the Phi, golden mean, ratio-related measured distances on the Giza plateau to which the pyramids had been deliberately positioned.*

But again, the only time when it could be determined that this line position at Giza had aligned or synchronized with the latitude of 29.9766248ºN in 1980 due to the slow tectonic shift of the African Plate, was not 1980, and not in 2010, when the existence of the binary code was made public – and not even in 2014 when the full message was published and when the last determination of the fine-structure constant was presented . . . *but NOW in*

the present, and this is evident with what we can now determine easily through using contemporary online satellite mapping programs and distance calculators, and I cannot emphasize this enough.

Because Giza, like the rest of the African Plate, is moving slowly northeast, the abstract 'Golden Cut' line dividing the *Phi*-ratio, 'golden section' proportion distances of 1 and 0.618 at Giza, first moved into and *synchronized* with the north latitude position of exactly 29.9766248ºN in 1973. This alignment then culminated seven years later in 1980. Giza having moved further northeast, means that seven years later in 1987 this significant position was no longer identified by the latitude of 29.9766248ºN.[dccxx] This also means that symbolically, and in the entire timeline of human history, there was only a "window" area in time of some fourteen years to see and note this significant alignment concerning the most accurate value of the fine-structure constant yet according to the most recent determination made now in May 2019 some 39 years in the future, which is when all this information has now emerged. It could only have been predicted by whoever had devised the code.

Of course the time when this could have been discovered in 1980 has now passed. But this doesn't make the significance of the fine-structure constant – i.e., what we have been led to and meant to see – any less important, because the most astonishing thing about this is the recent determination of the fine-structure constant coming to my attention on May 28, 2019 while I was writing this and while relying on the determination made by CODATA in 2014. In other words, I could only really see, note and appreciate what is now evident in the present using technology that had also helped me to discover this information encapsulated within the seven coordinates from the binary code in the first place.

The remarkable fact is, that back in 1980 the binary code had already contained all this information only now making sense in the present, which means the code is still offering up information even now and in real time that is indeed relevant in the present. For me, this shows evidence, if not proof, of intervention from an advanced intelligent source.

It is truly extraordinary to think that all physicists needed to do to obtain the latest value of the *fine-structure constant* to 13 decimal places, as was only just now published in May 2019, was multiply by 32 the **29.9766248** numbers in the north latitude coordinates that passed through Giza in 1980 at precisely 282.744 meters (540 royal cubits) directly south of the latitude

coordinates 29.97917544ºN, and which divided the 1.618 *Phi*-ratio encoded there, and then simply divide the results by 7. (See Notes 715 and 717). And what is more astonishing is the fact that this information has emerged from the significant alignments of two coordinates out of the seven found in the Rendlesham binary code.

After everything I have revealed in this concluding chapter, it could be said that to show that the communication or message in binary code which Jim Penniston received in 1980 had been *authentically* sent by an advanced intelligence, then *the fine-structure constant is exactly what we are being led to.*

But while the fine-structure constant to thirteen decimal places is being offered to us in respect of the determination just published just two days ago as I write this, in addition we are also being offered factual knowledge of what had already been encoded at the ancient site of Giza . . . *which is the irrefutable FACT that the pyramids had been constructed to the Phi-ratio.* (See figures 3 and 4 above and also figures 8 and 12 in the end notes section).

Just meditate on this for a moment . . .

There are only two latitude coordinates in the Earth's grid from which we can obtain the fine-structure constant (alpha) in this most simplest of ways . . . *and one of them happens to pass though Giza?* . . The other is 29.9766248ºS. But not only does this north latitude pass through Giza, *it also represents the 'Golden Cut,' which divides the Golden Proportions of the Phi-ratio, encoded at Giza to which the pyramids are positioned.* The odds against all this being intentional are off the scale.

Lastly, if it can be proven through forensic testing that the notebook pages on which the binary code had been written down by Jim Penniston dates to 1980, then the above surely demonstrates communication by a highly-advanced intelligence that can manipulate time.[dccxxi]

As mentioned, to reveal how the seven coordinates lead us to this information would mean explaining in depth several other discoveries at the same time, as the data that has emerged from the coordinates of the Rendlesham binary code is arranged in such a way that everything is holistically linked, with one discovery confirming another, which is confirmed in turn by something else.[dccxxii] This is why this discovery and everything I have outlined in this epilogue and more will be revealed in detail

in *The Rendlesham Enigma,* Book Two: *A Code Within a Code.*

GLOSSARY OF ABBREVIATIONS and TERMS

AFOSI . . . Air Force Office of Special Investigations
BSC . . . Base Security Council. An annual base security meeting, Chaired by Wing and Base Commanders and all Deputy Chiefs. The council is responsible for oversight of all Security Operations.
BOGEY . . . Unidentified/unknown blip on radar screen signal which might indicate a hostile aircraft.
C-3 . . . USAF communications and electronic security facilities.
CIA . . . Central Intelligence Agency
CINCUSAFE . . . Commander in Chief of United States Air Forces in Europe
CSC . . . Central Security Control, Security control center for both bases.
DIA . . . Defense Intelligence Agency
DIS . . . Defense Intelligence Staff
DOD . . . Department of Defense
DS8 . . . Defense Secretariat 8 (British UFO Department)
Helping Hand . . . A telephonic reporting of a security report of a possible hostile event involving or the jeopardy of Priority A,B, or C resources.
FOIA . . . Freedom of Information Act
FOL . . . Forward Operating Locations to deploy aircraft operations during contingency plans.
LE . . . USAF Law Enforcement, responsible for all non-priority operations. Mostly policing.
LED . . . USAF Law Enforcement Desk, control center for LE personnel.
LIMFAC . . . Limiting Factors
MAJCOM . . . Major Air Command, USAFE is a Major Air Command.
MOD . . . Ministry of Defense (British equivalent to the DOD)
NASA . . . National Aeronautics and Space Administration
NBC . . . Nuclear, Biological, Chemical
NCO . . . Non-Commissioned Officer
NCOIC . . . Non-Commissioned Officer in Charge (usually of a section or department within a squadron
NSA . . . National Security Agency
NWSRG . . . Nuclear Weapons Security Review Group. A Base Security Council sub-meeting conducted monthly, Chaired by the Base Commander and all Deputy Combat Support Group Commanders.
PRP . . . Personnel Reliability Program, (a safety program which continually

screens personnel who are or could be assigned to protect nuclear weapons or weapons systems.
PTSD . . . Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder. Medical condition resulting from extreme trauma.
RAF . . . Royal Air Force
SAS . . . Special Air Service, an elite British military unit.
SNAP . . . An individual awaiting discharge for cause/disqualification or mandatory cross training due to disqualifying situation in present career field.
SOP . . . Standard Operating Procedures
SP . . . Security Police
UAP . . . Unidentified Aerial Phenomenon
UNITREP . . . Unit reporting. A monthly readiness and limitation report which when compiled is Top Secret. Information which is passed up through MAJCOM and to Air Staff.
USAF . . . United States Air Force
USAFE . . . United States Air Forces Europe
VA . . . US Department of Veterans Affairs
W&S . . . Weeds and Seeds. Individual who is awaiting discharge for illegal drug use.
WCP . . . Wing Command Post, receives all down channel alerts and up channel reports for the entire wing.
WSA . . . Weapons storage area.

Jim Penniston

Born in Monroe, Wisconsin, in 1954. James W. Penniston was raised in the mid-west. After graduation from High School, Jim Penniston entered the Air Force in 1973 and was immediately chosen for special duty with the SAC Elite Guard in Omaha Nebraska, where he worked Security for the SAC Command Post, providing security for General Officers, Congressmen, Foreign Heads of States, and the President and members of his Cabinet. Penniston volunteered for re-assignment in 1975 to RAF Alconbury England where he work flight operations. He was then reassigned in 1977 to Malmstrom A.F.B. Montana, as a Flight Security Controller for the protection and launch readiness of twenty Minuteman ICBM’s.

In June 1980, James received orders to the infamous 81st Tactical Fighter

Wing at RAF Bentwaters England, then the largest tactical fighter wing in the Air Force. While there, James work flight operations till the incident and then was promoted to the position of Non-Commissioned Officer In Charge (NCOIC) of Security Police Plans and Programs.

It was during his tour at Bentwaters in Suffolk, England that Staff Sergeant Penniston and his team were “First Responders” to a security investigation of an unidentified craft-of-unknown-origin, located just outside RAF Woodbridge, England, in December 1980. The event, is now known as the Rendlesham Forest Incident, and is the most documented UFO/UAP account in military history.

Penniston left RAF Bentwaters in 1984. He arrived at Ellsworth A.F.B. South Dakota and worked in Group Pass and Registration. Later that year he assumed the position of NCOIC of Security Police Group Plans and Programs at Ellsworth A.F.B., South Dakota. After three years, Penniston was then assigned to Bitburg AB, Federal Republic of Germany in 1987, where he worked flight operations, and NCOIC of Security Police Resource Management. During his career, Jim Penniston held key assignments throughout the world. He remained assigned to Bitburg while serving in Desert Shield and Desert Storm. Penniston also had twenty-three temporary duty assignments, which encompassed the entire globe at various times during his tenure in the Air Force. He wrote defense, security, counter-terrorism, and contingency plans for the USAF and NATO. Additionally, he provided security support for Air Force One, and other classified aircraft weapon systems. Penniston held for the majority of his twenty year career, a U.S. TOP SECRET/BI/SCI and a NATO TOP SECRET COSMIC/ATOMAL security clearance. After the Gulf War, Penniston was re-assigned to Grissom A.F.B., Indiana working flight operations until his retirement from the Air Force in November 1993

A speaker at two National Press Club events, Jim Penniston’s first responders account of the Rendlesham Forest Incident has been featured worldwide on numerous television and radio programs and he is a frequent lecturer and presenter at numerous MUFON and other related events and conferences of similar subject matter. In addition, Jim Penniston has been a contributor to various books concerning this phenomenon and has been active in the Rendlesham Forest Investigation from the onset. He and his fellow witnesses have pursued the seeking of the truth from then to present day. He has worked and appeared for the following television and production

companies during that pursuit: London Weekend Television, BBC 3, BBC 2, Sci Fi Channel, A&E, Discovery Channel, ABC Television, History Channel, Tokyo Broadcasting Television Japan, ABC Television Australia, Tower Productions, Mentorn Productions, MPH Entertainment, FOX Productions, Prometheus Pictures and many other television and radio programs.

Jim Penniston graduated from college in 2003, with a Bachelors in Criminal Justice. After retirement he worked as a Human Resource Manager for manufacturing and county government in Illinois where he now resides.

Gary Osborn

Gary Osborn was born in Camberwell, London. Brought up in Peckham, London, Gary attended Peckham Park Primary and then William Penn Grammar in Dulwich, London. Gary has been a writer on mysticism and esoteric traditions for almost twenty years. Considered an author in the so-called 'alternative history genre,' Gary has written and co-written three books and numerous articles covering subjects related to Ancient Mysteries: Esoteric traditions, Alchemy, Mysticism, Ancient Shamanism and the nature of reality and human consciousness. He is known for the best-seller, *The Shining Ones* (2006).

Gary has also worked with director and producer Chance Gardner on the second season of the popular cult series *Magical Egypt*, and is a regular on the show in which his research and insights into human consciousness and mystical experience has been showcased along with the work of other prominent authors and researchers. He has collaborated with authors Scott Creighton, Philip Coppens and Robert Bauval on books and various articles – especially about the new discoveries regarding the Great Pyramid of Giza. Gary contributed an appendix to Robert's book *Cosmic Womb* co-authored with Professor Chandra Wickramasinghe Ph.D, which was published December 2017.

Since January 2011, Gary has been closely working with Jim Penniston (TSgt. USAF ret), primary witnesses of the *Rendlesham UFO Forest Incident.* Gary's work and findings are associated with the seven sets of coordinates deciphered from the pages of the binary code that Jim Penniston claims he received during the incident. Work is still in progress and the findings are to be included in a future book with Jim Penniston. The working title is *The Rendlesham Enigma,* Book Two, due for publication. Updates and further information will be presented on the *Rendlesham Forest Incident Website.*

Gary Osborn has appeared on BBC Radio Nottingham and also The *James Whale Show* on *TalkSport,* and has also presented a series of lectures – appearing at *The Theosophical Society* in London, *QuestCon 05*, once organized every year by author, Andrew Collins, and also BUFORA (British UFO Research Association). Gary has been a guest on Whitley Strieber's *Dreamland* Radio show *Revelations* with host William Henry, also *Behind the Paranormal* with hosts Paul and Ben Eno, and also *Coast to Coast* AM with host George Noory. He has been 'Author of the Month' twice on the Graham Hancock Website to promote the books *The Serpent Grail* (2005) and *The Giza Prophecy* (2012). Gary's work has been featured on the *Great Pyramid of Giza Research Association Website*, and also *The Heretic* Magazine, *Atlantic Rising* Magazine, *Sub Rosa* Magazine and *Hera* – an Italian magazine.

Gary is happily married to Heather Elizabeth Osborn (formerly Adams), also a writer, English professor who has featured in the Discovery TV documentaries *Forbidden History* and *What on Earth!* Gary is presently living in Pennsylvania USA with Heather and his stepson Sean. He has one son, Cameron, and three daughters, Lisé, Freya and Angel.

Acknowledgments

With the writing of the definitive book on the Rendlesham Enigma, many people contributed, both large and small. All contributions were vital in this roll and we cannot express the dedication, perseverance, friendships, support and love from these people. Whether from the three days in December 1980, or the aftermath and along the path to the present day; either directly or indirectly involved and/or in a supporting and inspiring role, each of the people whom we mention below made this book what it is.

It is with our heartfelt thanks that we had most of these people beside us in this full disclosure endeavor. No order in naming them has been given to their direct or indirect contribution or importance:

SSgt Monroe Nevels, MSgt J.D. Chandler, CMSgt John Hill, Colonel Charles Heubusch, Major General Gordon Williams, Colonel Theodore Conrad, Colonel Charles Halt, Major Edward Drury, Major Malcolm Zickler, Lt. Bruce Englund, SSgt Dave Coffey, SSgt Donald Dillard, TSgt Robert Biordi, TSgt Daniel Shirah, SSgt Lew Butler, TSgt J.D. Ingalls, Major Chad Smith, SrA Richard (Bert) Bertolino, Sgt Richard McCulley, Sgt Randy Smith, Lori Buoen, Patricia Bullock Williams, Robin Lebair Burneka, Christine Fitzpatrick, Darren DeBoy, Phil Longmeier, Roxana Justiz-Norvais, Paola Harris, Nick Pope, the late Georgina Bruni, Leslie Kean, Kim Sheerin, Herb Miller, Mike Fisher, James Fox, Ali Dubrow, Peter Mandeville, David Young, Sacha Christie, Scott Creighton, Manu Seyfzadeh, Chandra Wickramasinghe PhD, Robert Bauval, Jean-Paul Bauval, David Halpin, Andy Batye, Alan Green, Jack Sarfatti, Ronald L. Mallett, Rick Peters, Matthew Petti, Joe and Cathy Luciano, Professor J. Paul DeVierville, Joanne Penniston, Jennifer Penniston, Sarah Penniston, June Osborn and Stanley Adams.

Special thanks goes to Gary’s wife, Heather Elizabeth Osborn, who edited

and contributed her own insights to this book, Maryann Sperry who created the hard copy and Alberto Forgione for the cover artwork.

And finally, this book is dedicated to the men and woman of the 81st Security Police Squadron, as well as those who wish to remain "off the radar." (You know who you are).

Appendix I

Lawrence Warren

DISCREPANCIES, INCONSISTENCIES AND CONTRADICTIONS

Wednesday, December 24 (Christmas Eve) 1980:
Larry Warren:

"The day before Christmas, I left for Germany with my friend Mark. We had met two German girls in London the previous week at Le Beat Route, a club on Greek Street. We had gotten along well at the time and the girls invited us to spend the holiday with them and their families near Frankfurt. We had a great time, despite a severe language barrier. However, I think the girls lost interest in Mark and me on the second night. We just sat around and stared at their parents and they at us, while the girls went out with the German boyfriends. On, or about 27 December, we flew back to RAF Mildenhall to begin our shift the next night."

Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 32).

Warren ends with "the next night," and that would have been Sunday, December 28, 1980 – some 18 hours after the third night's events involving Col. Halt, SSgt. Monroe Nevels and an off-duty A1C John Burroughs.

Thursday, December 25, Christmas Day, 1980:
Georgina Bruni, summarizing what she was told by Larry Warren in 1999:

> "He [Warren] and Mark had driven to Ipswich railway station and parked Mark's car in the car park. They were catching a train to London to meet two German girls, but first they visited a music shop that was situated near the station.
>
> I reminded Larry that it was Christmas Day and the shops were most likely closed during that period. He said Arabs owned the shop, but when I suggested that back in 1980 it might have still been the law to close on Christmas Day, he decided it was not open after all. He now explained that some men were delivering merchandise to the shop and he had stopped them to ask about prices."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 101).

During a phone conversation on June 25, 1992, between Larry Warren and Colonel Halt (tape-recorded and transcribed by Warren's co-author, Peter Robbins), it was in reply to Halt's question, "When were you supposedly out in Tangham [Rendlesham] Forest?" That Warren answered with the following:

> "It was sometime after Christmas but before New Year's Eve 1980. I never knew the exact date. I was in Germany for two days, leading up to [the] three nights of events. I was unaware of the two previous."
>
> *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins
> (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 337).

Warren again mentions the music store in Ipswich, which he now says he visited on Sunday, December 28, 1980, seemingly unaware that back in 1980 the shops closed on Sundays, and this time he is not with Mark, but with a friend he calls "Alabama."

> **Sunday, December 28, 1980:**
> Larry Warren:
>
> "Early on 28 December, I got away from the base for the day with my roommate, Alabama. We took the base taxi to Ipswich and did some sight-seeing. One of the points of interest was the Corn Exchange, an open market area located in a picturesque section of the city. I wanted to find a music store; I was in the market for a Marshall amplifier and thought I'd get a great deal since they are

manufactured in England. We happened into Axe Music on Christchurch Road [Christchurch Street]. After unsuccessfully bargaining with the owner of the store for a few hours, I left."

Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 40).

Surely, Warren could have driven to Ipswich in his Aston Martin . . .? Now being interviewed in 2015, it is evident that Warren has realized that the shops closed on Sunday in the UK back in 1980. Warren gives another name for the driver of the car – Jimmy Harper.

Sunday, December 28, 1980:
Larry Warren:

". . . I'm thinking it was, uh . . . you know, I never knew the date, the exact day, nowadays, or even then? I mean it was a Sunday, I, I think. There was a lot of things shut down that day, during the day before the shift start. Because in England everything needs to be that way, everything was shut down on a Sunday. [. . .] I'd been transitioning on the flight . . . so that day, we had the day off, and a guy named uh, Harper, Jimmy Harper, had a car and we were gonna go to Ipswich and he was going to drive myself and, uh, two other guys. [. . .] We went down, we went across through Woodbridge. He was taking us, not to Ipswich but to the free bus they used to have off Woodbridge, uh, on the main entrance to Woodbridge."

Larry Warren, USAF, and Peter Robbins, Author on Phenomenon KGRA Radio, hosted by John Burroughs with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe. Uploaded November 27, 2015.

Sunday, December 28, 1980:
Larry Warren:

"Went in. [to Ipswich] I was . . . we're looking, I was looking for musical equipment, and that's why it must have been a Su . . . a Su . . . [meant to say Sunday]. The place we went to was sh, shut down in Ipswich . . . the music store."

Larry Warren, USAF, and Peter Robbins, Author on Phenomenon KGRA Radio, hosted by John Burroughs with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe. Uploaded November 27, 2015.

Returning to Bentwaters base from Ipswich:

Larry Warren:

"At the same time, me and five other guys were walking up a dark road about two miles from the base, back from Ipswich, because we couldn't get a ride and we felt like we were being watched and it was strange because there were no streetlights. Then we saw a bright light go right over us about fifty feet up and just fly over a field. It was silent we first thought it was an A-10 jet but they scream, so we ran away because witchcraft and black magic is big in this part of Suffolk and we thought that witches were in the woods because that light just seemed to jump over the trees. The next day it turned out we were in the same place as the UFO, so I think we saw it too."

From the transcript of the letter written by Larry Warren to his mother.
Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 65).

Larry Warren:

"Alabama and I caught the last bus back to Bentwaters at around 6:00 P.M." [. . .] "To our surprise, the bus dropped us and three other airmen off in the town of Woodbridge. This meant we faced a four-mile walk back to Bentwaters, and it was getting late. We stopped at the Cherry Tree pub for a Coke, then went on. We noticed a small car parked along the road, a man maybe thirty years old was standing next to it. He said he had just seen something strange fly overhead, so he had pulled the car over to investigate. *We saw nothing.* I told him it was most likely an A-10; the man shrugged it off and drove away. Later, we felt stupid that we hadn't asked him for a ride to the base." [My emphasis].

Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 40).

Larry Warren:

"We came back, and, uh, we're late. The bus only went so far. We had to walk. We stopped at the Cherry Tree, because I had to work that night. Stopped at the Cherry Tree, got a soft drink. Uh, if you recall that place, there was a little p . . . billiards table in there, uh, in those days. And, um, continued on foot. Uh, there was a car

parked out. There was a, uh, a guy out that had said a light . . . he had seen some jet fly over very low and it kinda startled him. We just kept going . . . then . . . never got a ride from him."

Larry Warren, USAF, and Peter Robbins, Author on Phenomenon KGRA Radio, hosted by John Burroughs with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe. Uploaded November 27, 2015.

Quoting Georgina Bruni:

"Just when I thought I had heard everything, Larry had another surprise in store for me. He was now confessing that he had never been in Germany during the Christmas holidays but had used the trip to cover up the fact that he had been involved in the initial incident. He claimed that if researchers thought he was out of the country then they would not connect him with it." [. . .] "This statement was remarkable, considering he had diligently done everything he could to prove the incident had occurred and especially that he himself was involved. Suddenly, I was expected to believe that he was trying to cover up his involvement in an earlier encounter. I could have gone on for weeks with my questioning but I felt there was no point."

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 103).

Larry Warren's claim that he was present in Rendlesham Forest during the initial incident – the 'first night's' events

Georgina Bruni writes that in early 1999, Larry Warren had told her that a few months earlier at the end of 1998, he had been sent some photographs of the actual craft that Jim Penniston had encountered on the morning of December 26, 1980.

Quoting Georgina Bruni from page 99 of her book *"You Can't Tell the People"* (2000).

"He [Larry Warren] told me that a few months earlier he had been sent some photographs of the actual UFO encountered by Jim Penniston and John Burroughs,

which were taken during the initial incident on 25/26 December."

Georgina writes that Warren told her that someone had read the reviews of his book, *Left at East Gate,* on the Internet and had sent the photographs to him by way of his publishers.

Warren later told Georgina that he would not reveal the contact's full name, as the 'contact' was nervous about it, but gave his name as Mark, and said that Mark was now an accountant living with his wife and family in the United States. Warren added that included in the package sent to him by way of his publishers were: 1), negatives, 2), a Bentwaters photograph folder, 3), a map with directions to the landing site and 4), a letter from the witness he named as Mark.

According to Warren, Mark had been a bystander who was off duty when he and another airman saw lights over the forest from the nearby village of Eyke. Mark and his friend then became curious and drove back to the Bentwaters base to collect a camera and then drove back out to the forest. It was just after they passed the Foley Cottages by the roadside, that they saw lights again moving through the trees.

Reporting what he was supposedly told by Mark, Warren said the two men then decided to park the vehicle so they could watch the lights. Warren says that Mark then decided to exit the vehicle and follow the lights into the woods, but Mark's friend was frightened and refused to follow him. Warren then said that as Mark moved closer to the lights he could see two figures – who were supposedly SSgt. Jim Penniston and Airman John Burroughs – and a triangular UFO sitting in a clearing.

Warren told Georgina that at one point Mark was *only five feet away from the UFO,* standing behind a tree taking photos. After a while, the UFO then lifted up and began moving back through the forest, "dipping in and out of the trees." (Bruni, p. 100). Warren then said that Mark told him he had thought the two men (Penniston and Burroughs) had been abducted and so he and his friend decided "to run for it." (Bruni, p. 100).

Warren then told Georgina that he was told that when Mark returned to the base, he placed another roll of film into his camera and later shot pictures of the ground in the clearing where the craft was seen. Warren said that he was told this film was then turned over to Mark's superiors, and that he was told the photos had come out 'fogged.' Warren added that three months later, when Mark thought it was safe to have the first film of the craft and the two

USAF men developed, he risked taking it to the Bentwaters supermarket. According to Warren, it was a few days later that Mark collected the film, which also included pictures of himself and some friends taken prior to the incident. Warren said that for almost two years – being the duration of his tour at Bentwaters – Mark had kept the photos and the negatives safely hidden on the base, ". . . sometimes moving them to other locations when he became nervous." (Bruni, p. 100).

Warren then said that as soon as Mark returned to the United States he placed the negatives and pictures into a safe deposit box and there they remained until they were sent to him via his publishers in late 1998.

Georgina Bruni writes that after this and over the course of several weeks, she listened to Larry Warren, as he told her about the photos and how Mark had kept them safe all those years. However, Georgina adds that in her attempts to get the facts right, she would go over the details only to find that the story changed during her conversations with Warren, which of course gave her cause for concern. (Bruni, p. 100).

Warren then sent Georgina one of the photographs, which she described as being a glossy black picture with a group of coloured lights in the shape of a triangle, with a few other coloured balls of light scattered throughout. Georgina eventually had the photograph enlarged and made brighter and was amazed to find what appeared to be a distorted forest with a triangle of lights hovering over a clearing. She adds that beneath the lights was an azure mist and at ground level there appeared to be a strange yellow mist rising up a few feet off the ground. Although Georgina writes that the photo looked interesting, she was also aware that the photograph could have easily been hoaxed. (Bruni, p. 100).

Georgina then asked Warren if it were possible that someone might be trying to set him up, but that he was adamant that the source was genuine. Warren replied that not only did he know the identity of the witness, but they had exchanged correspondence and talked on the telephone.

Georgina told Warren that unless she could talk to Mark – the witness who had taken the photo(s) – that she would remain wary. After asking Warren for the negatives, which would have the coding so that she could date the film; also the Bentwaters supermarket folder and the map that Mark had sketched, Larry then promised Georgina to send her a photocopy of the

Bentwaters folder and the negative of the photo he sent her.

Well, as it turned out, Larry Warren didn't do as he promised, and instead had called Georgina a week later, confessing that *he was the person who had taken the photographs.*

Along with this bombshell Warren also stated that Mark wasn't an airman doing a tour at Bentwaters, and that in fact Mark was an airman who had top-secret clearance, worked for the National Security Agency and was posted at RAF Martlesham Heath.

Georgina writes that she was dumbfounded. (Bruni, p. 101).

After some time, Georgina's first question to Warren was: *'Why did you sit on them for nineteen years?'*

Georgina doesn't give Warren's answer but writes that she then let rip with a barrage of questions to him, adding that she could not believe that Warren did not use the photos in his book that had been published some two years before, or even in the early days when he was trying so desperately to prove his case.

Georgina then goes on to say that Warren had confessed to his co-author Peter Robbins that he had told Georgina the story and had given her permission to use the photograph in her forthcoming book, adding that Peter Robbins, was apparently devastated by this, *"but still had confidence in Larry, blaming it on the incident and the fact that he had been messed with."* (Bruni, p. 101). Georgina writes that obviously Peter felt betrayed, having been Warren's co-author and had helped Warren research his story for almost a decade.

Quoting Georgina Bruni from page 101 of her book: *"You Can't Tell the People"* (2000).

> "I felt for Peter, I had only worked with Larry on a chapter and knew how intense it was – there were surprises around every corner. The problem was the way Larry convincingly told the first story – all those details. I thought he deserved an award for an excellent performance."

Georgina Bruni writes that Warren then tells her his story which led up to his claim of having been present during the first night's events on the morning of December 26, 1980, and that he had stood in the forest taking photos some

distance away while Jim Penniston and John Burroughs had encountered the triangular craft.

Again, Warren states that on the day before the incident – being December 25, Christmas Day, 1980 – that he and Mark had driven to Ipswich railway station in Mark's car, which Mark then parked in the car park of the station. Warren says that they were both going to catch a train to London to meet two German girls, but first they decided to visit a music shop that was located near to the station. (Note that Warren had already written in *Left at East Gate* that the day before Christmas, he had left for Germany with his friend Mark, as they had met the two German girls in London the previous week at Le Beat Route, a club on Greek Street. This would place their meeting with the German girls the week before Thursday, December 25, 1980), but here Warren is telling Georgina Bruni that it was Christmas Day when they had met the German girls in London.

After hearing about their visit to the music shop, Georgina then writes that she had told Warren that if it was Christmas Day then the shops would have most likely been closed during that period. Warren then said that Arabs had owned the shop. However, when Georgina had suggested that back in 1980 it might have still been the law to close on Christmas Day, Warren then told her that the shop was not open after all and went on to explain that some men were delivering merchandise to the shop and he had merely stopped them to ask about prices.

Warren then tells Georgina that on their way back to Bentwaters that night they picked up four other airmen, making six men in total. Georgina remarks that how they all got into one old car she had no idea. Warren says that while in the car and as they approached the Bentwaters base, they saw three strange lights in the sky which formed into the shape of a triangle, and that it seemed to be making a droning noise.

Georgina writes that Warren then said that Mark had driven to the base; dropped off the other airmen; picked up a camera, and that Mark and himself then headed for Rendlesham Forest.

Warren added that as they both approached the Foley cottages they heard Motorola radios and saw a white Law Enforcement vehicle parked on the roadside. Warren doesn't say where this vehicle was parked in relation to the forest, but Jim Penniston states that he had driven Burroughs, Cabansag and himself to the edge of the forest in a Security CJ-5 Jeep.

Warren then says that Mark having parked his car close by, they then followed the noise of the radios into the forest where they found the UFO, which had three points to its base and looked like a Christmas tree. (The black triangular craft that Jim Penniston claims he encountered did not resemble a Christmas tree – although this is what Burroughs described from some distance mile away when he investigated with SSgt. Bud Steffens).

Warren is reported by Georgina as having said that apart from the reddish lights, everything was pitch black. Warren says that as he took a photograph the UFO moved up off the ground – no mention of the surface of the craft having changed to a bright white light, as described by Jim Penniston) and the radios became silent, adding that Mark suddenly became very frightened and ran away, hiding on the ground in the forest. Warren then says he saw some figures he could not recognize but thinks they were abducted because as soon as he began taking photographs the men (supposedly Jim Penniston and John Burroughs) had disappeared.

Warren then says that on leaving the forest, he spotted John Burroughs who was standing beside a truck. Georgina writes that ". . . at that stage he [Warren] did not know who Burroughs was." (Bruni, p. 102). Warren then said that Mark then fired off a blank roll of film (Warren adding that both films were Cannon 35 mm) and that Warren said he took the canisters back to his dorm for safekeeping.

> "Larry put the canisters on his windowsill but his roommate was uncomfortable with the situation and told him he should report it. He decided to take only the blank film to his superior, Senior Master Sergeant Lee Swain, who then referred Larry to Major Drury. However, Larry thinks Drury was unaware of what was going on. Later that day he heard that someone called Burroughs had seen a UFO and, realizing there might be a search, he wrapped the canister inside a sock, which he placed in a small canvas bag and took to Steve La Plume. Without explaining what it was, he asked La Plume to look after it in case someone searched his room. But La Plume declined, so he went back to his dorm and hid the canister inside his mattress.
>
> Larry smuggled the pictures out of Bentwaters by placing them in the bottom of a Wedgwood German beer mug, which he had bought on a recent trip to Germany. He posted the parcel to his mother, who knew nothing about the photographs until he returned home a few months later. Once back in the United States he placed the photographs and negatives in his sister's safe deposit

box. ‘I was very frightened of having the pictures,’ he told me. But then he said he had thought of taking them to the newspapers. Larry
suggested I contact Steve La Plume, because although he may not be aware of what was inside the sock, he might remember him asking to look after it. But La Plume does not recall the incident and according to his earlier testimony he and Larry never talked until the middle of January 1981. Larry also told me that Adrian Bustinza knew about the photographs, but when I questioned him he denied any knowledge of them.
A year earlier I had discussed Larry’s alleged trip to Germany with Peter Robbins. According to Left at East Gate, Larry had just arrived back from Germany the day before his encounter in Rendlesham Forest. Peter assured me that was what his co-author had told him, but I was not convinced.” (Bruni, p. 102).

If Larry Warren was present in the forest during the first night’s events and at the crucial moment when Jim Penniston encountered the craft and had witnessed, claiming that he photographed what was happening from some distance away, then it is telling why Warren wrote the following and posted in public on Facebook only recently, because if his claims were true, then you would think that Warren would substantiate what Jim had witnessed, instead of undermining Jim’s account like this, as if he had forgotten all what he had claimed to Georgina Bruni all those years ago in 1999.

“Question, would one walk up to a “thing” floating above the ground, touch it (it could be radio active ?) take notes whilst next to said object then not be isolated and tested ect ect.....My training said Cover, observe, and Relay for back up.....the above never made ANY sense to me,,,,and His remains a stand alone account !.....then comes the message from the future? 30 years later. that dog never did hunt.”

Lawrence Warren. Facebook Post. Dated August 20, 2019:

As for the code and Jim Penniston’s integrity, Larry Warren had this to say on March 5, 2011, which is in stark contrast to what he wrote in his post quoted above.

“Did something profound happen to the man? Damn right it did. So until our little pea brains can figure this stuff out, I say yes I’m certain he got a download from someone – reason

> unknown to me. Jim is a man of honor and would not lie about this and I'm sure most things in life are just not in his nature and if you had met him it would be clear to you all as well."
>
> Larry Warren on Penniston and the Codes

For more on Larry Warren, see: *A Concise Chronology of Evidences of The Larry Warren Fraud* by Sacha Christie. (With ongoing Updates). Posted, Tuesday, September 24, 2019.

Also view Sacha Christie – *The Larry Warren Fraud* presentation. *Col. Halt Returns to Woodbridge* Conference, Woodbridge, Suffolk September 8, 2019.

End Notes

[i] See: Bentwaters Parks.
[ii]

Source: *Rendlesham Forest Incident* by Jenny Randles.
[iii]

See: Orford Ness.
[iv]

See: Deployment of Blue Danube, Britain's Post-War Atomic Bomb by Jonathan Aylen. (Manchester Institute of Innovation Research, University of Manchester, UK.)
[v]

Orford Ness.
[vi]

Ibid.
[vii]

Military Geographies by Rachel Woodward. (Blackwell Publishing. October 2004).
[viii]

Ibid.
[ix]

Lakenheath and Bentwaters RAF/USAF units, England, August 13-14, 1956. NICAP. See also: 1956: UFO Encounter / Jet Chase Over Bentwaters AFB, UK.
[x]

An Interesting coincidence, because the USAF report on the Rendlesham Incident of December 1980 – some 24 years later – was filed by Col. Charles. I. Halt in the famous Halt Memorandum). Also, on July 8, 1947, another memorandum was given, this time by the United States Air Force spokesman, Lt. Walter G. Haut who was the first to tell the media that "the United States Air Force Base in Roswell, the Eighth Air Army found UFO debris and alien bodies in Roswell."

[xi] *The Rendlesham Forest Mystery*, by Jenny Randles, *Flying Saucer Review* (March 1981, Volume 26, No. 6).
[xii]

Note by Jim Penniston:

> The SAC (Strategic Air Command) Elite Guard is where I obtained my Top-Secret security clearance. These men are among the finest I had the pleasure to serve with. So many things from my experiences at SAC Elite prepared me for my off-base deployment at Rendlesham. See Wikipedia: *Strategic Air Command Elite Guard*. See also, *SAC Elite Guard*. The figures varied but there were only between 78 to 102 Elite Guard personnel ever appointed at one time, and this number was out of thousands who would have applied to be in the SAC. It was on the strength of having been a SAC Elite Guard that I was given Top-Secret clearance soon after joining the USAF.

[xiii] (See Note 66 and also Note 162).
[xiv]

Source: *Outer Limits Magazine*, Issue 7, April 2017. This information is based on the research of RFI enthusiast and researcher, Ronnie Dugdale.

[xv] Quote: *"We came on duty at 23:00 which would have been actually still Christmas night."*

> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

[xvi] John Burroughs was born on July 30, 1960 in Bloomington, Illinois, USA, and joined the U. S. Air Force straight after his high school graduation. Burroughs later received orders to go to RAF Bentwaters, England and arrived in July 1979. Source: *John Burroughs and Pat Frascogna.*
[xvii]

In a radio interview with Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (December 20, 2016), John Burroughs says that it was SSgt. Bud Steffens who asked him if they could patrol the area together. Again, Steffens had only been on the Woodbridge base from between two to three months, and so it is said that the reason why Steffens had asked to join Burroughs was that he and Burroughs could get better acquainted, and that's what Burroughs thought also.

Quote:

> ". . . my supervisor [Steffens] who was the other patrolman over at Woodbridge, asked for a rendezvous . . . um, so I met up with him. He was new, so, and he was just assigned . . . I was assigned him as a [unintelligible] . . . *actually I wanted to get to know him a little bit better*, so I jumped in the patrol car with him, and we started driving around."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

> "My supervisor had just recently arrived at Bentwaters, Woodbridge. Asked me to meet up with him and wanted to ride around with him for a while *to get to know me a little bit better."*
>
> John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.

During the *Rendlesham Forest Incident Presentation* conference on Saturday, May 19, 2018, at the Woodbridge Community Hall, Suffolk, England, Burroughs suggested another reason as to why SSgt. Steffens asked to meet up with him that night to patrol the base together. Quoting Burroughs:

> ". . . .there was an OSI investigation up at the Woodbridge dorms involving drugs . . . so they were already on surveillance. So, one of the reasons why I met up with my supervisor was to stay out of the area while they were running the surveillance."

However, according to Jim Penniston, there is a more logical 'duty-related' reason why SSgt. Steffens asked Airman Burroughs if he could join him to patrol the area together….

Note by Jim Penniston:

> ‘I am certain that SSgt. Steffens was asked to go and watch Burroughs, as the young airman had established the reputation of being quite a prankster who could act irresponsible at times. Although it was Christmas and quiet on the base, Law Enforcement most likely wanted someone out there to make sure Burroughs was doing his job properly and that the East Gate was secure. Lt. Col. Halt had also expressed similar reservations about Burroughs and his juvenile behavior and had even accompanied Burroughs on his patrol of the base a few times to monitor him.’

Here, we shall quote Nick Pope, the main author of the book *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest:*

> ‘. . . some of these more junior personnel were pretty nervous about being so closely scrutinized by one of the most senior officers at the twin bases. Halt, however, felt that if he was to do his job properly, he needed to get down into the weeds and understand every aspect of what was going on. He regarded it as the best way to get what the military call ‘ground truth’ – not what people tell you is going on, but what’s actually going on. Burroughs acknowledges this trait, but was not keen on it, clearly feeling a little ‘over-supervised.’
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), Thomas Dunne Books, 2014.

In the same book, of which he was a co-author, Burroughs himself expressed his annoyance concerning this.

Burroughs:

> “He [Col. Halt] was high speed; would ride around with LE [Law Enforcement] to get a feel of what was going on at the base. He rode with me a couple of times, always was getting in our way.”
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), Thomas Dunne Books, 2014.

[xviii]

Although trivial, there are clear discrepancies in Burroughs’ account regarding the TIME he says SSgt. Steffens either a), contacted him first to ask him if he wanted to rendezvous and ride around patrolling the perimeter together, or b), when SSgt. Steffens suddenly pulled up next to Burroughs and *then* asked him if he wanted to ride around:

Burroughs, 2009:
". . . it was approximately **one thirty to two o'clock** in the morning when the on-site supervisor Sergeant Steffens was on patrol, and I was on it in a different vehicle, *and he met up with me and asked me if I wanted to ride around with him for a while."*

The Paracast (radio interview), June 21, 2009, with John Burroughs and Peter Robbins.

Burroughs, 2013:
"Around **two o'clock** in the morning, *my supervisor, he radioed and wanted to meet up with me."*

John Burroughs interviewed on *Paranormal Witness, The Rendlesham Files*, aired November 27, 2013.

Burroughs, 2014:
"At about **three o'clock** in the morning. Prior to uh, prior to, the incident starting, uh, I, my supervisor, who was new to the base, *had told me to meet up with him and start riding around."*

John Burroughs Rendlesham UFO Witness, interviewed by radio host Alejandro Rojas for 'Open Minds Radio,' October 27, 2014.

Burroughs, 2016:
"I was on Law Enforcement patrol. It was around about **two o'clock, between two and two-thirty,** my supervisor, who was the other patrolman over at Woodbridge, *asked for a rendezvous . . . um, so I met up with him."*

John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

As far as the time is concerned, these accountings by Burroughs over the years are not consistent. According to Burroughs' handwritten witness statement, the time when the incident began – i.e. from when the lights were first seen – was 3:00 a.m. This is not consistent with the 3:00 a.m. time that Burroughs had stated on the Alejandro Rojas interview, when he says his supervisor SSgt. Bud Steffens had told him to meet up with him. We have to allow some time for Burroughs and Steffens to meet up and then patrol the perimeter of the base before Steffens saw the lights descend into the Rendlesham Forest due east from the East Gate. Surely the sighting of the lights would have been sometime AFTER 3:00 a.m., if we take what Burroughs had said during this particular interview. But, as we will also see, regarding the times he has given, none of what Burroughs has stated is chronologically consistent with the time that several other witnesses have stated as to when the incident began, which was around 12:00

midnight between December 25 and December 26, 1980.

Also, Burroughs has always said that he was driving his own patrol car before SSgt. Steffens met up with him.

As an example of how incidents are often wrongly portrayed in TV documentaries, in the History Channel's *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"* the actor playing Burroughs is shown walking while patrolling the perimeter of Woodbridge when the actor playing Steffens pulls up beside him in his truck….

> Narrator:
> "As he's walking, his superior, Bud Stevens [Steffens] pulls up beside him in a truck."
> Burroughs:
> "He tracked me down and said let's ride around for a while."
>
> *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"* Aired December 17, 2005 (US),
> Jan 22, 2006 (UK) on the History Channel.

The above is just one example of the numerous inconsistencies that the Rendlesham case is riddled with, showing how even the creators of numerous TV Documentaries, and for whatever possible agenda they have of their own, are also adding false narratives to the case with how they portray the events.
[xix]

Although Burroughs is often shown stationed at the East Gate in various TV documentaries, the East Gate was not in fact open that night, and wasn't open on weekends and holidays:

> "One of the things we checked was down, down at the east end of the base, by . . . it was called the East Gate. Um, we made sure that that area was secure, the gate was locked because one of the things was that people uh, had . . . there was a cattle lock. So, some of the people knew the combination maintenance and stuff and sometimes they tried to sneak in and out, and sometimes they had even forgot to secure the gate."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show
> *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network)
> December 20, 2016.

In other words, the combination of the lock didn't stay secret for long, and it is said that the USAF base personnel would use the East Gate (back gate) to take a short cut in and out of the Woodbridge base, or it would be open during "alerts:"

> "The gate wasn't normally open at night, but then on alerts and other things it would be . . . um, and I'd been down there, you know, I was on patrol and on the gate during alerts and stuff."

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

[xx] John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

[xxi] John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019. It has been said that Bud Steffens was deeply religious.

[xxii] In the History Channel documentary, *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"* (aired December 17, 2005), Burroughs clearly states that it was SSgt. Steffens who saw the lights first and then alerted him, and that Steffens asked Burroughs if what they were seeing was normal? However, in the books, *You Can't Tell the People* by Georgina Bruni (2001), and *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest* written by Nick Pope with John Burroughs and Jim Penniston (2014), we are told that it was Burroughs who was the first person to see the lights in the forest and who then alerted SSgt. Bud Steffens.

> "They were patrolling the Woodbridge base at the time and as they approached the east gate Burroughs noticed strange lights over the skyline to the eastern side of the forest. He alerted his supervisor Steffens, and the two men stared at the sky in amazement."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001). p. 161.

> "The events started when Airman First Class John Burroughs spotted strange lights in the forest. Burroughs had been patrolling Woodbridge and was close to the East Gate [. . .] Burroughs alerted his supervisor, Staff Sergeant Bud Steffens. Both men watched in amazement…."
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), Thomas Dunne Books, 2014.

In the second account given in the book authored by Nick Pope, there is no mention of SSgt. Bud Steffens calling Burroughs and asking to meet up so they could patrol the perimeter of the base together. In fact, by the way it is expressed, the reader could be led to believe that Burroughs, having observed the lights in the forest while he was patrolling the area on his own, then contacted his supervisor SSgt. Steffens, who then joined him at the East Gate to see and to confirm what he was seeing.

Since Burroughs was one of the authors of the latter book, one would think this detail would at least be correct. But again, while being interviewed as recently as December 20, 2016, we are again told by John Burroughs that it was SSgt. Steffens who saw the lights first. See, *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), December 20, 2016.

It is no wonder that Jim Penniston was disappointed with the book he co-authored with Nick Pope

and Burroughs. He wanted this to be the definitive book on the Rendlesham Forest Incident which would finally present the truth and also deal with most, if not all, the contradictions and inconsistencies in the witness accounts. In the end, the book did nothing of the sort. In fact, more than eighty pages of Jim Penniston's account was left out of a book which already contained errors, while neglecting many of the details of what happened. Therefore, the book fell far short of what Jim Penniston had originally envisioned.

[xxiii] John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

[xxiv] Quote:

> "I looked out and no, I hadn't seen anything like that before. He originally explained it a little bit – that he saw something coming down into the forest. What I saw was something that was already into the tree line, and like I said, I have always said that it was different colored lightings, like green, red, blue, white."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

Apparently, this phenomenon of an object radiating both blue/green and other colored lights descending into the woods of Rendlesham Forest was also observed by 'C Flight' personnel, A1C Richard Bertolino, and Sergeant Hall, and while both were engaged in security checks on the perimeter of the Bentwaters base. It was in September 2009 that Bertolino, who was a 'C Flight' A1C security guard at Bentwaters during the incident in December 1980, came forward to talk to investigative reporter and author, Linda Moulton Howe, for her *Earthfiles* podcast.

Richard Bertolino:

> "About one a.m., somewhere between twelve and one a.m., when we were going into the weapons storage area to do a security check on the perimeter, we had to stop and get clearance from the weapons storage area tower. We were sitting there calling the tower and Sergeant Fitzhugh was up in the tower. As we called up to him, I'll never forget, we were sitting there, and I was leaning forward on the dash. Sergeant Hall was driving; he had his arms and chest up on the steering wheel also looking up, and we saw what appeared to be a very bright falling star. It had a blue/green luminescence, sparkle tail to it. We both were like, "Woah," and we called up and asked [Senior Airman] Fitzhugh if he saw it, and uh, when he replied negative, both Sergeant Hall and I look at each other and go, "Wow, that was close!" And that was the immediate feeling we got from what we saw, that it was close to us. It looked like it was falling between the two bases."

Earthfiles Podcast Episode 57 – *Another RAF Bentwaters Security Airman Speaks About Dec. 1980 UFO*.
Published on December 20, 2015.

Note that Richard Bertolino gives the time of the sighting between 12:00 and 1:00 a.m., which is earlier than the 1:30 to 3:00 a.m. times that Burroughs says he was either radioed by SSgt. Steffens who asked to meet up, or the time when Burroughs *actually met* up with Steffens, and which was sometime before Steffens had *sighted the same object*, as one would logically assume. (See Note 7 above). According to the times given by other witnesses who had been interviewed, it is more likely that A1C Bertolino was offering a rough estimate and that he and Sgt. Hall saw the lighted object descend in to the woods after 11:00 p.m., and sometime before 12:00 midnight – most-likely 11:45 to 11:50 p.m. when one cross-correlates the accounts. This 11:45 to 11:50 p.m. time estimate would also correlate with the time of a triangulated radar sighting of an unidentified 'bogey' (unidentified aircraft) that was first sighted some three miles out from Bentwaters, but had then disappeared, having dropped from 'radar imaging' somewhere near the Woodbridge base – information that was most-likely denied to Sgt. McCabe on the Law Enforcement desk when he inquired if anything had been flying or tracked over the area after receiving the call from Burroughs and Steffens. (See Chapter 2: *East Gate*).
[xxv]

John Burroughs interview on History Channel's *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell."* Aired December 17, 2005 (US), January 22, 2006 (UK).
[xxvi]

Ibid.
[xxvii]

John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.
[xxviii]

Quote: 'The lights were red and blue, the red one above the blue one, and they were flashing on and off.'

Page 1 of 3 of *Witness statement* (December 29, 1980).
Handwritten and signed:
"A1C John Burroughs 81SPS SPOL CFL." Not dated.

[xxix] Quotes:

"There were strange lights out in the forest. To me, it almost looked like Christmas lights at first . . . a Christmas display . . ."

Transcript of John Burroughs being interviewed on '*Strange But True?*'
London Weekend Television. December 9, 1994.
Presenter: Michael Aspel.

"You know, you sensed a real sense of danger, that something wasn't right. There were different colored lights, you know, like you see in a Christmas display that were blinking on and off."

John Burroughs interviewed on History Channel's *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"*
Aired December 17, 2005 (US), January 22, 2006 (UK).

"I tried to describe it as almost a Christmas display – blue, red, white lights . . ." [. . .] "The lights were randomly cycling."

John Burroughs on *The Paracast*, June 21, 2009, with John Burroughs and Peter Robbins.

[xxx] Quotes:

"At that point we looked at each other and we decided that we'd better go out and take a closer look cos we weren't sure what we were dealing with. What we were looking at wasn't real."

Transcript of John Burroughs being interviewed on '*Strange But True?*'
London Weekend Television. December 9, 1994.
Presenter: Michael Aspel.

". . . he [SSgt. Steffens] was a really conservative guy, so it was a little strange but, and he actually – and he was in charge – and he said, well, what do we do? And I'm like, well I don't know . . ." [. . .] "So, we decided that we'd open the gate up, and drive down the, the . . . now we're going off base, so we drive down that road that led out from the East Gate . . ."

John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show
Fade to Black (Game Changer Radio Network)
December 20, 2016.

". . . we had a brief discussion and we decided we would go off base, which is not what we were really supposed to do without telling anybody, but it was one of those things where what is it? What's going on? And let's take a closer look before we say anything."

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black*
(Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

[xxxi] Quote: "So, here we were off base, um, armed . . ."

John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on

his show
Fade to Black (Game Changer Radio Network)
December 20, 2016.

It is a violation of the SOFA (Status of Forces Agreement) with the United Kingdom to take weapons off a U.S. installation onto British territory, and so by going off base with their weapons, Airman Burroughs and SSgt. Steffens (who should have known better), were committing a serious offense. [xxxii]

John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

[xxxiii] Quote:

> ". . . so we drive down that road that led out from the East Gate, and you come down to a T, and you go left or right. Well, we got down to the end of the road, which was the, the forest also, which was called Rendlesham Forest . . . uh, it was right there, right in front of you and then you go left or right. He [Steffens] kinda turned the car around so we were heading, facing back towards the gate."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

During the same interview, Burroughs then says that it was there that he then exited the vehicle. It's not clear if SSgt. Steffens joined him or even if Steffens exited the vehicle. It doesn't appear that Steffens did exit the vehicle because during a conference with Linda Moulton Howe in 2010, Burroughs says that he yelled back to Steffens who must have remained in the car:

> "Anyway, so we went down, open the gate. We went down the road and we got to the edge where you could go right or left. You could go left to Bentwaters, right towards another town . . . believe it was Woodbridge town. And I jumped out of the vehicle. When I got out of the vehicle I looked into the woods. Immediately – and this is one of the few times I felt that way – I felt threatened. I felt there was something there that was making me nervous. Um, right away I yelled to him. I said, 'This doesn't feel right.' It was like a static electricity in the air, and both of us became concerned right away. We're off base, we hadn't told anybody that we were off base . . . what are we doing down there?"
>
> John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.

In an interview conducted in 2014, Burroughs again says that he got out of the vehicle at the end of

East Gate Road and while there he got back in again, and from there he and SSgt. Steffens drove back to the East Gate to report the strange lights.

Quote:

> "We decided to depart the base, go down the East Gate Road, and at the end of the road was where the forest started. You could go left or right – right towards Bentwaters." [One turns left to go to Bentwaters] "I jumped out of the vehicle. When I got out of the vehicle, it was an eerie feeling, man, it was like static electricity in the air and things just didn't seem right. Both him [Steffens] and I didn't like the fact that we were off base and hadn't called it in, so I jump back in the vehicle and we went back up to the gate shack and we, uh, notified the Law Enforcement Desk by direct line that something strange was going on."
>
> *John Burroughs Rendlesham UFO Witness*, interviewed by radio host Alejandro Rojas for 'Open Minds Radio,' October 27, 2014.

However, in the book *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest* (2014), of which Burroughs is one of the authors, we are told that the two patrol men had driven much further than the T-junction point.

Quote:

> "Burroughs unlocked the combination lock on the East Gate and he and Steffens drove out of the gate and a couple of hundred yards or so [actually 700 yards] down to a small public road. There, they turned right and drove another 10 or 20 yards, [57 yards] before reaching a left hand turning where a small track [logging road] led into the forest. At this point, a white light was visible, in addition to the red and blue lights."
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident* by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), Thomas Dunne Books, 2014.

Some of the details presented in the quote above were obviously taken from what was stated on the witness statement that was handwritten and signed by A1C John Burroughs, which although left undated, was written and signed on December 29, 1980 in the office of the Deputy Commander, Colonel. Charles I. Halt.

Burroughs 1980:

> 'We went down east-gate road and took a right at the stop sign and drove down about 10 to 20 yards [57 yards] to where there is a road that goes into the forest at the road.'

Page 1 of 3 of *Witness statement* (December 29, 1980). Handwritten and signed "A1C John Burroughs 81SPS SPOL CFL." Not dated.

In the book *The Halt Perspective* by John Hanson, there is this quote, apparently by Burroughs:

> Burroughs:
> "We saw some weird red and blue flashing lights in the trees, east of the gate, and decided to go and have a look. We went down the East Gate road, turned right at the stop sign, and walked along the tarmac road, ten or twenty yards, [again, 57 yards] before turning left along the forest road. At this point I saw a white light shining down onto the trees, accompanied by the red and blue flashing ones. At this point, we decided to return to east Gate and report the incident to the base."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson, Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016.

Then in January 2019:

> ". . . opened up the gate, went down to the end of the road that would have T'd where you went right to go to one of the villages, or you went left to go to Bentwaters . . . and he did a little bit of a U-turn and I jumped out . . ."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

So, what is true here? *Did Burroughs and Steffens stop at the far eastern end of East Gate Road, or did they turn right and drive further to stop at the beginning of the logging road?* It would appear in the last quote that SSgt. Steffens exited the car with Burroughs and *walked* with him to the logging road. These inconsistencies may again seem 'moot points' considering that witnesses to the same event may not agree on the details of what happened due to lack of proper observation or failings in memory. *Does it have any bearing on the incident?* No, but what we have here is one witness presenting very different details in his accounting over the years of what happened that night.

[xxxiv] Quote:

> ". . . when I got out, opened the door and kinda got out to look, it, there was a static electricity in the air. So, it got really eerie fast. So, at that point we both kinda looked at each other and said let's get back up, to the, to the, uh, back up to the base and call this in."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

[xxxv]

Again, there is no mention here of he and Steffens either driving or walking (both had been said) another 57 yards from the parked vehicle to where there is a left turn into the logging road. Instead, here Burroughs says that he just opened the car door and got out, and apparently where they had just parked the vehicle at the far eastern end of the East Gate Road.

John Burroughs interviewed on History Channel's *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"* Aired December 17, 2005 (US), January 22, 2006 (UK).
[xxxvi]

Quote: "I could see a white light shining into the trees and I could still see the red and blue lights."

Transcript of John Burroughs being interviewed on
'*Strange But True?*'
London Weekend Television. December 9, 1994.
Presenter: Michael Aspel.

[xxxvii]

". . . and you could still see the lights, it was more like a white light, which was in the forest with some little colored lights – in the forest. I always said early on when I was asked more specifically about it, was it looked like a Christmas light display, different colored lights within the big white light. And um, and there was this static electricity in the air . . . and, I don't know if you have ever experienced it Jimmy, but have you ever just been in an area where all of a sudden you just feel like Uh-oh . . . you know, this ain't right, and there's something here that's feels a little out of place and I don't want to call it a major threat but you just don't feel right, you don't feel comfortable and you want to get out of there . . ."

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black*
(Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

Burroughs 1980:

"The whole time I could see the lights and the white light was almost at the edge of the road and the blue and red lights were still out in the woods."

Page 1 of 3 of *Witness statement* (December 29, 1980).
Handwritten and signed
"A1C John Burroughs 81SPS SPOL CFL." Not dated.

[xxxviii]

John Burroughs interview on History Channel's *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"* Aired December 17, 2005 (US), January 22, 2006 (UK).
[xxxix]

Quotes:

". . . it got really eerie because we went off base, we

didn't tell anybody, and all of a sudden whatever it was started moving in the forest towards us. So here we were off base, um, armed, and whatever we were seeing appeared to be coming towards us."

John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

[xl]"Initially when we got down there it was like the light was kind of farther back, you know? You could see it deeper into the forest, right? But as we got down to the end of the road and made a U-turn, I jumped out, it looked like the light started coming towards us."

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

Quote:

"I was nervous, he [Steffens] was nervous, we didn't know what to expect, and we decided at that point in time we better get back and let someone know what's going on in case something did happen."

John Burroughs being interviewed on *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO,"* September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television US Documentary Series hosted by Robert Stack).

[xli]

Burroughs 1980:

"We decided we better go call it in, so we went back up towards east gate. I was watching the lights and the white light started coming down the road that lead [sic] into the forest."

Page 1 of 3 of *Witness statement* (December 29, 1980). Handwritten and signed "A1C John Burroughs 81SPS SPOL CFL." Not dated.

"When we got down to in the road they started to come a little bit closer towards the main road where we were at, but at that point they kind of just, it just stayed in that general vicinity you know what I mean? Where was, you know, there was different coloring lights in it and it never really, it never showed itself, we never could make a clear identification on what it was at that point . . ."

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

It is possible that the road where the light was seen to be moving along and towards them by Burroughs, as he and Steffens sped back to the East Gate, was the 'logging road,' an old dirt track that was used by the foresters to access the woods. (See quotes in Note 28 above). Also, if the white light was observed "at the edge of the road" and then also "closer to the main road," as it was seen to be following them as they were driving back to the East Gate (as stated by Burroughs), then could this explain why a higher-than-average background radiation reading was also recorded close to the far end of the East Gate Road, if the light had come that far, as shown in the graphic below at the coordinates 52°05'23.4"N, 1°26'08.6"E?

See: *A radiation survey of Rendlesham Forest identifying hotspots at sites of reported UFO activity in 1980*.

In the interview with radio host Jimmy Church (January 2019), Burroughs was asked if the light that he and Steffens were seeing could have been the beacon shining from the Orfordness Lighthouse, which is on the east coast, some 6 miles east of the East Gate:

> "We knew there was a lighthouse out there, we were near the coast. Um . . . you could not see the lighthouse from the East Gate." [. . .] "Whatever we were seeing in the forest, and what I was looking at was something I had never seen the entire time I had ever been stationed there both, uh, you know at night you know, and I've been on the gate numerous times at night for different things and that was nothing that was ever seen there prior to what we were looking at, at that point. So, if I'd have been on the gate before and the lighthouse could be seen from there, which it couldn't have been, I would have known, yes, it was the lighthouse."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

[xlii] According to what Colonel Charles Halt told the audience at the Quest UFO conference in 1994, the desk sergeant, Sgt. McCabe, referred to the time of the incident (when he was first called) as being

"sometime around midnight" (December 25) (source: Bruni, p. 202). Again, this contradicts the 03:00 a.m. time on the morning of December 26, given by Burroughs as to when he and Steffens first observed the strange lights in Rendlesham Forest. The time given by Sgt. McCabe correlates with the time SSgt. Jim Penniston said he got off the phone to SSgt. Dave Coffey in the chow hall at the Woodbridge base and proceeded to the East Gate as directed. (See also Note 43 below).
[xliii]

In the book *"You Can't Tell the People"* by Georgina Bruni (2001), it is clear that it was Airman Burroughs who had first called the Law Enforcement duty flight desk:

Quote:

> ". . . on returning to the east-gate post, Burroughs picked up the landline and reported the sighting to the Law Enforcement duty desk sergeant at Bentwaters."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni, (Pan Macmillan, 2001), p. 161.

In the book, *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest* (2014) by Nick Pope with John Burroughs and Jim Penniston, it is again clear that it was Burroughs who had first made the call to the Law Enforcement duty flight desk:

Quote:

> "Burroughs spoke to the Law Enforcement duty desk sergeant, Sergeant 'Crash' McCabe and explained what was happening."
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), Thomas Dunne Books, 2014.

[xliv] In many of his interviews, Burroughs mentions his mischievous 'prankish' nature and appears to take pride in it.

Quote:

> "He [McCabe] had a lot of trouble believing what I was telling him, because it was Christmas and I had played a lot of jokes on him before."
>
> Transcript of John Burroughs being interviewed on '*Strange But True?*'
> London Weekend Television. December 9, 1994.
> Presenter: Michael Aspel.
>
> "I was a bit of a prankster and the law enforcement guy didn't believe me, and when I persistently said that something strange was going on he transferred me to CSC."

John Burroughs on *The Paracast*, June 21, 2009, with John Burroughs and Peter Robbins.

[xlv]

There is another discrepancy evident here associated with Burroughs' accounting of what happened when the strange lights were reported to the Law Enforcement duty desk from the secure landline at the East Gate shack/sentry post.

Firstly, in the book by Georgina Bruni (2001) and the book by Nick Pope, John Burroughs and Jim Penniston (2014), we are told that the Law Enforcement 'duty desk sergeant,' 'Crash' McCabe, who had first taken the call from Burroughs, *then requested that Burroughs pass the phone to SSgt. Steffens so that Steffens could confirm what Burroughs had just reported.*

Again, as noted, Sergeant 'Crash' McCabe did not take Burroughs seriously at first. Being the festive season he thought Burroughs was joking. Admittedly, it must have sounded odd, especially if Burroughs was trying to explain that a bright white light had chased them.

Quote:

> "Realizing that Burroughs was having difficulty convincing the sergeant, Steffens took over the receiver and confirmed the report."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001). p. 161.
>
> "McCabe wasn't sure what to make of this and briefly wondered whether some sort of practical joke was being played on him. *He asked to speak to Steffens, who confirmed what Burroughs had said was true and that he too had witnessed the strange lights.*" (Our emphasis).
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF, ret), Thomas Dunne Books, 2014.

However, in his interview with Jimmy Church on December 20, 2016, Burroughs states quite clearly *that it was SSgt. Steffens who had first called the Law Enforcement duty flight desk from the landline at the East Gate shack,* and that the on-duty desk sergeant, 'Crash' McCabe had asked Steffens to pass the phone over to him [Airman Burroughs], so he could confirm what SSgt. Steffens was saying:

Quote:

> "So, we both drove back up and went over to the gate shack, which was right there by the gate and he [SSgt. Steffens] got on the phone and called in that something strange was happening just outside, uh, you know, uh, the main East Gate, and in the forest, you know and right on the perimeter of the base.
>
> Well, he was new, I had been there for a while. The desk Sergeant and I had a history. I used to play a lot of practical jokes on him . . ." [. . .] "So, when he [SSgt. Steffens] called him, he didn't believe it, so he got me to

> get on the phone and I told him . . . his, his nickname was Crash McCabe . . . and um. So I told him, this is not . . . there is something out there, I don't know what it is, but it's something that is out there and it's right there on the edge of the forest and it's moving closer to the base. So, he didn't want to believe me."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

Burroughs then goes on to say that Sgt. McCabe then transferred him quickly to Security Control (CSC at Bentwaters) and that he spoke to 'the Control' – meaning the Senior Security Controller, which would have been SSgt. Dave Coffey.

Quote:

> "He [McCabe] had a real hard time dealing with what I was telling him. He just figured I was fooling with him and everything. So, long story short. I got transferred to CSC okay? Which is Central Security Control, which runs the Security end of it. I explained what was going on to him, [SSgt. Coffey] knowing I've never played a joke on him. He took me somewhat seriously, because it was kind of hard to describe what we were seeing, just strange lights."
>
> John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.
>
> "He thought I was playing a joke on him. So, he [Sgt. McCabe] transferred me real fast to Security Control and when Security Control [SSgt. Dave Coffey] picked up he [Sgt. McCabe] thought I would hang up and that would be the end of it, but when uh, the Control [SSgt. Coffey] came on, I told him, I said, "Hey, listen, this is what's going on, we got something just outside, you know, the, the base, right outside of East Gate. It's in the forest and at this point it even looks like it's starting to move, move close to that tree-line towards the base"."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) Dec 20, 2016.
>
> Note by Jim Penniston, 2018:
> 'Burroughs clearly states that Sgt. McCabe, in his own words that he *"got transferred to CSC,"* and that McCabe *transferred him "real fast to Security Control."*

> However, the Senior Security Controller at CSC, SSgt. Dave Coffey would never have talked to Airman Burroughs directly. That was the protocol! In fact, SSgt. Coffey later told me that when the initial call was made that he only talked to the Law Enforcement desk sergeant, which was Sgt. McCabe, and that McCabe relayed back SSgt. Coffey's instructions on behalf of Lt. Buran to Steffens and Burroughs. Again, this followed protocol.'

Now, *what is more likely to be true?* As Jim Penniston and others have said over the years, Burroughs is impulsive and often exhibits an agitated and excitable disposition, and so it would have been typical of him to have first rushed to the East Gate shack and call it in on the landline, and this is what is also portrayed in the TV documentaries *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO,"* (first aired September 18, 1991), *'Strange But True?'* (Aired December 9, 1994), and *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"* (first aired December 17, 2005. Also, would the Law Enforcement duty desk sergeant, Sgt. McCabe, really ask Staff Sergeant Steffens, the senior 'Law Enforcement' supervisor and Burroughs' superior, to pass the phone to Airman Burroughs so Burroughs could confirm what SSgt. Steffens had just been telling him – especially when it was Burroughs who had played numerous pranks on McCabe?

It is a more logical certainty that Burroughs called first to report the lights, and Sgt. McCabe then asked Burroughs to pass the phone to SSgt. Steffens to confirm what Burroughs – who had a reputation on the bases for being a practical joker – had just reported.

Here's a more recent interview John Burroughs did with host Jimmy Church on January 23, 2019, where Burroughs clearly contradicts what he said in his earlier interview with Church about Steffens having called first and directly to Sgt. Crash McCabe on the Law Enforcement desk, and again states that he and Steffens were transferred to CSC, which again, would not have followed protocol and is not what happened according to SSgt. Dave Coffey:

> ". . . so I called in the fact that something strange was going on outside . . . right outside the back gate in the forest. Well, the guy, the desk sergeant and I had a history of . . . I played practical jokes on him. So, I didn't say it was an alien, UFO, or anything, I just said something weird is going on. Uh, you know. I explained what Steffens saw . . . something come down into the forest . . . um, there's something in the forest, it's still there, and, uh, you know, I tried to describe what we were seeing and he didn't believe me. He thought I was yanking his chain. He thought I was playing a practical joke, Christmas night, and he just was kind of like, Yeah right, whatever. I said, seriously, here, here's Steffens. Steffens was new and you know he barely knew him too, but Steffens tried to explain to him.
>
> "He just wouldn't believe us, so he transferred us to CSC, and that's when we got, you know, the Controller, and you know, and, and, this is the guy that ran CSC, and we started to re-explain what was going on. So, at that point, that's when things got strange in our minds because we just said, Look, Steffens says he saw something coming down into the forest. It was there,

something was there, and we don't know what it is and, um, what do you want to do about it? We were just reporting it in and that's when they call for the security supervisor [SSgt. Jim Penniston] to come down and well, uh, it's always the cringe moment where we're sitting there. It's quiet, nothing's going on, on either base. Everybody's just kind of nestled in to get the night over and then across the radio comes out, *'Security Control to . . .'* I forget the call sign of the patrol, *'. . . Respond out to the East Gate . . . code two . . . uh, police four and five reporting a UFO,'* and then we were just like, *Oh God."*

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

Also, and while on the subject of the call-in from the East Gate, another example of how incidents are often wrongly portrayed in TV documentaries should be noted: In the *Paranormal Witness* episode, *The Rendlesham Files*, aired November 27, 2013, Burroughs is shown radioing SSgt. Penniston directly from the East Gate. This did not happen and is one of several untrue portrayals presented in the show. (See end of Note 7 above).
[xlvi]

Quote:

"There was definitely something out in the woods. It seemed like to me like a massive light show. I'm thinking, who would come out in the middle of the woods outside an Airforce base and make a Christmas display?"

John Burroughs being interviewed on *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO,"* September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television US Documentary Series, hosted by Robert Stack).
[xlvii]

John Burroughs interviewed on History Channel's *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"* Aired December 17, 2005 (U.S.), January 22, 2006 (U.K.).
[xlviii]

In the typed-up witness statement, dated January 2, 1981, signed by Master Sgt. J. D. Chandler, it is said that Chandler monitored a radio transmission from A1C Burroughs, and not SSgt Steffens.

Quote:

"I monitored a radio transmission from A1C Burroughs, Law Enforcement patrol at RAF Woodbridge, stating that he was observing strange lights in the wooded area just beyond the access road, leading from the East Gate at RAF Woodbridge."

Page 1 of 2 of the *witness statement* typed, signed and dated by

'J. D. Chandler, 81 Security Police Sq, Jan 2, 1981.'

However, it is most-likely that MSgt. Chandler had monitored the whole conversation from when Burroughs first called the Law Enforcement duty flight desk and spoke to Sgt. McCabe, and also when SSgt. Steffens took over from Burroughs and was then transferred to CSC (Central Security Control) at Bentwaters and spoke to Security Controller, SSgt. Dave Coffey.

On Wednesday, April 4, 2012 David Coffey sent an email to Jim Penniston telling him amongst other things he remembered, that he was told in the initial call made to him around midnight (Dec 25/26), that a *'bright light was seen darting amongst the trees at the end of the access road in Rendlesham Forest at an altitude of about 20-30 ft.'*

[xlix] Quote:

> "It wasn't more than five or ten minutes from the time we saw it, went down there, came back, got on the phone, and called it, because the base wasn't very big."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on his show *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) December 20, 2016.

This is an important statement that gives us an insight into the time of each event and helps in our attempts to construct a definitive timeline.

[l] 'Dillard' is Staff Sergeant Donnie Dillard, the Comm/Plotter at CSC at that time, and *'ten-twelve'* means to call Central Security Control (CSC).
[li]

In fact, the call name of SSgt. Steffens was 'Police 5' and the call name for A1C Burroughs was 'Police 4.' Either SSgt. Coffey had made a mistake in referring them to them as *'Police Two and Four,'* or Jim Penniston had made the mistake. However, in his second hypnosis session on Saturday, September 10, 1994, Jim says that he heard SSgt. Dave Coffey say, *"Police Two and Four."*

> Hypnotherapist: "SO, YOU CALLED HIM?"
> Jim Penniston: *"Yeah."*
> "AND WHAT DID HE SAY?"
> *"He needs me to rendezvous with Police Two and Four . . . at East Gate."*
> "AND THAT'S . . ."
> *"Steffens and Burroughs."*
>
> Jim Penniston. Extract from his hypnosis session, September 10, 1994.

This is clearly what SSgt. Jim Penniston must have heard SSgt. Coffey say. To confuse things even further, Jim later made a mistake concerning these 'call names' in his notebook. Instead of Police 4, he wrote 'P3.' (Police 3). (See Figure 1, Chapter 4: *Evidence* and the accompanying note underneath). All very confusing and trivial, but seeing as the skeptics like to jump all over these small discrepancies when they are the all-too human mistakes we all make, this detail like so many others has to be concluded.

[lii] Exactly what SSgt. Coffey said was recalled during Jim Penniston's second hypnosis session on Saturday, September 10, 1994.

> Hypnotherapist:
> "OK, DID HE WANT YOU TO GO THERE AND RENDEVOUZ WITH THEM?"
> Jim Penniston:
> *"Yeah."*
> DOES HE SAY WHY?
> *"I said . . . well, I asked him. I said, why? He said they have a semi-quasi emergency out there."* (Smiles). *"I want you to investigate it."*
> AND YOU WENT?
> *"Yeah. I ran code, blue . . . blue lights on."*
>
> Jim Penniston. Extract from his hypnosis session, September 10, 1994.

[liii] Jim Penniston 2013:

> "Every response I ever had up to that point in time, the Security Controller would tell me what was going on. This time it was different. This time he wouldn't tell me."
>
> Jim Penniston interviewed on *Paranormal Witness, The Rendlesham Files*, aired November 27, 2013.

As stated in the book, *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest:*

> "This departure from standard procedure was one of the first indications that this was a highly unusual and sensitive situation. It also raises the possibility that at least some people in the chain of command already knew more about this than they were saying, or had been instructed not to give details of the situation over the communications systems. Otherwise, why not simply say to Penniston something along the lines that a patrol is investigating a possible aircraft crash in the forest?"
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF, ret), Thomas Dunne Books, 2014.

[liv] The reader will have noted that there is a clear discrepancy between a) the '1:30 to 2:00 a.m.,' the '2:00 to 2:30 a.m.,' the '2:00 a.m.,' and the '3:00 a.m.' times that Burroughs has stated in different interviews when he says he first got the call from SSgt. Bud Steffens, or when SSgt. Bud Steffens pulled up next to him in his vehicle, requesting they patrol the perimeter of the Woodbridge Base

together (see Notes 7 and 31 above), and b) the '12:02 a.m.' time that SSgt. Jim Penniston says he got off the phone to CSC and then left immediately to drive to the East Gate:

Jim Penniston:

> "About 12:02 am – I remember that distinctly – I was dispatched to the East Gate, which was sometimes referred to as the back gate at Woodbridge."
>
> *Penniston Speaks*. Interview conducted by A. J. Salley Rayl.
> December 1993, for OMNI Magazine, published April 1994.

. . . an event which was put into effect by Steffens and Burroughs's call, which was sometime AFTER 03.00 hrs (according to Burroughs in his witness statement and subsequent interviews), regarding the time when he and Steffens observed the strange lights in Rendlesham Forest.

However, the midnight time was confirmed by SSgt. Dave Coffey in an email from him to Jim Penniston in April 2012:

> 'Jim,
>
> Sorry it took awhile to get back to you, it's been busy since I returned to Langley.
> Here is what I remember of the incident. You called CSC that night around midnight . . .'
>
> Email from David Coffey to Jim Penniston, Wednesday, April 4, 2012, 10:27 AM:

Also, in an interview with skeptical Scottish UFO researcher James Easton (conducted in July 1997), USAF Law Enforcement officer A1C Chris Armold remembers the call from John Burroughs to the Law Enforcement desk at RAF Lakenheath as being after midnight, which correlates more with the 12:02 a.m. time given by Jim Penniston and the 'around midnight' time noted by Sgt. Crash McCabe according to the Deputy Base Commander, Charles I. Halt, who was a lieutenant Colonel at the time.

Quote:

> "After midnight, John Burroughs radioed the LE desk and reported he had seen strange lights in the outside the East Gate on RAF Woodbridge. I was actually on RAF Lakenheath hanging out at the Law Enforcement Desk at the time."
>
> *The Chris Armold Interview.* Conducted by James Eaton in July 1997.

In Note 38 above, we quote Burroughs, who says it wasn't more than five or ten minutes from the time he and SSgt. Steffens first observed the lights in the forest and called it in, which would make the time around 11:45 to 11:50 p.m., when the lights were first observed, if we accept that it was around midnight that the Security Supervisor, SSgt. Jim Penniston had phoned CSC to see why he was being alerted and was immediately dispatched to the East Gate.

At this stage, it is enough to just point out these time discrepancies – an important issue which will be dealt with, along with numerous other issues throughout this book. (See subchapter *Five Witness Statements* in Chapter 15: *The 'Hold Forth'* Years.)
[lv]

Jim Penniston distinctly remembers the time he arrived at the East Gate, Woodbridge Base, as being 12:06 AM, which is four minutes after he left the chow (mess) hall, also at Woodbridge. Taking the route that SSgt. Jim Penniston traveled, the East Gate would have been around 2.47 miles from the chow hall. Calculating the time from the distance and speed he was traveling, it would have taken Jim 3.45 minutes if he had driven this distance at a constant speed of 40 mph. Four minutes would be correct if we add on the seconds he took to walk to his Jeep from the chow hall and prepare whatever he needed to before he took to the road.

Driving from the chow hall to the East Gate of RAF Woodbridge using the route shown above and driving the length of the runway on a road adjacent to it, would have been a distance of exactly 2.47 miles. At a constant speed of 40 mph, this route would have taken approximately 3.45 minutes. (Satellite image, *Google Earth Pro.* 2018).

It should be mentioned here that due to Jim Penniston's memory of when he arrived at the East Gate, the sentence "0006 HOURS GREENWICH MEANTIME" was included on page one of the speech notes for a conference that Jim Penniston had attended as one of the speakers at the *Freeport Pilots Association,* Illinois, November 18, 1993. Jim talked about the subject of what was then referred to as the RAF Bentwaters/Woodbridge Incident. (See Chapter 12: *The Coda Decade*). This conference, which is the first time Jim had come out in public to tell the truth of what he had witnessed and experienced during the incident, took place almost three weeks after Jim had retired from the USAF on October 31, 1993. Jim took his notebook along, and it was at this conference that Jim first introduced the contents of what he had written in the notebook to the audience.
[lvi]

In many publications, it has been stated, and is still assumed, that Airman Ed Cabansag was SSgt. Jim Penniston's driver and that he had driven Penniston to the East Gate. However, Jim Penniston denies this and remembers that he drove alone in his CJ-5 Jeep from the Chow Hall to the East Gate of Woodbridge.

[lvii] Burroughs is on record saying that from the time the sighting of the lights was called in from the East Gate to the time when the Security Supervisor SSgt. Jim Penniston had arrived at the East Gate

was no longer than ten minutes:

Quote:

> "It wasn't that big of a base, [RAF Woodbridge] so it didn't take more than ten minutes for everything to transpire from the time I think we called it in till he [SSgt. Jim Penniston] got down there [East Gate]."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), December 20, 2016.

This estimate of the time taken according to Burroughs is about right, because Jim Penniston says he had spoken to CSC around midnight, some minutes after the call was taken by Burroughs. After Jim Penniston had put the phone down, he remembers looking at his digital wrist-watch to see the time of 12:02 AM as he left to drive to the East Gate, as ordered. So, from the time when the sighting of the lights first occurred (somewhere between 11:45 and 11:50 p.m. – December 25) to the time when Jim Penniston arrived at the East Gate (12:06 a.m. – December 26), would have been close to twenty minutes.
[lviii]

In the TV documentary *Strange But True?*, (filmed April 1994, which happened to be the first open, public interview Jim Penniston had engaged in about what he had witnessed), Jim Penniston is portrayed by an actor asking the actor portraying A1C Burroughs what the problem was – with both discussing the strange lights in the woods. Again, this is not a true account, as Jim had first spoken with his counterpart in rank (SSgt. Bud Steffens), and mainly discussed the situation with him.

This fact is confirmed by Burroughs himself:

> "Well, actually what happened, when Penniston showed up, Steffens was in charge, so Steffens went over to him, and they started talking."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), December 20, 2016.

[lix] Knowing the kind of reputation A1C John Burroughs had earned himself on the twin bases and Jim Penniston's prior experiences with him, Jim's initial observation and train of thought as to what the problem might be as he arrived at the East Gate would not be considered 'wide of the mark.' A few months before the incident, SSgt. Jim Penniston, who was Security Supervisor, had been dispatched to the Woodbridge NCO Club to diffuse a domestic situation involving Airman Burroughs:

Note by Jim Penniston:

> I was dispatched to the Woodbridge NCO Club to support Burroughs, who had foolishly become involved in a domestic situation at the club. In hindsight, that situation was an indication of what Halt had said about Burroughs . . . that he could take a bad situation and make it worse. After arriving at the club, it was immediately apparent to me that Burroughs had escalated the situation to a level where several people

would have had to have been apprehended, and most likely after Burroughs had got his ass kicked. After my arrival, I quickly handled and diffused the situation. This event happened only a few months before the first night of the Rendlesham Incident in which we both found ourselves involved, and from that situation in the club I knew Burroughs wasn't the most reliable or dependable cop, especially in a high-tense situation.

[lx] In various interviews over the years, Jim Penniston has said that he had gazed some 300 meters into the distance and saw what appeared to be a fire, as a result of an aircraft crash. For example, see *Penniston Speaks:* (*Open Book, Special Report: Into the Night by A.J.S Rayl*) – this is an interview Jim did with Salley Rayl, as published in 1996. It has now been established that the landing site, of what later turned out to be an unidentified craft of unknown origin, was exactly one mile slightly southeast or to the right of the straight perimeter road that led out from the East Gate. Also, what was observed at this stage was a large 'dome' of whitish/yellowish light that covered the canopy of the forest. Jim Penniston explains that his mention of gazing 300 meters into the distance relates to the point where the 700-yards (640 meters) 'East Gate Road,' which leads out from the East Gate, merges with the Rendlesham forest.

[lxi] The strange half-sphere, 'dome-like' emanation of light over the canopy of part of the forest, as described by Jim Penniston, was verified by Richard Bertolino, who was a 'C Flight' A1C security guard at Bentwaters during the incident in December 1980. In September 2009, Bertolino came forward to talk to investigative researcher Linda Moulton Howe for her *Earthfiles* podcast.

Quote:

Richard Bertolino:
"We do our perimeter check, and all of a sudden on the radio, someone starts yelling there's a UFO out here." (Bertolino laughs). "Well, at that time, it registered to me and Sergeant Hall that there probably is a UFO out there, and Security Six got the call to go out there. That was Sergeant Penniston."

Linda Moulton Howe:
"SERGEANT JAMES PENNISTON . . ."

"Yeah, he went out there, and we went to a place called 'Bunker Hill' because we knew that it was the highest point we could get to on base. It's just basically a hill in a flight zone with a bunker on top of it for airbase ground defense."

"BECAUSE YOU AND SERGEANT HALL WANTED TO LOOK FOR THE UFO?"

"Correct. When we got up there, we could not quite see a long distance over trees, but one thing I'll never forget was we saw a luminescent glow, 'cause he's saying, "The woods are all lit up, the woods are all lit up," and

in that glow . . . I don't know how to describe it. It's not like a light that can continually travel? It didn't have that property of a flashlight or a light bulb that illuminated an area. It almost had a dome quality to it, like it lit a certain area and that was it. It was a strange light."

"YOU WERE LOOKING AT WHAT APPEARED TO BE HALF OF A SPHERE OF LIGHT OUT IN THE WOODS THAT YOU COULD SEE?"

"Correct, probably the size of a football field."

"WOW, THAT BIG!"

"Yes, that big. It wasn't an object; it was just light. You know how light will leave an area that's lit up around it, and it fades out? This was an area that was lit up, but at a certain point it looked like it had cut off from fading. It was just there. It just lit up that area. Does that make sense?"

"IT DOES, AND WHEN YOU AND SERGEANT HALL SAW THIS ENORMOUS SPHERE OF LIGHT COVERING A FOOTBALL FIELD SIZE, WHAT DID YOU SAY TO EACH OTHER?"

[Bertolino laughs]. "I think, er, probably some choice words; you know, holy was the lead into it."

Earthfiles Podcast Episode 57 – *Another RAF Bentwaters Security Airman Speaks About Dec. 1980 UFO*. Published on December 20, 2015.

Obviously, this phenomenon of a distinct 'dome-like' light, or what Jim Penniston terms a 'bubble' of light, is worth some attention, because it is nothing like how a naked light would naturally behave in reality. The light shining from a central source gradually diffuses outward and fades into the darkness with no clean cut-off point. What is being described here is exactly what we would see if a light or lights shining in the darkness had been placed inside an upside-down, bowl structure made of clear glass. However, the lights the witnesses saw in the forest were not inside any kind of physical glass dome structure, which means that what the witnesses had observed was not normal, but *paranormal*, and this is why the lights in the forest were thought of as unnaturally strange and odd.

(As a lead up to all that Richard Bertolino says here, see Note 13, where Bertolino mentions that he and Sgt. Hall had observed the lights descending into the forest, which would have been at the same time that SSgt. Steffens had seen the same phenomenon from the East Gate of the Woodbridge base).

Furthermore, noting what Bertolino said in the first instance – i.e., *". . . someone starts yelling there's a UFO out here,"* one wonders who this person was who had irresponsibly yelled this over the radio, which would have surely been viewed as a serious breach of protocol – especially using the term 'UFO.' This was sometime after Richard Bertolino said that he and Sgt. Hall had: 1) observed the lights descend into the woods, and 2) after he and his team had then completed a perimeter check of the base. And the fact that he then heard someone yelling *"There's a UFO out HERE,"* would mean that the radio transmission was being made by someone who was then investigating the lights *off-base and*

in or near the woods and close to where the lights were. The only USAF personnel who were off base, out near the woods and close to the lights, were SSgt. Steffens and Airman Burroughs.

It should be noted that Burroughs had said that he and SSgt. Steffens had gone off base to do their own investigation of the lights that descended into the woods of Rendlesham Forest, as first seen by SSgt. Steffens, and that they had then observed the lights from the far end of East-Gate Road, which overlooked the forest. Burroughs also said that he and SSgt. Steffens had then decided to head back to the East Gate and use the direct landline from there to the Law Enforcement desk. Considering Jim Penniston's observation that Burroughs is inclined to act without thinking, the question must be asked: *Could it have been the overly-excited Burroughs who yelled this over the radio?* If so, then it could be assumed that after Steffens had reprimanded Burroughs, he then suggested that they use the landline at the East Gate. And again, if so, then it's no surprise that this detail, which would have been an embarrassment to Burroughs, was excluded from his account.

In his subsequent interviews and conferences, Burroughs, seems to have blamed the "UFO"-mentioned radio transmission on the Security Controller, SSgt. Dave Coffey – even though it's extremely unlikely that SSgt. Coffey would have announced the word "UFO" over the radio:

> "The one thing that will always stick with me was . . . Bud now was real nervous, because first, we had been off base. Second of all, we could not understand what we were dealing with as far as what we were seeing. It didn't seem normal. How are we going to explain it? And he [possibly referring to the Security Controller, SSgt. Coffey] immediately over the radio, broadcast, *'Respond down to the to the East Gate,'* which was on all the rated frequencies as far as for Security and, *'They've spotted a UFO.'*
>
> "Well, right away, and we're like uh, *'Oh no,'* okay? And it's just like what Colonel Halt said . . . *'Okay, here goes a career.'* And I was just a young airman. And, you know, back then in eighty, [1980] UFOs were looked at a lot differently than they are now, okay? And when you started trying to describe what a UFO was, people were looking at you like you were nuts okay?"
>
> John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.

Note by Jim Penniston:

> No Security personnel – especially SSgt. Dave Coffey that night – would ever have used the term "UFO," or anything like that over the Radio Net. It would have been viewed as a serious breach of protocol. This is why I used the direct line at the chow hall and at the East Gate. Also, I think the only person fool enough to have transmitted that would be Burroughs, IF it was done at all. Burroughs and Steffens had their radios on the 'Law Enforcement' frequency, NOT the 'Security' frequency, so they could not have heard the Security transmissions

> anyway, but according to what I know in my conversations with Dave Coffey, this alleged transmission never happened.

Jim Penniston says it is more likely that Burroughs injected the term "UFO" into what he would have imagined was the Security radio transmission which reported him being deployed to the East Gate, and that he used this story to perhaps divert attention away from what we suspect was his own radio announcement gaff, when he and Steffens were in the forest, and when personnel like Airman Bertolino say they had heard someone "yelling, there's a UFO out here" over the radio. (See also last quote at the end of Note 34 in the end notes of Chapter 1: *Normal was the beginning*, where Burroughs tells the same story in his radio interview with Jimmy Church on January 23, 2019).

Also, it should be noted that Richard Bertolino is mistaken when he says that Jim Penniston was 'Security Six.' Jim Penniston says that Airman Bertolino would have been on the Bentwaters base and, therefore, would have had no idea of the number of personnel on the Woodbridge base tasked to do 'Guard Mount,' which at Woodbridge was completed earlier than at Bentwaters. If Woodbridge were short with personnel, then there would be no reason to have a 'Security Eight,' and 'Security Six' would be in charge. But that night, SSgt. Jim Penniston, who was using his own Jeep, was 'Security Eight,' and Sgt. McCulley was 'Security Six.

[lxii] Exactly what SSgt. Bud Steffens had said in response, as quoted, was recalled by Jim Penniston during his hypnosis session on September 10, 1994.

[lxiii] This occurrence was also recalled by Jim Penniston under regression hypnosis. The following is what Jim said while under hypnosis during the second hypnosis session, which took place Saturday, September 10, 1994.

Quote:

> *"John's still looking. He's got his mouth open . . . he's not well-educated. I need to call this in. John grabs the radio, too.* (Jim laughs, with disbelief on his face) *I said, "Don't! . . . you're not calling that in over the radio. We don't know what it is. It could be . . . classified."*
>
> Jim Penniston. Hypnosis Session, September 10, 1994

[lxiv] The radar at the control tower on the Bentwaters base was known as 'RAPCON.'

[lxv]

In numerous interviews, Burroughs has confirmed the radar sighting, which was relayed to Jim Penniston while he was on the landline phone to CSC at the East Gate. For example:

> John Burroughs, 1990:
> "He [Penniston] got on the phone with CSC and a decision was made, and I wasn't on the phone, but when he came back a decision was made" [. . .] ". . . they also started contacting radar facilities, and then they went through ours and some other ones. And when they started doing that, they got some data that there had actually been something on radar that had been outside the gate in the forest, which had disappeared on radar. So, and this is the only reason why we could have gone

> off base. I mean people don't really understand this. It was off base, and at that point it wasn't threatening the perimeter fence line, so there should be no reason why we shouldn't have responded off base, other than the fact that after they received the confirmation that something had been seen on radar, and something appeared to go down into the forest area, and we were seeing strange lights in the forest, that we were allowed to go off on an emergency basis to try and find out what it was to see if something did actually crash in the forest."
>
> *John Burroughs Rendlesham UFO Witness,*
> interviewed by radio host Alejandro Rojas for Open Minds Radio, October 27, 2014.
> From 29.44 minutes into the interview.

Furthermore, and as mentioned in Chapter 5: *A Special Mission,* SSgt. Monroe Nevels remembers what Lieutenant Bruce England had told him on December 27, 1980 concerning the radar sighting which preceded the first night's events, and which he says was close to midnight on December 25, 1980.

Quote:

> "Lt. Englund told me that close to midnight on the night of December 25, 1980, the London Control Tower had contacted the RAF Woodbridge Tower and said they had an object showing up on their radar screen appearing to be above them in the Woodbridge Tower. It was hovering right above the Woodbridge Tower."
>
> Written testimony by Monroe Nevels, February 10, 2017.

If we go by Jim Penniston's time logs, Jim would have received the information about the radar sighting – which he was told had happened 'fifteen minutes prior' – at 12:19 a.m., which means that the radar sighting of an object above the Woodbridge tower must have taken place around 12:04 a.m. However, the time Jim was told the radar sighting happened must be slightly wrong, and only a rough estimate by whomever had relayed the information – because 1) Jim Penniston says that he distinctly remembers the time being 12:02 a.m. when he was told to leave the chow hall and head to the East Gate as ordered, and 2) we have to allow some time for Burroughs and Steffens to have investigated the lights they had seen descend into the Rendlesham Forest and then call it in. Burroughs says that it was between five and ten minutes from when he and SSgt. Steffens first observed the lights in the forest to when the sighting was called in, which means the sighting of the lighted object Burroughs and Steffens had observed must have taken place somewhere between 11:45 and 11:50 p.m. on December 25, which is close to midnight. Burroughs then says it took no longer than ten minutes after calling the sighting in when SSgt. Penniston arrived at the East Gate, and Jim Penniston says that he remembers arriving at 12:06 a.m. on December 26. This means that the radar sighting of the object was tracked and lost from radar, again between 11:45 and 11:50 p.m. when SSgt. Steffens first saw the lighted object descend into the forest, therefore making the radar sighting not fifteen minutes, but closer to a half hour before SSgt. Jim Penniston was told about it.

In any case, Lt. Englund having told SSgt. Monroe Nevels that the radar sighting took place close to midnight on December 25, and Jim being told of the radar sighting having taken place 'around fifteen

minutes or so' prior – which places the radar sighting in the same ball-park of time – negates Burroughs' time of between 2:00 and 3:00 a.m. (December 26) for his and Steffens sighting of the lighted object and that the incident began around 3:00 a.m. This was given on Burroughs' handwritten and signed witness statement, and also the official witness statements signed by Lt. Buran and MSgt. J.D. Chandler. These are the only original sources that give the time of the incident as having begun at 'around 03.00' (Burroughs) or 'approximately 03.00 hrs.' (Buran and Chandler).

Most important is the fact that when Steffens and Burroughs called in the sighting, they were told that there was no radar sighting of the object, when in fact we know there had been, as relayed to Jim Penniston. It would appear that this information was kept from Sgt. McCabe at the Law Enforcement desk, as it was already being seen as a Security issue, hence why Security Supervisor, SSgt. Jim Penniston was told about it and not SSgt, Steffens and Airman Burroughs, as SSgt. Penniston had a 'Top-Secret' clearance and a need to know. (See also Note 22 below).

[lxvi] Note by Jim Penniston:

It has been established as a fact that the first night's events began on the morning of Friday, December 26, 1980, and I remember it having begun for me just after midnight. It is also a fact that many have misread the date at the top of the page in the captured video still (Figure 1) as '27 dec 80,' and skeptics have taken issue with this. However, the date is not '27 dec 80,' but '29 dec 80.' When you look closely, what looks like a 'seven' is really a nine with a flattened loop, as that's how I write my nines. Also, I know it couldn't be a seven, as I often write my sevens in the European style with a strike through the stem.

As for explaining why I wrote the date of '29 dec 80,' I now recall that this date was for a flight exercise logged while I was checking the perimeter of Woodbridge some hours earlier. The date of that flight exercise was scheduled for Monday morning – i.e., '29 dec 80' – and I wrote down this date at the top of a fresh, new page in my notebook that night as a reminder. It is also important to add that as was my habit, I would insert my pen in the notebook to open it on the same page. I deliberately did the same in this instance so that I could fill in the details about the flight exercise when I later received more information about it. However, before I was notified with more details relating to this flight exercise and could note them down, I was deployed to the East Gate to investigate the lights in the woods, and where I then began writing down the response notes lower down on the same page, not knowing at this stage how significant this incident would turn out to be.

As acknowledged, the incident began as a suspected aircraft crash in Rendlesham Forest. Ironically, the date of '29 dec 80,' was the date for *an 'off base' aircraft crash, security training exercise.* This exercise was later cancelled. However, little did I know then how

confusing this date would later become and how much of a stir or 'storm in a teacup' this date in the notebook would be made of by the skeptics and debunkers in the years that followed, and all because the video still of me opening the notebook at that page in the TV documentary is of low definition, and they have misread the way I write my 9s, as I did here in the date, and have instead misread it as a '7,' thinking this was the date of the incident. Based on this misreading, skeptics have therefore asserted that I had either made a mistake writing down '27 dec 80,' instead of the correct date of '26 dec 80, or that the incident I was involved in really took place on the 27th, and that I must be complicit in a cover-up or conspiracy – a view which really has no rational logic to it, and has simply been inflated and overelaborated on (even by Burroughs in recent years) to discredit me. However, the simple fact is, that the date at the top of that notebook page, which was really a reminder of the flight exercise on the 29th, *had nothing to do with the incident.*

[lxvii] In the witness statement that was signed by J.D. Chandler is the following, which confirms this part of Jim Penniston's account:

"After several minutes, Penniston requested my presence. I departed RAF Bentwaters through Butley Gate for RAF Woodbridge."

Page 1 of 2 of the *witness statement* (AF FORM 1169), typed, signed and dated by J.D Chandler, 81 Security Police Sq, January 2, 1981.

[lxviii] In truth, SSgt. Bud Steffens had disobeyed an order, as SSgt. Jim Penniston didn't ask but ordered Steffens to go along. It is later said, in some accounts, that SSgt. Bud Steffens – a deeply religious man – had been so disturbed by the earlier sighting with Burroughs at the end of the East-Gate Road that he was 'frightened' to go back. (See *The Rendlesham Incident, Britain's Roswell. Night One*). It seems rather strange that an array of blinking lights in a forest seen from some distance away could provoke that kind of reaction and especially from a military Sergeant – after all, Burroughs and Steffens hadn't driven towards the forest to get as close as they could get to the lights to see what it was, and again, at this time of year and because of the festive spirit, Burroughs initially thought that it might have been drunken pranksters using some kind of Christmas light display or something similar. But again, like Burroughs, Steffens' disturbed feelings attest to the 'high strangeness' of these glowing lights in the woods, and Burroughs said he also felt the same as Steffens about returning to the woods.

Burroughs, 1994:
"One part of me wanted to go ahead and go out there and figure out what we were dealing with, and the other part of me was saying, nah, you don't need to go out there, just go ahead and stay back at the gate where it's safe and you don't have to worry about what's going on."

Documentary Transcript of *Strange But True?*
London Weekend Television. December 9, 1994. Presenter:
Michael Aspel.

However, as soon as he heard SSgt. Steffens refuse to go back out to the forest, Burroughs asked SSgt. Jim Penniston if he could go out there with him.

[lxix] Burroughs expressed his wish to go back out there, as he knew it wasn't an aircraft crash . . . it was something else:

> "Well for me personally, I was intrigued by . . . what is going on, you know? I, there was something that like changed in me a little bit. It went from . . . I wasn't scared at that point I just wanted to know what it was because it just didn't make any sense what we were seeing or what was going on and I really wanted to get out there to try to figure out what it was."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church *Fade to Black*
> (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

[lxx] In order for USAF Security Forces to deploy off base under the Status of Forces Agreement [SOFA], an emergency situation concerning life or securing operational resources had to exist before USAF personnel could legally respond with weapons off base.

[lxxi] In relatively recent interviews, Burroughs has provided a few little twists to this part of his and Jim Penniston's account:

> Burroughs, 2009:
> ". . . at the last second he [SSgt. Jim Penniston] was told that I could go off base with my 38. That didn't get relayed to me, so I did leave my weapon at the gate with the two M16s, and we departed off base. But later on, when I get into the story, Jim still thought I was actually armed. There was no threat. At that point, we were simply going out to see what was going on out in the woods."
>
> *The Paracast*, June 21, 2009, with John Burroughs and Peter Robbins.
>
> Note by Jim Penniston:
> From whom did Burroughs get this information? I do not recall ever being told that Burroughs could go off base with his .38 sidearm. That information was not relayed to me from either SSgt Coffey, SSgt Dillard, MSgt Chandler, or Lt. Buran – nor was it relayed from the Law Enforcement Desk, as they were not involved at this point, and neither were they in a position to counter Lt Buran's orders. As with all security Protocols on deploying off base, I did what I was told by Lt. Buran, as

> relayed to me over the direct landline call at the East Gate. All weapons remained on base as per his order with me. I also did a cursory check of personal equipment of my team members. This was standard procedure. For example, I knew Cabansag had his radio because I looked and checked, just as I did for the weapons, and Burroughs did not have his holstered sidearm or radio with him when we went out to the forest. I made sure my team complied with our Shift Commander's orders. It's that simple.

[lxxii] In his official statement, dated January 2, 1981, by Shift Commander Fred 'Skip' Buran, we are led to assume that MSgt. Chandler had arrived at the East Gate just before the men were leaving to go into Rendlesham Forest. He also states that it was Chandler that had ordered Penniston and the men to turn their weapons – M16s and .38 revolvers – over to him and to leave them at the base, after which Buran tells them to go ahead:

> "After he [SSgt. Jim Penniston] had been joined by the Security Flight Chief, MSgt Chandler, and turned his weapon over to him, I directed them to go ahead."
>
> Page 1 of 2 of the *witness statement* (AF FORM 1169), signed and dated by Fred A. Buran, 81 Security Police Squadron, Jan 2, 1981.

However, Jim Penniston recalls that MSgt. J.D. Chandler hadn't yet arrived by the time they had turned their weapons in and had not arrived even when they had departed the East Gate to investigate the lights in Rendlesham Forest, so they left their weapons and the radio Burroughs had, with SSgt. Steffens.

[lxxiii] Burroughs has long maintained that he, Jim Penniston, and Cabansag had gotten into a truck, which was a broad, front three-seater. He remembers Jim driving, and Cabansag being seated in the middle, with himself being in the passenger seat next to the window. Jim, who knows he was driving a CJ-5 Jeep that night, has confronted Burroughs about his memory of it being a truck. However, Burroughs insists that it was a truck, as this is what came up in his hypnosis.

[lxxiv] Going by the accounts, the time when SSgt. Penniston, A1C Burroughs, and A1C Cabansag had left the East Gate to drive off-base into the forest to investigate the strange lights was close to around thirty-five to forty minutes after the lights were first observed by Steffens and Burroughs. At this time (around 12:25 a.m.) when SSgt. Jim Penniston and the two Airmen were given the all-clear to proceed with the investigation off base and were leaving, the comm/plotter, SSgt. Donnie Dillard, who had been broadcasting Christmas songs over the USAF Net radio and taking requests, stopped what he was doing and called for all unnecessary radio communications to cease. Dillard then told everyone there was now a serious situation being investigated over at the Woodbridge base.

According to writer Chris Evers, editor of *Outer Limits* magazine (based on the research of Ronnie Dugdale), *"Airmen on duty at both Woodbridge and Bentwaters were now all ears, wondering what on earth was going on."*

[lxxv] Although Jim Penniston and Burroughs were in awe of the mystery that was unfolding before them, Airman Ed Cabansag – having only been on duty at the base for a few days – thought this was all a

prank being set up for him and on his behalf: that some kind of 'initiation ceremony' was going to be meted out to him. In a rare interview that he did with the Sci-Fi Channel some 23 years after the events, Cabansag expressed his thoughts about the whole thing:

> Edward Cabansag. 2003:
> "As we were heading out, I thought this was a prank. I thought, okay, three, four days on with my flight, there's a big huge mud puddle out here, and they're going to throw me in the mud."

Ed Cabansag. Filmed interview on *UFO Invasion at Rendlesham.* Sci-Fi Channel documentary hosted by Bryant Gumble. December 12, 2003 (U.S.), December 1, 2005 (U.K.).

[lxxvi] Again, this is not what Burroughs had been told earlier by Sgt. Crash McCabe when he had called the sighting of the lights in at the Law Enforcement desk, which would surely have been much earlier than the 'around 15 minutes of so' that was said to have passed before SSgt. Jim Penniston had received the information while at the East Gate that a 'bogey' had indeed been tracked over the Woodbridge area, which had then disappeared (into the Rendlesham Woods), as was confirmed by the three radar towers. When Burroughs had called it in, and Sgt. McCabe had checked with the radar towers, McCabe was told that nothing was flying in the area, and nothing had been tracked. This had been relayed back to Burroughs, who insisted that strange lights were clearly being observed by himself and SSgt. Steffens in the forest close to the East Gate.

Jim Penniston is certain that the reason why Law Enforcement was initially told that nothing had been tracked was because it was already ascertained that this was more a Security situation and that Law Enforcement did not have a 'need to know' at this stage. It was then that SSgt. Jim Penniston, who was on Security and was the Woodbridge Supervisor that night, was notified to go straight to the East Gate and investigate.

[lxxvii] In subsequent interviews, Burroughs has stated that they were forced to stop the vehicle at the end of the logging road because of a fence, which was in front of an open field adjacent to the forest.

> Burroughs, 2016:
> "I always remembered this, but later when I went back and visited, there was no fence line there, but I did confirm through the forest division, and some people that lived there . . . there wasn't an in . . . [trails off and begins sentence again]. There were two fences, and there was a fence that blocked us going any further. So, we exited the vehicle."

John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), December 20, 2016.

> Note by Jim Penniston:
> From my recall of when we got the field at the end of the logging road, Burroughs is wrong. There was no fence blocking our way during this early part of the investigation. In front of us was largely an open field, on

> which there were a number of short, younger trees scattered around that had been planted five years earlier. However, the field was also ridged with high berms and deep ditches. My thoughts were that if we had attempted to drive any further, we were in danger of us getting stuck or the Jeep tipping over, which was top heavy, so I decided to park the vehicle where I had stopped, which was some way into the field (about 50 yards in from the east end of the logging road) and continue on foot. In any case, I thought the parked Jeep could mark the ECP (Entry Control Point) off the logging road to accommodate the vehicles of the responding emergency forces. It was an ideal spot.

Also, Jim's memory of this matches what he said during the second hypnosis session he had undertaken on Saturday, September 10, 1994:

> Jim Penniston:
> "We don't go that far, though. We can't go that far. There's a ditch in front of us. I can't drive through a ditch? It's too big. The Jeep will tip over."
>
> Jim Penniston. Hypnosis Session, September 10, 1994
>
> Added note by Jim Penniston:
> The 'two fences' Burroughs mentions in that interview may be the two fences that he and I had come to later during the investigation soon after the craft took off, and we followed it. These two wire fences, which were some ten feet apart, ran between the forest we had just exited and the farmer's field to the east. The first fence belonged to the forestry commission, and the second fence belonged to the farmer. (See Chapter 3: *Discovery*).

In a recent interview with radio host Jimmy Church, Burroughs does not mention the fence as being the reason why they couldn't go any further. Instead Burroughs says that they couldn't go no further in the vehicle because of the terrain, which correlates with what Jim Penniston has always stated.

> ". . . we went down the road . . . we went into the forest on the service track road. and we went as far as we could before we couldn't go any farther in the vehicle with the terrain, and we jumped out of the vehicle . . ."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

[lxxviii] At this point it seems that for Burroughs, the lights had moved further back from the location where he and SSgt. Steffens had observed them earlier, according to what Burroughs says here:

> "All three of us got out." [Exited the Jeep] "And at that point it was . . . whatever it was, was further out in the distance, now in the forest."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), December 20, 2016.

[lxxix]

Burroughs gives the same account in this interview with Jimmy Church a year later:

> "It was definitely back farther in the forest now you know what I mean? In other words, whatever the main thing was that we eventually got to, was deeper in the forest . . ."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

Only recently in an interview with Jimmy Church (Jan 2019), Burroughs gave his thoughts about the lights in the forest not being a conventional aircraft that had crashed before leaving to investigate.

> "Well, I mean, each . . . you know I can't speak for Penniston or Cabansag, but for me, I just . . . what, what is it? what, what uh, what are we, what are we gonna find out there? Um, the uh, aircraft coming down was just a theory they used – you know, that . . . well, you had radar contact, something disappeared. Uh, you can see something in the forest, uh, so we're gonna go see. But the UFO thing is, you know . . . UFOs. The terminology always immediately is an alien? Or whatever. Just really what are UFOs? An Unidentified flying object. You just don't want that labeled because people immediately think there's something more to it. But no, it was just like let's go see, you know? And we all jumped in the truck and we took off down towards the, you know, the forest, into the forest where we were seeing the lights."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

Although Burroughs brings up the point that labeling the phenomenon a UFO was not a wise thing to do because of the ET/alien connotations associated with it, this is exactly what Burroughs had assumed at the time, as a "UFO" was what he said he thought it was to SSgt. Jim Penniston while observing the lights at the East Gate and after Steffens had said that *whatever it was had landed:*

[lxxx] Details recalled through Jim Penniston's second hypnosis session, which took place on Saturday, September 10, 1994. (Also, see Note 83 below).

[lxxxi]

In decimal degrees, the geographical coordinates for the east end of the logging road where SSgt. Jim Penniston determined the ECP (Entry Control Point) should be as marked by the parked Jeep and are 52.089521ºN 1.439079ºE.

[lxxxii]

Perhaps Burroughs really wasn't paying attention when SSgt. Jim Penniston asked him to get the camera from the Jeep (which Jim has recalled through hypnosis), because to this day, Burroughs has stated in various subsequent interviews that he does not remember SSgt. Jim Penniston carrying a camera on him that night or using it, adding that he wouldn't have had time to use it anyway from what he consciously remembers. (For more on this issue, see Note 110). However, it is possible that being Law Enforcement, airman Burroughs would not have known that the camera was a necessary part of the crash kit, which SSgt. Jim Penniston, the Security Supervisor, who had experience of numerous aircraft crashes, had taken with him. It should be emphasized that Security and Law Enforcement were two separate entities on the twin bases.

[lxxxiii] Again, this is yet another detail recalled through Jim Penniston's second hypnosis session, which took place on Saturday, September 10, 1994:

> Hypnotherapist: "YOU MAKE THE DECISION TO LEAVE THE JEEP."
> Jim Penniston:
> *"Yeah. Tell John to get the camera." (Laughs). "John. He's no help at all. He is gibbering."*
> Hypnotherapist: "WHAT'S HE SAY?"
> Jim Penniston:
> *"Jim, it ain't no fucking, no way it's an aircraft. He says, "I see it land out there, hover and land." I know John's lost it. He's not thinking right. Maybe he didn't sleep that day, I don't know. I get the camera myself. I got three flashlights; only two of them work. I give one to John. You know, he put his hand out like, I'll take both of them."*
>
> Jim Penniston. Hypnosis Session, September 10, 1994

[lxxxiv] A1C Cabansag's fears about all this being a show for him – part of an 'initiation ceremony' – were now fast dissolving at this point:

> Edward Cabansag, 2003:
> "As we got closer and closer, and I could see the intensity on both the other gentlemen's face[s], and I knew that this was really going to be something more involved than a prank."
>
> Ed Cabansag. Filmed interview on *UFO Invasion at Rendlesham.* Sci-Fi Channel documentary hosted by Bryant Gumble. December 12, 2003 (U.S.), December 1, 2005 (U.K.).

[lxxxv] Ed Cabansag remembers Burroughs being excited about the lights moving through the trees.

> "Burroughs would say, *'Do you see that? Do you see what's out there on the edge of the trees?'* And I'm looking and looking, and I'm going, *'Well, what are you seeing? What are you seeing?'* And he then extended his finger out, put my head to the end of his finger . . . *'Look at the end of my finger.'* It was moving left, right, left, right, and it had blue, white, yellow lights."
>
> Ed Cabansag. Filmed interview on *UFO Invasion at Rendlesham.* Sci-Fi Channel documentary hosted by Bryant Gumble. December 12, 2003 (U.S.), December 1, 2005 (U.K.).

[lxxxvi] In the rare interview he did with the Sci-Fi Channel in 2003, Ed Cabansag confirms this:

> "The closer we would get to it [the lighted object in the woods] we would lose communication, you know, with uh, Central Security Control."
>
> Ed Cabansag. Filmed interview on *UFO Invasion at Rendlesham.* Sci-Fi Channel documentary hosted by Bryant Gumble. December 12, 2003 (U.S.), December 1, 2005 (U.K.).

[lxxxvii] During the second of two hypnosis sessions, which took place in 1994, Jim Penniston recalls telling CSC that he was going to post Airman Cabansag at the logging road and also Burroughs if he had to.

> "I tell CSC I'm going to go in and leave Cabansag at the logging road as a radio relay." (Indecipherable). "If the signal's out, I will put Burroughs out."

[lxxxviii]

> Jim Penniston. Hypnosis Session, September 10, 1994

Jim's ordering of Airman Cabansag to return back to the Jeep at the end of the logging road to act as radio relay at this point in the investigation is consciously remembered by Jim, and this is also evident in what Jim was able to recall from his second hypnosis session, which took place on Saturday, September 10, 1994. (See Chapter 3: *Discovery* for these recalled details and the contradictory witness statement testimonies of Burroughs and Cabansag on this issue).

[lxxxix] Burroughs has always maintained that he never saw Jim Penniston write down anything in a notebook. (See Note 106).

[xc] As we can see, another contradiction comes up in these official statements regarding the sequence of events. In the official statement of Master Sergeant Chandler, we are led to assume that Chandler arrives at the East Gate when Penniston, Burroughs and Cabansag 'had' (*already*, it would seem) entered the woods and that he was now a 'communication link' at the East Gate in the radio contact 'relay chain' between the team out in the woods and CSC.

> "When I arrived, SSgt Penniston, A1C Burroughs and Amn Cabansag had entered the wooded area just beyond

the clearing at the access road. We set up radio relay between SSgt Penniston, myself and CSC.'

Page 1 of 2 of the *witness statement* (AF FORM 1169), typed, signed and dated by J.D Chandler, 81 Security Police Sq, January 2, 1981.

There is nothing here about the location where MSgt. Chandler had arrived, but one would assume it to be the East Gate, as this was where Chandler was expected, and again SSgt. Bud Steffens asked to stay at the East Gate and wait for Chandler. However, as we noted earlier (see Note 72 above), in the official statement signed by Shift Commander Lt. Buran, we are led to assume that Chandler had arrived at the East Gate *before* the men set out and that it was Chandler who had ordered they leave their weapons behind because of USAF protocol in respecting the Status of Forces Agreement [SOFA].

Explanation:

It could be that Lt. Buran, who wasn't there, but was merely monitoring the situation at CSC Bentwaters, had himself assumed that Chandler had arrived before the first responders had left, when in fact Chandler had ordered over the radio that the men were to leave their weapons inside the base at East Gate, and while he was still driving over to the East Gate.

The confusion surrounding MSgt. Chandler's role in all this – i.e., when and where he arrived – is further compounded when we read the witness statement signed by Edward N. Cabansag, in which we are confronted with a completely different scenario:

"When we got about 75-50 meters, MSgt Chandler/Flight Chief, was on the scene. CSC was not reading our transmissions very well, so we used MSgt Chandler as a go-between. He remained back at our vehicle."

Page 1 of 1 of typed *witness statement* signed by Edward N. Cabansag,
A1C, USAF 81st Security Police Sq. Not dated.

This is confusing, as SSgt. Penniston had ordered Airman Cabansag back to the Jeep to act as relay. It should be noted that in the years following and in the interview Ed Cabansag did with author Georgina Bruni, he is quoted as having said that the typed witness statement he was given to sign was not prepared or typed by him and that he didn't even read it. (See subchapter: *Five Witness Statements* in Chapter 15: *The 'Hold-Forth' Years*). However, if the statement signed by Cabansag is to be believed, then after arriving at the East Gate after the first responders had left, Chandler may have then driven down to Rendlesham Forest himself, and after arriving at the end of the logging road where the Jeep was parked, he took over from Airman Cabansag as a relay, and then ordered Cabansag into the woods to find Penniston and Burroughs.

Is this true? Or is this what we are being led to believe in the witness statement that was signed by Edward N. Cabansag? There is, of course, no indication of Chandler having done this in the statement that bears his signature or name.

[xci] In a recent interview with radio host, Jimmy Church, Burroughs described the same "staggered formation" in which he and SSgt. Jim Penniston entered the forest.

Quoting Burroughs:

" . . . started to go in on foot like a lined staggered formation towards the area where we, we thought the

> object . . . or I call it an object because what else can you call it? You know? It ended up being what looked like lights to me, but you know we were heading towards where the lights were."

In the same interview, Jimmy Church then asked Burroughs if he had his radio with him.

Quoting Burroughs:

> "I don't believe I did. I might have had, I think, you know, it's hard to remember for sure. I may have had my radio with me too. I think maybe all three of us did, but if we did, he [SSgt. Jim Penniston] would have been the one running . . . being on the radio, not us."

According to Jim Penniston, Burroughs did not have his radio with him – only he and Cabansag did, as SSgt. Jim Penniston did a cursory check on both men for equipment before leaving the East Gate, and allowed Cabansag to carry a radio, but not Burroughs, as instructed by Shift Commander, Lt. Buran. (See Note 72).

Quoted extracts from John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

[xcii] This electrostatic and time distortion effect has been confirmed by Burroughs in numerous interviews. For example:

> Burroughs, 1994:
> "The nearer we got to that thing the more uneasy I felt . . . it was as if I was moving in slow motion. I felt really hot and as if the hair was standing up on the back of my head."
>
> Documentary Transcript of *Strange But True?* London Weekend Television, December 9, 1994.

> Burroughs, 1991:
> "When it was happening, everything seemed to go slower. We seemed to be in a – I wouldn't say time warp – but like everything appeared to happen slower to us and everything felt different, but when it disappeared, it's like everything was normal again; the perception of the ground, the air, the sky, the stars, the whole nine yards were different."
>
> *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO"* Lifetime Television. September 18, 1991

[xciii] In later interviews, John Burroughs would say that he heard what he assumed was "a woman screaming," unaware that it was most-likely a Muntjac deer making the noise, which has often been described as such.

Astrophysicist Andrew Pike writes extensively about the scream that Burroughs thought was a

woman screaming in his 2017 book, *The Rendlesham File: Britain's Roswell?* Pike writes that the scream reported in Burroughs' account strengthened his view that the Rendlesham incident was either due to meteorological effects or advanced electrogravitics used on a flying craft, adding that the scream could also be due to the sound of discharge as the craft moved off. Pike later adds that it is also possible to get a screaming woman sound when metal very suddenly cools suggesting possible superconductors.

[xciv] This brief event while on approach was recalled through the hypnotic regression Jim underwent on September 10, 1994:

> Jim Penniston:
> *"The birds . . . an owl. Couple of deer. They, they ran out of the woods. They scared the hell out of me."*
> *Hypnotherapist:*
> "WERE THEY RUNNING AWAY FROM THEM, THE LIGHTS? OR TO THE LIGHTS?"
> *"Oh, they were running towards me; that makes no sense. Deer don't, shouldn't run towards me. They were making all kinds of noise." (Shakes head). "I'm confused."*
> "SO, THE ANIMALS WERE STARTLED . . ."
> *"Yeah. then it stopped."*

[xcv] Note by Jim Penniston:
At this point, and because this was an unsettling situation, I was thinking I really needed someone with me who was more mature, responsible, calm and self-composed; someone who did his job professionally and wasn't putting my own nerves on edge.

[xcvi] This detail, like other small details given in Jim Penniston's account, was recalled through the hypnotic regression Jim underwent on September 10, 1994, and it is one of several references and pieces of evidence that shows that Jim had indeed posted Airman Cabansag back at the Jeep to act as a radio relay:

> "I'm still outside the woods. I'm worried about the radio. I tell Cabansag that I'm gonna, they're gonna lose contact with me. So, have him move up a couple hundred feet. That way they'll stay in contact. He was still in contact with Steffens at the back gate. He didn't have, he didn't . . . have no way of contacting CSC."

[xcvii] Quoting Burroughs: "Air Force officially listed me as seventy-nine inches, which is six foot six."

> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

[xcviii] Again, this detail like other small details given in Jim Penniston's account, was recalled through the hypnotic regression Jim underwent on September 10, 1994:

> Hypnotherapist:
> "SO, WHAT DO YOU DO NEXT?"

Jim Penniston:
"Stayed in the ditch. I was hesitant to go. I had to pull John down. Lay down. He wants to stand up. I'm worried, uh might, something might explode. I tell John to stay there." (Laughs). *"I tell John to stay there. Grab his face."* (Smiling) *"John stay here, I need, I need the link. I got up and ran. And crouched, ran and crouched. Then got up behind some shrubs, the tree line. About thirty feet away. Too much color in the woods."*

[xcix] Jim Penniston's overall description of the source of the colored lights as being a "dirty, greyish-white, bubble of light" *was how the craft appeared some distance away – obscured as it was by its own light emissions.* However, in various publications made before Jim Penniston retired from the USAF in 1993 and decided to come forward and present the facts of what he witnessed and experienced, Jim – who was interviewed *briefly* under the pseudonym of "James Archer" in October 1983 – had been misquoted out of context and his description above has been misinterpreted as being the color of the craft itself.

Of course, the skeptics have made much currency out of this, saying that Jim Penniston has contradicted himself – changing his first description of the craft, as published in various books and articles, as being "white" or rather a "dirty off-white," to then saying the craft was black. However, what has exasperated Jim Penniston recently, is the fact that based on these earlier sources, even Burroughs had begun questioning Jim's description of the craft – especially after he and Jim had gone their separate ways in 2014.

Below is a quote from Burroughs concerning this issue:

"In later years, Penniston has described the craft as being a black triangle, with lights under the surface. Early version the color was an off-white and it looked dirty."

From a message posted by John Burroughs on the
Rendlesham "Lone Rangers" UFO Sightings
(Facebook Group Page), 2016.

Note by Jim Penniston:
"It would appear that Burroughs is again trying to sway public opinion on my honesty and integrity by deliberately misrepresenting what I said. I have never deviated from what I said I saw. What Burroughs is referring to *are my descriptions of the color of the diffused light that was emanating off the craft and was being cast out into the forest* – NOT the skin of the craft itself. I may have said that *the light emanating from the craft was an "off-white", or even "dirty white,"* and really because it was diffused, and because at the center of it all there was a black triangular craft, which I later examined up close. Also, it is a fact that TWICE, the black surface of the craft had also lit up to a very intense bright WHITE light. In any case, Burroughs knows all this, and I will be shocked if Burroughs can produce exactly what he is saying I said – i.e., *that I am referring to the skin of the craft* – and if he can, then I would say it's more likely that an interviewer or researcher had

misinterpreted what I said, or has twisted it."

Jim's last words about an interviewer having misinterpreted what he said is evident when we look at what was presented in the 1984 book *Sky Crash*, based on a brief interview he did with two of the authors, Brenda Butler and Dot Street in September 1983:

> "At closest approach they got within a few feet of it. They had a very good view. It was like nothing man-made. The colour was an off-white and looked dirty. There was a blue light on top, with red lights and a white light in the middle and a brighter white light coming out of the bottom."
>
> *Sky Crash* by Brenda Butler, Dot Street, and Jenny Randles, (Neville Spearman Publishers, 1984).

And here, from the book, *From Out of the Blue:*

> "The color was a strange sort of offish white. It actually looked dirty. There were lights of different colors – but it had red in the middle."
>
> *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles (Global Communications Inc, 1991).

Again, these books were published before Jim Penniston came forward with his account after his retirement from the USAF on October 30, 1993, with the intention of finally putting the record straight.

> Jim Penniston:
> "If the authors are saying that I said I was describing the skin of the craft, then they have this wrong, as this was the impression I had of the craft some distance away, and I was describing the light around it which obscured it. It was apparent that what I saw was an "off-white" – kind of grey or "dirty"-looking "bubble" of light around it – obviously generated by the craft itself. Again, what I described was not the color of the skin of the craft itself. It appeared "dirty" because as I later discovered and when I got up close, the white light, being generated by whatever was at the center of it, *was obscuring a BLACK triangular craft."*

The books quoted above – *From Out of the Blue* by Randles and *Sky Crash* by Butler, Street, and Randles– also contain many 'out of context' quotes, as it is clearly evident that the authors have mixed up what little was given by "James Archer" (Jim Penniston) regarding the first night (December 25 to 26, 1980), with what "John Cadbury" (the pseudonym given to Burroughs) is reported to have said happened, or what was said by others had happened on the third night, December 27/28, 1980. (See Note 623).

Furthermore, during the second of two hypnosis sessions (Saturday, September 10, 1994), Jim Penniston recalled the following during the same point in the investigation. Quote:

> *"The lights have shape. There's something dark in the*

> *middle, something black. I've never seen that. It all looked white before,"* [meaning that the craft was obscured by the white or off-whitish light that enveloped it, and the fact that the craft would suddenly light up to a bright white light].

[c] Burroughs had also hit the ground at this point. The words, *"All three of us hit the ground"* is in the witness statement that Burroughs had handwritten and signed in Lt. Col. Halt's office on December 29, 1980. (See subchapter, *Five Witness Statements* in Chapter 15: *The 'Hold Forth' Years.*) Burroughs has also stated this in numerous interviews over the years.

> "Well, we, we, we, got to an area, it was like, like berms, or kind of hilly and it was like . . . is you kind of went up the hill. It was the . . . the light was in front and as we came up to the top of the berm where, whatever it was . . . was. And we went down the berm and it was right in front of us. Um, it was like everything got really bright. We all hit the ground . . ."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

However, Burroughs has always maintained that Airman Edward Cabansag was with him and SSgt. Jim Penniston when the intense flash of light had emitted from the source of the lights in the woods and made them dive to the ground, taking a defensive position.

Burroughs reasons that because he remembers Cabansag being with him and Penniston at this point, and that if what Jim Penniston says is true, then it must have been after this event that SSgt. Penniston then ordered Cabansag back to the vehicle at the end of the 'logging road' to act as a communications relay, as the radios were still playing up. (In fact, the radios had remained dead and silent since getting just within 160 feet [50 meters] of the object, according to Jim Penniston and other accounts, and when he realized that it was a mechanical craft of some kind emitting a dome of white/yellowish light around it. He was able to transmit that information, but then the radios went dead.) Burroughs also says that Cabansag was with him and Penniston when the two of them went chasing after the craft after it had taken off and led them a further "two miles" eastward and towards the coast where the lights/object disappeared.

However, Jim Penniston remembers distinctly that a good while before the flash of light occurred. which made he and Burroughs dive to the ground, he had already ordered Cabansag to remain back at the Jeep to act as communications relay after problems with their radios began, and no doubt as a result of the electrostatic effects they were experiencing as they advanced towards the source of the lights. Jim Penniston's memory of this is supported by what we find in his notebook, in that this directive, and other details associated with it, while out in the open field and just before they entered the tree line of the forest, had been entered in Jim's notebook, along with the time of 12:51 (a.m.)

Also, Jim Penniston's claim that A1C Cabansag was left some distance behind, on his orders is confirmed by Security Guard A1C Richard Bertolino of 'C Flight,' who witnessed what was going on from up on Bunker Hill:

> "We relayed some of the transmissions from Bunker Hill. So, he [Penniston] left Cabansag behind to do that, because we had a great triangulation being on the hill, to them in the woods, to

the object, to Security Control."

Richard Bertolino describes Penniston writing in his notebook after the incident.
Posted May 29, 2013, *YouTube* [Video file].

Moreover, during the second of two hypnosis sessions which took place in 1994, Jim Penniston recalls details that imply that he did indeed order Cabansag back to the Jeep to act as radio relay before he and Burroughs ventured into the woods towards the source of the lights. Here's a few examples taken from this hypnosis session, recorded on Saturday, September 10, 1994:

Jim Penniston:
"Cabansag, barely picking me up. I tell them there's no fire. I gotta repeat that; I gotta repeat it because he couldn't understand me."

Jim Penniston:
"I'm still outside the woods. I'm worried about the radio. I tell Cabansag that I'm gonna, they're gonna lose contact with me. So, have him move up a couple hundred feet. That way they'll stay in contact. He was still in contact with Steffens at the back gate. He didn't have, he didn't . . . have no way of contacting CSC."

Jim Penniston:
"I'm out there. I'm making the call. I'm going in to investigate. That's the last transmission with Cabansag."

[ci] In his interviews, Burroughs says he only recalls diving to the ground ONCE because of the sudden brightness of the "lights" and says that all he remembers then was seeing "it" going up (ascending) and departing.

Burroughs, 2014:
"All I remember was getting close to it . . . um, when the lights got bright, hitting the ground then it went up and departed."

John Burroughs Rendlesham UFO Witness,
interviewed by Alejandro Rojas on *Open Minds Radio*,
October 27, 2014.

Note by Jim Penniston:
I am now of the opinion that Burroughs only remembers us diving to the ground once, and that everything between the first time we dived to the ground, and in my experience the second time we dived to the ground and just before the craft took off, is absent from his mind, as if that time period – which I later learned was the 45 minutes that was missing from my digital wrist watch (see Chapter 4: *Evidence*) – didn't appear to have existed

for Burroughs, but existed for me.

[cii] In the 1991 US TV documentary *Unsolved Mysteries*, A1C Ed Cabansag is portrayed as being present during this significant part of the incident, as three actors are shown laying on the ground looking up at the craft. This portrayal was obviously based on what Burroughs says he remembered, as only Burroughs and Col. Halt were interviewed on the show. Jim Penniston had not come forward at this time, and so the film production team only had Burroughs' account to rely on for the first night's events . . . *which would also explain why Burroughs is portrayed as being in charge and leading the investigation in the woods while talking to CSC on the radio – all of which is totally untrue.*

(Jim had not come forward in public with his own account as yet, and so it can be reasoned that Burroughs had taken a gamble in requesting that he be portrayed as the man in charge in this documentary, as he thought that Jim Penniston had decided to keep quiet and, therefore, would not come forward to challenge it.)

But, as if to add to the confusion, all three men are shown looking up at a stereotypical 'saucer-shaped' UFO, arrayed with banks of different colored pulsating lights, flying away from them and above the trees. This portrayal is also totally wrong, as the unidentified 'object' or 'craft' as described later by Jim Penniston and which was the source of the lights he and the other patrolmen had been observing all the time, was *triangular* and not 'saucer shaped.' Also, after Burroughs says that they had hit the ground, we are then treated to a voice-over by host Robert Stack: *"For more than two hours the three men played an eerie game of "cat and mouse" with the mysterious craft. It appeared almost to toy with them."* See *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO"*, September 18, 1991.

In the 1994 UK TV documentary, *Strange But True?* and, once more, based on what Burroughs had always said had happened, all three men are portrayed by actors and are once again shown diving to the ground, having just been surprised at seeing the craft suddenly rise up in the air. However, this time, the craft is depicted as triangular, which is consistent with Jim Penniston's account.

[ciii] In relatively recent interviews, Burroughs has added a dramatic detail to this part in his account. He now states that when SSgt. Jim Penniston had yelled at him and just after the intense flash of light that made them dive to the ground, Penniston had ordered him to fire at whatever it was had just lit up bright in front of them.

> Burroughs, 2016:
> "Well, it's strange, OK? [Laughing as he speaks] This is, this is where this story gets the twists and turns. Now, I don't . . . I remember turning the weapon in. Penniston claimed later on, and when we got close to whatever it is, at one point he screamed at me to, uh open fire, uh, to draw down, open on it, uh, I didn't have uh, that weapon with him." [unintelligible. Perhaps Burroughs was trying to say, "I don't have that weapon with me."] "But Ed Cabansag did talk for a short period of time. He did an interview, um, with uh, James Fox for a documentary he did called I Know What I Saw, or Out of the Blue, and it changed to I Know What I Saw. And in that he claims that the three of us when we got close to it, I actually had my .38 with me. I drew it, and then we all passed out."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), December 20, 2016.

There is a problem here because Jim Penniston denies ever having yelled at Burroughs to open fire, as he knows Burroughs did not have his sidearm with him. Before leaving the East Gate for the forest, on Lt. Buran's orders, Jim had made sure the men had handed in their weapons. He is therefore at a loss to explain why Burroughs has stated this, as it simply did not happen as he remembers it. Furthermore, there is nothing about Jim Penniston having ordered Burroughs to shoot at whatever was in front of them in Burroughs' earlier interviews and accounts, and it does not appear in the books by Georgina Bruni . . . and more importantly, it does not appear in the book Burroughs had co-authored with Jim Penniston and Nick Pope.

Moreover, there is no segment in either of the DVD documentaries *Out of the Blue* and *I Know What I Saw*, of Ed Cabansag ever saying what Burroughs claims Cabansag had said in those documentaries – i.e., *that Burroughs had his .38 with him, and that he drew it, and then they all passed out.* Jim is certain he did not pass out at any time during the incident, and if Cabansag remembers passing out, then how would he have known that Penniston and Burroughs did also?

In the *Ancient Aliens* TV documentary (Episode 15 of Season 2: *Alien Contacts,* first aired on the December 30, 2010), Jim Penniston and John Burroughs are filmed sitting on a couch discussing the incident:

> Penniston:
> "There's certain instances going out there where I know you don't remember, I don't remember, but there's certain things together we don't remember."
>
> Burroughs:
> "Right, well, even Ed [Cabansag] said that he remembers me pulling my weapon and we all blacked out, and I don't remember that."
>
> *Ancient Aliens binary code exploration of humanity*, *YouTube* [Video file]. (Watch from the 6:40 minute mark.)

Indeed, what Burroughs said on the TV documentary *Strange But True?* and after describing the electrostatic effects on their bodies, implies that he didn't have his weapon with him:

> "You felt like you had very little control over your body . . . I wish I had my weapon because I felt totally defenseless."
>
> Documentary Transcript of *Strange But True?* London Weekend Television, December 9, 1994.

However, when Georgina Bruni interviewed Ed Cabansag in 1999 and asked him whether he, Penniston, and Burroughs were carrying weapons into the forest or not, Cabansag did say that they (he and Penniston) had handed in their M16s, but that Burroughs was still carrying a sidearm.

> 'When I asked him [Cabansag] if he was absolutely certain they were not carrying weapons in the forest, he confirmed they had handed over their M-16 rifles, but that John Burroughs was still carrying a sidearm.'
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of*

the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery
by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

Again, Jim Penniston says he checked if the men had any weapons on them before they deployed off-base to the forest, and he is adamant they had all left their weapons behind. From what Burroughs has said in his interviews, it is clear he is saying he didn't have a weapon with him and doesn't remember pulling it out. In fact, during an interview with Jimmy Church on January 23, 2019, Burroughs said,

> "I remember handing our weapons over to Steffens."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

One must take note that much of what Ed Cabansag remembers is sketchy and confusing, in that much of what he says doesn't match the accounts of SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs. He had even admitted to Georgina Bruni in 1999 that much of it is now a blank to him, as if his memory had been blocked. So, despite what Cabansag may or may not have said, and whether Burroughs had his sidearm on him or not, this added detail of Jim Penniston ordering Burroughs to shoot at the intensely-lighted "object" appears to be based on what Burroughs had said during his first hypnosis session on November 11, 1988. Therefore, his memory of Cabansag being there with him and Jim, and what Cabansag said – as recalled under hypnosis – could all be part of an implanted falsified memory. And in any case, Cabansag stated that he remembers handing over the weapons to MSgt. J. D. Chandler, NOT SSgt. Steffens, as Burroughs remembers it.

According to investigative reporter Linda Moulton Howe, Burroughs' hypnosis session was arranged and organized by the Curt Brubaker Group, the same production group that produced the October 14, 1988 *UFO Cover-Up: Live!* two-hour prime time syndicated TV special in the US. Howe tells us that some weeks after the TV show, Curt Brubaker approached John Burroughs to learn the truth of what he had witnessed and experienced in Rendlesham Forest, some eight years earlier in December 1980. Brubaker then organized the private hypnosis session with Burroughs, which he assured him would not be broadcast in public or used for any TV production.

See *Update to Bentwaters Sighting*, lecture by Linda Moulton Howe, posted on *YouTube*, December 30, 2012.

> Burroughs:
> *"Look, look, look at that, there it is. Hit the ground, hit the ground. We, we, I run, I run, we dive, I dive. Shoot John, shoot, shoot. I can't, I can't; I don't have my gun."*
> Hypnotist:
> "WHO'S TELLING YOU TO SHOOT?"
> Burroughs:
> *"Sergeant Penniston. I don't have my gun; I don't have my gun; they told me not to bring it. Yes, they did they told you at the last minute to bring it."*
>
> *Update to Bentwaters Sighting*, lecture by Linda Moulton Howe, Posted December 30, 2012, *YouTube* [Video file].
>
> Note by Jim Penniston:

> I do not remember ever ordering Burroughs to shoot at what we encountered at this point, and I remain incredulous to what Burroughs has said and claimed regarding this detail, which was later added to his account. His mention of it is most-likely the result of what he said during this first hypnosis session in 1988. I was actually surprised by what Burroughs said during our filmed discussion in Phoenix, Arizona in October 2010, and which was included in the episode of *Ancient Aliens* by Prometheus Entertainment. The stunned expression on my face shows this clearly, as I don't remember Burroughs having ever pulled a sidearm. It doesn't even feature in what I recalled during my own hypnosis sessions. As I said, I am certain we had left all our weapons back at the East Gate, as I had made sure that we did, *so why would I order Burroughs to shoot at this object?* And in any case, my ordering Burroughs to shoot at this object, especially off-base, outside our jurisdiction and without prior knowledge of what we were dealing with, would not only have been a violation of the protocol agreement we had with the UK – hence the reason why we left our weapons behind – but also a violation of the protocols we were ordered to follow and to which I was always conscientious and mindful of and followed to the letter. I would say, that this is another example of how Burroughs – and possibly for his own self-amusement or self-image – seems to take whatever he is told and will later use it to dramatize things further to the detriment of distorting the truth of what really happened.

John Burroughs still believes to this day that Jim Penniston believed that he had his sidearm on him that morning out in the forest, as is evident in this interview with Jimmy Church in 2019, but we know this is not true:

> "I thought I'd turn my .38 over to Steffens, but Cabansag and Penniston both believed I was armed so there's a discrepancy right there from the beginning."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

It shows that many of the discrepancies and inconsistencies in this case are due to what people will often just assume – even the witnesses – without proper enquiry and knowing all the facts, and people, especially skeptics, will take what is said and repeat it, even though it is not true and will work against establishing the truth.

Jim Penniston's denial of having ordered Burroughs to shoot at the object/craft is backed up by Richard Bertolino. Again, in September 2009, Bertolino, who was a 'C Flight' A1C security guard at Bentwaters, told investigative researcher Linda Moulton Howe for her *Earthfiles* podcast that he recalls sitting next to Jim Penniston on the pick-up bus after they both came off duty the morning of the incident – December 26, 1980.

Richard Bertolino:

> "And Jim says to me, it's a good thing that they couldn't take their weapons out there, because he was afraid that him or someone else might have shot at this thing when they first approached it because it was so different that they didn't know how to react to it."

Richard Bertolino describes Penniston writing in his notebook after the incident.
Posted May 29, 2013, *YouTube* [Video file].

Jim Penniston says that although they were petrified at what they were experiencing, he would have resisted any compulsive action to fire on it himself, and/or to make any directive order to shoot at it. This reaction would have been illogical, considering they had no idea what they were dealing with, possibly even a craft with nuclear capabilities, and more importantly it would have been a breach of protocol. Military training is ingrained through repetition and preparatory exercises for just that purpose — to be able to respond to highly stressful, life-threatening situations while following appropriate procedures and protocol. At a young age, Jim Penniston had been made a Staff Sergeant with Top Secret clearance and high-level security responsibilities for a purpose — because he could respond and lead effectively under highly stressful conditions, as his highly laudatory military records clearly demonstrate. In addition, as we will see in subsequent examination of Burroughs' hypnosis session, it is apparent Burroughs has had some sort of block put into his mind in regard to the incident. The discrepancies about whether he had his gun or not are evident through the hypnosis, stating he didn't have his gun, that he had been required to turn in his weapons, and yet, later believing that he had his gun. The inconsistencies are also glaringly apparent in his belief that Jim Penniston had told him to shoot, an impossibility if they had turned in their firearms. During his hypnosis, the block in Burroughs' mind is revealed by his response to the hypnotist's attempts to take Burroughs through the events at the beginning of the investigation, and when he is seeing the lights in the forest from a distance, Burroughs replies, *"Every time you want me to go there, that light says, 'No!'"* His inconsistent beliefs and hypnosis provide an evidentiary basis to believe that Burroughs' mind was not only blocked but also had false memories inserted to create confusion in regard to the accounting and possibly even to discredit the leadership abilities of Jim Penniston during the incident.

[civ] Today, Burroughs is saying that all he ever saw was lights and doesn't remember anything else. However, in one of the first interviews Burroughs did, which was in 1990 for *FATE Magazine*, Burroughs says he saw an *"object,"* which had *"feet on the ground"* – and again, he maintains that he, Jim Penniston, and Ed Cabansag were all present.

> Burroughs, 1990:
> ". . . we walked for quite a distance, came into a clearing area and that's when we came upon the object that we saw, the object that all three of us saw, all three of us looked at it a little bit differently. We got pretty close to the object, we knew it had the feet on the ground, from there . . ."

"Bentwaters Part III: The Testimony of John Burroughs" J. Antonio Huneeus, *FATE Magazine*, 1990.

When interviewed on the *Unsolved Mysteries* documentary 1991, Burroughs again said that what he saw was an "object."

Burroughs, 1991:
"And all of a sudden there in the clearing was an object. It had a bank of blue lights on it, and it was sitting like it was strobing."

Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO" Lifetime Television. September 18, 1991.

Included in an article by Jenny Randles in 2001, is the following statement: "*Burroughs says that no structured craft ever emerged."* See *Rendlesham Forest Incident* by Jenny Randles (2001).

Burroughs, 2011:
"It was this bright light, and you know, the only way you can describe it, I guess you could call it an object."

John Burroughs interviewed on the DVD documentary, *Out of the Blue* by James Fox, September 9, 2011.

Today, Burroughs is now saying that although an 'object' is implied in what he has tried to describe, he doesn't recall what he saw as being an "object" as such, and again will maintain that all he ever saw was lights. Although this is supported by what Burroughs is reported to have said back in 1990, as published in an article by Antonio Huneeus for FATE Magazine in 1993 . . .

"We asked Burroughs to describe the UFO with more detail and he responded that it looked like "a bank of light, differently colored lights that threw off an image of like a craft. I never saw anything metallic or anything hard"."

"Bentwaters Part III: The Testimony of John Burroughs" J. Antonio Huneeus, *FATE Magazine*, 1993.

We know that in 1990, Burroughs had originally described it as an "object," which also had "feet on the ground." Light having feet on the ground is impossible and can only mean that what Burroughs was describing was an object/craft.

And then in 2005, while being interviewed for another TV documentary, Burroughs again says "object."

"Then the object, whatever it was, lifted up, went up and moved back away, over the trees."

John Burroughs interviewed on History Channel's *UFO Files: "Britain's Roswell,"* Aired December 17, 2005 (US), January 22, 2006 (UK).

Then on December 20, 2016, Burroughs had this to say during a radio interview with Jimmy Church:

"It seemed like everything was happening in slow motion or whatever, so, to be honest with you I could see there was something there, but I didn't know what it was . . . but, I also wanted to know what it was, which, I . . . but I didn't really

define it. I really didn't think UFO."

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), December 20, 2016.

Burroughs' statement that he *"really didn't think UFO"* is an interesting one, in light of what Jim Penniston remembers. Jim had heard Burroughs tell him at the East Gate that he thought what had landed in the forest was a UFO, and while they approached the lights in the woods, Burroughs kept trying to get Jim to acknowledge that the lights he first reported seeing in the trees had hovered and landed (according to SSgt. Steffens), and that this was no crashed aircraft, helicopter – implying it must be a UFO. Also, and as we will see in the following chapter, when Jim Penniston recalls he and Burroughs had entered Jim's home, and then Jim's wife and their lodger/friend had asked the two what had happened because of their appearance, Burroughs immediately announced that they had witnessed a UFO, which incited laughter and caused embarrassment to Jim.

But to conclude here, today Burroughs is adamant that all he saw was lights and doesn't remember anything of what Jim Penniston claims he had experienced. Burroughs only remembers the lights moving back and taking off, and that it was from this point that he and Jim Penniston then chased the source of the lights eastward towards the coast.

Today Burroughs is now using what he has read in the *Condign Report*, a 463-page document released under the Freedom of Information Act, titled *Unidentified Aerial Phenomena in the UK Air Defence Region.* The report, which was written by someone with a background in scientific and technical intelligence for a government/military audience, claims that approximately 10,000 sightings and reports that had been gathered by the DI55 – a section of the Directorate of Scientific and Technical Intelligence (DSTI) within the Defence Intelligence Staff (DIS) – had been researched and analyzed. Burroughs first became aware of the report in October 2011, when he says he came across an article written by Nick Pope. He then emailed Pope about the report and received from Pope a large PDF file that contained all the documents associated with the report. Burroughs says that he was "blown away" with what he read, and largely because the study specifically focused on the Rendlesham Forest incident.

Burroughs has since used the Condign Report to back, amongst other things, his claim of only seeing lights, that the phenomenon he and Jim witnessed was merely what is described in the report as "Buoyant Plasma Formation," akin to Ball Lightning. This phenomenon is hypothesized by the author(s) of the report to also take the appearance of a black triangle by refracting light – a detail which Burroughs has seized onto and highlighted to explain the black triangular craft that Jim Penniston has always claimed he witnessed – and the author(s) further hypothesize that the phenomenon can induce hallucinations in those in close proximity, which explains reports of close encounters in those affected.

It is worth quoting what Darren DeBoy had to say about this. Darren had known Burroughs while working as the Official Rendlesham Website administrator and assistant to Jim Penniston since 2010.

> "If one sees just lights, they would say, "I saw lights!" If one sees a physical object, they say, "I saw an object"! Burroughs has tried to get out of this one by saying, "Object, it could have been lights!" Well, this is a clear demonstration of his attempt to conflate the two, which are clearly different, clearly by definition.
>
> Ob·ject
> Noun
> /ˈäbjekt/Submit

> 1. a material thing that can be seen and touched. “He was dragging a large object.”
> Synonyms: thing, article, item, piece, device, gadget, entity, body;
>
> So, if he attempts to conflate the two, one could say he is confused as to what he witnessed, if anything. This being the case, his “State of Confusion,” his testimony is not trustworthy.”

[cv] On October 4, 2008, John Burroughs underwent hypnosis with hypnotherapist Melinda Vail, with the videotaping of the session arranged by paranormal investigative journalist Linda Moulton Howe. While hypnotized, Burroughs mentions diving to the ground after seeing the bright flash of light from the object. The hypnotist’s comments are in capitals.

> John Burroughs:
> *“We just dive and hit the ground.”*
> Hypnotist:
> “YOU HIT THE GROUND?”
> *“Yeah, all three of us.”*
> “WHEN YOU HIT THE GROUND, YOU ARE ON YOUR BELLY AND YOU LOOKED UP AND STILL SAW THE LIGHT?”
> *“It was so bright.”*
> “DID YOU COVER YOUR FACE OR DID YOU LOOK UP?”
> *“I think I looked up* (body jerks) *Oooooh!”*
> “WHAT IS IT?”
> *“I’m in something.”*
> “WHAT ARE YOU IN?”
> *“I don’t know. My mind is in something.”*
> “TELL ME WHAT IT IS.”
> *“I don’t know. It fooled my mind into . . .”*
> “ARE YOU INSIDE THE LIGHT?”
> *“It’s all around me now.”*
> “DO YOU KNOW WHAT HAPPENS WHEN YOU ARE INSIDE THE LIGHT?”
> *“No, nothing. Nothing right now. It’s just around me now.”*
>
> Transcript of John Burroughs’ Hypnosis. Session #2.
> Hypnotherapist: Melinda Vail. Location: Tempe, Arizona.
> October 4, 2008.

It is important to note that Burroughs had no conscious memory of what he describes here. All he remembers is diving to the ground and looking up to then see the lights move back and ascend to a point above the trees before taking off. But, as we can see, at this point in the investigation and just after he dived to the ground, one could say that Burroughs was “caught” in something, as evidenced by the light that beamed down and surrounded him. Or, that his mind was somehow “trapped,” as it is a fact that he says that whatever it was had *“fooled” his “mind into . . .”* this state, as if he had been deliberately hypnotized or placed in a state of trance during the 45 minutes or so when SSgt. Jim

Penniston examined the craft.

This detail was brought up in a conversation Burroughs had with Linda Moulton Howe and guest Melinda Vail, who had conducted the hypnosis session with Burroughs, on a Phenomenon KGRA Radio show on April 14, 2017. Burroughs says: "I don't even really know why I said that? The only possibility I believe is, is that they were able to take over my mind. They fooled me to allow them to take over my mind is the one thing that would come to me." [. . .] ". . . it was like they tricked me . . . they fooled me to allow them to get into my mind, because I'm a hard person I think to be able to have something like that happen." (*Al Ward and Melinda Vail*, Phenomenon KGRA Radio, May 25, 2017.)

Throughout the remainder of the session, it is evident that Burroughs, or his mind, is still inside the light and all he perceives are blue lights behind what he describes as "a milky surface." These blue lights change shape, move about and divide into a small number of blue lights, which had later been discussed and interpreted as "beings of light," or "entities." Burroughs seems to have accepted this and later told people that the small blue lights were entities – implying 'alien beings' of some kind. Here's an account sent to us by Robin Lebair Burneka, who remembers a certain incident with John Burroughs:

> "I caught him [Burroughs] in a story in Phoenix (Fountain Hills conference). He was selling t-shirts with his pic of the craft and telling people the blue lights were entities on the craft. I said, "Please clarify for me. I'm confused. I heard you say you saw a craft. You saw lights. You don't remember anything. And now you're saying the blue lights were entities, and you have a drawing of the craft. Please explain." He [Burroughs] stammered. Couldn't answer. Left his table […] and later came back and ignored me. Later he messaged [a friend] and told her how awful I was. He couldn't even confront me on his own."

Burroughs also mentions seeing "an eye" and also "a hole" (like a spiraling blackhole) opening up behind the blue light or lights, as if pulling him in. Later, he says he even saw a menacing face. However, aside from these subjective, mental impressions, nothing else ever happens, and all the while it is apparent that Burroughs remains inside the light, and again, for the full duration of time when Jim Penniston was examining the craft by all accounts.

Also, it should be noted that in response to the hypnotist's attempts to take Burroughs through the events at the beginning of the investigation and when he is seeing the lights in the forest from a distance, Burroughs replies, *"Every time you want me to go there, that light says, 'No!'"* This implies that a block has been placed on his memory, either by the source of the phenomenon itself, or by agents on the base who may have messed with his mind, by placing a post-hypnotic block while Burroughs was hypnotized and under interrogation. Burroughs has long denied that he was ever interrogated and messed with, but in recent years has said it is a possibility. (See Note 431.)

> Note by Jim Penniston:
> If we take what Burroughs says as factual – i.e., what he really experienced at that crucial point in the investigation – then perhaps this is a diabolical maneuver by the craft's 'cloaking' technology. Safety is all about one's proximity to the craft, and also requires the approval by the intelligence for the experiencer to either see it as it really is, or see it in terms of something they

think they are seeing and other than what it really is. In light of this, I find it interesting that this technology developed by the intelligence behind these kinds of phenomena and how it works on the mind of an experiencer to cloak itself and conceal what it actually is was brought up by Dr. Christopher "Kit" Green during our meeting in 2010. (See Chapter 18: *The Rockford Colloquium and The Road Not Taken.*)

[cvi]Burroughs has since turned this around, as if deliberately turning the tables on Jim Penniston and trying to upstage him, by stating that *he saw the phenomenon for what it really was*, and that Jim Penniston was merely hallucinating. In other words, Jim Penniston's claims of seeing a real, solid craft, which he had touched, could smell the hot metal, had examined for 45 minutes – having taken photos of it, having noted down things in his notebook as he was examining it, and then having a binary code download – *was all hallucination.* However, it is apparent from his own hypnosis session in 2008, that the intelligence associated with the craft had held Burroughs in a suspended trance-like state, while SSgt. Jim Penniston was able to do what he was allowed to do up-close, and more importantly, receive the binary code message transmission, as claimed and given in his account.

It has been theorized that the intelligence(s) behind the so-called UFO or UAP (Unidentified Aerial Object) phenomenon utilize the *terahertz* range of frequencies – and perhaps more specifically, 1.1 THz a second and its harmonics to travel through space and time. In view of this, it is an interesting fact that only recently has it been discovered that a person's brain can be shut down, or its conscious activity temporarily 'jammed' as it were, by certain terahertz frequencies, which act like a general anesthetic on the brain and possibly while the mind is elsewhere. Any memories relating to what the mind is doing, sensing, and experiencing while the conscious activity of the brain has been virtually switched off may still exist somewhere in the consciousness of the individual, and possibly retrieved and recalled through hypnosis – hence Burroughs' descriptions of small "blue lights" and other ephemeral-like visions, as if his mind has been partitioned off from the physical brain and is free-floating as it were in its own internal domain without any sensation of a material body or any familiar physical reference. This also explains the phenomenon of 'missing time' for those in these UFO or UAP-related situations, in that the brain doesn't register the gap of missing time at all, and so all these people remember is that the events they have experienced has flowed continuously for them with no break in their timeline. In Burroughs' conscious experience and memory, he doesn't remember the approximated 45 minutes of events in-between diving to the ground and then getting up again.

During September 2018, John Burroughs was co-host with Linda Moulton Howe on the *Phenomenon* Radio show (KGRA).

Their guest was American author on occult history, Peter Levenda. The show ran to 1:50 minutes, and the first 1:15 minutes of the interview was conducted by Linda Moulton Howe, and it is assumed that during this time Burroughs just sat in and listened. At one point, Levenda was discussing the effects of terahertz frequencies with Howe, and touched on something that actually explained why Burroughs was made immobile when he and Jim Penniston encountered the craft in the clearing during the most significant and climactic part of the incident. Again, according to what Jim Penniston witnessed, Burroughs was made 'unconscious' – paralyzed and frozen in time, as it were – and in effect Burroughs experienced *missing time,* in that Burroughs could not, and still cannot remember SSgt. Jim Penniston's 45-minute examination of the craft.

Firstly, Stuart Hameroff (July 16, 1947) is an anesthesiologist and professor at the University of Arizona. He is known for his studies of consciousness and his controversial theory that quantum states in the neural lattice structure of tiny *microtubules* in the brain at the 'Planck scale,' measured in angstrom units are responsible for creating consciousness. In simple terms, based on the theory Hameroff and also Roger Penrose are proposing, it could be said that an individual's consciousness is

arising from the quantum level in the physical brain and through the microtubules, or by some function of the microtubules in the brain. Peter Levenda is correct to say that it is the vibratory action of these microtubules in the brain that causes consciousness to *"arise as kind of an emergent property."* However, it is possible that the frequency vibrations of the microtubules could also reflect the vibrations of the mind or consciousness of the individual as it penetrates into this reality via the physical brain created for the purpose of interacting in this reality, and that it is the microtubules in the brain that receives these signal vibrations. Peter Levenda also considers this view, and states the possibility that consciousness already exists apart from the brain, and, therefore, *"the microtubules are like radio receivers"* through which the mind or consciousness of the individual is received and then analyzed and translated through the brain. The brain is where a part of the individual's consciousness becomes partitioned, as it were, as an individual mind of responsive/active thought and directed will, interfaced as it is with the station (reality) the individual is seemingly lock-focused and participating in through the physical brain and body.

However, what he says next in terms of recent discoveries is highly interesting….

Quoting Peter Levenda:

> "What Hameroff and his co-authors discovered was that the microtubules can be turned on and off in the brain with the right terahertz frequency, and this is astonishing. He was trying to figure out how anesthesia works. Hameroff is an anesthesiologist. That's his whole life, and that's how he came to the study of consciousness, because he couldn't figure out how an anesthetic works. It didn't make any sense. You give somebody a certain drug. This drug goes to only very specific parts of the brain and kind of shuts them off leaving the rest of the brain functioning. He doesn't understand, and to this day we don't understand how that works. What we do find out, though, is that these anesthesias that are applied to the brain, generate an electrical charge. They generate a frequency and the ones at the terahertz level are the ones that are responsible for shutting the microtubules on and off, or stopping their transmissions, which then gets to the question you opened with [directed to Linda Moulton Howe] and I'm sorry I had to take that long way around, but it's important to know all the moving parts.
>
> If someone could transmit a terahertz frequency at the brain at the right frequency, you would conceivably be able to shut off parts of the brain that are conscious, while leaving the rest of the brain in control of the unconscious functions, like breathing and heart rate, and all the rest of it. It doesn't shut off the whole brain; it just shuts off those parts of the brain that feel pain, or those parts of the brain that are conscious. Sometimes, when you're going into surgery and you get anesthesia, if it's not a local anesthetic, but a general, you're out, so you have in a sense a kind of amnesia. When you come to after the surgery, you don't have any memory of what happened while you were under. That's the whole point

of the anesthesia.

So, *is that the same thing as missing time? Is that the same thing as someone being bombarded with a terahertz frequency from some kind of device to erase their conscious awareness of what's taking place – what's happening to them at that time, and then eventually that frequency is shut off, is reduced, and the person comes to, and they have the phenomenon that we know of as missing time?"* […] "Well, one of the one of the things that seems to be pretty consistent is that people who report missing time are also reporting the existence of machinery in the environment in other words the UFO or the UAP there will be this consciousness awareness of some kind of unidentified flying object a machine, and then there's the period of missing time, and you come to like Benny and Barney Hill . . . they saw machines, and these machines – these Sekret Machines as we call them – *do they emit at that specific frequency deliberately?* I mean if you have missing time and you have a machine, pretty good reason to believe that that machine is causing the missing time . . . *and how would they do that? They could do that by emitting a specific frequency that basically shuts down the conscious part of the brain.* [Our emphases].

Peter Levenda, *Phenomenon Radio* (KGRA) with Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs, September 2018.

Does this explain what happened to Burroughs? The question is, why would the intelligence behind the phenomenon shut down the conscious part of Burroughs' brain before he could enter what Jim Penniston now calls the "sphere of influence" or "frequency field" – i.e., the "bubble of light cast around the craft" – *but allow Jim Penniston inside to examine it?*

In any case, just after Peter Levenda ended his description of this new discovery concerning terahertz frequencies and their effect on the brain as quoted above, as if to change the subject, Burroughs first speaks out by jumping in with his first question to Peter Levenda about something totally different. This is at the 1:14:45 minute mark and up to this point Burroughs hadn't uttered a word. It was as if what Peter Levenda had just described was perhaps too close for comfort? After all, what Levenda described not only explained the possible cause of what happened to Burroughs, but also brings up the question as to why Burroughs was stopped in his tracks and made immobile and unconscious on his approach to enter the "bubble," surrounding the phenomenon, while SSgt. Jim Penniston was allowed inside to examine and touch whatever the phenomenon was. Having been made immobile on the periphery of this "bubble," it was as if Burroughs had been deliberately kept "out of the loop" for some reason, as if the intelligence behind the phenomenon had selected Jim Penniston over him to enter and access its innermost secret. Also, Levenda mentioned machines in relation to this anesthesia-related experience of missing time, and Burroughs has always said that all he saw was lights and that he believed there was no physical craft or machine. So, when you put these things together, perhaps we can see how Burroughs felt in response to what Peter Levenda had said, and why, despite his efforts to remain lucid and articulate about the things he wanted to say, what Peter Levenda had said

in response to his questions appeared to be above what he understood, and he fell apart on the interview from that point – and this is reflected in the negative comments aimed at Burroughs, which were posted beneath the YouTube video of this radio interview.

As compelling as this theory appears to be in explaining what happened to Burroughs at the crucial point in the investigation/incident, it does not explain how the missing time of 45 minutes showed up on SSgt. Jim Penniston's quartz wrist watch which had a digital display. Burroughs later made the same claim. While being interviewed on the *Jaime Havican Show*, Sunday, June 26, 2016, Burroughs mentioned his watch was a *digital* watch, while saying he had noticed it was 45 minutes slow after returning to the base after the incident.

There is of course another theory:

Jim Penniston and I discussed the 'time distortion' effect in some depth. Our thoughts about Jim having seen Burroughs standing still as if 'frozen stiff' outside of the 'bubble' of light surrounding the craft, and as if he were frozen in time, is that *from Jim's perspective INSIDE the 'bubble,' Time OUTSIDE of the 'bubble' had somehow been frozen still.* This is to say, that Time would have been flowing normally for Burroughs, as it would for anyone and everything outside that dome-like 'bubble' being generated by the craft, and therefore Burroughs would not have consciously noted any break or discontinuity in time between when he dived to the ground the first time and when he found himself on the ground the second time when Jim dived to the ground and got up when the craft started to depart and let go of the hold it had on Burroughs. Therefore, *Burroughs would only remember diving to the ground ONCE.*

Burroughs has always maintained that he never saw Jim Penniston write down anything in a notebook – especially when they came across the craft, as again, Jim simply wouldn't have had time, he says. In recent years, Burroughs has also gone so far as to say that the notebook must be a later addition to the case, even implying that Jim has been deceptive by adding that Jim must have written down the notes sometime after the incident, so as to back up his account of what happened that night.

Again, noting that Burroughs himself had said that his mind was somehow "tricked into" seeing lights while under hypnosis in 2008, and that he was therefore oblivious to what was going on around him during the time when Jim Penniston says that he examined the craft, as well as took photos and wrote down notes, it's not surprising.

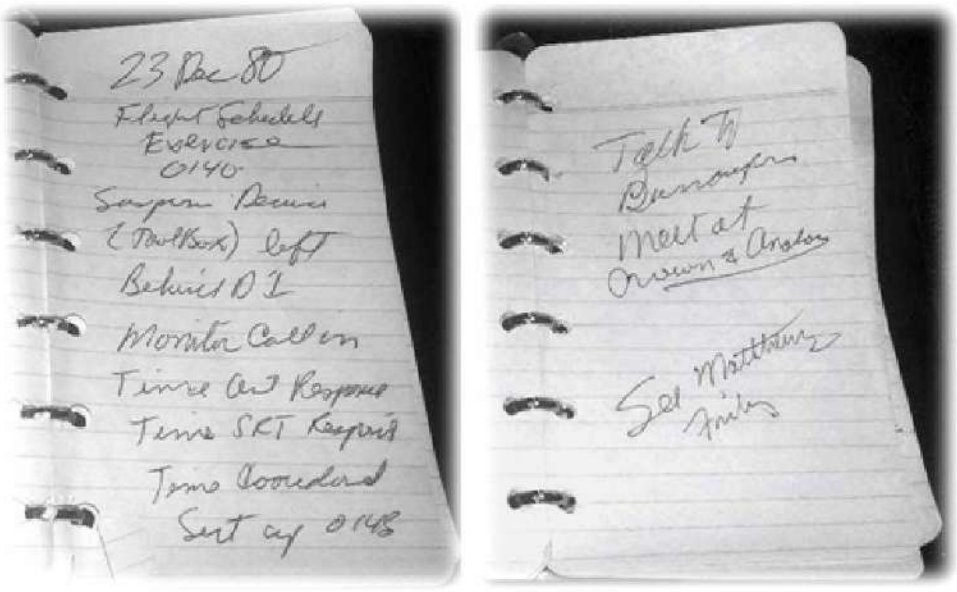
As noted in his account, Jim Penniston states that he was writing down notes before he and Burroughs encountered the craft. However, going by what Jim remembers regarding Burroughs' excitable nature and habit of talking incessantly without listening, it's more likely that Burroughs was not paying attention when Jim was writing down notes in the field after exiting the Jeep at the end of the logging road. Whatever his superior was doing as part of his job wasn't important to Burroughs, as all throughout their approach during the investigation, Burroughs was focusing only on the lights in the woods.

In the 2009 *Earthfiles* podcast interview conducted by investigative researcher Linda Moulton Howe, former Bentwaters 'C Flight' airman, Richard Bertolino mentioned sitting next to SSgt. Jim Penniston on the bus back to CSC after the incident, and added that Jim had opened his notebook and sketched a picture of the craft for him. Both men had been casual friends on the base, and Bertolino says this about Jim and his notebook, quote:

> "And he [Penniston] pulled out this little notebook that he used to write incidents in, like if he was called to an incident. He always kept notes . . ."

Earthfiles Podcast Episode 57:
Another RAF Bentwaters Security Airman Speaks About Dec. 1980 UFO.
Published on December 20, 2015.

It is obvious from what Bertolino says that Jim Penniston did indeed have his notebook with him during the incident. Furthermore, the notebook contains other written notes concerning flight exercises – one dated "23 Dec 80," and also one that even mentions a meeting with Burroughs at the *Crown and Anchor* (hotel/pub) in Ipswich. Obviously, this meeting was after the incident to talk about it, no doubt.



Pages from Jim Penniston's notebook. Left: *"23 Dec 80 Flight Schedule Exercise 0140 . . ."* Right: *"Talk to Burroughs meet at crown and anchor See Matthews Friday"*.

These notebook pages, and others not mentioned or featured here, are important because they show that SSgt. Penniston had always used a notebook for noting all kinds of things. The fact that the notebook also contains notes that had nothing to do with the incident and are things he would have logged into the notebook naturally as part of his job, shows that this notebook and the notes it contains – some of which are dated – was contemporary with the incident and not something he falsified years later. The superfluous details evident in the notes on these pages that had nothing to do with the incident clearly show they were written at the time and are not something one would go to the trouble of hoaxing years later.

It is also clearly-evident that Jim's writing as he was taking notes during the time when he was examining the craft was shaky and appears scrawled and difficult to read – evidence that Jim's hands were not working properly or shaking due to the external effects he was experiencing. If Jim had hoaxed the notes years later, *why would he go to the trouble of making sure his writing appeared shaky and almost illegible?* After all, if he had written the notes years later, then to keep things simple, he needn't have had to say anything about the fact that the effects he felt while within the vicinity of the craft, had also affected his writing: it would have been a superfluous detail that he needn't have to include. However, because some of the writing is just scribble and almost illegible, Jim then felt he needed to explain why, and what he says appears logically sound and consistent with the experience and effects he had at the time and which he later described.

Burroughs clearly didn't carry a notebook or use one. The fact that Jim always carried a notebook around with him, and every year would pick up a dozen or so at the base store to hand out to his men, actually shows the difference between someone like A1C Burroughs, who was deemed irresponsible at times and had issues with authority, and SSgt. Penniston, who was responsible, organized and efficiently competent, respected the officers above him, and took his job and what he was tasked to do

seriously. In consideration of all these facts, Burroughs' assertions in recent years that Jim Penniston must have faked the notebook some considerable time after the incident to substantiate his account of what happened not only makes no sense and is not logical, but is also defamatory and insulting – especially when SSgt. Jim Penniston was the man entrusted with the investigation by his superiors, and because they knew they could count on him for determining the facts of any situation. (For example, see the extracts from Jim Penniston's performance reports, Note 4 in the end notes of Chapter 11: *Lifeline.* Also see *Jim Penniston's Performance Reports*).

However, one should consider the fact that in 2009, Burroughs and Jim Penniston had met up again for the first time since a month after the incident back in 1980. And although Burroughs maintained a close friendship with Jim Penniston and had both supported Jim and cooperated with him to discover the truth of what happened that night, it was in 2014 and straight after Burroughs received his VA settlement from the US government, assisted by former CIA intelligence official, Dr. Christopher "Kit" Green, who participated directly in CIA's paranormal research in the early 1970s, that Burroughs then turned and began undermining Jim Penniston's credibility by making these kinds of assertions – especially questioning the notebook and Jim's account of the binary code.

[cvii] Burroughs recalls being told by a controller in Central Security Control, about a 'Helping Hand' report being called, which means that someone at CSC – most likely SSgt. Coffey – had heard SSgt. Jim Penniston initiate it, even though Jim could not hear anything back from CSC on his radio.

Quote:

> "The first night I have been told by one of the controllers at CSC a helping hand was called at one point on Woodbridge then called off!"
>
> Post by John Burroughs » Thursday, September 9, 2010 4:21 p.m.,
> on the *Rendlesham-Incident Forum: The Rendlesham forest/RAF Bentwaters case.*
> Re: *Illustration for Larry Warren*.

[cviii]

The significant point about this is that today Burroughs maintains that all he ever saw was lights. However, he admits here that he was told that a 'Helping Hand' report had been called during the incident, which could only have been called by his superior, SSgt. Jim Penniston. Although, to be told this from a controller in CSC, means that Airman Burroughs never witnessed SSgt. Penniston initiate the Helping Hand report over the radio, as he was in an inactive state and virtually unconscious at this time. If a Helping Hand report was initiated while Jim Penniston was inspecting the craft, then it could be said that this contradicts Burroughs' testimony that he never saw Jim do anything other than dive to the ground like he did, and that all he remembers is seeing lights, then diving to the ground to then look up and to see the lights moving back through the trees before the lights ascended to a height above the trees before taking off in a blink of an eye. But the fact that SSgt. Penniston had initiated a Helping Hand report means that SSgt. Penniston thought that what he saw was serious enough to be a Security threat, and this would only be the result of seeing an unidentified machine or craft of some kind.

During the first hypnosis session Burroughs underwent in 1988, Burroughs says the following:

> Burroughs:
> *"Lights, lights . . . a weird oval-shaped light. Its hovering, its hovering . . . its hovering. It, it's, strobing* [. . .] *the white, its white, but it's, but, but there's light below it . . . there's little*

lights below it. There's the orange light and the red lights. It's like sun, it's like the sun, but it's not shaped like the sun; it's like an oval-shaped thing, and its pulsating, its pulsating."
Hypnotherapist:
HOW FAR AWAY IS IT?
"Ten feet, maybe fifteen . . ."
HOW BIG IS IT?
"I don't know. It, it, it, keeps changing, it keeps changing. The lights keep pulsating; it's hard to judge, it's hard to judge; it's there, it's there; now it's moving back, it's moving back."

From *Update to Bentwaters Sighting*, lecture by Linda Moulton Howe, Posted December 30, 2012 on *YouTube* [Video file].

It can be reasoned that Burroughs is trying to describe the colored lights that were emerging from within the skin of the craft and also the white lights (tripod legs made of 'solid light') beneath the craft, and all during the 'powering down' phase described by Jim Penniston. The next thing Burroughs remembers is then observing the craft moving back and ascending above the trees before taking off – even though for around forty-five minutes, in between these conscious observances recalled by Burroughs, Jim Penniston had walked around the craft; taken photographs, recorded what he saw in his notebook, and experienced a telepathic download of a message in binary code.

[cix] During the second of two hypnosis sessions which took place on September 10, 1994, Jim Penniston describes this powering down and the reduction of the 'dome/bubble' of light that was being projected around the craft:

Jim Penniston:
"The lights are calming down."
Hypnotherapist:
"THE LIGHTS ARE GOING OUT?"
"They're not as . . . the light was . . . maybe taking up a hundred feet. It's down to thirty or twenty. Down to a softer glow. Not much blue or red. Black in the center. Shiny. I'm pretty close."

[cx] As mentioned in Note 82, to this day, Burroughs has stated in various subsequent interviews that he does not remember SSgt. Jim Penniston carrying a camera on him that night or using it, adding that he wouldn't have had time to use it anyway from what he consciously remembers. However, all the time Jim Penniston examined the craft and took photos, Burroughs was immobilized, and from what Burroughs described during his second hypnosis session conducted on October 4, 2008 (see Note 105 above), he appeared to have been placed in a strange, trance-like state that seems to have made him oblivious to what was going on around him. In other words, it would seem that Burroughs' attention had been distracted on purpose while Jim Penniston was allowed to examine the craft – Burroughs' mind then being preoccupied with the lights he said he was seeing and for the duration of the time it took for Penniston to complete the examination of the craft and which ended just after Penniston received the telepathic download of binary code.

Also, Jim Penniston says that although they didn't discuss it, Burroughs was with him later that same day (December 26, 1980) when he dropped the film off to the Base Photo Lab to get it developed before driving on to the landing site to examine the evidence in daylight. (See Chapter 4: *Evidence*.)

[cxi] It is possibly this brief disappearance of Burroughs from Jim Penniston's view, which has led researchers to theorize that Burroughs had jumped up on the craft, had been taken into the craft and had been abducted – i.e., taken into the craft somehow or transported somewhere else. Even Col. Halt repeats this story in a bewildered, tongue-in-cheek manner. Burroughs has himself seized on this detail and has continually brought attention to the ongoing speculation through the years that he was abducted, despite having stated the following in 2008 – only a month before he underwent his second hypnosis session:

> "And I never jumped on the craft and went for a ride with Penniston or drew my weapon on it . . ."
>
> Post by John Burroughs, Tuesday, September 2, 2008, 4:30 p.m. on the *Rendlesham-Incident Forum: The Rendlesham forest/RAF Bentwaters case.* Re: *2008 Atlantic Coast UFO Conference – Peter on Rendlesham*.

Although he never meant to, in his post Burroughs acknowledges a craft when he says that he never "jumped on the craft." Also, it's not clear what Burroughs means when he says *". . . and went for a ride with Penniston,"* as Jim Penniston has never claimed he went for a ride on the craft he witnessed. Of course, skeptics may have said this to mock them, and this was Burroughs' response. In any case, this post by Burroughs was in response to a post made by UFO researcher Peter Robbins, who was collaborating with Lawrence (Larry) Warren at the time, and who wrote:

> "Airman John Burrows [sic] got even closer and pulled his sidearm on it. He told Larry that he then impulsively jumped on it; the machine moved about thirty feet through the woods before he released his grip on it. Three of the four men involved returned to base hours later with incomplete memories of their time in the forest. The forth [sic] man did not return with the others and remained missing for some days after."
>
> Post by Peter Robbins, Thursday, August 28, 2008 7:58 a.m. on the *Rendlesham-Incident Forum: The Rendlesham forest/RAF Bentwaters case.* Re: *2008 Atlantic Coast UFO Conference – Peter on Rendlesham*.

Peter Robbins mentions a fourth man, but this is clearly not in any of the witnesses' testimonies, and it would appear that there being a fourth man involved that morning is something Robbins had been told by his co-author Larry Warren. Anyway, based on what Sgt. Adrian Bustinza remembers during the events of the 'third night,' involving Lt. Col. Halt and SSgt. Monroe Nevels, Burroughs has made the same 'abduction' conjecture with what he says must have happened to him when Bustinza says he saw Burroughs running towards an unidentified craft, which then emitted a beam of light enveloping Burroughs and which made it appear as if he had disappeared for some minutes and had been taken inside the craft.

[cxii] It is a remarkable fact that even as late as 2013, the production team of a TV documentary, in which Jim Penniston is featured, had disregarded Jim Penniston's detailed description of the triangular craft he saw, and decided instead to portray the craft as a seven-foot tall pyramid with a pulsating orange-red light emitting from all its straight edges, including the perimeter of its base. (See *Paranormal Witness, The Rendlesham Files*, aired November 27, 2013).

In the same documentary we also see the actor playing Airman Burroughs inspecting the craft up close alongside the actor playing Jim Penniston, even though it is now evident that Burroughs was in an altered or suspended state of consciousness throughout the forty-five minutes that Jim Penniston examined the craft and has no memory of this part of the event. It also seems that some of Burroughs' original commentary had been edited out of context to coincide with this segment, so that it appears as if he is describing a solid craft.

Quoting Burroughs: *"It was not an aircraft . . . it was not a helicopter . . . I'd never seen anything like that."*

It is obvious that Burroughs had been filmed discussing what he only remembered seeing, but within the context of trying to go beyond describing only the lights he has always maintained he saw.

Furthermore, while Jim Penniston describes the symbols or glyphs he saw on the side of the craft, the scene cuts to an actor portraying him, who then looks at the actor playing Burroughs who is standing next to him. While both are looking at the craft up close, the actor playing Jim asks, *"What do you think it means?"* Instantly, a segment of Burroughs appears where he says, *"I mean, it was clearly something very significant."* Again, this segment featuring Burroughs had clearly been taken out of the context of the dialogue originally filmed, and is an untrue and misleading portrayal, as again, Burroughs has always maintained that he was totally unaware of all this having taken place.

These deliberately-crafted discrepancies defeat the object of informing the viewer and instead only serve to confuse the viewer as to what really happened. It's no wonder that people regard the Rendlesham Incident as a "mess" and a researcher's nightmare in terms of the numerous inconsistencies and discrepancies that have plagued it over the years, and one is forced to wonder if this has been planned deliberately by those who work behind the scenes and control the media to confuse potential investigators and researchers.

[cxiii] Note by Jim Penniston:
The "7 – 8 feet" height of the craft which I wrote in my notebook, did not include the 1.5-feet space underneath the craft upon which it seemed to be hovering with no landing gear present at this time. However, if we include the tripod landing gear, which I later discovered were made of light, then from the ground to the tip of the dorsal fin feature at the back of the craft would have been close to 9 feet (3 meters) high altogether.

[cxiv] Note by Jim Penniston:

> At this point in the investigation, I remember thinking that I had no distractions now to keep me from investigating and recording what I could. Although some force had now made him inanimate, I could still hear Burroughs and his hyper-excited, *"Sergeant Penniston this!"* and *"Sergeant Penniston that!"* Nonstop verbiage ringing in my ears.

(Burroughs' excitable manner is also evident on the first hypnosis session Burroughs undertook in 1988 and which was organized and videotaped by the Curt Brubaker Group, Los Angeles. See *Update to Bentwaters Sighting*, lecture by Linda Moulton Howe, posted December 30, 2012 on *YouTube*, starting from the 17:54 mark.)

[cxv] During the second of two hypnosis sessions which took place on September 10, 1994, Jim Penniston recalls this strange phenomenon of the craft sitting on three struts made of solid light:

> "It's not on no legs. It's got . . . the light holds it up. Slender, slender though. The front part of the pie [pie – meaning the triangle-shaped craft] has a slender little beam of light going out the bottom. The two back portions too. They're holding it up." (Laughs). "I need to get my camera out. I'm pissed off. I'm not taking, I wasn't taking any pictures."

[cxvi]

Note by Jim Penniston:

> As it was the year 1980, the term 'binary code' was unfamiliar to me at the time, and so I did not make the connection between the computer binary code language and the ones and zeros I was seeing in my mind. People have taken issue with this, saying *how could I have not known about binary code?* But my NOT being familiar with binary code at this time and even for many years afterwards is a fact. In addition, it's important to remember the historical context of technology in 1980, as the average person was unfamiliar with the term 'binary code' and didn't own a personal computer.

[cxvii] Note by Jim Penniston:

> My thoughts later were that when the craft suddenly came to life again by emitting a powerful flash of bright light, Burroughs had 1) either become conscious again having been relieved of the suspended state he was placed in, and then seeing the flash of light he quickly dived to the ground at the same time I did, or 2), he simply fell to the ground when the craft let go of its apparent bizarre hold on him.

[cxviii] It is evident that on the first night Burroughs had also seen the craft lift off.

> "It was like a blink of an eye. [snaps fingers] It went from being there and gone [snaps fingers again] just like that, snap!"
>
> John Burroughs interviewed on *Paranormal Witness*, *The Rendlesham Files*, aired November 27, 2013.

Following are four quotes claimed to have been said and written by Burroughs during subsequent interviews, although I can find no sources for them. One can read them on the *Rendlesham-Incident Forum* entitled, *The Rendlesham forest/RAF Bentwaters case*. (Posted Friday, December 3, 2010).

> "What we came upon departed the area at a high rate of speed."
>
> "There is nothing we have that caused what we saw take off."
>
> "Whatever we encountered was able to lift off and fly away on its own power at a high rate of speed!"
>
> "All 3 of us have said it was gone in a blink of an eye! Whatever it was lifted up and went back with and was gone that fast with no noise."

When Burroughs says, *"All 3 of us,"* he means that Airman Ed Cabansag was present with him and SSgt. Jim Penniston when the craft took off at the landing site. However, Jim Penniston does not recall Airman Cabansag being present with them in the forest and at the landing site. (See Note 96 above.)

[cxix] This dramatic change back to normality from the effects they felt during the time of their close approach and their encounter with the craft was also noticed by Burroughs.

> Burroughs, 1990:
> ". . . that was like everything seemed like it was different when we were in that area, you know what I mean? The sky didn't seem the same, everything seemed different . . . It was like a weird feeling, like everything seemed slower than you were actually doing and stuff, and all of a sudden, when the object was gone, everything was like normal again, [by] normal [that] everything seemed real around you . . ."
>
> *"Bentwaters Part III: The Testimony of John Burroughs"* J. Antonio Huneeus, *FATE Magazine*, 1990.

[cxx] During the second of two hypnosis sessions which took place in 1994, Jim Penniston recalls shouting to Burroughs that what he was seeing was the Orfordness Lighthouse:

> Jim Penniston:
> "Well John . . . he is pointing at the Orford lighthouse. It's the lighthouse John. Yeah. It's completely in the wrong direction, too."

[cxxi]

In December 1980, and from this location in the small field some 280 meters (300 yards) east of the farmhouse, one had an unobstructed line of view of the shining beacon of the Orfordness Lighthouse some 4.8 miles away on the Suffolk coast.
The ancient Iron Age earthwork known as *Burrow Hill,* a *Wuffing* site and possibly one of several sacred burial grounds for the Anglo-Saxon Kings, is also marked on the map. (See Note 121 below.)
(Satellite image from 2000. *Google Earth Pro,* 2018. Overlay artwork by Gary Osborn.)

This conversation was mentioned in the witness statement that bears the signature of Fred A. Buran:

> 'SSgt Penniston reported getting near the "object" and then all of a sudden said they had gone past it and were looking at a marker beacon that was in the same general direction as the other lights. I asked him, through SSgt Coffey, if he could have been mistaken, to which Penniston replied that had I seen the other lights I would know the difference. SSgt Penniston seemed somewhat agitated at this point.'

Page 1 of 2 of the *witness Statement* (AF FORM 1169), signed and dated by Fred A. Buran,
81 Security Police Squadron, January 2, 1981.

It is interesting that Lt. Buran had mentioned SSgt. Jim Penniston telling him if he [Buran] had *"seen the other lights then he would know the difference,"* because Jim Penniston recalls that this is not what he said, and instead had said that if Buran had *"seen what we had seen then he would know the difference,"* or words to that effect.

How the Lighthouse Theory originated

What Jim Penniston experienced had absolutely nothing to do with the Orfordness Lighthouse, which has played a very undeserving part in the Rendlesham case as a "logical explanation" for what the men had experienced that night in the Rendlesham woods. SSgt. Penniston would not have issued a 'Helping Hand' request – as has been supported by another witness, and also by Burroughs himself who heard from someone in CSC that a Helping Hand was called – something which would only have been done unless SSgt. Penniston had reason to request it after engaging something – an unidentified craft – that could be seen as a security threat to the bases.

However, Burroughs' gaffe in mistaking the beacon of the Lighthouse for the light of the craft, as

heard by the CSC Controller, Lt. Buran at this time during the investigation, was most likely discussed by those at CSC who no doubt found it amusing, with the word getting around that this is all the first responders had witnessed all along. One can imagine how this had provided the perfect answer for those in command to use as an explanation for what happened, and for the not so balanced skeptics to debunk the whole incident if the story ever got out to the public, and this is possibly why the word "beacon" was inserted five times into the witness statement signed by Airman Edward N. Cabansag – apparently the very first witness statement produced just hours after the incident and which Ed Cabansag has since claimed he had never written or typed *and didn't even read* before signing it.

It is true that before the five witness statements had first been brought to public attention in May 1998 by Scottish UFO skeptic James Easton, the Orfordness Lighthouse had already been suggested as an explanation by Rendlesham forester, Vincent Thurkettle, who lived less than a mile away from where the incident took place in Rendlesham Forest, soon after the story first came out in public on October 2, 1983 in the UK newspaper, *News of the World.* (See Chapter 11: *Lifeline*). But this does not rule out the possibility that the Orfordness Lighthouse – having played a part in the investigation due to Burroughs having chased after it during the later stages of the incident/investigation – was later put out in rumours to undermine the incidents. It is also possible that Thurkettle was indirectly led to this conclusion after having been shown a faked landing site from which the lighthouse could be seen. (See Note 443). After the news story broke in the 'News of the World,' Thurkettle, who had begun mentioning the lighthouse theory to all and sundry, was then contacted by amateur astronomer and skeptic, Ian Ridpath so he could use Thurkettle's theory to debunk the Rendlesham Forest Incident . . . and Ian Ridpath, who worked on the *Breakfast Time* show with the BBC, and whose producers had asked him to debunk the RFI – lost no time in presenting the lighthouse theory as fact.

So, in effect, it was Burroughs who was responsible for the beacon of the Orfordness Lighthouse later gaining traction as a viable theory for what the first responders had witnessed all along in the forest, as mention of the lighthouse beacon in the witness statements signed by Airman Cabansag, Airman Burroughs, Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler was really the result of the fact that Burroughs had mistaken the lighthouse beacon for the craft and went chasing after it until SSgt. Penniston had to inform him of his mistake. And so, *as seems to have been confirmed in the witness statements,* the Orfordness Lighthouse has been used by skeptics and pseudoskeptical debunkers as the answer to the Rendlesham Incident mystery most strongly ever since and is now forever related.

In response to the skeptics, Burroughs is quoted as having said, *"There is no way that many people were fooled by that lighthouse . . . there is just no way that we were fooled,"* (Bruni: *"You Can't Tell the People,"* 2001). However, the fact remains that Burroughs *WAS fooled* by the Orfordness Lighthouse, and this is how the lighthouse became an issue and a favorite tool for the skeptics and debunkers. It only needed mentioning once for the naysayers to jump on it immediately and use it.

Col. Halt is quoted as having said to Jim Penniston, *"Burroughs is the only guy I know who could make a bad situation worse."* And it was most-likely Col. Halt who had written the note at the end of Burroughs' witness statement: "*He does have the ability to take an incident and turn it into a disaster."*

As a result of Burroughs' blunder, for many researchers and since 1983, more precious time has been wasted on this lighthouse than all the worthless and irretrievable time spent standing in queues throughout one's lifetime – time which could add several more years to one's life IF at the end of it one was granted that same time back as the 'injury time' allowed at the end of a game of soccer. It is that mundane and irrelevant. However, the skeptics appear to be satisfied with it, and for some reason it doesn't nag at them or keep them awake at night as being a senseless, illogical and irrational explanation for an event that was truly extraordinary and significant.

Here's what former Staff Sergeant Monroe Nevels has to say. (For Monroe's accounts, see chapters, *"Special Mission," Landing Site* and *UAP Activity*).

> "The Lighthouse Theory is stupid and senseless! The light is shielded and spins continuously in one direction

> out to sea, so that a ship at sea can stay clear of danger. Being more than five miles away from the forest where the incidents took place with the light shining out to sea, makes the intense source of the light even more obscured, and the hills in the area would have prevented any light from the lighthouse to be seen on the base or in the forest. The light does not change its intensity. Also, lighthouses are stationary and do not move through the air and produce high-energy static, causing the hairs to stand out on your body."
>
> Monroe Nevels talking with Jim Penniston and Gary Osborn (Skype call, July 27, 2017).

[cxxii] In Burroughs's witness statement, written on Monday, December 29, 1980 in Lt. Col. Halt's office, Burroughs writes that after reaching the farmhouse (in the area known as *Capel Green*), "they" (meaning he, SSgt. Penniston and Airman Cabansag) walked a further "2 miles" following what they thought were the lights of whatever it was they had encountered earlier in the woods. They then realized that what they were chasing was the beacon light of the Orfordness Lighthouse, located some five miles away on the Suffolk coast.

Jim Penniston says that he and Burroughs never walked a further "two miles" after the farmhouse, as claimed by Burroughs, and that they never went further than the second field just beyond the farmhouse. As mentioned, Jim says it was while in this field that he had actually notified Burroughs that he had mistaken the beacon of the lighthouse for the lights of the craft. It was also in this field when they then saw the lights of the craft again and observed it moving off (due east) into the distance and to the right of the Orfordness Lighthouse. Because there was a line of tall trees to the east blocking their view of the horizon, Jim Penniston could only assume that the craft had flown over the Suffolk coast and out across the North Sea. After losing sight of the craft, the investigation was terminated by Lt. Buran, who was monitoring the radio transmissions from CSC back at the Bentwaters base, and that it was from this point and while in that second field that he and Burroughs turned back.

However, while speaking at the *Rendlesham Forest Incident Presentation* conference on Saturday, May 19, 2018, at the Woodbridge Community Hall, Suffolk, England, John Burroughs added a new detail, as well as a strange new twist to his account of what happened that fateful morning on December 26, 1980.

Burroughs is now saying that he remembers observing the lights of "whatever it was" they had encountered earlier in the forest, moving someway off in the distance – again, due east and to the right of the Orfordness Lighthouse, *but that he observed this while standing on the ancient, Iron Age earthwork known as Burrow Hill, or Burrow Mound*, which he emphasized is located "5 miles out" from the gate at Woodbridge – being the East Gate. He said that it was from there that he saw "whatever it was" moving off over the coast and across the North Sea. Burroughs also says he remembers Airman Ed Cabansag standing with him and SSgt. Penniston on *Burrow Hill.*

It is evident that there are problems with this late addition to Burroughs' account:

1), Again, Jim Penniston says that he and Burroughs went no further than the second field after the farmhouse, a location some 500 meters north-east from the landing site and also 1.43 miles west of Burrow Hill, and that they didn't walk the "2 miles" given in Burroughs' witness statement, let alone the five miles he now seems to be claiming!

2). However, the information Burroughs now seems to be "selling" to his audience is wrong. Burrow Hill is not 5 miles from the East Gate, but is actually 2.6 miles from the East Gate, and 1.56 miles from the landing site where he and SSgt. Penniston first encountered the "unidentified craft of unknown origin."

3), Jim Penniston says that Airman Cabansag was NOT present during this later stage in the investigation that morning, as Penniston remembers that just before he and Burroughs had entered the forest, he had ordered Cabansag to remain back with the Jeep to act as a radio comms relay, and as far as he knew, it was there that Cabansag had remained until they returned.

[cxxiii] The investigation was officially terminated at 03:54 hrs, according to the witness statement signed by Lt. Buran.

> Lt. Buran:
> "At approximately 0354 hrs, I terminated the investigation and ordered all units back to their normal duties."
>
> Page 1 of 2 of the *Witness Statement* (AF FORM 1169), signed and dated by Fred A. Buran, 81 Security Police Squadron, January 2, 1981.

[cxxiv] Again, during the second of two hypnosis sessions which took place in 1994, Jim Penniston recalls making the decision to go back to the landing site and check to see if there is any evidence there left by the craft.

> Jim Penniston:
> "Let's go to, let's go towards the scene. We're looking around. Can't really remember exactly the spot. John hollers at me that there's, it's over there. And over near him there's impressions in the ground. We got to go back and report it. We get back to where Cabansag's at. He's there."
>
> Jim Penniston. Hypnosis Session, September 10, 1994.

Note that Jim mentions meeting up again with Airman Ed Cabansag on the way back to East Gate. For some, hypnosis is considered unreliable, so even if it is seen not to confirm it, this detail recall under hypnosis nevertheless indicates that Cabansag was NOT out in the forest with them, as Burroughs has always claimed. Here's more about this from the same hypnosis session:

> Hypnotherapist:
> "OK, SO GO BACK TO WHERE CABANSAG IS . . ."
> Jim Penniston:
> *"We pick him up. He's scared. He doesn't want to talk to us. He won't answer at least. No, he won't answer."*
>
> Jim Penniston. Hypnosis Session, September 10, 1994.

[cxxv] At 4:11 a.m., and while Jim Penniston, John Burroughs, and Ed Cabansag were making their way back to the East Gate, the Suffolk police received a call from the Law Enforcement desk at Bentwaters. It was during an interview with researcher James Easton in 1997, that Chris Armold (an A1C at the time) had claimed it was he who had made the call. In fact, this is true, as a 'Station Record Form' exists, which reads:

> "26/12/80/0411

> Message – We have a sighting of some unusual lights in the sky, have sent some unarmed troops to investigate, we are terming it as a U.F.O. at present.
> Location – Beyond East Gate to RAF Woodbridge.
> Informer – A.1.C Armold, Law Enforcement Desk Bentwaters"

This 'Station Record Form' can be seen on page 151 of a 435-page PDF document dump of the online *files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS.Org.* (For more information on Chris Armold, see Note 126 below.)

In the book *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles (1991), it is said that the call was ordered by Colonel Ted Conrad. Apparently, Armold informed the Suffolk police that unarmed USAF personnel were in the woods investigating unusual lights that were observed in the sky and in the forest, adding that *"We* [the USAF] *are terming it as a UFO at present."*

During the interview conducted by researcher James Easton, Chris Armold is recorded as having said, *"I'm certain the decision to call the local constabulary was one that was made late in the morning and with hesitation. You see no one was particularly eager to call the local police and ask silly questions about UFOs."*

> Note by Jim Penniston:
> It was well-known that A1C Burroughs and A1C Chris Armold disliked each other, and Crash McCabe was the butt of Burroughs' pranks, so the term "UFO," would have possibly been seized upon and used to bring ridicule to the incident involving Burroughs as payback, and it's possible and likely that Burroughs had irresponsibly used the term "UFO" himself over the radio while he and SSgt. Budd Steffens were at the edge of the forest investigating the lights in the woods.

From what was written in the official log regarding the call from Airman Armold, the Suffolk police contacted air traffic control West Dayton and learned that reports were received of aerial phenomena over Southern England during that night. The police then decided to investigate. One of the Police Constables that responded to the 4:11 a.m., call was Dave King, who was interviewed by author and investigative researcher, Georgina Bruni, and who stated the following:

> *"We were actually on our way to visit the Bentwaters Law Enforcement desk when the call came through. When we arrived at the Bentwaters base we were escorted through the back gate to the East Gate sentry post and were then taken to the forest by some security policemen. We had to follow their vehicle. They took us toward the spot where they said the other Security Police had gone and we were told they were still out there. We had to park the car and walk on foot. The Americans didn't come with us.* […] *We walked about half a mile into the forest* […] *there were no Americans there, not a soul. We walked for some thirty minutes."*
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*

by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

By the time the Suffolk police were on the scene in the forest, Penniston, Burroughs and Cabansag had already returned to the East Gate at Woodbridge.

[cxxvi] Burroughs had returned to his posting at the East Gate to work off the rest of his shift until 07:00 hrs. Apparently, A1C Chris Armold, who was at the Law Enforcement desk at RAF Lakenheath and who called the Suffolk Police (call logged at 4:11 a.m.), was told to drive to Woodbridge to check out the situation. It is at the East Gate that Armold claims he met Burroughs who had just returned to his shift after the incident, and the investigation was terminated, and persuaded Burroughs to go back into the woods with him.

Chris Armold in an interview conducted by UFO researcher and skeptic, James Easton, July 1997:

> "I cruised out to Woodbridge after my Flight Chief said it would be okay to check it out." […] "I met Burroughs at the East Gate of Woodbridge. We left our guns with the guy riding with Burroughs and drove to the end of the long access road. We left our vehicle and walked out there."

To this day, Burroughs has never told Jim Penniston about this second trip to the landing site in the woods, but perhaps this is because as Burroughs has stated over the years, and again only recently, *he doesn't remember meeting up with A1C Armold, and doesn't remember going out into the woods of the forest a second time that morning after returning to the East Gate.* In fact, during an online discussion in April 2011, Burroughs writes that he never returned to the woods that night with Armold.

> "Armold showed up as we were coming back in. I never returned to the woods that night with him."
>
> John Burroughs, Tuesday, April 5, 2011. *Rendlesham-Incident Forum*.

In his interview with skeptic, James Easton, Armold, states that he saw nothing unusual while he was in the forest:

> "There was absolutely nothing in the woods. We could see lights in the distance and it appeared unusual as it was a sweeping light; (we did not know about the lighthouse on the coast at the time). We also saw some strange colored lights in the distance but were unable to determine what they were. The lights were primarily white and were very small, far off in the distance. Occasionally, one would see a shade of blue or red, but I attribute that to refraction from stained glass windows in a local church in addition to the fog and weather at the time."
>
> *The Chris Armold Interview* conducted by James Easton, July 1997.

According to Armold, he and Burroughs found three depressions in the ground of the dark forest:

> "Eventually, we found three depressions in the ground, about the diameter of a coffee can in a triangular pattern. However, there was no damage to trees or scorch marks, or any damage to any plant life in the area. We noted the location of the impressions and departed the area."
>
> *The Chris Armold Interview* conducted by James Easton, July 1997.

Chris Armold says that there was no damage or scorch marks made to the trees, even though several other witnesses state that they saw this damage. (For example, see end of Notes 149, and 150 below, and also Chapter 7: *Landing Site.*) In any case, it's no surprise to find that much of what Chris Armold said in 1997 has been dismissed, as it was clearly biased reporting based on his skeptical views and attitude to the events, which was no doubt heightened by his dislike of Burroughs. (See Note 125). Armold also mentions that on the way out, both he and Burroughs met two Suffolk Police Constables – PC Dave King, and PC Martin Brophy – who also arrived at the site. (See Note 131 below):

> "I believe we met up with two constables who drove up in a small marked vehicle on the main road that connects to the East Gate access. I have to believe the conversation we had with them was of little consequence, as I don't recall re-entering the woods with them or spending much time chit-chatting about the issue."
>
> *The Chris Armold Interview* conducted by James Easton, July 1997.

While speaking at the Rendlesham conference, Woodbridge Community Hall on May 19, 2018, Burroughs states that the story Chris Armold gave James Easton was most-likely disinformation, as he remembers nothing of what Armold said about meeting up with him and going out to the forest again that morning. And while on the subject, Burroughs had also stated (and we paraphrase here), that many people over the years have tried to write themselves into the incident and at the same time, and with their stories, have attempted to discredit the testimonies of the witnesses via certain details in their accounts that appear to contradict what the real witnesses have said.

In her 2001 book, "*You Can't Tell the People,*" author Georgina Bruni had this to say about Armold's story:

> "Armold actually puts himself in the picture by claiming to have been involved in the 'non-event', but his testimony appears to me to be a mix and match of various stories passed down over the years, and not even the sceptics seem prepared to accept it. I certainly cannot take Armold's critique seriously because, apart from his comments on the witnesses, there are several discrepancies which are important enough to question his own alleged involvement."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

[cxxvii] This is verified by what was stated in the witness statement signed and dated by Fred A. Buran.

> "I directed SSgt Penniston to take notes of the incident when he came in that morning."

Page 1 of 2 of the witness statement (AF FORM 1169), signed and dated by Fred A. Buran,
81 Security Police Squadron, January 2, 1981.

[cxxviii] In the interview conducted by Linda Moulton Howe in September 2009, Richard Bertolino had this to say on his recollection of having sat next to SSgt. Jim Penniston and what he was told by Penniston while traveling back to Bentwaters base on the pick-up bus after they both came off duty the morning of the incident – December 26, 1980:

> Richard Bertolino:
> "I sat right next to Jim Penniston and we were talking about it . . . and he seemed shook up. You could tell that something happened to him. And Jim says to me, it's a good thing that they couldn't take their weapons out there, because he was afraid that him or someone else might have shot at this thing when they first approached it because it was so different that they didn't know how to react to it. And he says that if one of them would have shot it there would probably been a pair of smoking boots sitting there. I think he meant that they were so far above us that it's not even funny . . . you know, their technology was so far advanced to ours that a bullet would be a joke." [. . .] "He was describing some of the situation and he pulled out this little notebook that he used to write incidents in, like if he was called to an incident. He always kept notes. He pulls out the notebook and he diagrams [sketched] what he saw out there. It was kind of diamond shaped with tripod legs, and he explained that it was no metal like he had ever seen. I'm really getting into this. We get in and turn in our weapons, and I think that one thing that drove me nuts from that day forward was, here's guys that we would fight side-by-side . . . die with each other if we had to. These guys wouldn't talk about it anymore."

Richard Bertolino describes Penniston writing in his notebook after the incident.
Posted May 29, 2013, YouTube [Video file].

Jim doesn't recall what happened to the sketch he drew for Bertolino. He says he may have taken it out of the notebook and either misplaced it or disposed of it, as it was just a quick and roughly-drawn depiction and not of any importance, as he had already intended to do a more closely-detailed sketch of the craft anyway.

Jim later did a more detailed sketch of the craft he witnessed in three different views at home on the morning of December 30, 1980, before preparing to report to the AFOSI building on Bentwaters base. He intended to hand this sketch over the OSI agents, but during the interview decided against this, and

kept the sketch with him when he left the building. (See Chapter 9: *Afterburn*).

[cxxix] When Jim met MSgt. J.D. Chandler and told him, *"You're not going to believe what happened tonight."* Jim recalls Chandler's response: *"If it has anything to do with what I saw a little while ago, I would believe you. I saw everything from the East Gate."* However, at the end of the witness statement signed by J.D. Chandler, is this declaration:

> "At no time did I observe anything from the time I arrived at RAF Woodbridge."
>
> Page 1 of 2 of the *Witness Statement* (AF FORM 1169), typed, signed and dated by J.D Chandler, 81 Security Police Sq, January 2, 1981.

What MSgt. J.D. Chandler had told Jim Penniston implies that Chandler saw more than he was willing to talk about, and possibly more than he was later allowed to say.

[cxxx] It is said that MSgt. J.D. Chandler had relayed to SSgt. Jim Penniston what others had told Jim – i.e., that he and the other radio links around Rendlesham and Woodbridge had lost contact with him and Burroughs for two to three hours, FROM around 01:00 hrs, when Penniston and Burroughs had reached a point some 160 feet (50 meters away), TO 03:54 hrs when Lt. Buran called them in and they were back at CSC at Bentwaters by 05.00 hrs. And if so, *then how could the events have begun somewhere between 1:30 and 3:00 a.m., which covers the time estimates Burroughs had given for the time he and Steffens first met up, or when they first saw the strange lights in the forest?* (See Note 7.)

[cxxxi] It was around this time (5:00 a.m.) when SSgt. Jim Penniston had returned to Bentwaters base, that PC Dave King and PC Martin Brophy had begun trekking through the woods of Rendlesham forest to investigate the unexplained lights in the woods that had first been reported to the head office of the Suffolk Constabulary at Martlesham Heath at 4:11 that same morning, and which was some 15 minutes after the investigation involving Penniston and Burroughs had been terminated by Lt. Buran. Again, A1C Chris Armold claims he was the person who contacted the Constabulary about the strange lights in the forest, as logged at 4:11 a.m.

Apparently the two constables were then radioed as they were heading in their vehicle towards RAF Bentwaters as part of their regular nightly visit to the USAF Law Enforcement desk. As it was Christmas night, when everything was relatively quiet, they were surprised to receive the call telling them to proceed to RAF Woodbridge.

Georgina Bruni interviewed Dave King in 1998, in which he is quoted as having told her the following:

> "When we arrived at the Bentwaters base [surely King meant the Woodbridge base, and is mixing this up with the Bentwaters base he frequently visited?] we were escorted through the back gate to the east-gate sentry post and were then taken to the forest by some security policemen. We had to follow their vehicle. They took us towards the spot where they said the other SPs [Security Police] had gone and we were told they were still out there. We had to park the car and walk on foot. The Americans didn't come with us. We walked about half a mile into the forest toward the direction we were pointed

> in, but we didn't see any lights out there except the lighthouse and there were no Americans out there, not a soul. We walked for some thirty minutes. If you look on the forest area as being a square foot then we must have covered only a square inch of it . . . We didn't report to the base because when we got back to our car there was no one there so we just left and went home."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

Just after leaving the forest, the Police Constables did report back to their constabulary though. The following was then entered into the Suffolk police log:

> "Only lights visible this area was from Orford Light House. Search made of area – negative."
>
> *Suffolk Constabulary, Official Log,* dated December 26, 1980.

An important point about this is that if the two constables had begun trekking through the woods at around 5:00 a.m., then how could they have met A1C Chris Armold and A1C Burroughs coming out of the woods as they were going in at this time? Burroughs had only just returned to the East Gate with Jim Penniston shortly before 5:00 a.m., and Penniston had arrived at Bentwaters at around 5:00 a.m. There just wouldn't have been enough time for Armold to have met Burroughs at the East Gate and drive out with him again to the site, inspect the site, and then leave, only to bump into the two British policemen as the latter were entering the woods at around 5:00 a.m., as reported. Like investigative reporter and author Georgina Bruni, we can only conclude that Armold is not a reliable source and that his account has mostly been fabricated to disinform and create confusion. (See Note 443).

[cxxxii] In the book, *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest* (2014) which John Burroughs co-authored with Nick Pope and Jim Penniston, Burroughs confirms the 'missing time' element of the investigation with Jim Penniston.

Quote by Burroughs:

> "The fact is our watches were behind and the shift commander said we were missing for 45 min."
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret),
> (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

> Note by Jim Penniston:
> Those who were out in the field acting as relay for the radio transmissions sent out from where I was on point, back to the East Gate at Woodbridge, and then onto to CSC from there, said they had lost contact with us for almost three hours. It

could be said that the reason why we couldn't hear each other was because we were all within the vicinity of the craft, which seemed to have affected our radios. Apparently we lost contact when I said we were around 160 feet (50 meters) from the target. However, I was later told by the Shift Commander, Lt. Buran at CSC, that although I couldn't hear them, he and CSC was still able to receive most of my transmissions as I had assumed. Lt. Buran also told me that although he received most of my transmissions, I had gone silent for approximately 45 minutes in that whole time, and that he had lost contact with us. To my estimation 45 minutes was close to the duration of time I first entered the 'bubble' around the craft and then investigated it, to the time when the craft began to become active again and I retreated outside of the 'bubble' of light surrounding it and the craft just upped and vanished.

So how is it, that Buran had only lost us for 45 minutes, when those out in the field who were trying to relay my transmissions back to CSC say they had lost us for two to three hours?

The only explanation I can think of is that as we approached the craft in the forest we were actually closer to the Bentwaters base where CSC was located rather than Woodbridge, and what's more, there was a repeater at Bentwaters, which could boost the signal, and this was why Lt. Buran was able to receive my transmissions and the others could not.

Apparently, this 45-minute loss of contact had caused some panic at CSC, to the point that a search party was being prepared to go out and look for us, so I was later told. My thoughts were that the craft must have emitted some kind of 'time distortion effect' around it, which explained the strange electrostatic/electromagnetic time-slowing effects we felt while approaching the craft – and more-so when we were close to it and right on it – which also affected our radio transmissions to the point where CSC then lost all contact with us. I am certain that my reported position, just 160 feet (50 meters) from the craft, is where all communications with the those who were acting as radio links was lost, and this was around 01.00 hrs. Two-way communication was resumed some minutes before 03.54 hrs, which is when Lt. Buran called us in and before Burroughs and I went to the landing site on the way back to look at the evidence. In total, this is almost three hours. However, although I could not pick up transmission from Lt. Buran at CSC, he was receiving our transmissions . . . all except for that period of 45 minutes.

Jim Penniston's explanation is also shared by Burroughs, who said the following in 2009:

"One of the things that have been talked about over the years was we had radio problems. Almost from the beginning when we got out of the vehicle all the way through the rest of the that

> evening there was intermediate radio break-ups where the way it was set-up. Woodbridge base and Bentwaters Base were laid almost parallel to each other with Bentwaters to the left and anywhere between a twelve or fifteen-mile break. Now we were closest to Butley, and I believe was the Butley Gate end of Bentwaters and CSC was located out there, so there was a repeater out there. So, we were actually closer to the back part of the Bentwaters base and where the weapons storage area was."
>
> *The Paracast*, June 21, 2009, with John Burroughs and Peter Robbins.

[cxxxiii] In the witness statement signed and dated by Fred A. Buran is the following:

> "I directed SSgt Penniston to take notes of the incident when he came in that morning. After talking with him face to face concerning the incident, I am convinced that he saw something out of the realm of explanation for him at that time.
>
> I would like to state at this time that SSgt Penniston is a totally reliable and mature individual. He was not overly excited, nor do I think he is subject to overreaction or misinterpretation of circumstances. Later that morning, after conversing with CPT Mike Verano, the day-shift commander, I discovered that there had been several other sightings. Any further developments I have no direct knowledge of."
>
> Page 1 of 2 of the Witness Statement (AF FORM 1169), signed and dated by Fred A. Buran, 81 Security Police Squadron, January 2, 1981.

From this statement, researchers have assumed that when he got back to CSC that morning, SSgt. Jim Penniston was debriefed by Lt. Buran. However, Jim Penniston does not recall ever talking "face-to-face" with Lt. Buran that morning. Again, according to MSgt. Chandler who met Jim Penniston when Jim returned to CSC at Bentwaters, Buran had already left to go on leave, which is why Chandler told Jim that he had been ordered to see Captain Verrano, the day-shift commander who had taken over from Buran. Jim Penniston says that what is written in the statement must refer to him having met and talked to Lt. Buran some days after the incident and probably a day or two before January 2, 1981, when those who had been given a six-day leave had returned and the statement attributed to Lt. Buran was signed.

As we have noted, in the witness statement signed by Fred A. Buran are the following comments:

"I am convinced that he saw something out of the realm of explanation for him at that time." And: *"I would like to state at this time that SSgt Penniston is a totally reliable and mature individual. He was not overly excited, nor do I think he is subject to overreaction or misinterpretation of circumstances."*

Also, in the same witness statement is this comment:

"They appeared to get very close to the lights, and at one point SSgt Penniston stated that it was a definite mechanical object."

These comments are particularly notable, since they are contradicted by the statements Fred ("Skip") Buran had made about the incident on November 9, 2012. The reader can view the posts made by 'Skip Buran' on the Facebook group page: *Justice for the Bentwaters 81st Security Police at Rendlesham*

Forest 1980, from November 9, 2012. (The reactions by Jim Penniston are in the posts made under the title of the group page.)

[cxxxiv] Charles "Chuck" Irwin Halt is a now a retired United States Air Force Colonel. After serving in Vietnam, Japan, and Korea, Lt. Col. Halt was assigned to RAF Bentwaters in Suffolk, England, as Deputy Base Commander. At that time, Lt. Col. Halt answered only to one person, and that was the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad. Col. Conrad, in turn, answered only to the Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon Williams.

As Charles Halt had told radio host Jimmy Church in 2014:

> "Actually my job was to run the base. The Base Commander cut ribbons, kissed babies, shook hands, you know, made speeches. In the meantime, I was out at night with the cops down at the fire department, over at the dining hall in the evening . . ." [. . .] "It was my job to learn the base, what was going on at the base, make sure that things ran smoothly, put out fires before they got going, so to speak. [. . .] "I could tell you all that was going on, and even the gossip. Boy, it was interesting. I kept it to myself. The population of the base counting the civilians was 14,000. It was the largest Tactical Fighter wing in the free world. I knew everything on the base, from the weapons storage area to the fire department, you name it."
>
> *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.*
> Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cxxxv] The Deputy Base Commander, Lieutenant Colonel Charles I. Halt was not on the base when the initial event occurred. According to Georgina Bruni, as it was Christmas, Halt had been in the town of Ipswich celebrating since the early evening of December 25, *and there is reason to suggest he was still there when the incident was occurring.* Georgina Bruni writes that Halt would insist on being called if any unusual activities were happening on the base.

Bruni then adds that according to one source, whom she does not reveal, the Deputy Base Commander was called on his radio, which the officers carried with them at all times and even when they were off duty. Bruni was told that Halt had told the caller that he would deal with the situation on his return. When Bruni interviewed Halt about this, his response was that he couldn't be certain if he was contacted, *but admitted it was possible* (Bruni: *"You Can't Tell the People,"* p. 196).

In the radio interview he did with Jimmy Church in 2014, Charles Halt states the following:

> "I was not there, I was . . . uh, I'm not sure where I was. It was Christmas night . . . uh, I was at Conrad's house having dinner I think, or after dinner and gone on home."
>
> *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.*
> Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

However, in an email to Chuck Halt, dated December 29, 2018, Jim Penniston asked where he was on

the evening of December 25 to December 26. Halt wrote back immediately, writing:

> "The first night I was at home with the family. At that time I didn't visit any pubs. I was too busy on base. Chuck."

The question still remains, *was Halt called or notified of the incident before he came on duty?* And if so, *what time was this?*

Charles Halt has always said that he first heard about the incident when he came on duty at around 05:00 hrs on the morning of the 26th, and somewhere between 05:30 and 05:45 hrs. Halt then walked into the Law Enforcement Office on the Bentwaters base and was told what happened by the Law Enforcement desk officer, Sgt. 'Crash' McCabe.

Now, what is interesting about this is that if the incident had begun around 03:00 hrs, as was stated on the witness statements signed by Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler on January 2, 1981, which appears to have been based on the same '0300' time given in the handwritten statement by Burroughs on December 29, 1980, *then how is it that Lt. Col. Halt would still be out celebrating in Ipswich town when he was contacted on his radio about the incident, according to Bruni's source? Surely, Halt would not have been out celebrating with people in the town after 3:00 a.m.?*

Being the Deputy Base Commander, it is most-likely that Lt. Col. Halt would have been informed of the incident, and it is only logical that the time Halt had received the call, again if true, and when the incident was occurring, would have matched the time before, and/or just after 12:00 midnight when Halt would have still been celebrating in the town no doubt, and just after an object was tracked by radar over the Woodbridge base, and when it was decided by Wing Command that Jim Penniston lead the investigation out to Rendlesham Forest from the East Gate on the strength of this radar sighting. However, if the above is true, *then why would Lt. Col. Halt write the time of the incident beginning at 03:00 hrs in his memorandum?* Not only this, but Halt has the dates of the incidents wrong. The date of December 27 is given instead of December 26, 1980 and December 29 is given instead of December 28, 1980.

In a conversation with Halt on August 28, 1999, Georgina Bruni asked Charles Halt why he had given the wrong dates in his memorandum, and she writes that she was surprised to hear him explain that they were typing errors. Bruni adds that she found this explanation very difficult to accept, considering the nature of the memorandum and its destination (Bruni, p. 210).

[cxxxvi] Source: *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing) 2016.

[cxxxvii]

Especially Sgt. "Crash" McCabe, who would have found it extremely amusing that Burroughs was involved, seeing as he was often the butt of Burrough's jokes and pranks.

[cxxxviii] Sgt. McCabe told Lt. Col. Halt, that the call from Airman Burroughs came in "after midnight sometime." Again, this contradicts Burroughs' claim that the incident began around 3:00 a.m. As already mentioned, it is likely that the call was made around midnight or some minutes before, as Jim Penniston says he phoned CSC from the Chow Hall at Woodbridge, and the call ended at exactly two minutes past midnight. He remembers that distinctly having checked his watch as he got off the phone.

[cxxxix] Source: See *Colonel Charles Halt Speaks At OLM 2018, Hull, UK*, uploaded by Peter McGarry, September 7, 2018. After quoting/paraphrasing what Sgt. McCabe had told him, Col. Halt added that the negative responses from the radar personnel as relayed to McCabe after he checked with them and at this early stage in the incident were lies, but he didn't know that until later. However, the radar

sighting was confirmed later, as was told to SSgt. Penniston soon after he had arrived at the East Gate, that there had indeed been something flying over the area of Rendlesham and Woodbridge, and that this radar sighting was made fifteen minutes earlier. As already mentioned, this sudden change of attitude from denial that anything had been observed, to then a positive sighting of a flying object (bogey) that had been tracked but had then suddenly disappeared from the radar screens, was most likely due to the fact that Central Security Control, which had more authority than the Law Enforcement desk, had then checked with the radar towers after hearing from Sgt. McCabe about Burroughs and Steffens' sighting. Also, it would appear that Sgt. McCabe hadn't told Lt. Col. Halt that when he first received the call from Burroughs, he didn't believe him at first and had to ask that his senior, SSgt. Budd Steffens, take the phone so Steffens could confirm what Burroughs was saying and what was actually being witnessed.
[cxl]

Note by Jim Penniston:
The truth is, Lt. Col. Halt ordered Sgt. McCabe to do this with the LE blotters, not knowing it was really a 'Security' situation. Halt did not know that operational control of the incident had clearly rest with Security, and so the report and supporting paperwork – for example a handwritten report on an AF 1569 form (Incident and Complaint Report) – was required to be in the 'Security' blotters only. Again, an account of what had happened had been completed by the security controllers at CSC, as I had personally seen and read it while at CSC when I got back after the incident.

The fact is the Law Enforcement desk would have only been in charge of the incident until my first arrival at East Gate . . . then it was a 'Security' problem and no longer a Law Enforcement desk role. You could say that Col. Halt had compromised our security police protocols on command responsibility by ordering the report to be placed in the Law Enforcement blotter.

[cxli] In Col. Charles I. Halt's own words:

> "The desk sergeant on that morning was Staff Sergeant 'Crash' McCabe. We called him 'Crash' for a very good reason – that's why he was on the 'Desk', instead of a patrol car. He said, 'Colonel, you're not going to believe this. Burroughs, Penniston, and Bustinza, were out in the woods last night, chasing a UFO'. I said, 'What?' We both had a chuckle. I said, 'Now, be more specific'. He replied, 'Well, the Lieutenant said (the Lieutenant being the Flight Commander for the evening, or that early morning shift) he didn't put it in the blotter'. I said, 'What happened? You got to put something in the blotter'. He said, 'I know they saw some lights, and something happened out there, and they think they saw something.'
>
> I knew Jim Penniston was very credible . . . John Burroughs probably so. I didn't know Bustinza, so I said, 'Well, why don't you just put in the blotter that they saw some lights in the forest', and, uh, I got a chuckle out of it and didn't think too much about it.
>
> I picked up the blotters and went up to the office and read through them. Didn't see anything else too exciting in there, shared them with my boss, and we kind of had a chuckle – 'UFOs in the woods, oh great' – and didn't think too much more about it."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing) 2016.

It is noteworthy that Halt states that Burroughs is "probably" credible, as if he isn't sure. Secondly, SSgt. Adrian Bustinza was not there on the first night's events but was present on the third night's events involving Lt. Col. Halt (see Chapter 6: *"It's back"*), so this is either a mistake made by Halt via confused memory, or the mistake of his co-author John Hanson in his quoting of Halt for the book. Thirdly, it's not made clear who the "boss" is that Halt refers to, but this person was most likely Halt's direct superior, Base Commander, Colonel Ted Conrad, who was briefed about the incident that same morning.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "Everybody at the senior office . . . we got together every morning and had what they call stand-up after we sat down, but anyway it was a short meeting of all the senior officers on the base. We went over the day's activities, the previous activities and all what's going on etc. And everybody kind of snickered, and we laughed, you know, 'Yeah UFO in the forest, ha, ha, ha.' Didn't think much about it, but when I went back to the office I suddenly realized after spending some time on the base – and all the cops were looking at the sky and they're all looking for UFOs, you know, rumors on a base like that just go crazy. But I've kind of just brushed it off a bit until what happened the following night."
>
> *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published, January 11, 2017.

In an interview with Dr. David Clarke, in January 2010, the former Base Commander, Theodore (Ted) Conrad, is quoted as having stated the following:

> "I can only speculate what went on in the SP [Security Police] squadron during the day [that followed, i.e. 26 December]. There must have been some concern over what to do about the sighting in terms of investigation and reporting. I believe the SP's decided to keep everything low key, this being indicated by a change to the blotter entry concerning that early morning time frame. In any event, no notification or report was made to anyone above Major Malcolm Zickler, SP Squadron Commander, until late that evening."
>
> "By the morning of [27 December 1980] I contacted Maj Zickler for information of the alleged sighting. His information was all second hand and sketchy. Those with first hand accounts were citing career concerns as justification for remaining silent."

New Light on Rendlesham by Dr, David Clarke, from *The Rendlesham Files,* copyright 2011.

[cxlii] For a full summary on the subject of *Project Blue Book,* see National Archives (Military Records) *Project Blue Book – Unidentified Flying Objects*.

It is interesting that in early 1981, and because Captain Verrano had mentioned 'Project Blue Book,' which was supposedly terminated in 1969, Jim Penniston had purchased the pocket paperback version of *Project Blue Book* by Brad Steiger, published in 1976. The subtitle is: *After Nearly Thirty Years the Air Force Files Are Open – The UFO Whitewash Is Over!*

And what is even more interesting is that Jim had seen this book while visiting the base bookstore and thought it could answer some questions, or perhaps even offer up a similar incident. Jim has the paperback to this day, and it has his name "SSgt Penniston" in pencil (written in 1982) just inside the cover and at the top of the first page where the title, *WE NOW HAVE THE ANSWERS,* is displayed.

[cxliii] We are to assume that Burroughs had confirmed what Captain Mike Verrano had told him and SSgt. Penniston in this quote where Burroughs paraphrases Capt. Verrano, and which is from the 2016 book, The Halt Perspective. We say 'assume' because there is no reference or source for the quote given in the book.

> Burroughs:
> "It is best you keep quiet about what you have just seen. You saw something. Heathrow tower confirms you saw something. You should go out and look for some physical proof of what happened."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cxliv] Major Edward Drury was deputy Squadron Commander to the 81st Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcom Zickler, who oversaw the Security for the twin bases. During the late '90s, the late investigative journalist and author, Georgina Bruni, was able to track down Edward Drury and interview him for her book, "You Can't Tell the People," published in November 2001.

Ed Drury told Georgina that although he was not technically on duty (being Christmas), he was on the base the morning of the incident. He added that personnel would have their radios with them even when not on duty. He said that the reason why he was on the base was because he was awakened by a call on his radio and briefed by the on-duty Flight Security Officer, Lieutenant 'Skip' Buran about a strange incident happening just off base and in the Rendlesham forest. Lt. Buran also notified Major Zickler and Colonel Conrad, the Base Commander.

In an email to Jim Penniston, dated Wednesday, April 4, 2012 10:27 a.m., David Coffey (a former SSgt), who was the Senior Central Security Controller, during December 1980, wrote:

> "We did wake up the Security Police Squadron Commander (Maj Drury I think) and the Base Commander [Col. Conrad]."

Major Drury was the Deputy Security Police Squadron Commander, but as mentioned, Lt. Buran notified Major Drury's boss, Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler through SSgt. David Coffey. When Drury got to the base, there was some talk of it being a UFO, and he thought it might be a joke or prank as it was Christmas. Drury says that later he was in the Shift Commander's office:

> "Although Drury was not technically on duty, he had been contacted on his radio earlier that night and was in the shift commander's office when Jim Penniston and John Burroughs were being debriefed. Drury expressed his opinions: 'I read their statements. It was normal procedure to take statements if something unusual happened. What I noticed from them was that they were very serious. I got right in their face. "No sir," they said, "we are serious"."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

The Shift Commander would have been Capt. Verrano at the time when Jim Penniston and John Burroughs were being debriefed. However, Jim Penniston does not remember Major Drury being present in Capt. Verrano's office. It is possible that when Georgina Bruni writes that Drury was in the shift commander's office when Penniston and Burroughs were being debriefed, Drury could have been in the office of the former Night Shift Commander Lt. Buran, who had left to go on leave after his shift ended at 07:00 hours and was looking through the witness statements gathered by Buran that morning. (When his shift ended after the incident, Buran had left the UK for a short vacation in the States.)

Ed Drury then told Georgina that he had read "their" statements, and this is quoted by Georgina in the context of Drury saying that he was in the office when Penniston and Burroughs were present – leading one to assume he had read the statements written by SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs. Although, when he says, "their statements" it's really not clear as to whose statements he was referring to, as it is later that Drury is quoted in Georgina's book as saying that he had read a pile of statements while in the office that morning. (See Note 149 below.) This point is emphasized here, as again, Jim Penniston says that there is just no way he and Burroughs wrote statements on this day. Drury continues, saying that it was not normal procedure to take statements if something unusual happened, adding: "What I noticed from them was that they were very serious. I got right in their face. "No sir," they said, "we are serious"."

Again, what Drury says is placed in the context of him being in Captain Verrano's office when Penniston and Burroughs were there being debriefed by Captain Verrano, one would assume, because Captain Verrano was sitting in for Lt. Buran as Shift Commander. However, Jim Penniston does not recall anything of what Drury had said to Georgina, and states that this did not happen, adding that Drury wasn't even there in the office as he remembers. As mentioned, this can only mean that Drury was in the office of Lt. Buran – the Shift Commander during the incident, and looking at the witness statements there. When Georgina asked Edward Drury what had become of the statements, he replied that her question was a good point, as he had originally thought the men were joking and were getting their own back, because he had recently put them through "some pretty heavy exercises" (Bruni, "You Can't Tell the People" p. 222).

Drury is obviously implying that, with the so-called statements about a UFO incident, the men were playing a joke and getting their own back on him personally, and it is interesting that he states that he "got right in their face," as if he wanted to express the power he had at the time. In effect, Drury had made it all about him, and so what he says in his interview with Georgina cannot be trusted – especially when Jim Penniston says that none of what Drury is claiming here had actually taken place – especially the part where Drury talks about getting "right in their face." Or if it did, then it may have involved other witnesses, especially as Drury had said that he had read through a pile of witness statements. (Again, see Note 149 below.)

[cxlv] The time that Jim Penniston says he and Burroughs had entered the landing site on the morning of

the 26th was confirmed by Burroughs in the interview he did with Jimmy Church on January 23, 2019. Jim Penniston's time – i.e., 8:20 a.m., is within the half-hour time-window that Burroughs remembered arriving at, or being at the site:

"It would have been about I think, like, oh, eight o'clock or eight thirty in the morning on the twenty sixth."

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on Fade to Black
(Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

[cxlvi] In 1991, Burroughs was filmed for the US TV documentary Unsolved Mysteries, where he mentions his conscious memory of having seen the physical evidence of a craft having sat down at the landing site.

> "I was hoping when I got out there that basically I would see nothing. There would be no tell-tale evidence that possibly something happened. That would make it easier for me, because if there's nothing proving that something happened to me, you can just kinda check it off. But when you get out there and you find damage to the trees, impressions in the ground and stuff, that makes it even more unexplainable" [. . .] "It was more of a mystery, because when I first saw it I didn't perceive it as something sitting on the ground with tripod like, a tripod type thing. Now all of a sudden there's physical proof showing that something sat down in that area."

John Burroughs being interviewed on Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO,"
Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack. September 18, 1991.

[cxlvii] See: *Could Light Behave As A Solid? A New Theory*, University of Melbourne, May 7, 2007; *What if photons actually have mass? Galileo's Pendulum*, a science blog by Mathew Francis. Published July 26, 2013; *Turning Light into Matter May Soon Be Possible*, by Charles Q. Choi, *Live Science*, May 19, 2014; *'Solid' light could compute previously unsolvable problems,* Princeton University, September 9, 2014, and *Scientists Say They've Created a Freaky New Form of Light* by David Freeman. SCIENCE, *Huffington Post,* September 16, 2014.

Furthermore, quote: *"In test, a laser beam fired into an extremely cold cloud of rubidium slowed down the photons and made them act as a single entity."* Source: *Attractive photons in a quantum nonlinear medium,* Nature, 25 September 2013. See also: *"Solid Light' Made from Photons."* Discovery News, 27 September 2013.

On November 16, 2017, it was claimed that an OSI report on the Rendlesham case, over 150 pages long and classified top secret, had been read and studied by retired AFOSI officer and special agent, Richard Doty in 1984. Doty claims that the case file in the OSI report said that there were four possible landing sites found in the forest outside the Woodbridge base. It is indeed possible that the triangular craft that SSgt. Penniston encountered had landed at other locations in the forest prior to the investigation, but aside from these reported authentic sites, there is circumstantial evidence and witness reports that fake sites had also been created to cause confusion for any potential civilian investigators.

In any case, Doty mentions that laboratory analysis of the plants, soil and tree barks collected at these landing sites in the forest revealed some odd anomalies (see Note 420). He claims that the report

said that the tree barks that had strange markings on them had been mutated by some type of energy; *that the molecular structure of the bark was changed and it wasn't known how this was done.* But more importantly, in the context of this note, Doty also claims that one of the scientists or agriculture specialists had said in the report that it might have been done by high-energy or maybe a laser, and that the soil when analyzed contained burnt soil, the scientist adding that it takes a lot to burn soil but there were microscopic evidences that the soil was subjected to intense heat or energy. (Source: *Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs Interview Retired AS-OSI Officer Richard Doty*. KGRA Radio 11/16/2017).

It should perhaps be noted that Richard (Rick) Doty is a self-claimed government UFO disinformation agent who used to work as an AFOSI officer in Kirtland Air Force Base in Albuquerque, New Mexico. It is alleged that Richard Doty was part of an operation to feed disinformation to UFO researcher and experiencer, Paul Bennewitz, which eventually caused the latter's mental deterioration and paranoia, to the point of hospitalization. Bennewitz died in 2003. Doty's claim was that he was part of the governmental ploy to detract attention away from Bennewitz's interest in pursuing military research projects such as Project Starfire within the Kirtland Air Force Base. Of course, it ended up with Bennewitz's misinterpretation of what he witnessed there.

In view of this, there is no proof that the OSI report or case file on the Rendlesham Incident exists, and all we have is Richard Doty's word that it exists and that he read it. Also, the timing of Doty offering this information to John Burroughs and Linda Moulton Howe is curious when noting the people that Burroughs has associated himself with over the last five years.

However, it is interesting that Richard Doty claims to have seen it written that the soil at the sites, which would obviously include the site where Penniston and Burroughs encountered the craft, was subjected to intense heat, as made by a laser, because this fits exactly what Penniston describes with the three landing struts or legs of the triangular craft he encountered and examined up-close, which he says were each constructed of light.

[cxlviii] What Jim Penniston describes here as large diameter, laser beams of light holding up the craft he had examined up-close, is virtually identical as to what was described as observed during the early-morning hours of the third night's events less than 24 hours later (December 27/28, 1980). Again, large diameter beams of light were seen being directed down to the ground by lighted objects/crafts. (See Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*).
[cxlix]

Returning to the interview Edward Drury (Major) did with Georgina Bruni.

Georgina Bruni quoting Major Drury:

> "There was a pile of them because I recall going through them. On reading the statements I understood that it wasn't very big [the object] but it was bigger than a mini. There were marks on the trees, quite high up and someone said they'd walked up to it [the object] and it had left depressions. I went out during the day and saw the marks on the trees and the ground depressions, which weren't that deep, well defined and I suggested we send someone out there to do some readings [Geiger counter readings]."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001) p. 222.

SSgt. Jim Penniston and Airman John Burroughs had been verbally debriefed by Captain Mike Verrano in his office, and again, according to Penniston and Burroughs, no written witness statements had been taken from them at this stage, so the statements Drury said he went through were most likely those of other witnesses who have not been named and whose statements had been sequestered away somewhere, as there is no record of them and no record of how many witnesses had written statements about the incident. Jim Penniston is of the opinion that these other witnesses could have been some of the 80 or so witnesses who had been on the bases and had observed what was going on and had seen the craft take off. It is possible that the flight commander and night shift commander, Lt. Buran, had ordered that these statements be made before he went off duty for his Christmas break, leaving Capt. Verrano to take over, which concords with the view that Lt. Drury was reading the witness statements left in Buran's office. Also, we are not told whether these statements were written in the Shift Commander's office, only that Major Drury was in the office at the time the statements were being written. These statements were obviously written on the morning of December 26, 1980, just hours after the incident, and it's likely that Drury was looking through the statements, either as they came in while being written, or after they were written.

According to what Georgina was told during her interview with Drury, it was after reading the statements with the confirmation that the object/bogey had been briefly tracked on radar from the Bentwaters Command Post that Drury then realized that something very unusual had occurred and started asking questions around the base. He decided to contact the Bentwaters Command Post, whose personnel had confirmed that they had picked up something flying over the area that night on radar. Drury then called RAF Bawdsey, whose personnel validated that they too had tracked something on radar.

Another point: If Major Drury had walked out to the landing site with Captain Mike Verrano and MSgt. Ray Gulyas on the same day he went through the statements – i.e., December 26, 1980 – as Jim Penniston states in his account and which was later substantiated by Burroughs, both of whom say they met the officers in the forest to view the landing site, then it is not clear HOW, on the same day and before he went out to the forest, that Major Drury could have known details about where the landing site was, the size of the "object" . . . how it had left marks on the trees and depressions on the ground, and that one of them "walked up to it," (the craft), which could only have been SSgt. Penniston. Again, SSgt. Penniston and Burroughs had not written any statements at this time – especially including the details which were given in the quote above by Edward Drury. The two men had only been verbally debriefed that morning by Captain Mike Verrano. The only answer is that Drury did not read any statements written by Penniston and Burroughs, as he recalled it, but instead had read the statements written by other witnesses and listened to what Captain Verrano may have passed onto him on what little Penniston had said during the debrief. This is also possibly how Lt. Col. Halt had also got the information about the dimensions of the triangular craft Jim Penniston had seen the first night for the memorandum Halt wrote and sent to the MOD, dated January 13, 1981.

As for how they knew where the landing site was, it was while in the field and after exiting the Jeep at the end of the logging road that SSgt. Jim Penniston had given CSC the grid coordinates for the Entry Control Point where the Jeep was parked, and so it is possible that the officers had used Jim Penniston's information to find the landing site that day. There is another possibility. Apparently, it was said that an A-10 plane had flown over the Forest during dawn that same day and picked up infra-red radiation, pouring from the site where SSgt. Jim Penniston had witnessed the craft in the clearing, and so the coordinates of this radiated area were possibly plotted to accurately pinpoint the landing site. Also, it should be mentioned that the Base Commander, Colonel Ted Conrad had also gone out to the landing site that day, likely also accompanied by Lieutenant Bruce Englund, and that both had met up with Major Drury, Captain Mike Verrano, and MSgt. Gulyas. And it should be mentioned that SSgt. Dave Coffey was also at the landing site at this time, as he had stated in his email sent to Jim Penniston on April 4, 2012. (See Note 159 below.)

[cl] Burroughs' initial shock when finally seeing the evidence in daylight – i.e., *that a physical craft had clearly landed and that it was triangular in shape* – is also evident with what he says here during the first hypnosis session Burroughs undertook in 1988:

> "I had a feeling of disbelief. I didn't know what happened. I wanted to make sure in my mind that there had to be physical proof out there where the site was to make me believe what I saw. So, we went. I went out there with the rest of them, and when we got there, there was the Sergeant Gulyas, Captain Verrano, and some other guys out there that I don't know who they were. And we were asked to show what happened, and we went out, kind of in the area where we first found these things, and god-darn it, there were tripods. There were three evenly-spaced impressions in the ground? Right where we saw . . . this light! And I'm like, *"Holy Jesus!"* And we're all looking at each other, and we're going . . . *maybe we were not weirdos* . . . *maybe something really did happen out there.* And then we went, and there were tree limbs down. There were fresh tree limbs down, and there was some damage to the trees! And I, by then, I'm going like, *"Oh my goodness."* Well, I'm going to myself, and sergeant Penniston *"Something happened. Oh god, I wish we could have recorded this. I wish, I wish we were had more than just what we had there." "I do too John."* [quoting Jim Penniston].*"We just experienced something probably that a lot of people never have and never will."*
>
> See *Update to Bentwaters Sighting*, lecture by Linda Moulton Howe. Posted December 30, 2012, starting from the 25:00-minute mark, *YouTube* [Video file].

Burroughs knows that he saw with his own eyes, clear, undeniable evidence that a physical, triangular craft – as described by Jim Penniston – had landed in the woods. However, in recent years Burroughs has been inclined to ignore or sidestep the fact that he saw this evidence and will instead press the point that on the night in question all he saw was lights . . . *as if that's all it ever really was.* (See Notes 104 and 105).

Burroughs will stress this point, while at the same time calling into question Jim Penniston's testimony, that Jim had examined this triangular craft up-close, and all the while Burroughs himself was most likely unconscious during the 45 minutes of missing time, not only according to Jim Penniston's quartz digital wristwatch, but also from his own digital wristwatch – a fact which Burroughs had admitted to Jim, when both he and Jim had met up again in 2009.

[cli] This chronology of events is offered in Georgina Bruni's book, *"You Can't Tell The People"* (2001). After interviewing Edward Cabansag in 1999 for the book she was researching, Georgina quotes Ed Cabansag extensively. Ed Cabansag told Georgina that he had been summoned to Lt. Col. Halt's office on the morning of December 26, 1980 . . . the same morning of the incident and a few hours after he had gone off duty. Georgina writes that this *"being the case it means that Halt was involved in the*

debriefings from day one" (Bruni, p. 185).

Ed Cabansag also says that after he had been summoned to Halt's office (and he was most likely given a certain time to be there), he had taken a shower, and it was in the shower rooms that his colleagues advised he should go along with whatever he was told, and he won't get into trouble.

[cliii] Penniston and Burroughs had instead taken a three-day break, which began from the time their shift ended earlier that morning (Friday, December 26), to when their shift would begin again (Monday, December 29) – although Jim Penniston was ordered to report to the AFOSI building at 09.00 hrs on Monday, December 29, 1980 for a debriefing. (See Chapter 9: *Afterburn.*)

The three-day break is supported by what Burroughs has stated:

> "Well, Friday, Saturday, Sunday, was our days of break. When I came back to duty on Monday . . ."
>
> John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.

[cliii] Edward Cabansag quoted by Georgina Bruni:

> "I don't remember talking to Halt, I remember sitting in his office in fear of Halt. I was fresh from school."
>
> "You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

[cliv] Edward Cabansag quoted by Georgina Bruni:

> "The only thing that I signed was for Colonel Halt. I didn't type anything out. Maybe someone else did it and asked me to sign it. Besides, I couldn't type, I had never used a typewriter before. I don't even remember what I signed. I was so nervous, I just signed it."
>
> "You Can't Tell the People:" The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

Ed Cabansag was a youngster fresh out of training school, and so Georgina Bruni reasoned that because after only a few days of being on duty the Airman was facing a Lieutenant Colonel who also happened to be the Deputy Base Commander, one can understand how nervous he must have been and why he didn't read the document beforehand and just signed it. He knew that he had been notably unlucky to be involved in a UFO incident which he knew was embarrassing to the USAF, and so soon after being posted to duty, that he would do anything that was asked of him to stay out of trouble.

[clv] Source: *"You Can't Tell the People:" The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001). p. 227.

The statement Airman Cabansag signed that morning gave an account of what he had supposedly experienced from his own personal perspective. This suggests that Cabansag had already been

debriefed by someone, somewhere, for the account in the statement, which he signed as his own, to have been put together and typed-up – unless it was constructed from other witness accounts. However, SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs, who went out to investigate the strange lights in the forest with A1C Cabansag in tow, had not written any statements that could have been accessed and drawn from at this early stage; the two first responders of the incident had only been verbally debriefed by Captain Verrano that same morning.

One wonders how the account in the witness statement attributed to and signed by Edward N. Cabansag, A1C, USAF 81st Security Police Sq, which detailed what happened and from his unique perspective, was put together at such short notice – unless it was a reworked statement of what Cabansag had already divulged or had been told to write, as Jim Penniston had long speculated.

One is also faced with the question . . . *in what capacity was Lt. Col. Halt associated with this?*

Georgina Bruni writes:

> "Most Security Police and Law Enforcement personnel, especially new recruits, would not expect to have an audience with a commander of Halt's status. The highest-ranking officer who would have interviewed them under normal circumstances would probably have been Major Malcolm Zickler"
>
> "You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001). p. 186.

It is true that the 81st Security Police and Law Enforcement Squadron, Major Malcolm F. Zickler (later Lieutenant Colonel), was subordinate in rank to the Deputy Base Commander, Lieutenant Colonel I Halt, but if anyone would have debriefed Airman Cabansag, it would have been Zickler. It had been stated by Major Drury that Lt. Buran had notified Zickler and Col. Conrad of the incident during its early stages, and so Zickler was already aware of what had happened. However, now Halt was aware, and had been since he walked up to the Law Enforcement desk that morning and was told by Sgt/ McCabe about the incident earlier that morning, he then took matters into his own hands, and perhaps because of his own personal interests. Yet, some questions need to be asked, and, logically, one would immediately try to determine if Halt knew that Cabansag was signing a statement which had not been prepared by Cabansag and had been typed by someone else.

Was the statement given to Cabansag while he was in Halt's office? Or, *was Cabansag given the statement before he went in to Col. Halt's office to sign it in Halt's presence and then leave it with him?*

It is possible that Cabansag had already been debriefed by someone, somewhere, before he was summoned by Lt. Col. Halt, the Deputy Base Commander, to his office to then be debriefed by him on what happened that morning. If so, then before he went in to see Halt, it's possible that he was given the statement that had been typed up by someone else based on what Cabansag had said or had divulged to others: which means Airman Cabansag wouldn't have had to write or type up anything, only write his signature on the statement he took into Lt. Col. Halt's office and in Halt's presence. If Halt had no knowledge that Cabansag had already been debriefed, he would have assumed that Cabansag – knowing that he was going to be debriefed in Halt's office – had already typed up a statement and signed it in front of him, which is possibly why Halt wasn't that perturbed by the fact that the young Airman didn't say anything . . . it was all in the statement.

Georgina Bruni:

> "Halt suggested, but could not be certain, that the witnesses

> may have had the statements with them when they turned up to see him because they were not typed in his office."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001). p. 147.

In her book, Georgina Bruni also emphasizes the point that Lt. Col. Halt's secretary, or anyone from Halt's office, could not have typed the witness statement signed by Airman Ed Cabansag, because apart from the bad spelling and typing errors, the typewriter used to type this statement was not as sophisticated as the one used to type out Halt's memorandum by his secretary over two weeks later on January 13, 1981. (See Chapter 10: *Containment.*) This means that the statement was prepared beforehand somewhere else and suggests that Airman Cabansag had it handed to him, and either he brought it with him into Lt. Col. Halt's office, or the statement was again prepared elsewhere and given to Halt to give to Cabansag to sign. Jim Penniston agrees:

> Note by Jim Penniston:
> The most likely answer is that Cabansag had perhaps already talked about what happened, or like me (see Chapter 9: *Afterburn*), he was told to prepare a handwritten a statement and that this was then taken from him. Again, like me, he was then given another statement which was a typed and reworked version of what he originally wrote, and in which certain things were edited out and other things added before entering Col. Halt's office. If true, then Cabansag was also told to sign that typed statement in the presence of Col. Halt before handing it to Halt. Or, Halt was already given the typed statement to hand to Cabansag to sign in front of him.

The next question is, if Airman Cabansag really was given another statement which was a reworked version of what he had already divulged verbally, or had written, and one which he was told to sign in the presence of Col Halt . . . *who was it who constructed this witness statement? Who typed it? And who gave it to Cabansag?* It should be remembered that Ed Cabansag has openly stated that he had nothing to do with constructing the statement he signed, *and that he didn't even know what it said, as he didn't read it.* Logically, suspicion falls on Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler, who was Cabansag's Security boss, and who was already pulling strings behind the scenes– something that Lt. Col. Halt had soon become aware of – to contain the incident in step with his duty as head of Security.

[clvi] In 1992, Colonel Charles I. Halt met with Larry Warren and Peter Robbins in Washington DC. Much of the conversation was recorded and published in their book *Left at East Gate* – the publication of which has now been suspended indefinitely. During the discussion, Col. Halt informed Warren and Robbins that the logs had all disappeared, but that he thought he knew where they went.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "I think a former member of the security police squadron has them. He retrieved them before somebody got them. Maybe even the security blotters too, which would be

more interesting to see than the law-enforcement blotters because the law-enforcement blotters are a very innocuous thing. It just said "lights." I'm saying the security blotter may have a lot more information in it. I tried to retrieve them later – they were gone."

Left at East Gate: A First-Hand Account of the Bentwaters/Woodbridge UFO Incident, Its Cover-up and Investigation by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins. (Da Capo Press, 1997.) p. 360.

Halt already knew what was included in the Law Enforcement blotters, as he had ordered Sgt. Crash McCabe to log what happened that morning in the blotters and advised him what to write in there and then read them. (See Note 139 above.)

[clvii] Quote:

"The blotters were never found, so right from the very outset we have not just a spectacular UFO encounter, but strong evidence of a conspiracy. Standard procedures were being ignored and evidence was somehow being removed from right under the noses of people for whom security was a way of life. It's difficult to see how the blotters and the incident report could have been spirited away without one of the key players being involved in some way. The alternative – that outsiders were somehow able to access the secure area and remove the material without attracting attention – is even more difficult to believe. Either way, this set the tone for what was to follow and led to a climate of suspicion and fear, with working relationships and friendships being stretched to the breaking point."

Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

[clviii] In an email to Jim Penniston on April 4, 2012, David Coffey wrote

". . . my Blotter was pulled and classified "SECRET" by the Base Commander,"

This quote by David Coffey from the email sent to Jim Penniston was also included in the book *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest.*

Again, the Base Commander was Colonel Ted Conrad, Lt. Col. Halt's superior. And if true, then it is possible that after having been intrigued by what Halt had shared with him – i.e., the AF1569 report about the incident from the Law Enforcement blotters, that to see for himself what was logged in them, Col. Conrad either hotfooted it over to CSC and took the Security blotters, or he sent someone to

retrieve them. He may have been the last person to see/read them, and the reason why the Law Enforcement and Security blotters haven't been seen since it was discovered they were missing by Halt, and why an investigation wasn't made into why they were missing, may indeed have something to do with the Base Commander, Colonel. Conrad, who was possibly working alongside the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler to contain the incident.

This must have been just after Airman Richard Bertolino had left the landing site and Capt. Verrano and MSgt. Gulyas were also leaving. During the *Earthfiles* interview with Linda Moulton Howe (September 2009), Richard Bertolino says that after the bus arrived at the dorm at the Bentwaters base, his shift was over. He says that, later, he changed into his civilian clothes and went out into the Rendlesham woods with a few other people where they saw several Security Police vehicles. This was most likely after Penniston and Burroughs had been there that day to show Captain Verrano and the other officers the landing site, as Bertolino says that Captain Verrano was there and he showed them a triangular shape on the ground with circular indentations. Using a Geiger counter, Capt. Verrano also showed them that there was a higher reading of radiation at the site and that the radiation peaked in the center of the triangular pattern. *Bertolino also states that he noticed broken limbs on the trees.*

Earthfiles interview, September 2009.

[clix] This must have been before the Base Commander, Colonel Conrad had arrived and most-likely with Lt. Bruce England, as it was stated by Col. Conrad himself in an interview he did with *OMNI Magazine* in 1983 that he had visited the landing site that morning some hours after the incident – although it would have been closer to mid-day in the afternoon. In the interview Ted Conrad did with Dr. David Clarke in January 2010, Conrad is quoted as having said the following, and here he says that he arrived AFTER two officers had showed up in the afternoon. There was in fact only one officer, PC Creswell, and its possible that Conrad was getting mixed up with the two PC's – Brophy and King – who had visited the site around 5:00 a.m.:

> "One possible exception: I seem to recall we notified the Suffolk constabulary of our desire to visit the scene and asked their permission to do so and also extended an invitation to have a look for themselves. I believe Maj. Zickler made this call. To the best of my memory, two officers did show up that afternoon and seemed unimpressed with the forest location. I missed seeing them. They came and went before I arrived."

New Light on Rendlesham by Dr, David Clarke, from *The Rendlesham Files,* copyright 2011.

[clx]

Apparently, after the first visit to the landing site, the officers, led by Major Drury, then went back to brief the Security Commander, Major Zickler, who then instructed the officers to return immediately and rendezvous with one of the British police officers, PC Brian Cresswell. So it is likely that Major Zickler had called the British police constabulary, as-per Col. Conrad's comments that he did. (See quote in Note 34 above). However, in the email sent to Jim Penniston dated, Wednesday, April 4, 2012, David Coffey the Senior Central Security Controller, during December 1980, wrote:

> "After shift I was asked to accompany the Security Police Commander, [Major Zickler] the Base Commander [Col. Conrad] and unfortunately I forget

who else to the site where they found the impressions in the ground and took concrete samples. Maj. Drury also tried to talk to a local farmer he saw in the area, but that individual had not seen a thing."

It is possible though that David Coffey has Major Drury, who was the Deputy Security Police Squadron Commander, mixed up with the Security Police Squadron Commander Major Zickler, as he had in another paragraph in the same email. So, Major Zickler may not have been at the landing site. But the revelation that both SSgt. David Coffey and Colonel Conrad, the Base Commander, had also been present at the landing site that day after his shift had ended, and its possible this was sometime after his shift had ended, is an interesting one. To our knowledge, these details have remained unknown to the researchers and investigators of the RFI until now.

In any case, the police were concerned that they may have missed some evidence in the dark earlier that morning when PC Dave King and PC Martin Brophy had been called out after a call was made to the local Suffolk Constabulary from the Bentwaters base at 4:11 a.m. The police report, which was written after that first call out and visit by the police said that nothing had been found or reported.

This return to the forest by the USAF officers (Major Drury and MSgt. Gulyas) with the British police constable coincided with the time that SSgt. Penniston was just leaving the site after making plaster casts of the three depressions in the ground made by the landing pods of the craft. This was sometime after 10:30 a.m., when the police were called again – hence PC Cresswell also being there. The time they arrived was most likely around 11:30 a.m. Major Drury told SSgt. Penniston that he was now leading the investigation on orders issued by the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler, and that his part in this was over and to go home.

Note by Jim Penniston:
Because of the complicated legal and jurisdictional position of the United States Air Force bases in the UK, it was later that same day, at 10:30 a.m., that the Suffolk Police Constabulary was called again. A police constable (PC Cresswell) went out to the landing site again with Major Drury and MSgt. Ray Gulyas, and all three were walking into the forest to the landing site while I was returning from there having just made plaster casts of the three depressions. I was lucky they arrived after I had taken plaster casts of the impressions. So, it could be said that the British police also assisted in the investigations. Unlike the report given earlier when nothing could be found in the forest, it was then that the police had reported confirmation that a landing site had been located. Like Burroughs and me, the constable that was sent out there the second time, found that the tops and branches of some of the pine trees in the area had been broken or severed and had deep cuts and scorch marks in the bark of their trunks.

However, even in view of the fact that the three depressions in the ground formed a perfect equilateral triangle with sides of precisely 9.8 feet, so I was told, the policeman who was with the officers (again, PC Cresswell), didn't believe in UFOs, and had said that because UFOs didn't exist, he would put in his report

> that the depressions had been caused by animals burrowing. Others have since stated they were most likely rabbit holes. I found those explanations totally absurd. After all, the forest floor was frozen, and it would have been impossible for anything to dig into the ground – not alone a small animal – and especially taking into consideration the fact that: 1) all three depressions were identical, 2) each of the edges of these depressions were perfectly round, and 3) all were at the same depth at the center – each of the depressions having a conic shape with the deepest point at the center.

See here, letter dated "23 November 1983," from the Suffolk police to amateur astronomer and skeptical Rendlesham researcher, Ian Ridpath. Note that PC Cresswell had reported the three indentations to be in an "indeterminate pattern," even though the truth is that the three indentations were equally spaced, forming an equilateral triangle. The indentations were also reported as apparently having no depth and could have been made by an animal.

After SSgt. Penniston had left, it is said that Captain Mike Verrano also returned to the forest, and while there, MSgt. Ray Gulyas used up a roll of film taking photographs of the site and handed the roll of film to Captain Verrano, who later had them developed at the Photo Lab. As was Jim Penniston's experience, Capt. Verrano was later told that the photographs had come out fogged. Verrano then passed this information onto MSgt. Gulyas. Apparently, according to Gulyas himself, he returned to the site 48 hours later to take his own photographs, and it is a strange thing, that like SSgt. Penniston, MSgt. Gulyas by his own initiative, decided to bring some Plaster of Paris along to make casts of the indentations in the ground. In the late '90s, Gulyas later told investigator and researcher Georgina Bruni that instead of having the roll of film developed by Verrano or the photo lab on the base, that in early January 1981, he handed the film over to his friend Richard Nunn to develop. His friend processed six photographs and gave them back to Gulyas. Although the quality was poor through being only *slightly* fogged this time, the images that Gulyas set out to capture were clearly there.

> Note by Jim Penniston:
> I had heard that MSgt. Gulyas had also measured the cuts and abrasions in the trunks beginning at five feet high. I also heard that before the incident involving UAP phenomena took place on the 'third night,' radiation readings were taken within and around the landing area and also over the three soil depressions on the night that Lt. Col. Halt had gone out to the landing site [with SSgt. Monroe Nevels], and I was told that the readings at the center of the depressions were high and gave a dosage equivalent to five to ten X-Rays.

It was much later when the cover-up had been initiated, that rumors existed of the deliberate manufacture of 'evidence' in the forest to create other landing sites to confuse investigators and researchers. Burroughs himself said that Col. Halt had said as much in various interviews. Apparently, a catering-sized coffee tin was used to create indentations in the ground.

At the Rendlesham conference, Woodbridge Community Hall on May 19, 2018, Rendlesham researcher Ronnie Dugdale, who was one of the speakers that day, along with John Burroughs, stated: *"I know some airmen were sent out there with a coffee can to make some indentations, even scratching an arrow pointing this way to the UFO."* (See Note 443).

If different landing sites had been created by making indentations in the ground with a coffee tin, then this would also account for all the inconsistent reports regarding the measured distances between the three indentations at the supposed 'landing site.' Apparently, although the initial report said that the distance between the depressions in the ground were 9.8 feet, which correlated with Jim Penniston's measurements, it was later that MSgt. Ray Gulyas, whose job it would be to take measurements and photographs at the landing site, had said that the distance was 12 feet from the center of one depression to the center of another. According to researcher Ronnie Dugdale, other measurements that turned up in the reports, were four to five feet between any two of the three depressions, and even 17 feet, which is almost twice the nine-feet distance that Jim Penniston had measured by pacing the side of the craft during the incident, and virtually the same distance he had measured later that day.

[clxi] Not in full possession of the facts and neither checking the distances between certain locations, various skeptics have simply assumed things and relayed them as fact to their audience in their attempts to discredit Jim Penniston on his accounting of the incident and what took place afterwards – especially what he says happened on the day following the events. Here's an example from a skeptic who leads a discussion thread about the Rendlesham Incident on the ATS ('Above Top Secret' website) and posts under the pseudonym *"Irrageman:"*

> ". . . the timing of it all is very tight. He [Jim Penniston] somehow managed to get home after going out in daylight on Boxing Day at the end of his shift to the 'landing site' and then driving 20 miles home to Ipswich, obtaining plaster, rushing back to the forest, filling the landing marks and then waiting for them to set totally inconspicuously and before the British Police arrived at 10:30 seem rather incredible. Even on a bright clear day sun up is not until about 8:15 on Boxing Day in the UK."
>
> "Irrageman." Posted on the online ATS website forum, *Rendlesham Forest…, A Christmas Story from 1980 - Can We 'Let it Be'?*
> Page 168, August 30, 2017.

Fact: the B1084 driving route from Jim Penniston's home in Blenheim Road, Ipswich, to the east end of the logging road in Rendlesham Forest, is NOT 20 miles, it is 15 miles and takes roughly 20 to 30 minutes.

Fact: from Thompson Drive at Bentwaters base to the east end of the logging road is 5 miles, a 10-minute drive.

It is highly unlikely that the British policeman PC Cresswell had arrived at the forest at exactly 10:30 a.m., seeing as the call to the Suffolk Constabulary was made at 10:30 a.m. One has to allow for the time it took him to prepare and schedule a meeting time and place with the USAF officers, and then drive to the forest before arriving at the logging road where Jim Penniston had parked. It is not sure where PC Creswell would have started his journey from, but the Suffolk Constabulary at Martlesham Heath, Ipswich is a 10-mile drive, taking roughly 20 minutes. Also, Jim Penniston remembers meeting the officers around 11:30 a.m., right where he was parked at the logging road and just when he was about to drive home.

From the eastern end of the logging road keeping on a straight line due east to the 'landing site,' determined by the marks on the trees and the three depressions that were found and examined, (coordinates: 52º5'10.78"N 1º27'0.03"E), is a distance of 930 yards (850 meters) – roughly a 10-minute walk.

Although it doesn't apply here, from Jim Penniston's home in Blenheim Road, Ipswich, to Thompson Drive, which is where CSC was located on the Bentwaters base and driving the A1152 route is 14.6 miles, taking roughly 30 minutes.

So, the timeline that morning after Burroughs' shift ended at 7:00 a.m., is this (all morning times):

7:20: Penniston and Burroughs are debriefed by Captain Verrano.

7:50: Penniston and Burroughs leave *Thompson Drive* at Bentwaters base just as the sun is coming up (Sunrise on December 26, 1980: 8:03 a.m.), and from there drive 5 miles to the east end of the logging road, taking roughly 10 minutes. They then walk the estimated 930 yards (850 meters) into the forest (taking roughly 20 minutes to find the landing site).

8:20: They inspect the site on their own for 10 minutes and then remain at the site with the officers for another 10 minutes discussing the evidence. (See end of Note 25, above.)

8:40: Penniston and Burroughs leave the landing site (10-minute walk) and drive 15 miles to Jim Penniston's home at Blenheim Road, Ipswich, taking roughly 30 minutes.

9:20: Penniston and Burroughs arrive at Jim Penniston's home. Burroughs soon leaves to go home, and Jim takes a quick shower, puts on fresh clothes, and has a coffee.

9:45: Penniston leaves his house to see his friend who lives at the end of his road about making plaster casts.

10:05: With the mixture of Plaster of Paris in his knapsack, Penniston notes the time he leaves his house to drive to the logging road in Rendlesham Forest as 10:05 a.m. The 15-mile drive to the logging road again takes roughly 30 minutes, and Penniston takes 10 minutes walking from the end of the logging road to the landing site.

10:45: Penniston begins to make plaster casts of the three depressions, which takes 30 to 40 minutes, and although the casts are barely dry, he packs them in polythene bags, and then takes 10 minutes walking back to the end of the logging road.

11:30: Penniston is about to drive back to Ipswich when Major Drury, MSgt Gulyas, and PC Brian Cresswell arrive on their way to the landing site. Penniston accompanies them, and the men arrive at the landing site at around 11:45 p.m. After some discussion taking some 25 minutes, Penniston walks back to his car and drives back to Ipswich, arriving home at around 12:50 p.m., as he had noted.

[clxii] As already noted in Note 55, there has been some confusion surrounding this entry of the "27 Dec 80," which Jim Penniston claims he wrote down on the morning of December 27, 1980 – the morning after the incident and on a page just before he wrote down the string of ones and zeros.

Firstly, for some time, and since Rendlesham skeptic Ian Ridpath first brought attention to it, the date of "29 Dec 80," which was written at the top of the same notebook page that also contained details of what Jim had written while at the East Gate was the date of a flight exercise. Jim maintains that this date had nothing to do with the date of the incident. These were only jotted down notes in a notebook, and there was no order to them.

Jim Penniston didn't write down the date of the incident. When he opened the book again on that page to write what was occurring while at the East Gate, he forgot that the date at the top of the page was of a flight exercise he had logged hours earlier (see Chapter 1: *Normal was the Beginning*), and thinking he had already written down the date of that morning, he began writing down these details on the same page. In any case, on viewing the Sci-fi TV documentary, *UFO Invasion at Rendlesham* (2005), and seeing Jim's notebook opened to that page, Ian Ridpath had misread the 9 in the date as a 7; thus, he has asserted that Jim Penniston had written down the wrong date and asks, why? Again, it is simple. The date is not the 27th but the 29th.

Then, after hearing that on the 30th anniversary of the event in December 2010, and while attending the Woodbridge conference as speaker, Jim Penniston had mentioned that there was a date for the December 27, 1980 in the notebook, as this was the date on which he wrote down the binary code ones and zeros, Ian Ridpath, again writes:

> "He [Penniston] claimed that the day after the initial encounter with the landed craft, he wrote down in his notebook many pages of binary digits that he had received telepathically. At the same time, he changed his explanation for the date and time shown in the notebook: he now says it was when he wrote down the binary, not when he encountered the craft. Unfortunately, as we can see for ourselves, the date and time is at the start of the description of the craft, and not at the start of the section with the binary codes."
>
> *Jim Penniston's Notebook* by Ian Ridpath.

Ian Ridpath is wrong. The "27 Dec 80" date that does exist in the notebook, and which Jim was referring to, was written on the blank page on that very date before the binary code string of one and zero digits. Ian Ridpath, who has not seen this page in the notebook, has simply misinterpreted what Jim was saying, thinking that Jim was referring to the date at the top of the page that also includes the details he wrote down while at the East Gate.

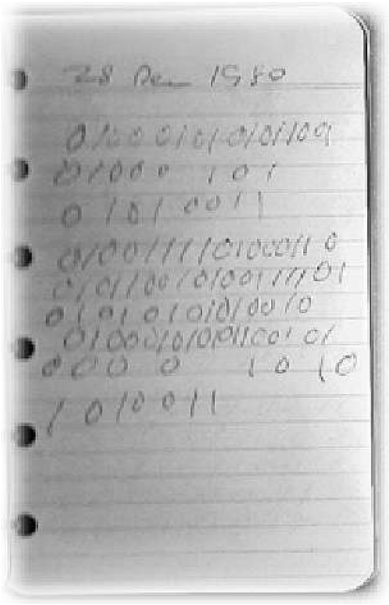
[clxiii] Many would say it was remarkable, even unbelievable, that Jim Penniston did not know that what he received telepathically was 'binary code' until as late as October 2010, when he was finally told it was binary code by researcher and investigative reporter Linda Moulton Howe on the film set of the TV documentary series, *Ancient Aliens.*

Jim really had no real interest in such things. The terms 'binary' or 'binary code' in relation to computers were not commonly known by those in the general populace until more recent years. As the technical 'jargon' of computer specialists, programmers, and technical aficionados, it was unfamiliar to those like Jim, where using computers, taking courses in computers, and/or learning computer programming were not a necessary focus for their career or personal interests – especially at the time when Jim received the ones and zeros.

It is true that Jim Penniston had mentioned the words "binary code" while undergoing hypnotic regression on September 10, 1994, but he was merely repeating while under hypnosis what was told to him by the agents who had interrogated him in a room at the AFOSI building on Bentwaters base on December 30, 1980, only four days after the incident. Jim was not aware what the term "binary code" meant even then and hadn't realized that the ones and zeros he first wrote down in his notebook on the morning of December 27, 1980 were the one and the same. His being unable to connect the two was really due to the fact that Jim didn't want to know the details of what he had said at the time of the hypnosis session, as it was difficult for him to process as a result of the trauma he felt. He didn't watch more than a few minutes of the videotaped hypnosis sessions and neither did he read everything in the transcripts, and instead relied more on what he was told. Even when some of the hypnosis session was published in Linda Moulton Howe's book, Jim Penniston told me he hadn't read it and did not make the association – i.e., that when the words "binary code" came up as quoted in the book from the hypnosis he underwent in 1994, that the "binary code," as mentioned, was the ones and zeros he began writing down in his notebook the morning after the incident.

I was sent the video of the hypnosis session by Darren DeBoy, who had a copy of it, and I transcribed all of it. I then sat down with Jim Penniston during a Skype session and went over it all with him, and it was emotional. It was apparent to me that Jim Penniston didn't know a great deal of what he had said during the hypnosis session, but it helped to piece together some of what happened – even though he has almost total conscious recall on what happened that night/morning on Boxing Day, 1980. (See Chapter 14: *Regression*.)

[clxiv] There has been some issue over the "28 Dec 1980" date at the top of the fourteenth page of binary code. When I asked him about it, Jim Penniston told me that it's possible, and more likely, that he awoke again in the early hours of the morning of December 28, with ones and zeros running through his mind *a second time*, adding that this would explain why the date of "28 Dec 1980" was written down at the top of the first page of the last three pages of binary code. Jim told me that unfortunately, he is not absolutely certain, because he only half-remembers this, explaining that the whole 'binary code' incident between December 26th and December 29th was a deeply traumatic time for him.



The relevant page from Jim Penniston's notebook dated "28 Dec 1980."

Jim says he remembers beginning to write down the ones and zeros on the morning of December 27 more clearly because he remembers the trauma of having the ones and zeros going through his mind the evening of the day of the incident and then waking up in the early hours of the next morning feeling compelled to write them down. However, his memory of whether he also wrote the last three pages the morning after or not is sketchy – especially after all these years, as the pages of ones and zeros was something he never really looked at until his secret about them was revealed by chance on October 2, 2010, while on the film set of *'Ancient Aliens*,' and it was then that he saw the "28 Dec 1980" date on what he later realized was at the top of the fourteenth page. Seeing the date of "28 Dec 1980," Jim Penniston feels it's more likely that he was compelled to write down what he was seeing in his mind's eye on the morning of that date like he did the morning before. He says that he does retain some conscious recall of having got out of bed in the early hours of the next morning to retrieve the notebook from the drawer and write down the sequence of ones and zeros he had on his mind, and which may have filled another three pages of the notebook, which explains the date at the top of the page. Like the first time he began writing them down, he obviously didn't want to think about what it all meant, and then placed the notebook in the draw again, and went back to bed – the whole episode of those minutes being vague and hazy, like a person who is keeping a 'dream log' waking up to momentarily to write down what he or she had been dreaming. Skeptics will no doubt take issue with this, because if Jim Penniston claims memory of writing the pages of binary code down on the morning of December 27, then he should also remember writing them down on the morning of December 28. However, as said, during the first morning Jim Penniston began writing down the ones and zeros on the morning of December 27 was different, as he made himself a cup of coffee and spent time looking through the notebook, all of which had burned more clearly into his memory. (See also Note 30 in the end notes of

Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*.)

The first mention of these last three pages of sixteen overall, being perhaps dated to December 28, 1980, was in 2012 on the *Binary Decoder Info* website of Joe Luciano, who deciphered the message from the raw binary code string of all sixteen pages.

Jim explained that his reason for not talking about the likely scenario of having written these additional three pages of ones and zeros the next morning on December 28 in the numerous interviews he has done since they were first made public on December 30, 2010 is that he did not want to be seen as a "channeler" of messages from an unknown intelligent source – especially a message in ones and zeros. Since the binary code was made public in December 2010, any thoughts by the public that this could have been an "ongoing ritual everyday" really worried Jim Penniston on top of everything else. So, his reason for not voicing this alternative scenario, which is still only a possibility, until now, is that he feared that writing ones and zeros down would be viewed as something that he is now *afflicted* with and always will be and that there might be more that he had received over the years and had kept back from the public, which he says is certainly not true. It should be mentioned that Jim Penniston has always had an issue with the binary code. He did not want to ever reveal any of these sixteen pages to the public and does not like talking about the code even on the best of days. It is no wonder then that Jim has always said or has given the impression that he had written down all sixteen pages on the morning of December 27 – which he still considers a reality.

[clxv] Jim Penniston knows Lori Buoen and said: *"If Lori said she saw something strange, then she saw it . . . Lori is an honest person, a straight shooter."*

According to the interview she did with Linda Moulton Howe on March 16, 2010 (see Note 166 below for the details), Lori Buoen grew up in Fridley, Minnesota, and immediately after high school, she enlisted in the U. S. Air Force. Lori went through basic training at Lackland AFB, Texas. After being assigned to the Twin Bases in Suffolk, England, like all new airmen, Lori was deployed as a sentry on the gates to the bases.

Lori Buoen has said that on Christmas night, December 25, 1980, she had been posted at the Woodbridge Main gate – not the East Gate – and remembers the Base Commander, Ted Conrad, bringing out Christmas dinner to her and others who were working the holiday night shift. (Lori Buoen is not to be confused with Lori Rehfeldt, who also worked on the gates of the twin bases but left on December 15, 1980 before the incidents began. However, Lori Rehfeldt had her own UAP sighting earlier in February 1980, which features in Georgina Bruni's 2001 book, *"You Can't Tell the People."*)

[clxvi] Lori Buoen in an interview with Linda Moulton Howe, March 16, 2010, Duluth, Minnesota, for *Earthfiles.* Source: *Part 11: Update – Bentwaters 1980, Telepathic Lights?* By Linda Moulton Howe, *Earthfiles,* August 21, 2010.

[clxvii] "You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001.) p. 130.

[clxviii] On Wednesday, March 6, 2019, Jim Penniston contacted Lori Ann Buoen and asked her if the testimony we had presented here, based on her interview with Linda Moulton Howe and the extracts from Georgina Bruni's book concerning the approx. 01:30 to 02:00 hrs time of her incident, was correct. Lori had no problems with what we presented, which means the details and approximate time of the incident were indeed correct, and she kindly wrote back with the following:

> "I would describe the light in the sky as being a sphere of bright amber, blue and yellow/green that seemed to be rotating and slowly descending into the Queen's forest. Fiery, yes and difficult to compare it to anything else as

stated."

Lori Ann Buoen in a message to Jim Penniston
Wednesday, March 6, 2019.

[clxix] Lori Buoen in an interview with Linda Moulton Howe, March 16, 2010, Duluth, Minnesota, for *Earthfiles.* Source: *Part 11: Update – Bentwaters 1980, Telepathic Lights?* By Linda Moulton Howe, *Earthfiles,* August 21, 2010.

[clxx] *Ibid.*

[clxxi] Quoting Col. Halt:

> ". . . something happened in the forest. I don't know the details, and didn't learn this till years later. Bonnie Tamplin who was the on-duty senior police officer . . . she was a Second or First Lieutenant . . . Second Lieutenant then I think . . . had some kind of confrontation, and she and Master Sergeant Bobby Ball had something happen. She had a nervous breakdown and was shipped back to the States very quickly." [. . .] "I didn't learn about that until many years later. She disappeared, and I . . . you know, I was kind of a mentor for her because nineteen eighty, she was a female cop – which was very unusual – she was black, very talented . . . bright kid, and I really liked her. You know, in a way that I'd kind of sponsored her a bit to keep an eye on her to make sure that the guys didn't abuse her, if you know what I mean. And uh, she disappeared and I was kind of shocked, and I asked uh, '*Well, what happened?* And they said she had a nervous breakdown. So, I accepted that. I had no reason not to until years later when I found out that she packed up and left . . . and she'd gone out of sight. She's in Italy right now and has been for years."
>
> *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters.
> Published January 11, 2017.

During her interview with Linda Moulton Howe, Lori Buoen said that while listening to what was being said over the radio, that she also heard Colonel Halt's voice. In fact, both Lori Buoen and her friend John Trementozzi, who was also at the East Gate, both said that while listening together to what was transmitted over the radio, they were both shocked to hear their Flight Lieutenant screaming and crying, adding that they knew Master Sergeant Bobby Ball was there, but that they also heard Colonel Halt. On recounting what she heard from Buoen and Trementozzi, Linda Moulton Howe says *". . . and if this is true, then Colonel Charles Halt knows a lot about the middle night and has never talked about it."*

(Source: *Linda Moulton Howe and Ronnie Dugdale Part I Earthfiles.* Uploaded January 29, 2018).

[clxxii] John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*.

OpenMindsTV. 2010.
[clxxiii]

Quoting Burroughs from the radio interview he did with host Jimmy Church, 2019:

> "I just got a quick briefing from the desk sergeant that the Shift Commander went out there, and they had some kind of incident take place." [Burroughs means Second Lieutenant Bonnie Tamplin, but this is wrong, the Shift Commander was Glen Whitehead] ". . . I can tell you what I've been told recently, which is interesting, um, that, that something happened and she [Lt. Tamplin] actually had a blue light or something go through a vehicle, and it shut it down. Um, we know we've done interviews with an Airman that was on duty [Lori Buoen]. She confirmed that she could hear the Lieutenant and Master Sergeant Ball in the forest investigating whatever it was on night two, and she seemed to be, you know, upset and kind of freaking out, and that after this light went through her vehicle, then it shut it off. They actually pulled her and relieved her of duty, and Halt later has now said that she was immediately taken away from the base within a couple days, and, you know, was PSC [Permanent Change of Station] out of there, so I don't remember seeing her much afterwards. Her name was Lieutenant Tamplin, but I can't confirm that she would immediately leave the base right after the incident. But someone else has come forward and said that not only did, um, she had the encounter, but she actually may have fired a couple shots at it. Why she was out there . . . has anybody reached out to her? Yeah, they've tried to track her down. Um, I've had somebody working on it for a while back in ten [2010], and the closest we got to finding her, was she was somewhere off grid in Italy. I would think that she probably doesn't want the notoriety, and I can understand that. That's a life-changing thing for anybody." [. . .] "I think Colonel Halt was trying to track her down pretty hard to write, and I don't believe he could ever get to her. Um, I think we've got to a family member. I know I, we did ourselves personally, and we reached out through the family member, and she said she wasn't interested in talking about it."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network) January 23, 2019.

[clxxiv] John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.

[clxxv] Note by Jim Penniston on the Bonnie Tamplin incident and subsequent cover-up:

> Bonnie Tamplin was a very new Second Lieutenant and new to the Air Force. I was told that she had simply left her M-16 (unsecured) in the vehicle. Apparently a maintenance guy had discovered it, and of this I am certain, as I knew who the maintenance guy was. It was a strict rule in the USAF never to leave any firearm unattended, misplace it, or lose it. Everything was accounted for. The consequences were that, when it was reported, Bonnie Tamplin was immediately relieved of her duty. However, for the sake of her career and reputation, it was thought best to cover-up the mistake she made by making up a story as to why she left her M-16 in the vehicle. This was devised by the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler, who made up the story that Bonnie Tamplin was freaked out by a UFO-related light or object passing through her vehicle, and that she had panicked and ran out of the vehicle in distress, leaving her firearm behind. After the first night's events, the phenomenon was still very much alive on the bases, both literally and on people's minds, and because of a sighting which was reported that very night [made by Airman Lori Buoen], it made a good cover story for Bonnie. Everything was done on the QT (meaning quiet, secret, confidential and off the record), so no one would know the real reason. No one above Major Zickler was aware, and only a few in the squadron knew. I was told this by my supervisor Chief Master Sergeant John Hill, sometime in 1981 while I was working in Security Police Plans and Programs, and who told me he got the initial report from Sergeant Ron Fail. (See Chapter 10: *Containment.*)

Below is part of an email exchange on this issue between Jim Penniston and Col. Halt, courtesy of both. Note that it was reported that Lt. Bonnie Tamplin had also crashed the vehicle, and it seems that the story was given that her weapon had also been used – "discharged."

> "Jim,
> Do you have any contact info on Bobby Ball? Anyone else who might have known? I'd like to sort out this possible wrecked Jeep and possible discharge of a weapon. Both require reporting. However, I wouldn't put it past Zickler to have covered up such, if it happened.
> Chuck"
>
> Email from Col. Charles 'Chuck' Halt to Jim Penniston.
>
> "You're right about Zickler covering her, and not acting with disciplinary action. I'm not sure what they told her

> flight. But I thought they covered it by saying she was going to work on ABGD training. We all (SSgt and above) knew that wasn't true when we had Skip Buran, the former army ranger, and Bruce England, former Marine Corps. Here is the kicker. It's because I was told what happened at the time by CSMgt John Hill. He said he got the initial report from Sgt. Ron Frail. Remember him? A security flight chief on B Flight. I was told to keep it on the QT until now with telling you. I owed you that! You can verify it with Ron Frail, Chief Hill, or Zickler.
> Jim"
>
> Email reply from Jim Penniston to Col. Charles 'Chuck' Halt.

However, this does not appear to explain the panicked radio transmission made by Lt. Tamplin that Lori Buoen says she heard over the radio while at the East Gate. Jim Penniston asked Lori Buoen her opinion on this, and although Lori didn't disagree that there may have been a cover-up over Tamplin leaving her firearm unattended, her reply was that she just didn't know; however, what she said presented us all with more insight and made sense of what must have happened:

> "I don't know if there was an issue about Lt. Tamplin and this so-called cover-up? I don't know what to think about all that. I just remembered her voice and the fear when she was talking on the radio and they were all walking in the forest in the pitch dark. The only thing I can think of would be when they went out to the Queen's Forest because no weapons were allowed.
>
> It was my understanding at the time that they weren't allowed to bring their weapons into the Queen's Forest . . . it was an agreement between the Americans and the British. Sgt. Ball and the other people out there in the woods, all left their weapons behind because it was not permitted to have them while in the Queen's Forest."
>
> Lori Ann Buoen in a message to Jim Penniston
> Wednesday, March 6, 2019.

Lori's reply was helpful. It told us that she knew Lt. Bonnie Tamplin and MSgt. Ball had actually ventured into the forest. In earlier accounts, it wasn't made clear to us if Lt. Tamplin and MSgt. Ball had actually gone out into the forest, but of course, it's only logical if they were sent to investigate. Looking back over the accounts, it is of course implied, as they were sent out to investigate, but with Lori's message, this was finally realized. This, of course, would explain why Bonnie Tamplin was terrified – especially if she had lost sight of MSgt Ball in the pitch-black darkness. Most people would be scared of being stranded in a forest when it is pitch black. And of course, Lori highlighted the fact that Bonnie Tamplin should not have taken a weapon off-base anyway, and it's likely that this is why her M-16 – which she may have taken with her when she and MSgt. Ball had driven out there – was left in the vehicle, which was most-likely parked on a dirt-track or logging road just off the perimeter of the forest north of the Woodbridge runway. Perhaps MSgt. Ball didn't know that Tamplin even had a

weapon in the vehicle when she and MSgt. Ball entered the forest to investigate the lighted object that had gone down in there, as sighted by Airman Lori Buoen.

It's now clear what must have happened. And so it follows, that because Bonnie Tamplin was well-liked, to protect her career, a story was created, explaining that an unidentified lighted object had raced through her vehicle, which panicked her and made her run from it. For those who were involved in the incidents, it would appear logical that the event had traumatized her so much that she had a breakdown and wanted to leave the base and be posted in a position elsewhere. In other words, the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler, and whoever else was involved, wanted Lt. Tamplin off the base for her own good and before the case was properly investigated. However, it would appear that this is not what she told her colleagues, according to this message which was posted on *The Unofficial 81st SPS Messageboard*, Aug 13, 2003 – a forum where personnel can reflect nostalgically about their time on the base and the people who used to work there:

> "There was Lt Englund, Lt Tamplin who had the accident in the CJ7 returning from Woodbridge – tried to avoid hitting a deer she said."

This implies that there was indeed a vehicle accident as Col. Halt had mentioned, but of course, it's possible that the anonymous poster could be referring to an incident involving Lt. Tamplin that had taken place on another occasion.

However, having acknowledged all this, during an interview on May 18, 1986 with Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe, Larry Warren mentions an incident involving Sgt. Adrian Bustinza and Lt. Bonnie Tamplin, in which Sgt. Bustinza had told him that he had threatened Lt. Tamplin with a knife after Tamplin had pressured him (Bustinza) to keep quiet – presumably about the UFO incidents. From what Warren says, this incident could only have taken place after the third night's events. This disturbing altercation too could have been the reason why Tamplin had left the base. (See Note 592).

[clxxvi] Among the rumours going around the base about the first night's events was that one of the first responders jumped up on a UFO or was abducted by having been taken up in a beam of light and "taken on board the space craft," and this is what Lt. Englund had told Monroe Nevels. This is also mentioned by Monroe in the interview Monroe Nevels did with Linda Moulton Howe on July 30, 2010 at Tuscola, Texas, and published August 21, 2010: (See *Earthfiles 69*).

The airman was A1C John Burroughs. The same thing is said to have happened with Burroughs during the events of the third night (see end of Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*), and it is possible that details of this supposed event and the night it happened became confused. Burroughs, who still cannot consciously remember exactly all that happened to him during the two events he was involved in – being the early mornings of December 26th, and December 28th – has long been confused by the rumor, and later sought out what happened by undergoing hypnosis on November 11, 1988. (See Note 616).

[clxxvii] According to Georgina Bruni, this 'party' was the 'Combat Support Group awards dinner' in 'Woody's Bar' at the Woodbridge Officer's Club on the Woodbridge base. (Bruni: *"You Can't Tell the People,"* p. 197). It may indeed have taken place at 'Woody's Bar,' but Colonel Halt, says that it was also known as the 'Twelve O'Clock High Club,' based on the film of the same title, and perhaps because 'Woody's Bar' closed at midnight. (See *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson, Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016.)

[clxxviii] This is a curious detail, as numerous witnesses had observed limbs scattered around the clearing of the landing site, both before and after SSgt. Nevels and Lt. Englund had been at the site. For example, while out in the forest investigating the landing site, Lt. Col. Halt had taken an audio mini-

cassette recorder with him to make verbal notes, (see Chapter 7: *"Landing Site"*), and on the recorded cassette tape there is this statement:

> HALT: "Looking directly overhead, one can see an opening in the trees, plus some freshly broken pine branches on the ground underneath. Looks like some of them came off about fifteen to twenty feet up. Some small branches about an inch or less in diameter . . ."

[clxxix] Note by Monroe Nevels:

> "Since then, I have overheard several statements, and I am not sure where they came from, but I think it might have been from Lt. Bruce Englund regarding the density of the pod marks in the ground. The Forestry Service had conducted a 'densitometer test' on one of these pod marks at the landing site in Rendlesham Forest and found the ground impaction to be of the same density or weight where the apparent tripod legs had touched the ground."

[clxxx] Note by Monroe Nevels:

> "Another statement was that the Forestry Service had conducted samples of the tree and pine needles, and found the sap had gone from the pine needles, with no explanation regarding the fact that there were no burn marks on them."

[clxxxi] Although SSgt. Jim Penniston did not observe the craft spinning or even slowly turning, it is possible that the mechanism inside the craft was gyroscopic in nature. A gyroscope can only work on one plane, thus keeping steady anything it is connected to. Monroe relayed his thoughts to us about this, saying that perhaps the burn marks on the trees that were evenly spaced were due to some kind of static discharge element. A gyroscope effect would also explain the same depth of the pod marks on uneven ground.

[clxxxii] This time estimate was given by Monroe Nevels while being interviewed by Linda Moulton Howe. *1980 RAF Bentwaters Disaster Preparedness Tech S/Sgt. Monroe Nevels Describes "Top Secret" Investigation.* *Earthfiles.* August 21, 2010.

[clxxxiii] The anxiety and fear observed with Lt. Englund would only have been natural, seeing as he had heard that one of the first responders on the first night, namely Airman John Burroughs, had been abducted and taken on board a craft, although this was just a rumor that had been going around the base. This rumor was also picked up by SSgt. J.D. Ingalls and airman Larry Warren.
[clxxxiv]

In episode 20 of the third season of the TV documentary, *Paranormal Witness,* titled "The Rendlesham Files," Monroe Nevels is interviewed, talking about what he and Lt. Englund had seen at the landing site.

Monroe Nevels:

> "The trees had been scorched, by something that was either hot or burning. It didn't make sense to me. I began to believe that something had happened. It was starting to get dark, so I picked up the night-vision goggles. What I am seeing is green. Out of the corner of my eye I spotted something out there. And all of a sudden, light is coming toward us. This light was . . . I don't know how I can describe it. It appeared to be, an eyeball . . . real bright, and then it would get dim. It looked like it was just blinking. Then it stopped. We didn't have time to think."

The actors playing Lt. Englund and SSgt. Nevels are then dramatically portrayed running out of the forest, with the screen all shaky and green for good effect, as if to portray the scene through the night-vision Goggles in '*Blair Witch* movie' style).

[clxxxv] As quoted by Colonel Charles Halt:

> "We were having the Christmas dinner – a family dinner, a cover dish dinner for all the officers and combat support group – about 40 families – at the small Club at Woodbridge Base, known as the "Twelve o'clock High' Club."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[clxxxvi] Monroe Nevels is unsure of the time when he and Lt. Englund had actually turned up at the entrance to the Officer's Club. However, as mentioned, the suggested arrival time of 8:00 to 8:30 in the evening is based on the 7:00 to 8:00 p.m. time when he and Lt. Englund were still out in the forest, observing the lighted object, and this is according to what Monroe had told Linda Moulton Howe on July 30, 2010 at Tuscola, Texas, and published August 21, 2010: (*1980 RAF Bentwaters Disaster Preparedness Tech S/Sgt. Monroe Nevels Describes "Top Secret" Investigation.* *Earthfiles.* August 21, 2010).

[clxxxvii] Email to Jim Penniston and Gary Osborn by Col. Halt, Monday, March 11, 2019. (For the full text, see Note 272 below.)

[clxxxviii] Quoting Col. Ted Conrad from the interview conducted by Dr. David Clarke:

> "Sometime between 2100 and 2200 on 26 December [Conrad has the date wrong, as it was the evening of the 27th], members of the Woodbridge SP [Security Police] shift appeared at a Christmas party at the O'Club [12-O'Clock High Club] where Lt Col Halt and myself were in attendance."
>
> *The Rendlesham Files* by Dr. David Clarke, 2010.

It has, of course, been observed and commented on that in the few interviews he has done, Ted Conrad

has gotten the dates and times wrong. However, based on this, one would estimate around 9:30 in the evening for their arrival, and it is possible that the diners in the club really were eating that late if Col. Halt says that the party started late, and especially if the bar and the club closed at midnight.

[clxxxix] It is interesting that in episode 20 of the third season of the TV documentary, *Paranormal Witness,* titled "The Rendlesham Files," the actor playing Lt. Englund is portrayed entering the Officer's Club with the time displayed on the screen as "2109 HOURS" (9:09 p.m.). How this time was determined is anyone's guess, and it comes to something when we have to depend on a TV show to establish the time certain events happened.

9:09 is a specific time, which doesn't appear to have been plucked out of the air for the sake of convenience, but knowing how the producers of these shows will often assume artistic license to sensationalize, manipulate, and distort the truth in re-creating the story to suit themselves and what they think their audience should see, perhaps it was.

Quote: "Paranormal Witness is an American paranormal documentary television series made by a British production company which describes itself as "true tales of supernatural hauntings and explanation-defying paranormal experiences, which are brought to life through recreations"." Source: Wikipedia, *Paranormal Witness*.

[cxc] In episode 20 of the third season of the TV documentary, *Paranormal Witness,* titled "The Rendlesham Files," Lt. Col. Halt is interviewed saying: "The senior police officer on duty came in, carrying an M-16. He stood out like a sore thumb." The scene then cuts to Monroe Nevels, who says: "The party was in full swing, and the Colonel says…." And portrayed talking to Monroe Nevels while Nevels is seated outside in the Jeep is the wrong Colonel, which is Lt. Col. Halt, which is ironic, as Monroe had stated that he talked to Colonel Conrad at the entrance to the Officer's Club, and Col. Halt has never uttered a word that SSgt. Nevels was at the club.

The actor playing Lt. Col. Halt is then shown peering through the side window of the Jeep to talk to Nevels, who is sitting in the driver's seat, and then says: "Nevels, this warrant further review?"

Monroe Nevels being interviewed: "I said, "Yes sir I think it does.""

The actor playing Lt. Col. Halt says, "Right."

The actor playing Lt. Col. Halt then gets into the Jeep driven by the actor playing SSgt. Nevels, and together they drive off, heading straight to the forest – again, not the truth according to Monroe Nevels' testimony.

It is obvious that Monroe Nevels was never shown the story-board or footage prior to being interviewed, and therefore was not aware that the producers of the documentary had, or were going to portray Lt. Col. Halt discussing the issue with him outside the entrance, and then entering the Jeep with him to go straight to the forest, because Monroe would have seriously objected to this fabricated portrayal of the facts and would not have agreed to be part of the show.
[cxci]

The on-duty flight Lieutenant for this shift would have been Second Lieutenant Bonnie Tamplin. However, she was relieved of duty when it was discovered that she had taken a weapon off-base, and it's possible that she also left it in her patrol car. Lt. Englund then took over as the on-duty flight Lieutenant on this shift.
[cxcii]

Quote:

> "During the evening Lieutenant Bruce Englund turned up looking as white as a sheet. The shocked Lieutenant told Conrad and Halt that there had been more sightings in the forest and that it was back. 'What's back?' enquired Halt. 'The UFO is back,' replied Englund."

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery
by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2000).

"We were having our annual dinner when the police lieutenant who was on duty came in as white as a sheet. Now, he was not an excitable person…."

UFO Sightings: The Rendlesham Forest Incident, BBC Sounds. Wednesday December 26, 2018.

[cxciii] Quote:

"At some stage in the proceedings, Lieutenant Bruce Englund, the on-duty shift commander, entered the premises looking shell-shocked, took Halt aside and told him "It's back". Halt looked confused for a moment and asked, "what's back?" The response from Englund was clear: "The UFO is back, Sir.""

Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident
by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret),
(Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

[cxciv]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cxcv]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cxcvi]

Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.

[cxcvii]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cxcviii]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cxcix] A typical example is episode 20 of the third season of the TV documentary, *Paranormal Witness*, titled "The Rendlesham Files." Seeing as he is often interviewed in these documentaries and no doubt plays an advisory part in what is portrayed, as he has said so himself, it's no surprise that these documentaries would reflect Col. Halt's account.

[cc] Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.

[cci]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[ccii]

Ibid.
[cciii]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cciv] Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.

The following account is from the book by Georgina Bruni, first published in 2000.

> "During the evening Lieutenant Bruce Englund turned up looking as white as a sheet. The shocked Lieutenant told Conrad and Halt that there had been more sightings in the forest and that it was back. 'What's back?' enquired Halt. 'The UFO is back,' replied Englund."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2000).

[ccv] Monroe Nevels. Skype group discussion with Jim Penniston and Gary Osborn, on February 6, 2019.
[ccvi]

Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.
[ccvii]

Source: *What is a Light-all?*
[ccviii]

Monroe Nevels. Skype group discussion with Jim Penniston and Gary Osborn, on February 6, 2019.

[ccix] It is likely that Colonel Conrad needed an assessment of the evidence to then know what he needed to do to control the situation and the information, and possibly even implement a cover-up, and if so, then the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler would have also been complicit in this, and may have initiated it.
[ccx]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[ccxi] The following is quoted from an interview conducted by researcher Dr. David Clarke with Ted Conrad, around January 2010:

> Dr. David Clarke:
> "Can you confirm Halt's story about the airman interrupting the party, saying "It's back"?"
>
> Ted Conrad:
> "The comment "it's back" was relayed to me by Lt. Col. Halt. I don't know who told him that or why. There were no claimed sightings that night. The statement might have been simply an "attention getter.""

The Rendlesham Files by Dr. David Clarke, 2010.

[ccxii] Email to Jim Penniston and Gary Osborn by Col. Halt, Monday, March 11, 2019.

[ccxiii] It is wise to play "Devil's advocate" when it is required, and healthy to use counter-advocacy for just about everything you read, see, or hear, and so it's only fair to the reader to also mention what has been said concerning this statement by Monroe Nevels in the book by John Hanson and Col. Charles Halt, published in 2016.

Here, we quote Col. Halt's coauthor, John Hanson, who quotes Monroe Nevels as having said that Lt. Col. Halt had asked him [Nevels] to go out with him [Halt] – which is not what Nevels told us. Nevels told us that Lt. Col. Halt had asked him if he could come along. (We have corrected the non-capital letter mistakes in the names presented in the original text):

> "In October 2015, I contacted Monroe Nevels with regard to sorting out this ambiguity. He told me that too many lies had been said about his role, and that, "I did go out to the site with Lt. Bruce Englund on the third night, after being directed to do so by Colonel Conrad, and reported my findings to him, before Colonel Halt asked me to go out with him.""
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

Is this what Monroe Nevels actually said? Could it be possible that Nevels had misheard Lt. Col. Halt, and that when he leaned across the table to talk to Nevels, that Halt had actually asked if Nevels would accompany him to the forest?

We put this same question to Monroe, and he was resolute about what he remembers having been said, adding that it appears as if his words had been altered in the book by Halt and Hanson to make it appear that Halt had asked him to go out with him to the forest on the investigation/mission. And again, we have to ask why Col. Halt had never mentioned Nevels even being present at the Officer's Club? Furthermore, if it really was Halt's mission to go out there on the orders of Colonel Conrad, then why hadn't Halt mentioned Nevels and this moment in the room when he apparently asked Nevels to go with him, as Nevels has been quoted to have said? It doesn't make any logical sense. Of course, it could be that the reader is being led to assume that this was when Halt had told Capt. Sue Jones to inform SSgt. Nevels to prepare himself to go out to the forest with him and his team, as if it was Halt's mission.

[ccxiv] Quoting Charles Halt:

> "And then the Base Commander said, *'Well I've got to give a few speeches and president some awards. Why don't you go out and investigate this and we'll sort this thing all out?'* So I said to him, *'Okay,'* and I was wearing a suit so I had to go home and change clothes…."
>
> *Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident*. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.

> "Ted Conrad and I looked at each other, as he had to make all the presentations – or maybe that was his excuse. He said, '*Why don't you go out and see what this is all about?*' Ok, I wasn't too excited, but I realized the cops had become preoccupied with this – both the Security Forces and the Law Enforcement – and they were more attuned to what was going on in the woods probably more than what they should be doing; in other words, guarding the perimeter of the base and providing law enforcement."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[ccxv] Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.
[ccxvi]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).
[ccxvii]

Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).
[ccxviii]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.
[ccxix]

Note by Jim Penniston:

> In my view, I think Halt's desire and fascination since boyhood with UFOs drove him out there with SSgt. Nevels in hopes of seeing a UFO. The third night for him was an opportunity that he sought. After all, the first night was hard to follow. Monroe's mission was to confirm night one. And so, despite what he has always said about debunking the phenomenon we witnessed on night one and the phenomena that was being reported during the nights since then, Halt's intention – and what actually drove him to go out there that night when he learned that something was going on – was to have an encounter with a UFO. Again, this really stems from a boyhood fascination and he said as much at the 2015, Woodbridge conference.

[ccxx]

Jim Penniston is referring to what Halt said at this conference about having read a book on UFOs when he was a teenager, which had been mentioned in some detail in the book he co-authored with John Hanson, *The Halt Perspective*, published in 2016. Halt is quoted as having said that when he was a teenager, he once assisted his mother who had organized a church second-hand rummage sale. He clearly remembers coming across the 1950 book, *The Flying Saucers Are Real* by Major Donald Keyhoe, an American Marine Corps naval aviator, and took the book home to read. The book presented

numerous encounters between UFOs and USAF fighter, personnel, and other aircraft between 1947 and 1950. Halt says that he found Keyhoe's book interesting, but after reading it and putting it aside, he forgot all about it – with memories about it being resurrected in December 1980, with the events he and others were confronted with off-base in Rendlesham Forest. The question as to whether Halt had 'grandstanded' the third night's events because of an interest he had with UFO's after reading that book when a youngster remains undetermined. It's hardly likely that Col. Halt would admit to having gone out that night because of a childhood fascination with the subject if the issue ever came up. It does make us wonder that if he did have a real interest in the phenomenon, that perhaps this was the real reason why Charles Halt had joined the USAF in the first place.

Monroe Nevels:

> "I was told that Lt. Col. Halt was told by Col Conrad NOT to go out there, and in effect Halt had sneaked around Conrad and asked me if he could out with me."
>
> Extract from Monroe Nevels' notes sent to the authors, June 2017.

Note by Jim Penniston:

> I think that even if Colonel Conrad had not wanted Halt out there initially, he possibly gave in with Halt's wish to go along. And so, without Monroe Nevels being present at some point, and Monroe unaware Conrad and Halt were discussing it, Conrad relented and told Halt to go out with Monroe so as not to make a scene. It was most likely after that discussion when Halt had asked Monroe if he could go along, and Halt had said this as a gesture in respecting Monroe's mission. I think Monroe thought that since he was originally contacted during the daylight hours to initiate a study of the site by looking to see if something did land there on night one, he thought he was also in charge that night with a Lieutenant and a Lieutenant Colonel. I know that wasn't really the case, as it doesn't fit Airforce protocols at all, but psychologically, there may be some truth to it.

Colonel Conrad has been referred to as a "fine man" (Bruni, p. 113) and overall "nice guy" by Jim Penniston, but has also been called "a coward" by Col. Halt. (*The Halt Perspective,* by Halt and Hanson, 2016.) Perhaps Ted Conrad is the kind of person who will shirk from confrontation, and so to keep people happy, he will resort to being disingenuous with the truth. If so, then based on Jim Penniston's view, it's likely that Conrad told Monroe that he didn't want Col. Halt to go out there so as not to upset Monroe, seeing as he had handed Monroe the mission initially. And of course, it seems Conrad had his own agenda to gather information so that he could assess the situation and control it in a cover-up.

However, Monroe followed up on this issue during a discussion with the authors (Skype group session, February 6, 2019).

During this Skype session, Monroe told us that during a visit to the home of fellow Texan, Ted Conrad, many years later, around September 2010 with John Burroughs and Linda Moulton Howe (see

Chapter 16: *Hunted by Lions, Tigers, and Bears.*) Conrad and his wife Jean, who was once a Lieutenant Colonel in charge of personnel at Bentwaters, began discussing the incident and Halt's involvement, and Conrad told Monroe, *"I had ordered him not to go out there and he did it anyway."* Monroe also added that Ted Conrad had said that after the incident, he had words with Halt about it, as he was upset with Halt for going out there. Conrad added that Halt was a major problem, and that there was animosity between him and Halt because he just wouldn't listen and wouldn't always follow orders.

It is apparent that Halt didn't take Conrad seriously, and this is evident in the fact that Col. Halt is on record as having said that his job was to run the base, and that the Base Commander cut ribbons, kissed babies, shook hands and made speeches – playing more-or-less a ceremonial, public relations role. Source: *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

Because Monroe is in contact with Ted Conrad and is a friend, it was during this same Skype session that Jim Penniston and I asked Monroe if Ted Conrad would confirm that he had never ordered his deputy, Lt. Col. Halt, to investigate and had in fact told him not to go. Monroe said he would contact him.

Then in an email sent to Jim Penniston, dated February 12, 2019. Monroe writes:

> "Col Conrad called me back last night, and we talked for about fifteen minutes – a good conversation. He was rather reluctant to say for sure if he told Halt not to go back out with us and especially him taking over as the leader. I could feel the reluctance, and other than that everything went very well. He never objected to what I said . . . just didn't want to go on the record."

It's perhaps safe to say that when Monroe writes that Ted Conrad never objected to what he had said, and Monroe has told us that Conrad has always endorsed what Monroe has stated, that this implies that he also agrees with Monroe on these very issues. It is obvious that Conrad just didn't want to go on the public record as having said that he had told Halt not to go out there to investigate and that Halt had defied an order and took over as leader of the mission because of his rank. It could be said that Conrad simply doesn't want to open old wounds over this issue, especially if it spills over into the public arena. But this doesn't make sense, seeing as he had criticized Col. Halt in the interview that he did with Dr. David Clarke in January 2010, and denied that anything unusual had happened on the third night.

Jim Penniston is also of the opinion that without General Gordon Williams now, who was then the Wing Commander, and who sadly passed away on Thanksgiving Day, 2018, that this leaves Conrad as the ranking officer relating to the incident, and so Conrad's reluctance to go public, even after 38 years, may be related to him now being placed in the most responsible position to finally disclose what happened to the researchers and investigators of the incident, when he had already likely been ordered not to say anything. He simply doesn't need the pressure and the kind of public attention that could be sparked by opening up about this issue.

As said, overall, one cannot reject the possibility that without Col. Halt knowing, Col. Conrad had initially sent SSgt. Monroe Nevels out to the landing site in the forest to assess the situation so that he could then control the information he was given, in what amounts to a cover-up, implemented with the assistance of the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler.

[ccxxi] Quoting Col. Ted Conrad from the interview conducted by Dr. David Clarke:

> "They [Lt. Englund and SSgt. Nevels] reported the events of the previous night and thinking there might be a recurrence, Halt decided to ride along with the shift

leader, [Lt. Englund] which he did. Aside from that, nothing unusual happened."

The Rendlesham Files by Dr. David Clarke, 2010.

This is an interesting comment by the Base Commander Ted Conrad – especially the last part – when it is clear from those involved, and the evidence of the micro-cassette recording that Halt had made, *that a lot of unusual things happened that night.*

[ccxxii] Monroe Nevels' testimony that has the Deputy Base Commander Halt leaning over the table to ask him if it was alright if he could tag along, could be considered a ticking 'time bomb' in terms of eventually bringing the truth surrounding Halt's involvement to light. Logic tells us, that if Lt. Col. Halt had been told by the Base Commander to go out and investigate, he would not have leaned quietly across the table to an NCO Staff Sergeant and asked him, 'cap in hand,' if it was alright if he could tag along. Halt would have been in charge, and immediately he would have ordered the Disaster Preparedness Staff Sergeant to go collect his equipment and join him on the team, *as it was now his mission*.

However, if it is true that Conrad had told Halt NOT to get involved, but Halt took the initiative and got involved anyway by following the NCOs out there, who were continuing the mission they had been given so as to take it over, then as the years passed and as the story entered public awareness, this is exactly how Halt had to portray it . . . that he was told by the Base Commander to go investigate, and it was his mission. In other words, it would appear that Halt had hijacked Monroe Nevels' mission and then made him and Lt. Englund part of his team by presenting an account of events that would have unfolded and evolved naturally if he had indeed been ordered to lead the investigation. (To perhaps weigh a more balanced perspective on this issue, see also Note 29 above.)

[ccxxiii] *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident* by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

[ccxxiv]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[ccxxv]

Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.

[ccxxvi]

Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.

[ccxxvii]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[ccxxviii] Based on what Monroe has said, it would now appear to anyone that the literature which has relied on Col. Halt's statements over the years and for which he has been interviewed simply reflects Halt's attempts to appropriate Lt. Englund into his own timeline of events as his personal 'lackey' and driver to give the impression it was Lt. Col. Halt's mission from the outset. Again, Lt. Englund was answerable to Col. Conrad, as it was Conrad who ordered him to assist SSgt. Monroe Nevels in the mission he had tasked him with. However, we would emphasize that *all this is speculation*, and we leave it to the reader be the judge based on what we have presented.

[ccxxix] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[ccxxx] *Ibid*. Halt is quoted as adding the following:

> "A day or two later [Going by accounts, it was the day following the 'third night' incident], I took Conrad and his family out and Conrad had no idea where the site was and never mentioned being there prior. Something doesn't sound right. Several years ago, I challenged Monroe's comment of having been there prior and he did not give me an acceptable answer. That all being said, Conrad may have been read in on the 'cover-up', but they would have never have trusted Monroe. If you talk to Monroe, ask him specifically when he claims to have been out. It's certainly possible Conrad was out there earlier, but that puts him in the middle of the cover-up. Conrad is not being honest. His wife and son have told John Burroughs there's more to the story. Maybe one of them will talk more?"
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

When Halt says *". . . they would never have trusted Monroe,"* this is in the context that if Conrad was part of a cover-up, then Monroe Nevels, who is honest and has integrity, would never have been party to it and wouldn't have been trusted to be involved in a cover-up. (As for the reference to John Burroughs, who had visited Ted Conrad with Linda Moulton Howe and Monroe Nevels, see Note 220 above, and also the Chapter 16: *Hunted by Lions, Tigers, and Bears.*)

It is worth quoting Nick Pope here:

> "The confusion over the earlier visit that Monroe Nevels made to the landing site is interesting, but it would be a shame if he and Charles Halt fell out over this, as it doesn't detract from the importance of the visit they made to the landing site together, as recorded on Halt's audio tape. I believe I asked Monroe about his earlier visit when I interviewed him for the episode of The Unexplained Files, entitled 'Are Aliens attacking our Nuclear Arsenal?', but if I did, it clearly didn't make the final edit. That's not surprising, as it is standard practice in the TV industry to film much more material than is required. I do clearly recall discussing this with Monroe informally, off camera, and if he says he was out in the forest earlier that day on the instructions of Colonel Conrad, then I accept that assurance absolutely. If anything, the revelation serves only to reinforce how seriously all the senior command personnel took the incident."
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the*

World's Best-Documented UFO Incident by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

[ccxxxi] In early 1983, Colonel Ted Conrad was interviewed for an article by *OMNI* journalist Eric Mishera. (See Note 460). In the *OMNI Magazine* article, we are told that Conrad had visited the landing site on the morning of December 26, 1980:

> "Acting on the reports made by his men Colonel Conrad began a brief investigation of the incident in the morning. He went into the forest and located a triangular pattern ostensibly made by the tripod legs. He claims that he never observed any aliens. But he did interview two of the eyewitnesses and concludes; *"Those lads saw something, but l don't know what it was.""*

OMNI Magazine (Volume 5 Number 6) *Anti Matter*, 'UFO UPDATE,' March 1983, p. 115.

Conrad's visit to the landing site, is supported by another source. In an email to Jim Penniston dated, Wednesday, April 4, 2012 10:27 a.m., David Coffey (a former SSgt), who was the Senior Central Security Controller, during December 1980, wrote:

> "After shift I was asked to accompany the Security Police Commander, [most likely Major Drury, who was the Deputy SPC] the Base Commander [Col. Conrad] and unfortunately I forget who else to the site where they found the impressions in the ground and took concrete samples. Maj Drury also tried to talk to a local farmer he saw in the area, but that individual had not seen a thing."

It is possible that Lieutenant Englund had also been present at the landing site, as one of those whom David Coffey does not remember, but who had also accompanied the Base Commander (Conrad), and so this would explain how Englund knew where the landing site was. Either that, or Englund was given directions by Col. Conrad, whom David Coffey says was also present by citing his rank. (For more on this visit to the landing site, see Notes 159 and 160).

[ccxxxii] *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

[ccxxxiii] *Left at East Gate, by* Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 337).

[ccxxxiv] From the written testimony of Monroe Nevels sent to the authors on February 10, 2017.

[ccxxxv] Quote:

> "When Halt reached Nevilles, a keen amateur photographer (although Halt claims he was a professional), he instructed him on what equipment to

gather and reminded him to take along his camera."

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery
by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

It is a fact that on occasion, Col. Halt has also referred to Nevels as an amateur photographer, and as late as 2010. For example:

> "And I went to the Disaster Preparedness Officer [Capt. Sue Jones], and I said who's your standby person? And she said, 'Monroe Nevels,' and I knew Nevels because Nevels had been involved in a lot of exercises we had and I know he was a very good amateur photographer. In fact, he had a degree in photography and he worked part time for the base newspaper."

Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.

Monroe Nevels told us that he is in fact a professional photographer and was a professional photographer at the time of the incident.

[ccxxxvi] Quoting Charles Halt:

> "I had taken my small cassette recorder along with me, not specifically for this instance. It's just that any time I went around the Base, I would take this little recorder along, record things that need to be done, a fence that needed to be mended, or a road needing to be paved, or whatever I noticed, or something out of the ordinary . . . and I'd bring it back and flip it to the secretary, and she'd type it up, then, at the next staff meeting, would mark who had the action on the items, and pass it them out for tasking . . . so I'd taken it along that night, just because I thought I might need to take some notes and it was probably 35, 40 degrees, with a stiff wind blowing off the coast, and quite cold . . . [. . .] "Basically, what happened, I took the pocket recorder along and just dropped it in my pocket, and I'd pick it up, and every few minutes I would say what was going on."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[ccxxxvii] *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001). In the book that Nick Pope co-authored with Jim Penniston and John Burroughs, Nick also writes that Halt took spare batteries and several micro-cassettes.

Quoting Nick Pope:

> "Halt brought the hand-held cassette recorder that he habitually carried with him (like Agent Cooper in the cult TV series Twin Peaks) to document his observations and thoughts. He also took spare batteries and several micro-cassettes. Other items included flashlights, radios, a Starlight Scope (i.e. a night vision device) and some utility jackets, in view of the extreme cold."
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret),
> (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

However, in recent interviews Halt says he only took ONE tape and NO spare batteries. Here's what Halt says in the interview with radio host Jimmy Church in 2014, and following is what he has said for the book he and John Hanson had co-authored and published in 2016:

> "It was a small, little tiny, uh, linear cassette recorder . . . micro cassette recorder. I carried it everywhere all the time, and uh, I would just slide the switch on and occasionally whenever we were doing something make a note or two, so that I would have some notes until the activity picked up let's say. So, the tape is only, uh, I don't know, nineteen, seventeen, eighteen, nineteen minutes long. But we were out there for hours, but I didn't leave the tape run because two reasons. I only had one tape with me, and I didn't have a spare set of batteries. I didn't anticipate being there very long."
>
> *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.*
> Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

> "I only had one tape and no spare batteries, so I only recorded when I thought it important. I never expected to be out that long or to have such an experience."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

Although today Halt is certain that he only took one cassette tape along with him that night, there still remain glaring discrepancies concerning this, which any researcher will take note, and which goes beyond the excuse of faulty or fading memory.

Here's what Georgina Bruni had to say from her interviews with Halt during 1997, and we can see why she wrote that along with the tape recorder, Lt. Col. Halt had also taken two cassette tapes and a fresh set of batteries:

> "When I asked Halt if he had taken more than one tape with him into the forest, he replied, 'I may have put

> another one in my pocket.' Apparently, he did. On a British lecture tour in the early nineties Halt told the audience that he had picked up the tape recorder, a fresh set of batteries and two tapes which he dropped into his pocket. This confirmed my suspicions that there were at least two cassette tapes used that night. If Halt had two tapes on his person, and each tape was approximately twenty minutes each side, that means there could have been up to eighty minutes of recording time. At the very least, forty minutes if the tapes only recorded on one side. When I asked Halt what happened to the other tape, he said, 'I can't say what became of it.' Yet in an interview with Jonathon Dillon, for Sightings magazine in 1997, he makes no mention of the other tape.
>
> > My pocket recorder only holds about twenty minutes or so, of audiotape, so how did I manage to tape over four hours of commentary? Sure, the tape recording shows over two hours have elapsed but that's because I had to be as brief as possible because I didn't have more tape with me.
>
> Six months after I first questioned Halt about the tapes, he admitted that he did take two tapes with him, but that he only used one. When I asked him why he had not used the other cassette tape, he said, 'I don't know why.'"
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 198).

Later, towards the end of 1999, Charles Halt admitted to Georgina Bruni that he had four to five hours of tape, which she would never be allowed to hear. She asked Halt to explain, but Halt just repeated that she would never be allowed to hear them.

As Jim Penniston and I had agreed, it is unlikely that four to five hours of tape would have been recorded on mini-audio cassettes. As Jim said, the tape that Halt claims to have in his possession must be a copy of the WCP (Woodbridge Command Post) tape, which recorded all the radio transmissions of the first night – the night of December 25 into the morning of the December 26, 1980. Perhaps a copy escaped General Gabriel, who collected all the command post recording reels of the first night's events at the Pentagon, and this scenario seems to be the most likely explanation. Jim added that he was sure there was nothing but worthless recording from the night Halt was out there, as they used the Command Net and not Security.

Then we found this quote supposedly made by Colonel Charles I. Halt in the book he co-authored with John Hanson, although there is no source or date given to it:

> "Another interesting thing is that the Command Post, the Senior Command Post not the Police Command Post, the one that my radio tied into (which only talked to the Commanders and the other agencies outside of the base) had a 12 hour 12 inch commercial tape recorder. This recorded everything said last night and everything said in the Command Post. Every shift that came on duty looked at that tape and turned it over if there was nothing of any great significance. I know for a fact that somebody kept that tape. They copied that transmission or wiped that portion of the tape because a friend of mine heard it from somebody else in intelligence."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

It would appear that Charles Halt was talking about the portion of the tape in question of the transmissions made on the third night, and of course a tape would have existed which included the first night's transmissions. Perhaps it is a copy of one or both portions of these tapes, which he now has in his possession, and that this is what he was referring to when he told Georgina Bruni that he had four to five hours of tape, which she would never be allowed to hear. To date, no one has heard the tape.

[ccxxxviii] *Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident*. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.
[ccxxxix]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[ccxl]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.
[ccxli]

Charles Halt in an email sent to the authors, dated February 3, 2019. Note: As Charles Halt had explained in the book he co-authored with John Hanson, Major Zickler…

> "…stayed at the party, as did all the other police officers. Zickler didn't want to be involved publically. He certainly got involved later behind the scenes."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

As is evident from what has been gathered, Major Zickler was already involved behind the scenes after the first night's events. (See also Col. Halt's quoted comments in Note 22 in the end notes of chapter, *Afterburn*).

[ccxlii] For example, Col. Halt had first spoke publicly on the Rendlesham Incident at a conference in Leeds known amongst Rendlesham researchers as *"The Halt Address."* According to researcher Ronnie Dugdale, who writes that he has the full transcript of the conference in his archive taken from a secretly recorded tape, nowhere did Halt mention that Sgt Adrian Bustinza was a member of his team that he took out to investigate the phenomena on the evening of the 27th into the early hours of the

morning of the 28th December 1980.

Dugdale adds that at the end of the presentation Col. Halt was asked by a member of the audience, ""Was Sgt Adrian Bustinza with you during your investigations?" and Col. Halt replied, "No he was not." A few minutes later another member of the audience, certain he must be mistaken, again asked him if Adrian was with him, and back came the reply, "No!" Compare that to what the Colonel is saying nowadays, that Adrian stuck to him like glue and never left his side?" (See also Note 59 below.) Source: Ronnie Dugdale from a Facebook message, posted January 2019.

[ccxliii] Quoting Col. Halt:

> "I did not know Bustinza's name until years later. I just knew there was a security Staff Sgt in the jeep when they picked me up and he stayed with us the whole time until we returned to the vehicles."
>
> Col. Halt to researcher/author Sacha Christie, quoted in a Facebook message, January 2019.

[ccxliv] *Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident*, with hosts Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs, posted August 29, 2015.
[ccxlv]

Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 15 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, 'Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?* By Ray W. Boeche, published in MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.
[ccxlvi]

Ibid.
[ccxlvii]

Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident, posted August 29, 2015.

[ccxlviii] Perhaps this little 'outing' in the forest by the off-duty Burroughs and his two off-duty friends on Saturday December 27 makes sense of the seemingly bizarre things Col. Halt has said in various interviews concerning Burroughs:

> "John Burroughs, who had been far more affected by the earlier UFO sighting, stayed out in the forest for days, waiting for the UFO to return." [. . .] "I sent out blankets and food to Burroughs, but he didn't accept them."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

And in the book *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles, we have this quote:

> "In August 1983 he [Col. Halt] chatted with Brenda Butler and Dot Street. Here he reported that the experience on the first night involved three men and that one of them was so disturbed by it he wanted to stay in the forest. Friends took blankets out to him: "He wouldn't come back . . . He felt as if he had been close

> to something historic. I was worried about him . . .” This man may have been John Cadbury.” [The pseudonym for John Burroughs was “John Cadbury.”]
>
> *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles (Global Communications Inc, 1991).

Anyone well-read on the Rendlesham Incident who then reads these quotes spoken by Col. Halt for the first time would be puzzled, thinking this could not have happened with personnel outside a USAF base, and that perhaps Halt was joking and ridiculing Burroughs over his apparent obsession – which would be a typical thing Burroughs would do, being considered a ‘loose cannon,’ which is how Col. Halt referred to him in Burroughs’ own words.

Quoting John Burroughs:

> “Col. Halt when I first went public with my experience stating I was involved in the first and third night, you said I was never involved at all in the third night. Well your tape proved that I was. You then said I never came forward and met up with you. However, I have a taped interview where you state that I did indeed come forward and met up with your group. I have been told that your reasoning was that I was loose cannon and would talk too much to the press about the incident.”
>
> From: An Open Letter to:
> Gen. Gordon Williams – Wing Commander,
> Col. Theodore J Conrad - Vice Wing Commander,
> Col. Sam P Morgan – Base Commander,
> Col. Charles I Halt – Dept. Base Commander,
> Lt Col. Malcolm Zickler – Security Police Commander.
> Uploaded: Friday, 10 July 2009:

And as for Halt saying that Burroughs felt he had “been close to something historic,” this is something Burroughs would have believed, and this is evident in recent comments made by Burroughs and also in his demeanor and attitude, which show that he believes he was somehow “chosen” or “destined” to have been involved in the incidents. However, although it could be said that Halt was mistaken when he says Burroughs had been out in the forest for days, and wouldn’t come back, or that Burroughs had played this down by saying he was only out there for one day, what Col. Halt had said about sending blankets and food out to him, is perhaps logical if Burroughs had been out in the forest while he was off-duty and on the day before the events began in the evening. But how did Lt. Col. Halt know that Burroughs was out in the forest? And really, would Halt be that charitable to send him food and blankets? Perhaps but it’s a strange thing for a Deputy Base Commander to have done.

[ccxlix] John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.
[ccl]

Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 15 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, ‘Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?* By Ray W. Boeche, published in MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.

[ccli]

Adrian Bustinza also neglects to mention the left turn (east) into forest, which is what he would have had to make to reach the staging area where everyone had gathered, some fifty to a hundred yards north of the landing site, according to Monroe Nevels and Col. Halt.
[cclii]

Quoting Chuck De Caro:

> "I spoke to Lieutenant Englund and he was absolutely terrified. He was stupefied. Stuttering, he said, 'I don't want to talk about it."
>
> *Source: "You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

This description of Bruce Englund is again unlike the person Lt. Col. Halt knew, and unlike the person John Burroughs described when talking about meeting up with Lt. Col. Halt and the team on the third night. (See Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*).

[ccliii] It is a fact that, unlike the accounts given by Halt and Bustinza, Monroe's account is true and tried and has remained the same without dramatic embellishment and even without the kinds of inconsistencies we would expect and accept because of fading memory. Over the course of a year, we went over and over his account with him, and noted that when Monroe was unsure of something he would say so, but his account never changed.

[ccliv] *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

[cclv] Randy D. Smith was an Honor Graduate from Air Training Command and a member of the 81st Security Police Squadron at the time of the incidents, who was interviewed by UFO researcher and skeptic, James Easton on April 5, 1999:

> "I was either a SrA. [Senior Airman] or Sgt. at the time. It was Christmas time 1980. 'D' flight had been working the 3-11 p.m. shift, while 'C' flight had been working the 11 p.m. – 7 a.m. shift. It was a quiet, clear night. I believe I was working 'Whiskey 5,' which was the alarm response team in the weapons storage area on Bentwaters. I am unsure of my partner that night. I had free range of one half of the WSA [Weapons Storage Area] and I was driving a pickup truck. Clarence George was my area supervisor. Rick Bobo was the SPCDS [Small Permanent Communications Display Segment – a 'computerized alarm system'] tower operator in the WSA.
>
> "The next thing I recall, not long after the shift began, perhaps midnight or so, I heard Bob Ball come over the radio and request that the aircraft control tower give him permission to cross the active runway; it saves fifteen minutes driving time, as opposed to driving the

perimeter road. At that point, I knew SOMETHING was happening because no-one ever crossed the active runway unless there was an extreme emergency.

"Bob, perhaps logically accompanied by Lt. Bruce Englund, crossed the runway on Bentwaters, they picked up Lt. Col. Halt and some equipment and returned by the same route.

"I would say that between 30 minutes to an hour had passed since Bob made his first request to cross. They then proceeded to re-cross the runway and went out the back gate headed toward RAF Woodbridge. After that, the radio was quiet for a long time."

UFO UpDates by James Easton, April 5, 1999

Later in the same article James Easton adds that Randy Smith, *". . . believes he heard the radio traffic re Ball crossing active, 'around' midnight, could have been as early as 11:30."* As we can see, SSgt. Monroe Nevels is not mentioned, and Randy Smith says *"logically accompanied by Lt. Bruce Englund"* – which means he cannot be certain of this. It's likely that Smith had based this on what he may have read or heard, as it is mentioned that Randy Smith had contacted James Easton after coming across some lengthy articles Easton had written in 1998, *following extensive research into the case.* A researcher would naturally take the view that Lt. Englund was with MSgt. Ball . . . until he or she had then read the testimony of Monroe Nevels, who insists that Lt. Englund was with him all night and had driven him to the forest, and that he and Englund did not ride in any vehicle with MSgt. Ball or Lt. Col. Halt. So, on the strength of Monroe Nevels' testimony, which is not undermined with the inconsistencies and uncertainties that are clearly evident in Col. Halt's accounting through the years, again, the authors contend that only MSgt. Bob Ball picked up Lt. Col. Halt and both then proceeded to the forest – although it is possible that there were other personnel in the Jeep with MSgt. Ball. Our conclusion is further supported by logic in consideration of Monroe's testimony that Halt was ordered not to go out there by Col. Conrad, and which is supported by what Conrad had told Monroe later. (See Note 220 above). This adds more fuel to the theory that Lt. Col. Halt, who took the initiative to take over the mission given to Nevels and Englund, had much to gain from giving the public the impression that Nevels and Englund were both with him as part of his team, as if this was his mission, as ordered by the Base Commander. (See Note 262 below).

[cclvi] Email to Jim Penniston and Gary Osborn by Col. Halt, Monday, March 11, 2019.

[cclvii] *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 220).

[cclviii]

It is, of course. possible that based on his apparent dislike of Lt. Col. Halt, Malcolm Zickler was being disingenuous in his reply to Georgina Bruni's question. It is also possible that Zickler had denied all involvement, and not necessarily to make it appear that Col. Halt had been untruthful because his and Lt. Col. Halt's relationship was strained. As Col. Halt has said, Zickler didn't want to be seen to be involved publically. (See Note 241 above.) There is the possibility that, with his mentioning having discussed arrangements with Major Zickler when giving his account, that Col. Halt was merely reinforcing his position of having been tasked with the mission to the forest by the Base Commander, Conrad.

[cclix]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cclx]

Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.

[cclxi]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 225).

Georgina Bruni adds that she had asked Tony Brisciano if he was absolutely certain it was Lieutenant Colonel Halt who was with the patrol. However, Brisciano was confident that it was Halt he saw and had issues with. Bruni adds that she thought it possible that Halt had stopped off at the Woodbridge gas pumps on his way into the forest, *but Halt denied it was him.*

However, with what Col. Halt has said himself about driving by the motor pool at Bentwaters to fill up the Jeep with gas, it's likely that he could very well have been the superior officer there, and that the reason why he denies he was there is simply because his obnoxious behavior that night hardly places him in a good light. What it does reveal, though, is just how big an operation this was. And it doesn't seem right that such a huge operation would have been entrusted to a Sergeant only and needed a superior officer to supervise it.

[cclxii] Monroe's version of events, which has already proven consistent with what happened in the Officer's Club, as supported by Col. Conrad, is the one that stands out from these uncertainties. So, our conclusion is that SSgt. Nevels was already continuing his mission with Lt. Englund, and that Lt. Col. Halt – who, in his account, seems to have commandeered Nevels and Englund as part of his own team (because in the eyes of the public this was his mission) – really only had MSgt. Ball (Major Zickler's on-duty NCO) collect him from his home and from there Halt was driven to the forest. It is a mystery, though, who had arranged Halt's pick-up by MSgt. Ball, especially if Zickler had denied being involved.

[cclxiii] Charles Halt in an email sent to the authors, dated February 3, 2019.

[cclxiv]

Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

[cclxv]

'*Strange But True?*' London Weekend Television. December 9, 1994. (Presenter: Michael Aspel).

[cclxvi]

Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO," Season 4, Episode 1. September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).

[cclxvii]

Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident, with hosts Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs, posted August 29, 2015.

[cclxviii]

Ibid.

[cclxix]

In the chapter of her book titled, *Adrian Bustinza's Testimony*, Georgina Bruni writes the following, obviously based on what Adrian Bustinza had told her:

> "The men then drove to the forest to meet with patrols who were already on site. As they approached, a group of airmen rushed out of the forest and told Englund that

> they had encountered a bright light which was surrounded by a strange yellow mist. Englund reported the matter to his superiors and was instructed to round up more personnel and collect some light-alls."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001) pp. 187 – 188.

This incident can only relate to when Sgt. Bustinza and MSgt. Ball were returning to the staging post so that Bustinza could use a pick-up truck to collect up the lightalls and refuel then at the Woodbridge pumps. Apparently, the airmen rushing out of the forest included A1C Greg Battram, as his story fits this incident. As we can see, with what was apparently told to Georgina, Bustinza placed Lt. Englund with him, as if Englund was either supervising or driving. However, Englund could not have been with Bustinza at this time, as he was with SSgt. Nevels. It is more likely that Bustinza had mixed up MSgt. Ball and Englund, or Georgina had mistaken Englund for MSgt. Ball and had confused the rest, as no doubt, Englund was notified of this incident and had called his supervisors, and of course it was Bustinza who had been ordered to collect the lightalls by Lt. Englund.

[cclxx] Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 15 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, 'Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?* By Ray W. Boeche, published in MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.
[cclxxi]

Timothy Egercic, a Security Policeman on 'D Flight' at Bentwaters, was a radio operator who had control of the net, with all security transmissions going through him at CSC. Apparently – and if this has been reported correctly – Egercic says that it was just after midnight (most likely the third night), that a patrol had opened the back gate at RAF Bentwaters (Butley Gate) so that MSgt. Ball and whoever was with him could then go forward to RAF Woodbridge. Egercic says that as MSgt. Ball had entered the forest on that night, transmissions were weak, despite the fact that Egercic was using the most powerful radio transmitter equipment on the base. Source: *The Rendlesham Files: Britain's Roswell?* by Andrew Pike, 2017.
[cclxxii]

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "Conrad may have the time right as the party did not start early. We met with Bruce for about 10 minutes. I then talked to Zickler and he told he would have Ball accompany me. I knew Ball and agreed. I talked to Sue Jones and she told me Nevilles was her standby. I told her to have him meet us at his office. I went home to change and about 30 minutes later Bruce, Ball and Bustinza came in the jeep and picked me up. We then went to the Disaster Preparedness Office to get Nevilles. l Spent 10 minutes or more there. We then went to the motor pool for gas. Several cops were there complaining the lightalls needed gas as they wouldn't run in the forest. The attendant kept saying they were full. The jeep was crowded with the 5 of us. It was somewhere near

midnight when I got to the forest. Keeping track of the time wasn't important then. I don't know when the party at the Woody Bar ended as I had asked Conrad to take my wife home. I know I didn't get home until 4 – 5 a.m. Hope this helps.
Chuck"

Email to Jim Penniston and Gary Osborn by Col. Halt, Monday, March 11, 2019.

As we can see, in his response to us, Col. Halt continued with the same account he has given in recent interviews, but this time saying that he went home to change and that it was *then about thirty minutes later* that he was picked up in the Jeep. So now, Halt is saying that the thirty minutes of time before being picked up began just after he returned home, which for him makes more time to have gone to the DP Office, then his own office to pick up some equipment, and finally drive home to get changed. Again, Monroe tells us that Halt never did visit the DP Office and that this is likely a fabrication. In his response to us, Col. Halt also mentioned being driven to the motor pool for gas, that several cops were there complaining the lightalls needed gas as they wouldn't run in the forest, and that the attendant kept saying they were full – all of which must be true. And lastly, he tells us that it was near to midnight when he arrived in the forest.

[cclxxiii] *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident* by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).
[cclxxiv]

Ibid..
[cclxxv]

Ibid.
[cclxxvi]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.
[cclxxvii]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[cclxxviii]

Unsolved Mysteries; "Bentwaters UFO," Season 4, Episode 1. September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).
[cclxxix]

Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident, with hosts Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs, posted August 29, 2015.
[cclxxx]

Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cclxxxi] Quoting Georgina Bruni:

"I thought it was unusual that Lieutenant Colonel Halt would leave several patrols back at the clearing with the vehicles and weapons, without any senior supervision. At least no other officer is named as taking control of the confused patrols and Halt admitted to me that he was the

officer in charge who ordered them to stay at the clearing. It was not until later that Sergeant Frail appears to have turned up, and there is no evidence to say that he was with the patrols that Halt had left behind at the clearing. His voice can be heard on the tape recording of the incident, which means he must have been in close range to Halt's patrol. For whatever reason, Halt decided to make his way to the initial landing site, which he explained was difficult to find in the dark, and apparently it took some time before they managed to reach it."

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery
by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 198).

[cclxxxii] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[cclxxxiii]

Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 14 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, 'Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?* By Ray W. Boeche, published in MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.

[cclxxxiv] Halt has always maintained that his team was no more than five men. The few men Lt. Col. Halt names as being part of his team are Lt. Englund, MSgt. Ball, SSgt. Nevels, and more recently, Sgt. Bustinza.

"With me was Bobby Ball, Bruce Englund, Sergeant Nevels, Bustinza and myself – five of us."

Charles Halt being interviewed on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode174, posted December 23, 2014.

Sergeant Fail was also there, as his voice is heard on the Halt tape recorded at the landing site. According to Adrian Bustinza, those who were also present, but at the staging area, were Sergeant Medina, Mark Thompson, Sergeant Combs and Airman Palmer. Charles Halt states that the last three people, including Major Zickler were NOT present in the forest:

"Major Zickler was not present as he stayed at the party with Conrad, as he didn't want his name in it. Verano, Palmer, Combs and Thompson were not there . . ."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cclxxxv] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[cclxxxvi]

Ibid.

[cclxxxvii]

Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.

[cclxxxviii]

Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO," Season 4, Episode 1. September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).

[cclxxxix]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[ccxc]

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "Well, Bruce, I think had his, had his Glock, which is a short version of an M-16 under his coat, I think, I don't know. I heard that later. I didn't see it, but I wasn't looking for it. I didn't see anyone else with weapons. They knew better than to take weapons off-base."
>
> [ccxci]
>
> Charles Halt on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

Ibid.

[ccxcii]

After going through the events we have addressed in exhausting detail, which also include Sgt. Adrian Bustinza, it would surprise anyone to discover that for many years since the incident, Halt hadn't mentioned Sgt. Bustinza in his earlier accounts and interviews *and had even denied that he was there.* However, it later became evident that Sgt. Bustinza was indeed with Halt and the team in the forest, because as already mentioned, Bustinza's voice could later clearly be heard on the original audiotape that Halt had recorded his voiced observations in real time and which researcher/author Georgina Bruni had acquired in 1998.

The audio on the second, third and fourth generation copies of cassette tapes that had been made from the original mini-cassette tape – were so badly degraded that it was difficult to discern what was being said in the background and by whom. However, during the first 13 minutes of the 18.13-minutes of the original audiotape, on which Halt was speaking every now and again to record what was transpiring during the whole three to four hours of events, Sgt. Bustinza's voice can clearly be heard in the background during the time when he was trying to contact CSC at Bentwaters and also East Gate security about the lightalls and on a radio that was also malfunctioning, with the static getting worse.

As already mentioned, only recently has Charles Halt explained his earlier statements about Bustinza not being there that night, saying that he didn't know the Sergeant who was with him at the time was Sgt. Bustinza . . . *the same person who had later come forward in 1984 to talk about the incident and began divulging details about the incident that Halt denied had ever happened.* This is possibly why Halt either denied that Bustinza was out there with him when asked or had instead said it was possible and that he didn't know, but we will revisit this later in another chapter.

As we know, Halt has said that he now identifies Bustinza as being in the Jeep when he was picked up by Lt. Englund and MSgt. Ball, and that Sgt. Bustinza *was with him the whole time of the incident*, which is also problematic because it has been said, and even by Bustinza himself, that he was ordered to pick up the lightalls . . . which meant leaving Halt and the site.

[ccxciii] In his memo written to the British MOD (Ministry of Defense), dated January 13, 1981, Lt. Col. Halt writes: "*The next day, three depressions 1.5 inches deep and 7 inches in diameter were found*

where the object had been sighted on the ground." However, years later, during his interview with Alejandro Rojas in November 2010, Col. Halt says the depressions were equal distance apart, about a foot in diameter, and three to four inches deep." (See: *Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident*. Open Minds Radio. Published on November 30, 2010.) And as recent as 2018, Col. Halt is on record as saying that each of the circular depressions were around two inches in depth and measured ten to twelve inches – even fourteen inches in diameter, which is quite large for a triangular craft that was 3 x 3 x 3 meters long, and would hardly justify Halt's comment of *"Is that all the bigger they are?"* (See video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.)

Jim Penniston says that the three depressions were seven to eight inches in diameter – each roughly the size of a dinner plate. Again, the estimate of seven inches for the diameter of the depressions was included in Halt's memo. When viewing photos of the plaster-cast impressions Jim Penniston made – especially the one held up by Col. Halt in a photo taken of him – Jim Penniston's diameter estimate would be more correct.

[ccxciv] Quoting Col. Halt:

> "When we approached the site, we found the three indentations. We measured them, and you can hear the distance on there. I think there were eight or nine, seven feet apart, very triangular . . ."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[ccxcv] Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.
[ccxcvi]

Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).
[ccxcvii]

Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 14 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, 'Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?* By Ray W. Boeche, published in MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.
[ccxcviii]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2000, p. 28).
[ccxcix]

See page 28 of *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident* by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).
[ccc]

The following is from the Notes supplied by Monroe Nevels included with his testimony he sent to the authors on February 10, 2017:

> "Beta radiation can burn the skin and if it gets into direct contact is more intense than sunburn and takes longer to go away. But it has to go into direct contact. If you

> inhale it, it will cause you some damage so a mask is needed. I went out there with the radiometer and walking around I never felt effects of burns. Gamma does the most damage though."

[ccci]

Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.
[cccii]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2000).

[ccciii] Quoting Col. Halt: *". . . the site was hottest, so to speak, in the center formed by the triangle." The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[ccciv] *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 198).

[cccv] By taking the soil samples, it became apparent that Lt. Col. Halt and the team had been at the correct landing site, as traces of calcium carbonate left behind by the Plaster of Paris SSgt. Jim Penniston had had used to make casts of the indentations were evident inside the depressions where the soil samples were taken.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "I also took a soil sample. The interesting thing is, a British friend, three or four days later came out and he also took a soil sample and he had it analyzed, and I had it analyzed later, and we can talk about that. And he said, 'Oh I know how this happened, there are traces of calcium carbonate there.' I said, 'Yes, Penniston made the plaster casts, so obviously there would be some calcium carbonate there.' So I knew I was where he took the casts."
>
> *Charles Halt, Perspective on The Rendlesham Forest Incident & More*.
> Host: Martin Willis. December 14, 2016.

[cccvi] Monroe Nevels, who was clearly not aware of this request by Burroughs, as was picked up on the radio by MSgt. Ball and forwarded to Lt. Col. Halt, has always maintained that he never saw John Burroughs there in the forest with the team that night.

> "John Burroughs tried several times to get me to tell him he was there by asking me if I saw him out there that night/morning. John is a very tall man – well over six feet tall, which means he is difficult NOT to notice, but I don't ever recall seeing him there."
>
> Monroe Nevels talking with Jim Penniston and Gary Osborn (Skype call, July 27, 2017).

We are told by Burroughs himself, that he, and whoever he was riding with in the vehicle, had first been detained at the East Gate and then later the staging area for some time having been ordered by Lt. Col. Halt not to come out to the landing site in the forest, which is why Nevels states he never saw Burroughs. However, it later transpired and through the testimony of Adrian Bustinza who first came forward in 1984, that Burroughs had indeed joined Halt's team later. (See Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*.)

[cccvii] John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.
[cccviii]

During an interview with radio host Jimmy Church, Charles Halt mentions that Burroughs had *showed up at some point*, and it is obvious listening to the tape evidence, this was while Halt's team were investigating the trees surrounding the landing site:

Col. Charles Halt:

> "Burroughs showed up at some point. [. . .] Burroughs hitched a ride, best I can determine – he'll probably tell you that – with one of the patrols, because he was really concerned, and wanted to be involved in everything I guess . . . best way to put it. And that's just John's personality. John showed up at some point while we were looking at the site where the indentations were in the ground, and he called on the radio once or twice, said he wanted to come forward, and I said definitely not. Everybody stay back there and be quiet."
>
> *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cccix] John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.
[cccx]

Quotes by Col. Halt:

> ". . . they're measuring taking radiation readings, which turned out to be about eight to nine, ten times higher than normal background radiation. The area in the center of the triangle formed by the three indentations, has a much higher reading than in the indentations themselves."
>
> *Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident*. Open Minds Radio. Published November 30, 2010.
>
> "Englund takes us to the site where this object supposedly landed two nights before and shows us the indentations in the ground. So we're milling around there taking measurements and readings with the Geiger counter and we obviously get readings which are well above background radiation readings. Uh, Nevels puts together the counter on the tree side towards the three

indentations and its much higher than on the back side of the tree."

FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.
Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

"Four or five of us went into the forest and they showed me where this object had supposedly landed the first night. And we find three indentations in a perfect triangle. We took radiation readings off the trees in the forest that were tall Corsican pines. The side of the tree towards the landing site had much higher readings than the back side." [. . .] ". . . and the indentations in the ground were much higher and the center of the triangle formed by the three were even higher."

UFO Sightings: The Rendlesham Forest Incident,
BBC Sounds. Wednesday, December 26, 2018.

[cccxi] The following is from the Notes supplied by Monroe Nevels included with his testimony he sent to the authors on February 10, 2017:

"The radiation goes out 3 to 4 meters from the source. If the object had touched those trees it could leave residue. If the craft was that close to the trees, then the radiation coming off it was definitely going to make a mark on those trees and so it's no wonder that every one of those trees had evidence.

What I have done is I have researched and gone online to quite a few sources regarding nuclear radiation and getting a take and calling and asking specific questions to get answers. Some of the places I have called didn't know the answers and that makes sense because typically beta radiation does not burn – it has no reason to. Alpha radiation, which only travels a few inches, is only a danger if it is inhaled and bothers internal organs because of the radiation's proximity. Beta travels three to four meters in the air and is about 20,000 times faster than Alpha. It has a shooting force. So, it was Beta that was hitting those trees. I have a theory and believe that it's possible that something inside this craft was spinning if it's glass-like, and this was causing whatever to be thrust from the source like a spinning top. Beta radiation, if it hit those trees like it did, the trees would have had to be in a circle. If there was an internal device inside the craft spinning like a gyroscope, then it explains why the effects were EVEN all the way around the trees. Something inside the craft could have been spinning and causing the movement of

that light moving and perhaps created the bubble of energy and radiation spin.

The radiation emitting from that source is probably because it is being used for fuel. A submarine can stay down for 20 to 25 years before coming up. So, you have to have the Beta emitted from the Gamma. The Beta radiation emitted had to be in a spinning form. If you have a spinning top and you have three legs on it, that top is not going to move, so that legs coming down are going to touch the ground on uneven surfaces but leave the same amount of weight on the pads. On the pads the radiation was minimal compared to the trees. When I did the trees, there was Gamma but very little. Only when I opened up the shield, that the Beta radiation on the tress then emitted long enough for us to take that reading."

[cccxii] Quoting Col. Halt:

"There's, uh, there was a very heavily, mature pine forest we were in. Looking overhead we can see that all the branches were broken, and directly over that site where the three indentations were, you could see the sky and that was the only place in that area you could see through the pine canopy."

Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident.
Open Minds Radio. Published November 30, 2010.

"There appears to be marks on the trees, and if you looked overheard there were very tall Corsican Pines, I mean they were probably 60, 80 feet tall. A heavy canopy over but you could walk through the underneath of it. Uh, you could see a clear opening above us, as though something had . . . and branches on the ground. So this really had me puzzled."

FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.
Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

". . . if you looked overhead, branches were broken as though something could have come up or come down, although I can't say that for a fact. It appeared that way. You could see the sky there and you couldn't see it anywhere else. We were walking around."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cccxiii] Quoting Bobby Ball (Master Sergeant at the time) from his appearance on the TV documentary,

Unsolved Mysteries:

> "It didn't take us long to find what I believe was a landing site of some sort the trees had had branches broken off. As we looked up, and we had high-power flashlights with us, and we could see branches up to an inch two inches in diameter which had either been knocked completely off or had been bent downward and it was clean up to the top of the trees."
>
> *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO,"* Season 4, Episode 1. September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).

[cccxiv] As mentioned in the previous chapter, in much of the literature about the Rendlesham Incident, we are told that picking up the lightalls was a job assigned to Lt. Englund by Lt. Col. Halt. However, it is likely that this relates to the second time when Sgt. Bustinza was ordered to gather up the lightalls again to have them refuelled and also collect fresh lightalls from the motor pool at the Bentwaters base, with all being refuelled at Woodbridge. Apparently, Englund in turn told Sgt. Bustinza to do as was ordered with several other airmen to accompany him. It is also assumed that Englund went with Bustinza, based on the fact that Georgina Bruni writes: *"Englund's patrol then headed for Bentwaters to carry out the orders,* [Halt's orders to pick up lightalls] *leaving the patrols in the forest."* (Bruni, p. 188). However, this is said in the context of the first time Sgt. Bustinza was told to round up the lightalls that had already been deployed in the forest and go and refuel them at the Woodbridge base.

Also, we are told by Georgina Bruni, that after Englund, Bustinza and the patrol had picked up the lightalls at Bentwaters, that instead of taking the short cut they took the usual route back to Woodbridge through the country roads: *"Bustinza remembers Englund cautioning him to drive carefully because there was a lot of commotion with the wildlife, and deer and rabbits were running out of the forest."* (Bruni, p. 188). This last detail appears to show that Englund was indeed believed to have been riding with Bustinza at this stage, as Bruni had assumed. However, Englund could have told Bustinza this before Bustinza left with the rounded-up lightalls to be refuelled and to also go to Bentwaters to pick up the fresh lightalls, and it's likely that this was when Lt. Englund had ordered Bustinza to collect the lightalls and refuel them the SECOND TIME Bustinza was sent out and on the orders of Lt. Col. Halt, and while the team were at the landing site. For some reason, this time Bustinza chose to go the usual, country roads route back to Woodbridge, or was told to by Englund.

In the interview Bustinza did with Larry Fawcett, he says: *"Lieutenant Englund cautioned me to drive with caution on the way over there."* Again, this does not read as if Englund was with Bustinza in the vehicle. Rather, it reads as if Englund had simply warned Bustinza about the wildlife – especially something as large as a deer on the roads before Bustinza departed the site to pick up the lightalls, and really because this was the Queen's forest and British territory, and they didn't want to bring attention to the fact that they had been out there due to any large roadkill evidence.

Again, it is assumed that Lt. Englund was with Sgt. Bustinza's patrol the first time Bustinza refuelled the lightalls, however, Bustinza is on the record as having stated the following in context of the first time he was sent out:

> "So we went back and I don't exactly recall who was with me, I can see their faces but I can't recall their names."
>
> *Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the*

Rendlesham incident, posted August 29, 2015.

From what one can make from this statement, Lt. Englund did not ride with Sgt. Bustinza when he went to collect the lightalls the first time, which is when researchers have placed Lt. Englund with Bustinza, and based on Monroe Nevels' testimony, we can rule out any possibility that Englund went with Bustinza the second time he was sent out to refuel the lightalls.

[cccxv] *Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident*, posted August 29, 2015.

[cccxvi] *Ibid.*

[cccxvii] Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 14 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, 'Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?* By Ray W. Boeche, published in MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.

[cccxviii] *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident* by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAF, ret), and Jim Penniston (USAF ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

[cccxix] *Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident*, posted August 29, 2015).

[cccxx] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

> "I believe it was Bruce Englund who said well look over there, this glowing object. we see this object out in the farmer's field on the coast side, between us and the farmer's house."
>
> Col. Halt being interviewed on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cccxxi] Source: *Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident*. Open Minds Radio. Published November 30, 2010.

[cccxxii] Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.

[cccxxiii] The object was the size of a car according to researcher Gary Heseltine, who writes that this is what Col. Halt had told him. Source: *Rendlesham-Incident Forum, May 2010 Transcript of Col Halt tape*. (Message posted June 4, 2010.) However, this contradicts what Col. Halt has always said . . . that the object was a little larger than a basketball but less than a meter in diameter. Here's an extract from the interview conducted by Sally Rayl with Col. Halt, where Rayl focuses on the size of the lighted object:

> RAYL: "Now, I know it's hard to tell because it was dark that night, but any idea what size the initial red object was? Any idea?"
> HALT: "Nah. I would just have to guess. My guess

would be probably two to three feet, maybe a little less."
RAYL: "Two to three feet?"
HALT: "From the distance, in diameter."
RAYL: "In diameter. So, it's a very small object?"
HALT: "It was a very small object, but it was very bright."
RAYL: "But not a craft that could hold a human being, for example?"
HALT: "No. It couldn't have been. But it appeared to [be] under some kind of intelligent control."

Interview with Colonel Halt by American journalist, Sally Rayl, 1998.

[cccxxiv] All three of us, myself, Monroe Nevels and Jim Penniston, discussed further the issue of the size of the lighted object that was seen in the field and in the treeline on the third night, and agreed that the object seemed to be a shapeshifter both in terms of shape and size. There were reports that night from near the Weapons Storage Area that the objects were really triangular in shape when seen through binoculars, and here we have a correlation with what Jim Penniston witnessed up-close on the first night. Monroe Nevels said that he always knew that the aerial phenomena he and Lt. Col. Halt had seen on the third night were closer to the craft that Jim reported having examined closely. (See Note 361 below.)
[cccxxv]

Skeptics and debunkers of the incident led by Ian Ridpath, have constantly attacked Col. Halt, as they did with the first responders of the first night, making their death-defying theory/assertion that the light he saw was from the Orfordness Lighthouse. However Col. Halt put forward a logical argument during his interview on *Open Minds Radio* with host Alejandro Rojas: Quote:

"We could see the lighthouse. I saw the lighthouse visible most of the time except when we dip down a little bit crossing a field. The lighthouse couldn't have reflected off the farmers windows that was several miles out on the coast."

Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident.
Open Minds Radio. Published on Nov 30, 2010.

[cccxxvi]. . . and especially not if the lighted object was in-between them and the western side of the farmhouse.

Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 15, 1984.
[cccxxvii]

Ibid.
[cccxxviii]

Col. Halt being interviewed on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cccxxix] Monroe's description of what he saw earlier with Lt. Englund and what he saw later is substantiated by what Charles Halt has described in various interviews:

"I kept trying to rationalize . . . what is this? We watched for several minutes and it actually came into the forest that was within a hundred yards, and we could see it very clearly. It moved horizontally through the trees, bobbing up and down and avoiding the trees . . . obviously under some type of intelligent control."

UFO Sightings: The Rendlesham Forest Incident, BBC Sounds. Wednesday, December 26, 2018.

"There was a glowing red object. The best way I can describe it is about the size of a big basketball, and it had a dark center. And it appeared to be shedding something or dripping like molten metal or sparks coming off it. And the center of it sort of winked like an eye."

Charles I. Halt being interviewed on *The Unexplained Files*, Series 2, Episode 7: *Are Aliens Attacking Our Nuclear Arsenal* (Raw TV, London, Englund).

"It appeared oval, like an eye with a dark center, and it appeared to be blinking just like an eye would blink. In other words the black center would disappear, and it was the equivalent of something molten, like dripping off it . . . sort of like steel pouring out of a crucible, and I'm thinking wow what is this?"

UFO Sightings: The Rendlesham Forest Incident, BBC Sounds. Wednesday, December 26, 2018.

"The "eye" was oval, less than a meter in diameter. It was glowing orange/red with a dark black oval like centre. The dark centre would disappear as though pulsing, like an eye winking."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cccxxx] *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO,"* Season 4, Episode 1. September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).

[cccxxxi] Col. Halt being interviewed on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

[cccxxxii] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cccxxxiii] *Ibid*.

[cccxxxiv] During his interview with Georgina Bruni in 1998, Adrian Bustinza told her that after collecting

the lightalls (the second time) he had returned to the edge of the forest at the entrance to the logging road, where he saw a British police car parked on the roadside and two police officers guarding the entrance to the logging road into the forest (Bruni, p. 188).

During the Phenomenon Radio session with guest Ronnie Dugdale, now shown on Linda Moulton Howe's *Earthfiles* videos, John Burroughs, who reads out Bustinza's account from Georgina Bruni's book in a vain attempt to make sense of it, makes this comment:

> "Bustinza arrives there's a British police car and two British policemen guarding the logging road. Now, I was out there, and I never saw the British police cars at any point."
>
> *Linda Moulton Howe and Ronnie Dugdale, Part I, Earthfiles,* uploaded January 29, 2018.

[cccxxxv] *Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident*, posted August 29, 2015.
[cccxxxvi]

Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 15, 1984.
[cccxxxvii]

Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident, posted August 29, 2015).
[cccxxxviii]

Source: *Larry Fawcett interviews Adrian Bustinza 20th April 1984*.
[cccxxxix]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[cccxl]

Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident, posted August 29, 2015).
[cccxli]

Ibid.
[cccxlii]

Ibid.
[cccxliii]

Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.
[cccxliv]

Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 15 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, 'Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?* By Ray W. Boeche, published in MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.)
[cccxlv]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).
[cccxlvi]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[cccxlvii]

Rather than 'bathing' the forest as if it were just an enchanting mist made of dew some two to three feet off the ground, as first described, when Bustinza sees it again, the yellow mist turns out to be an actual object or craft, which then ascends above the ground as Bustinza approaches it and is seen to bob up and down anywhere between ten and twenty feet. Bustinza then describes the yellow mist-like object as transforming into a typical saucer-shaped craft – i.e., flattened around its circular edge but bulging slightly in the center like two dinner plates *vis-à-vis*. All this according to those who believe

Adrian Bustinza was the real focal point of the third night's events, and this will involve self-claimed witness Larry Warren, whose account is questionable.

Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels have never mentioned a tremendously-large flattened, yellow 'mist-like' object, which would imply that at this stage Sgt. Bustinza was in another location of the forest observing another phenomenon, and that aside from this yellow mist-like object, seems to have also been viewing the same light that Lt. Col. Halt and the others were observing and which had moved into the tree line.

As mentioned, Halt is quoted by researcher, Gary Heseltine, as having described the size of the lighted object first seen in the field, as being large as a car. (See Note 323 above.) This would make the object between fourteen and sixteen feet in diameter, which is quite large. But the size of the yellow mist-like object Bustinza claims to have seen – especially the second time he saw it – has not been given. Bustinza just says it was of a tremendous size. Bustinza says that it was very large. This must have been larger than the 9 x 9 x 9-feet triangular craft that SSgt. Jim Penniston had witnessed. But unlike Bustinza's description of the object, which he says was flattened around the circular edge but bulged slightly in the middle – i.e., disk-like – the object that Halt had observed with his team was spherical, and according to him, "orangey-red," even though SSgt. Nevels and the others in his team had reported it as being yellow. So, overall, despite its difference in shape, and it should be noted that the object seems capable of shift-shaping and even changing its size, which would explain how it was able to move between the trees . . . *could the object observed by Sgt. Bustinza at this stage of the incident, have been the same object that Lt. Col. Halt and the others had observed?*

[ccxlviii] In relatively recent interviews and while reciting his account, Bustinza will say that he later followed this same yellow-mist-like object, as described, into the open field, where he says it had landed, and in the presence of Lt, Col. Halt and numerous others who were observed by Bustinza to be surrounding it. He was then told by Lt. Col. Halt to surround it too. (See Chapter 13: *The Coda Decade*.)

It is interesting that if Jim Penniston did indeed wake up within the early hours of December 28 to write down the last three pages of ones and zeros, then he did so when yet another incident was taking place in Rendlesham Forest and at the same location where he had encountered the black triangular craft in the clearing. (See Note 164.) That this is exactly what happened makes sense, as the *first time* Jim Penniston felt compelled to write down the ones and zeros was when the sighting by Airman Lori Buoen was taking place, again at around 2:00 on the morning of December 27, and the *second time* Jim wrote down the ones and zeros, which became the last three pages of sixteen in total, would have coincided with the third night's events on the morning of December 28.

Now, when these last three pages were finally deciphered in 2012 by Joe Luciano, they were found to contain the words, "EYES OF YOUR EYES" in the message. It would be curiously synchronistic and meaningful if Jim Penniston DID indeed write down the remainder of the binary code message when the third night's events were taking place in the early hours of December 28th, because this would have coincided with the time when Lt. Col. Halt and his team were engaged with a lighted object *that resembled an EYE blinking or winking at them.*

[cccxlix] Col. Halt being interviewed on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

[ccl] *Ibid.*

[ccli] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cclii] *UFO Sightings: The Rendlesham Forest Incident*, BBC Sounds. Wednesday, December 26, 2018.

[ccliii]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[ccccliv]

Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.
[ccclv]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[ccclvi]

Interview with Colonel Halt by American journalist, Sally Rayl, 1998.
[ccclvii]

Ibid.
[ccclviii]

Source: *Charles Halt discusses the Rendlesham Forest incident*. Open Minds Radio. Published November 30, 2010.
[ccclix]

Source: *Ibid.*
[ccclx]

Col. Halt being interviewed on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

[ccclxi] Col. Halt tells us that he found out years later that the objects *had indeed been seen and observed by the Air Traffic Control tower staff and radar operators on Bentwaters.* Since they retired both radar operators in the Control Tower at Bentwaters "*told Col. Halt, that in fact they did witness strange activity. They claim they were warned by their superiors to deny seeing anything."* (See *UFO Sightings: The Rendlesham Forest Incident*, BBC Sounds. Wednesday, December 26, 2018.)

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "The two air traffic controllers on duty that night I was out, actually saw the glowing object, tracked it on their radar, and saw it descend into the forest where we were. They didn't tell anyone until they both retired, for fear of being decertified."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

Halt says that the personnel in the control tower at Bentwaters had sighted the first lighted object that he and the team had later sighted initially in the field and which moved into the tree line of the forest and out to the field again, but before doing so had crossed the radar screen one way, and then back the other way at around 3,000 miles an hour:

> ". . . and I've talked to the two controllers that were in the tower, and that Major that was up there – that's another story – uh, they actually watched the object go across the 60-mile scope and in 6-rate seconds, which is about three thousand miles an hour, and come back across the scope and physically saw it go into the forest that was glowing red. They're on record now what happened."
>
> *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John*

Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air. Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

During another interview Col. Halt did in January 2017, Halt says he was told that the object crossed the radar screen at over 5,000 miles an hour:

> "Years later I found out the Air Traffic Control people at Bentwaters were afraid to say, but what they saw, was something go across their scope twice at about five thousand miles an hour, came back and they saw glowing red objects and he saw it go into the forest near where we were."
>
> *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.

Col. Halt said the same in an interview he did a month later in February 2017:

> "So, when I called the Command Post on the radio and said have them check the control tower, check Eastern radar, check Heathrow, you know, for any activity, and if they see these things that we were seeing, they said No. But years later they'd made formal statements that they did see objects. For instance, something went across their radar screen at over five-thousand miles an hour, twice, came back by, they, uh, visually saw it was a glowing orange – globe like – and saw it go in there where we were in the forest. That's just one example."
>
> *The Truth about Rendlesham Forest incident.* Colonel Charles Halt. Published February 21, 2017

And during another interview in 2018, Col. Halt says he was told the object had crossed the radar screen at 2 to 3,000 miles an hour:

> "They watched the glowing object go across their radar scope in seconds, in other words, two to three thousand miles an hour. It went like a straight line, zip across their radar screen. Nothing, even in our inventory today and even some of the experimental jets can't go at the speed this thing moved at. Its baffling. Having some experience like this is not what you would call career-enhancing. I was really concerned for my career."
>
> Col. Halt being interviewed on *UFO Sightings: The Rendlesham Forest Incident*, BBC Sounds. Wednesday, December 26, 2018.

[ccclxii]

UFO Sightings: *The Rendlesham Forest Incident*, BBC Sounds. Wednesday, December 26, 2018.
[ccclxiii]

In the book he co-authored with John Hanson (*The Halt Perspective*, 2016), Col. Halt says that he later learned that the Security Police in the WSA, who were looking through 12-power glasses, claimed that the objects to the South had a triangular shape . . . which is interesting, seeing as the craft that Jim Penniston examined up close was a black triangle.
[ccclxiv]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[ccclxv]

Ibid.
[ccclxvi]

Col. Charles Halt Reveals New Info On The Rendlesham Forest UFO Incident – BBC. Published August 28, 2015.
[ccclxvii]

Interview with Colonel Halt by American journalist, Sally Rayl, 1998.
[ccclxviii]

Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.
[ccclxix]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[ccclxx]

Col. Halt being interviewed on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.
[ccclxxi]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).
[ccclxxii]

It could be that SSgt. Monroe Nevels wasn't looking or was aware of what was happening at that point, and in the brief time it happened, because Lt. Col. Halt does mention in real time this light beam aimed at the men's feet in his mini-audio cassette recorder. It is on the tape. However, during an interview he did in 2016, Col. Halt says that this beam of light lasted about thirty seconds, which is quite a long time for SSgt. Nevels not to have missed it.

[ccclxxiii] Note by Monroe Nevels:

> "The term 'laser beam' was not used at this time. I noted to various researchers that the light was unusual because it came in a thin, direct beam, well, sort of, as I didn't know what a laser beam was or looked like at the time. I related this after several years of observation and after the new technology came on-line. Since then, Lt. Col. Halt has heard me say it was 'like' a laser beam, and has made a case of it."

[ccclxxiv] *Col. Charles Halt Reveals New Info On The Rendlesham Forest UFO Incident* – BBC. Published August 28, 2015.
[ccclxxv]

A copy of the RAF Watton base logbook entry was released to Ufologist and paranormal researcher Nick Redfern in 1988. The log was dated 28 December 1980 and timed at 03:25 GMT:

> "Bentwaters Command Post contacted Eastern Radar

> and request information of aircraft in the area – UA37 traffic southbound FL370 – UFO sightings at Bentwaters. They are taking reporting action."

(UA37 was the code for an air corridor used by civilian aircraft which ran north/south approximately 40 miles east of Bentwaters. FL370 signified "traffic" at 37,000 feet in altitude.)

[ccclxxvi] *Ibid.*

[ccclxxvii] Charles Halt also describes the movements of the aerial objects:

> "And they were moving in sort of like a grid-search pattern . . . a very precise pattern which appeared to be organized. And they were moving in synchrony with sharp angular turns."
>
> Charles I. Halt being interviewed on *The Unexplained Files*, Series 2, Episode 7: *Are Aliens Attacking Our Nuclear Arsenal* (Raw TV, London, England).

[ccclxxviii] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016). Here we will quote Bobby Ball (a Master Sergeant at the time of the incident) in a rare TV appearance from the TV documentary *Unsolved Mysteries*, first televised on September 18, 1991 – more than a decade after the events.

Bobby Ball:

> "To me, it looked like a grid search, like they were boxing-off an area and looking for something. And that's the thought that hit me right away and stayed with me over the years. It looked like a search pattern."
>
> *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO,"* Season 4, Episode 1. September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).

What is interesting is that in the same TV documentary *Unsolved Mysteries*, Col. Halt is interviewed and gives the following descriptive, telling us that his boss, Colonel Conrad, the Base Commander, had also seen the beams of light falling down from the front yard of his home on Woodbridge base.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "We could very clearly see it, kind of dancing about in the sky and it sent down beams of light. I noticed other beams of light coming down from the same object falling on different places on the base. My boss [Colonel Conrad] was standing in his front yard at Woodbridge, and he could see the beams of light falling down. And the people in that weapon storage area and several other places on the base, also reported the lights."

Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO," Season 4, Episode 1. September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).

This is something that we feel compelled to believe – that here Lt. Col. Halt was reporting the facts – i.e., that Conrad must have acknowledged to Halt over the radio what Halt was seeing. However, as if in complete denial – and it should be noted in the quote presented above, that Bobby Ball had also said he saw the objects beaming down lights, as if in a grid pattern – the former Base Commander, Ted Conrad, who was interviewed by UFO skeptic, Dr. David Clarke in January 2010, is quoted as having said that he, his wife, and other witnesses that had gathered outside their houses on the Woodbridge base, listening to what came over his radio, *saw nothing that resembled what Halt had reported seeing either in the sky or on the ground:*

Quoting Ted Conrad:

> "Lt Col Halt's report of more lights both on the ground and in the sky brought quite a few people out of their houses at Woodbridge to see what was there. These people included myself, my wife, Lt Col Sawyer (the Director of Personnel), his wife, and several others listening to my radio and looking for the lights Halt was describing. Despite a sparkling, clear, cloudless, fogless night with a good field of view in all directions, we saw nothing that resembled Lt Col Halt's descriptions either in the sky or on the ground."
>
> *The Rendlesham Files* by Dr. David Clarke, 2010.

Responding to the comments made by Ted Conrad while he was interviewed by Dr. David Clarke, Col. Halt had this to say:

> "Conrad has his chronology mixed up but that's understandable. Through the years Conrad has made conflicting statements about the events. First he stated he never went out to look in the sky. Then stated he never saw anything. Apparently, he doesn't remember talking to me on his radio [about seeing a UFO sending down beams of light onto the base]."
>
> *The Truth Hides. Col. Halt responds to Col. Conrad's claims,* August 10, 2011.

[cccLxxix] *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014. Quoting Col. Charles Halt:

> "We were a mile and a half probably away, maybe two; I don't know. I don't how far for sure exactly, but it was pretty far away. But we could hear the chatter, and I later found out talking to the people in the tower. We have a tower inside the weapon storage area. The tower operator is an alternate central security control. They had

> this control and everything up there. A guard tower, yes, its 40-something feet tall. I could see something, but I wasn't sure what it was, uh, ah, they looked like beams. But I did hear all the chatter, like I say, on the radio. Also, the, uh, Comm people were working in the tower that night. In fact he was up there both nights, because he'd gone out there with working on a part. He saw an object the first night, and he was there the third night when I was out there. He saw an object again as did the tower operator and several other people on the ground."

Again, Col. Halt had only learned all this later when the Control Tower personnel had decided to talk. They wouldn't talk at the time because it would have been the end of their careers and of course their retirement pensions.

[cccl xxx] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016). Quoting Col. Halt from a taped interview with Linda Moulton Howe:

> "We were picking up radio signals from the weapons storage area and they were indicating, as they were over there, we could see objects in the sky over there, and I've later learned that there were some technicians from a Communication squadron working in the tower. Twelve entire operators that observed some very strange things as far as lights and objects."
>
> Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*.
> OpenMindsTV. 2010.

[cccl xxxi] On the TV documentary *The Unexplained Files*, Monroe Nevels is filmed making the following statement while discussing the incident with Nick Pope:

> "One of the light beams . . . it came down, actually penetrated through one of the bunkers that had the nuclear weapons in it. It actually burned a hole through the bunker there and was able to get through to the site where the weapons were."
>
> Monroe Nevels being interviewed on *The Unexplained Files*, Series 2,
> Episode 7: *Are Aliens Attacking Our Nuclear Arsenal*
> (Raw TV, London, England).

Note by Monroe Nevels:

> "I strongly dispute how this statement has been portrayed. The full statement was edited. I had originally said, "I heard the laser beam burned a hole in the weapons storage bunker." Somehow the first words I

said, “I heard . . .” missed the final cut having been edited out of the final production. My interview with Nick Pope was substantially edited, and my hypothesis of that night was left out, as well.

Upon receiving my copy of the final production, I called the ‘RAW TV’ company in the UK and was told their company only did the interview and that the final production was done by another production company not mentioned at the beginning. They told me that they had no control after the interview was sold. They did the filming and then sold to the highest bidder.”

[ccclxxxii] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[ccclxxxiii] Following are two quotes by Burroughs on this incident taken from two sources:

“And, one of the things that Colonel Halt talks about is that beam, that light beam, beaming the light down. I believe, right before I was allowed to go forward, meet up with Colonel Halt’s party, there was blue light that actually came at us, in that area; shot over the top of us, went behind me and a couple other guys, and there was the lightalls, and there was a pickup truck there. As it shot by the lightall, and the lightalls were not working, the lightalls lit up and went back off. The light and then shot through the pickup truck and then back up into the sky . . .”

John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.

“Well, that was something that was interesting. When, when, we got on to the staging area . . . and I, uh, always said this – not because I know hundred percent, but . . . wh . . . I believe – because the lightalls weren’t working, and we were . . . and I was in the area, where, where the lightalls were and that’s when the call came in that I moved forward. But at one point, um, and I think that this was probably just after, because the radio went nuts, where the lights came down to uh, uh, Colonel Halt’s group, that light shot right at us, and what was interesting was, it shot right at us, came out. This was actually the blue transparent-type light that was out there that he said was flying around in the sky. So, it came towards us, and I was up towards the front of the clearing, and then you went back behind us and there was some lightalls in a truck and there was one guy behind me, and there was me and these other couple of guys up front, and it shot at us. You could see it coming

> at us, shot by us, and the lightalls weren't working. As it shot past us, the lightalls, it went by the lightalls, and the lightalls actually briefly came on and off. And then the guy that was behind me jumped into the truck, as it was coming at him. It went through the truck, and went back up into the sky."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed on *FADE to BLACK Jimmy Church w/ Charles Halt, John Burroughs, Rendlesham LIVE on air.* Episode 174, posted December 23, 2014.

[ccclxxxiv] John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.
[ccclxxxv]

A Different Perspective with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.
[ccclxxxvi]

Ibid.
[ccclxxxvii]

Quoting Adrian Bustinza:

> "I was by Colonel Halt. I remember talking to Lieutenant Englund momentarily, and Sergeant Ball. At that point I remember John was talking to Colonel Halt, and John was pressing the issue about going out back out to the forest, and he told John that he could go, and he told me to go with him."
>
> *Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident*, posted August 29, 2015).

[ccclxxxviii]

A Different Perspective with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.
In an email to researcher and investigator Sacha Claire Christie, dated January 2019, Col. Halt had this to say:

> "The distance from the vehicles and lightalls to the identified site was less than 100 yards and was illuminated by both the lightalls and individual flashlights. The pines at that time were Corsica with a tall canopy and little if any low growth. That's the reason for being able to see that far from the East Gate the first night."

[ccclxxxix]

Col. Halt to researcher/investigator Sacha Claire Christie, posted in a Facebook message, January 2019.
[cccxc]

Quote:

> "John Burroughs tells me he can't be certain where he and Bustinza incident occurred, other than it was in a clearing in the forest. John hopes that one day soon in private together he and Adrian can retrace their movements at the forest and perhaps they may get recall."
>
> Facebook message posted by researcher Ronnie Dugdale, dated January 2019:

[cccxci] *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.
[cccxcii]

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "I went home, it, uh, by then it was four-thirty, five-o'clock in the morning. Took a shower, had a bite to eat. Decided to go into the office. Our office was in a Quonset hut, a huge Quonset hut. It had a foyer. The Wing Commander, my big boss was on the left-hand side, and we were on the right-hand side."
>
> Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed, recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.
> (For information on what a Quonset Hut is, see Wikipedia article, *Quonset Hut.*)

[cccxciii] *The Truth about Rendlesham Forest incident* / Colonel Charles Halt. Published February 21, 2017.

[cccxciv] *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.

Quoting Col. Halt during another interview he did in 2018:

> "When I was going in the front door, he [Col. Williams] came in. And he had heard one of my conversations on the radio the night before, and he said, *'That was some Thing you had last night, wasn't it?'* I said, I made a tape of a lot of that, he said, *'What? . . Let me hear it.'* So, I went into the office with him; I played the tape for him. He said, *'Let me have it.'* So, I gave it to him. I said, *'What are you going to do?'* He says, *'I'm going to take it to Third Air Force'* – which was Third Air Force in England at that time – *'to the staff meeting on Wednesday, play it for the general.'* I thought, Oh my, that's the end of my career."
>
> Source: Video of Col. Charles Halt being interviewed,

recorded by the *East Anglian Daily Times* on the property of UFO researcher David Young, Carlton, Suffolk, England, August 30, 2018.

Other sources consulted: Halt and Hanson, *The Halt Perspective*, 2016; Bruni *"You Can't Tell the People,"* 2001; *Colonel Charles Halt Speaks At OLM 2018, Hull, U K*. Uploaded by Peter McGarry on September 7, 2018.

[cccxcv] Quoting Col. Halt:

> ". . . Colonel Ted Conrad, my boss and the Base Commander, asked me to make him a copy of the tape. I did this by taking my recorder and his into the conference room and laying them side by side and making him a copy. I now suspect he wanted it to share with superiors but can't confirm that."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cccxcvi]

Quoting Col. Halt. Note that Halt says he gave Col. Williams the tape in the tape recorder:

> "So, he and I played the tape. I played the tape for him. He said, 'Let me have your tape.' So I gave him the tape in the tape recorder which was a little linear . . . rather a micro-cassette. And he said I'm gonna take it down on Wednesday, every Wednesday the Third Air Force Commander who was the senior officer in England, had all the Commanders come in for a staff meeting. He said, 'I'm going to play it for General Bazley.' I said, 'Oh, there goes my career.'"
>
> *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.

[cccxcvii] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing 2016).

[cccxcviii] *Ibid.*

[cccxcix]

This first visit is confirmed by an interview Conrad did for *OMNI Magazine* for the March 1983 edition. (See Note 460).

[cd] We now know that the special team that had flown in from Langley Air Force Base in Virginia to analyze the landing site in Rendlesham forest, was really a containment study group from Langley . . . the CIA research center. (See the beginning of Chapter 10: *Containment* and Note 1 in the end notes of that chapter.)

However, something equally interesting also happened on this day….

From her interview with Edward Drury, who was a Major and deputy for Major Malcolm Zickler (the Security Police Squadron Commander for both bases) at the time of the incident, Georgina Bruni

learned that 48 hours after Major Drury had read the witness statements on December 26, 1980, (48 hours later falling on this day – December 28, 1980), Major Drury had received a "sharp" call from his superior Major Zickler, who gave him a direct order to "shut up" and keep quiet about the UFO incidents. Georgina Bruni writes:

> "It turned out that the order had originated from the AFOSI. From that moment on Drury was out of the loop."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

Note by Jim Penniston:

It is likely that Major Drury was investigating the incident on the orders of his superior Major Zickler, as I remember Drury telling me at the landing site that he was now investigating this incident under the orders of the Squadron Commander (Zickler). I would assume that it was on December 28, 1980, and after the CIA-related containment study group from Langley had arrived on the scene, when the AFOSI also got involved, and this is why Major Zickler dropped his own investigation through Major Drury and told Drury to stop what he was doing – telling him to "shut up," as was told by Drury and quoted in Georgina Bruni's book. This order made to Maj. Drury wasn't because Zickler was mad and frustrated at Drury for investigating something he shouldn't on his own initiative, but to cease all investigation and knowledge about the case, as the Security Police Squadron Commander, Zickler, had most likely taken this investigation into his own hands without informing the agencies. And so now that the agencies were involved, he didn't want them knowing he had been pursuing his own enquiries for his own reasons.

It is also why I was then asked to report to the AFOSI building the next morning on the orders of Major Zickler (my superior) and where and when I was asked to give a written witness statement, which was then substituted by a typed, sanitized statement that I was told to memorize and quote whenever I was asked about the incident and what I witnessed and experienced. It can be ascertained that AFOSI wanted to gauge what really happened by looking into what I – the *primary* witness and first responder – had experienced on the first night, and what I knew.

Colonel Halt has since stated that he *"knew for a fact that within 24-hours of the first incident, the NSA* (National Security Agency) *of the United States took over the entire Bentwaters/Woodbridge investigation."*

> So, we can ascertain that it was from the time when I had visited the AFOSI building for the first time, that the agencies, which were most likely directed by the NSA (according to Col. Halt), could then initiate a cover-up by devising a containment story based on disinformation mixed with facts. This would explain why I was "debriefed more than any other witness," as noted and quoted by Georgina Bruni. (See Note 415 below.)

In the book *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016), Charles Halt is quoted as having said that *"Major Malcolm Zickler screwed him* [Major Ed Drury]*, as he was a bright academy graduate and Zickler couldn't stand that."*

[cdi] See Wikipedia, *United States Air Force Office of Special Investigations.*
[cdii]

Tim Printy, another amateur astronomer like Ian Ridpath, who is also Ridpath's friend and the author of the online UFO magazine *Sunlite*, claims his magazine sheds "some light on Ufology and UFO's" – *as if it could?* And the claim that he is "shedding light" on these subjects is utter rubbish, because if the following question about Jim Penniston's sketch shown in figure 1 is anything to go by, how much else in this magazine is wrong? Personally, I find it full of wrong assumptions, misinformation, deceptive twists and spins that merely reflect the biased views, beliefs of the author. In any case, let's shed some light on Printy's gross error:

Tim Printy:

> "Penniston's sketch that appeared in 1997. Penniston stated in Leslie Kean's book that it was the drawing he presented to AFOSI agents. How did the drawing survive if AFOSI had it and Penniston's actual statement?"
>
> *Sunlite: Shedding some light on UFOlogy and UFOs*.
> Volume 3, Number 2, March-April 2011, p. 6.

In Leslie Kean's book *UFOs: Generals, Pilots, and Government Officials Go on the Record* (2011), Penniston did NOT state that he *"presented* the drawing to the AFOSI agents."

Here's the correct statement included in Leslie Kean's book by Jim Penniston:

> "The drawing I made of the landed craft for the Air Force Office of Special Investigations."
>
> *UFOs: Generals, Pilots, and Government Officials Go on the Record*
> by Leslie Kean, (Three Rivers Press, 2011).

(See here, Chapter 18: *The Extraordinary Incident at Rendlesham Forest by Sergeant James Penniston (Ret.), U.S. Air Force, and by Colonel Charles I. Halt (Ret.), U.S. Air Force).*

When Jim Penniston states that this is the drawing he "made for" the AFOSI, as quoted above in the book by Leslie Kean, he means *he made a drawing of the craft he witnessed that morning with the intention of handing it over to the AFOSI agents* while he was being interviewed as he wanted to tell all that happened, hoping it would all go away and he could resume his job, as relayed in this chapter. However, when it was clear to him what the agents were really up to by exchanging his statement for a

bogus one and telling him to lie, he decided not to hand over the sketch to them and kept it in his inside pocket along with his notebook.

[cdiii] The Contonement area contained buildings such as the Base exchange, gas station, bowling alley, post office, theater, bank and other facilities for the whole base populace. All were 'non-mission' buildings.

[cdiv] This incident in the chow/mess hall at the Bentwaters base is substantiated by none other than Larry Warren himself, whose testimony in the book *Left at East Gate* (1997), which he co-authored with UFO researcher, Peter Robbins, infers that this happened on the morning of December 29, 1980, which correlates with Jim Penniston's account. Warren talks about the incident as if he had been personally involved, although his being involved in what appears to have been the third night's events has long been a matter of controversy, having been contested by the primary witnesses, especially Colonel Halt.

> "Inside the mess hall, it was business as usual; the morning breakfast club at RAF Bentwaters was in full swing. I scanned the room. At the SP table off to my left, almost segregated from the rest of the dining area, were ten or so cops. The gun rack was half-full with M16s, and some guys from A Flight seemed uncomfortable. Most of the cops at the table were from D Flight. The haunted looks on their faces told everyone they didn't want to be bothered. I slid my tray along the steel-and-glass counter, filled a plate with food I knew I wouldn't eat, then made my way to the SP table. I could hear the buzz; every table I passed seemed to be talking about the UFO incident. Versions of the story ranged from the ridiculous to the mundane. The rumors had begun.
>
> I sat down quietly at the table. Staff Sergeant Jim Penniston and a few others were there. They knew what had happened. Some guys talked about anything else that came to mind, but I had an overwhelming need to talk about the UFO: *What happened to us in that forest?* I could sense other guys felt the same way. Out of the blue Steve Longero leaned over and asked me if the last twenty-four hours had been a dream. I smiled and shook my head, not really knowing for sure. Was it really a UFO? What did the aliens look like? I was responding openly as I could when Penniston looked in my direction and said "Hey, Warren, shut the fuck up!"
>
> I stared back at him for a moment, repressing the urge to throw my tray at him. Pushing it away, I stood up to leave and headed for the door. I wondered what Penniston knew that I didn't. I resented him for silencing me – the cover-up was already beginning. I walked back to the SP dorm feeling an overwhelming need to talk about what I'd seen."
>
> *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 50).

Quote from Lawrence Warren, March 5, 2011.

> "Jim was a no-nonsense Sergeant who had already a lot of years on the job under his belt. He was respected by all, as he also held important NCO SPS roles that take years to earn in the AF. Us younger airman would have jumped if he said to "jump", he wasn't that sort. But trust me he had the power to ruin your day if you messed up. He was a complete professional, held trusted roles, didn't party on the Base, lie, steal, or have any controversy around him, and as I said in my book, when he told me to shut up, I did! Jim was by the book. Meeting him 30 years later, he embodies all the same qualities as I observed on Bentwaters all those years ago. Further he's a nice Midwestern guy with a family he clearly loves – i.e., a good dad!"
>
> "Did something profound happen to the man? Damn right it did. So until our little pea brains can figure this stuff out, I say yes I'm certain he got a download from someone – reason unknown to me. Jim is a man of honor and would not lie about this and I'm sure most things in life are just not in his nature and if you had met him it would be clear to you all as well."

Larry Warren on Penniston and the Codes

[cdv]***Larry Warren's phone call to his mother***

It is considered a fact that the day after what appears to have been the third night's events, Larry Warren had phoned his mother from a base phone having reversed the charges. Warren tells us that he told his mother about the UFO activity that had been witnessed off-base. According to Warren's co-author on the book, *Left at East Gate* (1997), Peter Robbins, Warren's mother's friend, Sue Hickerson, was visiting his mother at the time and has confirmed that Warren's mother had received the call.

In any case, Warren says that after some minutes the phone went dead – the call had been cut-off. Warren says he then called the operator who asked if he was calling from the base, to which he said yes, and she then informed him that he had been disconnected by someone on the base. Warren puts this down to his mention of the UFO incident(s). With Warren while he made his call to his mother was Airman Greg Battram, a fellow SP (USAF Security Police member), who has also talked about the phone call Warren made from the base. Warren has never been certain on the date of the UFO incident he was informing his mother about, and which he later says he was personally involved with, but it's likely that it was the night/morning of December 27/28, 1980, although there is some discrepancy in his account, as he will say that he made the phone call to his mother only hours after the incident and/or the next day, which would have been the same day as the incident with SSgt. Jim Penniston in the chow hall, being Monday, December 29, 1980.

> ". . . in fact the day after the incident I went to the base phone a public telephone on base and called my mother, I was with senior airman Greg Batrum [Battram] at the time. I called my mother and told her what had happened that a UFO had landed off base. I don't know how much she heard because the line was disconnected she never really heard the full extent of the phone call. I went back

> to the dorm and was called over to the Communications building. Upon going in there a Captain met me who was not in security police at all and played back a tape with the phone call and told me that it was $300.00 or my stripes for giving away sensitive information. They knew that quick who it was and how it was done and the whole bit, then I said "Well, you can take the money." I left the Air Force owing them $95.00 on that still and I have the receipts from it."
>
> *"The Story of Art Wallace"* from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

During Larry Warren's phone conversation with *News of the World* reporter, Keith Beabey, who was at Dot Street's house when the call to Larry Warren was made on the late evening of September 28, 1983, Warren told Beabey, who only knew Warren by the name of "Art Wallace," the following:

> "I rang my mother just after the incident. I told her from a British public telephone. The phone got cut off. It got cut off mid-conversation. I called the operator but she said, 'You were cut off at Bentwaters.' About an hour and a half, two hours later, they said, 'We told you not to talk about it to anyone.' I said, 'I didn't,' and they played me the tape on reel to reel. They fined me three-hundred dollars."
>
> Source: Transcript of the taped conversation between Larry Warren and Keith Beabey, September 28, 1983, recorded by Dot Street and transcribed by Ronnie Dugdale. Also published by Sacha Christie, on her blog page, *How The RFI Whistle was REALLY blown,* May 1, 2017.

Perhaps one would ask, *did Warren call from the base phone or a British public telephone?* Note that Warren also said a "public telephone" on base, but would this really be a 'British' public telephone on an American Air Force installation? Jim Penniston said there was no British public telephone on the base, and the phones were only for USAF military use. If the call was made off-base and in the British towns – which would have been the wise thing to do – then there's no way the call would have been disconnected from the base. Jim Penniston added that he had insider knowledge that Warren would say he was making a priority call when he was phoning home or elsewhere, and so his call would be "jumped up" over official calls, which were for emergency use only, and it's likely that his activities were discovered and this was the reason why his call 'from the base' was cut-off.

During an interview in 2010, the retired Vice Wing Commander, Colonel Ted Conrad is quoted by Dr. David Clarke as having said that SSgt. Jim Penniston reluctantly told him his account of what happened, and also quotes Conrad on the following:

> Ted Conrad:
> "I asked [Penniston] for a description of the object. Penniston said he didn't get close enough for a detailed look. What he

> saw was generally rectangular in shape and slightly larger than a jeep in size. The object was mostly obscured by two horizontal rows of very bright closely spaced lights, one row white, the other light blue. He thought one row ran along the top, the other row around the middle. Again, his distance from the object and the brightness of the lights obscured any further detailed observance. I am aware this description is at variance with subsequent statements and drawing made by others."
>
> Interview with Col. Theodore Conrad, by Dr. David Clarke, January 2010.

As we can see, in the same interview Conrad says that what Jim Penniston saw *"was generally rectangular in shape,"* and he then asked Jim to draw it:

> "At the end of the session, I asked him to draw a picture of the object he had seen, which he did freehand."

Col. Conrad must be describing the rectangular, "box-like" sketch of the craft from a distance of 160 feet (50 meters) that Jim Penniston had made in Col. Halt's office, after seeing Conrad briefly in his own office. (See Note 412 below.) It is possible that Col. Halt had given out photocopies of both the statements and the sketches made by Penniston and Burroughs to Col. Conrad and the other Command officers to view.

Quoting Col. Conrad from the same interview he did with Dr. David Clarke:

> "I do recall Penniston's story and he did leave me with a sketch of an object he claimed to have seen. I left the sketch in my desk drawer and the story was summarized in Halt's letter."
>
> Note by Jim Penniston:
> I am certain I did NOT draw or leave a sketch for Col. Conrad while I visited him briefly in his office, so again, Conrad must be referring to the copy of the sketch that I did for Lt. Col. Halt, and which Halt had most likely shared with all the commanding officers.

In the same interview Col. Conrad then ends his mentioning of Jim Penniston with these words:

> "Jim Penniston is the only first-hand observer I was able to interview. We kept his name out of any of our correspondence to honour his request."

The Base Commander, Colonel Conrad *knew exactly what Jim Penniston had witnessed*, as he was out at the landing site on the morning of December 26, 1980, just hours after the incident and had met-up with the Deputy Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Drury (who was at the landing site gathering information for his boss Major Zickler). Also present at the landing site was Captain Verrano, MSgt. Gulyas, SSgt. Coffey. And it is possible that Lt. Englund was there having accompanied the Base Commander, as they must have turned up after SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs had left. It is likely that Col. Conrad had been briefed on what SSgt. Jim Penniston had said he witnessed via Captain Verrano, who had debriefed SSgt. Penniston almost two hours earlier. If so, then Conrad was

aware that the Staff Sergeant had got up-close to the craft, and had merely allowed SSgt. Penniston to relate the bogus account he was told to memorize and recite to anyone who asked him about what he witnessed or experienced, which is why SSgt. Penniston told the Base Commander that he *didn't get close enough for a detailed look.* It was on this knowledge that Col. Conrad had ordered SSgt. Monroe Nevels to the site the next day via Lt. Englund, to examine the site for evidence and bring back an honest evaluation as to whether it warranted further investigation or not.

[cdvi] One would of course ask: *How could Lt. Col. Halt have played the cassette tape to SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs, when Halt had already given over the mini-cassette recorder and the recorded cassette tape inside it to Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon Williams on the previous day – i.e., the morning of Sunday, December 28?*

Perhaps the answer to this is that although he agreed to do as was asked of him by Col. Williams after both had listened to the cassette tape in William's office, before handing over the mini-cassette recorder and the micro-cassette tape to Col. Williams, Halt had gone into see the Base Commander, to play him the cassette tape and as was asked of him by Col. Conrad, it was agreed that he make a copy of the original cassette. Halt says he did this by taking both his micro-cassette recorder and Col. Conrad's cassette recorder into the conference room, and laying the two recorders side by side – playing the original and recording it on Conrad's cassette recorder. Although Halt said he handed over the mini-cassette recorder with the original micro-cassette tape straight away to Col. Williams, it was likely after he made a copy in the conference room that Lt. Col. Halt then handed the items over to Williams. So, if a copy had been made that morning, then it could have been this copy that Halt played Penniston and Burroughs the next day, using Col. Conrad's cassette recorder.

[cdvii] It is interesting that the same morning (December 28, 1980) when Lt. Col. Halt and SSgt. Monroe Nevells had observed and encountered a phenomenon or craft that resembled an eye winking, SSgt. Jim Penniston was compelled to write down a further three pages of binary code ones and zeros, which included the text, "EYES OF YOUR EYES."

[cdviii] In subsequent interviews, Burroughs has given inconsistent details relating as to when he actually returned to work; if or not he had written his statement before handing it in and stating that Airman Cabansag was present with him and SSgt. Penniston when the debriefs were taking place in the Command Offices. The following was said at a conference in 2010, during which Burroughs stated the following:

> "Well, Friday, Saturday, Sunday was our days of break. When I came back to duty on Monday…."
>
> John Burroughs. Source: *Famous UFO Landing at Bentwaters Rendlesham | Linda Moulton Howe*. OpenMindsTV. 2010.

During an interview four years later in 2014, Burroughs states that he returned to work early on Tuesday, which would have been December 31, 1980, and that he had already written up a statement, adding that he, SSgt. Penniston, and Airman Cabansag had handed in their statements that Tuesday, and that the statements beginning with Lt. Col. Halt, were passed from one Colonel to the other.

> Burroughs, 2014:
> "Now what I remember is Tuesday, that we came into work early and we had to come in with our statements, and it was Penniston, Cabansag, and I. We went in and saw Halt first.

> Then from there we went over and saw Conrad, and then we saw Williams and the statements were passed from Halt to Conrad to Williams and Penniston did all the talking; he was the ranking guy. So, all I remember was going in and handing my statement over. And, and, Penniston did the little talking there was, and dismissed and that was it."
>
> *John Burroughs Rendlesham UFO Witness*,
> interviewed by radio host Alejandro Rojas for 'Open Minds Radio,' October 27, 2014.

Then during another interview almost three years later, Burroughs states that he turned in his statement to Lt. Col. Halt on the following Monday, being December 29, 1980, which correlates with what Jim Penniston remembers.

> Burroughs, 2017:
> "All what I remember, uh, is simply doing my statement because I was told to and I didn't really want to . . . turn in the statement, uh, having to stand with Penniston and Cabansag. I think it was like Monday if I remember right. Monday after the incident we went into, uh, Colonel Halt's office and saw him, then we went into Colonel Conrad's office with Colonel Halt, and then we ended up going into, uh . . . it was Colonel Williams at the time with Colonel Halt and the three of us, and Penniston did all the talking. He was the ranking guy; he was the Staff Sergeant, and very little was said, and they took our statements and basically told us it was being looked into and don't worry about it."
>
> *A Different Perspective with Kevin Randle (EP 0036).*
> Guest: John Burroughs – Bentwaters/Rendlesham. Published April 12, 2017.

There are another couple of details that need addressing here.

Firstly, Burroughs states that he, SSgt. Penniston and Airman Cabansag were all debriefed and present at the Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt's office first, then the Base Commander, Col. Conrad's office, and lastly with everyone at the office of Wing Commander, Colonel Williams, which is what Jim Penniston says happened. However, Jim Penniston remembers distinctly that Airman Cabansag was not at all present with any of them that day, and that it's most likely that Cabansag had already been debriefed. This correlates with what Ed Cabansag himself had told author Georgina Bruni – i.e., that he had been summoned to Lt. Col. Halt's office on the morning of the incident (December 26, 1980), and soon after he had finished his shift. Ed Cabansag adds that while he was in Lt. Col. Halt's office, he was told to sign a statement that had already been typed out for him and that he didn't even read what he was signing, as he was young and feared being in the Deputy Commander's office.

Next, Burroughs states that he "turned in" his statement – implying that he had already written it somewhere.

However, Jim Penniston says that Burroughs had clearly written his statement while both were sitting at opposite ends of a 15-foot table in Lt. Col. Halt's office on Monday, December 29, 1980. This was in the presence of Lt. Col. Halt and SSgt. Jim Penniston. Jim says that Burroughs also completed a sketch of the "object" he says he saw, while Jim also completed two drawings opposite each other on

the same piece of paper.

In 2014, Burroughs then says he wrote the statement in Lt. Col. Halt's office, as expressed in this quote from the book he co-authored, *Encounter In Rendlesham Forest:*

> "What I remember is being called in and asked to write a statement by the Deputy Base Commander, Charles Halt. After writing my statement I, SSgt Penniston and AIC Cabansag were debriefed in Halt's office. We were told not to talk about the incident to anyone, that there was an ongoing investigation and then AIC Cabansag Jim and I were dismissed and then taken into the Wing Commander's office with the Base and Deputy Base Commanders present. The AFOSI-sanitized account was briefed to the officers. The Wing Commander, Colonel Williams, thanked us for the report and asked no questions, which was the beginning of how our Command staff left us to hang out on the clothesline to dry."
>
> *Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best-Documented UFO Incident*
> by Nick Pope with John Burroughs (USAFR) and Jim Penniston (USAF ret),
> (Thomas Dunne Books, 2014).

But again, according to Jim Penniston, Airman Cabansag was not present at this meeting in Lt. Col. Halt's office and neither was Cabansag present at the other offices that he and Airman Burroughs had entered to be debriefed that same day.

Finally, in an interview with radio host Jimmy Church on January 23, 2019, Burroughs states that he was told not to write anything about the third night's events involving Lt. Col. Halt:

> "I wrote about the first night. I didn't write about the third night . . . the statement. They didn't really want me to say much about the third night in my statement, but they had me write a brief summary of what happened on the first night, and then I drew as best I could. And what, what I drew, and what I, you know . . . the best I could describe it, was like an oval, orangish ball with blue lights around it, and there was a whitish, orangish hue that was around the orange ball and that's the best that I can, you know, that I saw for sure on the first night and it was basically quite about the same one I remember seeing on the third night. Other than this there was a bigger dome or hue on the third night than there was on the first night."
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black*
> (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

Burroughs says, *". . . they didn't want me to say much about the third night,"* when in fact he didn't mention anything at all about the third night in his statement. All this appears suspicious, but perhaps an explanation may lie in the fact that this was an official inquiry/reporting and Burroughs was 'on duty' during the first night and 'off duty' during the second and third nights.

[cdix] It should be both noted and clarified that while Jim Penniston was being interviewed for the TV documentary series *Ancient Aliens* by Prometheus Entertainment, he mentions the account he had given about the incident.

Quote:

> "I had to give this sanitized story. I left out everything from the feeling of the electricity, the feeling of being drawn into it, also descriptions of the craft. There was a lot of detail that was left out. And truth by omission is not the truth, it's a lie."
>
> Jim Penniston interviewed on *Ancient Aliens.* Season 5, Episode 2: *Aliens and Cover Ups*, first televised December 28, 2012.

This is the second witness statement that Jim Penniston had handwritten in Lt. Col. Halt's office that he refers to here and NOT the original four-page statement he wrote, nor the typed, undated and unsigned bogus statement that replaced the original and which he didn't write, but which had been wrongly attributed to him and was later released into the public domain.

The original witness statement Jim Penniston wrote in the AFOSI building, and the witness statement he wrote in Lt. Col. Halt's office, and which Jim referred to in the *Ancient Aliens* episode, as quoted above, still remain classified.
[cdx]

. . . which is possibly why the same detail – i.e., 'within 50 meters' was included in the witness statement that was signed by J.D. Chandler four days later on Friday January 2, 1981:

> "On one occasion Penniston relayed that he was close enough to the object to determine it was definitely a mechanical object. He stated that he was within approximately 50 meters."
>
> Page 1 of 2 of the *witness statement* (AF FORM 1169), typed, signed and dated by J.D Chandler, 81 Security Police Sq, January 2, 1981.

[cdxi] These two drawings, sketched on the same piece of paper in Lt. Col. Halt's office, were most likely paperclipped to the two drawings (again on the same piece of paper), that Jim was asked to complete while in the AFOSI building that same day, along with the bogus witness statement, both of which had already made their way to Lt. Col. Halt. This is obvious, as the bogus witness statement attributed to Jim Penniston (but not authored by him), and these two sets of drawings, are sometimes displayed together in the public domain, as if all three had been paperclipped or possibly stapled together. For example, see page: *The Rendlesham UFO Witness Statements*, where all three pages are displayed together.

[cdxii] The skeptics and 'pseudoskeptic debunkers' have 'jumped' on Jim Penniston's depiction of the craft shown as "box-like" or rectangular, saying that it contradicts his account that the craft was

triangular. However, the rectangle was his depiction of the impression he had of the triangular craft *when looking directly at a side view of it and from one hundred and sixty feet away.*

Apparently, the skeptics are unable to see it this way, and in our experience, wouldn't care for the logical explanation given here. Many of these 'naysayers' and determined debunkers truly want this to be viewed as a contradiction so that it undermines Jim Penniston's credibility and the reality of the incident – even though a cover-up had already begun when his story was drastically altered by the agents in the AFOSI building, and he was told to lie by giving their sanitized version of the story if he was ever questioned about the incident.

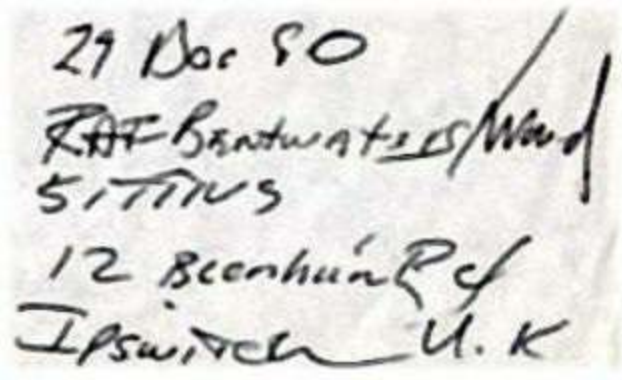
But again, when looking directly at it and from a side-on view, Jim Penniston says that the craft *did appear* "rectangular." Also, the lights emitted from the craft obscured most of its shape anyway – i.e., especially the "dorsal fin" feature on the top of the craft. In his sketch, Jim gave more emphasis to the lights, as that was mostly what he saw from just within 160 feet (50 meters) away, and in any case, this distance included Jim's original statement, although he wrote that he had gone much further and right up to the craft and touched it, was what the OSI agents wanted Jim to keep to. Again, on close inspection, the craft turned out to be triangular. We should remind the reader also that earlier that morning, and while at home, Jim Penniston had already drawn the triangular craft that he saw up close and touched, and presented it in three different views – top, front, and side. Jim intended to hand this drawing over to the OSI agents. Therefore, the skeptic's argument is faulty logic *as why would Jim have already drawn three sketches of the triangular craft he saw up close, all sketched on the same day* (29th December 1980), *if he had meant to only depict a rectangular, "box-type" craft?*

Furthermore, Rendlesham skeptic, Ian Ridpath, refers to the drawing of the craft as a *"boxy object on stilts"* . . . a nice-try, comical description aimed at the target of his skeptical analysis. (See here: *The Rendlesham UFO Witness Statements.*) However, what Ridpath sees as "stilts" are in fact a depiction of the bright light expressed in rays, as one would do in a drawing, which Jim claims he saw being projected from the craft beneath it and all viewed from the 160 feet (50 meters) distance that had been emphasized in the bogus witness statement handed to Jim to replace his original statement which was made classified, with the bogus statement typed by someone else and wrongly attributed to Jim as his own, saying that he never got within more than 50 meters of the object.

On the same page, Ridpath provides a link to the drawing shown above in figure 1. He writes:

> "(I have not been able to find out when this other drawing was made, but it bears the same wrong date as Penniston's notebook, i.e. December 27.)"

As Jim Penniston has said in various interviews, the drawing of the three different views of the craft he saw was made early on the morning of December 29, 1980, at his home off base in Ipswich. Again, Jim drew this as he intended to hand this drawing over to the OSI agents later that morning, having been ordered by the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major, Malcolm Zickler, to report to the AFOSI building on the Bentwaters base. The '7' in the date is really a '9.' If you look closely, you will see that the '9' has a loop, but looks like a '7' from some distance away.



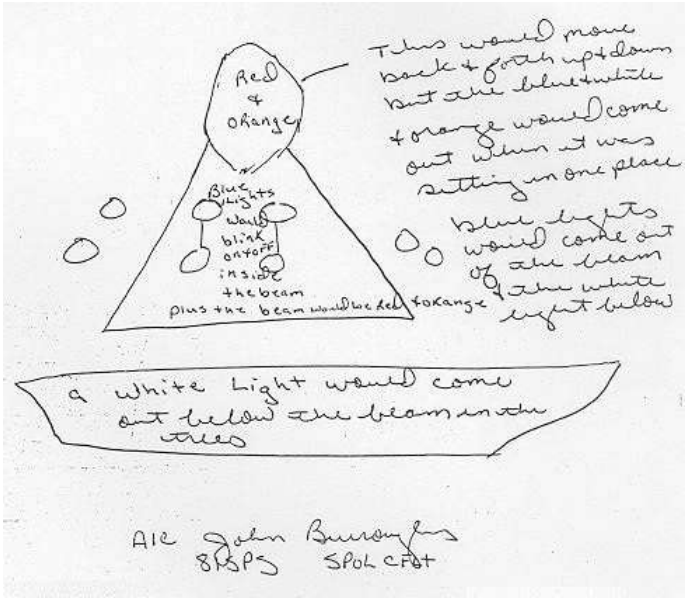
Close up of the date of the sketch, with the words "RAF Bentwaters Wood SITING" (As in 'Site') underneath followed by the home address where the sketch was made.

Also, Jim has said that he often writes his sevens in the European style with a strike through the lower stem.

Moreover, when Ridpath writes that the date on the drawing *"bears the same wrong date as Penniston's notebook, i.e. December 27,"* he is again seeing the '9' as a '7,' as the date in the notebook has nothing to do with the date of the incident. In fact, he is right when he says it's the wrong date, but this is based on his own preconceived assumption that this date in the notebook *should be* the date of the incident – i.e., December 26th. (For a detailed explanation, see Note 66).

These rash mistakes made by Ian Ridpath, although trivial, are only a few examples of the numerous flaws he has made in his vain attempts to debunk the Rendlesham incident – especially his efforts aimed at discrediting Jim Penniston as a credible witness. And it is insidious and acutely irresponsible of Ridpath, who has long used these issues based on his own worldview, as well as the thoughtless mistakes he has made – which he has not checked properly and has conveniently rushed into establishing as 'fact' – to achieve his purpose in underestimating Jim Penniston's integrity and sway public opinion into viewing Jim as dishonest, or at best, presuming that it is all confabulation, that Jim Penniston is a victim of his own 'troubled mind' and 'failing memory.'

[cdxiii] As Jim Penniston remembers, while he and Burroughs were in the office of the Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Halt on December 29, 1980, Burroughs had mentioned to Halt that what he had seen during the first night's events was a "structured craft," before writing the statement which Jim Penniston never got to read at that time. Lt. Col. Halt, too, remembers Burroughs saying it was a "structured craft." On the third page of his 3-page witness statement on plain paper, Burroughs did a sketch of what he claims he saw. Again, to this day, Burroughs has claimed that all he saw was lights, even though what he draws here appears to be a mechanical and structured object with lights – mechanical in the sense that Burroughs describes the blue lights as blinking on and off.

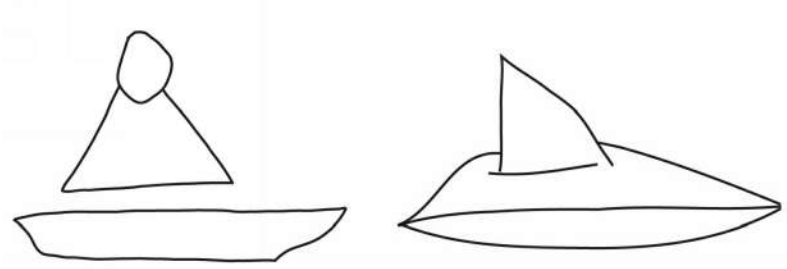

Red & Orange
This would move back & forth up & down but the blue & white & orange would come out when it was sitting in one place
Blue Lights would blink on & OFF inside the beam plus the beam would be Red & Orange
blue lights would come out of the beam & the white light below
a White Light would come out below the beam in the trees
A1C John Burroughs
81SPS SPOL CFGT

Sketch made by A1C John Burroughs 81SPS SPOL CFL. (Drawn in Lt. Col. Halt's office, Monday, December 29, 1980.)

Pointing to the *'Red and Orange'* light on top of the object, Burroughs writes: *'This would move back & forth, up & down but the blue & white & orange would come out when it was sitting in one place.'* Referring to the other lights, he writes: *'blue lights would come out of the beam and the white light below'* and *'Blue Lights would blink on & OFF inside the beam plus the beam would be Red & Orange'* At the bottom he writes: *'a white light would come out below the beam in the trees.'*

If we compare Burroughs' *descriptions* above with what SSgt. Jim Penniston had drawn and described, as seen from 160 feet (50 meters) away (see figure 5), we can see they are virtually identical. Again, a red light above, with blue-white lights beneath. However, this is all Burroughs remembers seeing. And even up close – i.e., fifteen to twenty feet away – it appears that all Burroughs saw were the lights that were being projected from the craft, while Jim Penniston having stepped into the energy field that the craft was generating around it, then experienced the projected "dome" of whitish/yellowish light collapse around him and immediately saw a well-defined, black triangular craft with red, blue, orange, and yellow blobs of light moving throughout its glassy, black surface with an intense white light shining underneath it.

Looking again at what Burroughs says he saw – i.e., the overall shape without the text and the circles – *does this not resemble the outline/shape of the triangular craft Jim Penniston claims he clearly saw from the side as illustrated in his sketch?*



A1c John Burroughs
Drawn, December 29 1980

SSgt. Jim Penniston
Drawn, December 29 1980

The two sketches of the craft in outline only. Aside from the circle on the apex of the triangle in Burroughs' sketch, depicting the area of a red/orange light, both sketches are similar in outline and shape.

If we look at Burroughs' drawing, we can see that it is streamlined at the bottom as if viewing the triangular craft side on. As for the orange/red light that Burroughs describes and which he placed at the top of the triangle, this may indeed be an orange/red light shining at the top of an appendage which Jim Penniston said was like a large "dorsal fin" – the light projecting from within the skin of the craft. And indeed, Jim Penniston describes a red light from the top of the craft when seen from 150 feet (50 meters) away . . . although Jim says that the outline of the triangular "dorsal fin" was obscured – blurred – by the lights surrounding it.

In view of what we are pointing out here, Burroughs will most-likely say that the triangular and rectangular-shaped outlines in his drawing were not meant to depict any structure, but are just there to indicate the shape of the areas lit up by the lights – even though when he was writing his statement and doing his drawing in Lt. Col. Halt's office, he is remembered by both Halt and Penniston as saying that what he witnessed was a "structured craft." In any case, this close comparison tells us that although the outline or shape of the craft was largely obscured by the different colored lights shining off of it and from beneath its surface and which moved throughout the craft and were also blinking on and off when it was powering down, according to Jim Penniston (see Chapter *3: Discovery*), Burroughs really saw what Jim Penniston witnesses, but from the side – a solid CRAFT – even though he now posts two color renditions of his drawing to show it was just a red ball of light with blue colored lights dispersed beneath it.

The lights in the artist's rendition (below/left) makes what Burroughs had originally drawn appear like a different shaped object altogether. In the more updated rendition (below/right), what Burroughs first described with mechanical-like blinking and moving blue lights, has now become just a buoyant "ball of red/orange light" (portraying what he had originally drawn as ball lightning or plasma) with small blue lights radiating outwards from the bottom.

Rendition on the left, (Artwork by John Rackham). Triangular shape underneath the red/orange light is present, but gone is the rectangular, streamlined shape drawn at the bottom of his original sketch where Burroughs describes white light emerging from underneath the blue beams. And then some years later another rendition appears (rendition on right) that Burroughs is now using and in which "whatever it was" has now become just a buoyant "ball of light" (to resemble ball lightning or plasma) with blue lights streaming from the bottom.

Jim Penniston has always said that there was a 'Sphere of Influence,' an 'energy' or 'frequency field' surrounding the craft, which he observed as a "dome" of whitish/yellowish light, and which the craft was projecting around itself. He says that on entering this field of light, he experienced the light

collapse and what was seen as “just lights” earlier and while outside that field, was now a solid black, triangular craft. Jim Penniston maintains that Burroughs was just outside this energy field of light – this ‘Sphere of Influence’ – and that before he could enter it he was made immobile and was frozen to the spot with no sign of being consciously aware of what was happening. And as noted earlier, Burroughs while under hypnosis in 1988, recalls just seeing small blue lights, with his experience expressed as being somewhat *subjective* – i.e., all in his mind – compared to the objective, solid object/craft that Jim Penniston saw, examined, touched, smelled and experienced.

The question then is *why would the intelligence deliberately do this? What specific reason could there be as to why Burroughs was blocked from seeing the craft and experiencing what Penniston did?*

[cdxiv] In the book, *The Halt Perspective,* Charles Halt has this to say about Major Malcolm Zickler:

> “Zickler knew a lot more than he was ever willing to say. He was very much a guy that worked in the background at the base and I believed he would have liaised with the AFOSI and other British and American agents to provide a cover story to explain what had taken place. He had to know that John, Larry, Jim, and Adrian, were messed with during the investigation held after the events.”
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

Again, it was Major Zickler, the 81st Security Police Squadron Commander, who had ordered SSgt. Jim Penniston to report to the AFOSI building on Bentwaters base – not once, *but twice* . . . BOTH December 29, and December 30, 1980. (See Chapter 14: *Regression.*) Until his second hypnosis session, which he underwent on Saturday, September 10, 1994, Jim Penniston did not consciously remember being ordered to or going to the AFOSI building a second time on the following day – December 30, 1980. And as we will see in the following chapter, it was Zickler, who having predicted that the events of what happened could not be kept secret by those who had witnessed them, had ordered – and on the command of the AFOSI and other agencies with whom he was liaising no doubt – that a containment story be spread around the base and in the public places in the surrounding area of Suffolk to confuse and confound any potential researchers at the time and in the future. It is now evident that the story was a typical UFO yarn with a flying saucer and floating aliens, containing a great deal of disinformation mixed with some details of the truth of what happened on both the first and third nights.

[cdxv] Quoting Georgina Bruni:

> “It is worth remembering that following the incident Penniston was debriefed more than any other witness. This included meetings with Wing Commander Gordon Williams, Vice Wing Commander Brian Currie, Base Commander Ted Conrad, Lieutenant Colonel Charles Halt, Major Malcolm Zickler, Major Edward Drury, Captain Mike Verrano Lieutenant Fred Buran, the AFOSI special agents, and a British and American agent. The debriefings with the commanders were fairly standard-type procedures where he would make a report,

> give statements and submit his notes. *But the AFOSI debriefings were tape recorded and the ones with the British and American agents were carried out using drug-induced hypnosis."* [Our Italics.]
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

Jim Penniston has always maintained that he was never debriefed by Major Malcolm Zickler, and says Georgina was wrong about this. Also, Jim Penniston says he was not aware that the sessions were tape recorded, but adds that it's indeed possible and most likely.

[cdxvi] Note by Jim Penniston:
Although, I had a compulsion to forget the ones and zeroes I had written down – which my rational mind kept telling me was nonsensical; at the same time, and at a deeper level, I always had a thought or feeling that they meant something. I never acted on these fleeting, almost *subliminal* feelings for thirty years, and even when the ones and zeroes were finally announced, it was because revealing them had finally been forced upon me. It was like the sixteen pages of binary code was supposed to wait. Perhaps that's why the notebook escaped scrutiny by the agency guys and passed under their radar, as if the existence of the binary code was being protected behind the scenes by some higher force unknown to me until the right time. Like everything, perhaps it had its own 'time line' and time to come out in public.

[cdxvii] Source: *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

[cdxviii] Quoting Col. Halt:

> "So he [Wing Commander, Col. Williams] took my tape on Wednesday and played it for General Bazley, and I worried all week, and when he come back I was waiting at the door to be honest with you, I said, *'Well, what happened?* He laughed. He said, *'I played the tape for General Bazley and the staff, and basically listened intently and said to the staff, 'Well what do we do?' And nobody responded. And the general in his infinite wisdom said, 'Well, it happened off the base it's a British affair. Case closed.'* And Williams threw me the tape back and I said, *'What do I do, anything?*' He said, *'Get in touch with Don Moreland, see what he wants to do. If he wants something give it to him'*."
>
> *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters.
> Published January 11, 2017.

[cdxix]

Ray Boeche, an investigator based in the States who had interviewed some of the airmen involved, is supposed to have told researchers that he had heard from a highly placed, USAF official at the Pentagon, that photos were indeed taken, *but not all of them came out fogged.*

I contacted Ray Boeche myself to ask him to shed some light on this. This was Ray Boeche's reply:

> "I was told by the civilian point person, I believe Anne Turner was her name, in the USAF FOIA office at the Pentagon that she had been told there were photos — even though the master index didn't reflect that fact, and that they were all fogged."
>
> Email from Ray Boeche to Gary Osborn, January 9, 2019.

This is in stark contrast to the published report that Ray Boeche had been told, that *"not all of them came out fogged."*

Ray Boeche then kindly sent me a PDF of the note or diary entry he had written about this issue, which he has given me permission to quote in full:

> "March 25, 1985 . . . 1:24 p.m. Central Time.
>
> I called and spoke with Anne Turner – Freedom of Information manager for the Air Force, to ask about my FOIA request. She said it was in the works, and then mentioned my request for photographs. She stated that she had been told photos were taken but were "indistinguishable."
> She put me on hold to check on my request, and when she came back, she said the secretary handling my request said there was no film listed in their records indices.
> She indicated that when a FOIA request comes in, they contact the Air Force activity involved, and if they indicate no records pertaining to the request, her office has to accept that.
> She said there could very well be records maintained that an Air Force unit could deny having, and thereby avoid having to release them, since officially they wouldn't even exist. She said her office simply has to take the Air Force's word on the existence or lack of existence of records."

However, whether or not the Air Force denies they have the photos, it was initially admitted by the Freedom of Information manager for the Air Force to Ray Boeche that she had been told photos had been taken. Ray Boeche told me that he inquired about this after he had been told by Bustinza that certain individuals had taken photographs of the landed craft he had witnessed, and that he had specifically focused on these in his FOIA request. However, the fact is, only SSgt. Monroe Nevels had taken photographs during the events of the third night, and Monroe Nevels, who told us that he processed his own photos at home in his dark room after the incident, that the film came out fogged because of the radiation. Monroe's photos were never confiscated and they never ended up anywhere else. This only leaves the photos that were taken by SSgt. Jim Penniston on the first night, and the significant point here is, that no matter if they turned out fogged or not, this is a clear admission that photos had indeed been taken, which exist and which ended up with the Air Force and stored at the

Pentagon, and these could only be the photos taken by Penniston.

What is more significant is that this admission to Ray Bouche that the photos were taken runs contrary to John Burroughs' assertion that SSgt. Jim Penniston could not have taken photos during the investigation when they both encountered the unidentified craft of unknown origin, as he doesn't recall seeing Penniston taking photos or examining a craft, even though Burroughs does not remember everything that happened, as he was made immobile and had been rendered unconscious at this most climactic phase of the incident.

Now, I never asked Ray Boeche about any motion movie film that was rumored to have been taken during the third night's events. This was something that came up in Larry Warren's account. Boeche told his hosts on Phenomenon Radio that the woman who was handling his FOIA request had said, *"Well, I can tell you this, I can't find any records of film, but I've heard officers discussing it."* Boeche added that she had told him, *"I am just a civilian; all I can access is what shows up in the record indices. If they choose not to file something, it's as if it never existed."*
[cdxx]

It is worth presenting this quote by Georgina Bruni from her book *"You Can't Tell The People"*:

> "It is interesting the CIA should send in their specialists, considering the USAF have their own, such as the Bioenvironmental Engineering Support Group, which is the equivalent of the Occupational Safety and Health Administration, the Environmental Protection Agency and the Nuclear Regulatory Commission. These specialists, known as Team Aerospace, would be responsible for surveying and evaluating environments and recommending controls to keep the environmental and occupational exposures within acceptable limits. Their primary aim is to promote the health and well-being of all Air Force personnel. Normally employed in the workplace, they use specialized survey instruments and equipment to collect samples and evaluate any hazards which may exist. They also perform environmental sampling such as air, soil, chemical, radiological or bacteriological."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 279).

See also Note 22 in the end notes of Chapter 4: *Evidence,* concerning the alleged analysis reports of the plants and soil samples taken.

[cdxxi] At this time, SSgt. Jim Penniston was not fully aware that John Burroughs had no detailed recall of their encounter with the craft during the incident, and believed he saw only "lights," as would later emerge when Burroughs first came forward in public to talk about the incident in 1991. And to this day, Burroughs says he has no recall of SSgt Penniston's examination and walk-around the craft. Based on what he has said over the years, for Burroughs, there was no time in-between diving to the ground and getting up again to see what he could only describe as a light or "bank of lights" moving back and ascending for take-off. It would be many years later when Burroughs had contacted Penniston again in 2009, that Penniston had learned this from Burroughs when they met-up in person in June 2010. (See Chapter 16: *Hunted by Lions, Tigers and Bears.*) Jim was both shocked and frustrated to hear that Burroughs had no recall of the more vital moments that he had personally experienced, even though Burroughs was there with him during the whole encounter with the craft.

[cdxxii]

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cdxxiii] Quoting Dr. David Clarke:

> ". . . Moreland's diary reveals that he returned to Bentwaters from his Christmas vacation on Monday, 5 January but Halt waited another seven days – until the following Monday morning, 12 January – before he came to see the British commander. By that time more than two whole weeks had passed since the experience."
>
> (*The Rendlesham Files* by Dr. David Clarke, 2010).

And it was a week since the British Commander, Moreland, had returned from his holiday. No satisfactory explanation has been given as to why Lt. Col. Halt had allowed a week to go by before visiting Don Moreland.

Larry Warren writes a letter to his mother about the UFO rumors:

It was during this same week, on Wednesday, January 7, 1981, that young Airman Larry Warren, aged 19, had sent a lengthy letter to his mother from the base post office. It was written and dated January 6, 1981. Aside from talking about himself and asking about the family, as is usual with a young military man far from home, it is from the fourth page that the letter includes a brief account of what Warren says *he had heard from a friend of his, and what this friend told him he had heard on the radio concerning a UFO incident that happened off-base and in the forest.*

The account given in the letter, which appears to have originated from on-base chatter and hearsay and is inaccurate, largely matches the context of the first night and gives some details of the events involving SSgt. Jim Penniston and Airman John Burroughs. How the story is described in the letter is similar to what Airman Richard Bertolino had said he heard over the radio.

The letter also contains some mention of a light that Warren says he and five other airman with him had seen fly over their heads while walking along a dark road about two miles from the base.

> "At the same time, me and five other guys were walking up a dark road about two miles from the base, back from Ipswich, because we couldn't get a ride and we felt like we were being watched and it was strange because there were no streetlights. *Then we saw a bright light go right over us about fifty feet up and just fly over a field.* It was silent we first thought it was an A-10 jet but they scream, so we ran away because witchcraft and black magic is big in this part of Suffolk and we thought that witches were in the woods because that light just seemed to jump over the trees. The next day it turned out we were in the same place as the UFO, so I think we saw it too." [Our emphasis.]
>
> From the transcript of the letter written by Larry Warren to his mother.
> *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 65).

As we can see, in his letter, Warren assumes this minor event happened on the same evening as the first night's events, which would have been the late evening of December 25th into the early-morning hours of December 26, 1980.

However, in his 1997 book, *Left at East Gate*, co-authored with Peter Robbins, Warren had decided to include this little incident involving himself and other airmen walking back to Bentwaters from Woodbridge, having been in Ipswich for the day, and going by what Warren writes, this would have taken place on the evening of Sunday, December 28, 1980, after the third night's events. Warren says that he and his friend, whom he calls "Alabama," caught the last bus back to Bentwaters at 6:00 p.m., so the incident would have taken place somewhere between 6:00 and 7:00 p.m., after having already walked two miles:

> "Alabama and I caught the last bus back to Bentwaters at around 6:00 P.M." [. . .] "To our surprise, the bus dropped us and three other airmen off in the town of Woodbridge. This meant we faced a four-mile walk back to Bentwaters, and it was getting late. We stopped at the Cherry Tree pub for a Coke, then went on. We noticed a small car parked along the road, a man maybe thirty years old was standing next to it. He said he had just seen something strange fly overhead, so he had pulled the car over to investigate. *We saw nothing.* I told him it was most likely an A-10; the man shrugged it off and drove away. Later, we felt stupid that we hadn't asked him for a ride to the base." [Our emphasis].
>
> *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 40).

Obviously, this is the same incident Warren had included in his letter to his mother, which means Warren had either lied to his mother in the letter, or lied to his readers, as the simple fact is there is a total contradiction here between writing, "*We saw a bright light etc . . .*" and "*We saw nothing.*" Ironically, both the transcript of Warren's letter to his mother and his account of this minor incident with this glaring contradiction in the main text are present the same book!

Also, and curiously, the letter, which again was composed on Tuesday, January 6, 1981 – more than a week after the incidents, contains nothing about the third night's events which began from the evening of Saturday, December 27 into the early hours of Sunday, December 28th, and with which Warren will later say he was personally involved. (See Note 449 below.)

During a Phenomenon KGRA Radio interview he did with hosts John Burroughs and Linda Moulton Howe in 2015, Larry Warren again talks about this incident as if it were nothing, and mentions that the guy just saw a jet flying low, which had startled him:

> "We came back, and, uh, we're late. The bus only went so far. We had to walk. We stopped at the Cherry Tree, because I had to work that night. Stopped at the Cherry Tree, got a soft drink. Uh, if you recall that place, there was a little p . . . billiards table in there, uh, in those days. And, um, continued on foot. Uh, there was a car parked out. There was a, uh, a guy out that had said a light . . . he had seen some jet fly over very low and it

> kinda startled him. We just kept going . . . then . . . never got a ride from him."
>
> *Larry Warren, USAF, and Peter Robbins, Author* on Phenomenon KGRA Radio, hosted by John Burroughs with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe. Uploaded November 27, 2015.

If nothing else, the inclusion of this incident in his letter to his mother shows that Warren will appropriate someone else's experience as his own and will add details to make the event appear even more extraordinary than it was.

[cdxxiv] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cdxxv] Quoting Col. Halt:

> "So I went over and the Liaison Officer – Don Moreland, who we called the British Base Commander (we had two British Officers stationed with us) was on vacation, so I told his assistant and he didn't want to touch it with a pole, so Don came back, a few days later, and I went over and said, *'Don, uh, why don't you make some calls and see what your Government want. I'm sure they'd want to investigate this'*. So I waited, and waited, and waited, and a week or so went by . . . and I kept asking. He said, *'I haven't heard, I haven't heard'*. Finally, he and I agreed I'd write a brief memo. . . ."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

There is a discrepancy between what Col. Halt says here and what Dr. David Clarke was able to gather, which one is at pains to try and reconcile. It was established by Dr. David Clarke in his 2010 article *The Rendlesham Files* that after Moreland had returned to RAF Bentwaters on January 5, that Lt. Col. Halt did not go to see Moreland until a week later on January 12. Halt then wrote the memo the next day on January 13, 1981, and according to what Clarke had learned from the DS8c UFO desk officer, Simon Weedon of the MOD, it had arrived at the UFO desk no later than January 14th. So, reading the quote by Col. Halt above, *how then could a week or so have gone by between Halt first going to see Moreland on the 12th and Halt then writing the memo the next day on the 13th?* Again, if Halt had first seen Moreland in person on January 12th and asked Moreland to call the MOD on that day, then there would only have been a day for Moreland to have called the MOD before suggesting to Halt that he write a memo after he hadn't had any response, which Halt did the next day on January 13, 1981, as the memo bears this date.

Quoting Squadron Commander, Donald Moreland:

> "Chuck Halt came to my office and recounted an incredible story about a series of incidents which occurred between 27-30 December. He told me about flashing lights, about a UFO landing in the forest, the indentations left behind after landing, and enhanced

> radiation levels in the area. I assumed he was pulling my leg, but being a good staff officer, I asked for a report in writing I could forward to the MoD. When I received his memo I wrote a covering letter [dated January 15] and sent it off to DS8 [the Air Staff Secretariat at Whitehall that was responsible for UFO reporting]. I did not delay it (if it was urgent in their view they could have passed the information to the RAF liaison officer at Mildenhall) nor did I ask him to sanitize it."
>
> (*The Rendlesham Files* by Dr. David Clarke, 2010).

[cdxxvi] Sources consulted for this section about the Halt Memorandum: *The Rendlesham Files,* Clarke, *The Halt Perspective,* Halt and Hanson, 2016; *"You Can't Tell the People,"* Bruni 2001; *Colonel Charles Halt Speaks At OLM 2018, Hull, UK)* Uploaded by Peter McGarry on September 7, 2018.

[cdxxvii] The subject of the memo was *"Unexplained Lights,"* and begins with the following:

> **"1. Early in the morning of 27 Dec 80 (approximately 0300L) two USAF security police patrolmen saw unusual lights outside the back gate at RAF Woodbridge."**

As was noted by researchers and other witnesses, Lt. Col. Halt had written the wrong date for the first incident, which was really December 26, '80, and the time of 0300L (3:00 AM), which conflicts with the timeline logged by SSgt. Penniston in his notebook, and which really began at "12:20," as written down while Penniston was at the East Gate. (See Note 135).

Returning to the date: skeptics have asserted, and this issue still persists to this day, that the incorrect date of the 27th for the first event involving SSgt. Jim Penniston was deliberately used as some sort of disinformation exercise, as this date was between the dates of the two significant incidents. Halt has always denied this since it was later discovered that the correct date was December 26, 1980. Even though he had already handled and read the witness statements taken after the first night's events, on which the date of December 26, '80 was stated, Halt says he merely made a mistake on the dates, as the memo was written two weeks after the incident – a typical human error all of us have made at one time or another when trying to remember dates and times. Halt later told Georgina Bruni that the dates were typing errors (Bruni, p. 210).

Lt. Col. Halt's memorandum continues:

> **"Thinking an aircraft might have crashed or been forced down, they called for permission to go outside the gate to investigate. The on-duty flight chief responded and allowed three patrolmen to proceed on foot. The individuals reported seeing a strange glowing object in the forest."**

Halt was careful not to name anyone and described the object that was reported to have landed in Rendlesham Forest (as encountered by SSgt. Jim Penniston and Airman Burroughs), as being:

> **". . . metallic in appearance and triangular in shape, approximately two to three meters across the base**

and approximately two meters high. It illuminated the entire forest with a white light. The object itself had a pulsing red light on top and a bank(s) of blue lights underneath. The object was hovering or on legs. As the patrolmen approached the object, it maneuvered through the trees and disappeared. At this time the animals on a nearby farm went into a frenzy. The object was briefly sighted approximately an hour later near the back gate."

It is obvious that Lt. Col. Halt had received this information mainly from the witness accounts – especially those written and signed by Burroughs and the bogus statement that was given to Jim Penniston and attributed to him, which was handed onto Halt on December 29, 1980. It is also possible that Halt had either discussed the incident with Captain Mike Verrano, who had debriefed both SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs just after they had finished their shifts, or someone whom Verrano had talked to, and that this is where Halt had received the data about the dimensions of the craft and that is was metallic in appearance. He could have also estimated the size of the craft and knew it was triangular from the depressions that were found in the ground at the landing site, which he had examined with SSgt. Monroe Nevels and Lt. Englund, as well as the cuts and abrasions on the trees, which were measured at around 5-feet high and above – all of which were made and assessed before Halt began working on his memo.

"2. The next day, three depressions 1.5 inches deep and 7 inches in diameter were found where the object had been sighted on the ground. The following night (29 Dec 80) the area was checked for radiation. Beta/gamma readings of 0.1 milliroentgens were recorded with peak readings in the three depressions and near the center of the triangle formed by the depressions. A nearby tree had moderate (0.05–0.07) readings on the side of the tree toward the depressions."

The date of "29 Dec 80" is also wrong, as the investigation at the landing site first entrusted to SSgt. Monroe Nevels who later took the radiation readings of the site, began on the evening of December 27, 80, and continued into the morning of December 28 – the events of which became known as the "third night." Col. Halt then goes on to describe the objects observed on the third night (December 27/28), of which he himself was present:

"3. Later in the night a red sun-like light was seen through the trees. It moved about and pulsed. At one point it appeared to throw off glowing particles and then broke into five separate white objects and then disappeared. Immediately thereafter, three star-like objects were noticed in the sky, two objects to the north and one to the south, all of which were about 10 degrees off the horizon. The objects moved rapidly in sharp, angular movements and displayed red, green and blue lights. The objects to the north appeared to be elliptical through an 8-12 power lens. They then

turned to full circles. The objects to the north remained in the sky for an hour or more. The object to the south was visible for two or three hours and beamed down a stream of light from time to time. Numerous individuals, including the undersigned, witnessed the activities in paragraphs 2 and 3.

(Signed)
Charles I. Halt, Lt Col, USAF
Deputy Base Commander"

[cdxxviii] *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Posted January 11, 2017.

[cdxxix] Apparently, no reason was given for the two-day delay, and this issue is further confounded when we note that Simon Weedon had told Dr. David Clarke that he received the memo no later than January 14, when Moreland had sent a cover letter with the memo dated January 15. (See Note 425 above.)

[cdxxx] RAF Squadron Leader Donald Moreland had later said that there was no adequate response from either of these British establishments. During Georgina Bruni's interview with Donald Moreland in 1998, Moreland is quoted as having said the following:

> "They [the MOD] didn't reply, they didn't even reply to the radar report, but eventually said it had been investigated and they had not found anything. I thought it was odd that I didn't receive a written reply from the MOD. I phoned several times. I was quite annoyed."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 206).

In a personal communication with Dr. David Clarke in September 2002, Donald Moreland writes:

> "I didn't receive a reply so I telephoned DS8 several times, and was eventually told that they (MoD) had carried out a search of the defence radar logs for the period in question but nothing was found. They assumed it was the light from the Orford Ness Lighthouse flashing through the trees."
>
> (*The Rendlesham Files* by Dr. David Clarke, 2010).

It is more than just a passing interest, that the Orfordness Lighthouse had already been considered as an explanation by the DS8 staff at the MOD, almost three years before Vince Thurkettle had come up with same theory/explanation in October 1983. (See subchapter, *Lighthouse,* in Chapter 11: *Lifeline* and also Note 24 below.)

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "We waited, and we waited, and waited . . . nothing

happened. I said, 'Great, I'm just glad this is all going away, and it all went away for two years [actually, almost four years] until some things happened.'"

A Different Perspective with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.

[cdxxxi]After it had been sent to the MOD, and a copy sent to the Third Air Force Headquarters, Mildenhall, the memo was not heard of or seen again . . . *until the copy that was sent to Third Air Force HQ, was in fact released to the public almost four years later.*

As Jim Penniston recalls, Burroughs said he had an appointment at the AFOSI building. Below is a quote made by Burroughs in 2016, which expresses the same things he has said for many years after finally coming forward to talk in public with his first published interview in 1990:

"I was not officially told to keep quiet, threatened, interrogated, or that I could not talk about what had transpired."

John Burroughs in an interview with UFO researcher Philip Mantle, quoted in *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

During the radio interview Burroughs did with host Martin Willis on March 29, 2017, there appears to be some recall by Burroughs of this event remembered by Jim Penniston involving Sgt. Adrian Bustinza, but he doesn't mention SSgt. Jim Penniston, and it appears Burroughs is really talking about or struggling to mention the AFOSI building, which was across the street from the Law Enforcement desk:

"I don't ever remember being debriefed. Now, I think Bustinza at one point told me when we talked . . . you know we talk occasionally . . . you know. He told me he saw me up there. I think it was on Monday, up there, uh, uh, at the Security, uh desk, or where the Security operations was . . . the desk, the Law Enforcement desk was across the street. So he saw me up there at one point."

John Burroughs on *Martin Willis Live Show*. (RAF Bentwaters, Rendlesham Forest) March 29, 2017.

It is possible that the reason why Burroughs was at the AFOSI building was for something else which had nothing to do with the incident. It is also possible that while there around the middle of January 1981 – and he could have visited the AFOSI building before this time, although there is no record or evidence of this – Burroughs was interrogated in the same manner that Jim Penniston was interrogated over the two days of December 29th and December 30th 1980, and like Jim Penniston, Burroughs could not remember what transpired during these meetings . . . and to this day cannot remember if he

was ever there. It had taken Penniston fourteen years before he recalled the second meeting he had at the AFOSI building when he was given a truth serum and hypnotized, and he was only able to recall this incident after undergoing hypnosis himself twice – the first in August 1994, and the second in September 1994. (See Chapter 14: *Regression.*)

It is also interesting that when Penniston saw Burroughs walk to the AFOSI building to keep his appointment that day, and although both were still working on the base, this was the last time Penniston saw Burroughs until almost fourteen years later in 1994 when they met to do the *Strange But True?* UK documentary (See Chapter 13: *The Coda Decade*) and then 15 years after that when Burroughs contacted Penniston in 2009, and then both met up again in person in June 2010.

At the Rendlesham Forest Incident Presentation conference on Saturday, May 19, 2018, at the Woodbridge Community Hall, Burroughs answered a question put to him from the audience on the subject of hypnosis, in which he was asked if it was possible his mind was blocked. Burroughs said that it is very possible that he could have been messed with and hypnotized, and that a "blocking mechanism" could have been deliberately placed on his memory while under hypnosis regarding some details of the events he witnessed. If so, then Burroughs' failing memory of having had this done to him, and like Jim Penniston and others – Airman Ed Cabansag for example – is due to having been told while under hypnosis that he would not remember being interviewed or interrogated, with conscious memory of this/these meeting(s) having been wiped completely.

[cdxxxii] Apparently, there was another incident on the base involving another officer, which makes one wonder if this sort of thing went on all the time. A poster on *The Unofficial 81st SPS Messageboard* had written and posted (September 22, 2003), that a Captain named Pierre (Pete) R. Saul was "fired" for sleeping with the wife of another Captain who was his subordinate. The poster adds that Capt. Saul was demoted to Master Sergeant and sent away – most likely assigned to another base.
[cdxxxiii]

On page 113 of her book, *"You Can't Tell the People"* (2001), Georgina Bruni writes that other commanders had told her that although Ted Conrad was a fine man, that he and his wife seemed somewhat bitter and disillusioned with the Air Force, adding that it seemed unusual that an officer of his category would have such thoughts. Bruni then asks the question, *"Could he have been another victim of the Rendlesham Forest incident?"*

[cdxxxiv] *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.

[cdxxxv] *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016). Col. Halt brushes aside any notion that his reservations about his new boss, Colonel Sam P. Morgan, had anything to do with a personal grievance, or "a clash of personalities" . . . but this really wasn't the truth.

As related in the book, *The Halt Perspective* (2016), relations between Lt. Col. Charles Halt and Col. Sam Morgan were already strained when an incident occurred in which over a hundred windows on base had been shot out with an air rifle. Naturally, a police investigation ensued when it was discovered that one of the damaged houses was that of the Chief of Police on the base. Following interviews, allegations were made against Colonel Morgan's son and another youth. Lt. Col. Halt, who was asked for his advice by the Chief of Police on what to do as this was a delicate situation, told the Chief he had to do his job. The Chief then visited Col. Morgan's home to interview Morgan and his son, which resulted in Morgan going "off the deep end." Morgan then complained to Colonel Gordon Williams and anyone who would listen, saying that Halt had sent an armed police officer with a badge to his home. In any case, the investigation lacked evidence that Morgan's son was involved, but Morgan blamed Halt personally.

Soon afterwards, Colonel Gordon Williams was promoted to General and moved to a new

assignment in Germany. Colonel Richard M. Pascoe (later General) replaced Williams as Wing Commander at Bentwaters. Colonel Morgan was then selected to replace Colonel Conrad as the Base Commander, and before taking this position, Morgan then let it be known that the first thing he was going to do when he became Base Commander was to fire Lt. Col. Halt. Knowing this was likely to happen, Halt began looking for a new job and contacted friends of his. He then found a position in Germany that needed a replacement with his skills.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> "I contacted many friends and found one in Germany that needed a replacement with my skills. He passed my name and credentials up the chain to the 17th AF Commander. He contacted Colonel Pascoe and asked for me by name. Pascoe told him no and called me into his office, confronting me as to why I wanted to leave. I told him about Morgan's comments and he became upset. He told me it wouldn't happen and to relax and do my job. We had a somewhat difficult relationship after that."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cdxxxvi] Apparently, Corporal Sam P. Morgan's motive for playing the tape to others – especially at parties – wasn't to generate serious conversation on the subject of the incident or the phenomenon in general, it was really played as a source of amusement, *to make fun of Colonel Halt "chasing UFOs."*

Below are two quotes made by Col. Halt on this issue:

> "When he [Col. Conrad] moved on he left the copy in the desk drawer and Morgan found it. He [Col. Morgan] was playing it, without my knowledge, at social events."
>
> "Ironically, the tape was played at some cocktail parties and treated with merriment before being returned to me, copies having been made without my knowledge."
>
> *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cdxxxvii] Without Jim Penniston's knowledge, news on the Rendlesham Incident had already been filtering through to the media, which didn't have enough of the story to write up a full report.

[cdxxxviii] As mentioned in Note 23 in the end notes of Chapter 9: *Afterburn,* in her book *"You Can't Tell the People"* (2001), Georgina Bruni points out that SSgt. Jim Penniston was debriefed by more officers than any other witness to the incidents that took place over the three days after Christmas in 1980, and presents a list of officers which included Major Malcolm Zickler. However, Jim Penniston denies that Major Zickler had debriefed him, adding that this was one of a few things that Georgina got wrong. One of the officers that Georgina Bruni also mentions as having debriefed SSgt. Penniston was Colonel Brian Currie, the Vice Wing Commander at the time of the incident, who was involved in a scandalous incident on the base and was removed from his position and shipped back the States. Although he knew the Vice Wing Commander Col. Currie quite well, Jim Penniston doesn't remember Currie ever having debriefed him.

[cdxxxix] *Rendlesham Forest. Anna Lacey interviews Brenda Butler from Suffolk, and Vince Thurkettle from Norfolk.* Part of the show *UFOs, Mars and Space Science.* October 30, 2005.
[cdxl]

See: *"What were the landing marks?"* by Ian Ridpath.
Quoting Ridpath:

> "It is sometimes claimed that Vince was not shown the 'real' landing marks but a different set some distance away. This is an easy way of dismissing awkward evidence, but in turn raises the question: how many similar sets of marks were there in that forest?"

When we weigh-up everything that has been said since, it is clear that this "awkward evidence" was due to the likelihood that the alleged "landing site" where this "awkward evidence" was found, was the wrong site and that people were deliberately led and fooled into believing it was the true landing site. (See Note 443 below.)
[cdxli]

Britain's Closest Encounter. Rendlesham Forest UFO incident — landing site and the Orford Ness lighthouse. Posted June 21, 2009. Quoting Vince Thurkettle:

> "That was one of the biggest disappointments of my life twenty-odd years of playing in woods taught me what to see and this site was ordinary. It was just ordinary and natural. Nothing strange or unusual had happened there."

[cdxlii] In her April 1985, *MUFON UFO Journal* article, Jenny Randles, who interviewed Vince Thurkettle a few times at the alleged landing site, writes that Thurkettle was told by some men from the base that the holes were the marks left by the UFO.

> "Rendlesham Forest Update" by Jenny Randles, *MUFON UFO JOURNAL*, April 1985, No. 204.

[cdxliii] ***Fake Landing Site***

It is clear that Vince Thurkettle was not impressed by what he was shown . . . *but perhaps this was the reason why he was taken to this site, so that he would later report what he had seen to the media, which he did just after the story broke on October 2, 1983.*

Thurkettle was clearly making inquiries, and it is possible that he was shown a mundane 'landing site,' with three depressions that had been faked. With the observations the forester made, it was possibly hoped that this would sooner or later fool skeptics and investigators alike into believing this was the "definitive landing site" relating to the UFO incidents that had been reported. For example, astronomy writer and skeptic, Ian Ridpath, who had met with Vince Thurkettle at the alleged landing site and enthusiastically championed Thurkettle's lighthouse theory – to the extent that most people think the lighthouse theory was originally Ridpath's – makes certain that the landing site he has now determined (See maps in Note 20 in the end notes of chapter, *Lifeline*) was the one that Thurkettle had been taken to six weeks later, and was the one that featured in the incidents involving Penniston and Halt.

During her interview with Vince Thurkettle in 1998, Georgina Bruni pressed the question again, asking him if he was sure he had visited the right spot. After all, it was six weeks after the event and it was known that people had been partying in the forest since the incidents. It is said that some of the officers' wives and teenage children had actually been camping out in the forest, looking for UFOs.

Quoting Bruni:

> "Vince was not aware that several people had visited the site immediately after the event, or that plaster casts of the indentations had been made. I pointed out that by the time he had found it the site would have been trampled on and interfered with, and he agreed that this was possible. *There were even reports that a false landing site had been prepared with an arrow marking the way"* (Bruni, pp. 248 – 249). [Our emphasis.]

As mentioned in Note 35 in the end notes of Chapter 4: *Evidence,* it was at the Rendlesham conference, Woodbridge Community Hall on May 19, 2018, Rendlesham researcher Ronnie Dugdale, who was one of the speakers that day, along with John Burroughs, stated: *"I know some airmen were sent out there with a coffee can to make some indentations, even scratching an arrow pointing this way to the UFO."*

Note that Dugdale claims he personally "knows" this. Reports of a fake landing site with an arrow pointing the way would surely make most people suspicious about the claims that Thurkettle had been taken to the "real" landing site.

Quoting Jenny Randles:

> "Thurkettle noted that about one month after the landing (which he had heard rumours about in the Forestry office) he happened upon some holes in the ground with a giant arrow scratched in the earth pointing at them (this fact has always been omitted from media references, and the time-lag between event and discovery rarely mentioned)." [. . .] I have talked to Thurkettle on the site a couple of times since this dramatic revelation. There is no question that he is less than a hundred per cent convinced by it. He frankly admits that there are puzzles. He accepts the possibility that something else may have been involved. And he talks of his theory as if it "just seemed like a good idea at the time." He also is worried, as he should be, by the giant arrow in the ground. To me this is so out of phase with the secrecy of the case it strikes me that the most likely scenario is as follows: *these marks were concocted around rabbit holes after the events. The men on base were encouraged to believe they were the landing traces to aid in disinformation and to throw the hordes of curious sightseers off the scent."* [Our emphasis.]
>
> "Rendlesham Forest Update" by Jenny Randles, *MUFON UFO JOURNAL*, April 1985, No. 204.

Jenny Randles also mentions Thurkettle's theory, which to him seemed as if it was a just good idea at the time. This is Thurkettle's Orfordness Lighthouse theory. It should be noted that it is from the alleged landing site, which Thurkettle had visited, that one can easily see the Orfordness Lighthouse, which was something Thurkettle had later come up with in 1983 as a theory to explain what was seen

during the incidents, and which Ian Ridpath immediately endorsed as a 'case-closed' explanation.

The fact is that the Orfordness Lighthouse CANNOT be seen from the 'real' landing site, according to Penniston and Burroughs, as was relocated and reidentified as such when they visited the forest in 2010. (See here.) And so, if the lighthouse had already been seized upon as an explanation to debunk the incident – as is evident in the five witness statements now in the public domain, which were taken only days after the incidents and in which the lighthouse features as the "beacon," making the witness statements themselves appear suspicious – then a location in the forest where the Lighthouse can clearly be viewed out on the coast on the eastern horizon would be a strong motive for those complicit in a cover-up, to create a fake landing site at that spot.

It is likely then, that a fake landing site with trees that had genuine axe marks made by the forester whom Thurkettle mentioned; shallow depressions that were made to look like rabbit hole scratchings marked by sticks with a clear view of the Orfordness Lighthouse thrown in was then identified and was later pointed to by an arrow sign, and that certain people who inquired into the incident – like forester Vince Thurkettle for example – were either given directions to get there, or taken there so that this site would be accepted as the true landing site . . . *yet another ploy to sow confusion for any potential researchers or investigators on the case.*

From the point in her article where Jenny Randles mentions the holes, which Thurkettle examined, we are actually led to how Thurkettle realized the Orfordness Lighthouse could be the answer to the lights seen in the forest, which the witnesses to the incidents had reported. And this is quite revealing and supportive of our suspicions that Thurkettle was taken to this very site so that he would sooner or later see the beacon of the lighthouse from there and make this connection:

> "These he was told, by some men from the base, were the marks left by the UFO. He examined them and was certain they were scratchings made by rabbits. Droppings were even visible within them. *Armed with this he chanced to notice the lighthouse and pondered if it might have been the UFO."* [Our emphasis.]
>
> "Rendlesham Forest Update" by Jenny Randles, *MUFON UFO JOURNAL*, April 1985, No. 204.

Although he was fully aware of Jenny Randles' view that the landing site may have been a fake site, in 2009 Thurkettle continued with his original observations on which he made his name with the case.

Quoting Thurkettle from the video clip of the documentary, *Britain's Close Encounter*, 2009:

> ". . . the first time I saw the lighthouse I really thought it was poachers with a lamp in the forest, so I knew that to people who weren't ready for it, the lighthouse really appeared to be a pulsing light within the forest. I knew that from earlier, and I think the fact that the lighthouse can only be seen from very certain parts of the forest. And one of them is exactly where the alleged landing happened."

In the interview that former Base Commander and Colonel, Ted Conrad agreed to do with Dr. David Clarke in January 2010, Conrad stated the following:

> ". . . any evidence at the alleged landing site (if any) was so unremarkable that some people eventually became

unsure as to the exact landing site."

(*The Rendlesham Files* by Dr. David Clarke, 2010).

This is a curious thing for Ted Conrad to say when it is now known that Conrad had visited the real landing site only hours after the incident involving SSgt. Penniston had taken place, which then led to him ordering Lt. Bruce Englund to go collect SSgt. Monroe Nevels so he could check out the site for any evidence as well as any traces of radiation. For the Base Commander, Conrad to have done this means he knew where the correct landing site was and took what he had seen for himself and what was reported to him by SSgt. Nevels very seriously indeed. It would have been essential to gather the evidence and the facts first to then assess what needed to be done in terms of a 'damage control' and 'cover-up' operation if necessary.

As mentioned, in the interview he did with skeptic James Easton during July 1997, Chris Armold claims to have visited the landing site with Burroughs only hours after the first incident – although Burroughs denies this; and although Armold says there was evidence of three depressions in the ground, he adds that there was nothing to get excited about – NO damage to trees or scorch marks, or any damage to any plant life in the area. We know this simply is not true when we read the witness accounts and listen to the Halt tape where Lt. Col. Halt is describing the damage to the trees and other peculiar features and night-vision 'glow' effects at what could have only been the real landing site relating to the first night. As for there being no damage to any plant life in the area, we would refer the reader to Note 22 in the end notes of Chapter 4: *Evidence.*

Apparently, from what has been said by researcher Brenda Butler and others, on February 26, 1981, the real site was deliberately destroyed by being burned to the ground – torched and scorched. Source: "The Rendlesham Forest Mystery" by Jenny Randles, originally published in *Flying Saucer Review,* March 1981, Volume 26, No. 6.

This was obviously done to hide any traces of evidence after the site had been investigated and information gathered from it, which again, would explain why SSgt. Monroe Nevels was ordered to the site the day following the first incident and was sent out there again with a Geiger counter on the orders of Col. Conrad and other officers on the base to assess the situation. However, following the dramatic events of the third night, it was then that a specialist survey of the site was made by the 'Team Aerospace' – again, see Note 420 above. It was sometime after this that the site was then destroyed and a fake site with an arrow pointing to it was then created. This is possibly why Vince Thurkettle was told about a "burned area," but was led to a site where he saw no evidence of that. Obviously what Thurkettle had seen was a fake site that had been created some distance away that had nothing unusual to offer investigators, and this was the point. It is said that it was the Forestry Commission that had burned down the area after Brenda Butler and Dot Street kept inquiring about the site on and after February 18, 1981, and this is likely. In light of this, it is also curious why the on-duty guy at the Forestry Commission office would tell Vince Thurkettle that "they" – obviously meaning officers from the base – didn't want the story to get out, but that it was out now anyway. And based on this we have Georgina Bruni, who interviewed Vince Thurkettle in 1998, writing, "So now we learn that the Forestry Commission was somehow involved in the cover-up" (Bruni, p. 248).

Now continuing with Chris Armold: From what Georgina Bruni was able to gather about Airman Armold and his account, which is inconsistent with the facts, one would assume that Armold was another airman complicit in the containment (cover) story that was initiated by the Security Police Squadron Commander, Major Zickler.

As an amusing side note, Chris Armold was part of the little Country & Western band that Colonel Ted Conrad had formed on the base. Ted Conrad was a Texan, who preferred to wear cowboy boots, and so 'Tex' became his nickname. The band consisted of 'Tex' Conrad on guitar and vocals; A1C Chris Armold (LE) on guitar; Lt. Fred (Skip) Buran on lead guitar; an airman named Mike Scully on drums; an airman named Dave Paine (SPS) on Bass, and two officers' wives doing background vocals.

Apparently, the band did several rehearsals at Ted Conrad's home on the Woodbridge base, and then a show at the Woodbridge Officer's Club.

Source: *The Unofficial 81st SPS Messageboard*. On the same forum site, there is this message from Fred 'Skip' Buran, the former night-shift Lieutenant who was on duty during the first night's events:

> "Col Tex Conrad was support group commander who put together a country music group. Played at the O club [12-O'Clock High Club], almost everyone else in the group was SPs. [Security Police]. Mal Zickler, Pete Saal, Ed Drury, Bruce Englund, Bonnie Tamplin, Bill Buckingham, Mike Verano, Keith Graham were all there with yours truly." [. . .] ". . . I was the straight laced lieutenant that played lead guitar in the country band. I painted on a big mustache and wore a sombrero. Chris Armold and I have been in touch from time to time..... Skip Buran"

It was Lt. Buran who had heard over the radio from SSgt. Jim Penniston and after the initial encounter with the triangular craft that they (he and Burroughs) had just been chasing the beacon light of the Lighthouse – although it was Burroughs who had made the mistake and had run some distance towards it. The fact is, the lighthouse could not be seen from the real landing site, and could only be seen when Penniston and Burroughs had left the site and chased after the lighted craft east of the site and in a field past the farmhouse. In any case, it is likely that this report to Buran over the radio was the origin of the Lighthouse explanation used by those complicit in the cover-up, as the "beacon" then made its way into the witness statements which had obviously been messed with (see subchapter *Five Witness Statements* in Chapter 15: *The 'Hold Forth' Years*), and was mentioned several times in these statements. (See Note 121.) Most of the people listed in Skip Buran's message post above – specifically those whose names will be forever associated with the incident – have either remained quiet and evasive, or have expressed very negative and skeptical comments about the events – even making statements to the effect that nothing unusual had happened. One would be forgiven for thinking that perhaps the group consisting of Col. Ted Conrad, A1C Chris Armold, Major Ed Drury, Lt. Bruce Englund, Captain Mike Verrano, Lt. Fred (Skip) Buran and Major Malcolm Zickler, were close enough to be considered 'usual suspects' in Zickler's cover-up and containment story.

[cdxliv] This, of course, implies that SSgt. Jim Penniston's newly assigned job position in 'Plans and Programs' was instigated by Major Zickler to keep him in one place and to keep an eye on whatever he said or did by those who were working with him and on the instructions of those who had debriefed and interrogated Penniston at the AFOSI building on December 29 and 30, 1980. (See, Chapter 9: *Afterburn* and Chapter 14: *Regression.*)
[cdxlv]

The 1997 book, *Left at East Gate* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins, was removed from publication and suspended in October 2017 by the present publisher and distributor, *Cosimo* because of "reported inaccuracies and embellishments" (see here). However, what interests us is that in the book, Larry Warren, who was an A1C during his brief time at the Bentwaters base, mentions working in SP Supply from February 1981. Warren also mentions having taken great pleasure in "torturing" (his own words) a traumatized SSgt. Jim Penniston when bringing up the subject of UFOs . . . .

> "From late February 1981 on, I worked at the supply section, bored to death. I felt confined and sensed I was being watched by at least one of the sergeants in the

> office. I got along with all of them just fine, but something was out of sync. The office was manned by Master Sergeant Fred Smith, Technical Sergeant George Laws and an airman named Dean Thompson, who had been injured in a motorcycle accident and was awaiting discharge. I found the assignment relaxing, without the usual pressures on the flight line or in operations. The subject of UFOS only came up once, when Thompson asked Sergeant Penniston if he'd seen any UFOs lately. Penniston went right through the roof; he'd been the one who told me to shut up the morning after the incident. I took great pleasure in torturing him, and I think Dean did too."
>
> *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 69).

. . . which makes one wonder why Warren wasn't traumatized by the subject himself if he had witnessed exactly what he claims he witnessed, including his claims of having been brutally interrogated by agents afterwards:

[cdxlvi] Quoting Col. Halt:

> "I knew Jim Penniston very well. We spent probably 500 hours cooped up in the Command Post. He was always the Cop Liaison for exercises, and you know what the exercises were like in Europe in 1980 during the Cold War? Man it's a gas mask, the hood, all the rubber suits, the gloves, the whole works . . . hours and hours and hours of that torment. Jim was in there, and I had many thousand hours with him."
>
> *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published January 11, 2017.

[cdxlvii] It is likely that SSgt. J.D. Ingalls was told by Major Zickler to go talk with SSgt. Penniston to see how he had reacted to the conversation topic of the incidents, and to see if he was following OSI orders by not divulging any information. If so, it was wise of SSgt. Jim Penniston not to have said anything.

[cdxlviii] Note by Jim Penniston:

> John Burroughs has recently stated in public (February 4, 2019 on his personal Facebook page), that while he was stationed at Bentwaters, he had a card that said he had Secret Clearance for the NAPA (Non Alert Parking Area) and the WSA, (Weapons Storage Area), also telling the public that he could walk into these areas without an escort.
>
> NAPA only required a Secret Clearance. I know that

> Burroughs had Secret Clearance for the NMSA, which stands for 'Non-Nuclear Storage Areas,' but he would have had to have had 'Top Secret Clearance' for walking into and accessing the WSA without an escort. He doesn't seem to know the difference between the NMSA and the WSA. John Burroughs has NEVER had anything but a 'Secret Clearance.'

It should be noted that Security Supervisor SSgt. Jim Penniston, was the only responder that morning of the first incident who had 'Top-Secret Clearance.' And although Jim is now retired, this still stands today. Burroughs, being a Law Enforcement airman simply did not have that same clearance, and that's been the cause of a lot of tension between the two men over the years since the incident. For example, whenever they were casually discussing something and Burroughs had asked Jim Penniston about certain information that was sensitive and which he knew Jim knew, but which Jim could not answer, this often led to Burroughs accusing Jim Penniston of being complicit in a conspiracy to cover up the incident, and all because Jim Penniston could not divulge certain information to Burroughs, which Burroughs simply did not have the clearance for. What Jim could not talk about had nothing to do with covering up the incident.

[cdxlix] As mentioned in Note 13 in the end notes of Chapter 9: *Afterburn*, only a day after the third night's events took place, Airman Larry Warren had phoned his mother from the base, in which he says he had discussed the UFO-related events. Apparently, Airman Greg Battram was present with Warren when he phoned his mother. However, the phone call was suddenly cut off by someone on the base, and Warren has always said that he suspected this was because he was talking about the UFO incident. It's not known what Warren had actually told his mother, as he says in the testimony that ended up in the book, *Clear Intent* by Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood, published May 1, 1984, that he had only mentioned to his mother that "a UFO had landed off-base." This of course could be related to the first night's events involving Penniston and Burroughs, and we only have Warren's and Greg Battram's word that Warren had talked about the UFO incident(s) off-base.

UFO researcher and author, Larry Fawcett, was a Lieutenant and Deputy police chief in Coventry, Connecticut, USA, and also assistant director of the American organization C.A.U.S. (Citizens Against UFO Secrecy). Larry Fawcett was contacted by Larry Warren through mutual friend Bob Luca – husband of famous UFO abductee, Betty Andreasson. (See Chapter 12: *Disinformation* and Note 6 in the end notes of Chapter 11: *Lifeline.*) At the time, Fawcett was writing the book *Clear Intent* with fellow CAUS member, Barry Greenwood. Warren, who was back in the States at this time says he met Larry Fawcett around mid-February 1983, and from then onwards Larry Fawcett had been following up and checking Larry Warren's story. One year later on February 7, 1984, Larry Fawcett interviewed Greg Battram (See Note 451 below) and asked him about the brief phone call Larry Warren had with his mother from the base:

> Larry Fawcett:
> "When did you hook up with Larry [Warren]? When he tried to call his mother that time?"
>
> Greg Battram:
> ". . . we were, I guess, sitting in one of our rooms or in the snackbar or one of the two. He decided he was going to call his mom and I said, I'll go with you. We walked down to the phones by the base exchange. He tried one phone and didn't have that to [sic] good of a connection,

> so he tried the other and got through. I think it was *like when he mentioned this to his mother* the phones just clicked off, and we couldn't figure out what the **** it was. So we tried the other phone and it didn't work either. We didn't put these two things together at the time." [Our emphasis.]
>
> Transcript of '*Conversation with Greg Battram, February 7, 1984.*'
> From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org.*

Gregg Battram, doesn't mention anything about a 'UFO,' here, but in his conversation with Larry Fawcett, he says this in the context of his own claims of the strange lights he saw in the forest as part of the patrol he was with and after mentioning seeing Larry Warren during the same incident. (See Chapter 6: *"It's Back"* and Note 85 in the end notes of the same chapter.)

Jim Penniston remembers being told that Warren was known for using the phone regularly, and during these calls he would use up the lines that was meant for emergencies, and so this was the reason why his call to his mother was cut and disconnected.

As mentioned, Warren then wrote a letter to his mother, sent on January 7, 1981, telling her about the UFO incident he had heard from an airman friend concerning the first night's events. (See Note 423 above.) From what was expressed in the letter, which is just a brief but somewhat detailed account of the first night's events, it's likely that this was only days before Warren and Battram had possibly heard about the more incredulous stories that were being passed around by J.D. Ingalls concerning the third night.

[cdl] Again, it should be noted that Airman Lawrence Warren was working in SP Supply, and so if what SSgt. J.D. Ingalls had told Jim Penniston was true – i.e., that on the orders of the SPS Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler, Ingalls had spread his fabricated story on base through casual and random conversations at the Law Enforcement desk and in SP supply – then it is also possible that it was here that Larry Warren and Greg Battram had heard the stories, and/or were in direct contact with Ingalls – possibly even Major Zickler.

Curiously, during a phone conversation with former Deputy Base Commander, Lt. Col. Charles Halt on the evening of Tuesday, June 25, 1992, which was taped by Larry Warren's co-author Peter Robbins, Larry Warren offers Halt the following information:

> "By late January [1981], I was moved into office and support areas, typing . . . with [Major] Drury and people like that. Major Zickler, I used to play darts with him at the Rod & Gun Club, knew him very well…."
>
> *Left at East Gate, by* Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 337).

In a radio interview conducted by Kevin Randle, Col. Halt mentions a group related with Major Zickler called the "chain gang," which included Larry Warren:

> Kevin Randle:
> "Okay, and the other thing we should point out, Larry Warren's whole military career was, what, about eight

months?"

Col. Halt:
"Huh, yeah, he's thrown out with a coded discharge . . . unsuitable, undesirable for the convenience of the government. How about that? He was also on the 'chain gang,' which was a group that Mal Zickler had – which I didn't approve of – which was the druggies and guess what? They were working . . . uh, picking up rocks by the side of the road. The OSI or somebody got involved to clean things up, gave him [Warren] a flunky job in Supply till they could get rid of him and find any excuse to give him a discharge and get him out and it would all go away. They made a mistake."

A Different Perspective with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Uploaded January 11, 2017.

It is not difficult to see a picture forming in the following quote by Larry Warren posted in September 2011:

". . . as for mal Zigler, [sic] weird enough, i was sort of friends with him and his wife, i know that sounds non standard for an airman no mark, but it was the case, *he even helped me out of some little mess i got into once*, even had drinks with them at the rod and gun club!" [Our emphasis.]

Post by Larry Warren on the *Rendlesham Incident* forum, Saturday September 11, 2010.

[cdli] As mentioned, the Airman in question, Greg Battram, is possibly another person who, like Larry Warren, saw some personal benefit in the UFO stories going around, and whose enthusiasm for telling stories was taken advantage by Major Zickler. Battram first came forward on February 7, 1984 to be interviewed by Larry Fawcett of CAUS, to whom he gave an account of his own involvement during the events that took place the third night. (See Transcript of *'Conversation with Greg Battram, February 7, 1984.'* From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org.*)

This airman's interview was almost a year after Larry Fawcett had first been approached by Larry Warren, which we suspect was in March 1983, but said by Warren to have been in February 1983. (See Notes 460 and 496.) Airman Greg Battram then came forward again in 1985 under the name "Airman Greg" for the CNN special feature presented by Chuck DeCaro. (See Chapter 13: *The Coda Decade.*)
[cdlii]

It was around March, 1981, and while MSgt. Ray Gulyas was returning to the US, that the film negatives and plaster casts had mysteriously disappeared from Ray Gulyas' personal possessions while they were being shipped over to the States. In terms of the plaster casts, the same thing happened to Jim Penniston while his family possessions were also being shipped over to the States in 1984 . . . one of his 'landing pod' plaster casts had mysteriously disappeared. (See Chapter 13: *The Coda Decade.*)

[cdliii] Unknown to Jim Penniston at this time, the ridiculous stories being passed around by SSgt. J. D.

Ingalls were already taking shape to be thrust into the public eye.

The following information which appears below and continued in the end notes of Chapter 11: *Lifeline*, is based on various sources, including what Jenny Randles presented in her book *From Out of the Blue* (1991) and her numerous articles, for example, *Getting it Right at East Gate* (2009); what Georgina Bruni had written in her book *"You Can't Tell the People"* published in 2001; the research of Ronnie Dugdale, which was first published in *Outer Limits* Magazine No: 11 – December, 2017 under the title: *"It Didn't Crash it Landed."* Much of what Ronnie Dugdale had written was then published by researcher/author, Sacha Christie, on her blog page, along with her own research about Larry Warren, on May 1, 2017, under the title, *How The RFI Whistle was REALLY blown*.

How the public became aware of the Rendlesham Incident:

One of J. D. Ingalls' significant listeners was Brenda Butler, who was already a 25-year veteran UFO researcher from Leiston Suffolk, who would go on to write the first book about the incident, *Sky Crash* (1984) with Dot Street and Jenny Randles. SSgt. J. D. Ingalls had known Brenda Butler for some years already and had fed her information on any suspected UFO activity in the area from what was reported on the base. J. D. Ingalls obviously had a personal interest in the phenomenon. However, what Ingalls was doing may have come to the attention of Major Zickler, who then 'turned' Ingalls to spread disinformation as regards these new incidents that had just happened off-base just after the Christmas period.

J.D. Ingalls first approached Brenda Butler's partner, Chris Pennington, about the Rendlesham incident as early as December 31, 1980, during a New Year's Eve party that Benda and Chris were hosting at their farmhouse. This was less than 48 hours after the third night's events. (For more details, see chapters, *The Coda Decade* and *The 'Hold Forth' Years.*) In brief, the UFO containment story that Ingalls had relayed to Chris Pennington was the same story he had told Brenda Butler two days later on January 2, 1981, when he was able to talk to her, and which happened to be the day when the witness statements were signed and dated by Lt. Buran and MSgt. Chandler. It was the same story that Ingalls had relayed to SSgt. Jim Penniston during their coffee-break chats in the office where Penniston worked.

Ingalls confided to Butler that a UFO had *crash-landed* in Rendlesham Forest over the Christmas period. Having been told that the UFO had *crash-landed* was something that had remained with Brenda Butler, and which then led to the title of the book she would co-author over the following years . . . *Sky Crash*.

Brenda Butler and Ingalls then talked again on January 6. Ingalls offered more information, saying she would have to keep his identity a secret, which Butler agreed to. Ingalls said the incident took place in the early hours of December 26. This, according to Jenny Randles (See *Getting it Right at East Gate*, 2009), was the first time this earlier date had been given in public, as it was long-assumed that the date was December 27, based on the Halt memo released to Dot Street by Larry Fawcett in July 1983. (See Note 462.) Randles then adds that, intriguingly, Steve Roberts – which is the name by which she knew Ingalls – had altered the date to 27 December in later conversations.

In any case, Ingalls then proceeded to tell Brenda that he was part of a patrol that had entered the forest where the UFO, which he said was disk-shaped (he had sketched it for Brenda), had crash-landed and had witnessed three small, silver-suited occupants with large heads suspended in beams of light next to the craft which had hit a tree, adding that the Wing Commander at the time, Colonel Gordon Williams, had communicated with the aliens who were carrying out repairs on the ground for several hours. Ingalls said that many military personnel were present, and that film footage and photos were taken, which were immediately confiscated by senior officers when the craft had taken off. Taking down notes, Butler then decided to give J.D. Ingalls – whom she had already known for a few years – the pseudonym "Steve Roberts," and referred to him as an airman on the base.

After what Brenda Butler had heard from Ingalls, she then approached UFO researcher and BUFORA member, Dot Street, about what she had heard from Ingalls, her source. Dot already knew

the airman, having met him at one of Chris Pennington's parties in 1979. Now with Dot Street's assistance, Brenda Butler began investigations into the incident.

February I8, 1981:

We are told that on this date Butler and Street visited the Bentwaters base after having phoned RAF Squadron Leader Donald Moreland, who agreed to see them. After arriving, the women were shown into an office. We are told that after being introduced to Moreland via his secretary, Moreland presumed that his visitors were from the MOD, following-up on an incident that the women were told had taken place on December 31, 1980. Butler told Moreland and his secretary that they must be mistaken, as the incident they were inquiring into took place on December 27 – which of course was also wrong, as the significant incidents took place 25/26 and 27/28. In any case, the secretary insisted that the report was for December 31. According to Brenda Butler, after asking Don Moreland a few questions, he replied, *"There were some lights out there – just a few, and some shiny 'beings' that looked just like angels."* However, we are told that when Moreland had realized that the two women were not from the MOD, he slammed shut the UFO file that his secretary had brought him, and told them to get in touch with the MOD in London. (Source: *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

It is difficult to see how Moreland would have mistaken Brenda Butler and Dot Street to have been MOD. Surely, he would have asked about their identities even before arranging with them to visit him on the base? Based on everything that we know happened between Halt and Moreland regarding the memo, the mention of "shiny beings looking like angels," as Moreland is quoted to have said – and as if he just accepted it, as fact – is extremely puzzling. However, another date was cited concerning this meeting with Moreland by Brenda Butler and Dot Street, being "December 30th" – although it's possible the date was meant to be the 31st.

On September 30, 2014, I received a private message from Rendlesham Forest Incident researcher, Ronnie Dugdale, which confirmed this apparent mistake made by Moreland that the two women reporters were from the MOD, and Ronnie Dugdale told me that the date mentioned by either Moreland or his secretary was December 30, 1980.

We would seriously consider the view that these "December 30" and "31" dates could in fact relate to when account(s) including these 'fantastic' details of "beings" and "angels," were taken from witnesses and written down in the report or files that Moreland had in his possession, *not when the accounts given were reported to have actually happened.* And this is curious, because Jim Penniston tells us he was debriefed on December 29 in the AFOSI building by agents he did not know and was interrogated in the same building and by the same agents on December 30, 1980 . . . which implies that others may have been interrogated about the third night's events during these days following the incidents. After, all, it is in the literature that Sgt. Adrian Bustinza, through his superior, Major Zickler, was interrogated immediately after the events of December 27/28. And if so, then the witness accounts were then possibly messed with afterwards, in which a fantastical typical UFO story with "shiny beings/angels" was added and placed in the files that Donald Moreland had somehow acquired. In her 1998 interview with Don Moreland, Georgina Bruni asked Moreland if any of the other officers had discussed the incident with him, other than Lt. Col. Halt. Moreland replied that Sam Morgan did, as well as the police officer Major Zickler. Could Zickler have handed Moreland the filed report, possibly containing the witness accounts that he had quoted from to Brenda Butler and Dot Street?

Moreover, it does not seem likely that Moreland would have mistaken the two women researchers to have been sent by the MOD, and again, he would have asked for ID. It's more likely he knew who Brenda Butler and Dot Street were, meaning that when the women had arranged to visit Moreland, the meeting and the information he gave them was simply used as a disinformation exercise, furthering the containment operation, which Major Zickler and SSgt. Ingalls had already instigated and possibly on the orders of someone higher-up and/or in collaboration with the agencies involved in the interrogations of the witnesses.

Apparently, Brenda Butler and Dot Street had also made an appointment to see the Base Commander on this same day at 4:00 p.m. Being February 1981, it is likely that this was Corporal Sam Morgan. In any case, unlike Moreland, the Base Commander asked Butler and Street for some form of identification, and Dot Street showed him her BUFORA membership card, but he did not accept it, and said that without proper identification, he could not say anything. Apparently, when the two women told him what they knew of the sighting, the Base Commander, who was smiling all the time, said that he didn't know anything about the incident. He then asked the two women if they were going to continue their investigation, and Dot Street replied, "Yes." And when he asked what they would do with the information, Dot said she would do the same as them – "File it!" Although the Base Commander would not say anything concerning the report, Dot Street said that *"they left his office with the distinct impression he knew far more than he was saying."* (Source: *Lantern* magazine, Summer 1981, No 33-34 – article "A Close Encounter III Near Woodbridge?" By Dot Street).

In her article, "The Rendlesham Forest Mystery" (March 1981), Jenny Randles writes that the Base Commander had queried them on their UFO knowledge and had told them they should contact the MOD, as all the Base UFO reports – certainly implying they had some – went to the Ministry. Brenda Butler phoned the MOD, but was given the runaround. She was told they did not known anything of such an incident and advised her to contact the Base Commander.

February 21, 1981:

On this date, UFO researcher and author, Jenny Randles, wrote a brief 'Late Item' for *Flying Saucer Review* (volume 26, number 6), which was placed right at the end of the magazine – entitled, "Military Contact Alleged at Airbase," which should be read to see how the containment story was being digested and publicized: See Flying Saucer Review (volume 26, number 6), published March 1981. This is the first published mention of the Rendlesham Incident by an independent UFO researcher/author, and during the first three years after the incident, Jenny Randles would be busy writing articles on the stories being gathered at the time by people in the area of Suffolk, as first initiated by J. D. Ingalls, who was given the alias "Steve Roberts" – especially by researcher Brenda Butler, who with researcher, Dot Street, would later team-up with Randles to produce the first book on the subject in 1984. It was inevitable that Jenny Randles would become involved as she was Dot Street's BUFORA Director of Investigations. However, by August 2009, Jenny Randles says in her article, "*Getting It Right at East Gate,"* posted on August 24, 2009, that she still hadn't met Brenda Butler's mystery man, Steve Roberts (J.D. Ingalls).

In her article, Jenny Randles mentions what she was told by Brenda Butler regarding Steve Roberts (J. D. Ingalls) story:

> "According to Roberts he was one of a security patrol that went out into the forest in response to a UFO that had "crashed" there. Once in the woods he saw a landed craft with strange little child-like beings suspended in beams of light. The overall wing commander – Brigadier General Gordon Williams – was out there in the woods and communicated with these beings using sign language as the USAF guarded the damaged craft. This was eventually repaired by the aliens and took off again."

February 24, 1981:

Dot Street says that on this date, and after having no luck with finding the alleged landing site in then forest, that she and Brenda Butler then visited the Forestry Commission Office. The man on duty told them that he had been working in the office on January 1st, when a man walked in saying he had just been talking to a farmer, who on December 29, 1980, had heard a very loud noise which had

frightened his animals. The farmer also said that, at the same time, the area around his farm had been illuminated by a very bright, white light. The farmer telephoned RAF Woodbridge, which resulted in men being sent out to investigate. The whole episode, he said, lasted about four hours.

This obviously relates to the third night's events, which began on the evening of December 28, 1980, not December 29, as the farmer was reported to have said. (It is amazing the many times the dates have been confused). Dot Street said that she and Butler were unable to track down the man who had visited the Forestry Commission Office and told this story about the farmer to the employee who was on duty and had passed the information on to the women researchers. The farmer is believed to have been David Boast, whose home was the farmhouse that Lt. Col. Halt and his team had seen reflecting the fiery orange-yellow glow of the object in its windows, and it was the fields adjacent to the farmhouse that they had walked across to catch up with the object. It was later discovered that David Boast was not a farmer, and that he was a gamekeeper. Before Butler and Street had known of his name, they say they had heard that he had been told – and it's not sure by whom – not to say anything about what happened. Boast was not the only person the women talked to, as there were others – farmers – whose cattle had been disturbed.

[cdliv] It was during the Summer months of 1981 that a report on the Rendlesham Incident written by researcher Dot Street, was published in the magazine *Lantern*, titled, *"A Close Encounter III* [of the third kind] *Near Woodbridge?"* This is the article which presents the information that Dot Street and Brenda Butler had visited the Base Commander on February 18, 1981 and had also visited the Forestry Commission six days later on February 24 . . . *two days before the real landing site was burned and destroyed.* (See Note 443.) However, like many other short articles that were appearing in various periodicals during this and the following two years, the article merely featured the containment story that had been spread by J.D. Ingalls on the instructions of the Security Police Squadron Commander Major Malcolm Zickler, as Ingalls had claimed during his talks with SSgt. Penniston. Dot Street begins her article, saying that early in February 1981, she had heard from her friend and associate, Brenda Butler, about an alleged UFO landing and CE3 (Close Encounter of the Third Kind) near RAF Woodbridge in Suffolk.

Dot adds that Brenda had told her of what she knew at that time, *". . . that she had heard from several people who claimed to have witnessed a UFO landing in Rendlesham Forest sometime around the beginning of January this year."*

Dot then goes on to say that Brenda, who *"had very little information regarding the sighting at this time,"* said that *"an object with three legs together with 'entities' who appeared to be doing something to the craft, had been seen and that she had also heard that communication had been made between these 'entities' and personnel from the nearby USAF base at RAF Bentwaters."* (See, Dot Street, *Lantern*, No. 33-34, Summer 1981.) What Brenda had told Dot was obviously based on the story she had heard from her source, J. D. Ingalls, to whom she gave the pseudonym, "Steve Roberts."

Dot Street then concludes with the following scenario, based on what she and Brenda Butler had learned from their interviews with various people about the incident:

> "On the evening of December 28th, 1980, a farmer living near Rendlesham Forest was woken up by his restless cattle. He went outside to see what was wrong with them and noticed that the sky was lit-up as bright as day. At the same time he heard a loud and unusual noise unlike that of any aircraft (living next to an operational air-base he is very familiar with the sounds of aircraft). He contacted RAF Woodbridge/Bentwaters who sent out security men to investigate. The farmer then became aware of an object, seemingly in some sort of trouble,

> hovering over the forest. When the security men arrived, they too saw the object and they contacted the base who acknowledged by sending more personnel out. By this time the object had landed and three 'entities' surrounded by a white glow, were seen floating around the 'craft' which stood on three legs some 30 feet apart. The 'entities' appeared to be doing something to their craft. It is said that some sort of communication took place between the base personnel and the 'entities' and that the former were instructed to leave their weapons behind and to assist with the damaged craft. (One report suggests that the craft was, in fact, removed to the air-base). While this was happening a member of the public witnessed it all, and what he says ties in with reports from other witnesses. The incident lasted about four hours, and we have also been told that during this period there were power failures in the area. Because of the involvement of the British Government, all of the witnesses who initially contacted us (some of them were air-base personnel) now refuse to talk further – and one witness has actually denied any knowledge of the incident. They say that they have been told to keep quiet and fear for their jobs if they do not. I myself know one of the witnesses personally and can vouch for his honesty – but even he now refuses to discuss the incident. For obvious reason I have not revealed the names of any witnesses. On February 18th Brenda Butler phoned the Ministry of Defence about this incident and was told. to write. She later received a reply to her letter, in which the MOD denied any knowledge of the incident and they said that they were unable to give any further information."
>
> *Lantern*, No. 33-34, Summer 1981, pp. 17-18.

As we know, the MOD had indeed been aware of the incident a month before Dot Street had inquired by letter, and via the Halt memorandum received after January 15, 1981.

[cdlv] During May 1982, the American magazine *Frontiers of Science* had published a report on the Rendlesham Incident by paranormal researcher/investigator, Jenny Randles – first reported in her *Case Histories* (January 1982). Again, the report seems to be based on the containment story by J.D. Ingalls. In any case, it's bizarre how the account of the incident, which is given the date of December 30th, 1980, ends up looking more ridiculous than what Dot Street had reported during the Summer of 1981 in the magazine *Lantern:*

> "An utterly fantastic case is under intense investigation in England. If true, it could be the breakthrough ufologists have been waiting for. As reported in the January issue of Case Histories, published by the Northern UFO Network (c/o Jenny Randles . . .

England), the story is this:

> On December 30, 1980, a farmer in the vicinity of Rendlesham forest . . . called Woodbridge Air Force Base to report a plane crash. The base police investigated and reported the "plane" was a UFO. Someone from the base newspaper went to the scene with both still and movie cameras and filmed the object on the ground.
>
> The base commander took a high-level security team to view the damaged object. According to a member of the team, three entities (about three feet tall and dressed in silvery suits) were suspended in mid-air beside the craft, repairing the damage. The commander is said to have spoken with the entities while they worked. Four hours later the craft took off at great speed.
>
> The commander confiscated all cameras and imposed a total news blackout on the incident. According to one source, the U.S. Air Force arrived several days later and took tapes of radar trackings of the UFO. The story could be dismissed if it weren't for the fact that various aspects of the account have come from independent witnesses – several of them firsthand, all so far unidentified. More on this astonishing case as details become available."

"Crashed UFO in England," *Frontiers of Science*, May-June 1982, p. 11.

This report by Jenny Randles, featured in this American magazine, appears obviously based on the containment story associated with the events of the third night, as told by Staff Sergeant J. D. Ingalls, who went under the pseudonym "Steve Roberts," and had first told his bogus story to Brenda Butler face-to-face on January 6, 1981 after having first told Butler's partner on New Year's Eve (December 31, 1980). Butler was the co-author on the book *Sky Crash*, with Jenny Randles and Dot Street, published in November 1984. However, the report could also have been based on the equally similar story given by another mystery source who Jenny Randles had learned about around the same time that J. D. Ingalls had approached Brenda Butler, in January 1981, and whose real name she was keeping a secret at the time. (See account below.)

The Testimony of David Potts

"David Potts," was Jenny Randle's pseudonym for the source who was a radar operator who wished to remain anonymous.

Jenny Randles says she received a call from her friend, Paul Begg, an investigator and fellow author of the paranormal. Begg had written *Into Thin Air: People Who Disappear* (March 1979), and would go onto to write several books on "Jack the Ripper." Randles wrote to researcher and CAUS founder, Barry Greenwood, on May 24, 1983 (see here), telling him that Begg had contacted her in February 1981, but it was likely to have been in January 1981, according to the notes she said she found later. (See "*Getting It Right at East Gate",* by Jenny Randles, posted on August 24, 2009, where Randles writes: *"I still have my notes penned from my first conversation in late January 1981 with that operator at Watton."*)

In any case, Paul Begg had told Randles about a conversation he had in his local pub with a friend of his – a civilian radar operator at RAF Watton, southwest of East Dereham, Norfolk, England. In her

article, Randles writes that Paul and his wife had met this man in their local village pub, who they later got to know, as he knew of Paul's interests. Apparently, Begg informed Randles that his friend had told him that an uncorrelated target had been picked up on radar sometime during the last week of December 1980. Randles then contacted the radar operator whom she called "David Potts" herself. According to her notes of the conversation she had with him in January 1981, "Potts" then told Randles the story, which he said had been told to him by one of his colleagues who had been on radar duty on the night of December 27, 1980 (there's that date again). "Potts" wasn't on duty that night, but apparently his radar operator colleague told him that an unusual target was seen moving in from the east coast. There was no military activity at the time and nothing flying in the air. The radar operators at Watton then lost the target about 50 miles south of the east of Ipswich and in the vicinity of Rendlesham Forest. It was understood that other radar centers had also tracked the object (*Sky Crash*, by Jenny Randles, Brenda Butler, and Dot Street. Neville Spearman, 1984, p. 26). "Potts" said that he wasn't particularly impressed with the sighting because it was a common occurrence and so he merely put it down to a false signal.

"Potts" then says that a few days later, on Monday, December 29, 1980 – the same day that Jim Penniston was being debriefed in the AFOSI building on Bentwaters – Watton radar station was visited by plains-clothed men with American accents. These were said to have been USAF intelligence officers – but most likely OSI or even NSA. These visitors were greatly interested in the recordings of the radar tracks from the night of the unidentified target. "Potts" says he was quite surprised when these usually tight-lipped men freely offered a fantastic story. The radar men were told that they had in fact tracked an object that had crash-landed in the forest – adding that this had been a "metallic UFO, a structured-device of unknown origin . . ." (*Ibid*, p. 27). The radar operators were also told that senior officers from a nearby USAF airbase had witnessed the event, and they had even seen aliens floating in beams of light underneath the spacecraft. Incredibly, the radar officers were not even told to keep this extraordinary story secret. Again, this is virtually the same story that J. D. Ingalls had told Jim Penniston he was spreading around the bases and the surrounding area.

Randles writes that "Potts" had specifically given the date of December 27 (which is the date J. D. Ingalls later gave to Brenda Butler) and said that the intelligence officers had asked for the radar tapes that had recorded the radar sighting and several others and confiscated them. The December 27 date points to the events of the 'third night,' which took place between December 27 and 28, 1980. Randles also writes that "Potts" further claimed that RAF Bentwaters had called RAF Watton and asked for radar confirmation of an unusual sighting on that night as it was happening" (*Ibid*, p. 27). Apparently, the next day the radar tapes at RAF Neatishead were also requisitioned, as it was at RAF Neatishead that an unidentified object had also appeared on the radar around the same time, and had created panic in the control room. It returned no signal, and they lost it off screen at a phenomenal speed, which would have outperformed the RAF's finest aircraft. Apparently, the matter was subject to a major investigation.

The immediate question that comes to mind is this: *Was the RAF Neatishead radar sighting the same radar sighting that was reported in the half-hour before SSgt. Jim Penniston had arrived at the East Gate just past midnight on December 26, 1980?*

It also emerged from Randles' interview with "Potts" during the last week in January 1981 that the RAF and the MOD had known of the Deputy Base Commander and a team of airmen going off base, which happened on the third night and that "Potts" had heard of the problems they had with their radios, the lightalls failing, and also knew of the traces of radiation recorded at the landing site in the forest. All this came up when Jenny Randles looked back on her notes of her first conversation she had with "David Potts," and was surprised to discover that the intelligence guys had told the radar operators, quote: "how a commanding officer was taken from a party on base and went into the woods to investigate. His equipment suffered electrical interference but he tape recorded live the encounter with UFOs. All of this evidence was only established as fact years later when Charles Halt became publicly associated with the case. In January 1981 it was as dubious as the aliens talking to Gordon

Williams by sign language." ("*Getting It Right at East Gate*," by Jenny Randles, posted August 24, 2009). It really needn't be said again that the last part is the same detail that J. D. Ingalls had told SSgt. Jim Penniston regarding the story he was spreading around and outside the twin bases.

As Jenny Randles herself had suspected, it is indeed odd that USAF intelligence officers should have voluntarily told the radar operators that what they had sighted was a "UFO," let alone give details about it. As researcher Keith Basterfield had expressed it: "Usually one reads that such individuals try and suppress UFO stories, not confirm them," adding his thoughts that this open explanation may have been "some kind of disinformation exercise" (*Did radar track the Rendlesham Forest UAP?* by Keith Basterfield, posted October 15, 2013). It is also curious that Jenny Randles' contact, Paul Begg, should be talking to "David Potts" about what the things the intelligence men had told the radar operators around the same time that J. D. Ingalls ("Steve Roberts") had been spreading the same story as part of a containment operation and had also approached Brenda Butler with it.

As yet, SSgt. Jim Penniston hadn't been made aware of what was going on behind the scenes with these publications, as he was no UFO enthusiast (even after his encounter), and wasn't interested in reading any kind of UFO-related literature, until he found the book *Project Blue Book* edited by Brad Steiger at the base book shop in 1982, and really because the USAF 'Blue Book' project had been brought to Penniston's attention by Captain Mike Verrano when being debriefed a few hours after his incident, and so he was curious to read it. What is interesting is that Jenny Randles cites the officer who was present as the "Base Commander," which would have been Colonel Conrad, even though it was Lt. Col. Halt, the Deputy Base Commander. This no doubt led to the belief amongst the UFO community that it was Colonel Conrad who was there that night leading the investigation, and that it was he who had "communicated with alien entities" – which, ironically enough, was part of the containment story that he may have been complicit in with Major Zickler. If so, then it seems to have backfired, as far as Conrad's involvement was concerned. In any case, as we will see, this is what had led Ted Conrad to agree to an interview in 1983, to put the record straight that it wasn't him out there that night. (See Note 460 below.)

[cdlvi] Malcolm Zickler retired from the USAF in 1989 as a Lieutenant Colonel, and was last known to be living in Florida, running a business called 'Woodbridge Engineering' since he co-founded it with his wife in 1993. Malcolm Zickler was Head of System Security Engineering and Chief of Operations Security at GE Aerospace, as well as Head of System Security Engineering for SDI – the Strategic Defense Initiative Program Office at GE Aerospace, also known as "Star Wars." SDI, was a program first initiated on March 23, 1983 under President Ronald Reagan. The intent of this program was to develop a sophisticated anti-ballistic missile system in order to prevent missile attacks from other countries, specifically the Soviet Union.

One of Zickler's key tasks during this period was heading the OPSEC Planning (Camouflage, Concealment and Deception) effort for the USAF Special Forces Mission Rehearsal Facility during Desert Shield/Desert Storm. His work significantly altered the traffic flows for Special Forces attending training, providing military planners with additional, valuable time:

> "Bearing in mind Major Zickler's association with carefully planned scenarios to test the effectiveness of ground troops, is it no wonder then that some people have claimed the events that took place outside Woodbridge air base formed part of another carefully planned and ultimately orchestrated analysis and evaluation exercise to test the reactions of the security police in response to an alleged UFO landing. There is no proof of that but it provides food for thought!"

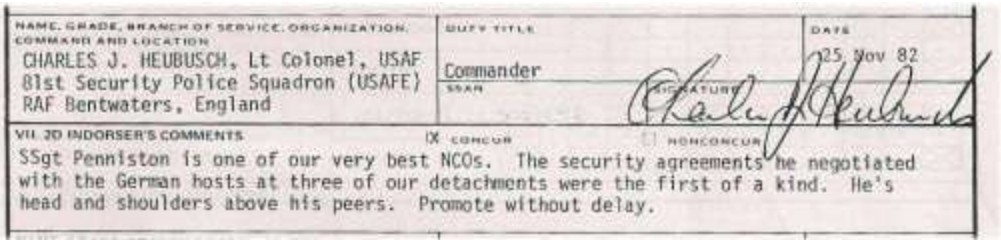
[cdlvii] It is important to acknowledge that Lt. Colonel Charles J. Heubusch was the Security Police Squadron Commander who had taken over from Major Zickler at Bentwaters in 1982, and was highly respected in the USAF and was once the Chief of Security Police of the United States Airforce in Europe. Again, Jim Penniston's claim is of having later discovered from Lt. Col. Heubusch himself that he (Heubusch) had seen the original witness statement that he had handwritten for the AFOSI agents on December 29, 1980, while he (Heubusch) was working as a member of the Air Staff and Security Police Intelligence at the Pentagon. Sadly, Lt. Col. Heubusch passed away on August 26, 2006. Knowing that Charles J. Heubusch cannot now come forward to confirm Jim Penniston's account, the skeptics and debunkers would most likely question Jim Penniston's claim.

However, one would have to ask oneself . . . *why would Jim Penniston lie about this and incriminate a well-known, high-ranking USAF official, who was highly respected in the USAF in a lie if it wasn't true?* The family of Lt. Col. Heubusch have dedicated a website to his memory, and so it makes no sense that Jim Penniston would violate the friendship, respect, and trust this highly respected man showed him by involving his good name and that of his family in a lie.

Furthermore, on the reverse of the Performance Report of James W. Penniston (Grade SSgt), dated from November 24, 1981 to November 24, 1982, is an endorsement by Lt. Colonel Charles J. Heubusch, the USAF 81 Security Police Squadron Commander (USAFE), RAF Bentwaters, England. It is signed 'Charles J. Heubusch' and dated '25 Nov 82.'

In the box titled "VII. 2D INDORSER'S COMMENTS," Lt. Col. Heubusch writes:

> *"SSgt Penniston is one of our very best NCOs. The security agreements he negotiated with the German hosts at three of our detachments were the first of a kind. He's head and shoulders above his peers. Promote without delay."*



NAME, GRADE, BRANCH OF SERVICE, ORGANIZATION, COMMAND AND LOCATION
CHARLES J. HEUBUSCH, Lt Colonel, USAF
81st Security Police Squadron (USAFE)
RAF Bentwaters, England

DUTY TITLE
Commander

DATE
25 Nov 82

SSAN

SIGNATURE

VII. 2D INDORSER'S COMMENTS

[X] CONCUR [ ] NONCONCUR

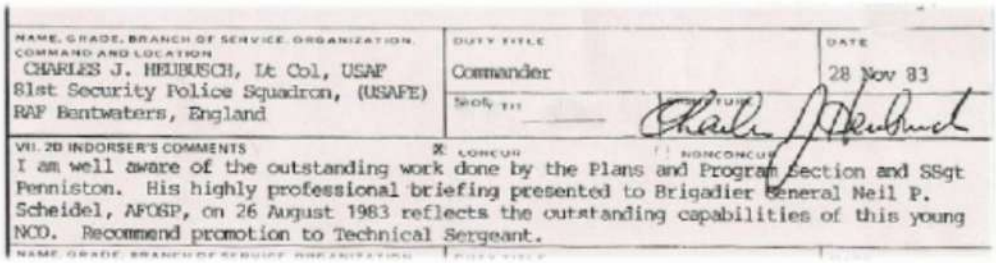
SSgt Penniston is one of our very best NCOs. The security agreements he negotiated with the German hosts at three of our detachments were the first of a kind. He's head and shoulders above his peers. Promote without delay.

Detail from the reverse of the Performance Report dated from November 24, 1981 to November 24, 1982.

Also, on the reverse of the Performance Report of James W. Penniston (Grade SSgt), dated from November 25, 1982 to November 24, 1983, is another endorsement by Lt. Colonel Charles J. Heubusch. It is signed 'Charles J. Heubusch' and dated '28 Nov 83.' Again, in the box titled "VII. 2D INDORSER'S COMMENTS," Lt. Col. Heubusch writes:

> *"I am well aware of the outstanding work done by the Plans and Program Section and SSgt Penniston. His highly professional briefing presented to Brigadier General Neil P. Scheidel, AFOSP, on 26 August 1983 reflects the outstanding capabilities of this young NCO.*

Recommend promotion to Technical Sergeant."



NAME, GRADE, BRANCH OF SERVICE, ORGANIZATION, COMMAND AND LOCATION	DUTY TITLE	DATE
CHARLES J. HEUBUSCH, Lt Col, USAF 81st Security Police Squadron, (USAFE) RAF Bentwaters, England	Commander	28 Nov 83

VII. 2B INDORSER'S COMMENTS — X CONCUR — NONCONCUR

I am well aware of the outstanding work done by the Plans and Program Section and SSgt Penniston. His highly professional briefing presented to Brigadier General Neil P. Scheidel, AFOSP, on 26 August 1983 reflects the outstanding capabilities of this young NCO. Recommend promotion to Technical Sergeant.

Detail from the reverse of the Performance Report dated from November 25, 1982 to November 24, 1983.

These endorsements by the Security Police Squadron Commander of the twin bases of the 81st at RAF Bentwaters, (Lt. Col. Heubusch), are evidence that he and SSgt. Penniston knew each other and proof that SSgt. James Penniston was acknowledged by Lt. Col. Heubusch and was recommended by him for promotion. (See *Jim Penniston's Performance Reports*.)
[cdlviii]

It was also during the summer of 1982 that former Base Commander, Colonel Sam P. Morgan, had left England and was first assigned to Hill Air Force Base, Utah, where he was the director of maintenance for the Air Logistics Center. Col. Halt says that soon after Colonel Morgan had left Bentwaters base, Morgan had asked for a high-ranking military decoration of his service time at Bentwaters, and that he (Halt) was asked to write it. Halt says he flatly refused, as in his opinion, Morgan "was undeserving." See *The Halt Perspective* by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

The Base Commander position vacated by Colonel Sam P. Morgan was filled by Colonel Henry J. Cochran, after which the position was then filled by Colonel Halt when Colonel Cochran moved on in December 1983.

[cdlix] We are told that it was during the middle of February 1983, that UFO researcher and author Larry Fawcett, a Liutenant and Deputy police chief in Coventry Connecticut and also assistant director of the American organization C.A.U.S. (Citizens Against UFO Secrecy), had been in meetings with someone who claimed to be a witness of the Rendlesham Incident. That person was Lawrence (Larry) Warren. In the book *Left at East Gate,* co-authored with Peter Robbins, Warren stated that he had first contacted Bob Luca, the husband of alien abductee, Betty Andreasson (See *The Andreasson Affair,* by Raymond E. Fowler with introduction by J. Allen Hynek, 1979) about his UFO experience while stationed at the Bentwaters base in December 1980. He then arranged to visit Bob and Betty at their home in Cheshire, Connecticut, USA (either December 1982 or January 1983).

Betty Andreasson Luca had suggested that Warren contact her two friends who were writing a book on the government cover-up of UFO incidents. The friends were CAUS founders, Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood (a Massachusetts researcher), who were both writing the book *Clear Intent: The Government Coverup of the UFO Experience*, later published in 1984. Warren adds that Bob Luca then contacted Larry Fawcett and arranged for Warren to meet with him in mid-February of 1983.

(It is perhaps worth mentioning here that Raymond Fowler refers to the intelligence behind the so-called "abductions," as "*the Watchers,*" which makes a direct correlation with the "angels" known universally as the *Shining Ones* found in numerous ancient sources, including the Bible. Although it seems as if we are digressing here, I am personally interested in this because *The Shining Ones* is the title of a book I had written and had published in 2006, and of course Jim Penniston asked me personally to look at the seven sets of coordinates deciphered from the binary code message in January 2011 to see if there was any additional information, and over the course of eight years, I had discovered

enough data to fill two or three large volumes.) It became apparent to me while studying the binary code, that my connection with the 'Shining Ones' through my research and my later work on the binary code, is no coincidence.

If the reader wishes to do his or her own cross-referencing, the 'Shining Ones' are also known (depending on the cultures who named them), as the *Abgal, Abkarlu, Akeru, Akhu, Anak, Anannage, Ancient Masters, Annedoti, Angeloi, Angels, Annunaki, Apkallu, Archangels, Devas, Deiwos, Egrogoris, Elders, Elohim, Feathered Serpents, Fish-Beings or Fish Deities; Gibborim, Genii, Grigori, Jabaariyn, Jin, Nagas, Nephilim, Neteru, Nommos, Rephaim, Rishis, Seraphim, Seven Sages, Serpents, Shemsu Hor, Tuatha dé Danaan, Urshu, Monitors* and *Watchers* . . . the list goes on and on. These Shining ('Mighty' or 'Majestic') Ones – also illustrated in the stars and constellations through which the stories of their lives were conveyed – were seen as 'gods,' 'sons and daughters of gods' and 'shepherds of men,' whom it is said, taught and civilized humankind.)

[cdlx] Unknown to Jim Penniston at this time was the publication of an article that featured the Rendlesham Incident in March 1983 in the American magazine, *OMNI*, Vol. 5, No. 6, on page 115. It was titled, 'UFO UPDATE' – the first article of seven included in a section printed on red glossy paper titled *'Anti Matter.'*

In early 1983, Colonel Ted Conrad (who was at this time Vice Wing Commander) had agreed to be interviewed for an article about a UFO landing by *OMNI* journalist Eric Mishera. RAF Squadron Leader, Donald Moreland, the British Liaison Officer who sent the Halt Memo to the MOD, also featured in the article. The reason why Col. Conrad came forward could be considered logical and simple. One of the more sensational rumors circulating on the twin bases and also within the pubs and other public gatherings in the surrounding area of Suffolk, from January 1981 to 1983, was the claim that Col. Conrad had encountered aliens during the alleged UFO landing in the forest and had communicated with them. This incident was linked with the third night's events involving Lt. Col. Halt. These apparent 'false details' were published in the American magazine, *Frontiers of Science* (May-June 1982) in the report "*Crashed UFO in England,"* by Jenny Randles, p. 11. (See Note 455 above.) It is obvious that knowing that these details had been published, and that he had been personally cited and identified under his rank at the time of "Base Commander," the Colonel wanted to put things straight.

During the interview, Col. Conrad admitted that the Rendlesham Incident had taken place, but said that it didn't involve aliens (of the extraterrestrial kind) and that he never saw any, and wasn't even out in the forest at the time. He also revealed details about the incident. However, although he was cautious not to name anyone, it appears that Conrad had mixed up the details of the first night's events, involving SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs, with the third night's events involving Lt. Col. Halt.

Col. Conrad is quoted saying that he had mounted an investigation himself the following day, inferring that this was the day after the first incident. This would be correct, as after picking up the Law Enforcement blotters that same morning (December 26th), Lt. Col. Halt had taken the LE blotters to his office to read them and said he also showed his "boss" the blotters and the AF1569 report about the incident before they later mysteriously disappeared, and had discussed the 'UFO' sighting with him. (See Note 141.) The "boss" mentioned by Deputy Base Commander Lt. Col. Halt could only be his superior, Base Commander Colonel Conrad. Having noted the gravity of the situation, it is then possible that Col. Conrad rushed to secure the Security blotters from CSC, as mentioned by SSgt. Dave Coffey (see Note 157), as well as the Law Enforcement blotters – both of which were later reported missing by Halt.

Then on the early evening of the following day (December 27), Col. Conrad ordered SSgt. Monroe Nevels via Lt. Bruce Englund to investigate the landing site for any physical evidence (see Chapter 5: *Special Mission*), and this was after Major Drury, Capt. Verrano, MSgt. Gulyas had already been out there to investigate the evidence left by the craft on the first night and on the orders of the Security Police Squadron Commander Major Malcolm Zickler, who was conducting his own investigation. It would be days later when Conrad and Zickler would have to drop their own personal investigations and

team-up with the AFOSI, and possibly the CIA and NSA, and became part of these agencies' investigations and containment of the facts, and all without the knowledge of the Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon Williams. It has been said that the reason why Colonel Williams was kept out of the loop was that he was being protected.

Quote:

> "There is no doubt that the incident was compartmentalized immediately and only Colonel Conrad and Major Zickler should have been brought into the loop, inasmuch as they liaised with the AFOSI. By keeping the wing commander out of the investigations they were doing him a favour; besides, he had the day-to-day running of the huge NATO bases to attend to."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

In view of the above, it is interesting that during his interview with *OMNI* journalist Eric Mishera, Col. Conrad also claimed there was "no investigation" apart from his involvement in checking out the site the following day, which is somewhat misleading, as we know the investigations continued with the mission given to SSgt. Monroe Nevels on December 27, 1980, and which led to the third night's events.

Conrad then added that he had visited the landing site in the forest where he saw *". . . a triangular set of marks evidently formed by the legs of the craft."* The marks Conrad saw were obviously related to the first night's events involving Jim Penniston (December 25/26). It was on another trip to the landing site that Col. Conrad was accompanied by his family and Lt. Col. Halt – as relayed by Halt himself – and, therefore, this trip to the forest must have taken place later on the day of December 28, 1980, following the events of the 'third night' that involved Halt and SSgt. Monroe Nevels – and the day after Conrad, Major Drury, Capt. Verrano, MSgt. Gulyas had been out there to investigate the evidence of the first night. This must be correct, as Col. Halt did not get involved with investigating the landing site until after SSgt. Monroe Nevels had been ordered to do so by Col. Conrad the day before. In any case, as quoted from the interview he did with *OMNI* journalist Eric Mishera, Conrad says that he had interviewed the witnesses, adding *"Those lads certainly saw something, but I don't know what it was."* These interviews were obviously conducted on the morning of December 29, 1980, as relayed by Jim Penniston in the chapter, *Afterburn.* We are told that several weeks after the incident, Colonel Conrad was promoted from Base Commander to Vice Wing Commander. Soon after the *OMNI* interview in March 1983, Conrad retired from the USAF.

In the book *Left at East Gate* (1997), Larry Warren said that he came across the March 1983 issue of *OMNI* magazine when he drove to a local store for no reason, he says, as if he was compelled to drive there. Warren said that it was a favorite magazine of his and so he began flipping through it, when the article *'Anti Matter'* caught his eye. He noted the picture of three aliens in silver suits standing next to a UFO, and read the opening text, *"On the night of December 30, 1980, a spaceship crashed into Rendlesham Forest near RAF Woodbridge, England."* Warren said he almost walked out with the magazine without paying for it, as he was so shocked at what he read. The cashier who caught up with him to pay for the magazine asked, *"You look like you've just seen a ghost."* He said he told the cashier, *"I think I just did."* When he got home, Warren showed the magazine article to his father's wife Sandy, and reading it, he noted that Colonel Conrad had been mentioned in the magazine, along with a Colonel Cochran, whom he didn't know, as well as UFO researcher Jenny Randles. Warren states that his reaction was *"My God, other guys are talking,"* and adds that the account was fairly accurate, although

the object didn't crash. He then says that he wondered if Larry Fawcett would think he got his information about what happened at Rendlesham from this article, but was relieved in the thought that he had told Bob Luca and Betty Andreasson "two months" before the article was published, and had spoken to Larry Fawcett two weeks before (*Left at East Gate*, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins. Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 337).

Again, Warren said that after he talked with Bob Luca and Betty Andreasson, Bob Luca then contacted Larry Fawcett and arranged for Warren to meet with him supposedly in mid-February of 1983.

The fact that Warren makes issue of this, saying he wondered if Fawcett had thought he got his story from this article and was relieved that he had already told him two weeks earlier, is suspect. If he had already spoken to Larry Fawcett, he would had nothing to worry about; there would be no question of this issue based on a temporary lapse of memory – i.e., wondering if Fawcett might think he had got the information from the article. *Why bring it up?* . . Unless he thought he should make this clear in the reader's mind. From this, it is likely that Warren had approached and met with Larry Fawcett AFTER this article by Mishera was published in March, which means that Bob Luca had arranged this meeting with Fawcett in March and not mid-February of 1981.

In her article, "*Getting It Right at East Gate",* posted on August 24, 2009, Jenny Randles writes that she first heard about a young American called Larry Warren (we would assume she was told by Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood) in the spring of 1983. February is not Spring. Spring begins in the third week of March. Randles adds "He was 21 going on 22, living in New England and had just given a statement to authors Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood for their forthcoming book about American government UFO documents. This was to be published in 1984 as Clear Intent."

Our take is that after reading the article, and thinking others were getting the story out, Warren thought that he might lose an opportunity here to be part of the incident based on what he had been told on the base by other airmen – especially his dormitory partner, Adrian Bustinza. It appears likely based on the things that later came to light, that Warren – one of the "wannabes" – as John Burroughs had referred to those who were not involved in the case but wish they had been (see Randles' article) – had gathered enough information about the incidents to then insert himself into the events of the third night, as was told to him in details by Sgt. Adrian Bustinza and others.

Again, the *OMNI* article by Eric Mishera on page 115, is the first along with other articles in the section "*Anti Matter,"* which is the only section in the magazine printed in black and silver on red glossy paper and which does stand out in the magazine. So, it is possible that the article had caught Warren's eye.

In his own written words, as published in his book *Left at East Gate* with co-author Peter Robbins in 1997, Larry Warren says that just before the meeting with Larry Fawcett in February 1983 (although it may have been in March 1983, after the *OMNI* article was published) that he spoke with Fawcett on the phone. Fawcett asked him questions about the Bentwaters Incidents. Warren said that, to his surprise, Fawcett had said that he had already heard rumors from researchers in England, which would have been the team headed by Jenny Randles.

Apparently, Fawcett asked Warren that he bring along any service-related documents and photos he has to the meeting. Warren says that it was a Saturnday night (no date given) that he joined Bob Luca, Betty Andreasson Luca, Larry Fawcett and his wife Lois at an Italian restaurant near New Britain, Connecticut, and that while there he "let loose with a flood of information, but did not mention the life-forms" they (he and the other personnel) had seen. He told Fawcett that after the UFO had appeared in the field, he had blacked out and remembered nothing until he woke up in his room.

Warren admits that Larry Fawcett seemed to know he wasn't telling the whole story, as after all, Fawcett was a cop, but says that until other witnesses testified to that part of the incident, he wasn't going to mention it. Warren then says that he told Fawcett about the underground complex beneath the Bentwaters base, as would become part of his account later, but said that Adrian Bustinza had told him about the facility, adding that talking about it was easier that way, as this was part of his experience that

had given him the most trouble.

[cdlxi] Also unknown to Jim Penniston at this time was the fact that on the strength of what Larry Warren had told CAUS founder, Larry Fawcett, regarding his supposed involvement, Fawcett then filed a FOIA request for any documents relating to the Bentwaters UFO incident to the 81st Combat Support Group, United States Air Forces Europe (USAFE), on April 8, 1983.(Again, there is time here for Warren to have contacted Larry Fawcett AFTER the article in *OMNI* was published in March, which then led to this FOIA request in April). Unfortunately, this FOIA request had failed when Fawcett received a negative response from the then USAF Base Commander, Colonel Henry J. Cochran on April 28, 1983, who wrote that the records requested didn't exist. Colonel Henry J. Cochran, who had taken over Colonel Conrad and Colonel Sam P. Morgan's position as Base Commander before Colonel Halt took the same position, was the officer also mentioned in the *OMNI* article whom Warren claims he didn't know.

Since early 1983, rumors had been circulating about the existence of the tape recording made by Lt. Col. Halt during the third night's events (December 27/28). It was also during April 1983, that attempts were made to locate and secure the release of this tape by Larry Fawcett of CAUS, which led to this response from the Air Force:

> "There was . . . no official investigation . . . Thus, the records you requested do not exist . . . I can assure you if there were such records we would provide them to you."
>
> *Clear Intent* by Lawrence Fawcett and Barry J. Greenwood
> (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1984, p. 217).

[cdlxii] On May 7, 1983, Fawcett's colleague, CAUS researcher, Robert Todd tried another approach. Knowing that the 513th Combat Support Group provided records management for the Third Air Force (3AF), which was assigned to USAFE, Robert Todd filed an FOIA request with the 513th CSG for information relating to the December 1980 incident.

On receiving the request, it was then that Colonel Peter Bent of the 513th Combat Support Group, called Col. Halt to tell him that he was going to have to release the copy of his memo. Halt then asked how he got the memo, and the Commander said that he wasn't sure, but it was in the file. This annoyed Halt, and not knowing that Don Moreland had also sent a copy of the memo to the Third Air Force HQ, he asked, how could that be? As far as he knew, the memo had been addressed to the Ministry of Defence in London and hadn't been addressed to them.

Commander Bent replied that be that as it may, he had a copy of the memo. Col. Halt then said, *"My personal suggestion is, burn the thing. I don't want all the publicity,"* but Bent said that he was going to have to release it as it was requested under the Freedom of Information Act. Col. Halt then pleaded with Commander Bent saying, *"Please, don't. Your life, and mine, will never be the same."* The response from the Commander was that he was sorry, but he had to. And so, the copy of the memo written by Col. Halt was released to CAUS. The memo was attached to a covering letter addressed to Robert Todd, which was dated "14 June 1983," and stated the following:

> Dear Mr. Todd:
>
> I am pleased to be able to respond to your request for information dated 7th May 1983. As you may now know, the 513th Combat Support Group provides document management services for Headquarters, Third Air Force.

> After extensive effort, we are able to successfully answer your four separately directed requests for information concerning unexplained lights on 27th December 1980.
>
> It might interest you to know that the US Air Force had no longer retained a copy of the 13 January 1981 letter written by Lt. Col. Charles I. Halt. The Air Force file copy had been properly disposed of in accordance with Air Force Regulations. Fortunately, through diligent inquiry and the gracious consent of Her Majesty's government, the British Ministry of Defence and the Royal Air Force, the US Air Force was provided a copy for you. We trust this adequately explains the initial inability to provide a favourable response.
>
> As you also asked, we have attached such documentation as we had concerning the processing of your several FOIA requests as of receipt of your 7 May 1983 request.
>
> Sincerely.
> Peter W. Bent, Colonel, USAF
> Commander

On the subject of the memo being released, the late Georgina Bruni wrote:

> "CAUS are well known for their expertise in obtaining Freedom of Information files, and on receiving their request Colonel Bent may have pushed for its release believing he was doing the right thing at the time. Little did he know then what an embarrassment it would become for the United States Air Force, and it still haunts many of the senior officers today."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

In July 1983, Larry Fawcett sent Rendlesham researcher, Dot Street, a copy of the official memorandum composed by the deputy base commander, Lieutenant Colonel Charles I. Halt. Apparently, Dot was so thrilled by this she showed Brenda Butler straight away. Dot Street then called RAF Bentwaters on Thursday, August 11 to speak to Lt. Col. Halt. When he answered, Dot began recording the conversation. She began by telling Halt that she had a copy of the document he had written about the incident. There was a long silence. Halt then asked, *"What document and what incident?"* He also asked if she was the person who had caused trouble a year earlier by talking to the local press about nuclear weapons being on the base, which Dot denied. Dot then told him about the memo and what it said. Halt responded: *"I gave that to an RAF officer to be passed to the Ministry of Defence. They assured me it would never be released."* (Amusingly, *Give it Up* by KC and the Sunshine Band was No. 1 in the UK singles chart at that time.) Halt then began asking a list of questions, but Dot was not prepared to discuss things over the phone and suggested they meet in

person. Halt became anxious and said that he did not want this becoming an issue that could compromise his career (Bruni, p. 65).

The next day, Friday, August 12, Brenda Butler and Dot Street met with Colonel Halt. Halt asked them if they had a tape recorder to record what he was going to say. The women said they didn't, and Halt became more relaxed, allowing the discussion to go ahead. The two women showed Halt the copy of his memorandum, and he confirmed it was genuine, as it had his signature. Knowing it was now in the public domain, Halt then became angry and upset and asked the women where they had acquired the copy. Halt then admitted that he had been tipped off by Manchester-based solicitor and UFO researcher, Harry Harris, that Dot Street had recorded their conversation over the phone the previous day and told Dot it was illegal. As things became heated at this point with the revelation, Halt had told Dot Street about Harry Harris tipping him off. Halt then refused to discuss the matter any further (Bruni, p. 65).

As told by Ronnie Dugdale, Harry Harris was a colleague of Jenny Randles. He had spearheaded a UFO group of which Randles was a member. To fund their UFO interests and activities, Harris and his two male colleagues, Mike Sacks (a tailor), and Norman Collinson (a detective chief inspector for the Manchester Police, whose name was revealed much later), would negotiate money deals with various national newspapers for UFO stories. Because he was a solicitor, he had become an advisor to Jenny, Brenda, and Dot, although as the relationship continued, a measure of mistrust had built up between Harris and the three investigators. For example, it was later revealed that Harry Harris and his colleagues had already visited the Bentwaters base; had met with Col. Halt; were given some information by Halt; heard the cassette tape recording; and had struck a deal with Halt. (See Note 465 below.)

[cdlxiii] It was on Thursday, August 18, 1983, that Brenda Butler, Dot Street, and Jenny Randles then made an unscheduled visit to the British Ministry of Defence Main Building at Whitehall. After some time, Pam Titchmarsh from DS8 (Defense Secretariat 8), turned up at the reception to meet them. The three investigators then questioned Titchmarsh about Col. Halt's memorandum, and she admitted they had a copy, or something similar to that effect. She then added that the memo had been passed to their 'specialist staffs,' who had decided it was not a security risk and denied the events reported were of any defence significance. Pam Titchmarsh then assured the three researchers that the MOD had not instigated the public release of the document (Bruni, p. 66).

Brenda Butler then asked Pam Titchmarsh about a covering letter that Squadron Leader Moreland had told her he had sent along with Halt's memorandum, and she admitted that indeed a covering letter existed.

[cdlxiv] Unknown to both Jim Penniston and Col. Halt at this time, more things were stirring behind the scenes. . . .

It is said that for over two years since the summer of 1981, because of the lack of witnesses and documents, the UFO community in the UK had generally taken the view that the Rendlesham Incident had no case. Then on Saturday August 27, 1983 at the BUFORA International Congress, which took place in the village and civil parish of Lane End, in Wycombe, Buckinghamshire, England, the proof was delivered in the form of several MOD documents presented by speakers Brenda Butler and Dot Street. Jenny Randles chaired the event. Also present, were Brenda's partner, Chris Pennington, and lawyer Harry Harris. According to Georgina Bruni, at first, Jenny Randles did not plan to raise the subject about the Rendlesham Incident at the conference because she was presently working on a book with Butler and Street about it. However, Dot Street was annoyed that BUFORA had not taken the case seriously, and now that she had finally acquired the documents needed to get people's attention, the subject and the documents of proof would have to be included. It was known that the conference was bound to attract reporters, but Jenny Randles decided it was best at this stage to reveal what proof they had to investigators and other key researchers only. So, to minimize leaks to the media, their

presentation took place during an unannounced and unadvertised ‘closed session’ after the main events of the conference and after press reporters and other delegates had left. Apparently, the session began late at night and went on into the early hours of the morning. The acclaimed UFO investigator for the USAF’s *Project Blue Book*, Prof. J. Allen Hynek – said to be the true father of modern Ufology – was also present at this session, as he had been a speaker that day, and it’s possible that this is why the conference was chosen to reveal the documents. Jenny Randles first met Prof. Hynek in 1981, when she discussed the Rendlesham case with him. Apparently, Hynek was deeply interested in the Rendlesham case and had encouraged the three researchers/investigators to carry on digging into it. It is also said that former MOD official, Ralph Noyes, was also present as one of the speakers that day and that this was how he also got involved in the case. Before his retirement in 1977, Noyes, a former Air Ministry Intelligence Officer, was head of DS8 . . . the office in charge of UFO matters.

During the session, Street, Butler, and Randles first revealed the copy of the Halt Memo that was sent to them by Larry Fawcett of CAUS to assist them in their investigations. They then revealed the results of their visit to the MOD in Whitehall where they arrived unannounced and confronted the staff there with a copy of the Halt Memo. And thirdly, they revealed the MOD letter which Pam Titchmarsh of DS8 had sent Jenny Randles on April 13, 1983 in response to Randles’ request for information on the incident, and where it was admitted for the first time that ‘lights’ had been seen in the vicinity of Rendlesham Forest, which remain unexplained, although the date of the December 27, 1980 is given, which relates to the sighting made by airman Lori Buoen.

Quoting Pam Titchmarsh:

> “. . . turning now to your interest in the sighting at RAF Woodbridge in December 1980. I can now confirm that USAF personnel did see unusual lights outside the boundary fence early in the morning of December 27, 1980. No explanation for the occurrence was ever forthcoming.”

This was a clear admission that something really had occurred in the Rendlesham Forest over the Christmas period in 1980 that had never been explained by the MOD.

In any case, in the days following the conference, rumors began circulating that a newspaper journalist had been tipped off by someone who was either at the session or someone who had been told by a person who had been there. Brenda and Dot suspected that ‘someone’ was Harry Harris. It is said that this was confirmed years later by Georgina Bruni who asked *News of the World* journalist Keith Beabey if it was Harry Harris who had tipped them off, and apparently Beabey told Bruni it was indeed Harris.

However, it was later revealed in an interview that Harris’ colleague and BUFORA investigator Mike Sacks had given in May 2016 that it was indeed himself (Sacks) that had first got in touch with *News of the World* editor, George Mackintosh, saying that contacting the newspaper – a popular Sunday UK national newspaper at that time – was totally his idea (Halt and Hanson, 2016).

Wednesday, August 31, 1983:

On this day, Brenda and Dot went back to RAF Bentwaters this time to alert both Squadron Leader Moreland and Colonel Halt that the press were hot on the case. Moreland wasn’t too troubled by this, as he had merely passed the memo on to the MOD. However, Halt was deeply concerned and told the women rather naively that he hoped his name would not be mentioned by the media, as he did not want it to affect his family. Halt was told this was virtually unavoidable, seeing as he had signed the memo.

By now, Derek Jameson of the *News of the World*, had learned of the Rendlesham Incident, and was told more about it by the Manchester-based UFO group, which included Harry Harris, Mike Sacks, Norman Collinson, and Jenny Randles – all of whom went to see Jameson. The second time the group visited Jameson, they presented him with several Ministry of Defence documents confirming their story

– one of these being the memo typed up by Deputy Base Commander Lt. Col. Halt and sent to the British MOD (Ministry of Defence) by RAF Wing Commander Donald Moreland, the British Base liaison officer, to prompt the MOD to investigate the matter further.

The memo excited the *News of the World* editor Jameson, enough for him to send his top reporter, Keith Beabey, to Suffolk to check out the story. Ronnie Dugdale, who was shared the notes diaries and journals kept by Jenny Randles, Dot Street, and Brenda Butler during their years investigating the Rendlesham Forest Incident, tells us that Keith Beabey was aware that independent paranormal researcher Brenda Butler had been investigating this case from the beginning.

[cdlxv] According to Brenda Butler, Keith Beabey had travelled down from Manchester on September 21, 1983 to meet Brenda at the Crown Hotel in Framlingham, Suffolk at 10:00 a.m., and from there they would meet-up with Dot Street at 11:00 a.m. Beabey was there to investigate the story that he would write for the *News of the World.* Beabey had planned to visit the Bentwaters and Woodbridge bases and interview various people. One of the people that Beabey talked to, according to Brenda Butler, was Colonel Halt. However, Harry Harris and his colleagues, Mike Sacks and Norman Collinson, who were negotiating with the *News of the World,* after Mike Sacks had approached the editor, were already in talks with Col. Halt after having advised him to talk with the press, which Halt seemed to want to agree with. According to Ronnie Dugdale, who was interviewed with Brenda Butler on *Phenomenon KGRA radio* on September 3, 2016, these negotiations – all of which Harris had later denied – were kept secret from the three investigators.

On October 15, 2015, the American veteran Rendlesham Incident researcher Ray Boeche said that he had heard that Harry Harris had struck a deal with the newspaper, and that Col. Halt was going to supply the tape he had recorded during the event and provide a transcript of it for the newspaper article. Boeche adds that he didn't know if this story was accurate or not (*Ray Boeche, Th.D., early investigator of RAF Bentwaters/Woodbridge Mystery* interviewed on Phenomenon Radio, hosted by John Burroughs with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe. October 15, 2015).

According to what Georgina Bruni says, she was told by Keith Beabey when interviewing him in the late '90s for her book that, while he was investigating the story, Beabey had tried for several days to talk with Col. Halt, who kept evading him at every turn. Perhaps this was because Halt was now negotiating a deal with Harry Harris and his colleagues about his story being featured in the *News of the World.*

In any case, after meeting with the Liaison Officer Don Moreland, Keith Beabey finally managed to talk to Halt while he was visiting Suffolk. However, as Beabey had told Bruni, Halt was not willing to discuss the case, which is how his words, *"This is a very delicate situation. I have been told very clearly that I could jeopardize my career if I talk to you about it"* became published later in the *News of the World*. This, of course, was based on what Col. Halt had learned from the Base Judge Advocate Office after going there with Jim Penniston (Bruni, p. 82). However, this is not the way that Brenda Butler had expressed this meeting between Keith Beabey and Col. Halt.

Apparently, the meeting between Beabey and Halt during the last week in September was brief, because according to Brenda Butler, Halt had told Beabey that he wanted £25,000 for his story. Jim Penniston remembers that Halt told him he had been offered $50,000, but £25,000 would have actually been $37,522.5, with the exchange rate at the time being 1 GBP = 1.5009 USD, despite Ronnie Dugdale saying the exchange rate was 2.7 dollars to the British pound in his interview with Brenda Butler on *Phenomenon KGRA radio* on September 3, 2016. In any case, Col. Halt was obviously exaggerating. One can assume from this that behind Harry Harris's back Halt was now negotiating a deal with reporter Keith Beabey of the *News of the World*, and it's possible that the mini-cassette recording that Halt had made was also part of the deal, as it is a fact that Keith Beabey had already known about the tape when he talked to Larry Warren, whom he only knew as "Art Wallace," during that same week in September, 1983. Keith Beabey had visited Dot Street with Brenda Butler on September 28th, and it was while at Dot's home that Beabey talked to Warren on the phone – a

conversation which Dot had recorded and had lasted an hour, ending at 1:00 a.m. the next morning.

The following is from the transcript of the recorded conversation, and it is clear that Keith Beabey knew of the Halt Tape – perhaps the earliest recorded mention of the tape to anyone outside of the base until copies of the tape were released to researchers in August 1984:

> Larry Warren to reporter Keith Beabey:
> *"Another security policeman also had a camera with him at that time. I've also heard rumours about a tape, but I don't know anything about that."*
> Keith Beabey:
> *"Well I will tell you now, there was a tape. It was a tape recorder that was held by Halt, Colonel Halt, and he spoke into this tape because he used that tape to write his memorandum. So that checks out a bit."*
> Larry Warren:
> *"I never knew actually anyone had a tape recorder."*
>
> Transcript of the taped conversation between Larry Warren and Keith Beabey, September 28, 1983, recorded by Dot Street and transcribed by Ronnie Dugdale. Also published by Sacha Christie, on her blog page, *How The RFI Whistle was REALLY blown*, May 1, 2017.

In any case, Brenda Butler was told by Keith Beabey that before Beabey could answer Col. Halt's demand for £25,000 for his story, which also included the transcript of the tape no doubt, Halt said he needed to check with his legal team first to see if he could talk openly in public about it. The following is part of a recorded discussion Brenda Butler had with Ronnie Dugdale, and which was played on the Phenomenon Radio show:

> Brenda Butler:
> "He was gonna check with his legal team to see if he could tell him and the whole story, the true story, and they obviously told him no. But the thing is I told Keith right from the start that Halt was a hoaxer. His son had told us that, and he liked hoaxing people and playing jokes on people, and I told Keith right from the start that's what would happen."
>
> Dugdale: "So do you think Halt was serious when he asked for that . . . ."
> Butler: "No, I don't. I think he was pulling Keith's leg, trying it on, I really did . . . ."
>
> *Ronnie Dugdale Brenda Butler interviewed on Phenomenon KGRA Radio* hosted by John Burroughs with *Earthfiles* Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe, September 3, 2016.

In the same interview, which was during a recorded discussion with Ronnie Dugdale, Brenda Butler

says again that she had later heard from Keith Beabey that Halt had asked for the money so that could help his daughter back in the States to attend University there. In any case, Keith Beabey had phoned his editor and was told that he could only offer Halt £5,000, which Halt rejected.

Although it's apparent that Keith Beabey didn't receive the transcript of the tape, Halt did not deny the memo was his when Keith Beabey asked about it. What is also interesting is the information Ronnie Dugdale had offered, saying that reporter, Keith Beabey, had also phoned Gordon Williams, who was a Brigadier General at the time, as Beabey was trying to establish the authenticity of the memo, and Williams is quoted as having said, "Halt isn't the type of person to make something like that up." (In later years, Gordon Williams would later deny he had any knowledge of the memo.) Beabey then managed to secure a copy of the memorandum, which was the proof he needed that something had indeed taken place (Bruni, p. 82).

[cdlxvi] As was quoted above in Note 12, Brenda Butler gives her view that Col. Halt wasn't being serious when he had asked Keith Beabey for a fee of £25,000; that he was "pulling Keith's leg" and "trying it on," leaving us to assume that Col. Halt had asked for this to get the reporter off his back. However, as Jim Penniston remembers, Col. Halt was serious enough to confide in him about the fee. And after Jim Penniston had told Col. Halt that he might be in breach of 'AFR 30-30,' if he said anything in public about an event in which he was on active duty, Col. Halt went so far as to check this by driving to the 'Base Judge Advocate Office,' where he was told what Penniston had already told him.

Rendlesham researcher Ronnie Dugdale tells us that Butler, Street, and Randles were presently writing the book *Sky Crash,* which wasn't published until a year later, but at this time the women were understandably feeling uncomfortable about the sudden interest by the news media for fear this would interfere with their proposed publication, which they had negotiated with publishers Neville Sturman. However, it was a reality now that the story was going to be published with or without them, and apparently, Harry Harris had advised the three that it was better to assist the editor of the newspaper, if only to make sure the story was told as accurately as possible. Ronnie Dugdale also adds the following:

> ". . . the *News of the World* had their American reporter Bob Smith and their top UK reporter Keith Beabey contact and interview at length an airman who was now out of the USAF and living back in the States, an airman who shall not be named. However he gave the interviews anonymously under the pseudonym 'Art Wallace', the pseudonym given to him [Larry Warren] by Barry Greenwood. This un-named 'airman' said he never spoke to the *News of the World* that's not true, then he changed it to, he did speak to the *News of the World* but only briefly . . ."

Warren said he spoke to the *News of the World* reporter, Keith Beabey, for only five minutes, although the phone conversation which was recorded by Dot Street using the mic of a tape recorder held to the phone, lasted an hour. This was during September 1983, when Beabey was visiting Suffolk, and this was the same day that Warren had been talking on the phone with Bob Smith from New York, who was the American reporter for the *News of the World*, and whom he said Barry Greenwood knew.

Keith Beabey was no doubt following up on the story himself but had been beaten to it by just a few hours by Bob Smith. In any case both worked for the same newspaper:

> ". . . but they [the reporters] wanted his real name and he said he wouldn't give an interview until others came forward first, so much for being a "whistle-blower." The

> Story was now looking good, "Art Wallace" told the 'News of the World' everything that the girls had claimed, and more! It was looking like big Headline News. Maybe that's why the 'News of the World' upped the anti – at the last minute. The figure being offered now according to Harry Harris was £12,000. Harry said the payment was to be split several ways which would have meant somewhere just over two thousand each. I know Jenny received £2,000, Dot £1,500 and Brenda £1,500. Jenny received £500 more than Brenda or Dot, she believes primarily, for attending the meetings in Manchester with the Newspaper and for her role as consultant on call to Keith Beabey, but also for supplying documents, case files and communications that she had weeded out of the MoD herself and were hers, accrued by her and hers to offer."
>
> Ronnie Dugdale, first published in *Outer Limits* Magazine No: 11 – December 2017 under the title: *"It Didn't Crash it Landed,"* and also published by Sacha Christie, on her *Infomaniac Housewife* blog page, *How The RFI Whistle was REALLY blown,* May 1, 2017.

In his interview on *Phenomenon KGRA Radio* with Brenda Butler on September, 3, 2016, Ronnie Dugdale says that the remaining £7,000 from the full £12,000 fee, was divided between Harry Harris, Mike Sacks, and Norman Collinson – the Detective Chief Inspector for the Manchester Police – who was paid 'under the counter,' so to speak, to either avoid paying tax, or so that it wouldn't leave a paper trail to his UFO activities.

On October 2, 1983, the story broke on the front page of the *News of the World.*

In the book he co-authored with Peter Robbins, *Left and East Gate,* Larry Warren says he was sent a copy of the British newspaper by Barry Greenwood who found several copies in Boston, and says he was shocked, adding that the story included statements by himself, "Art Wallace," which he says were distorted beyond belief. (*Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997). p. 101).

[cdlxvii] Again, Brenda Butler had been told by Keith Beabey that it was Col. Halt who had asked him for a fee of £25,000 – not that the newspaper had offered this fee to Col. Halt.

[cdlxviii] The day following the press release, Col. Halt was plagued by the media, who had descended on him about the memo he had written to the MOD, which featured in the *News of the World* coverage of the incident. Col. Halt has said that he was harassed so much that he had to hide himself away, and says this as if he was unpleasantly surprised.

Quoting Col. Halt:

> ". . . the day after it was released, I met BBC1, BBC2, ITV, Japanese TV, German TV, every local radio station, every reporter worth his salt. It was unbelievable what happened the next day. I had to go into hiding, almost, and I almost became a recluse after that, so that's

how the story came out, and that's in essence what happened."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

Exactly how the memo had found its way to the editor of the national newspaper remains somewhat vague. It has been suggested that it was the three investigators who were working the case, Brenda Butler, Dot Street, and Jenny Randles, who had 'sold' the memo to the *News of the World* editor. However, this is not true. As Jenny Randles has said, *". . . the document itself was not sold, since it was not anyone's to sell"* (Halt and Hanson, 2016).

Also, Halt had not received any support from his former boss, Ted Conrad, or Gordon Williams when they were later interviewed, and who had denied any knowledge of the memo.

Quoting Col. Halt:

"Conrad's such a coward – he didn't want his name involved; hence I was told to do the memo, which he read and approved. I was then 'hung out to dry' when it hit the Press. Everybody above me hid when it hit the Press. Disappointing! What you're seeing is some very skilful disinformation. You have no idea the ends some agencies will go to discredit this."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

[cdlxix] More from the article based on the testimony of the airman:

"Later that day, myself and some of the guys who had been at the field were given the once-over with a Geiger counter but we were never told why or what the results were. We were all called to the base security office at Bentwaters and told what we'd seen had been classified top secret. Several civilians were doing all the talking. We took them for CIA. They said if ever we told the story, no one would believe us. One guy added that if we did talk, then bullets were cheap. I thought, this guy is actually threatening our lives, he obviously means it. Looking back, the one thing that bothers me is that the officers and civilians present seemed to know all about it, they weren't all that surprised."

"An Airman's Story." *News of the World*, October 3, 1983.

As mentioned, the airman's story was that of "Art Wallace," the pseudonym given to Lawrence (Larry) Warren by UFO investigator and CAUS founder, Larry Fawcett. Warren was 22 at the time, having been born in August 1961. However, as both Ronnie Dugdale and Sacha Christie inform us, Larry Warren as "Art Wallace" *was not the original whistleblower.* J. D. Ingalls ("Steve Roberts") was really the first to break the story, followed by Brenda Butler, Dot Street, Jenny Randles, and also Ted Conrad,

and Don Moreland in the March 1983 *OMNI* article to which Jenny Randles and Dot Street had also both contributed. All were instrumental in different ways in bringing the story to the public.

Quoting Ronnie Dugdale, as published by Sacha Christie on her blog page:

> "Wallace never spoke out until after the Omni article came out in which Conrad and Moreland spoke to Mishera, the reporter. Dot Street and Brenda Butler were by that time hot on the trail. Jenny Randles and Dot both contributed to that article, Brenda would have done also had Jenny not told her not to say anything to Mishera. Jenny Randles had already published articles at least twice in the flying saucer review, a huge feature in 'the Unexplained'. Dot had released her 'Bufora' bulletin long before the 'Omni' article hit the news stands.
>
> All the above were shared with Barry Greenwood and Larry Fawcett long before Betty Andreasson suggested to 'Art Wallace' that he should speak to Larry Fawcett." [. . .] "It was not his information alone that got the Halt memo out either. His (anonymous) statement may have played a part, but it was Jenny Randles letter from Pam Titchmarsh MoD admitting after two years of her hounding them that something had taken place at Rendlesham, Christmas 1980 and Barry Greenwood's letter from Col. Halt and Ted Cochran that was used to force the FOIA request. That's the truth of the matter. So if anyone should have received an award it should have been Brenda Butler and Dot Street."
>
> Ronnie Dugdale, first published in *Outer Limits* Magazine No: 11 – December 2017 under the title: *"It Didn't Crash it Landed,"* and also published by Sacha Christie, on her *Infomaniac Housewife* blog page, *How The RFI Whistle was REALLY blown,* May 1, 2017.

[cdlxx] "Rendlesham Forest Update" by Jenny Randles, *MUFON UFO JOURNAL*, No. 204, April 1985.
[cdlxxi]

This should come as no surprise, seeing as the BBC is Britain's state-owned TV network. It must be said that those who believe that the media is not controlled by the establishment are naïve. Although through law, the government denies that it owns the BBC, the BBC has always been controlled financially and editorially by the State (see here), and is really the epitome of State propaganda. The government controls the BBC through a board that they appoint in the same way that shareholders would appoint a board of governors to manage their company. So, in that sense the 'powers that be' own it. (See here.) It is also a fact that meteorologists and astronomers are the people the government will turn to and use to deflate and to debunk the more significant UFO cases, as these people are educated in the very fields that can provide the right kinds of explanations – no matter how illogical and irrational they may turn out to be. Again, the 'masters of deception' know that these are not explanations that will satisfy the intelligent and educated . . . but that does not matter. Instead, such explanations – as seen to be provided by educated individuals in these professions – are really aimed at the 'ignorant masses' and whose numbers can turn any vote – even though the reality today is that the

UFO phenomenon is becoming largely accepted as a reality by the majority of the world's population.

The UK commercial TV channel ITV isn't exempt from power broker influence. Jenny Randles was surprised to discover that every copy of the April 13. 1983 letter from Pam Titchmarsh from DS8 of the MOD made for investigators and journalists had completely vanished – including the original. During October 1983, when the story broke, the original letter had been left with the team of Television's "TV Eye" – part of the ITV network – for photocopying, as witnessed by Detective Chief Inspector Norman Collinson, a colleague of Harry Harris and Randles. When Randles tried to recover the letter with Collinson's help, Thames Television insisted that they did not have it, nor had they photocopied it. (*Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* by Timothy Good. William Morrow & Company, 1988).

[cdlxxii] See: *Vince Thurkettle – the original interview* by Ian Ridpath.

[cdlxxiii] *A flashlight in the forest* by Ian Ridpath, The Guardian, Saturday, January 5, 1985. See also Ian Ridpath's page: *Was the flashing light really the lighthouse?* Quoting Ian Ridpath from his page:

> "I returned to Rendlesham Forest in 1998 October. Scouting around at the forest edge, I discovered something that I had not appreciated previously: the top of the lighthouse peeps through a gap between distant trees, *and can be seen directly from only a limited area of the forest.* Remarkably enough, when I was positioned so that I could see the lighthouse through the gap in the distant tree line, *the farmhouse lay right in front of me, in the same line of sight, just as Halt had described it as lining up with the flashing UFO."* [Our emphasis.]

It is interesting that the supposed 'landing site' that Ian Ridpath had determined, based on the same area that Thurkettle was taken to, *just happens to be one of the few places in the forest where the lighthouse can clearly be seen.*

Based on the information provided by Ian Ridpath, the coordinates of the 'landing site,' where it is said that the evidence of marks on the trees and the three landing pod depressions were found immediately after the incident and supposedly investigated further by SSgt. Monroe Nevels and later with Lt. Col. Halt, are 52°05'20"N, 1°26'58"E in degrees, arc minutes and seconds, as shown in the *Google Earth Pro* satellite image below. (See Ian Ridpath's page: *Where was the "landing site" that Halt investigated?*)

The alleged landing site according to Ian Ridpath based on various witness accounts including Vince Thurkettle and Col. Halt, and from which the lighthouse can clearly be seen. (*Google Earth Pro* satellite image from 2000.)

However, this is not the landing site that Jim Penniston recalls and had reidentified in 2010 with John Burroughs. The correct landing site location and its geographical coordinates, as determined by Jim Penniston and Burroughs when they visited the forest again some thirty years later on December 28, 2010, are given as 52°05'10.78"N, 1°27'0.03"E in degrees, arc minutes and seconds, as shown in the *Google Earth Pro,* satellite image below.

The true landing site according to Jim Penniston, from which the lighthouse cannot be seen. (*Google Earth Pro* satellite image from 2000.)

As for Halt's comments that the lighted object seen in the field on the third night had appeared closely in line with a farmhouse "directly in front of us," as told to Salley Rayl in an interview Halt did with her in 1997, this is not proof that the line of sight mentioned by Halt was precisely due east. Halt says nothing about this line of sight being due east. The line of sight whereby the lighted object was observed to be in between Halt and his team, and the farmhouse could very well have been on a diagonal from their position at the real landing site, being viewed due north-west – the farmhouse to their right.
[cdlxxiv]

In April 1985, UFO researcher and investigator Jenny Randles revealed that Ridpath had used a zoom lens and editing techniques to make the lighthouse *"look a darned sight stranger than it does – or indeed than it did . . . because when the events took place the area was masked by a thick blanket of trees, now gone, and the lighthouse was far less prominent . . . ."*

In the same article, Jenny Randles also revealed, that in the five days prior to Ian Ridpath's news item filmed with Vincent Thurkettle, which introduced the Lighthouse explanation to the public, a BBC producer named Douglas Salmon, with whom the group, including Randles, Butler, and Street were closely working, was *"blocked every which way he went in trying to persuade bosses to let him make a documentary on the case."* Randles adds, *"In the end he put in an official protest and told us that it was clear forces in the upper echelons of the company had conspired against the programme."*

"Rendlesham Forest Update" by Jenny Randles, MUFON UFO JOURNAL, No. 204, April 1985.

This highlights the situation touched on in Note 46 above, and which has been going on for decades. Obviously, working with Randles and the other investigators, Doug Salmon was not considered skeptical enough to make a documentary about the incident.

.

[cdlxxv] On November 6, 1983, the *News of the World* ran an update article on the Rendlesham incident under a banner headline that could have been taken from the front page of the *National Enquirer: "Bug-Eyed Alien Greets Air Chief."* The update ramps up the sensationalism in which more details are given to make the story appear even more ridiculous:

> "Amazing new facts about the night a UFO came to Britain have been revealed by the U.S serviceman who saw the craft land. The secrets were locked away in 22-year old Art Wallace's mind. But following hypnosis, he has now given us:
>
> A full description of the aliens who manned the ship; Details of how a senior American officer actually communicated with one of the beings; Evidence that the U.S. Air Force may have helped repair the damaged craft. Since Wallace – now back in the U.S – revealed to us what he saw that terrifying night, his life has been threatened. Recently, he received a phone call at his home and an unidentified man told him, "If you don't shut your mouth then it will be shut for you." This follows a frightening meeting he had with several men he believes were from the CIA, during which he was warned "Bullets are cheap" During his session with two hypnotists, Wallace not only confirmed his original story but made some astonishing new revelations. He now says he remembers seeing a face to face meeting between one of the aliens and the officer who was in charge of the U.S base. The alien was between three and four feet tall, with a very large head and huge saucer like eyes . . . It appeared to have greyish skin and was wearing what looked like a dark jumpsuit and the outline of its figure glowed. Wallace was unable to hear any voices as Wing Commander, now Brigadier General, Gordon Williams and the being communicated with much hand waving and pointing at the strange triangular craft . . . The four aliens appeared to be floating just above the surface of the ground and at one point became alarmed and formed themselves into a defensive line. One of them floated over the UFO near to where Wallace was standing and he blacked out. The next thing he remembers, he was back in his barracks. Wallace believes the craft needed repairs after it hit a tree.
>
> He was told later by some of his pals on the base that a U.S transport plane flew in from Germany just hours after the UFO landed, and was immediately was surrounded by armed military police. A package from the plane was put in a jeep which then drove off towards the landing site at Tangham Wood. Later that day, the craft is gone.
>
> The base's deputy commander Lt. Charles Halt,

admits there is " one hell of a lot more to come out."

It is interesting that the latest update to the story reflects exactly what J. D. Ingalls had told SSgt. Jim Penniston . . . that the UFO containment story being spread around the base and the surrounding area would involve the Wing and Base Commanders giving assistance to the alien beings whose craft needed repairs. (See Note 453.) In this latest story, it was the Wing Commander, now Brigadier General, Gordon Williams, who was named, and apparently by "Art Wallace."

[cdlxxvi] This is possibly how Brenda Butler had first learned about John Burroughs, who was later given the pseudonym "John Cadbury" by the researchers/authors in their book *Sky Crash*, published a year later in October 1984.

[cdlxxvii] Note by Jim Penniston:

> Looking back in hindsight, it is now clear to me, that terminating the interview was the best thing I could have done, because once the damage has been done and lies have been told, the majority of people tend to go along with the lies for a long time, and although the truth can take a long time in arriving, there is always the right time for the truth to come out, and that time is now here with the account of what really happened, presented in this first book, which continues with Book Two on the binary code.

[cdlxxviii] RAF Bawdsey was where radar was first researched for military uses in the UK in 1936, and where the first radar station was built. Bawdsey was the Air Ministry's secret radar research establishment, becoming fully operational in 1937 when it became one of the twenty-one operational 'chain home' radar network built along the entire Europe-facing coastal areas of the British Isles, operational during the Second World War.
[cdlxxix]

Jim Penniston wasn't aware that in April 1984, other witnesses were being contacted and were being persuaded to come forward to talk in public about their involvement in the incidents. Aside from the brief interview with Colonel Ted Conrad in *OMNI* in March 1983, the only person willing to speak out publicly had been Larry Warren under his pseudonym "Art Wallace."

Soon after it became public in the UK newspapers, the Rendlesham Forest case had attracted the attention of several high-profile American researchers, such as Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood of CAUS, and Lincoln Nebraska resident, Ray Boeche, a graphic artist, book designer and state director for Nebraska MUFON. All three had been in contact with Jenny Randles, Brenda Butler, and Dot Street, and all shared information.

By the Spring of 1984, one year after Larry Warren had come forward to meet with Larry Fawcett, a joint effort was made by Ray Boeche with his colleague, Scott Colborn, to research the case. (Ray Bouche was also the founder and director of the *Fortean Research Center*, founded in 1982. In his thirty-year career as a book designer, Boeche worked for the Nebraska University press and earned a 'Doctorate of Theology' Degree. By 1995, Dr. Boeche was asked to enter the Pastor Ministry as Rector of 'Celebration Anglican Church' in Lincoln. Today, he is a full-time pastor for adult education at a large church in Lincoln).

Having heard that John Burroughs and Adrian Bustinza had been witnesses to the Rendlesham Incident, somehow, Boeche and Colburn had managed to find and contact both Adrian Bustinza and John Burroughs and also interview Col. Halt by phone in April 1984.

On April 11, 1984, Adrian Bustinza was persuaded by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn to come forward and do an interview over the phone about the incident he was involved with on the 'third night,' with the team headed by Lt. Col. Halt. The phone interviews with "Airman A," (Adrian Bustinza), conducted by Boeche and Colburn, were April 11, 14, 21, 25, 1984.

Boeche says that talking to Bustinza was no easy task, as: 1) it was tough to get hold of Bustinza because of the hours he worked, and 2) Bustinza really didn't want to talk much about it. The impression Boeche says he had was of someone who had experienced something that had frightened him very deeply. On one occasion, Boeche says Adrian's father picked up the phone. Apparently, Bustinza's father was very cordial, but made it plain that this really bothered Adrian, and he didn't want to talk about it. Then Adrian's mother grabbed the phone, and she was angry – telling Boeche that this had frightened Adrian a great deal, and he was having trouble sleeping and dealing with it. Boeche said he was never able to get any of the direct information from Adrian, but the implications of his behavior and what his parents had to say – whatever it was he had experienced – had really had an extreme effect on him emotionally. Ray Boeche says he spoke to Adrian Bustinza on three occasions, and Scott Colburn with Ray Boeche also present spoke with Bustinza on one, but it was very brief, and virtually almost every answer Adrian gave was a one-syllable response. It was apparent he was scared to death, Boeche says:

> "This was something that had really scarred him and he wasn't sure how to deal with it. Adrian's responses were very short and very non-committal and my feeling was that a great deal of what he was frightened on were reprisals from the government and from the Air Force in particular."

Then six days after the second phone call with Boeche and Colborn, Adrian Bustinza was contacted and interviewed by investigator Larry Fawcett of CAUS somewhat extensively on April 20, 1984, with the call having been recorded and transcribed. Boeche and Colburn then spoke to Bustinza again on the next day, April 21st, and four days later on April 25, 1984.

Then the next day, April 26, 1984, Ray Boeche surprised John Burroughs with a phone call. Boeche says that Burroughs was nervous and evasive and said he could not discuss the incident, saying that because he was still in the military he would need to contact "somebody up there" before he could talk, explaining, "If I was a civilian that'd be a different story," and adding, "Once I left there, I was pretty much told not to say anything."

According to Ray Boeche, although telephone interviews had been conducted with "Airman B," (John Burroughs) on April 26, 27, June 6, and August 2, 1984, we are told that Burroughs promised to get back to Boeche after talking to his superiors, but he never did.

It was as late as 1986 that Ray Bouche wrote an article titled, "Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?*" published in *MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings*. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986. In this article, Boeche shared his and Colborn's research findings with the public, along with the interviews they had conducted with Bustinza, Burroughs, and also Col. Halt. However, aside from Col. Halt, there was very little to follow up on, even as late as 1986, when Ray Boeche's article was published, and it was due to Burroughs still being in the USAF, and Bustinza apparently being, "afraid for his life," that their identities were withheld by Boeche and referred to as "Airman A" and "Airman B."

Boeche also spoke to Captain Verrano by telephone on December 4, 1984, whom he referred to as "Airman C," and who told him that he drove Wing Commander Colonel Williams to a waiting fighter plane at RAF Bentwaters with a cannister of film of a landed UFO. The film was given directly to the fighter pilot for transport to Air Force Headquarters at Ramstein Air Force Base in West Germany. However, its likely that this was not a film but a reel of tape – a recording of all the radio transmissions

that had gone through the Command Post during the third night events – and that the reason why Col. Williams was delivering the film was because, being the Wing Commander of RAF Bentwaters and Woodbridge, he would have been the person to have handed the tape to Lieutenant General Charles A. Gabriel, a former member of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, and part of the elite group that acted as military advisors to the US Secretary of Defense, the National Security Council and the President of the United States of America. At the time of the Rendlesham Forest incident, Gabriel was Commander in Chief of the US Air Forces in Europe and Commander of Allied Air Forces Central Europe. He was stationed at Ramstein Air Force Base in Germany from August 1980 to June 1982. It is said that General Gabriel visited Bentwaters a few days after the first incident, and this could have been the night of events that involved Lt. Col. Halt. (See Chapter 16: *Hunted by Lions, Tigers and Bears.*)

However, in 1998 while researching for her book, Georgina Bruni, was told by former Master Sergeant Ray Gulyas that Captain Verrano was given a video film taken by a military wife living on Woodbridge base. By cross-referencing the information she had been given, Georgina assumed that the aircraft that was alleged to have transported film, photographs and tapes of the UFO-related events to the USAFE headquarters at Ramstein Airbase in Germany, after these were handed to General Gabriel by Colonel Gordon Williams, who had been driven to Bentwaters runway by Verrano to personally hand over the film, was a C-130, which was guarded by the patrol with D-Flight, which also included Sgt. Adrian Bustinza who says he was there. However, this plane was said to have landed on the runway at the Woodbridge base – not Bentwaters – and this was three days after the events of the 'third night.'

[cdlxxx] It is evident that *News of the World* reporter, Keith Beabey, had knowledge of what had become known as the "Halt tape" after having met and talked with Col. Halt in the last week of September 1983, as did Harry Harris and his colleagues, who said Col. Halt had played them the tape when negotiating with them on his story for the *News of the World* national newspaper. It appears that it was on the strength of the tape and the evidence on it, for which he said he would provide a transcript, that Col. Halt had thought it reasonable to ask Keith Beabey for a fee of £25,000 for his story.
[cdlxxxi]

In his book *Above Top Secret* (1988), author Timothy Good writes that journalist John Grant traced Colonel Sam Morgan to the Space Command Headquarters, linked to Peterson USAF base in Colorado, and asked him some questions via telephone. It is interesting that when Morgan was asked about the incident and the Halt tape, he is quoted as having said:

> "I do not think it is a hoax. I think the men really were out there that night and they saw something which frightened them. You can hear their excited conversations and references to frightening bright lights. The only opinion I have, is that based on the evidence available, those guys definitely saw something which cannot be explained. As for them fabricating it all and putting on an act, I do not think they could pull it off."
>
> *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* by Timothy Good, (William Morrow & Company, 1988).

During a phone conversation in 1984 with the famous UFO skeptic Philip Klass, Colonel Sam Morgan is quoted as having said the following:

> "Halt really had no authority out there in that forest anyhow. So he was a kind of hobbyist on his own

> lurking around. When I ... looked into it I concluded that it was just a bunch of guys screwing around in the woods."

Stomping around, goofing off: Why the US Air Force and the British MoD kept quiet about the Rendlesham Forest Incident Copyright © 2004, 2011, Peter Brookesmith.
This article is adapted and expanded from "Forgive Us Our Trespasses,"
published in *The Skeptic*, Volume 17 Number 2-3, Summer and Autumn 2004.

[cdlxxxii]In the same interview with Philip Klass, Morgan also called Col. Halt "a kind of twit," which was mere name-calling, and it's surprising how Morgan made it to Base Commander. Of SSgt. Monroe Nevels, Morgan says he "had little training on the machine and was none too bright." It is clear that Morgan was deliberately attacking the incident from the perspective of undermining the characters and competencies of those involved. Curiously, the last part of the quote by Morgan compares with the comment made by Chris Armold, who describes Halt's venture into the woods, *in which he says he was also present,* as: "just a half-dozen or so of us stomping around goofing off!" . . . a commentary comparison, which didn't go unnoticed and is the point of Brookesmith's article, but more from a skeptical point of view, in that Brookesmith believes these comments and buys the lie that this is all the incident consisted of, as the title of his article implies. Of course, he neglects to inform the reader that the evidence and statements made by others – especially the personnel in the Air Traffic and WSA towers, who came forward later – says differently. The observation isn't made that the most likely reason why these comments are similar, in playing down and ridiculing the incident involving Lt. Col. Halt, is that this is what these people were instructed to say or had agreed to say when the right opportunity came up. Again, the person most likely to have instigated the containment cover story, as told to SSgt. Penniston by SSgt. J. D. Ingalls, is Major Malcolm Zickler. From his article, here's what Peter Brookesmith has to say concerning an email exchange he had in 2010 with Sam Morgan:

> "Halt's now-famous habit of riding around at night with security police patrols would certainly suggest a certain Walter Mitty-ish tendency. Regarding this, Col. Morgan commented: "I was concerned that he would usurp Major [Mal] Zickler's authority and often spoke with Major Zickler to ensure he was not irritated by Halt's actions. As long as Maj. Zickler could tolerate Halt's meddling and as long as Halt did not compromise his job performance, I did not interfere."

And as Brookesmith tells us, Col. Morgan's take today on Halt's story is this:

> "Halt was meddling as usual and went to check things out. Halt was over reacting when on the scene and it was recorded on a pocket tape recorder. I got this tape and . . . [it] started a story which, for Halt, shined a light on him. He could have addressed the facts or he could have inflated the story. He chose to inflate the story. Soon the story was much bigger than he expected, and he does not

> now have a graceful way out. [. . .] Over the years Halt has expanded his story to the point of hinting at a cover up by the USA and UK authorities and I would certainly criticize him here. I have never believed that a national government would be capable of such a cover up, as there would just be too many people involved. If nothing else, I believe Halt has insulted both our governments with his accusations."

Stomping around, goofing off: Why the US Air Force and the British MoD kept quiet about the Rendlesham Forest Incident Copyright © 2004, 2011, Peter Brookesmith.

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 212).
[cdlxxxiii]

Ibid. p. 112. On the same page in Bruni's book, Sam Morgan's quote during his interview in 1998 with Georgina Bruni continues:

> "Then I began to get snarly calls demanding a copy . . . Then I got a letter from a UFO buff in Oregon, demanding I send him the tape immediately and threatening me with legal action if I didn't respond. I was so offended by that idiot that I quit responding to all requests for the tape. I still have the little cassette somewhere and a regular cassette copy of it . . . *I don't think he* [Halt] *or the other people rehearsed the tape so I tend to interpret it as indicating they saw something they did not totally understand . . . ."* [Our emphasis.]

The last line emphasized in Italics is particularly interesting in view of what Sam Morgan had told Peter Brookesmith eleven years later in 2010. (See Note 481 above.) The "UFO buff in Oregon" Morgan refers to was John Robert Kniston of Portland, Oregon.

[cdlxxxiv] "Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?"* by Raymond W. Boeche, published in *MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings*. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986. In the same article, researcher Ray Boeche informs us that one week later, Jenny Randles had kindly supplied him with a copy of the tape – "the first to reach the U.S." Ray Boeche adds that when Colonel Morgan was questioned by a British Newspaper as to his reason for releasing the tape, he said he *". . . didn't see any reason not to."* Boeche then writes this was "Curious to say the least, but a copy was at last available."
[cdlxxxv]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001. p. 212).

[cdlxxxvi] On hearing about this, Colonel Halt wasn't happy. Quoting Col. Halt:

> "I was shocked and disappointed. Subsequently, things were of course very difficult between us: [Col. Halt and Col. Morgan] on occasion threats were made to me

which I ignored."

The Halt Perspective by Charles Irwin Halt and John Hanson (Haunted Skies Publishing, 2016).

The $2000 that NTV producer Jinishi (Jimmy) Yaoi had paid Harry Harris for the Halt tape, is from Larry Warren, in his book, Left at East Gate (1997) p. 131. Warren writes that Yaoi's crew had visited him at father's house in Southington, Connecticut (which would have been late September to October 1984), to film him being interviewed, and that while there, Yaoi, had arranged for him to undergo hypnotic regression with Pat Gegleardo, a respected psychic who had worked with the Connecticut police. The time period reveals that this is the hypnosis session that Warren later said he had faked, despite Yaoi having paid for it. (See Note 573.) Apparently, after a brief interview, Warren was asked by Yaoi if he had heard the tape. "What tape?" Warren replied, and Yaoi then described the tape he had secured, which was recorded by Lt. Col. Halt during the third night. Warren says that after telling him how he had got hold the tape, Yaoi then played the tape for him. Warren writes: "It sounded like an on on-site account of part of what I witnessed." Warren then asked Yaoi if he could have a copy, as it could only strengthen his case. Yaoi then promised him a copy when Warren visited Japan, as arranged. While Warren was in Japan that October, Yaoi gave Warren a copy of the Halt tape as promised. When he got back to the USA, Warren then gave a copy to Larry Fawcett, who in turn passed a copy onto Chuck DeCaro, who then used it in the CNN Special Assignment program about Rendlesham, which was televised in January 1985. According to Warren, DeCaro had already filmed Warren at his father's home in September 1984, which would have coincided with the time that NTV producer Jinishi Yaoi had filmed him at the same location.

[cdlxxxvii] See: *"The Story of Art Wallace"* presented on the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org.*
[cdlxxxviii]

In the book, *Sky Crash*, and also in the book written by Jenny Randles for the US market, titled *From Out of the Blue*, published on June 1, 1991, the events that happened on the 'third night,' which has now been established to have taken place between the evening of Saturday the 27th to Sunday morning on the 28th, were mistakenly reported to have taken place on the morning of Saturday the 27th – which was the morning of the sighting made by Lori Buoen. Also, there is no mention in these books of the party that took place at the Officer's Club on the Saturday evening of December 27, 1980, which for Col. Halt, and Monroe Nevels, had set the stage for these events. The Officer's Club party only became known when Col. Halt first came forward at the end of 1991, after retiring from the USAF in 1990 and had first formulated what later became a well-rehearsed account for the public about the third night's events.

[cdlxxxix] *Rendlesham Forest Affair* by Walt Andrus, Jr.

[cdxc] Extracts from the type-scripted phone conversation Ray Boeche had with John Burroughs on April 26, 1984:

> Burroughs: *"I'm not trying to hold anything back against you, but, I've got to, you know, go through legal channels, before I can talk to you on that. Now, I'm not saying I won't talk to you."*

Burroughs then asked Ray Boeche who he had talked to earlier, and Boeche named Adrian Bustinza and Larry Warren.

> Burroughs response: *"OK. Those names don't . . . aren't really familiar."*

The transcript of this conversation by Boeche and Burroughs was included in the Warren and Robbins book, *Left at East Gate,* however, the following part of the conversation was edited out

> Boeche: "They had mentioned that just before leaving Bentwaters several guys had gotten together and made a pact that they would try and get this information out."
>
> Burroughs: *"Nah, I don't know anything about that.*

And then the transcript in *Left at East Gate* resumes quoting the following:

> *Ok, here's, like here's the scoop. Let me talk . . . let me call my orderly room and let me talk to my squadron commander. After I talk to them and have them tell me what I should say, if I can say anything. Now I've got to do that because I'm still in the military, if I was a civilian that'd be a different story.*
>
> From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org.*

[cdxci] The Japanese media were so fascinated and obsessed by the Rendlesham Incident, that self-confessed witness, Larry Warren, under the name "Art Wallace," had been invited to Tokyo to talk about it. In Left at East Gate, Warren writes that he was offered a fee of one thousand dollars plus expenses, and adds, *"By now I felt I'd earned it."*

When Warren arrived in the city on October 10, 1984, his visit was so broadly publicized, that as he was driven from the airport to the building owned by the TV company, he was surprised to see himself featured on a huge billboard at the top of the building. Warren had not only made front-page news but had also been interviewed for several television shows, including the 11:00 p.m. *Wide Show* – Japan's version of America's *The Tonight Show.* Warren says he was also introduced to psychic Uri Geller in Tokyo. It was this full-on, over-night, media exposure in which he had become the focal point before anyone else, which gave Warren *cart blanche* to be able to say, *"I was the original whistleblower."*

When noting how all this unfolded, it's difficult to imagine how the power of irrational human belief could have been underestimated by the intelligences who put the containment plan in motion. As we will see, if anything, this is a fine example of typical human behaviour in this world, where the majority of people will look everywhere else first before finding or realizing the truth.

[cdxcii] In this Japanese TV documentary, the former Base Commander, Ted Conrad, is phoned by one of the Japanese researchers, and we are allowed to hear him speak without a Japanese interpreter's voice drowning out what is being said.

Quoting Ted Conrad:

> "I had been in the forest, but the point is, uh, all of those things that were attributed and said that happened, uh, really didn't. I mean, I didn't, uh, have any, you know, direct involvement in that at all. No connection, you

know, there were . . . there was a story and that's about the extent of it. In my analysis, there was no evidence in any way, shape or form that, that, that, you can substantiate that that happened."

Contrast this recorded phone commentary made sometime in 1984, with what Ted Conrad had said in his interview with Eric Mishera, *OMNI*, March 1983.

"Those lads certainly saw something, but I don't know what it was."

"UFO UPDATE" by Eric Mishera. *OMNI Magazine*, Vol. 5, No. 6, p. 115.

Also on the documentary, "Art Wallace," (Larry Warren) is shown extensively as the star witness, and is even filmed while listening to the Halt Tape to later give his comments to the TV audience. This was the first time the Halt Tape had been played in public. In another part of the documentary we hear "Wallace" (Warren) say:

"I was picked up in a vehicle and was told I had to get into the back of the vehicle and we were going to meet a convoy, but first we would have to stop at the base motorpool. Uh, after I did so, I was replaced on my post by another individual. We went out to the base motorpool so to speak and we picked up lightalls. [. . .] Uh, we went in on a fire access road, uh, probably about two hundred yards. We stopped and there was a clearing. In this clearing we turned in our weapons that we had on us to an armourer. [. . .] When we reached this area, we were told to stop and there was a person who looked very upset, distraught on the ground. Uh, I did not know the individual. Uh, just in front of him . . . [. . .] And it was transparent, and it was like a yellowish mist inside it. This thing came down, the red light over it, and sat there maybe two seconds. It was just a ball of light in the air, maybe twenty feet off the ground or thirty feet, and it dispersed into a multitude of colors, and they all seemed to fall on top of this thing, and before our eyes - uh, its almost indescribable but there was a craft, an alien space craft or whatever."

[cdxciii]

As mentioned, the letter that Larry Warren had sent his mother contains nothing of what Warren had later claimed happened to him personally as had later emerged in his interviews presented publicly for the *News of the World*, (October 2 and November 6, 1983) the book, *Clear Intent* (May 1984), *Sky Crash* (October 1984) – all under the pseudonym "Art Wallace" – and finally his own book *Left at East Gate* under his real name (1997). As Peter Robbins, Warren's co-author on *Left at East Gate*, will say 37 years later about the letter to his mother, and after he had distanced himself from Warren once it was evident that the book contained fabricated stories and was pulled by the publishers from any future publications:

". . . at no time does the writer say or even imply that he was personally involved or actually present."

A Statement from Peter... A Statement regarding Left At East Gate and my coauthor of that book.
Originally posted online by Peter Robbins, June 13, 2017.

If Warren had really been involved in the third night's events, then surely with the events still on his mind he would not have given over three quarters of this written letter to the events of the first night in which he was not involved and which he describes in some detail based on what he says an airman had told him. If he was worried about getting into deep trouble in mentioning the incidents, as he has said he was certain that all the mail that was sent in and out of the base was intercepted and read, then surely in his frame of mind, having been disturbed by what he claims to have witnessed, the feeling would have been not to write anything about it at all. However, if the UFO story Warren had included was based on the gossip he had heard on the base, then that would be seen as both novel and newsworthy and as something to write about, and this is how the contents of the letter about the UFO story comes across.

There is a 12.30-minute video on *YouTube* in which Larry Warren is being interviewed by Sid Goldberg for EMN (*Earth Mystery News.* See: *Never Before Revealed In Full: 1st Ever Written Evidence on RAF Bentwaters*. Uploaded August 27, 2016).

In the video, Larry Warren points out the "PS" right at the end of the letter, in which it is written: *"PS ma, when I get home I'll tell you the truth about the UFO. I can't in the mail they read it."*

Where this PS is written, there is hardly any space to write and it is also written in a different colored ink. Warren explains that this PS was an afterthought when he was about to post the letter at the base post office. He explains that the reason why the "PS" is in different ink is because he used another pen supplied by the post office to write it before sending it. However, Warren forgets that from the fourth page he had already written: *"Remember I was telling you about that UFO that landed? Well I'll tell you the whole story on it."* It's clear that he had indeed told the 'whole story' – i.e., what he could – about the first night's events when the UFO really did land according to what he had heard and what was later given in Jim Penniston's testimony. It is of course possible that Warren had written the PS when he found the letter at his mother's sometime after it was sent there and that he was merely covering his tracks, as he knew that researchers and investigators like Sid Goldberg would ask him why he had never mentioned the third night's events to which he claims he was a witness. In fact, Sid Goldberg asked Warren: *"So why didn't you put in the letter what you saw on the third night?"*

Warren then explained that what he was trying to do was confirm to his mother an incident had happened because he had already got caught calling her on the phone, and so wishing to tell her the importance of this, he told her what the "federales" told him in the debrief so she could have a sense of how big the story was – even though he had written in the letter that he had been told by an airman what had occurred on the first night and said nothing about being debriefed. Warren tells the viewers of the video that the airman whom he said had told him was really himself. Warren then adds if he had written what he went through then *"he would have been accountable instead of hearsay,"* and that's why he lied to his mother . . . *"it was my tactic,"* he says. As his co-author Peter Robbins has more-or-less said since distancing himself from Larry Warren in 2017, Warren was clearly backtracking on his lies.

The reason for this video is that, due to UFO researcher, Gary Heseltine, who no doubt had seen how the letter could be exploited and the contents spun to make Warren look good, Warren is now claiming that the letter predates the now famous Halt Memorandum by a week and is the FIRST written piece of evidence existing on the Rendlesham Incident, even though those with an ounce of common sense would know it reads just like a letter by an airman who had heard rumors, or was told by another

airman about a UFO incident that had happened off-base in the forest, and for many this is exactly what it is and all it ever was.

[cdxciv] *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* by Timothy Good (William Morrow & Company, 1988).

[cdxcv] *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 106). On page 85 of her book, Georgina Bruni writes that Brenda Butler was skeptical of Larry's involvement and inclined to think he might have picked up the story from other witnesses. Apparently, Brenda Butler had once offered Warren false information about a witness who did not exist. Warren told Brenda that he knew the man and they had discussed the incident in passing. Bruni writes: *"This episode resulted in a damaging stigma to his* [Larry Warren's] *credibility,"* and added that she had asked Warren if he would care to comment on the matter: Warren admitted he was wrong, and said, *"I suppose I wanted her* [Brenda Butler] *to believe me, so I agreed with everything she said"* (Bruni, p. 85). Also, after *Sky Crash* was published, Warren claimed that what he was quoted as having said in the book by the authors was grossly misreported . . . however, he wasn't aware that Dot Street had taped all the interviews that she did with him over the phone and no doubt still has copies of what was taped to this day.

[cdxcvi] As mentioned in Note 7 of the end notes in Chapter 11: *Lifeline*, in his book *Left at East Gate* (1997), Larry Warren stated that after reading the *OMNI* magazine article, his reaction was "My God, other guys are talking," and then commented that he wondered if Larry Fawcett would think he got his information about what happened at Rendlesham from this article, but was relieved in the thought that he had told Bob Luca and Betty Andreasson "two months" before the article was published, and had spoken to Larry Fawcett two weeks before. My thoughts on first reading this were that, if Warren had already spoken to Larry Fawcett, then there would be no question of his wondering if Fawcett might think he had got the information from the article. It seemed as if Warren was making certain in the reader's mind that he had met with Fawcett before the article in *OMNI* was published, not realizing it would have the opposite effect with those who could see through this. So, from just this comment, I thought it likely that Warren had approached and met with Larry Fawcett AFTER this article by Mishera was published in March, which means that Bob Luca had arranged this meeting with Fawcett in March and not mid-February of 1981.

I then discovered that I wasn't alone in this conclusion.

Rendlesham Incident researcher Ronnie Dugdale, who once supported Larry Warren but then turned his back on him having realized Warren had been untruthful regarding his involvement in the Rendlesham Incident, writes that *Warren never spoke out until AFTER the OMNI magazine article had hit the newsstands in March of 1983.* Dugdale states that after reading the *OMNI Magazine* in March 1983, Larry Warren then contacted Betty, and she suggested he contact Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood. Dugdale continues, saying that Larry Warren then gave Fawcett and Greenwood a statement claiming his participation in the Rendlesham Incident and they, in turn, sent a copy of Warren's statement to the three British investigators – Randles, Street, and Butler. But what is important is what Dugdale writes next, stating that, what Warren had to say was similar to what Steve Roberts had told Brenda Butler and also what the radar operators had told Jenny Randles, but now with added details. Dugdale also mentions that Warren claimed not to have been aware of any of the articles written and published by Randles, Butler, and Street, "but had of course read the *OMNI* article that encouraged him to speak out."

"It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[cdxcvii] In his testimony, "The Story of Art Wallace," from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org),* Larry Warren had stated that he and others were told to sign a statement as to what they saw,

which he says was then filed away, also adding that they also signed documents which said they were not to divulge any information about what happened either then or in civilian life – all "very threatening and pushy."

During his phone conversation with Keith Beabey, Warren said that he had received a phone call about noon that day (meaning the day after the incident) and had been told to report to the security office, adding that there were a lot of plain clothes people who were not military at all there, and that while there, he and others had to sign forms and that they weren't even allowed to read them over, adding that they just had to sign them on the desk.

Warren then told Keith Beabey that these people had said, *"You was involved in something very highly secret, classified, and we will be explaining it to you for the next few hours."* Warren then adds, that what he and the other airmen witnesses had been told was so highly classified, that their security clearances were immediately upgraded to "triple A." Warren then added, *"I believe the clearance was as high as you can get in the military."*

But later in the same conversation, and when Warren says, *"Yeah, our lives were threatened,"* and after Beabey responded with "Really?" Warren seems to have forgotten what he had just told Beabey about the upgraded security clearances so they could be told some highly classified secrets, because Warren then said that he and the others were threatened by the plain clothes men, adding that they were told by these men *that they were not at liberty to tell them much about what they had witnessed and experienced,* and that the one thing he and the other witnesses did have – meaning their memories of what happened and their experiences – would not be taken seriously anyway because when they got out, no one would ever believe them, and that if they make their lives difficult, "bullets are cheap."

Source: Transcript of the taped, one-hour conversation between Larry Warren and Keith Beabey, September 28, 1983, recorded by Dot Street and transcribed by Ronnie Dugdale, as published in *Outer Limits Magazine,* No. 11, December 2012 under the title, "It Didn't Crash It Landed!"

Note by Jim Penniston:

> As said (see Chapter 10: *Containment*), I was the author of *Bentwaters Regulation 207. 1,* which means I knew who had the clearances to do what and what clearances they needed to access certain areas. I can show hundreds of documents that I had a 'Top-Secret Clearance.' Airman Larry Warren had never been given a Security Clearance to be upgraded to begin with, which would have only been for 'escorted entry into the Weapons Storage Area.' He wasn't there long enough to be given that Security Clearance. In fact, he wasn't in the USAF long enough to know anything about the military. And as for "triple A" . . . there was no such thing!

It is highly unlikely that Warren was ever interrogated like the other witnesses – for example, Jim Penniston and Adrian Bustinza – if at all debriefed, as his claims that he witnessed anything during the incidents are deeply suspect – more so today. Warren had also told Fawcett, as was typed-up and transcribed, that he had "left the service honorably," as he did in his conversation with Keith Beabey, but this, too, is suspect by Warren's very mention of it. As Col. Halt had said, Warren was *"thrown out with a coded discharge . . . unsuitable, undesirable for the convenience of the government"* (*A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Uploaded January 11, 2017).

If Warren really had been forced to sign papers and threatened as if he were a witness with serious consequences if he ever uttered a word about the events in question, he would not have come forward as he did . . . and he knew that a pseudonym would not have saved him from some form of reprisal. It is

more likely that he was never seriously debriefed or interrogated, and so now he was out of the Air Force he saw an opportunity to make a name for himself and experience whatever came with being the first "whistleblower," which he has laid claim to ever since.

Thus, the emergence of Larry Warren as a Rendlesham Incident witness is highly ironic, as the prime witnesses had said from the time Warren came forward under his own name that he was never present during the incidents they were involved in and for his own selfish reasons had done much to confuse and damage the case for serious researcher/investigators and the interested public. In fact, by this time, and because of the charm, flair, and charisma Warren exuded – accentuated by his gift of articulation in being able to tell a good convincing yarn without blinking an eye – a large number of people were now believing the accounts given by Larry Warren. He seemed to many to be the kind of down-to-earth, working-class guy you could enjoy a drink with in the local pub, and what's more, he appeared to be "sticking it to the establishment" with the truth of what he claimed he had experienced. This is mostly why, for many of those who followed the Rendlesham Incident, Warren had become and remained the most popular witness for over three decades.

[cdxcviii] Having seen Jenny Randles' name mentioned in the *OMNI* article by Eric Mishera in March 1983, and after having read Randles' report, "The Rendlesham Forest Mystery," originally published in *Flying Saucer Review* (Vol. 26, No. 6, March 1981), which included the accounts given to Brenda Butler by "Steve Roberts" (J. D. Ingalls) and Randles' radar operator source, "David Potts," Barry Greenwood sent Randles a letter in May 1984. He told Randles that Larry Fawcett had been in contact with a witness and was now convinced the case was genuine. Enclosed with the letter was a witness statement by "Art Wallace." It is obvious that after Greenwood had read Randles' article in *Flying Saucer Review*, he could see the correlations between the stories of "Steve Roberts," the radar operator at RAF Watton, and Larry Warren – however, Randles viewed this another way, and suspected "Art Wallace" (Warren), too, had read her article. In any case, Randles then told Dot Street about the new witness, and immediately Dot phoned Larry Fawcett.

In her article, Jenny Randles writes:

> "When Barry Greenwood first wrote to me in the spring of 1983 he sent me a copy of Larry Warren's statement. It was obvious that what Warren had to say was a close match to the stories fed to Brenda (via 'Steve Roberts') and to me (via Watton radar and USAF intelligence) [. . .] Of course, when Warren came forward the only military versions of the case on record (thanks to me!) were those from Roberts and Watton. [radar operator "David Potts"]. Warren says he had not read them, but Barry Greenwood had. That's how he recognised Warren's story and why he wrote to me. You could – I guess – suggest that Warren saw the tales from Roberts and Watton and decided that his version would have to match them to be believed. He utterly refutes that and we must accept his word. But his account did match Roberts's account – an account that I now consider discredited. All the other versions I have heard since follow a different – less 'extraterrestrial' – path. This leaves me with a real problem evaluating Warren's story today.
>
> "*Getting It Right at East Gate,"* by Jenny Randles.

Posted August 24, 2009,

[cdxcix] Two quotes by Larry Warren during his phone conversation with reporter Keith Beabey, late evening of September 28, 1983:

> "Well I am, this seems as if it is all coming out. They can't even find my friend Adrian Bustinza. He's disappeared. I'm trying to get into a career. If the government want to they could ruin me. They will if my name is used I think I am a dead man."
>
> "And Sgt Bustinza arrived with another Officer in a truck. I was told to get into the back of the pick-up, I was relieved by another kid, another individual took my place I was told I was to go with them and we were going to the motor pool, we went to the base motor pool at Bentwaters."
>
> Source: Transcript of the taped, one-hour conversation between Larry Warren and Keith Beabey, September 28, 1983, recorded by Dot Street and transcribed by Ronnie Dugdale, as published in *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012 under the title, "It Didn't Crash It Landed!"

[d] *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* by Timothy Good, (William Morrow & Company, 1988).

[di] *Ibid.*

[dii] *Ibid.*

[diii] Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 14 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, "Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?*" by Ray W. Boeche, published in *MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings.* Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.

[div] During the Phenomenon KGRA Radio interview he did with hosts Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs in August 2015, Adrian Bustinza again talks about the yellow mist, but this time what he describes seems to be something *only he is seeing*, as his patrol members with him are not registering the phenomenon he is referring to:

> "But I feel there was a yellow haze, like yellow, a yellowish, mustard-looking haze, about three foot off the ground. Then I noticed, and I noticed it because when I fell, I got up and I remember somebody had helped me up because they said I fell in a cow's manure, but you know, I remember being held up and I look and I said, 'what's with the mist?' And they said, they said, 'There ain't no fog out here Busty' . . . people used to call me

> Busty, and they said 'There ain't no fog out here,' but, and I said, 'What's that mist? . . . look at the mist and it was like a yellow haze, and just I mean, about, from waist level down, it was just sitting still"
>
> *Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident.* Published on August 29, 2015

Note that this was just after Bustinza says he fell after slipping in cow's manure (see Note 568 below). From this interview conducted in 2015, one would suspect that this story about the yellow mist in the account Bustinza had first given in April 1984 was one of several false memories implanted in his mind to sow disinformation if and when he came forward, and that Adrian Bustinza's memory was messed with when he was interrogated after the incident he was involved with on the third night.
[dv]

"Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?*" by Raymond W. Boeche, published in *MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings*. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.
[dvi]

Ibid.

[dvii] In her American-published book, *From Out of the Blue* (1991), which was a follow-up on the book *Sky Crash*, which she co-authored with Brenda Butler and Dot Street, Jenny Randles quotes these words from a senior officer:

> "We surrounded the thing . . . some men tried to get inside it . . . one climbed onto it . . . but it just moved and evaded us . . . This object did things that I simply cannot comprehend."
>
> *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles, (Inner Light – Global communications, June 1, 1991, p. 67).

Randles adds: *"This is eyewitness testimony from one of the senior officers which I have heard. Unfortunately, I am not at liberty to name him."* However, the senior officer from whom this quote was taken, has been identified as Colonel Charles Halt, from when he was discussing the incident with Harry Harris, which later made its way into the local newspaper, *The Suffolk Daily* late in 1983.

In any case, it is a curious thing to say, and as Jim Penniston has said, Halt does have people scratching their heads with the things he has said over the years. Perhaps when Halt said that he and his men had "surrounded the thing," it could be said that this was meant in very loose terms, in that when the lighted object was in the woods, it was indeed surrounded by Halt and his team and also by Bustinza who seems to have approached it from another vantage point in the woods after catching up with Halt and the team when he came back from refuelling the lightalls. Also, when Halt mentions some men tried to get inside it and one climbed onto it, he is most likely referring to the incident with Bustinza and Burroughs, and whatever had been said to have happened in the years since, despite Halt having said that nothing happened when he and others had watched Bustinza and Burroughs going forward to the first night's landing site, and said that when they returned they had reported nothing unusual.

[dviii] "Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?"* by Raymond W. Boeche, published in *MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings*. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986. It would appear that Boeche was protecting the names of all the witnesses at the time he had written this article, even though it was

published in 1986, as he referred to Bustinza as "Airman A." The actual transcript of the taped conversation with Adrian Bustinza at this point according to author Timothy Good is more intriguing:

> "There were 2 bobbies there. . . . Colonel Halt approached myself and Larry [Warren] . . . Was it Larry? I'm trying to remember – I'm not too sure of the other guy's name. [Halt] told us to approach the individuals who at that time were standing in the grass area."
>
> *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* by Timothy Good, (William Morrow & Company, 1988).

From this we can gather that Bustinza knew Warren was using his (Bustinza's) account, as it later came to light that both he and Warren had discussed the situation soon after the incident. Apparently, it was reasoned that because he (Larry Warren) was being discharged from the Air Force, Bustinza – according to Warren – insisted that Warren get the story out using his (Bustinza's) account. And so it's likely that when questioned by Boeche and Colborn, Bustinza had attempted to place Larry Warren there at the incident, but at the same time he covered his tracks by saying he wasn't sure Warren was there. Having been tracked down and persuaded to give an interview, it's likely that Bustinza was now uncomfortable with Warren having gone forward with his story, and didn't know how to assimilate what Warren had said into his own account.

It would appear that the two British bobbies standing taking photos of the object were the same two policemen that Bustinza claims he saw guarding the logging road into the forest when he returned with the lightalls. (See Note 334), and which Burroughs, who was there that night, had denied seeing.

Interestingly, Timothy Good states that when asked by Boeche and Colborn whether he had picked up Larry Warren in a truck and later met a convoy – as was claimed by Larry Warren – Adrian Bustinza denied it. (See: *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* by Timothy Good, (William Morrow & Company, 1988). However, in his phone interview with Larry Fawcett on April 20, 1984, when told by Fawcett that Larry Warren had told him that he (Warren) was on a guard post and a Jeep had pulled up with a Lieutenant Englund, and he believed he (Bustinza) was in the Jeep, Bustinza simply responded with "Right."

In fact, most of the responses that Bustinza gave to Fawcett's questions were one syllable answers . . . "Right" . . . "Yes" . . . "OK," as if he really wasn't paying attention to the questions and wanted to get the phone interview over and done with. It's as if Bustinza knew that having Warren take his story so that he could really place himself into the incident was really a bad idea – especially now that he had been tracked down and was being 'put on the spot' to give his own account. (See Note 530).

[dix] In his book, *Above Top Secret* (1988), author Timothy Good writes that Col. Halt denied that any movie film was taken of the UFO, or that he had ordered Adrian Bustinza to confiscate photographs taken by British policemen. Timothy Good quotes Col. Halt: "That's not true. I suspect time has clouded his memory. I confiscated nothing from anyone — I had no authority to. We were guests in your country. I can tell you that your bobbies wouldn't have probably given them to me if I'd asked." *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* by Timothy Good, (William Morrow & Company, 1988).
[dx]

April 20, 1984 Conversation with Sergeant Bustinza. From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dxi] It is possible that Bustinza was not lying intentionally and believed exactly what he said on these two occasions, and if so, then there is an underlying problem which may point to Bustinza having been messed with when he was debriefed and possibly interrogated as he has claimed – i.e., the implanting of false memories. Either that, or Bustinza is suffering from some form of cognitive dysfunction or memory problem – which could also be related to what he went through as a result of the incident, which would mean he only has this problem when asked to recall what happened that night.

On Sunday June 23, 1992, Peter Robbins had a taped phone conversation with Colonel Halt, and during that conversation, Robbins brings up Adrian Bustinza:

> Peter Robbins: "We have witnesses too. Adrian Bustinza for one."
> Col. Halt then makes several comments: "Ah, not very credible. Be careful." . . . "Adrian's over his head. Adrian doesn't want to do too much." . . . "I can't comment" . . . "But some very funny things have happened, that's all I'm going to say. It's called disinformation. I think you understand it."
> Peter Robbins: "But again it's also called lying, if the disinformation . . ."
> Col. Halt: "Not if one doesn't believe they're lying."
>
> *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, pp. 331 – 332).

[dxii] Adrian Bustinza interviewed by Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn, April 14 to 25, 1984. (For the transcript of these phone interviews, see article, "Bentwaters – *What Do We Do Now?*" by Ray W. Boeche, published in *MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings.* Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.

This is what prompted Ray Boeche to approach a highly-placed USAF records management official at the Pentagon in March 1985, asking if photos had been taken, and was told that some of them – but not all – were fogged. However, Boeche was then told that their records did not show the existence of any photographs at all. (See Note 419).

[dxiii] *Ibid.*

[dxiv] However, Bustinza was being careful when he said, "At some point, *I don't remember when,* Col. Williams arrived at the site," which of course could relate to any time period while Gordon Williams was Wing Commander at Bentwaters, and in fact it is said that Williams did visit the site in the forest in the early morning hours of February 17, 1981, during the UAP incident involving Security Airman, Steve La Plume at the East Gate. (See Chapter 10: *Containment.*)

[dxv] During a phone conversation on June 25, 1992, between Larry Warren and Colonel Halt (tape-recorded and transcribed by Warren's co-author, Peter Robbins), it was in reply to Halt's question, "When were you supposedly out in Tangham [Rendlesham] Forest?" That Warren answered with the following:

> "It was sometime after Christmas but before New Year's Eve 1980. I never knew the exact date. I was in Germany for two days, leading up to [the] three nights of events. I was unaware of the two previous."

Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins
(Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 337).

But, in his mention of being in Germany for two days, Warren was lying to Col. Halt. See below. In fact, there are several examples of Warren's apparent affliction for compulsive lying for no reason in the first paragraphs of his account.

In his book *Left at East Gate,* published in 1997, Larry Warren begins his account of his claimed UFO encounter off-base in the Rendlesham woods by mentioning what he did the morning or afternoon before the incident that evening and clearly determines a date:

> "Early on 28 December, I got away from the base for the day with my roommate, Alabama. We took the base taxi to Ipswich and did some sight-seeing. One of the points of interest was the Corn Exchange, an open market area located in a picturesque section of the city. I wanted to find a music store; I was in the market for a Marshall amplifier and thought I'd get a great deal since they are manufactured in England. We happened into Axe Music on Christchurch Road [Christchurch Street]. After unsuccessfully bargaining with the owner of the store for a few hours, I left."

Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins
(Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 40).

During his 2015 Phenomenon KGRA Radio interview Larry Warren did with hosts John Burroughs and Linda Moulton Howe, Warren said that he thinks it was a Sunday. Also, having stated in his book that he and his roommate "Alabama" had taken the base taxi to Ipswich, this time he says a guy named Jimmy Harper had driven him and two other guys to the "free bus" service at the main entrance to the Woodbridge base (to take the bus to Ipswich from there, as one would assume):

> ". . . I'm thinking it was, uh . . . you know, I never knew the date, the exact day, nowadays, or even then? I mean it was a Sunday, I, I think. There was a lot of things shut down that day, during the day before the shift start. Because in England everything needs to be that way, everything was shut down on a Sunday. [. . .] I'd been transitioning on the flight . . . so that day, we had the day off, and a guy named uh, Harper, Jimmy Harper, had a car and we were gonna go to Ipswich and he was going to drive myself and uh two other guys. [. . .] We went down, we went across through Woodbridge. He was taking us, not to Ipswich but to the free bus they used to have off Woodbridge, uh, on the main entrance to Woodbridge."

Larry Warren, USAF, and Peter Robbins, Author on
Phenomenon KGRA Radio, hosted by John Burroughs
with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton

Howe. Uploaded November 27, 2015.

It is possible that Jimmy Harper may have been the "base taxi driver." However, in the same interview, Warren also says that the music store in Ipswich – which he had mentioned in his book, as "Axe Music," stating that he had bargained with the owner for a few hours over a Marshall amplifier he wanted to purchase – was closed, "shut down."

> "Went in. [to Ipswich] I was . . . we're looking, I was looking for musical equipment, and that's why it must have been a Su . . . a Su . . . [meant to say Sunday]. The place we went to was sh, shut down in Ipswich . . . the music store."
>
> *Larry Warren, USAF, and Peter Robbins, Author* on Phenomenon KGRA Radio, hosted by John Burroughs with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe. Uploaded November 27, 2015.

The fact is, there are no shops in Christchurch Street in Ipswich. It is a normal, residential street. Furthermore, researcher Ronnie Dugdale discovered that no such music shop with that name had ever existed in Ipswich and certainly not in Christchurch Street. Even Peter Robbins, who was Warren's co-author on *Left at East Gate*, brought up Ronnie Dugdale's research on this issue, and said the following in a radio show he did with radio host Sacha Christie:

> ". . . so we have a double lie that I had simply accepted in my initial research of . . . 'Sure okay, you went to this music store, it was named this,' and I really hadn't put together the Sunday closing thing at the time."
>
> *Peter Robbins February 2019*. Sacha Christie talks to Peter Robbins about 'The Larry Warren Fraud.' Uploaded February 17, 2019

Obviously, by 2015 Warren had taken note of the 'closed on Sunday' trading in England at that time in 1980, and knew that he had made a mistake in mentioning this story about the trip to the music shop, which was just superfluous detail, and which is why during the Phenomenon Radio interview, Warren mentioned and gave emphasis to his recollections, that the day the incident began had been a Sunday, and then said that the music shop he went to visit was closed. Ironically, if Warren had kept with his story about visiting a music shop in Ipswich, which was open as he said he had bargained with the owner, then it could have been determined that the day he visited Ipswich was on the day before . . . on Saturday, December 27, when the shops were open – *the very day the incident had been established to have begun.* But the fact was, he couldn't, as it was already down in his book that he had been away on Christmas break for two days in Germany, having flown out there on December 24, (Christmas Eve), and retuning again on Saturday, December 27. 1980.

Quote:

> "The day before Christmas, I left for Germany with my friend Mark. We had met two German girls in London the previous week at Le Beat Route, a club on Greek

> Street. We had gotten along well at the time and the girls invited us to spend the holiday with them and their families near Frankfurt. We had a great time, despite a severe language barrier. However, I think the girls lost interest in Mark and me on the second night. We just sat around and stared at their parents and they at us, while the girls went out with the German boyfriends. On, or about 27 December, we flew back to RAF Mildenhall to begin our shift the next night."
>
> *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 32).

However, in 1998, Warren had confessed to Rendlesham researcher/investigator Georgina Bruni that he had lied about being in Germany to cover up "the fact" that he had been involved in the initial incident – which would have been the first night's events involving SSgt. Penniston and Airman Burroughs – December 25 to 26, 1980.

Quoting Georgina Bruni:

> "Just when I thought I had heard everything, Larry had another surprise in store for me. He was now confessing that he had never been in Germany during the Christmas holidays but had used the trip to cover up the fact that he had been involved in the initial incident. He claimed that if researchers thought he was out of the country then they would not connect him with it." [. . .] "This statement was remarkable, considering he had diligently done everything he could to prove the incident had occurred and especially that he himself was involved. Suddenly, I was expected to believe that he was trying to cover up his involvement in an earlier encounter. I could have gone on for weeks with my questioning but I felt there was no point."
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 103).

Furthermore, in a later interview, Warren increased the dramatics. He is on record as having said that his friend, whom he calls "Alabama," had committed suicide by shooting himself in the head.

[dxvi] *Larry Warren, USAF, and Peter Robbins, Author* on Phenomenon KGRA Radio, hosted by John Burroughs with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe. Uploaded November 27, 2015.

Quoting Burroughs and Warren:

> Burroughs:
> "Once the lightalls were there you got out the vehicle. Englund took off with Colonel Halt . . . what happened?"
>
> Warren:

> "I think he did; it was Halt he went with. And I was with Buzz [Bustinza] and a few other guys, there were other people. We had our flashlights, no weapons . . . went through the woods, and . . . we broke left, and so into the woods. We didn't go straight down that road toward the field . . . uh, like you think you could, but I guess there might have been a fence from what someone tells me, I wouldn't have seen it, it's too dark. [. . .] And, uh, we stop, we go and off to about a hundred yards in the trees, which were very, you could see through them back then as you know, much better than nowadays with all the low stuff on the ground, you could see some activity. And I think that was them at the trees, you know, looking at the marks on the trees, which you hear on the audiotape . . . uh, at a distance, but you could see there was activity going on and it wasn't campers or anything like that. And, um, a lot of the stuff you hear on the Halt tape, was, uh, I heard directly over the radios anyway, which you probably did too."

[dxvii] *Ibid*. Despite whether it was true or not, it is ironic that even though Warren had told Burroughs he had seen him out there in the forest that night – *which could only have been the 'third night' in which Burroughs was also involved*, being (December 27/28) – Burroughs is a proponent of the 'fourth night theory,' as first put forward by Ronnie Dugdale – the theory which suggests Warren and Bustinza had witnessed the events they had later claimed, between the evening of Sunday, December 28 and the early morning hours of Monday, December 29, 1980.

(See, *Linda Moulton Howe and Ronnie Dugdale* Part I and also Part 2, Earthfiles, published January 29, 2018).

Also, although Warren talked about the movie cameras out in the field, he said nothing to Burroughs about having heard that he (Burroughs) had taken photos that night and had his camera and film confiscated, as Warren had claimed in his earlier interviews and published accounts. (See Note 547.) It's also puzzling why, if he had read Warren's accounts, Burroughs did not confront Warren about this when he had the opportunity to.

Also, during his interview with Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe on May 18, 1986, Warren is quoted as having said:

> "You have to remember something if you listen on the tape. Halt was investigating something quite far off from where I described what happened. You hear him walking to a clearing. The clearing he went to was a good half-mile from the clearing where this "aspirin" landing happened with Williams. Halt was not involved. I never knew he was there."
>
> Larry Warren Interview with Linda Moulton Howe and Benton Jamison,
> May 18, 1986, (*Earthfiles.com*).

The fact is, "the clearing" (landing site of the first night's events) is only 300 feet from the spot where Warren said the yellow fog/craft he saw was positioned in the field. And from where they were, Lt.

Col. Halt and his team would certainly have noticed what Warren claims he witnessed, as it is the same field where Halt and his team first saw the yellow-orange-red sphere hovering some ten to fifteen feet off the ground. No matter how one attempts to fit them together, the Warren, Bustinza and Halt/Nevels accounts do not match up, and again a fourth night doesn't fit either, as there can be no doubt that they are all talking about the same night, as other details they witnessed and described had only happened on the third night according to other witness accounts.

[dxviii] Actually, in 1999, Warren told Georgina Bruni a long, convoluted story, which will take up far too much space here, in which he claimed he was present in the forest during the first night's events (December 25/26, 1980) involving SSgt. Jim Penniston and John Burroughs, even though it is written in his book, *Left at East Gate* (1997), that he (Warren) was in Germany at the time from December 24 (Christmas Eve) to December 27. (See Note 515).

(Note by Gary Osborn: I intend to deal with this story in depth in an accompanying article to this book, as it ties in to the information given in Note 23 above). Georgina Bruni writes that over the course of several weeks, she had listened to Larry Warren, and that in an attempt to get the facts right she would go over the details, only to find that the story changed during her conversations with him. (See pages 99 to 102 in Georgina Bruni's 2001 book, *"You Can't Tell the People."*)

[dxix] Quoting researcher and investigative journalist, Linda Moulton Howe:

> "I have done an interview with a mathematician in Connecticut [Benton Jamison] all the way back to 1986 with Larry Warren, and what is interesting is that Larry Warren adds a piece concerning Adrian Bustinza in this way. He said that when he got back to the barracks that he found Adrian Bustinza crying on a bed, a bunk bed. [. . .] and that Adrian then pours out a story, and then Warren says I promised that I would get his story out."
>
> *Linda Moulton Howe and Ronnie Dugdale, Part I, Earthfiles.* Uploaded January 29, 2018.

[dxx] "The Story of Art Wallace" from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).* This is the testimony of Larry Warren, which appears to have been typed up and transcribed by Larry Fawcett.

[dxxi] On page 41 in *Left at East Gate*, Larry Warren writes:

> "At 10:00 P.M., I made my way to the base movie theater and joined the rest of D Flight. We would be driven to the flight line by bus and dropped off at Central Security Control. Before we got our posting for the night, we had to be inspected to determine if we were fit for duty. This procedure is called guard mount and enables the flight chief to check out the general condition of the security police. They look for signs of a cop being intoxicated (we were not allowed to drink alcohol twenty-four hours before our shift), on narcotics (legal or illegal), or otherwise impaired."

Warren writes that the flight chief makes the check during Guard Mount. In his interview on *Earth*

Mysteries News with Sid Goldberg, August 21, 2016, Larry Warren says, *". . . Robert Ball my flight chief was there . . ."* meaning he was there during the night of the incident and also meaning that MSgt. Ball was the flight chief. When asked who the Flight Chief was during his interview with Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe on May 18, 1986, Warren answers, "Sgt. Bobbie Ball." (Larry Warren Interview with Linda Moulton Howe and Benton Jamison, May 18, 1986, *Earthfiles.com*).

During his 2015 interview on Phenomenon KGRA Radio, Warren says: *". . . in guard mount, Bob Ball was there."* (*Larry Warren, USAF, and Peter Robbins, Author* on Phenomenon KGRA Radio, hosted by John Burroughs with Earthfiles Reporter and Editor Linda Moulton Howe. Uploaded November 27, 2015).

As we had already noted in the chapter, *"It's Back,"* based on what Georgina Bruni was told by Adrian Bustinza in 1998, and which was included in her 2001 book, *"You Can't Tell the People,"* Georgina writes that during the night Sgt. Adrian Bustinza was involved, Bustinza had picked up Master Sergeant Bobby Ball from his home on the Woodbridge base, and it is said that Lt. Col. Halt had ordered this. This is mentioned as if MSgt. Bob Ball was NOT on duty that night and Georgina says this herself, even though Halt says he was told by Major Zickler that his ON-DUTY NCO, MSgt. Ball, would pick him up from his home and accompany him out into the forest.

If, as Warren says, MSgt. Ball was on duty as the flight chief that night and was present at the 10:00 p.m. guard mount before he (Warren) was stationed at his post when his shift began at 11:30 p.m., *then why was it necessary for MSgt. Ball to have been picked up from his home on the Woodbridge base to then pick up Halt?* Again, MSgt. Ball was picked up from his home on Woodbridge base between 11:00 and 11:30 p.m., *so how could he have been doing guard mount at 10:00 p.m.?*

It should also be acknowledged that Adrian Bustinza, who was on D-Flight, had told Ray Boeche that MSgt. Ball was his 'flight chief,' which again, should mean that Ball was on duty with D-Flight. These discrepancies have never been explained satisfactorily, let alone even pointed out and acknowledged.

[dxxii] Researcher and writer Sacha Christie writes that in Warren's 1997 book, *Left At East Gate,* co-authored with Peter Robbins, that just before things were starting to happen and when he was alone at his post, Warren had written that "the guard mount was boring as usual." The exact words in the book are, *"As usual, guard mount was uneventful that night."* Sacha then rightly points out that Warren was on his very first shift ever after arriving at Bentwaters, so how would he know it was boring [uneventful] as usual? As Sacha said . . . why would Warren even say that unless he wanted to give the impression that he had been at Bentwaters longer than he was? *"Why hide the fact it was his first shift?"* (Source: "Left Out at East Gate. The Truth about Adrian Bustinza and Larry Warren" by Sacha Christie, an article posted on her *Infomaniac Housewife* blog page on Wednesday, 18 May 2016).
[dxxiii]

So, Warren says, MSgt. Ball was on duty as the 'Shift Commander' that night, and in another interview Warren says MSgt. Ball was his 'flight chief' present at guard mount. (See Note 521 above.)

I asked Jim Penniston whether MSgt. Ball could have been both the Flight Chief AND the Shift Commander on the third night. Jim Penniston answered:

> No. A 'Flight Chief' cannot also be a 'Shift Commander' . . . a Flight Chief *works for* a Shift Commander.
> Captain Verrano would have been the Shift Commander on telephone or radio stand-by if he happened to have been vacant for any reason. The flights could still work without one physically being on shift in uniform.

[dxxiv] During his phone conversation with reporter Keith Beabey on the evening of September 28, 1983, Larry Warren says, "I was just on a post, I just stood still for seven hours" . . . which was an odd thing

to say, as this would mean that he would have missed the incident he says he was involved in – unless Warren said, or meant that *he was supposed to have stood still for seven hours,* which would have been his seven-hour shift from 11:30 p.m., to 6:30 a.m.

Source: Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine,* No. 11, December 2012.

[dxxv] *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 41). The 'mean' temperature in the Rendlesham Forest area on the night of December, 27, 1980, was 1.5ºC, which converts to 34.7ºF . . . hardly in the forties, and Warren's descriptions do not match the kind of stark weather Col. Halt had reported.

[dxxvi] *Ibid,* p. 41.

[dxxvii]

In the book, *Left at East Gate* (1997), Warren says the *post was deactivated,* which means that no one took Warren's place at the post, as he had said in previous interviews, or had manned it after he was relieved from his position there.

Quoting Larry Warren:

> "Five minutes later, a security-police pickup truck arrived at my post. Sergeant Adrian Bustinza was driving with Second Lieutenant Englund next to him; two other SPs were in the bed of the truck. The lieutenant told me to announce over the Motorola that I was being relieved from my post. I waited for clearance from Central Security Control; they acknowledged my request, and the post was deactivated."
>
> *Left at East Gate,* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 41).

[dxxviii] Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine,* No. 11, December 2012.

[dxxix]

In Contact. (Live TV documentary) with Larry Warren & Peter Robbins, 1993.

[dxxx] "The Story of Art Wallace" from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

Who is the Captain that Warren mentions?

In his phone conversation with Adrian Bustinza on April 20, 1984, Larry Fawcett already had the transcript of Larry Warren's testimony and what Warren had told him from memory, and was therefore checking what Warren had told him with Bustinza, whom he refers to as "Sgt. Busty." Fawcett told Bustinza that Larry had said there was "something screwy" about the lightalls not having been filled up when they had been, and that either Lieutenant Englund or Captain Verrano was there complaining about it – hence the "Captain" mentioned by Warren, who for some reason was left unnamed. Bustinza then said that Lieutenant Englund was the one that was there as Captain Verrano was on day-shift at that time.

However, later in the same interview, Fawcett goes through a short list of names, asking if each of the officers or personnel had been there that night, and he again asks Bustinza if Captain Verrano had been there, and Bustinza answered, *"Captain Verrano, yeah, station commander."* It's not sure if Bustinza had registered the fact that Fawcett was asking him if Verrano was there or not, as Bustinza's answer seemed to have been just an acknowledgement of who Verrano was.

Based on what Warren had said in his testimony, Fawcett then told Bustinza that he had heard from Warren that the lightalls had been filled and Englund kept saying they weren't or something to that effect.

Bustinza's response was, "Right."

Fawcett continued: "He [Warren] said the damned things were filled to overflowing and they kept saying they weren't filled. Is that right?"

Bustinza again, answered, "Yes, that's correct."

As mentioned in Note 16, it is obvious that Bustinza was just agreeing with Fawcett and not really thinking about the questions Fawcett was asking, as Bustinza just wanted to get the phone interview over and done with quickly. (See also Note 76 below.) As Boeche had said, Bustinza appeared to be frightened and traumatized. So, therefore, we cannot really trust Bustinza's answers in this interview at that time, and neither can we trust his answers in the interviews he did with Ray Boeche and Scott Colborn around the same time.

In the interview he did with Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe on May 18. 1986, Larry Warren names Mike Verrano as being the Captain who was angry about the lightalls not being filled properly at the motor pool, although his name is misspelled as "Verona." (Larry Warren Interview with Linda Moulton Howe and Benton Jamison, May 18, 1986, *Earthfiles.com*).

[dxxxi] Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dxxxii] "*The Story of Art Wallace,"* from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dxxxiii] *New Light on Rendlesham Forest* (1980). Interview with Witness Larry Warren by Omar Fowler, Flying Saucer Review Consultant, 1994.

[dxxxiv] "An Airman's Story." *News of the World,* October 2, 1983.

[dxxxv] Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dxxxvi] *Left at East Gate*, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 44).

[dxxxvii] See: *Never Before Revealed In Full: 1st Ever Written Evidence on RAF Bentwaters*. Uploaded August 27, 2016.

[dxxxviii] "*The Story of Art Wallace,"* from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).* The fact that Warren brings this up in his account and confuses both Alaska and California is an interesting detail. Following is part of the phone discussion/interview that Larry Fawcett had with Adrian Bustinza on April 20, 1984:

> Larry Fawcett: "Larry said you made a comment, and you said something like, "Oh, no, not again!" And Larry said, "What do you mean?" And you said, "I went through this." See, Larry had it mixed up though. He said, "I went through this in Alaska once before." [Fawcett refers to what Warren claims Bustinza had told him while out in the field].
>
> Adrian Bustinza: *"Yeah, OK. It wasn't Alaska. When I was talking to them and I was telling them about it, I had*

just come from Alaska TDY.
Fawcett: "Yeah."
Bustinza: "*It was in California where it actually happened.*"
Fawcett: "Okay, that was at Davis?"
Bustinza: "*Mather Air Force Base. Yeah.*"

April 20, 1984 Conversation with Sergeant Bustinza.
From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

It is clear from this small detail, and from what Bustinza told Fawcett, that Bustinza had told Larry Warren and others about this UFO incident beforehand. Bustinza says: "When I was talking to THEM and I was telling THEM about it." This doesn't seem to have been mentioned out in the field. This was obviously discussed before Warren had then appropriated Sgt. Adrian Bustinza's account as his own, but like the researchers of the case, Warren was confused and had "mixed-up" what Bustinza had told him concerning his earlier UFO sighting while stationed at Mather Air Force Base, Sacramento County, California, after having said he had been stationed in Alaska on temporary duty after the incident at Mather AFB and before being assigned to RAF Bentwaters. (Bustinza was assigned to the USAF listening station on the Seward Peninsula, adjacent to the village of Wales in Alaska, fifty miles from Siberia, Russia across the Bering Strait).

According to what Adrian Bustinza told Georgina Bruni in 1998, it was in the course of his tour at Mather AFB, California, that Bustinza encountered a UFO incident, which occurred during a midnight shift when he and other personnel witnessed the object hovering over the base near the weapons storage area (Bruni, p. 187).

[dxxxix] *Left at East Gate*, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 44). Again, it is unlikely that Bustinza would have mentioned Alaska if the UFO incident he had witnessed was while he was stationed at Mather Air Force base in California. In such a situation, he certainly would not have wasted time whispering about his time at the base in Alaska, which was where he was stationed before being posted to RAF Bentwaters. It is apparent that Warren had mixed up what Sgt. Bustinza had told him and others earlier about the bases he had been stationed at before his tour of duty at Bentwaters in the UK and the UFO incident while at Mather AFB, California.

[dxl] "An Airman's Story." *News of the World*, October 2, 1983.

[dxli] "The Story of Art Wallace," from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dxlii] Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dxliii] *Clear Intent: The Government Coverup of the UFO Experience* by Lawrence Fawcett and Barry J. Greenwood (Prentice Hall Direct, May 1984). Again, Warren is quoted as having said the fog was hovering off the ground. During the interview with Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe on May 18, 1986, Warren mentions the circle of fog, and is quoted as having said:

> "It was on the ground! People always said it floated, but it was not a solid thing. It was like a circle of fog! It was green and yellow and I always said it was 12 inches off the ground, but I meant it was 12 inches in height!"

Larry Warren Interview with Linda Moulton Howe and Benton Jamison,
May 18, 1986, (*Earthfiles.com*).

[dxliv] *New Light on Rendlesham Forest* (1980). Interview with Witness Larry Warren by Omar Fowler, Flying Saucer Review Consultant, 1994.
[dxlv]

Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 44).
[dxlvi]

Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dxlvii] During his phone conversation with Keith Beabey on September 28, 1980 – the same day his testimony for "The Airman's Story" was given to reporter Bob Smith – Warren was taped saying:

> *"I knew another security policeman who had a camera. The very next day they went up to his room and took the camera film."*
> Keith Beabey: "OK."
> Larry Warren: *"He had a nervous breakdown anyway"* (Laughs).
>
> Transcript of the taped conversation between Larry Warren and Keith Beabey,
> September 28, 1983, recorded by Dot Street and transcribed by Ronnie Dugdale.

Warren is obviously talking about Airman John Burroughs because in "The Art Wallace Story" testimony Warren states the following:

> "Also the previous night I found out that Senior Airman John Burrows [sic] who happened to have been out there at that time who was on C Flight and had seen these objects earlier and stayed out there who was in fact off duty at the time had taken pictures with his own camera of the events that happened. He had his camera taken away some people saw them come up into his room and take the camera away with the film."
>
> "The Story of Art Wallace." From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org*).

Obviously, Warren wasn't aware that Burroughs didn't have a room at the base and was living off-base in the town of Ipswich. In any case, it is obvious that again, Warren had got this little snippet of information from Sgt. Adrian Bustinza, as Bustinza had told Larry Fawcett that one of the guys told him that he had taken a picture.

Quoting Bustinza:

> "They confiscated the cameras from some of the

personnel there and the film. I can't remember if it's Burroughs or the other guy . . . ."

April 20, 1984 Conversation with Sergeant Bustinza. From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dxlviii] Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine,* No. 11, December 2012.

[dxlix] *Ibid.*

[dl]

Source: Japanese NTV Special documentary about the Rendlesham UFO incident, October 1984.

[dli]

Source: *In Contact*. (Live TV documentary) with Larry Warren & Peter Robbins, 1993.

[dlii]

Clear Intent: The Government Coverup of the UFO Experience by Lawrence Fawcett and Barry J. Greenwood (Prentice Hall Direct, May 1984).

[dliii]

Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 45).

[dliv]

"The Story of Art Wallace," from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dlv]

New Light on Rendlesham Forest (1980). Interview with Witness Larry Warren by Omar Fowler, Flying Saucer Review Consultant, 1994.

[dlvi]

Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine,* No. 11, December 2012.

[dlvii]

Ibid.

[dlviii]

Ibid.

[dlix]

"The Story of Art Wallace," from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dlx]

April 20, 1984 Conversation with Sergeant Bustinza. From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dlxi]

Ibid.

[dlxii]

Ibid.

[dlxiii]

April 20, 1984 Conversation with Sergeant Bustinza. From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dlxiv]

"An Airman's Story." *News of the World,* October 2, 1983.

[dlxv]

"The Story of Art Wallace," from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dlxvi]

Adrian Bustinza, FULL radio interview on the Rendlesham incident, Published August 29, 2015.

During the interview Warren did with Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe on May 18, 1986, Warren is quoted as having said:

> "We got out to the trees very close and I could see a guy sitting next to a tree. I believe this might have been John Burroughs. I don't know. He was leaning against the tree, not broken down quivering like with a nervous breakdown. He was just sitting there next to the tree. Sgt. Bobbie Ball was over with him and they are all talking. Sgt. Ball was trying to console the guy, 'It's alright.' It seemed like some people knew what was going on."
>
> Larry Warren Interview with Linda Moulton Howe and Benton Jamison,
> May 18, 1986, (*Earthfiles.com*).

However, as we know, Burroughs himself said that wasn't allowed to go forward into the field until the investigation had almost ended, having been ordered by Lt. Col. Halt to remain at the staging area with the vehicles.

During the hypnosis session conducted by Fred Max on October 17, 1983, Warren is recorded saying, "We're walking through the stuff on the ground – it sticks (mud). John's over there." Max asks, "John who?" Warren replies, "Blonde person. He's pretty messed up. He isn't standing. We're watching." Max: "What is he doing on the ground?" Warren: "Holding his head." Max: "Why?" Warren: "He's crying." Max: "Crying because he's scared?" Warren: "Seems so."

John Burroughs is dark haired and at that time he sported a black moustache so he could hardly be described as blonde. It's evident just how messed-up, irregular and inconsistent Warren's account is of what he claims he witnessed.

[dlxvii] Quote: *"To make a long story short we split into five man groups."* Source: *In Contact*, (Live TV documentary) with Larry Warren & Peter Robbins, 1993.

[dlxviii] The issue about Major Zickler being present is a good example of how twisted and confusing these accounts are with the witnesses saying one thing and then saying the complete opposite.

In *Left at East Gate,* Warren writes that after they had arrived at the staging area, the Chief of Security Police (Major Malcolm Zickler) had arrived at the site and that when he exited the vehicle he stepped from his car into a large puddle of mud. In fact, this incident was brought up by Larry Fawcett when he spoke on the phone with Adrian Bustinza on April 20, 1984. Larry Fawcett, who was checking Warren's story, tells Bustinza that Warren had said there was a Major Zickler there also. Bustinza answered, *"Yes, that was our squadron commander,"* but like the other answers he had given, it isn't certain that Bustinza had actually answered Fawcett in saying Zickler was actually there. It is as if Bustinza was being careful in just acknowledging that he knew who Zickler was by just saying, yes, he was his Squadron Commander. Fawcett then continues with what Warren had told him:

> Fawcett: "In fact, Larry said when he stepped out of the Jeep he fell into mud up to his waist."
> Adrian Bustinza: *"True."*
> Fawcett: "Everybody was laughing."
> Bustinza: *"Yeah."*

However, when Georgina Bruni interviewed Adrian Bustinza in 1998 and asked him about this

incident, and also asked if he remembered seeing Major Zickler at the site, *she writes that not only was Bustinza certain that Zickler was NOT present,* but that Bustinza later explained that it was not Zickler who had fallen in the mud, *but himself* – adding that Bustinza had actually slipped on a pile of manure after the UFO had taken off when Halt's patrol were chasing it through the forest. Bustinza said that the men had made fun of him for days afterwards (Bruni, p. 190). This incident wasn't when the UFO had taken off. (See Note 504 above where Bustinza mentions his mishap with the manure after chasing the light in the forest while trying to catching up with Halt's patrol and being helped up to then see the yellow-mist-like object in the clearing.)

If true, then it's likely that Warren had simply taken Bustinza's story and included Zickler with it to make fun of the Security Police Squadron Commander – sticking it to him for some reason – which is why Warren said Zickler was there that night.

Note that Bustinza had told Georgina Bruni that he was certain Zickler was not present that night. However, at another point in the phone conversation Bustinza had with Larry Fawcett, Fawcett said that Larry Warren had told him that he could also hear helicopters over above. Bustinza answered with, "Yes, a squadron, pararescue squadron was activated."

Larry Fawcett: "Pararescue. Where were they from? Woodbridge?"

Adrian Bustinza: *"Woodbridge, they weren't very far away as a matter of fact."*

Fawcett: "Do you know how many were up at the time?"

Bustinza: *"I recall Major Zickler said, scramble two, I believe he said."*

Fawcett: "Two?"

Bustinza: *"Two. I think that's what he prescribed, two."*

April 20, 1984 Conversation with Sergeant Bustinza. From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org*).

[dlxix] As mentioned, both Col. Halt and Monroe Nevels deny most strongly that nothing military was flying in the sky during the 'third night' they were involved, and not on any night during these events. It would seem that the inclusion of Major Zickler and helicopters flying above in Bustinza's account is part of a false memory implanted during his interrogations, and that despite what he experienced and witnessed on the night he was involved, it's highly probable that Bustinza was simply one of the personnel chosen for this as part of the containment program. Having had his memory messed with would explain why Bustinza will vacillate between one answer and another, as if he isn't sure, and will often contradict himself.

Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dlxx] According to Col. Halt, the only Disaster Preparedness technician with a Geiger counter out there that night was SSgt. Monroe Nevels, and he was also the only person who used a camera.

[dlxxi] *Clear Intent: The Government Coverup of the UFO Experience* by Lawrence Fawcett and Barry J. Greenwood (Prentice Hall Direct, May 1984).

[dlxxii] During his phone conversation with reporter Keith Beabey, Larry Warren says: "We done this three or four times, and when we stopped altogether, a green light started at the top of the craft and came down. I can only describe it as like a video game but it was on the ship itself."

Keith Beabey: "It shone down did it?"
Larry Warren: *"No, No. It came right down the side of the craft."*
Keith Beabey: "Like a ball of light?"
Larry Warren: *"No, not really. It was like a very unsteady light greenish light, not a round light like you see in a video game. It came down the side right where the heads of the shadows were."*
Keith Beabey: "Yes."
Larry Warren: *"And it would come to each head and when it got to the last one. That's really all I remember. I woke up in my room the next morning, oh, about five-thirty to six, as my roommate was leaving. I was still in uniform with mud up to my ankles, and he said I was brought in by some people about an hour or so before maybe an hour and half."*

Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dlxxiii] In her book, Georgina Bruni writes that she heard a cassette tape recording made by Dot Street of a phone call Dot had with Larry Warren, where Warren confessed to Dot Street that the hypnosis session he underwent in October 1983 had not been genuine, because unbeknown to the hypnotist, he had not been fully hypnotized. In other words: He had faked it. Warren's excuse was that he had gone along with the pretense of being hypnotized because someone had paid for the session and they had said words to the effect that, 'it better be good.' As mentioned in Note 33 in the end notes of Chapter 11: *Lifeline*, Jinishi Yaoi, the producer of NTV, had arranged for Warren to undergo hypnotic regression with Pat Gegleardo [Patricia Sable], a respected psychic who had worked with the Connecticut police (Bruni, p. 97). If true, then it may have been Yaoi who paid for the session. Other sources confuse this early hypnosis session with the session conducted by hypnotist Fred Max on October 17, 1983, who also hypnotized Warren, as arranged by Larry Fawcett. It is during this hypnosis session that Warren was recorded saying: *"Funny, there's three of them* [small alien beings] *in front of Col. Williams and four in front of us" . . .* making seven beings in total. (See *Hypnosis Session October 17, 1983, conducted by Fred Max and organized by Larry Fawcett* By Sacha Christie, Thursday, 8 February 2018).

In any case, after one of these sessions and when Warren was apparently 'woken up' out of the hypnosis, Warren is recorded having said, *"That is weird. That is the strangest thing. There is no drug that does this stuff, I'll tell you guys.* [. . .] *I feel like I was really there."*

While supposedly hypnotized by Fred Max, Warren is recorded saying, *"Major Zickler fell in the mud. He's a mess."* While under hypnosis with hypnotist Pat Gegleardo, Warren says, *"The Commander's there. I fell in the mud."* (See transcript of hypnosis on *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org.*) So now Warren is the person who fell in the mud, after he had said it was Major Zickler who had this mishap, and which Bustinza had said was him all along. (See Note 568 above.)

When Warren is asked by hypnotist Pat Gegleardo how many personnel were out there, he says,

"One hundred and fifty maybe?" and adds that the Base Commander was there, who would have been Colonel Conrad. He then says he sees what he thinks are kids, when he is referring to the beings he claims he saw, and says that Adrian (Bustinza) was crying, telling him "they're not walking." He then says he saw three beings dressed in a shiny silver metal and brown material, and they were next to each other, suspended a foot in the air. Warren adds that they moved towards "Williams" – obviously confusing the Wing Commander with the Base Commander. Warren then says that Captain Verrano escorts him and other personnel back to where the vehicles and armory truck is parked. The hypnotist asks Warren to tell him about the underground facility, but Warren says he doesn't think he saw it, but Bustinza did, as he was drugged and taken there two days after, Warren adding that Bustinza had told him this.

[dlxxiv] *Clear Intent: The Government Coverup of the UFO Experience* by Lawrence Fawcett and Barry J. Greenwood (Prentice Hall Direct, May 1984).

[dlxxv] In a released unclassified document found in the files of Barry Greenwood is this amusing paragraph attributed to Victor L. Warzinski, Captain, USAF Chief, Public Affairs Division, August 1984, who was obviously replying to a letter inquiring into the whereabouts of John Burroughs:

> "Unknown. Sgt. Burroughs is no longer assigned to this installation. {Incidentally, we think Sgt. Burroughs is the anonymous airman who gave the interesting account to the press of seeing little silver men, discussions between the silver men and USAF people, dancing balls of light on people's foreheads, and blacking out to unexplainably awaken caked in mud in his dorm room to be later visited by black-coated hush men. etc}."
>
> From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

.

[dlxxvi] "The Story of Art Wallace," from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dlxxvii]

"An Airman's Story." *News of the World*, October 2, 1983.

[dlxxviii]

Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dlxxix]

"The Story of Art Wallace," from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dlxxx]

Ibid.

[dlxxxi]

Quoting Larry Warren: *"My first impression is that I thought they were children, because my mind wouldn't accept what I was seeing. I thought there were children in snowsuits."* *CNN Special Assignment, "UFO – The Bentwaters Incident,"* news-documentary, hosted and produced by Chuck DeCaro, recorded during autumn 1984, and first televised between January 23 to 27, 1985.

[dlxxxii] *Ibid.*

[dlxxxiii]

April 20, 1984 Conversation with Sergeant Bustinza. From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood,*

CUFOS Org).
[dlxxxiv]

Ibid. Following is part of the taped and transcripted phone conversation Larry Fawcett had with Adrian Bustinza on April 20, 1984:

> Fawcett: "You couldn't see nobody?"
> Bustinza: *"I couldn't see what, I mean, who he was talking to, and for a minute there I thought everybody there was going crazy here or something, you know. And I do remember him saying he would contact the electronics division, which would be CRF, I think it was, the call letters for the group. And they would possibly have to get the part from another world. And I just looked at, I couldn't hold my, you know. Who are you talking to, what are you talking about, you know?"*
> Fawcett: "Right."
> Bustinza: *"It was like, when something like that's happening right before your eyes, you want to try to keep track of everything, but it's hard because everything is happening so fast."*
> Fawcett: "Yeah."

[dlxxxv] *Ibid.*
[dlxxxvi]

Ibid.
[dlxxxvii]

Ibid. Fawcett then told Bustinza that according to what he had heard from Warren, they flew a piece in from Germany, and it had landed at Bentwaters, asking him if he remembered it. Bustinza's reply was, "Yeah. When the plane flew in, I remember they called for security right off the bat. And I happened to be on duty, and I set the security."

> Fawcett: "Was that the same day?"
> Bustinza: "*No, because we had been working days then. It was in the swing, so it had to be about three or four days later. Because then we went on three-day break."*
> Fawcett: "Well, then, how long was that machine there then?
> Bustinza: *"I really don't know. I mean, as far as out in the field?"*
> Fawcett: "Yeah."
> Bustinza: *"When we came in contact with it. Two nights."*
> Fawcett: "Two nights it was there."
> Bustinza: *"Uh-huh. I went on my three days off after that."*

As we can see, Bustinza's story lacks rational logic, and it seems as if Bustinza was simply making it up as he went along, as there is no collaborating witness testimony that a craft from another world had sat out in the forest for three or four days waiting for a part to be flown in from Germany.

Fawcett then asks, “What makes you think that airplane that came in from Germany had parts of that machine?” Bustinza then answered, “Well, because I’ve never seen a C-130 come in and get security the way this plane got security. Planes are constantly coming in and out, and C-130s always landed at Woodbridge. Next thing, we got top aid security on it, and guess who gets called?”

If nothing else, it just shows how this story was growing.

[dlxxxviii] In *Left at East Gate* (1997) Larry Warren wrote that the *News of the World* story was “distorted beyond belief,” even though it is based on what he told reporter Bob Smith. This quote is placed as if in reference to the first published story on October 2, 1983. However, it is evident that by the time he was writing his book with Peter Robins, Warren had become embarrassed with the updated story given in the *News of the World* on November 6, 1983, with the ridiculous headline, “Bug-Eyed Aliens Greet Air Chief” – the details of which were based on what he said during his “hypnosis,” conducted by Fred Max by all accounts and where the story took a turn more in line with the containment story that J. D. Ingalls (Steve Roberts), had been spreading.

[dlxxxix]

Left at East Gate, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 46).

[dxc]

Source: *Never Before Revealed In Full: 1st Ever Written Evidence on RAF Bentwaters*. Uploaded August 27, 2016.

In Warren’s interview with Ben Jamison and Linda Moulton Howe on May 18, 1986, Warren includes both the green ball and the golden ball in his account, not mentioning his earlier claim that he had blacked out, as this was a lie he had told to end his account early so that he didn’t have to mention the alien beings he claims to have seen.

[dxci]

Ibid, p. 47.

[dxcii]

“You Can’t Tell the People”: The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 89). Bustinza’s words that “after the incident Larry was very upset and paranoid, and that he had to try to calm him down,” is in stark contrast to Warren’s account to Linda Moulton Howe and Ben Jamison on May 18, 1986, saying that when he got to the barracks he found Bustinza crying on the bunk bed and that after listening to what Bustinza had to say about the incident, he promised to get his story out to the public. (See also Note 16 above.)

> Jamison/Howe: “OK, LET’S GO BACK TO BUSTINZA. HE SITS DOWN ON THE BED AND YOU ARE SITTING IN A CHAIR NEAR HIM. HOW DID HE START?”
> Larry Warren: “He was crying! He was crying, a grown man crying telling me these things.”
> “HE STARTS OUT CRYING LIKE HE HAD BEEN HOLDING SOMETHING IN?”
> “Yes, it was like so frustrating to him. He said, ‘I want to get out of here. I’m either going to kill someone or they are going to kill me before it’s over.’ Apparently, Bustinza pulled a knife on a black Lieutenant (Bonnie Tamplin?) who was pressuring him about something. He flipped and pulled a knife on her.”
> “BUSTINZA PULLED A KNIFE ON A BLACK LIEUTENANT?”

> "Yes, he told me this."
> "THE LIEUTENANT WAS PRESSURING BUSTINZA TO KEEP QUIET?"
> "Something. I don't recall. I've told you all I remember about that conversation. There was so much to it. It was emotionally charged and Adrian even had me on the border of tears because after having the experience (in Rendlesham Forest), Adrian is laying on to me that I'm sitting on top of an alien base here on Earth (that RAF Bentwaters/Woodbridge would be the surface above an underground, non-human controlled base). I had no reason to disbelieve that the aliens are here. Adrian told me exactly where the underground facility is (near RAF Bentwaters). I told Larry Fawcett, 'I have to fess up here – I did not experience the underground facility firsthand. It was Bustinza's story.' Larry Fawcett said, 'OK'."
>
> Larry Warren Interview with Linda Moulton Howe and Benton Jamison, May 18, 1986, (*Earthfiles.com*).

If true, then Bustinza's incident with Lt. Bonnie Tamplin would have been after the third night's events, and it is said that Bonnie Tamplin had immediately left the base after the second night's events in which she was involved and wasn't seen on the base again. Note that Warren is quoted saying that he did not experience the underground facility "firsthand," even though he gives an account of visiting the underground facility in *Left and East Gate* published some ten years after this interview. (See Chapter 14: *The 'Hold Forth' Years*).

[dxciii] In his article, "It Didn't Crash, It Landed" (2012), Ronnie Dugdale informs us that Adrian Bustinza had made a comment in a posted message on John Burroughs' Facebook page (undated), saying that when he (Bustinza) talked to Larry Warren he felt that Warren must have recorded their conversation because of what Larry was claiming *had really happened to him*:

> Bustinza: "He says a lot of things about the incident I know I told him. So this is why I believe and know he used a lot of my recollection. I told him everything. I think he may have recorded everything. I just don't see how he remembers everything."
>
> "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dxciv]

Linda Moulton Howe and Ronnie Dugdale Part I, Phenomenon KGRA Radio presented on *Earthfiles.* Uploaded January 29, 2018.

[dxcv]

Ibid.

[dxcvi]

Ibid.

[dxcvii] During the Phenomenon KGRA Radio show with guests A.L. Ward who hypnotized Burroughs on

November 11, 1988, and hypnotherapist, Melinda Vail, who hypnotized Burroughs 2008, host Linda Moulton Howe read out some of the transcript from John Burroughs' hypnosis session with hypnotherapist A.L. Ward, concerning Burrough's alleged incident with Sgt. Bustinza.:

> A.L. Ward: "JOHN, YOU TOUCHED AN OBJECT THAT YOU BELIEVED TO BE EXTRATERRESTRIAL, NOT OF THIS EARTH. IS THAT TRUE OR NOT?"
> Burroughs: "All I know, I was in one spot and I was running and the guy next to me fell (Adrian Sgt. Bustinza).
> And I was in another spot, and I was in the air."
> A.L Ward: "HOW COULD YOU BE IN THE AIR?"
> Burroughs: "I don't know."
> "HOW FAR OFF THE GROUND?"
> "I don't know. My body was being controlled."
> "LIFTED?"
> "Yes, but I never felt that."
> "WERE YOU UPRIGHT OR HORIZONTAL?"
> "I don't know."
> "YOU WERE JUST IN THE AIR?"
> "Yes."
> "WERE YOU FRIGHTENED?"
> "No."
> "DID IT FEEL GOOD?"
> "I didn't feel like myself."
> "DID IT FEEL LIKE YOUR WHOLE BODY WAS WITH YOU, YOUR WHOLE BODY WAS IN THE AIR?"
> "No, it did not feel like my whole body."
> "JUST YOUR MIND WAS IN THE AIR?"
> "I don't know. I feel like I'm not myself. I feel like I'm not within myself right now."
>
> *Al Ward and Melinda Vail,* Phenomenon KGRA Radio, May 25, 2017.)

[dxcviii] *Ibid.*
[dxcix]

Quoting Linda Moulton Howe:

> "John Burroughs to this day, the only man in that entire saga, from the outside people who were there said on the first night John Burroughs tried to either jump up on a flying saucer or was lifted in a beam of light. That's December twenty-six. The twenty-eighth, one of his colleagues said, that he personally fell to the ground and watched a red, orange light come and engulf John Burroughs, whose feet left the ground. There is no memory in John Burroughs' mind of anything except

going towards lights."

Linda Mouton Howe has Astounding Information on Alien Encounters. November 2018.

On the first night, it is clear from Jim Penniston's account that Burroughs did nothing of the sort; he was immobile while the craft was on the ground, so it's puzzling why this rumor is still being touted as a possibility. Also, it was not a flying saucer. This is a fine example as to why Jim Penniston felt it right to distance himself from Linda Howe after her book *Glimpses of Other Realities Vol II* was published with transcripted extracts of his hypnosis session. She had described the craft that Jim Penniston had encountered as being disk-shaped.

As for the what happened on December 28, we only have the word of "his colleague," Adrian Bustinza on this claimed incident, as Burroughs just doesn't remember anything, except going towards lights, as Howe had said, and as Burroughs had reported after being given the go-ahead by Lt. Col. Halt to go forward from the Staging area, and only remembers that which emerged while he underwent hypnosis on November 11, 1988, which was very little – although he did say he left the ground and was in the air. (See Note 597 above.) Again, this is just another anecdotal tale that has been touted ever since Bustinza had told Burroughs what he says he remembered, which seems to support what Burroughs remembers, but going by Bustinza's accounts he could hardly be called on as a credible and dependable witness.

[dc] John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black.* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

[dci] *In Contact.* (Live TV documentary) with Larry Warren & Peter Robbins, 1993.

[dcii] *Left at East Gate*, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (Marlowe & Company, 1997, p. 46).

[dciii] "The Story of Art Wallace," from the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dciv] Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dcv] Apparently, during one of Warren's conversations with Dot Street and Larry Fawcett months before the Rendlesham Incident was made public in the *News of the World*, Warren is reported as having said *"Get a hold of Bustinza, he'll tell you what happened. Once they get a hold of Bustinza, I'll come out."* (Bruni pp. 97 – 98). As mentioned in Note 27 above, Larry Warren admitted to Linda Moulton Howe and Benton (Ben) Jamison that he had taken Sgt. Adrian Bustinza's account and added it to his own. This conversation, which took place on May 18, 1986 was recorded:

> Larry Warren: *"He* [Bustinza] *told me, look, you're getting out. Tell this and when I get out, we'll go to the newspapers. That's at least what we thought then."* I said, *'Well, I'll do it as my first hand, but you've got to back me up as soon as it comes out and tell what happened in details."*

Linda Moulton Howe and Ronnie Dugdale, Part I, Earthfiles. Uploaded January 29, 2018.

Again, this is possibly why Warren had initially ended his account quickly with his "black out." In effect, he was 'blacking out' the rest of the account, as he knew that he needed Adrian Bustinza to come forward and to fill in the rest of the story and the details of what happened next – especially concerning Bustinza's story about being taken down to an underground facility under the base from his own account, and seeing aliens there – therefore giving his description of what they looked like. This later came out when Georgina Bruni interviewed Adrian Bustinza in 1998 for her book (see Chapter 15: *The 'Hold Forth' Years*). However, Warren was really depending on a person who could not keep to a straight story anyway, and at this time Bustinza had turned his back on supporting Warren, as Bustinza first said he didn't want to talk about the "underground facility" part of the story when Fawcett confronted him with it and then blatantly denied it.

Larry Fawcett:
"Larry said that either that day or the next day, he got a call to go outside his barracks. That he would be picked up by an automobile, and him, and I believe he said, three or four other guys were out there. Now this vehicle pulls up. Now here's where it gets crazy. This vehicle pulls up and a couple of Chinese-looking guys get out, as he describes them. Oriental types, and he's told to get into the back of the vehicle; he says it was very strange inside. The only way he could describe it, you ever see the green lights from the dash? was like this vehicle. He got inside the vehicle, and they started to drive, and the next thing he knew he was underground somewhere. I don't know if you know any of this. Are you there?"

Adrian Bustinza:
"Yeah, I'm with you. I don't want to say anything else. I'm with you."

Fawcett:
"OK. Now, from this point, he was taken underground, he got out and they walked along a catwalk inside. Now, he said this cave was man-made, you could see it was man-made. And as they were walking along, he could look down and he could see people down below; he said also there was one of these machines down there that they saw in the field. Does that sound anything?"

Bustinza:
"The underground part. I really don't know anything about the underground part."

April 20, 1984 Conversation with Sergeant Bustinza.
From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org*).

Typically, Warren then told Larry Fawcett, Barry Greenwood, and Dot Street that he wasn't there and had redacted that part from his testimony, and it was then that it became clear to the researcher/investigators that Warren had simply used Sgt. Bustinza's account.

Georgina Bruni mentions Dot Street visiting her with several cassette tapes of recorded phone calls, and on one of these, Warren confesses that he had made up the underground part of his story, saying it wasn't his account anyway, mentioning that he and others were all involved in rehashing (reworking) the whole thing. Warren also tried to justify what he did by saying that if he had said he heard it second hand, no one would believe it:

> "Larry [Fawcett] lost interest with the case. You know this underground stuff. Larry to this day does not believe me. I told Barry [Greenwood] and Larry Fawcett that it didn't happen to me. I'm telling you it did not happen. When I first came out with that, well, I said it did . . . It was March '81. What can we do about it? Bustinza and a few others, we went down to this place. This underground garbage, I've erased that stuff for ever. I didn't even see those space things. I told Larry, the thing is, March '81 I got together with some people. We were all involved, rehashing the whole thing. Bustinza said we were taken down to this . . . Bustinza wouldn't give him [Fawcett] specific details of the underground. If I said I heard it second-hand no one would believe it. Bustinza said we were taken down to an underground base . . . I did some checking, it seemed there was some fact to him. I'd hoped that Busty would tell him what we went through. Busty denied the underground. I had to play devil's advocate. OK, I did this. I have an ace in the hole, if I get screwed around by this, it would make . . ." [tape cut off]
>
> *"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery*
> by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 98).

According to Bruni, a few days after this phone conversation with Dot Street, Warren was flown to Japan to appear in the NTV documentary TV show, so this phone call would have been during the first week in October 1984.

Rendlesham researcher Sacha Christie, knew Warren for eight years, but like Warren's co-author Peter Robbins and fellow researcher, Ronnie Dugdale, she had to distance herself from Warren once she discovered he had lied constantly, and had threatened her with her life if she turned up at a conference he was attending. Sacha offers her comments on the taped rant quoted above by Warren, saying that, "the conversation Warren is referring to in the tape was his drunken confession to Larry Fawcett and Barry Greenwood that he had made it all up and that he had taken Adrian Bustinza's account and told it because he had made the decision that the story had to be told. No one else shared that sentiment."

Sacha later writes: "It looks to me like he [Warren] was not involved at all. He was on base, off duty or not even qualified for duty and from a few hours after hearing about what happened in the dorm bar, he collected every bit of information he could from all of the people involved who would talk to him and has consistently changed his story in many ways since with each newly collected snippet of someone else's account.

Peter Robbins splits with Larry Warren It's Official!! by Sacha Christie. Posted Tuesday, 20 December

When Bruni asked Warren to explain why he went off on a tangent, telling Dot Street that the underground story was a non-event, Warren told her that he had just gone public with his name, thinking other witnesses would start talking. But when he discovered that Adrian Bustinza had denied being in the underground facility, he decided he wasn't going to talk about it anymore, adding that he just wanted to forget it so he simply denied he had been there (Bruni, p. 98).

[dcvi] Transcript of Keith Beabey/Larry Warren conversation taped by Dot Street. "It Didn't Crash It Landed!" by Ronnie Dugdale, *Outer Limits Magazine*, No. 11, December 2012.

[dcvii] Quoting Art Wallace (Larry Warren):

> "In January or mid January 1981 I started working in the Security Police Operations in Supply department and one day some of the policeman that I was in the forest with came in and a gentleman in there started asking about what had happened they did not know that I was involved in this incident when I was working in this office. They were very intense and possibly looked at me like I told them what happened. They just walked out. Alot [sic] of tension between people existed after that point and eventually it was dropped it was talked about the next day and then you never really heard much about it. In March 1981 I met in the room of a Sgt. Bustinza and two other people we discussed what had happened reassuring each other that we had seen what we saw and it was decided that I would tell what had happened that I would do my best because I would be getting out before any of them. Upon leaving the service honorably, I got back home and told my family . . . ."
>
> "The Story of Art Wallace." From the online *Files of Barry Greenwood, CUFOS Org).*

[dcviii] *Ibid.*

[dcix]

Kevin Randle in an email to James Easton June 11, 2002. *UFO UpDates. Re: UFO Frauds* – Part II – James Easton.

It should be noted that in his book, *Project Moon Dust: Beyond Roswell*, Kevin Randle questions Larry Warren's testimony and cites a conversation Col. Halt had with Larry Warren. Quoting Randle's book:

> "Halt interrupted and asked, "Have you taken a poly-graph examine relative to what you recall as the events that occurred related to you?"
> Warren: "You mean a lie detector test?"
> Halt: "Yeah."
> "Not a lie detector test. I took a voice . . . where they check the voice . . ."
> Halt: "Voice stress analysis?"

> "Yeah, through Fawcett. Three times. Through the Connecticut state police actually."
> Halt said, "that would be irrelevant because he could . . ."
> And Warren interrupted, saying. "Oh right. I agree with you."
> Kevin Randle: "Interestingly, I spoke to Larry Fawcett on May 28, 1996, and asked him if he had subjected Warren to a voice stress analysis. Fawcett was very clear on that:" "Never," he said, "Not with me."
> Randle: "We discussed it for a few seconds, just so that I would be sure of my facts. Fawcett said," "I never voice-stress analyzed him"."
>
> *Project Moon Dust: Beyond Roswell*, by Kevin D. Randle, (Avon Books NYC, 1998, pp. 195 – 196).

In a letter written by Walter H. Andreas Jr, and sent to Philip J. Klass, dated April 25, 1985, also sent to Chuck de Caro, Larry Fawcett, and Marge Christensen, is the following statement:

> "We arranged to have a voice stress test analysis test conducted by the leading authority on this device, using the CNN video tape-audio as the medium for the test. Larry Warren failed the questions where he was describing the occupants, therefore MUFON has no further need to conduct a polygraph test."
>
> Source: *Important Information regarding The Randle Tape. Larry Warren FAILED the VSA he claims Fawcett arranged. Here is the PROOF* by Sacha Christie, August 9, 2019.

[dcx] "*Getting It Right at East Gate*," by Jenny Randles. Posted August 24, 2009.

[dcxi] Apparently, Chuck DeCaro had discovered where Bruce Englund was working, and when he approached Englund to talk with him, Englund had him thrown off the base.

Jim Penniston didn't watch the CNN *Special Assignment* program when it was first televised. In fact, he wasn't even aware that it had existed at that time. The most controversial witness on the program must be Captain Verrano, who wasn't named and was filmed in shadow. Verrano again gave his account of having driven Wing Commander Colonel Gordon Williams to the runway at Bentwaters, where a fighter pilot was waiting – which is basically what he had told researcher, Ray Boeche, on December 4, 1984 – a month or two after his interview on the CNN Special was filmed. However, here Verrano doesn't mention who his passenger was, and Chuck DeCaro cues Verrano by announcing that CNN had found an officer, "who says he drove the Base Commander to a waiting airplane to deliver what he was told was a motion picture film of one of the UFOs." As the reader has noted by now, the Base Commander at the time was Colonel Ted Conrad.

Quoting Captain Verrano:

> "We drove on there. I asked, what is in the film? He said, 'We actually have the picture of the UFO here,' and

> he got off the Jeep, went to the aircraft, handed the film to the pilot, the canopy closed and the aircraft took off. I asked him where it was headed, and he said Germany."

As mentioned in Note 26 in the end notes of Chapter 11: *Lifeline*, it's likely that this was not a film but a reel of audio tape – a recording of all the radio transmissions that went through the Command Post during the third night events – and that the reason why Col. Williams would have been delivering this tape, if true, is simple. Being the Wing Commander of RAF Bentwaters and Woodbridge, he would have been the person to have handed the tape to Lieutenant General Charles A. Gabriel, who had flown in from Ramstein Air Force Base in Germany. (See Chapter 16: *Hunted by Lions, Tigers and Bears*.)

MSgt. Bob Ball made a shadowed, unnamed appearance, saying that he took the photos that had then come back "whited-out – nothing on the film or the negatives." He also mentioned "Sergeant Nevels," saying he was the Disaster Preparedness specialist/expert who operated the Geiger counter the night he was out there. MSgt. Ball then made the controversial statement, "We saw flying objects containing maybe other people or another life-form."

MSgt. Ray Gulyas was also unnamed and filmed in shadow, talking about finding what appeared to be three depressions in the ground at the alleged landing site, adding that they were in a triangular pattern and twelve-foot equidistant from each other, measured from center to center. It's possible that Gulyas had measured depressions deliberately created at another site or was reporting what was claimed to have been measured, as the three depressions that Jim Penniston had measured earlier, and also Halt's team had measured at the landing site located by Lt. Englund, were around nine feet equidistant from center to center.

Larry Fawcett was also interviewed, and only mentioned that the reason most of the witnesses were not talking was that they had been threatened, faced with the USAF regulation JAN UP 46, which means if anybody talks about UFO events that have been reported in the military they're subject to fines, loss of pension and retirement . . . even jail time. Fawcett adds later, that "When they've been telling the public for thirty years, there's no such thing as UFOs, how can they reverse themselves now and say there is, and they've been lying and covering it up?" . . which gets right to the heart of why full disclosure on the UFO phenomenon will still be a long time coming.

Warren's friend, Greg Battram also appeared on the CNN *Special Assignment* and was given more air time than everyone else. Named as "Airman Greg," he was also filmed in shadow to protect his identity. Battram said: "I think I saw a UFO. Some kind of uh, spaceship from someplace not of this Earth." Battram then continued to tell much the same story as he had told Larry Fawcett some eight months earlier on February 7, 1984.

In the interview Larry Warren did with Chuck DeCaro, which was filmed on the afternoon of September 6, 1984 (*Left at East Gate*, p. 129), Warren talks about how the craft he claims he saw emerged from the yellow fog or mist-like-object:

> "Didn't look solid at all. Just looked like a . . . a self-emitted piece of light, it was just odd. Uh, it seemed like it was no sooner there that it blew up, not outward or upward, it just blew down with all these sparkles and different colors of light. Uh, indescribable, because it's beyond me how this thing . . . this happened. We weren't injured by it, and I was very close, and, uh . . . it changed, and that was the weirdest thing about it. It changed into the ship that people had seen earlier – the three cops had followed out there."

Warren is referring to the craft seen on the first night – the "three cops" being Penniston, Burroughs and Cabansag – and what Warren says suggests that he had simply attempted to model the craft he claims to have seen on the third night on what he had heard concerning the craft SSgt. Jim Penniston had encountered on the first night – i.e., triangular, "pyramid" shaped.

As already mentioned in Chapter 12: *Disinformation* (Note 85), Warren describes the beings he claims he saw:

> "My first impression is that I thought they were children, because my mind wouldn't accept what I was seeing. I thought there were children in snowsuits."

With the rest of this description of the beings, Warren hadn't yet elaborated on the details of his story as he would later do in *Left at East Gate* – i.e., that he saw the beings emerge from the craft via a ball of light that split into three glowing light cylinders in which the three beings were then floating separately – also each floating in "bubbles," as he had later described in his interview with Sid Goldberg in 2016. At the time when the CNN TV program was filmed, Warren just says the three beings moved out of the craft:

> "At that point we saw people, or whatever you want to call them, um, coming out. They didn't come out. There were no doors or anything on this ship. These things moved out. There were three of them and they were covered with . . . they had light around them, and it . . . you know, they came out. They stood there . . . they actually floated to make it more complicated . . . ."

Warren's interview ends with him saying, ". . . no threatening motions were made at us by them [the beings]. They didn't communicate with me at all. Our Base Commander was there." The interviewer asks, "Who's the Base Commander?" Warren replies, "Uh, Base Commander, Lieutenant Colonel Gordon Williams."

Warren was mistaken, as Gordon Williams was a Colonel, not a 'Lieutenant Colonel' like Charles Halt, and was the Wing Commander of the base, not the Base Commander, who was Colonel Ted Conrad at the time.

All quotes above from CNN *Special Assignment*, documentary-news program hosted by Chuck DeCaro, recorded during autumn 1984, and first televised between January 23 and 27, 1985.

[dcxii] Sources consulted for this subchapter on Senator Exon and Col. Halt:

Bentwaters – What Do We Know Now? By Raymond W. Boeche, published in *MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings*. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.

"You Can't Tell the People" *The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, pp. 111 – 112.

Ray Boeche, Th.D., early investigator of RAF Bentwaters/Woodbridge Mystery, Phenomenon KGRA Radio, interview with hosts Linda Moulton Howe and John Burroughs, November 15, 2015.

[dcxiii] Raymond Boeche had reported this phone conversation with Colonel Halt in his article, *Bentwaters – What Do We Know Now?* published in *MUFON 1986 UFO Symposium Proceedings*. Seguin, TX: Mutual UFO Network, 1986.

On June 23, 1992, during a phone conversation that was recorded on tape, Colonel Halt was confronted with what he had told Ray Boeche on April 10, 1984 by Peter Robbins, who was researching on the book he was writing with Larry Warren, and which Warren had already titled, *Left at*

East Gate, which was later published in 1997. Robbins began by saying that in the mid-eighties Mr. Ray Boeche had made contact with Halt. Halt replied, that he didn't remember him. Robbins then mentioned Boeche in the context of his MUFON investigations with him and Senator James Exon. Then Halt said, "OK, he did call me, I remember the name now, he's the guy who pestered me to death, and he went to Exon," adding that Exon's staffers had called him, saying they had this guy who was driving them half crazy, and would he provide them with some information. Halt then said he talked with the Senator on at least two, if not three occasions. and that he was very frank open and honest with him. Robbins then read out what Boeche had reported, that when he asked him (Halt) about the officer (Captain Verrano), who had stated that Colonel Williams was there and was driven back to Bentwaters with film of a landed UFO, that he (Halt) was quoted by Boeche, as having said "Yes," and that he (Halt) could verify that with the Senator.

Col. Halt then told Robbins, that it wasn't true, and that he never told Boeche that, and that he told him that Williams was never there. When Robbins said, "So that's an absolute lie?" Halt said, "Well . . . or misunderstanding." Robbins then pressed the point that Boeche had quoted him with quotation marks.

Col. Halt's reply:

> "I would never have said that because Gordon Williams is a very personal friend of mine to this day and was not there. Was never there, was never at the site. When he found out about the incident, he was very interested, I mean to the point where he said 'Hey, you've got to get into this next time. I want to be involved. Call me the next time you know anything – get me there.' In fact, some things happened later that I called him."
>
> *Left at East Gate*, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins
> (Marlowe & Company, 1997, pp. 326 – 327)

[dcxiv] In the 1990 interview with science writer, Antonio Huneeus, John Burroughs did offer his opinion of Larry Warren's story, as was relayed to the public in the CNN *Special Assignment*, *"UFO – The Bentwaters Incident,"* news-documentary, hosted and produced by Chuck DeCaro, recorded during autumn 1984, and first televised between January 23 to 27, 1985. (See end of Note 1 above.)

Quoting Burroughs from the interview:

> "Larry Warren has hurt this case quite a bit. The only thing I can say about Larry Warren's testimony, that aliens came out, his excuse was that CNN did a botched-up job and he never described those little men like they were and stuff like that. There was something out there that was intelligent, that (hurt the eyes especially) when there was the blue transparent-type lights that were coming out, and the different things that they were capable of doing. That is my stand on that. Now Larry Warren took it a step further and, as far as I am concerned, there was no contact between, he called him the base commander, Lieutenant Colonel Williams at the time, and I did not see him out there. I know for a fact that Colonel Halt was out there and there is a small possibility, if I remember, I did see for a brief moment

> possibly the new base commander, which would have been Colonel Conrad at the time. But there was nothing that I am aware [of] or through talking to other people that would describe what Larry Warren described to CNN, other than there were blue transparent lights that could be possibly – they did act intelligently, some of the stuff they did . . . There was something else that came off the main craft that was able to do different things and flew over the top of us and flew through a pick-up truck and did stuff like that."

It was in 1989 that Burroughs had told author Jenny Randles that he had read the book *Sky Crash.* He told Randles that he had not read the book until then because another witness had told him it was 'trash.' However, he said that when he eventually got to read it and apparently he stayed up all night to finish it and told Randles that he was *"very surprised to find that the truth was in there mixed with bogus yarns that we had been told by 'wannabees' off base who were not involved in the case but wished that they had been."*

Source: *Getting It Right at East Gate,* by Jenny Randles, posted on August 24, 2009).

[dcxv] *"Bentwaters Part III: The Testimony of John Burroughs"* by J. Antonio Huneeus, *FATE Magazine*, 1993.

[dcxvi] ***Burroughs' First Hypnosis Session. November 11, 1988***

As mentioned, John Burroughs retired as a Tech Sergeant from the USAF in February 1988. It was later made public that on November 11, 1988 – almost eight years after the Rendlesham incidents and nine months after he retired – Burroughs had undergone hypnosis. This was conducted by hypnotherapist, A.L. Ward, aged 64 at the time and an author since 1966, who promotes himself as an *Independent Health, Wellness and Fitness Professional* in the Greater Los Angeles area.

The hypnosis regression was organized by Hollywood TV producer, Curtis Brubaker for a TV special entitled *'UFO Cover-Up Live!'* Brubaker, who was working with producer, Robert Emenegger, who had initially hired Ward, wanted to find out the truth concerning the longtime rumors that John Burroughs had either jumped up on a craft, or was lifted up into a beam of light. Indeed, certain details during the events which Burroughs could not remember consciously, but were now recalled by him, seems to suggest to him and others that he was "taken" and/or had a deeper encounter with something not of this world. To this day, Burroughs and others entertain the possibility that he could have been temporarily taken ("abducted") on both the nights he was involved, even though there are simpler explanations. However, what Burroughs was able to recall still remains ambiguous and vague and Burroughs continues to speculate today on what he actually experienced. None of the videotape of this hypnosis session could have been included in the TV special anyway, which was broadcast on US TV by Seligman Productions in October 1988 – the month before Burroughs' hypnosis session actually took place.

What little Burroughs now remembers, and which in recent years has also been backed-up by Adrian Bustinza. has been something that he has been trying to understand and come to terms with, as it indicates that his encounters were perhaps more significant than realized – even "destined." Jim Penniston suspects that all this may be wishful thinking on Burroughs' part, *as why was he rendered immobile and unconscious by the phenomenon on the first night, with his memory blocked so that he couldn't remember?* There must have been a good reason for it. If it's true as to what happened to Burroughs on the third night as-per Bustinza's testimony, *isn't it likely that a kind of defense mechanism was implemented against Burroughs when he rushed towards the craft rendering him unconscious again?*

Following is a brief excerpt from that November 11, 1988 hypnosis session, which took place in Brubaker's home when Burroughs was placed in a hypnotic state. Burroughs talks rapidly, recalling a conversation with Lt. Col. Halt, who mentions the strange lights he and the team had been observing. Burroughs is saying here that Halt had directed him to go further towards the lights with Sergeant Adrian Bustinza, as Halt thinks that Burroughs could bring the lighted objects closer:

> Burroughs: "Colonel Halt and I were standing there. *'It's back again,' I can't believe it.'* 'Yes, but you wasn't surprised!' The craft was still hovering out there, he goes, *'They're coming from that craft . . . they'd been out there for hours.'* And, I go, *'Well I want to be closer,'* and he, *'OK.'* And he goes, *'John? I want you to go out there because I think you can bring it closer.'* What d'ya mean?"
> Hypnotherapist A.L. Ward: "WHO TOLD YOU THAT?"
> Burroughs: "Colonel Halt. *'I think you can bring this ship and these things closer. They want you to do it'*."
> "WHO WANTS YOU TO DO IT?"
> "Colonel Halt said they did. I didn't understand what was going on. He goes, *'This is the most bizarre, weirdest experience. People are never going to' . . ."*

Contrast all what is being said here with what was covered in the chapter, *UAP Activity,* and with Halt's statement: "Burroughs was bugging me half to death. *'I want to go back out to the site where this supposed craft had landed two nights earlier.'* I said, *'Ok,'* and he said. *'Bustinza come with me,'* and he and Bustinza went forward." Source: *A Different Perspective* with Kevin Randle – Guest: Col. Charles Halt – RAF Bentwaters. Published, January 11, 2017.

> A.L. Ward:
> "YOU KNEW WHY THEY THOUGHT YOU COULD BRING IT CLOSER?"
> Burroughs:
> "No, I didn't understand. And that was something that I never understood either. They wanted me there, and they wanted me there to stay. You can stay in this area for a while. They weren't surprised that I was there either. THEY WERE NOT SURPRISED. The people that saw me come out there was surprised, but Colonel Halt was not surprised."
> "WHAT HAPPENED THEN?"
> Burroughs: "Well then he put his arm around me, and he said, *'Let's go!'* And then all of a sudden there were this short staff sergeant [Bustinza] and he was there, like coming towards me, like he wasn't with the main group. And he says, *'Let's go.'* The three of us walk, towards the craft! And Colonel Halt goes, *'I got all this on tape recording,'* and he showed me his recorder. And he has the radio with him too – his radio – and he goes, *'And I'm recording all of this to the Wing Command Post.'*

> And he goes, *'Let's go.'* So we started walking. And the light was there. It was in a distance. And then! There it was! Three blue lights. *'Oh yeah, there they are!'* And he goes, *'That's what we had before!'* And he goes, *'John.'* He goes, *'You're never gonna believe this, but uh, a group of us . . . they made contact with us . . . they were on top of us, it was like they spoke to us.'* I go, *'They, what's they?'* And he goes, *'These lights.'* I go, *'You mean you saw something?' 'These lights.'* He goes, *'There were lights there, and they were speaking to us, they were over us, they were flying in the sky, they were hovering over us, they were doing all kinds of things'*."
> "NOW JOHN, JUST GO BACK THERE, WHERE YOU SEE THOSE BLUE LIGHTS. I WANT YOU TO LOOK AT ONE OF THOSE LIGHTS. THAT LIGHT THAT TALKED BACK TO YOU, TELL ME WHAT IT SAYS."
> Burroughs: "*'Come to me.'* They started moving and we all froze. And they were up and down."
> "YOU MEAN THE LIGHTS?"
> Burroughs: "Yeah. They split up."
> "THAT'S . . . THAT LIGHT, WHAT DID IT REPRESENT?"
> Burroughs: "The craft."
> "NOW, IS THERE ANY LIFE FOR IN, OR WITH THAT CRAFT?"
> Burroughs: "That was the life form . . ."
>
> *John Burroughs Hypnosis – Telepathic Blue Lights*, uploaded December 23, 2012.

Keep in mind that Col. Halt is on record as having said that Burroughs had asked to go to the landing site where he and Jim had confronted a craft. Halt tells us he had said "OK, but make it quick," and Burroughs and Bustinza went to the site, which was less than a hundred yards away, and all the time were never out of his (Halt's) sight. Then Halt says that both men quickly came back and didn't mention anything strange or unusual. (Again, see Chapter 8: *UAP Activity*, also Chapter 12: *Disinformation*, and Note 106 in the end notes of Chapter 12). It is acceptable that Halt would tell Burroughs about the UAP/lights activity he and the team experienced, and it's important to note that there is no mention by Halt of the UFO/alien-related phenomena mentioned in the accounts given by Bustinza, Warren and others, which are supposed to have been witnessed on the same night.

Furthermore, based on what Burroughs had recalled through hypnosis, it is interesting what Col. Halt is alleged to have said about the lighted objects having communicated telepathically with him and the team to Burroughs, because Halt is quoted as having said the same to Linda Moulton Howe:

> ". . . he [Col. Halt] had told me in an earlier call-in phone radio interview, that he was so shaken when one of the lights in the sky after midnight, that a beam came down within three to four feet of his own shoes, and he said to us, quote: 'I did not know if this should be

> interpreted as an act of aggression or not.' And that was his frame of mind and confusion when he told us also that they had been getting what he described as being some kind of thoughts that he thought was coming from the lights. He said we could hear, like content or words, or phrases that we associated with the lights, which would be this issue of telepathy . . ."
>
> Source: *Linda Moulton Howe and Ronnie Dugdale Part I. Earthfiles*, published January 29, 2018.

Of course, it would be only natural for Col. Halt to leave out this detail about this telepathic communication with the lighted objects when relating his account.

In her book *From Out of the Blue*, Jenny Randles tells us about a woman named, Dorothy Whymark from the village of Eyke, located between the Bentwaters and Woodbridge bases. Mrs. Whymark talked to Jenny Randles, telling her that in March 1974 around 1:00 in the morning she had taken her dog for a walk when she felt a peculiar sensation and was forced to look up in the sky to see a football-shaped object that was beaming light down towards the ground. It was silent and stationary and she said she felt a "bond" of contact develop between her and the object. However, she decided to rush into the house to bring her daughter out to back up her story, and as soon as she did this, the object headed south east towards Bawdsey. Mrs. Whymark called Bawdsey research center to the report the incident and see if they had picked it up on their 'secret radar,' which they told her they hadn't. But they were interested enough to send a Flight Lieutenant to call on her and discuss the sighting. She reports that he treated her very seriously and asked many detailed questions about what happened.

Source: *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles, (Inner Light – Global communications, June 1, 1991), p. 122.

"Mars . . . Mars . . . Mar is their base"

In any case, it would appear that for many years since his hypnosis session in 1988, John Burroughs had been selective and had 'cherry picked' only those things about his hypnosis session he wanted his audience to know.

Until 2017, when Burroughs and Linda Moulton Howe hosted the Phenomenon Radio show with guests A.L. Ward and hypnotherapist, Melinda Vail, who hypnotized Burroughs on October 4, 2008 (see *Al Ward and Melinda Vail*, Phenomenon KGRA Radio, May 25, 2017), Burroughs had only allowed the extract as quoted above from the hypnosis session with A.L. Ward to be made public. *Why?*

Well, just after Burroughs had said *"That was the life form,"* A.L. Ward asked, "Where do they come from?" And Burroughs said, *"Mars . . . Mars."* A.L. Ward then asked: "They did not evolve on Mars did they?" Burroughs replied: "*Mars is their base.*" For many years, this detail had not been disclosed by Burroughs.

It is worth listening to the radio show cited above and also checking out a videoed interview that A.L. Ward did with *Miracles of Mind TV* in 2016, which was uploaded onto YouTube. (See: *AL Ward: Shares His Medical Hypnosis Miracles & The Rendlesham UFO Case*, Part 2, *Miracles of Mind TV*. Uploaded April 14, 2016).

It is possible that when A.L Ward came forward with this interview and had mentioned things Burroughs hadn't up to that time, that Burroughs then decided to have Ward come on the Phenomenon radio show to finally explain the things Ward had divulged. At the end of A.L. Ward's interview, Burroughs said to Ward, *"I have to be honest with you, some of this just . . . I kind of avoided it."*

During his interview in 2016, A.L. Ward talks about the hypnosis session he conducted with John Burroughs, and what A.L Ward has to say reveals why Burroughs had kept the transcript of the full

hypnosis session to himself for many years, because it moved from what Burroughs expected, which was factual details recalled of the event, to *channelling* something he didn't expect, like entities named *Denotika* and *Modar*, from the planet *Valenta*, which was 89 light-years away who used our planet Mars as a base before coming to Earth, with the added detail that these 'extraterrestrial' entities said that they can control Burroughs' mind.

A.L Ward even mentions Burroughs' reluctance to mention the things that he had discovered at "UFO meetings" afterwards:

> **Interviewer:** *"Tell us about Rendlesham . . . the Bentwaters case with John Burroughs . . ."*
> **A.L. Ward:** "I was hired to have him relive his experience. Well in his experience, him and a sergeant had found, observed it in the forest outside of the base, military base there, and wasn't gonna say anything about it. And uh, at night, why he was awakened from his sleep, uh, that they're back. So he got up and went running out there and the Colonel and half, you know, some of the officials, was all there . . ."
> **Interviewer:** *"Oh, that the UFO was back?"*
> **A.L. Ward:** "Yeah and it was there. Well, um, in his experience, uh, he said his Colonel told him, to ask him to get . . . to see how close he could get to the object, and he says I got about ten feet from it and got back, knocked back thirty feet. So anyhow, I took him through his experience and then for some reason why I, uh, said, 'Well I'm gonna take you back to that object and I want to see if there's some occupants in it . . . see if you can communicate with them.' So we got back, and I put him next to the object. Why, suddenly, red, red streaks came out of his collar and up over his ears . . . blood red, and it concerned his wife and me, so I moved him back from the craft and instantly they disappeared, and he didn't even know what happened."
> So uh, eight years previously I worked with a young lady who had been abducted at the age of eight and an implant put in her nose and one in her back, and she was a military person and apparently they couldn't do anything about her emotional conflict, so she came to our research project. And in the research project I found that she was a medium between an alien entity personality and present-day. And the identity of the, uh, alien personality was Denotika, and Denotika was using Rosemary as a medium to communicate and I worked with her for a while, different days, and talked to Denotika and one day the communication was like static. And so I stopped the session, and when I woke the girl up she says all the time you were talking to me it felt like my body was bloating, getting bigger and bigger. And I said, 'Well how do you feel now?' She said fine." So, a week later I worked with her again and got in touch with

Denotika and I asked her what happened. She says the frequencies were not right and if you had continued there would have been an explosion. And so Denotika introduced me to her planet leader, named Modar."
Interviewer: *"And what planet system were they from?"*
A.L. Ward: "Eighty-nine light-years from Earth. The planet Valenta. Well, if you stop and think about how a light year is about, uh, two-hundred and thirty million miles, how eighty-nine light years would be. And so she says, she was coming from the fourth system from Earth. Now, whether she meant the forth, uh, what do you call it? You know, galaxy? But anyhow, that's where she was coming from."
Interviewer: *"And does this have any relation to the Bentwaters case?"*
A.L. Ward: "Well, uh, yeah! Well anyhow, when uh, uh, I asked him [Burroughs] to talk to see if there was any intelligence behind, he says there's red lights all around the craft and there's an intelligence behind that red light, and I said, 'Well talk to it. Who are they? Where they come from?' You know, 'We come from a planet eighty-nine years from Earth.' 'Oh, you don't happen to know Modar and Denotika?' 'Yeah, I know 'em.' 'Oh, what would you say if I told you I had talked to both of them?' 'No you didn't, that's impossible.' And uh, 'Well, you won't talk about it?' 'No, we're not interested in you.' 'Well you're talking to this other, John Burroughs.' 'Well we can control his mind, and we travel at the speed of light. We stop at a base on Mars before coming to your Earth.' And I said, 'Well, how long does it take you to get from Mars to Earth?' And the answer was immediately, one hour. And so a week later, the person [either Curtis Brubaker or Robert Emenegger] that invited me to do that [session] had called, and said he had his staff calculate that and he missed it by fourteen minutes. 'We are here, we've been here, we're in your ground, we're in your water, we're in your sky. We are here to observe you because we believe we were once your form'."
Interviewer: *"Oh that the extraterrestrials believe they're once in human form?'*
A.L. Ward: "Yeah."
Interviewer: *"So what form were they in now? Did John Burroughs happen to be able to take a look?"*
A.L. Ward: "Well, uh, I had her described. Denotika described herself to me, and it's a common big head, uh, long arms, silvery skin, no bridge for the nose, small mouth. So I said to her, 'Are you considered beautiful where you are?' And her answer was, 'Everything is beautiful that doesn't hurt,' and so I presume that uh, at

least that particular planet was, uh, peaceful . . ."
Interviewer: *"In your story you also mentioned there was something on the side of the craft in Rendlesham."*
A.L. Ward: "Yeah, one of the witnesses that I didn't work with but one of the witnesses that was with John Burroughs – his Sergeant – made a copy of what, uh, figures seen all around the edge of the craft, and of course he's not able to interpret what they mean."
Interviewer: *"Has anybody interpreted it?"*
A.L. Ward: "Well I tried to get him acquainted with Rosemary, the young lady that became Denotika, and see if she could." [. . .] "But you see, uh, John Burroughs has been thirty-some years, and as he goes to these UFO meetings and talks about his experience, he never mentions at all what I found out."
Interviewer: *"Why not?"*
A.L. Ward: "Because it's not a part of what I was hired to do, and not a part of their belief system."
Interviewer: *"What does he talk about?"*
A.L. Ward: "He talks about his experience, being there and so forth, and being knocked back and, uh, and being frightened by some of the stuff, and uh . . ."
Interviewer: *"It was just too far, too much for him to accept . . ."*
A.L. Ward: "Yeah, right, he says I'm still coping with that uh, experience."
Interviewer: *"He struggles with it a bit . . ."*
A.L. Ward: "And his wife was present and uh, she couldn't put up with what he had experienced. They had a divorce because of that."

AL Ward: Shares His Medical Hypnosis Miracles & The Rendlesham UFO Case, Part 2,
Miracles of Mind TV. Uploaded April 14, 2016.

[dcxvii] Quote by J. Antonio Huneeus, 1993.

"We met him [Burroughs] a few years ago at a UFO Conference in Phoenix when he had just separated from the USAF with the rank of sergeant (he is still in the Reserve) and saw him again during the filming of the famous Unsolved Mysteries Bentwaters segment in a Maryland wooded area, *which he actually spearheaded."* [Our emphasis].

The Testimony of John Burroughs by J. Antonio Huneeus, September 1993, *FATE Magazine.*

This was written before Huneeus knew that Jim Penniston was involved and that it was actually SSgt. Jim Penniston who had 'spearheaded' the investigation on the orders of the Commanding officers of

the twin bases. One would assume that for Huneeus to have believed that it was Burroughs who had led the investigation, means that this is what he was led to believe by either Burroughs himself, or from what he saw during the filming of the *Unsolved Mysteries* documentary.
[dcxviii]

In the 1991 TV show, *Unsolved Mysteries* (at the 3:30-minute mark on YouTube), Burroughs is portrayed taking the radio off one of the two men he is shown to be leading in the woods of Rendlesham Forest, and he begins talking into the radio. We then hear Burroughs voice, and the scene cuts to Burroughs being interviewed.

Quote:

> Burroughs:
> "At that point, we got a radio transmission. They just got a contact from Heathrow tower in London that an object had been seen over our base and that it had disappeared on radar."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed on *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO"*, September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).

Again, the transmission about the radar sighting had already been communicated to Jim Penniston while he was at the East Gate and before he was given permission to go off-base with two other team members and lead an investigation into the woods of Rendlesham Forest. In fact, the radar sighting was the key reason why SSgt. Penniston was given permission to lead the investigation off-base and in the woods of Rendlesham in the first place.

Even Burroughs himself confirms this in his other interviews, *so why was this untrue portrayal presented in the TV documentary?* The only answer is that with Jim Penniston being present at this time, and with Burroughs giving his account of what happened, Burroughs was more in control of *what* was going to be portrayed in the show about the first night's events, and *how* it was going to be portrayed.

[dcxix] Quoting Burroughs:

> "All of a sudden in the clearing there was an object. It had a bank of blue lights on it and it was sitting there like strobing . . . it was unbelievable."
>
> John Burroughs being interviewed on *Unsolved Mysteries: "Bentwaters UFO"*, September 18, 1991. (Lifetime Television. Host: Robert Stack).

[dcxx]

John Burroughs has long maintained Jim Penniston had "never" come forward in public with the notebook or had ever mentioned his walk-around inspection of the craft until long after his (Penniston's) hypnosis sessions with a hypnotherapist (August 26 and September 10, 1994) for the sleep disorder he had endured since the incident, implying that most of what Jim had claimed happened was taken from what he said during his hypnosis as if it was a false memory.

For example, this is evident in this email sent to author Kevin Randle by UFO skeptic James Easton on June 26, 2002.

> "He [Burroughs] also comments that *Penniston's subsequent tales of examining a 'landed triangular-shaped craft' for some thirty minutes, are perhaps 'influenced' by the 'regressive hypnosis' which first resulted in those same 'recollections'.* Burroughs maintains, as he always has done, that they only ever witnessed lights which implied an 'object' was there." (Our emphasis).
>
> *UFO UpDates. Re: UFO Frauds* – Part II – James Easton. June 26, 2002.

What Burroughs didn't know, is that Jim Penniston came forward just eighteen days after he retired to attend a conference, which took place at the Freeport Pilots Association, close to the airport at Freeport, Illinois, on November 18, 1993, and that Jim Penniston spoke to the audience about his examination of the craft while consulting his notebook and speech papers, which had his details of the craft he witnessed . . . and this was nine months before his first hypnosis session on August 26, 1994. See subchapter above: *Freeport Pilots Association Conference November 18, 1993.*

However, what Burroughs is accusing Jim Penniston of, is exactly what Burroughs himself has done, as he has no conscious recall of what happened during the two incidents he was involved in and can only now rely on what emerged while he underwent hypnosis. Burroughs regularly posts the video clips (now on YouTube) of his two hypnosis sessions, to back up his claim that he was taken into the light, into the craft, or into whatever the phenomenon was, when it is clear that his consciousness was blocked by the phenomenon on the first night while Jim Penniston was allowed to examine the craft and walk away with a message.

And furthermore, it is clear from what his hypnotherapist A.L. Ward had said in the interview conducted in 2016 (See Note 616 above), that Burroughs was *channeling* something which was more in concordance with the information that had emerged during prior hypnotherapy sessions conducted by A.L. Ward with other patients, especially another channeler named Rosemary, which suggests Burroughs' hypnosis session was contaminated. One only has to read the interview by A.L. Ward to see how ridiculous Burroughs' claims about Penniston are in light of what really came out while Burroughs was undergoing hypnosis.

[dcxxi] See: *Penniston Speaks: Open Book, Special Report: Into the Night by A.J.S Rayl*. Copyright (C) 1996 by Omni Publications International, Ltd.

Note by Jim Penniston:

> I began the interview with Sally Rayl by saying that there was some confusion about the date. I said, "There are two duty rosters, both of which are dated December 26th, but it was either that night, the 26th, or the 27th."
> For some reason, my memory on the actual date was letting me down, and this was something that also came up later in my hypnosis in August and September 1994. I was certain that the incident I was involved in was the morning of December 26, as there were logical reasons why it must have been that date, but at the same time, the date of December 27, 1980, was difficult to shake – perhaps because this was the morning I had written down the ones and zeros in my notebook. Over the years

and until I had total recall and realized the fact that the date really was December 26, 1980, I would occasionally say the morning of the incident was December 27, 1980, as if I was compelled to say it. These instances were very rare, and I didn't really question them because I wasn't really concerned about the date. I know and appreciate how important dates are for investigators who need to determine a timeline, but after the experience I had, details like this pale into insignificance compared to what I witnessed and experienced. I later realized – again, when I underwent hypnosis – that the date of the 27th could have been a false memory planted in my mind during the AFOSI-building interrogation during which I was hypnotized, which is why I would sometimes confuse it with the real date, which I knew was the morning of December 26. That interrogation in the AFOSI building took place on December 30, 1980.

Also, I should mention that during the interview, I told Salley Rayl, as quoted: "I had my notebook and camera while I was out there, so I began taking notes. This is what I wrote:

> *"Triangular in shape. The top portion is producing mainly white light, which encompasses most of the upper section of the craft. A small amount of white light peers out the bottom. At the left side center is a bluish light, and on the other side, red. The lights seem to be molded as part of the exterior of the structure, smooth, slowly fading into the rest of the outside of the structure, gradually molding into the fabric of the craft."*

This was a summary of the things I had written – each description on several pages in the notebook, NOT the actual note I made.

[dcxxii]

Note by Jim Penniston

Salley Rayl told me an interesting story, which happened while she was researching the Rendlesham case. She said that she had interviewed other witnesses, one of these being a young guy who had claimed to be present on the third night. She said that this guy told her that he had met one of The Beatles and used to hang out with him and jam with him on guitar. He didn't know that Salley had written a book about The Beatles. After

listening to his story after what he had told her regarding his claims of what he witnessed during the incident, Salley looked him in the eyes and said, "You are a liar!" That ended the session. The guy was Larry Warren.

[dcxxiii]

As mentioned in Note 99, it is evident that the book *Sky Crash* by Brenda Butler, Dot Street, and Jenny Randles (November 1984), and also the American-published *Sky Crash* update, *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles (1991), contain many 'out of context' quotes made by, and/or attributed to Jim Penniston, John Burroughs and others, in which what was said about the events of the "first night" (December 25 to 26, 1980), and what was said about the events of the "third night," (December 27 – 28 1980), had somehow become mixed up and confused.

For example, on page 60 in the book *From Out of the Blue,* which uses what was already presented in *Sky Crash,* "James Archer" (Jim Penniston) is quoted as having said that the craft, *"When it moved it was slow you could walk after it."* This is true as regards what happened on the first night and when the craft began to move away before taking off. However, immediately after this, "Archer" (Jim Penniston), is then quoted as having said, *"Cadbury did. I thought he was going to touch it, but it pulled its legs in and took off."* ("John Cadbury" was the pseudonym given to Burroughs.) Jim Penniston says that this did not happen and does not recall ever saying this when being interviewed back in October 1983 – and if he did, then it wasn't said within the context of the first night's events. On the first night, Jim states that Burroughs did not walk after the craft to try and touch it, and that in fact he and Burroughs stayed right where they were and did not follow the craft as they saw it retreat back through the trees and then ascend before taking off and vanishing in an instant. We only have to read through Burroughs' quotes in Note 9 in the end notes of chapter, *Discovery,* to see that in his account of the first night's events he has never claimed that he walked towards the craft or rushed to try and touch it.

However, as was known by Airman Larry Warren, who is mentioned and often quoted in Jenny Randles' book, *From Out of the Blue,* and which was later reported by Sgt. Adrian Bustinza, who was with Burroughs on the third night, Bustinza saw Burroughs rush towards an unidentified craft. Bustinza says that an entranced Burroughs had even attempted to jump onto the craft. Jenny Randles gives Sgt. Bustinza the pseudonym "Alan Benson" and writes, *"Larry Warren says that he witnessed this phase of the incident also."*

That the two events were carelessly mixed up or confused is evident in the fact that between pages 60 to 61, and without making any distinction between the two events, Jenny Randles quotes "James Archer" (Jim Penniston) on his description of the craft on the first night and then quotes "Alan Benson" (Sgt. Adrian Bustinza) and Larry Warren on their descriptions of the craft and what happened on the third night. Randles lays this out as if all were talking about the same event. Then on page 64 Randles writes: *"John Cadbury, the witness who seems to have had one of the closest of all contacts with the UFO* [. . .] *told me: "There was no contact with aliens so far as I know. I saw nothing like this. Also, Gordon Williams could not have been out there. I knew him. If he had been there I would have known about it and it would have changed everything."*

The fact that Burroughs was referring to the events of the "third night" is evident in his mentioning of not seeing the Wing Commander, Colonel Gordon E. Williams, who was said to have been present on the third night by airman Larry Warren and airman Steve Roberts (a pseudonym, whose account is also taken seriously in the book) – both of whom Jim Penniston says were spreading the same fabricated story in and around the bases as part of a containment operation ordered by the Security Police Commander, Major Malcolm Zickler. (See chapters, *Containment* and *The 'Hold Forth' Years.*)

There are some worthwhile facts presented in these earlier books about Rendlesham, which can be cross-referenced to discover some truths. But when we consider that the stories given by Roberts (pseudonym), Warren, and others were being spread both deliberately and unwittingly on the twin bases and in the surrounding area to confuse investigators and researchers in the weeks following the

incident – much of which was also presented in these two books – it becomes easier to dismiss overall these publications as worthless and irrelevant.

As Jenny Randles herself writes:

> "As we have more witnesses than we know were present and all of them requested anonymity, I chose to take the most reliable parts from each version and tell it through two fictional characters.
>
> The airmen Jim Archer and John Cadbury are real but these are NOT their real names. I have disguised their identities to protect them, but Archer was interviewed by Brenda Butler and Dot Street and I believe he was one of many anonymous sources who related their story directly to me after *Sky Crash* was published in 1984. I have spoken at length with John Cadbury. The combined story is as accurate as I could make it, but some conversation was reconstructed by me based on their stories to allow the account to flow. This should not be taken as the exact words spoken by any of these men."
>
> *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles (Global Communications Inc, 1991).

With this kind of loose, even 'fictional' reporting, aside from the obvious facts, *how can anyone today trust what is presented in these books, or use them to debate an inconsistent point or issue?* Also, SSgt. Jim Penniston was not ranked as an "airman" and does not remember ever having been introduced to, or having ever met Jenny Randles – let alone being interviewed by her directly. He only recalls one interview while he was still in the USAF, and this was the one he initiated himself with Brenda Butler and Dot Street late in 1983 to set the record straight after reading the fallacious accounts about the Rendlesham incident in the UK national newspaper, *The News of the World,* and the interview was very brief and over in minutes. Brenda Butler asked a sensitive question about the kind of weapons they had on the base that Jim was not at liberty to discuss. After hearing that question, Jim then terminated the interview.

Larry Warren was obviously used as a source in Randles' book, as was Burroughs ("Cadbury"), and if so, then it's easy to see how the two nights, and 'who said what' regarding each of these two events, could have been confused and mixed-up. For example, we can see clear indications of this, as well as Randles' reconstructions from what details she had gathered by examining these extracts from page 19 of *From Out of the Blue:*

> "John Cadbury, meanwhile, was literally entranced. He found himself walking towards the device, admiring the simplicity of the structure, noting the dirty off white of whatever material it was built from."
>
> *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles (Global Communications Inc, 1991).

Obviously, Randles had used the same misinterpreted "dirty off white" color description of the craft based on what Jim Penniston said he saw from some distance away. What Jim described was the light obscuring the craft, NOT the color of the material of the craft itself, which he says, and has always

maintained, was black. (Again, see Note 99).

> "Out of the base what looked like three legs, shrouded in the glare from the light pouring out, were probing towards the earth. It was hard to tell them apart from the lightbeams, but they looked like tubular legs."
>
> *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles (Global Communications Inc, 1991).

This paragraph implies that the three legs were indistinguishable from the lightbeams under the craft, *which means they were also made of light.* This is what Jim Penniston witnessed and had described AFTER he had retired from the USAF on October 31, 1993. However, this paragraph was published in 1991. The question is, *how and from whom did Randles receive this information?*

In the following paragraph, which Randles had obviously dramatically 'reconstructed, from what people had said, as she herself had admitted to doing, it seems that "Archer" (Jim Penniston) has been confused with "Sergeant Alan Benson" (pseudonym for Sgt. Adrian Bustinza) and what Bustinza said he witnessed on the third night. Like Burroughs, who was made physically immobile on the first night, Bustinza was also made physically immobile, in that he claims he was being pressed down onto the ground while Burroughs rushed to the craft and disappeared for a short while within a beam of light, as he had claimed:

> *"Archer* [really Bustinza] *noticed that Cadbury* [Burroughs] *was edging towards the thing. He had stayed back, maybe thirty feet away. Now within ten feet and closing. Was the guy crazy? What was he trying to do? Archer* [Bustinza] *attempted to open his mouth and scream a warning. His vocal chords choked. Stranded like a beached whale in front of God he could only remain immobile as the airman approached the miracle. Cadbury* [Burroughs] *was like a moth being drawn towards a light, having only one thought. To reach it. To touch it. To know it was real. As his compatriot came within feet of the device Archer* [Bustinza] *noted a movement. Something within it was responding."*
>
> *From Out of the Blue* by Jenny Randles (Global Communications Inc, 1991).

Jim Penniston says that this was not what happened on the first night and denies ever seeing Burroughs rushing to touch the craft. But now compare the above with what Burroughs says he remembers concerning the third night (see also chapter, *UAP Activity*):

> "Bustinza and I were running together and he fell down and I kept running. As I was getting close to it all of a sudden it was gone and I was just standing in the field. I dont [sic] know what happened. Bustinza told me he was knocked down and held down afterwards he stated he could not stand up until after what ever it was was gone and I was standing alone in the field."

John Burroughs. Posted on Tuesday, July 29, 2008, on the *Rendlesham-Incident Forum: The Rendlesham forest/RAF Bentwaters case.*

In various statements and interviews given by Burroughs and Adrian Bustinza in recent years, it is said that Sgt. Bustinza had been pushed to the ground and that he described Burroughs as being enveloped in light. Then the light then vanished leaving both men confused as to what had happened. Based on what Bustinza described, the dramatic phrases, *"Burroughs went into the light"* or *"He went into the light,"* are now often used by Burroughs in his posts and interviews.

Again, we can see that the detailed events of the two nights had somehow been merged together as one event. In fact, Jim Penniston believes that to direct the focus and undermine the significance of what happened during the first night's events – especially his consciously-remembered close-up examination of the craft and his download of the binary code – the mixing of what happened during the two nights' events, along with a fabricated containment UFO story with all its absurd stereotypical themes, was something that was deliberated, and in many cases, systematically implemented. This, of course, would be evident to the reader when going through these chapters.

[dcxxiv] *Penniston Speaks: Open Book, Special Report: Into the Night by A.J.S Rayl*. Copyright (C) 1996 by Omni Publications International, Ltd.

[dcxxv] In fact, although it is used as a 'truth serum' to extract the true facts, *sodium pentothal* or *sodium amytal* can also be used while the subject is hypnotized to facilitate false memory implanting through hypnotic suggestion.

> "Subjects who refuse or resist the simple "talking" methods of hypnotic induction could be given a few grams of paraldehyde or an intravenous injection of sodium pentothal or sodium amytal. The appropriate dosage of these drugs invariably induces a state of light hypnotic sleep. During sleep, the subject could then be given suggestions which would produce the characteristic deep hypnotic trance. While in the first drug-induced trance, the patient could be given posthypnotic suggestions to the effect that he would be susceptible to hypnosis thereafter without the use of drugs. Subsequently the subject could be allowed to practice carrying out posthypnotic suggestions. He could then be rehypnotized, still without his conscious cooperation, but this time without the use of drugs.
>
> The report admitted that at the time of its writing there was no certain knowledge of just how successful each of the three methods described might prove to be with individuals "who are on their guard against being victimized by hostile authorities." "The drug technique," suggested the report, "would probably turn out to be the simplest and most efficient of the three and so it would be the most likely candidate for . . . hypnotizing defendants against their will.""
>
> *Government Use of Amnesia-Induction Through Hypnosis.*
>
> "Another important use of hypnosis for the government, the

> report said, would be the induction of amnesia: "Once a deep hypnotic trance is achieved, it is possible to introduce posthypnotic amnesia so that [a subject] ... would not know . . . that he had been subjected to hypnosis, to drugs, or to any other treatment.""
>
> *Operation Mind Control*, Walter Bowart (New York: Dell Publishing, 1978).
>
> "The barbiturates [Sodium Pentothal] do not magically enhance memory. Like hypnosis, they simply render the subject more relaxed and suggestible. According to psychiatrist August Piper, Jr., Amytal produces "slurred speech, drowsiness, a feeling of warmth, distorted memory, and an altered time-sense." In other words, it creates a state "similar to alcohol intoxication." Many therapists continue to tell their clients that the drugs actually do promote only true memories, however."
>
> *How to Believe the Unbelievable*. Mark Pendergrast, (Hinesburg, VT: Upper Access Books, 1996).

[dcxxvi] Still, we have to consider the strong possibility that Jim Penniston would have experienced difficulty getting past the 'mental control block' on his memory, and so he chose to say nothing. And again, even if there were times when he didn't have difficulty remembering, Jim had already decided that NO ONE should know about this, as it would cause more problems for him than he was willing to deal with at that time. And even then, we have to consider the possibility that this 'conscious' decision could still have been affected from a subconscious level by what Jim was told by the agents – that it would hurt people to know about the binary code and all it entailed.

But really, at the end of the day and for whatever reason, Jim Penniston's conscious decision to exclude any mention of the 'telepathic binary code download' before 2010 is something people should respect. It's not like Jim Penniston was under a signed contract to tell the public everything – especially something that he felt would make people believe he had lost his mind. The incident was traumatic enough to contend with, without that. And even then, he felt that the ones and zeros would no doubt bring ridicule not only to him, but also to the Rendlesham Incident.

Again, it was a traumatic time for Jim Penniston – especially when he wrote down the string of ones and zeros the next day to get them out of his mind and system. Seeing the ones and zeros on the pages, he felt forced to question his own sanity. And so, not ever wishing to talk to anyone about this aspect of his experience is understandable – even though the 'binary code' part of what he had experienced that morning did come out when Jim underwent hypnosis in September 1994, as was first mentioned in the publication *Glimpses of Other Realities: Volume II: High Strangeness* by Linda Moulton Howe in 1998.

So really, the truth is that Jim HAD indeed mentioned the notebook at the same time he first came forward with his true account of what happened on the morning of December 26, 1980, in the interview he did with Sally Rayl in December 1993.

[dcxxvii] (*The Rendlesham Files* by Dr. David Clarke, 2010).

[dcxxviii] *Getting It Right at East Gate*, by Jenny Randles, posted August 24, 2009.

[dcxxix]

Following is a thought-provoking commentary I received by my friend, scholar, and microbiologist,

Manu Seyfzadeh, on his observations about Jim Penniston's internal struggle with the binary code after he read through the first four chapters of this book:

> "Jim felt the urge to write down the code even though his mind told him it's crazy and could damage his career. This internal struggle between gut and mind is probably the single most important aspect of the whole experience which allows the reader to judge its authenticity. I would make sure that the guttural aspect of it does not get washed out by any sort of reasoning or logical thinking about the purpose or sense of the code. As crazy and nonsensical and career-ruining Jim may have thought the whole thing is, he felt better when he wrote down the numbers. People relate to the gut. The mind is corruptible. The second point is that this urge to cleanse will relate to the form of communication sent by the sender of this message, something you will doubtlessly discuss later in this or follow-on volumes.
>
> The sender purposefully planted the code appealing to Jim's curiosity, the symbols, and made sure it got put on paper by inducing a sense of mental imagery and discomfort. The code was not conveyed by means of a message to be received by a logical mind. This goes against all preconceived notions and expectations in searching for extra-terrestrial signals.
>
> I think this is absolutely brilliant as it reveals the sophistication of the messenger. It operates on a totally unexpected level, which is, by our human nature, way more effective than the level on which we think we will be contacted. Jim was not given a choice. He had to write down the code. The question is why would someone like him, with strong intellectual brakes on himself, be a better (i.e., safer, more predictable) medium, than someone like Burroughs who may have less self-awareness and less internal conflict? The answer again seems counter-intuitive: You need exactly someone who suppresses the inner drive to generate the necessary internal tension. It's this tension which secured the recoding of the code in an act of catharsis."
>
> Email to Gary Osborn by Manu Seyfzadeh, March 28, 2019.

[dcxxx] In the book *Final Events and the Secret Government Group on Demonic UFOs and the Afterlife* by Nick Redfern, we are told that during May 1994 (some four months before Jim Penniston's hypnosis session on September 10, 1994), investigative reporter Linda Moulton Howe received a phone call by Christian Pastor and UFO researcher and investigator Ray Boeche, who had researched and written about the Rendlesham Incident and had interviewed some of the witnesses in the early '80s. Boeche, who had been studying the UFO phenomenon since the 1940s, told Linda Howe that he had met two intelligence agents, who were Department of Defence but also associated with a highly classified

agency called the *'Collins Elite.'* He then said that they had asked if they could be given a copy of her book *Glimpses of Other Realities, Volume 1: Facts & Eyewitnesses.* Howe agreed, and asked if they could write in the margins whatever comments they have about what is correct and incorrect.

In June, Boeche called again and told Howe that she would be receiving a package in the post containing a computer floppy disc that was handed to him by the two agents. He said that they did not want to write in the margins, and that instead their comments about her book had been written and saved on the disc. In the comments, Howe was recommended to study theoretical physicist David Bohm's work *Wholeness and Implicate Order* (published in 1980) – adding that much insight into the mechanics of the NHE's (non-human entities) could be gained from the study of Bohm's ideas . . . .

The two agents also told Linda Moulton Howe that they had first become aware of Ray Boeche through his work on the Bentwaters/Rendlesham Forest Incident in the UK (December 26-28, 1980), "when his probings began to bother a number of high level people within our government."

It is likely that this and what came out of these discussions, which will be elaborated on is some detail in Book 2 about the findings of the binary code, and the theories regarding the Rendlesham enigma, was what prompted Linda Moulton Howe to first contact Jim Penniston.
[dcxxxi]

The last section of the hypnosis session about the time travelers, as transcribed and presented in Chapter 14: *Regression,* was published in Linda Moulton Howe's book, *Glimpses of Other Realities* Vol 2: *High Strangeness*, published in 1998. At the end of the quoted hypnosis session, Linda Moulton Howe writes:

> "After the September 10, 1994 hypnosis session was over, Sergeant James Penniston described the U.S. government's position concerning the Bentwaters encounter this way:
>
> "They're not going to mess with anyone who has had contact. They (U.S. government agents) are not sure what the (time traveler) beings are going to do, either. "GEEZ, it's incredible! The American government is helpless. They don't want to know what the hell to do and aren't going to mess with me because they don't know what THEY (beings) are going to do. The government doesn't know if the beings will do something or not. The government is worried about interference."

Linda Moulton Howe then writes:

> "Penniston means alien interference, perhaps even retaliation, if governments try to stop or interfere with the time traveler's presence and genetic harvests from earth life."

Jim Penniston did not mention 'time traveler' during his comment, which Linda Howe has placed in parenthesis in her quote, as if that's what he was referring to. Jim Penniston said, "beings," but in the wider context of the term, in that he doesn't know 'what' or 'who' these "beings" are – meaning the intelligence behind the craft he encountered. Jim Penniston was then, and still is cautious in stating the belief that the craft – an unmanned drone – was sent from time travelers from our future, despite what he said while under hypnosis.

As for the last line, Jim did not mean interference from "aliens." When Jim Penniston said, "the government was worried about interference," he meant interference in the government's secret plans, strategies, manipulations and propagandist techniques aimed at the mass consciousness of this planet from 'beings' who are watching and monitoring what is going on right now, as if like a 'higher consciousness,' which might not just be looking back, but 'looking down' on the elite's power structure on this planet and on its activities, which has perhaps led to the problems they now trying to fix. It might not have anything to do with ourselves from the future, but an intelligence that is 'out of time,' as we know it, and can view both the future and the past of our reality. Jim says this intelligence can also manipulate time and space and uses *inter-dimensional time travel*, which is beyond the limitations posed by the human-related 'time travel from the future' hypothesis used to explain the phenomenon.

Theories as to what lay behind the Rendlesham Incident will be presented and discussed in Book 2, which will also present the findings from the eight-year study of the seven sets of geographical coordinates from the binary code that Jim claims he received on Boxing Day 1980.

[dcxxxii] It is true that Jim has never watched the video tape of the session in full. He told me that he could only watch a few minutes of it at a time before he had to turn it off because of the trauma of what he experienced, and I believe him, having worked with him now for eight years. I was sent the video by Darren DeBoy, who had a copy of it, and I transcribed all of it. I then sat down with Jim during a Skype session and went over it all with him, which was then typed up for what became Chapter 14: *Regression*, and it was emotional for Jim. It was apparent to me that Jim didn't know a great deal of what he had said during the hypnosis session, but it helped to piece together some of what had happened – even though he has almost total conscious recall on what happened that night/morning on Boxing Day, 1980. Even when some of the hypnosis session was published in Linda Moulton Howe's book, Jim did not read it and did not make the association – i.e., that when the words "binary code" came up as quoted in the book from the hypnosis he underwent in 1994, that it referred to the ones and zeros he began writing down in his notebook the morning after the incident.

[dcxxxiii] *Left at East Gate* by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins (1997), p. 238. Taken from a transcript of a discussion Larry Warren had with his co-author, Peter Robbins, talking about his barracks on RAF Bentwaters, 1980 – 1981, when he was 19 years old.

[dcxxxiv] See: *A Statement from Peter . . . A Statement regarding Left At East Gate and my coauthor of that book*. Originally posted online by Peter Robbins, June 13, 2017.

In her book, "*You Can't Tell the People*" (2001), Georgina Bruni writes that she had received a letter in 1999 by a friend/partner of Larry Warren's who had pointed out that his medical records should be proof enough that he was involved in the Rendlesham Incident, adding that Warren had produced medical records for an eye problem (retina burn) that he had suffered while at Bentwaters, and as a result of the incident – i.e., the flash or shards of light he saw when the red ball of light exploded.

However, in January 2017, Sacha Christie in her article: *Larry Warren issues statement about his documents. Col Charles Halt responds,* (Sunday, 15 January 2017) revealed that the medical paper that Warren has long claimed is proof of his eye problem while at RAF Bentwaters is a forgery.

Also discovered to be a fake or forgery is Warren's *in-processing instruction sheet.*

Relevant quotes:

> Jimmy Church: Okay, I'm gonna ask you three questions back-to-back and all I want is a yes or no answer, okay? Okay, night 26, did you see Larry Warren?
> John Burroughs: "No."
> Jimmy Church: "Night to day two. On the base

anywhere did you see Larry Warren?"
Burroughs: "No."
Jimmy Church: "Day three. You're out there with Halt, and Bustinza is there too as well. Did you see Larry Warren?"
Burroughs: "No."

John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black* (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

"Left at East Gate is a strange book. I can understand why people unfamiliar with the case will be awed by it, because Warren and Robbins tell a fantastic tale that is just what people want to hear. It is exactly what you would expect to be turned into a movie."

"*Getting It Right at East Gate"* by Jenny Randles, Magonia, posted August 24, 2009.

Jenny Randles words are quite prophetic because Larry Warren is the main focus of a movie now being made as this is being written about the Rendlesham Incident, titled *Capel Green*, as produced by Gary Heseltine. It is highly ironic that the non-witness who was never there has always been first at everything before the primary witnesses, from world-wide public exposure in 1984, to now being the star of a movie – demonstrating the age-old adage that a lie will go once around the world before the Truth gets its running shoes on.
[dcxxxv]

In October 2017, the book, *Left at East Gate*, by Larry Warren and Peter Robbins, which had received widespread praise from so-called UFO experts and others at the time, had been suspended from publication by Cosimo publishing due to the fact that the experiences described in this book had been found to be inaccurate or embellished.

[dcxxxvi] Pages 1 and 2 of 3 of *Witness statement* (December 29, 1980). Handwritten and signed: "A1C John Burroughs 81SPS SPOL CFL." Not dated.
[dcxxxvii]

Source: Rendlesham-Incident Forum entitled, *The Rendlesham forest/RAF Bentwaters case*. (Posted by "Frank," Friday, December 3, 2010).
[dcxxxviii]

John Burroughs interviewed on *Paranormal Witness*, *The Rendlesham Files*, aired November 27, 2013.
[dcxxxix]

Page 1 of 1 of typed *witness statement* signed "Edward N. Cabansag," A1C, USAF 81st Security Police Sq. Not dated.
[dcxl]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).
[dcxli]

Ibid.
[dcxlii]

Ibid.

[dcxliii]

Ibid.
[dcxliv]

Ibid.
[dcxlv]

Ibid.
[dcxlvi]

Lieutenant Fred A. Buran's Witness Statement:

STATEMENT OF WITNESS

Place Bldg 679, RAF Bentwaters
Date 2 Jan 1981

'I, Fred A. Buran , hereby state that (Special Agent AFOSI, Security Police, Other – Specify) I do hereby voluntarily and of my own free will make the following statement without having been subjected to any coercion, unlawful influence or unlawful inducement.

The following statement is general in nature and may be inaccurate in some instances due to the time-lapse involved and the fact that I was not taking notes at the time of the occurrence. At approximately 03.00 hrs, 26 December 1980, I was on duty at bldg. 679, Central Security Control, when I was notified that A1C Burroughs had sighted some strange lights in the wooded area east of the runway at RAF Woodbridge.

Shortly after this initial report A1C Burroughs was joined by SSgt Penniston and his rider, AMN Cabansag. SSgt Penniston also reported the strange lights. I directed SSgt Coffey, the on-duty Security Controller, to attempt to ascertain from SSgt Penniston whether or not the lights could be marker lights of some kind, to which SSgt Penniston said that he had never seen lights of this colour or nature in the area before. He described them as red, blue, white and orange.

SSgt Penniston requested permission to investigate. After he had been joined by the Security Flight Chief, MSgt Chandler, and turned his weapon over to him, I directed them to go ahead. SSgt Penniston had previously informed me that the lights appeared to be no further than 100 yds from the road east of the runway.

I monitored their progress (Penniston, Burroughs and Cabansag) as they entered the wooded area. They appeared to get very close to the lights, and at one point SSgt Penniston stated that it was a definite mechanical object. Due to the colors they had reported I alerted them to the fact that they may have been approaching a light aircraft crash scene. I directed SSgt Coffey to check with the tower to see if they could throw some light on the subject. They could not help.

SSgt Penniston reported getting near the 'object' and then all of a sudden said they had gone past it and were looking at a marker beacon that was in the same general direction as the other lights. I asked him, through SSgt Coffey, if he could have been mistaken, to which Penniston replied that had I seen the other lights I would know the difference. SSgt Penniston seemed somewhat agitated at this point.

They continued to look further, to no avail. At approximately 03.54 hrs, I terminated the investigation and ordered all units back to their normal duties. I directed SSgt Penniston to take notes of the incident when he came in that morning. After talking with him face to face concerning the incident, I am convinced that he saw something out of the realm of explanation for him at that time. I would like to state at this time that SSgt Penniston is a totally reliable and mature individual. He was not overly excited, nor do I think he is subject to overreaction or misinterpretation of circumstances. Later that morning, after conversing with CPT Mike Verrano, the day-shift commander, I discovered that there had been several other sightings. Any further developments I have no direct knowledge of.'

[signed] Fred A. Buran
81st Security Police Squadron
AF FORM 1170. 2 Pages.

'Fred Buran is a good and reliable person. He might talk if his name were protected. I further state that I have read this entire statement, initialled all pages and corrections, and signed this statement, and that it is correct and true as written.'

[Handwritten comments added at a later date. Most likely written by Lt. Col. Charles Halt.]

[dcxlvii] Witness statement of MSgt. J. D. Chandler:

STATEMENT OF WITNESS
Place _____
Date 2 January 1981 [handwritten]

"I, J. D. CHANDLER, MSgt USAF [name handwritten], hereby state that (Special Agent AFOSI, Security Police, Other – Specify) I do hereby voluntarily and of my own free will make the following statement without having been subjected to any coercion, unlawful influence or unlawful inducement.

At approximately 03.00 hrs, 26 December 1980, while conducting security checks on RAF Bentwaters, I monitored a radio transmission from A1C Burroughs, Law Enforcement patrol at RAF Woodbridge, stating that he was observing strange lights in the wooded area just beyond the access road, leading from the east gate at RAF Woodbridge. SSgt Penniston, Security Supervisor, was contacted and directed to contact Burroughs at the east gate. Upon arrival, SSgt Penniston immediately notified CSC that he too was observing these lights and requested to make a closer observation. After several minutes, Penniston requested my presence. I departed RAF Bentwaters through Butley gate for RAF Woodbridge. When I arrived, SSgt Penniston, A1C Burroughs and
Amn Cabansag had entered the wooded area just beyond the clearing at the access road. We set up a radio relay between SSgt Penniston, myself and CSC. On one occasion Penniston relayed that he was close enough to the object to determine that it was definitely a mechanical object. He stated that he was within approximately 50 meters. He also stated that there was lots of noises in the area which seemed to be animals running around. Each time Penniston gave me the indication that he was about to reach the area where the lights were, he would give an extended estimated location. He eventually arrived at a 'beacon light', however, he stated that this was not the light or lights he had originally observed. He was instructed to return. While on route [sic] out of the area he reported seeing lights again almost in direct pass [sic] where they had passed earlier. Shortly after this, they reported that the lights were no longer visible. SSgt Penniston returned to RAF Woodbridge. After talking to the three of them, I was sure that they had observed something unusual. At no time did I observe anything from the time I arrived at RAF Woodbridge."

[signed] J. D. Chandler
81st Security Police Squadron
AF FORM 1170. 2 Pages

[dcxlviii] Quoting Georgina Bruni: *"In view of the aforementioned I conclude that the time of 03.00 hrs for the initial sighting is incorrect." "You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery* by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001).

[dcxlix] Quoting John Burroughs:

"Well we saw something strange . . . and this is where I want to be clear to people too, because this is where it gets twisted. We

were in the forest, and it was before we climbed the fence and went into the farmer's field . . . went down by the farmer's house and went forward. Now, the area we were in, you couldn't see the lighthouse . . . even from that area . . . even when you crossed the fence and went through the field . . . until you passed the farmer's house. THAT'S where the lighthouse would be coming into effect for us. But, where we had our encounter in the forest, there was . . . there was no way the lighthouse could have played any part in it. So, we did see something strange briefly down by the farmer's house and we did go forward from that because we wanted to see if we could figure out what it was, because we didn't know for sure what it was. It was just something we couldn't explain. And we went forward, and my statement says that. And eventually, when we passed the farmer's house we did see a beacon. We did ID the lighthouse light later on, and so we went out as far as we could. And that . . . that's another thing that just doesn't add up, because when I went back the last couple of times, I tried to retrace everything. And where we ended up, I remember seeing . . . looking down into the valley, identifying the lighthouse, and everything else was . . . was five miles from where the incident took place. Now when I wrote my statement, when I remember what happened at 3:00 in the morning, it was all done by 5:00. It's just really strange that we could be at one point, out and back, covering over ten miles in less than two hours. It just doesn't all add up."

John Burroughs Rendlesham UFO Witness,
interviewed by radio host Alejandro Rojas for 'Open Minds Radio,' October 27, 2014.

Not unless the investigation started at just after midnight . . . .

Jim Penniston does not share Burroughs' views that the full duration of the investigation took just two hours:

Quoting Jim Penniston:

"What we thought was apparently only an hour's worth of investigation time, turned out to be four hours."

The Unexplained. UFO's vs The Government. TV Documentary,
produced by Towers Productions, Inc. for A&E Networks. 1997.

Burroughs' stubborn refusal to accept the possibility that the investigation began around midnight and not 3:00 a.m., as he believes, or has been led to believe, has forced him to make more of a mystery out of the incident than is necessary.

Burroughs has confirmed that the witness statement attributed to him, and which is now in the public domain, is the same one he wrote some days after the incident . . . *however, he seems confused about when he actually wrote it and handed it in, and who was with him during these times.* (For

example, see Note 407).

[dcl] See Ian Ridpath's Webpage: *The 3 a.m. fireball – how it all started* by Ian Ridpath.
[dcli]

As Burroughs states in the *Open Minds Radio* (October 27, 2014) interview quoted above in Note 15, and Jim Penniston has also stated numerous times, *there is no way one could see the lighthouse from the landing site of the forest clearing where they encountered the craft.* However, Ridpath chooses to ignore this as if the observation skills of BOTH men must be seriously impaired even in light of the fact that Penniston is a trained observer . . . *or both men are simply lying.* Burroughs then says that it is true that the lighthouse could be seen from where they passed the farmer's house, *but this was later* and when chasing the craft, which was now a mere light in the sky, and sometime after the more significant event which took place at the landing site in the forest.

We should note that two of the witnesses had their testimonies altered and sanitized by their superiors, who were no doubt involved in a cover up from the beginning and who then allowed people to assume from these official witness statements that what the first responders saw was always the beacon light of the Orfordness Lighthouse.
[dclii]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001)
[dcliii]

The Secret Files: Rendlesham by Dr. David Clarke. Originally published in *Fortean Times* 204 (December 2005)
[dcliv]

The following quote is from *Glimpses from Other Realities Vol II,* by Linda Moulton Howe. Linda Howe writes that the craft was "disc-shaped":

> "Penniston knew he had purposely left out the most significant part of his encounter: approaching a white light, seeing a large disc-shaped craft with raised symbols on its surface, reaching out to touch the symbols and receiving binary code information."
>
> *Glimpses from Other Realities Vol II, High Strangeness*
> by Linda Moulton Howe (LMH Productions, 1998).

Jim Penniston says that he never said it was a "disc-shaped" craft. In fact, he was angry that Howe had published this, as well as other things he wasn't happy about, and told her so.

[dclv] *Ibid.* p. 55.
[dclvi]

Ibid. p. 55.
[dclvii]

"*Getting It Right at East Gate*" by Jenny Randles, Magonia, posted August 24, 2009.
[dclviii]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 73).
[dclix]

Ibid. p. 76.

[dclx]

"You Can't Tell the People": The Definitive Account of the Rendlesham Forest UFO Mystery by Georgina Bruni (Pan Macmillan, 2001, p. 73).

[dclxi] During her interview with General Gordon Williams, Georgina also inquired into the Halt memo. The general is quoted as having said, *"That memo should never have been sent. If I had known about it I would have tried to retract it"* (Bruni, p. 116), which is interesting in view of the fact that Colonel Halt had said that the memo was approved and authorized by Williams and Base Commander Conrad, who had both read it before Halt sent it, and it was even William's idea that Halt contact British RAF Liaison Officer Donald Moreland, who urged Halt to write up the memorandum for the MOD. (See Chapter 10: *Containment.*)
[dclxii]

Adrian Bustinza told Georgina Bruni that Colonel Conrad gave him a lesson on how to handle the press, should they start asking questions, and that Colonel Gordon Williams told him that he did not want to personally know anything about what had happened, that it was a matter for the people who were dealing with it. Georgina writes: "Of course, Colonel Williams had to be careful that he did not get caught up in the drama, it was in his best interest to leave it to the AFOSI to investigate" (Bruni, p. 193).

[dclxiii] *X-Conference 2010*, Washington DC, National Press Club, May 7–9 .
[dclxiv]

See: *Linda Moulton Howe interviews John Burroughs – X-Conference 2010*, Uploaded November 17, 2010.
[dclxv]

Note by Jim Penniston:
In the years to come, "Annie Wilkes"' reassurances and guarantees that she would NOT share my private emails or our private discussions turned out to be a deceptive lie. As I later learned to my dismay, nothing could be further than the truth, as Wilkes would openly share my private emails and those who had corresponded with her in public on her Facebook group page about the Rendlesham Incident.
[dclxvi]

Note by Jim Penniston:
The truth is that while Burroughs wanted a high number of members on the *Justice for the Bentwaters 81st Security Police at Rendlesham Forest 1980* Facebook group page, he would block people – people he viewed as only being on there to create conflict and trouble, but who didn't always agree with him, or both of us – and unfortunately, I would also be blamed for blocking them. These actions by Burroughs led to former members who now held a grudge against both of us, creating a group page of their own named the *Rendlesham Lone Ranger UFO Facebook Group.*
[dclxvii]

John Burroughs appears to have been angry that 'Prometheus Entertainment' had altered the episode they had originally planned to film to then showcase the binary code. Burroughs accused the producer Kim Sheerin of *". . . making Jim look like he is the Messiah."*

Quoting Burroughs:

> "Jim and I were able to preview the piece before we departed the UK and my comment to Kim was "you just screwed us. You're making Jim look like he is the Messiah." The focus on the binary information was Prometheus's idea, not his. All Jim did was give them 6

pages of the binary information – they took it from there."

From 'Considerations Notes, Note 2: The Binary Code,'
9 March 2014.

Note: These 'Consideration Notes' were not written by Burroughs, and were most likely ghost-written for Burroughs by Larry Lowe. However, the extract above was written by Burroughs or was transcripted from what he had said.

This photo was taken during the film shoot of *Ancient Aliens* after Burroughs had noticed the ones and zeros in Jim Penniston's notebook . . . everyone is smiling except Burroughs. Photo sent to the authors by Patricia Bullock Williams, who writes: *"This is Ancient Aliens when John noticed the code . . . and boy, he does not look happy!"*
[dclxviii]

This synchronicity is noteworthy, because it is important to note that through the combined method of injecting SSgt. Jim Penniston with sodium pentothal and placing him under hypnosis, the agents had attempted to block Penniston's memory of the very moment during the incident when he experienced the telepathic download of a message in binary code . . . *not knowing that Jim had his own proof of the binary code in the fact that he had already written down the string of ones and zeros he received telepathically in his notebook in the early hours of the day following the incident, December 27, 1980.*

Now, obviously the *same date* being divided by thirty years could be a coincidence. However, considering the 'otherworldly' nature of the incident, one could be forgiven for saying this EXACT 30-YEAR DURATION between the 'December 30' date the agents tried to suppress the existence of the binary code, and the 'December 30' date when the existence of the binary code was finally made public, was orchestrated or micromanaged in some way. And if so, then one would have to assume it was orchestrated by the same intelligence behind the binary code, not only to confirm its validity in the otherworldly sense – in that this demonstration of timely-manipulation is beyond our control and could only happen through divine intervention – but also as an extended middle finger gesture to the 'agents of deception' and their superiors who tried to contain the incident . . . and especially all knowledge of the binary code. It should also be acknowledged that Jim Penniston was not in control of the dates these events took place.

The reason why I consider the above scenario – which I am certain would be viewed as a mere

coincidence by the more skeptically-minded amongst us – is that through my own eight-year study of the seven sets of coordinates found in the binary code, I have noted several logical reasons why we had to wait thirty years – the same number given in the two dates – for the binary code to be made public, and so I conclude that this was intentional on behalf of whatever intelligence had devised it. This will be evident to the reader when reading Book 2, which is all about the additional findings I have made from the coordinates of the code.

[dclxix] ***The Angelia Joiner Show***

There are many who have criticized and ridiculed Jim Penniston over the radio interview he did with Angelia Joiner on her UFO show, January 13, 2011. The point made is that Jim clearly *"contradicted himself"* and that he had a *"meltdown"* at the questions being asked and that *"his testimony had imploded"* – all things the skeptics would indeed like to believe and have their audience believe. The Angelia Joiner interview with Jim Penniston was later analyzed by Jeff Ritzmann and Jeremy Vaeni ("Jeff and Jer") on their *Paratopia Radio* podcast, *Paratopia* 117: *Is Rendlesham Dead?*

> Episode description
> "Jeff & Jer dissect a brilliant episode of another podcast, *The Joiner Report*, where host Angelia Joiner puts enough great questions to Rendlesham Forest Incident witness Jim Penniston that his testimony implodes. Though often hailed as one of the greatest UFO cases of all time, Jeff & Jer have to ask: *Is the Bentwaters/Rendlesham Forest Incident dead? If so, who killed it and why?* They lay out possible scenarios, but ultimately the listener must decide what's going on here."

The truth is that Jeff and Jer had presented a grossly misconstrued and misleading version of what Jim Penniston had said and the way he conducted the interview. Jeff and Jer are right to point out that Jim Penniston had stated that his thoughts about the binary code was that it's *"probably just gibberish,"* but then he later said that he knew parts of what was in the code . . . *"I knew what those six pages said before they were deciphered . . . ."*

But their interpretation of it was skewed. It was more about what they wanted to hear and how they wanted to present it, and not what Jim Penniston had meant or intended, as was made clear later in the Angelia Joiner show, which we will reveal in a moment.

However, soon after this show came the YouTube video *"Jim Penniston's testimony implodes,"* posted by someone who had also expressed his intense dislike of Jim Penniston, which is irrational seeing as he doesn't know the man, and has called Jim "a liar."

Again, the fact is, like the "Jim and Jer" radio show, the FULL radio show of the interview Angelia Joiner conducted with Jim Penniston is not featured on the YouTube video, *"Jim Penniston's testimony implodes,"* and so the part where Jim actually explains this apparent "contradiction" when later challenged by Angelia Joiner, is not included to be heard, and neither has it even been acknowledged – not alone fairly analyzed – and really because Jim is clearly saying that his knowing what the coded message said at a deeper level, and if the message transmitted through him in binary code actually said anything to that effect, or said anything at all . . . *are two different things.*

In effect, the people who have led the criticism and ridicule against Jim on this issue of what he said during the Joiner interview and have accused him of lying, have conveniently left out this part of the interview, which goes some way in explaining why it 'appeared' that Jim contradicted himself . . .

A. Joiner:

"Okay. So, earlier you said that you felt that the contents of the code would all be gibberish."
J. Penniston:
"Right."
A. Joiner:
"But you knew parts of it weren't."
J. Penniston:
"Correct. What I felt it said, and if it actually said something, might be two different things. I mean there's just no way. I know nothing about computers. I barely got through algebra. And so, the chances of me writing any type of electronic information down or language [correctly] *would probably be the same as one in a trillion . . . one in a hundred trillion chance. I don't know, it's impossible."*

From the transcript of *The Joiner Report.* (Jim Penniston interviewed by Angelia Joiner), January 13, 2011.

Another quote:

J. Penniston:
"Angelia, ones and zeros... I don't know what they mean, deciphered or not. These are what the experts are saying it says. I mean I don't know how to do that, it's beyond my capability."

From the transcript of *The Joiner Report.* (Jim Penniston interviewed by Angelia Joiner), January 13, 2011.

Again, what Jim Penniston was saying was that there is a difference between 1) receiving a message that he felt he knew was a code and to some extent had understood at a deeper level . . . *"what I felt it said."* In other words, he felt he knew and understood the message from the impressions he had while receiving it as a whole and at the subconscious, subliminal level . . . and 2) writing it all out correctly – especially in its correct sequence in binary code.

In other words, Jim's rational mind was telling him that the message he knew when transferred to paper and in a sequence of ones and zeros, could easily be full of transmission errors (*"gibberish"*) and not make sense – hence his words *". . . and if it actually said something"* – meaning what he had written down in binary code….

This is also evident in the part of the interview that has been analyzed, but has still been misinterpreted as a contradiction:

Jim Penniston:
"First of all, I just thought they were gibberish. I didn't think they were gonna say anything, I mean who in the world can write down 1's and 0's and 1's and do fourteen pages of it and they mean anything. I mean that's impossible. So, I was pretty sure it was all gibberish."

Angelia Joiner:
"But you knew it was code."

Jim Penniston:
"I knew it was code because that's the impression that was left with me at the contact site."

In fact, not only did he know it was a coded message but Jim has said that the moment he actually received it he knew deep down that the message contained the following information: *Fourth Coordinate Continuous Sequence Probe for Exploration of Humanity*

But whether the sequence of ones and zeros HE WROTE DOWN from being stored in his brain/mind *would actually reflect the full message properly and precisely* is another thing, and he thought that he had lost his mind when he began writing down pages of ones and zeros.

There is also another way of viewing this, and Jim and I have discussed this, also. To me, the apparent contradiction these guys have been quick to point out while neglecting this part of the interview, and also the ambiguous way Jim Penniston came across in the interview, seen as some kind of cognitive impairment, or a *"meltdown,"* even though Jim was quite ill when he was being interviewed, also indicates an internal conflict in Jim Penniston. It's like the right side of Jim's brain (which is related to the subconscious), subliminally knew what the code contained and from the time he actually received the code, but that the left side of his brain – the predominant judge, filter and suppressor of information (especially what emerges from the right brain) – thought that the actual transmission would all be "gibberish" anyway, hence the apparent contradiction which reflects the conflict in Penniston about the code and why initially, he didn't want to release the information about it.

In any case, these seemingly contradictory statements can happen to anyone who is being interviewed and questioned – especially in public – as there is also the pressure of intense filtering going on in the mind in which one wishes to tell all, but is also deciding whether he or she should say or not say certain things that could be ridiculed by others; be misinterpreted; taken out of context; or land him or her in trouble. It's like Jim was trying to appeal to both sides of the brain in his audience. Saying that he thought the one and zeros would turn out to be "gibberish anyway," as he thought there is no way he would have been able to write all these ones and zeros down in the correct sequence to produce a message (even though he had a subliminal sense about them being an intelligible code and that he had a sense of what some of it meant overall), would also align him with the more skeptically-minded amongst his listeners – i.e., the predominant 'left-brainers' – showing them that he also adopts a common-sense view of everything and is also trying to rationalize it, as is his natural of a man of his character being in the military. On the other hand, saying he knew at a deeper level what the code said, even though this goes against his natural character, would appeal to the predominant 'right brainers.' After all, he had an experience that shook his world, and he was never the same afterwards.

There are also other things to consider….

Bruce Arnold, one of the more intelligent posters I have read on a UFO site I visited once – although not everything he says has been correct – says that, in his opinion, Jim Penniston has several screen memories imposed by the AFOSI agents who interrogated him. Bruce Arnold says Jim Penniston confuses these memories and that his pauses and stutters when interviewed indicate this. I would agree that this is another factor to consider, as it becomes evident from what Jim Penniston says while under hypnosis and which was videotaped, that the AFOSI agents during their interrogation of Jim Penniston had attempted to block the 'binary code download' part of his experience from his memory. In any case, all this is typical of the predominantly 'left-hemispheral activity' people, who are encumbered with a very limited, reductionist view of the world, and who are far too skeptical, critical and insensitive to consider these nuances and factors because they tend to see everything in black and/or

white, and will quickly jump all over this, assuming things while leaving out or ignoring vital information, and concluding that Penniston is a liar and has falsified his story about the code, and, therefore, it's not worth bothering with.

[dclxx] Note by Gary Osborn:
When Jim sent me the remaining six sets of geographical coordinates found in the binary code, this happened to be the very same week that my co-author Scott Creighton and I had sent our last draft of the manuscript for our new book, *The Giza Prophecy*, off to the publishers. The book contained a Foreword written by Graham Hancock. Graham had worked closely with Scott and me in the months leading up to our completion of this work so that he could endorse everything in it.

[dclxxi] Note by Gary Osborn:
I was surprised to see my friend and fellow author, Philip (Filip) Coppens on the *Ancient Aliens* documentary segment I was sent talking about the fact that if an advanced alien culture or civilization wanted to communicate with us, then the simple language of binary code would be the first choice. Philip later expressed his wish to assist me with the binary code message and coordinates, but on December 30, 2012, Philip sadly died of a rare form of cancer (*angiosarcoma*) that he had suddenly contracted and which had taken him within a month of his diagnosis. It was a shock for me, as we had only been talking about the project before he became ill. A month before I had heard of Philip's tragic condition, I was having my left kidney and adrenal gland removed (November 5) because of the malignant renal cell carcinoma growth I had been diagnosed with in April of 2012. I was lucky because I had complained about a pain in my right side, which caused me to agree to an ultra-scan, which is how the growth on my left kidney was found. However, on the day of the ultra-scan the pain in my right side had stopped and I haven't had it since. This has never been explained, and I should mention that this was the first time in my life that I had ever had any kind of scan. So far, and since then I have been cured of all cancer.
[dclxxii]

As mentioned, one of the people who had also attended the dinner and later became part of Jim Penniston's group, attending conferences and other gatherings, was Patricia Bullock Williams, who said that these people paid for the entire UFO Conference because they wanted to have dinner with Jim, John and Linda, which Pat Frascogna had arranged on their behalf. Originally, these people only wanted the three of them to fly down for dinner . . . no conference. Apparently, it was Pat Frascogna who had suggested inviting them to an arranged conference. Patricia said that only one of the people who had arranged the dinner party showed up for the conference the next day and that he gave his entrance fee, but refused to fill out information and only stayed for a few minutes. Patricia described what happened the evening of the dinner party, saying that Linda Moulton Howe still mentions the dinner party as the creepiest she had ever been to in her life, and she agreed – especially when entering the grand hall made with concrete blocks that could sit fifty people, covered in old, huge, heavy wall hangings. She continued, "They had a men's restroom and a woman's restroom, and they had black female maids dressed in black with frilly white aprons," sending a message of economic division and racial marginalization that was disturbing. Also, Patricia said that Linda was the first to call these people "Illuminati." Apparently, they all lived in the general vicinity of Jackson, not far from each other and did not attend conferences. Instead, they invited the speakers to this house, the main compound, to talk to them in person. It seems these people were powerful enough to have once had the Director of the Hermitage Museum at St Petersburg fly in to have dinner with them, so Patricia had heard. Patricia then added:

> "When we first walked in, everyone was quiet and posed with their wine glass. I heard that each of those people paid at least $500 to a $1000, a couple, to be there for

the dinner. I think I heard that when I was sitting between Jim and John, which I shouldn't have done, as I think I blocked a paying guest from sitting between them to have a conversation, which he felt he was entitled to. I was supposed to sit in the corner with Myron Lockey and Dr. Steve. Anyway, each one of these people asked probing questions, especially to Jim, John and Linda. When we got back into the van to leave after the dinner, we all laughed and wondered what the hell all that was about. Linda asked me *"Are they Illuminati or Presbyterians?"* I said "Illuminati." The next day after we had taken John Burroughs to the airport and before I took Jim for his flight, Jim and I were eating lunch at a restaurant with Pat Frascogna and his wife Lisa, We were discussing the interesting family and the illuminating dinner the night earlier, when Arnie our host from that event appeared behind us. You should have seen Jim's face when he realized who it was. One of the first things that Arnie said was *"You know, in my family, we are all Presbyterians."* I almost fell off my bar stool, realizing they must have bugged the van! You see, it wasn't my van. Someone took my car and I had to drive theirs. The person whose van it was, backed out of going to the dinner at the last minute, and we were late because of all that. I wasn't used to driving that size van. It was not new at all, kind of industrial. Did I lock the door? Probably not. It would have been easy to have bugged it."

[dclxxiii] Note by Gary Osborn:
Seeing as my own presentation was largely about my own work concerning the binary code and what I had already discovered, I, too, had to pull out of the conference after it was announced I would be attending. Robert Salas, one of the guest speakers at the conference, sent me an email asking me to reconsider, but I told him I couldn't see how I could give a talk about the code without Jim Penniston being present, as it was he who had commissioned me to study the coordinates from the code. I was then asked to just give a talk about my own work. However, although my work was associated with what I had found encapsulated in the coordinates, I really wouldn't be able to reveal how the two were connected, and so I would only be able to concentrate on my own research work, which – without the inclusion of the code – would appear irrelevant to the subject of Rendlesham, which was what the conference was all about.
[dclxxiv]

Vince Rotonda was the Consulting Producer for *Unsealed: Conspiracy Files*, by *Smart Dog Media*, January 2012 – February 2013, 1 year 2 months, located in Los Angeles. Rotonda oversaw all phases of production and post from sizzle reel to delivered product, and also approved show concepts, outlines, scripts, etc. In addition, he gave notes on all cuts and participated in press junkets.

[dclxxv] Note by Gary Osborn:
I first approached Robert M. Wood's son, Ryan S. Wood on October 22, 2018, and after explaining who I was and why I was contacting him, I enquired about the test report made on Jim Penniston's notebook page in 2012 that had been authenticated to *c.* 1980. Ryan didn't know anything about it, but

then introduced me by email to his father Robert M. Wood, and I again enquired about the test report. After some questions asked of me, and after Mr. Wood had said that he seemed to recall it, I was then stonewalled. I received no further response. I thought his silence may have something to do with the issue of attorney Pat Frascogna having got involved just after the report was made and that when Mr. Wood recalled what happened he decided he would rather not get involved again.

I then approached Ali Dubrow, the producer back in 2012, by email and again enquired about the copy of the test report that she had told Jim Penniston she was sent just after the test was completed. After kindly checking for me, Ali told me that unfortunately she could not locate it, and possibly no longer had it.

Update:

In July (26 to 28), 2019, Jim Penniston attended the 50th Anniversary ("Embracing the Future") MUFON Symposium conference at the Hotel Irvine in Irvine, California, as a speaker. One of the other speakers there that weekend just happened to be Dr. Robert Wood. During the course of the conference Jim Penniston took the opportunity to approach Mr. Wood to discuss the authentication of the notebook page. And Mr. Wood had confirmed to Jim in front of several other people who were present that day, that he had indeed authenticated the last page of binary sent to him by the documentary producer Ali Dubrow almost exactly seven years ago in 2012. As mentioned, having this done was a request made by Jim Penniston to the producer Ali Dubrow, who had featured Jim in the documentary made by her production team. In front of everyone who was present that day, Dr. Robert Wood stated that after analyzing the degradation of the paper and the ink written upon it, he dated it to c. 1980.

Again, Jim Penniston has every intention of getting the binary pages of the notebook forensically tested.

[dclxxvi] A woman who had attended the Sedona MUFON conference in 2012 and was a close member of the group with Jim Penniston and John Burroughs had a few comments to say about Burroughs attitude to a photo she had taken. She told me that she took a photo of Jim and John at the conference, which took place inside a church, and that above one of the internal doors was a banner with the words, "Son of the Father," and that this was "directly" over Jim's head as he stood for the photo – although he didn't know this, and so Burroughs, having seen the photo . . .

> ". . . began calling Jim, "Father Jim," *ad nauseam."* [Being sarcastic] "John, who was annoyed by the photo, kept pointing out places around Sedona where Jim could start his church/cult. I think there was the John of God compound, which was for sale in Sedona, and John said he thought that would work out well because then they could have "Father Jim and John of God." I did not know why John kept saying that until I read his statement about the Prometheus shoot." [See Note 667] "Actually, I now remember Jim telling me this himself back at that time. I had forgotten it, but yes, you can see what John was up to as it must have angered him that he was seeing these "signs" that fed into what appeared to be his jealousy and paranoia about it. Jim was nonplussed about all this and took John's ribbing in stride – he would just chuckle it off. But I do remember Jim had brought it up in a conversation with me and Darren DeBoy, and Darren's thoughts were that John was losing the plot."

[dclxxvii] Letter from General Williams to General Welsh:

February ____, 2013
General Mark A. Welsh, III, Chief of Staff UNITED STATES AIR FORCE 1000 Air Force Pentagon
Washington, D.C. 20330-1000
Re: John Frederick Burroughs & James William Penniston

General Welsh:

I am writing to you in hopes that you may offer assistance for two men who were under my command in 1980, Airman First Class John Frederick Burroughs, and Staff Sergeant James William Penniston. In 1979 I was transferred to the 81St Tactical Fighter Wing, Royal Air Force Station Bentwaters, England, as vice commander. The following year in late December of 1980 and while in the line of duty at RAF Bentwaters, Airman Burroughs and Staff Sergeant Penniston responded to unexplained lights in the adjacent Rendlesham Forest. Within days following their encounter in the forest, both men began experiencing Negative physiological effects. The adverse effect on the health of these men continues to this very day and has, just recently, nearly cost Airman Burroughs his life. Repeatedly, his physicians over the years have advised him that if they knew what he was exposed to In 1980 it would be of great value in treating him today. These men have tried in earnest to get whatever information they could from the government, including the enlistment of an attorney to help them with FOIA requests, however, their efforts have consistently been thwarted; none of their FOIA responses have offered anything but denial of the existence of any records. This is absurd given the fact that a formerly "UK Restricted" stamped document included herewith specifically cites the Rendlesham incident and potential negative health effects there from. In closing, I request that the health of Airman John Burroughs and Staff Sergeant Jim Penniston be considered with a bit more concern and respect than that which has been previously shown. Any assistance you may be able to provide to these men would be very much appreciated.

Sincerely,

_____

Maj. Gen. Gordon E. Williams, USAF (Ret.) GEW/ Enclosure

[dclxxviii] While being interviewed on the Jimmy Church radio show on January 23, 2019, John Burroughs was asked by a caller if he had suffered any nightmares or trauma as a result of the incidents he was involved in back in December 1980. Jimmy Church also questioned Burroughs on this:

> Jimmy Church:
> "Do you have flashbacks today to the incident?"
> John Burroughs:
> *"No, not really. Do I like have PTSD from it? Do I have dreams? Issues? And no, I never really had that."*
> Church:
> "You don't wake up in the middle of the night in a cold sweat?"
> Burroughs:
> *"I've woke up covered in sweat and different things like that, but it's not directly tied to me having a dream about what happened that night."*
>
> John Burroughs interviewed by Jimmy Church on *Fade to Black*
> (Game Changer Radio Network), January 23, 2019.

[dclxxix] During the Phenomenon KGRA radio show, which he hosted with Linda Moulton Howe (listen to the second half of *Al Ward and Melinda Vail,* Phenomenon KGRA Radio, May 25, 2017), Burroughs has this to say about the face he recalls seeing while he believes his mind was inside the craft, all from what emerged while he underwent hypnosis:

> "Well I always told you before, I never knew who the face was, but I could see it quite well. Well since the session I think I know who it is, and I'm not going to say on the air. It would be a human face, somebody whom I have had an interaction within the past few years."

From what Burroughs has said on several occasions, it is possible that he is referring to Dr. Christopher "Kit" Green. And if so, and we could be wrong, *then why would Kit Green's face turn up in Burrough's recall of things that came up while under hypnosis?*

[dclxxx] Note by Gary Osborn:
Dr. Christopher Kit Green was one of the recipient/correspondents on theoretical physicist, Dr. Jack Sarfatti's exclusive email list, of which I was also made a recipient/correspondent. During 1999 and long before I became an author, I was researching into what I later discovered was a 'Kundalini awakening' experience I had on November 10, 1993, and because of the insights I was having as a result of that experience, I was led to Jack Sarfatti's work, and then began an ongoing correspondence with Jack. After something we discussed, and it became clear that he, too, had experienced the same phenomenon in 1953, I was then placed on Jack's exclusive email list, which included many notable individuals with whom he had been involved over the years – i.e., Physicists John C. Lilly, Fred Alan Wolf, Saul Paul Sirag, Hal Puthoff, Kit Thorne, Michael Ibison, and Nick Herbert; psychic researcher Stephan Schwartz; physicists and parapsychologists Russell Targ and Dean Radin; entrepreneur Joe Firmage; the late Apollo astronaut Edgar Mitchell, (the sixth man to walk on the Moon), psychic Uri Geller; remote viewers Ingo Swan and Joe McMoneagle; networker Ira Einhorn; political investigative journalist Dick Farley; psychologist Stanley Krippner; author Robert Anton Wilson, and last but not

least, Colin Wilson, with whom I had already corresponded with since 1997 and met in 2000, and became friends with. And yes, there are some people on the list who represent certain Intelligence agencies around the world and who were obviously monitoring what was being discussed.

Some of these people on Sarfatti's list were members of the so-called *'Aviary UFO group'* Some of these people on Sarfatti's list were members of the so-called *'Aviary UFO group'* Some of these people on Sarfatti's list were members of the so-called *'Aviary UFO group'* – a name that UFO researchers and authors, Bill Moore and Jamie Shandera, had coined as an imaginary group to place these people in as they were seen to work on different projects together. Ufologist, Jacques Vallee, ("Parrot"), CIA officer Dr. Christopher (Kit) Green ("Blue Jay"), Bruce Macabbee ("Sea Gull"), John Alexander Ph.D. ("Penguin"), Dan Smith ("Chicken Little") and CIA scientist Ron Pandolfi ("Pelican") – the list goes on. I later discovered that Hal Puthoff was also a member of the Aviary (as "Owl"). Aside from Jack Sarfatti, the first people I found myself corresponding with directly were philosopher Jahn Davis, (USAF retired), and Dan Smith ("Chicken Little" of the Aviary). Dan Smith introduced himself to me in an email and was interested in the content of the reply posts that I was sending Jahn Davis.

The Aviary (again, a name created by Bill Moore and Jamir Shandera) has been described as a group of intelligence and Department of Defence officers and scientists who were disclosing facts about the UFO phenomenon. Dan's name was "Chicken Little" – the bird who prophesied that the sky was going to fall, and was ignored by the other animals. Like this 'prophet chicken,' Dan had a thing about a coming 'End Time' or '*Eschaton*' event . . . basically 'the second coming' in the guise of the "UFO-related alien presence he referred to as "the visitors." Apparently, Dan had good authority on all this from his close associations with people in various Intel-agencies.

It was later that I discovered that at the time of these discussions, Dan was in a close, friendly liaison with CIA scientist Ron Pandolfi (Aviary name "Pelican") and also John B. Alexander (Penguin), the Program Manager for Contingency Missions of Conventional Defence Technology, Los Alamos National Laboratories. John Alexander was also on Jack Sarfatti's list. Also, Dr. Kit Green was Ron Pandolfi's predecessor of the "Weird Desk" at the CIA. Kit Green worked for the CIA from 1969 to 1985 as Senior Division Analyst with the Office of Scientific and Weapons Intelligence. Green was rumored to have possessed very high security clearances. According to Dan Smith (Chicken Little), "Kit Green at one time had autopsy reports and photos of a UFO that crashed in a foreign country." However, like remote viewer Major Ed Dames, *"a small part of his work involved intelligence to do with remote viewing (RV), UFOs and other hot paranormal topics of the 1970s"* (*The Aviary, the Aquarium and Eschatology* by Vince Johnson, September, 2013). Dr. Green was currently the chief of the Biomedical Sciences Dept. for General Motors. The CIA awarded him the National Intelligence Medal for his work on a classified project during the period 1979 to 1983" (*John Alexander, UFOs, Myths, Conspiracies, and Realities: The Rest of the Story* by Grant Cameron, April, 2011).

Kit Green was interviewed for the BBC 2 documentary *The Secret Life of Uri Geller*, as he was the CIA guy who allowed Geller to be tested at SRI in the early '70s. (I had met Uri Geller when Jack Sarfatti, Mark Pilkington, and the late author and my personal friend, Filip Coppens, were invited to Uri's home on October 4, 2006.) John Alexander, as one of the Aviary called "Penguin," mentions Kit Green in his book, which author Grant Cameron gives some comment on in his own book, *John Alexander, UFOs, Myths, Conspiracies, and Realities: The Rest of the Story:*

Quote:

> "Another forgotten name in the Alexander book is Kit Green, who according to an audio tape interview with Pandolfi was the man who started the Advanced Physics Theoretical Conference with John Alexander. Kit Green worked for the CIA from 1969 to 1985 as Senior Division Analyst with the Office of Scientific and Weapons Intelligence. While at the CIA he was responsible for the "weird desk" before Pandolfi arrived and took over.

Green was rumored to have possessed very high security clearances. Bill Moore, the UFO researcher that came up with the concept of the Aviary (a group of intelligence and military people who Moore utilized in an attempt to find out the truth about what the government knew about UFOs), described Kit Green as "a person close to the President of the United States, capable of checking on information to determine its reliability." Green like Pandolfi talked about UFOs and the president, and the fact he may not have a need-to-know. Speaking to reporter Gus Russo Green stated, "I have spoken to three former presidents and the subject always comes up, not as a briefing, but they also want to know the truth. But apparently they aren't cleared for it." [See *I Spy, Psi Spy* by Gary S. Bekkum, 2013].

Green also spoke openly about the possibility of a cover-up with Mark Pilkington and John Lundberg who were doing a book and documentary on "the truth of UFOs in America." Their research involved talking to "intelligence agents, disinformation specialists, and UFO hunters." In an interview conducted in Detroit, Green outlined the "core story" first developed in 1986. Green said that he "along with Hal Puthoff and computer scientist and ufologist Jacques Vallee, distilled what they knew about the subject into what has become known as the core story."

"Simply put, the core story, according to Kit," Pilkington wrote is this: 'The ETs came here, maybe once, maybe a few times. Either through accident or by design, the US government acquired one of their craft. The only problem was that the physics that powered the craft were so advanced that for decades we humans have struggled to understand it or replicate it.'" [See *Mirage Men: An Adventure into Paranoia, Espionage, Psychological Warfare, and UFOs* by Mark Pilkington, p. 279.]

This statement by Green is a strong indication that there is an institutional interest and there is a group of people tasked to handle the hard evidence. Yet for some reason, Green and his statements have been ignored in the Alexander book.

There are many other names not mentioned in the book such as Brigadier General Arthur Exon who claimed there was a UFO crash and there was a group set up to deal with the subject. Exon stated on the record that he was aware of a group he called the "Unholy Thirteen" that was a UFO controlling committee made up primarily of very high-ranking military officers and intelligence people. He mentioned being aware of testing by other personnel involved, and the recovery and shipment of bodies while C/O at Wright-Patterson AFB. Also not mentioned were comments made by 4-star Army General Wesley Clark who when asked if he had been briefed on UFOs said, "I heard a bit. In fact … There are things going on. But we will have to work out our own mathematics."

Once again the question is why do Generals say confirming

> things to UFO researchers and say nothing to Alexander? It is a question that Alexander should have dealt with in his book."

And now we find that Kit Green, Hal Puthoff and John Alexander are now directly and indirectly involved or associated in some way with the Rendlesham Incident. According to Colonel Halt, it was John Alexander, now a close friend of his, was the only person who ever debriefed him about the Rendlesham Incident in 1990 or 1991, around the time when Halt retired. (See Note 28 in the end notes of Chapter: *The 'Hold Forth' Years.*) And of course after the 'Citizen's Hearing on Disclosure' at The National Press Club April 29 – May 3, 2013, Dr. Kit Green had contacted Pat Frascogna, who was John Burroughs' and Jim Penniston's attorney, offering his help to access John Burrough's medical records and assist the VA in understanding how to treat Burroughs' condition, which he said he was able to do with the assistance of Senator McCain's office.

[dclxxxi] Patricia Bullock Williams told us that before the first meeting between Kit Green and Pat Frascogna, she told Jim, John, and Pat on a conference call that the Aviary's main purpose is to break Jim and John apart. They all shrugged it off.
[dclxxxii]

There were two doctors working with Dr. Kit Green. These were Dr. Gary Nolan, who flew into Las Vegas from California, and Dr. Colm A. Kelleher – both of whom were going to drive to Flagstaff in Arizona to meet with Dr. Kit Green, John Burroughs, and attorney Pat Frascogna.

Colm Kelleher was Deputy Administrator for the National Institute for Discovery Science (NIDSci), founded in 1995 by real-estate developer Robert Bigelow, who set up NIDS to research and make a serious scientific study of anomalous paranormal phenomena. NIDS purchased the Skinwalker Ranch, southeast of Ballard, Utah, which is allegedly the site of paranormal and UFO-related activities, and after journalist George Knapp first wrote about it in 1996. Deputy Administrator Dr. Colm A. Kelleher led the investigation there for a number of years and later co-authored the book *Hunt for the Skinwalker* with George Knapp (Paraview Pocket Books, 2005). Among those involved was also retired US Army Colonel John B. Alexander, who characterized the NIDSci effort as an attempt to get hard data using a "standard scientific approach." Source: *Wikipedia*. It was John Alexander who had also assisted Burroughs.

[dclxxxiii] During his interview on KGRA radio with host Grant Cameron, John Burroughs states that he told Kit Green, no, he couldn't have his blood or DNA.

[dclxxxiv] Note by Jim Penniston:

> It was months later that I found out from our lawyer Pat Frascogna that Burroughs had chosen to become a willing participant, as per Dr. Kit Green's request for a sample of his blood and DNA, and really for the sake of personal and financial gain. It was relayed to me that Burroughs had made the trip to San Francisco and that this was Burroughs' own decision, and that while there, Burroughs did a full range of blood work and examination with SRI.

[dclxxxv] See: *Unidentified Aerial Phenomena (UAP) in the UK Air Defence Region*. National Archives. Archived November 10, 2012.
[dclxxxvi]

The email discussion Jim Penniston had with Nick Pope:

April 22, 2014
Nick Pope wrote:

Hi Jim,
This is really bizarre. I can't figure out whether John doesn't believe in the binary code and is trying to distance himself from it/criticize you, or whether he's fully signed up and wants to be at the center of it all.
Best wishes, Nick.

April 23, 2014
Jim Penniston to Nick Pope:

I just don't know what he is doing. He does not appear stable Nick. I am wonder does he want me to react? Which I won't. And in the last email, which I think you were copied a few months back. He wanted to pursue a government check for disability and what the government knows about Rendlesham. I said I have no interest in that, I am going to pursue research on this phenomenon and what happened in that forest. He agreed, and now he is a binary expert. Good God, I am sitting here typing this so confused about the binary and the whole enigma about it. If I don't know how or what it is about, how in the world can he? I think he should spend some time in the VA hospital with his PTS and trying to remember what I remember from the incident. The only good thing since I cooled everything with John is that everyone from my security flight at Bentwaters is now talking to me openly. I only wished I had done it earlier when we were writing the book. They all had interesting vantage points and could add a lot. Crazy stuff. Halt thinks he has lost it, and apologized for not working with us on the book, but the reason was John. I am wishing you good luck John. He is as Halt described decades ago, A "loose cannon". Very sad situation. But I will do everything to assist you Nick in the future, whatever that may be. :)

All the best, Jim.

P.S. Speaking of Colonel Halt. He has read the book, and said it was a very good read and he liked it. He also offered to do projects with me in the future as long as John is not involved. He told me the reason why he is not talking to John, and it has nothing to do with his fruitless lawsuit. It is the way he talks to him.

[dclxxxvii] Back in December 1999 I had purchased both volumes of Linda Moulton Howe's *Glimpses of Other Realities* while visiting a New-Age bookshop in Santa Monica Boulevard, Los Angeles. I had only read through the first volume and so I didn't know until some twelve years later and some months after I had begun work on the coordinates from the binary code, that the second volume actually

included a transcript of Jim Penniston's hypnosis session in September 1994. So, in effect, and without knowing, I had purchased a book which contained the first mention of the binary code that I would one day become involved with in deciphering some 11 years in the future.

It was sometime later when I decided to read Colin Wilson's book, *Alien Dawn* a second time, that I discovered that the bookshop where I had purchased Linda Moulton Howe's two books, was the very same bookshop that Colin Wilson mentions in Chapter 3 of his book. Wilson says that in 1996 he visited this book shop owned by his friend John Wright and while there purchased numerous UFO books to begin his research on *Alien Dawn.* The copy of *Alien Dawn* I was re-reading was actually given to me by Colin, who had given me this signed copy when I visited him at his home in Cornwall, England, 2000. But what I didn't know is that in his book, Colin also mentions Jim Penniston's telepathic download of information – merely reiterating what he had read in Linda Moulton Howe's *Glimpses of Other Realities* Vol 2:

> "Staff Sergeant James Penniston claims not only to have seen the UFO at close quarters, but to have touched raised symbols on its surface, from which he received some kind of information. This seems to have been received telepathically."
>
> *Alien Dawn: An Investigation into the Contact Experience*
> by Colin Wilson. (Fromm International, 1998).

[dclxxxviii] . . . as John Burroughs had said more than once after he and Jim Penniston parted company in 2014. However, it soon became obvious that Burroughs really didn't understand what I had discovered, and wasn't paying attention when he, Jim, and I discussed my findings during the Skype sessions the three of us had regularly between 2012 and 2014. This is evident in one of a list of essayed documents Burroughs had titled, *Consideration Notes*, which were written for him by someone else, even though Burroughs will regularly post these while giving his audience the impression that he had personally written them himself.

In any case, the document in question is 'Consideration Note 8: *Dots on a map,'* posted April 24, 2014. The document gives a short list of possible scenarios to explain the existence of the binary code, one being that *". . . the folks who did the debriefing wanted to plant a distraction for those investigating the case in later years as a layer of disinformation. In that case, Jim would be unaware, unable to distinguish the compulsion to write the code down from the effects of the event."*

Well, if it was all a distraction, then it's a very intelligent, complex and sophisticated one, full of revelations and answers to things that I personally have been researching for many years, and contains enough information to fill three volumes.

Also, the view that the binary code was devised by an intelligence agency to eventually bring ridicule to the Rendlesham Incident and to discredit the witnesses, especially Jim Penniston, does not fit with the facts – the most evident fact being that what has emerged from the binary code is highly-advanced mathematical, geometrical and geodetic data, which makes it a superlative piece of work and encoding which deserves to be taken seriously. (See also Note 36).

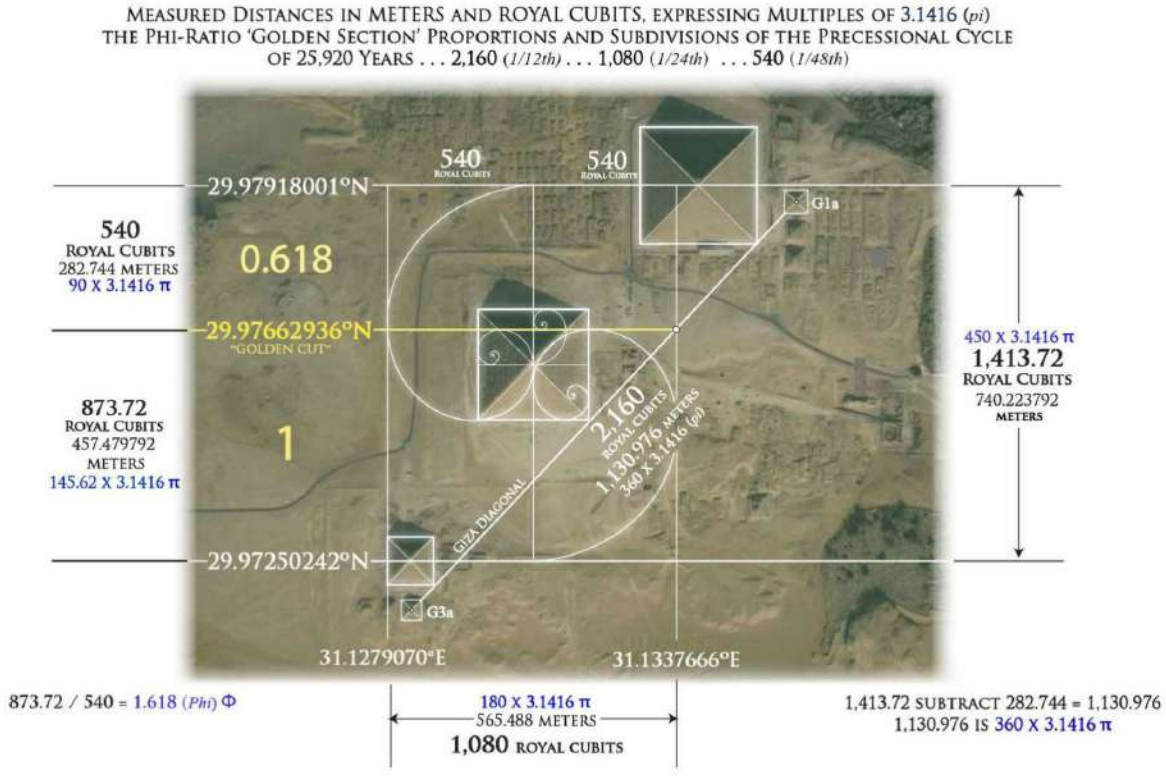
[dclxxxix] The *Giza Diagonal* is named after Egyptologists, Mark Lehner and Hans Goedicke, who brought the 'Giza Diagonal' to public attention during the '80s, although Mark Lehner could offer no convincing explanation as to why the pyramids were lined up diagonally on his abstract line by their southeast corners.

See graphic below with the coordinates as they are today in 2019, and which illustrates the abstract line of the 'Giza Diagonal' stretched between the two subsidiary pyramids referred to as "G3a" and

"G1a," at a distance of 2,160 royal cubits, which is *1/12th* of the Precessional Cycle of 25.920 years according to the ancient estimate. Also, note how the '*Phi*-ratio-proportion' distances between the three pyramids at Giza, in both meters and royal cubits share a close relationship. Not only do they provide the length of the 'Giza Diagonal,' but they also give us the subdivisions of the precessional cycle of 25,920 years – 540 and 1,080 – and are also multiples of 3.1416 (*pi*) – the same approximation of *pi* that produces the royal cubit in meters by dividing 3.1416 by 6.

> *"Their hallmark* [the architect(s) and builders of Giza] *seems to have been precession – perhaps because they liked its mathematical regularity and predictability – and they used precession to devise a plan which could be understood properly only by a scientifically advanced culture."*
>
> *Fingerprints of the Gods* by Graham Hancock, (William Heinemann Ltd), 1995.

I would ask the reader to study this graphic closely as there is much encapsulated within it and all the measurements are factual and precise.



[dcxc]

Copyright © Gary Osborn 2019. All Rights Reserved.

Fig. 8: The full vertical distance of 1,413.72 royal cubits, which is 450 x 3.1416 *pi*, subtract the meter-value distance of 282.744 = 1,130.976, which is the length of the *Giza Diagonal* in meters, and which is 360 x 3.1416 (*pi*).
1,130.976 meters divided by 0.5236 meters (1 royal cubit) = 2,160 royal cubits – *1/12th* of the Precessional Cycle.
1,080 is *1/24th* of the Precessional Cycle, so 2 x 1,080 = 2,160.

1,080 royal cubits x 0.5236 meters (1 royal cubit) = 565.488 meters, which is 180 x 3.1416 *pi*. 282.744 meters, which is 90 x 3.1416 *pi*, divided by 0.5236 meters (1 royal cubit) = 540 royal cubits – *1/48th* of the Precessional Cycle. 457.48 meters divided by 0.5236 meters (1 royal cubit) = 873.72 royal cubits. 873.72 / 540 = 1.618 *Phi*.

We note that the latitude of 29.97662936ºN, which divides the *Phi*-ratio proportions of 1 and 0.618, represents the *"Golden Cut"* with the two golden spirals positioned in a "69" configuration – the heads positioned neatly within the square of "G2," with the smaller spiral aligned with the apex-center – proving that none of this is arbitrary or contrived. Also, in this graphic is a clue as to how TWO of the seven sets of geographical coordinates found in the Rendlesham binary code initiated and started the step-by-step process by which all this factual information about Giza then emerged.

These are major discoveries which expose a high level of intelligence that is difficult to reconcile with the present belief that the ancient Egyptians had both planned and constructed Giza. To my knowledge, what you are looking at here has remained secret and unknown for thousands of years and has not been revealed in public until now, and we owe this to whomever the intelligence is that had factored all this data and more into the seven coordinates of the binary code – information which had lain dormant from 1980 until 2011, which is when I began to unravel it all.

In the book I co-authored with Scott Creighton, *The Giza Prophecy* (published in February 2012, and which is obviously about Giza), the subject of the *Svalbard Global Seed Vault* and how it might give us answers as to what the Giza pyramids were used for is presented on pages 47 and 48. The last draft of the manuscript of *The Giza Prophecy* was sent to the publishers the very same week that I received the remaining six coordinates from Jim Penniston – one of these being the Giza coordinates in which the coordinates that point to the Svalbard Seed Vault were embedded. So, it was indeed odd that a glaringly obvious relationship between Giza and Svalbard should emerge from one of the Rendlesham coordinates found in the binary code as claimed to have been received by Jim Penniston on Boxing Day morning, 1980.

The purpose of the Svalbard Seed Vault (also mentioned with the prefix, "Doomsday)" is to preserve the world's seeds in the event of a global catastrophe. Approximately 1.5 million distinct seed samples of agricultural crops are thought to exist. We are told that the conservationist Cary Fowler, in association with the Consultative Group on International Agricultural Research (CGIAR), began the project of the global seed vault to preserve a wide variety of plant seeds that are duplicate samples, or 'spare' copies, of seeds held in gene banks worldwide. Construction for the Svalbard Global Seed Vault began in 2006. Nordic plant germplasm as frozen seeds had been stored in the Nordic Gene Bank – an abandoned coal mine at Svalbard since 1984 – which is some four years AFTER the Rendlesham Incident.

This fact rules out the possibility that a Seed Vault at Svalbard could have existed as a well-known conception in people's minds at the end of 1980, when Jim Penniston claims he received the binary code. In fact, the official line is that the Svalbard Global Seed Vault, which has the capacity to conserve 4.5 million seeds in an attempt to insure against the loss of seeds in other genebanks during large-scale regional or global crises or global catastrophes, was first conceptualized in 2005.

In *The Giza Prophecy*, Scott Creighton and I present what we call the RVT ('Recovery Vault Theory'). It was essentially Scott's theory that the pyramids of Giza in Egypt were perhaps appropriated (not what they were originally built for) as 'recovery vaults' in the event of a major global catastrophe, which is why we find that the possible date of the catastrophe (which was seen as a recurring pattern), was also encoded in the layout of the Giza monuments – the GIZA DIAGONAL (see graphic above) – which provides a precessional cycle timeline showing us when these catastrophes occur in the timeline.
[dcxci]

This was already a theme I was familiar with, having discovered since 2000, that the angle of 23.5

degrees had been encoded in many different sources throughout history, especially in paintings dating from the 17th century. I was the first to discover these references since Frank C. Higgins – a 32-degree Freemason had first written about them in 1919.

I found that many features, such as columns, pillars, staffs, poles, flagpoles, scepters, spears, lances, pikes, clubs, bones, limbs, swords, knives and other linear, sharp and rectangular objects, to be conspicuously and definitely at the angle of 23.5º, and in some cases 23º – which is most evident in the earliest sources. We find this with certain linear items or features in well-known Masonic symbols and esoteric symbolism – and especially those in highly symbolic paintings portraying mystical or religious themes. These references to the Earth's axis date back to ancient times. For example, we find the 'round value' angle of 23 degrees evident in ancient Egyptian art – especially illustrations or wall-relief scenes that feature the *Djed Column* or *Djed Pillar*, a symbol of the spine of the ancient Egyptian god *Osiris* and the Earth's axis. However, I discovered the most interesting reference to the Earth's axis is in the North/South cross-section of the Great Pyramid of Giza, which is the angle from the south-corner vertex to the center of the King's Chamber. Along with the other angles in this view of the Great Pyramid, such as the 6.5-degree offset of the King's Chamber, we find that the Great Pyramid is pointing to its own location on the Earth. 23.5º + 6.5º = 30º . . . the Great Pyramid being almost 30 degrees north of the Equator at 29.97918001ºN. (See figure 6).

[dcxcii] There is really no person or epoch we can connect the Giza pyramids to with confident certainty. (For example, see *The Great Pyramid Hoax* by Scott Creighton, which is one of the most important books about the Great Pyramid of Giza that has been published in recent years. In brief, Scott has engaged himself in several years of excellent detective work on the so-called quarry marks and cartouches attributed to king Khufu in the Great Pyramid of Giza, as found and claimed by Colonel Vyse in 1837, and what Scott has uncovered clearly amounts to a forgery having been committed. To think that the selfish ambitions of one person could have been allowed to have such an effect on people's views and beliefs by those whom it suited in blocking human progress to understand the past, and that there are people today who still have an invested interest in this lie, is deeply shocking and inexcusable.

Essentially, what Scott has presented clears the ground and opens the door for more research, in that people are free again to speculate on the age of the Great Pyramid, its true purpose and also the recognition that the Great Pyramid, the Sphinx and the other pyramids at Giza contain the secrets to a lost, advanced knowledge and science.

> "With the authenticity of the pyramid quarry marks in serious doubt, the Great Pyramid becomes a structure that is, once more, largely anonymous to us, and, as such, we can perhaps begin to imagine an entirely different provenance for the monument as well as all the other giant pyramids of ancient Egypt. We can now begin to raise questions that have not been seriously considered since these highly dubious marks and cartouches presented by Vyse from the Great Pyramid effectively silenced the debate almost two hundred years ago: Who were the true builders, and what was the true function of these first pyramids? We can perhaps now begin the process of disentangling and correcting a 180-year-old mistake and take the first tentative steps to discover the true history of these monuments."
>
> Scott Creighton, *The Great Pyramid Hoax: The Conspiracy to Reveal the True History of Ancient Egypt*

(Bear & Co, 2016).

And so, rather than keep connecting the three largest pyramids at Giza to the Old Kingdom Pharaohs, the more unbiased researchers among us who are not afraid of uncertainty and wish to engage with the truth, can now rid themselves of such outdated, preconceived notions and beliefs which are largely based on lies that serve ulterior motives and self-seeking agendas; clean the slate and get back to the just the basic facts laid before them, so they can re-examine and re-evaluate the data.

So like the researchers today who dismiss the mainstream, Egyptological view of the pyramids, I now refer to each of the three largest pyramids objectively and impersonally as G1 ("Giza 1"), G2 ("Giza 2"), and G3 ("Giza 3"), as first designated by the American archaeologist George A. Reisner in his publication *A History of the Giza Necropolis* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1942).
[dcxciii]

Quote:

> "There are many hidden signs within the text of Revelation that suggest its author, the putative "John of Patmos", was well informed about the golden cut; Plato was compelled to mention the same subject only in coded references in his philosophy. The golden cut is a division according to the continuous geometric proportion known commonly today as the golden mean. It establishes a continuous, proportional connection between the consciousness of the Infinite Creator and the physical world."
>
> *The Lamb Slain With A Golden Cut: Spiritual Enlightenment and the Golden Mean Revelation* by Alison Charlotte Primrose. (Balboa Press, 2016).

To discover as a result of following the step-by-step process of what was provided by two of the seven sets of coordinates from the binary code, that the "Golden Cut," which divides the *Phi*-ratio, golden section proportions of 1 and 0.618033988749… was encoded at Giza, is truly mindboggling. Taking what Alison Charlotte Primrose says, what was encoded at Giza does indeed "establish a continuous, proportional connection between the consciousness of the Infinite Creator and the physical world."
[dcxciv]

My earlier research work which went into the first two books I had published – *The Serpent Grail* (2005) and *The Shining Ones* (2006), was all about this *mid-point* in human consciousness, which I term the *Neutral Point,* and which is associated with the universal 'enlightenment experience' and the phenomenon known as *Kundalini.* My research and insights were the result of a personal experience I had on November 10, 1993, which I later learned was related to this phenomenon. This early work of mine has only recently been featured in the TV/DVD series *Magical Egypt II,* produced by Chance Gardner.

It is interesting that the *Golden Cut* – the divide between the *Phi*-ratio proportions of 1 and 0.618 – as expressed at Giza, is said by Alison Charlotte Primrose (see Note 693 above) to be inseparable from enlightened consciousness, coherence and harmony and it resonates throughout the entire universe. Indeed, the dividing line known as the 'Golden Cut,' and expressed in the sections of the Golden Spiral, represents the *midpoint* or *neutral point* between the dualism of physical reality and psychical reality, male and female, positive and negative, yang and yin, and all related opposites.
[dcxcv]

Encounter in Rendlesham Forest: The Inside Story of the World's Best UFO Incident by Nick Pope

with John Burroughs and Jim Penniston (USAF-ret), (Thomas Dunne Books, St. Martin Press, 2014, p. 245).

[dcxcvi] The working subtitle I had for this book *The Timeless Conception*, was *Designing the Great Pyramid from the Future/Present.*

The reality was that the new facts and discoveries concerning the Great Pyramid of Giza, gathered both logically and intuitively by simply working out how the designer/architect could have achieved 'the impossible' of having encapsulated all this highly-advanced mathematical and geometric knowledge in the one pyramid construct, had in fact led me to design my own version of the Great Pyramid in theory – and one that indeed encapsulated all these mathematical properties I had found. In view of this, it soon became apparent to me that I need not try to prove whether the Great Pyramid was intentionally designed to the measurements I had now determined and which provided us with all this superlative mathematical data . . . it could easily work just as well the other way around.

The evidence clearly showed, and without me even saying anything, that both the measurements of the Great Pyramid of Giza and the measurements of the pyramid I had determined based on what I have learned about the Great Pyramid, are close enough to suggest that at the 'drawing board' stage, the Great Pyramid was designed to the same measurements. Of course, what was actually constructed was surely limited by practical restraints due to the tools used for measuring and, therefore, was not so perfect in meeting the ideal requirements envisioned by the architect/designer.

For example: According to the 2015, GDRF/AERA survey, the north side base length of the Great Pyramid at minimum is given as 230.256 meters. This is a difference of only 1.7 mm from my estimate of 230.2577 meters for the north side base length of the perfect pyramid I was envisioning. If the north side of the Great Pyramid was 230.2577 meters, which is what I theorized was the length the architect of the Great Pyramid was aiming for, as the meter unit was obviously known (see Note 697 below), then we derive the following:

> 1.618033988749 *Φ* (*Phi*), to twelve decimal places, multiplied by the Pyramid's north side, 'base apothem' (half-base) length of 115.12885 meters (230.2577 meters divided by 2) and the result multiplied by 1000, results in a number that begins with the first eight digits of the *miles-per-second* 'speed of light' in a vacuum figure, **186,282.39**70512. *Accuracy: 99.999997 percent.*

However, in contemplating the implications of all this, especially the origins of the meter unit, which would always be a problem for mainstream orthodox Egyptology to accept, I was forced to ask an important question and one which I ask for others who have studied the Great Pyramid:

What if we are designing the Great Pyramid of Giza in the future/present?

I reasoned that far in our future, when everything about the Great Pyramid still being gathered now is known, and when even time travel is possible, it could be conjectured that this information about the perfect pyramid that encapsulates all these mathematical properties, such as the universal constants, both the measure of the Earth, its geophysics and the geodetic coordinates of the Great Pyramid in relation, as well as the combined proportions of the Earth and moon, the distance between them, and much more besides is then either . . .

> 1. *Somehow sent back into the past to inspire the building of the very thing that is now a part of our past and which we are now trying to unravel and 'back-engineer' in the present.*

Or,

> 2. *The information has been used to build the pyramid sometime in the future, which from our perspective in the present, is also now a time in our distant past, once considered a "Golden Age."*

This, of course, suggests the unthinkable, and one I had thought about for some time (*see here*) . . . that our reality is a SIMULATION – a geometric 'information construct' made up of 'pixels' of measured information (Plank length units) "snapped to grid," which is why atoms and matter in general exist only at discrete energy levels – i.e., quantized packets of energy/information at certain values within an atom. What we experience as 'Time' is not linear, but *cyclical*-- meaning that the relatively short life or timeline we experience during our time on Earth is positioned within the 'timeloop' that is our reality made up of unconsciously-created and driven, non-deterministic 'causality loops,' and all within the relative 'NOW' or 'Eternal Present Moment' in between what we observe as 'past' and 'future.'

Quote:

> "In fact, according to the evidence of retro-causality time loops, that inevitable future is co-creating us right now just as we are co-creating it."
>
> Quantum Gravity Research. *Emergence Theory*.

In my view, the above correlates with the deeper meaning of the ancient Egyptian concept of the *Akhet.*

While working on 'Superstring Theory,' American theoretical physicist, Professor Sylvester James Gates Jnr, discovered something very interesting hidden within the equations . . . another set of equations that are indistinguishable from the equations that drive search engines and browsers on our modern-day computers. As he dug deeper, he found a special kind of computer code – i.e., strings of bits of *ones* and *zeroes* (binary code) written into the fabric of the cosmos, or rather, written into the equations that we use to describe string theory – suggesting that we are more-than-likely living in a computer simulation. See: *The Matrix is Real*, produced by Christopher Copen, Nov 2, 2014.

The following quote is from a paper titled *Symbols of Power* written by Professor Sylvester James Gates Jnr:

> "As for my own collaboration on adinkras, the path my colleagues and I have trod since the early 2000s has led me to conclude that codes play a previously unsuspected role in equations that possess the property of supersymmetry. This unsuspected connection suggests that these codes may be ubiquitous in nature, and could even be embedded in the essence of reality. If this is the case, we might have something in common with the Matrix science-fiction films, which depict a world where everything human beings experience is the product of a virtual-reality-generating computer network."
>
> *Symbols of Power* by James Gates Jnr. Physics World, Vol. 23, No 6, June 2010, pp. 34 – 39.

The *Simulation* theory of reality and also the theory of *Retrocausality* – the future affecting the past

– are being worked on at present by theoretical physicist, Dr. Jack Sarfatti, with whom I had first corresponded with in 1999. Jack Sarfatti believes the phenomenon involves time travelers from our future timeline, which he says are "Post-Human/Conscious AI (Artificial Intelligence) hybrids." In my view, such hybridization would be the result of advanced quantum computing-related systems and other technological breakthroughs in the future. As an introduction to these theories I would refer the reader to the book, *The Simulation Hypothesis* by Rizwan Virk, (Bayview Books, 2019).

The Retrocausality theory is certainly something I have been thinking about since I began to find additional information in the coordinates from the binary code message. As said, all the information that I have been able to extract from just these seven coordinates from the Penniston/Rendlesham binary code could only have been extracted with the use of certain computer mapping programs that have only been available since a few years before Jim Penniston came forward with the code in 2010, which would be the deeper reason why it took 30 years for the code to emerge.

Now imagine if you will, that all this information which had been encapsulated within these seven coordinates, which has now been discovered and extracted, all goes into a book that is published. Well that is what is going to happen surely, as Book Two of *The Rendlesham Enigma*, which is about these findings will be released soon. And if so, and if humanity survives into the distant future, then it is fairly certain that this book and its contents which will be in the public domain will also exist into the distant future.

Now, what if in the future time travel has been invented and successfully developed so as to send information back to the past, and those same seven coordinates that contain all this superlative information and many other things that we had no knowledge of, and/or had been kept secret from us, are then sent back in time to December 1980 to later be unraveled so as to have a more significant effect on the distant future, especially when we consider the themes encapsulated in the seven sets of geographic coordinates? *Where does the loop begin and where does it end?*

I am not saying that this is what I believe with the binary code message. I reserve judgement and suspend making a decisive conclusion in terms of its origin and "who" devised the code, but the 'Time' element in all this, as well as what I have also experienced personally in terms of synchronicities and synchronistic associations with certain people while studying the coordinates, and what I have experienced leading up to working on it, is all certainly notable and thought provoking.

[dcxcvii] For example, ancient royal Egyptian chariot wheels with six spokes were found to be one meter in diameter. One can argue whether these specifications of the chariot wheel really were expressive of these 'hidden' sacred/esoteric mathematical facts which may have belonged to an earlier era. But if so, then it would mean that each revolution of the two chariot wheels on the ground and as the chariot trundled along into hunt or battle driven by its unwitting charioteer, would be a length in the line made in the sand of exactly 3.141592653... *pi* in meters, with each spoke marking a royal cubit length of 0.52359877... meters on the ground, or rather 0.5236 meters, as was derived and would have been practicably applied. Because this suggests that the 'Earth measure' unit we know today as the 'meter' was known first before the royal cubit which was derived from it, then one is forced to consider the possibility that the design of the Great Pyramid and the Great Pyramid itself belongs to a more distant, archaic era, erected by an advanced civilization whose mathematicians had reached or had even gone beyond the present level of sophistication we have arrived at today. And if so, then for some reason, this advanced knowledge had been lost, and so what we are now seeing in the ancient record is largely the result of what had been rediscovered, relearned, and redeveloped. Therefore, in this regard, we can afford to give more credit to the architect(s) of the Great Pyramid – especially when we have no cold, hard facts as to who actually designed it, and there is always the possibility that it could have been someone who was possessed of the same mathematical mind, genius and intellectual caliber as any of the mathematical goliaths we know of in history, such as Newton, Leibniz, Laplace, Euler, Ramanujan, or Einstein.

However, saying that, it is also possible that the 'one-meter-diameter wheel' method from which one

can effortlessly derive the unit known as the 'royal cubit,' as well as an exact number of *pi* in meters, may have been passed onto the primitive ancient builders by the people of this advanced civilization and without the primitive ancient builders even having been tutored in the mathematics of *pi*, defined as the ratio of the circumference of a circle to its diameter.

The royal cubit of 0.5236 meters was first proposed by French archaeologist and mathematician Charles Funck-Hellet, as presented in his 1956 publication, *La Bible et la Grande Pyramide d'Egypte: Temoignages authentiques du meter et de pi* (*The Bible and the Great Pyramid of Egypt: Genuine testimonies of the meter and pi*). Funck-Hellet writes that as early as the fourth millennium BCE, the Chaldeans had a mathematical series which gave the exact values of the royal cubit, the meter unit, and *pi.* He also posited that the meter unit, as introduced by the French in the nineteenth century, was already a Hermetic measure known in antiquity, and that it was *trigonometrically* linked with the royal cubit *that had actually been derived from the meter.* Also, on page 60 of his book *The Temple in Man,* (1949) Schwaller de Lubicz writes that *"the ancient Egyptians were perfectly well acquainted with this meter . . . ."* Lubicz also mentions that on the whole length of a wall dating to the Third Dynasty (3000 to 2000 BCE), *"one finds three lines painted at the time, of which the distance between two lines is exactly one meter." He adds that this is not an isolated case "but one of thousands."*

In any case, if it really was a secret that was deemed sacred by the initiated into mathematics and sacred geometry, which also included the ancient architects, masons, and builders who built the Great Pyramid, then the timing of the metric system's alleged origins – coinciding as it did with the French Revolution and an almost obsessive interest in Hermetic philosophy – sheds more light on why this measuring system may have finally been revealed and made public.

[dcxcviii] See the review written by Alan S. Glassman, posted on June 13, 2018 on Amazon.com (customer reviews) on the page, *Cosmic Womb: The Seeding of Planet Earth* by Chandra Wickramasinghe Ph.D and Robert Bauval, (Bear & Company: December 19, 2017).
[dcxcix]

It is a fact that Jim Penniston can still write down the same string of binary code today, as if from memory. It is only natural that many would find it hard to believe that Jim could write down 16-notebook pages of ones and zeroes in the correct order to form a message when deciphered. It seems highly unlikely or improbable, but there is an explanation as to how this works.

A musician will play a solo or piece of music from memory by just playing the first few notes, and then the whole pattern of notes of the solo or piece and in perfect sequence will flow automatically from those first few notes played – the pattern stored in memory from having been learned slowly. Being a guitarist, I know that the correct pattern of notes will play out without the musician ever thinking about each note. If the musician was to think about each note, he or she would most likely interrupt the flow, and make a complete mess of it. Now Jim didn't learn the sequence of ones and zeros, but they were transferred as a 'patterned sequence' into his mind somehow, and he was able to write them all down by just starting off with the first few digits, and it all flowed automatically from there. In other words, he didn't have to think about each of the digits. This, of course, is just a theory.

[dcc] I later found that this discovery that the seven coordinates from the binary code were pointing to the core (heart) center of the Great Pyramid and, therefore, a possible central chamber, was supported by other independent sources.

I had been in contact with author and Great Pyramid researcher and mathematician Alan Green, who had been deciphering a code that he believes was devised by Dr. John Dee and encapsulated within the works of William Shakespeare. He told me in 2017 that he had discovered that the famous sonnets attributed to Shakespeare contained a code that was also pointing to the core center of the Great Pyramid. He allowed me to view what he had found, and the results are truly remarkable and substantiates what I found with the coordinates from the Rendlesham binary code. However, I am not at liberty to reveal this. Hopefully, by the time *The Rendlesham Enigma* Book Two is published, Alan

will have revealed this startling discovery, and then we can see how it correlates with what I have discovered.

(See Alan Green's Website, *ToBeOrNotToBe*).

Also, mathematician, author and friend, Manu Seyfzadeh – who is also an ancient Egypt scholar with a special interest in Giza – had written a paper on the core masonry course levels of the Great Pyramid, and found that the thicker courses were laid across the ceilings of the chambers. (See: *Hemiunu Used Numerically Tagged Surface Ratios to Mark Ceilings inside the Great Pyramid Hinting at Designed Spaces Still Hidden Within*. Archaeological Discovery, 2018, (6), 319-337, Institute for the Study of the Origins of Civilization (ISOC)1, Boston University's College of General Studies, Boston, USA).

Manu has put forward the observation/theory that the thicker courses on levels higher than the King's Chamber may indicate the ceilings of other chambers. Manu and I have discussed the code, and he is familiar with what I have discovered based on what I had found with studying the seven coordinates from the binary code, and speculates that one of these significant course levels in his paper could be at the level of the chamber pointed at by the seven coordinates, emphasizing that more research work needed to be done to see if this all correlates.

Numbers in the Dates Relating to the Rendlesham Incident and the Binary Code Point to the Center of the Great Pyramid

Strangely enough, and despite what we believe, it is a fact that the dates of the incidents relating to Jim Penniston's involvement also lead to the center of the Great Pyramid.

As we know, USAF Staff Sergeant James Penniston was a primary witness on the first night of the Rendlesham Incident, which took place on **26** / **12** / **1980**.

26th December is the **360**th day of the year.

26 x **1980** = 51,480, + **360** = **51,840** . . . which references TWO precessional cycles in years.

51.840 divided by 1000 – 51.84, which references the N/S cross-section, 'degree' side angles of the Great Pyramid . . . **51.84º**.

For those who are familiar with the dimensions and measurements of the Great Pyramid of Giza, the 'degree' side angle value of 51.84º is what identifies the Great Pyramid, and this is what the code is pointing to with its two known internal chambers . . . *but also a third 'publicly-unknown' chamber at its core-center*.

The Great Pyramid of Giza was built to the 'base to height' ratio of 14 / 11.

14 ÷ 11 = 1.2727272727272727, subtract 1 = 0.2727272727272727, divided by 10 = 0.02727272727272727, divided by 2 = 0.0136363636363636, x **1980** = **27**.

Or, in reverse:

27 divided by **1980** = 0.0136363636363636, x 2 = 0.0272727272727272, x 10 = 0.272727272727272, + 1 = 1.272727272727272 . . . the result of 14 ÷ 11, which references the 'base to height' ratio of the Great Pyramid of 14 / 11.

1980 ÷ **27** = 73.3333333333333333.

This result give reference to the *half-height* of the Great Pyramid of 73.304 meters, and perhaps the reason why the result is not the exact figure of 73.304, is simply

because . . .

73.3333333333333333 x **12** = 880, divided by 4 = 220 . . . *half-base* length of the Great Pyramid in royal cubits.

The numbers highlighted in bold are **27** . . . **12** . . . **1980**.

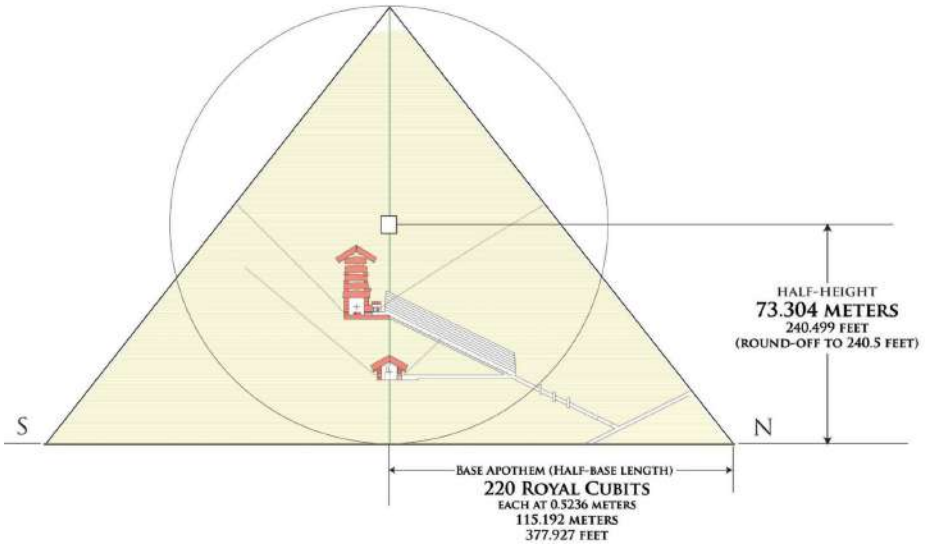
USAF Staff Sergeant James Penniston wrote down the binary code in his notebook on the morning of **27** / **12** / **1980**.

Although unlikely, 73.3333333333333333 is an extremely interesting number in terms of how the royal cubit was derived and how it applies to the Great Pyramid, because it is a mathematical fact that the base length of the N/S cross-section dimensions of the Great Pyramid of 440 royal cubits when divided by 6 = 73.3333333333333333.

And then we discover that **1980** / **27** = 73.3333333333333333.

This is quite startling in its implications – especially in light of the above facts about the royal cubit.

In any case, like the seven Rendlesham coordinates that pinpoint the core center of the Great Pyramid of Giza, these measurements in both METERS and ROYAL CUBITS also take us directly to the core center of the Great Pyramid.



Copyright © Gary Osborn 2015. All Rights Reserved.

Fig. 9: The Great Pyramid in North/South cross-section and the unknown central chamber.

The Great Pyramid N/S cross-section base length of 230.384 meters (280 royal cubits) divided by 73.304 meters (half height of Great Pyramid at 140 royal cubits) = **3.1428571428571429** ≈ π (*pi* at 99.96% accuracy – the same approximation of *pi* result as we find with the 22 / 7 (base / half-height) ratio of the Great Pyramid. (See Note 711 below).

[dcci] What I had discovered from the coordinates led me to modify certain aspects of this huge image of the Great Pyramid, which I had already discovered in the ground map of Washington DC, the United States capital, in 2005. As we can see, the White House marks the central location in the pyramid, as if whoever had a hand in encoding this image in the Washington map may have known that another chamber exists at the center of the great Pyramid. I also discovered that the avenues radiating off from

the White House at the center are all close to 23.5 degrees, as also the Arlington Bridge in the bottom left corner of this pyramid on the map, which is a significant feature.

Overlay artwork using *Google Earth*, Copyright © Gary Osborn 2015. All Rights Reserved.

Fig. 10: The encoded pyramid design in the map of Washington DC, United States Capital City, aligned centrally on the old Washington Meridian of 16th Street, with the White House at the center.

As we can see, 16th Street – a perfect North-South axis – passes straight through the center of the White House. In other words, just like the Great Pyramid which was aligned centrally on the Giza Meridian in Egypt, the Washington Pyramid is aligned centrally on the old Washington Meridian of 16th Street. This design is based on the ancient shamanic concept of the 'World Mountain' (Pyramid), said to fasten the shamanic 'World Tree' (*axis mundi*) in place, as represented by the Meridian.

[dccii] When Carl Sagan mentions a number being transmitted thousands of years ago as being *"holy"* and *"which turns out to be the nuclear fine-structure constant,"* he is most likely referring to what has been said and written in regard to the fact that the Hebrew word for *Kabbalah* . . . קבלה . . . has a *Gematria* (holy numerical value) of 137.

ה is 5 . . . ל is 30 . . . ב is 2 and ק is 100 = 137.

In Isaiah 65 in the Bible, the key phrase, *"The God of Truth,"* also adds up to 137, as does *"The Surrounding Brightness"* (Ezekiel 1). It is well-known that the physicist Wolfgang Pauli, who was obsessed with the number 137 was well aware of the mystical connotations of this number. (See: *137: Jung, Pauli, and the Pursuit of a Scientific Obsession* by Arthur I. Miller, (W. W. Norton & Company, 2009).

Taking the first seven digits of π (*pi* 3.141592) and adding each of these numbers when squared = 137. This reveals a close relationship between π and the fine structure constant: π = 3.141592... $3^2 + 1^2 + 4^2 + 1^2 + 5^2 + 9^2 + 2^2 = 137$.

Also, the full miles-per-second 'speed of light' in a vacuum figure: 186.2823970512 x 2 = 372.5647941024 / 137.03599908 (inverse of *alpha*) = 2.7187366575472 – the 'number *e*' to 99.98 percent accuracy.

[dcciii] *137: Jung, Pauli, and the Pursuit of a Scientific Obsession* by Arthur I. Miller (W. W. Norton & Company, 2010), p. 8.

Physicist Wolfgang Pauli was so obsessed with the number 137 and the fine-structure constant, that he collaborated with psychoanalyst Carl Jung in a quest to understand its significance.
[dcciv]

Following are some notable quotes about the fine-structure constant from this Webpage:

> "The fine structure constant is undoubtedly the most fundamental pure (dimensionless) number in all of physics. It relates the basic constants of electromagnetism (the charge of the electron), relativity (the speed of light), and quantum mechanics (Planck's constant)."
>
> — David J. Griffiths

> "Alpha sets the scale of nature – the size of atoms and all things made of them, the intensity and colors of light, the strength of magnetism, and the metabolic rate of life itself. It controls everything that we see. ... In 137, apparently, science had found Nature's PIN Code."
>
> — Frank Close, *The Infinity Puzzle: Quantum Field Theory and the Hunt for an Orderly Universe.*

> "Alpha, known as the fine-structure constant, characterizes the interactions between matter and light. It has been very accurately measured in the laboratory. It is indeed the most precisely measured of all physical constants ... best memorized in the form ≈ 1/137."
>
> — Jean-Philippe Uzan

> "If alpha [the fine-structure constant] were bigger than it really is, we should not be able to distinguish matter from ether [the vacuum, nothingness], and our task to disentangle the natural laws would be hopelessly difficult. The fact however that alpha has just its value 1/137 is certainly no chance but itself a law of nature. It is clear that the explanation of this number must be the central problem of natural philosophy."
>
> — Max Born

> "There is a most profound and beautiful question associated with the observed coupling constant, *e* – the amplitude for a real electron to emit or absorb a real photon. It is a simple number that has been experimentally determined to be close to 0.08542455. My physicist friends won't recognize this number, because they like to remember it as the inverse of its square: about 137.03597 with about an uncertainty of about 2 in the last decimal place.
>
> It has been a mystery ever since it was discovered more than fifty years ago, and all good theoretical physicists put this number up on their wall and worry about it. Immediately you

would like to know where this number for a coupling comes from: is it related to *pi* or perhaps to the base of natural logarithms? Nobody knows. It's one of the greatest damn mysteries of physics: a magic number that comes to us with no understanding by man. You might say the "hand of God" wrote that number, and "we don't know how He pushed his pencil." We know what kind of a dance to do experimentally to measure this number very accurately, but we don't know what kind of dance to do on the computer to make this number come out, without putting it in secretly!"

— Richard Feynman, *QED: The Strange Theory of Light and Matter*, (1985).

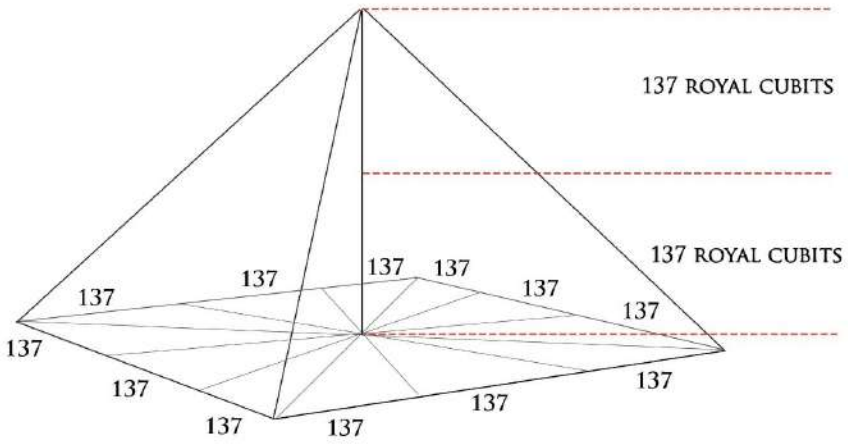
[dccv] Robert Bauval, *The Cosmic Womb: The Seeding of Planet Earth* by Chandra Wickramasinghe Ph.D., and Robert Bauval (Bear & Company, 2017).

[dccvi] The dimensions of "G2," the second largest pyramid at Giza, referred to by mainstream Egyptologists as the "Pyramid of Khafre" are listed in *Wikipedia:*

Height: 136.4 meters (448 ft); (Originally: 143.5 meters, or 471 ft, or **274** [royal] cubits).
Base: 215.28 meters (706 ft) or **411** [royal] cubits.

So . . .

G2 base length of **411** royal cubits ÷ 3 = **137**, x 2 = **274** royal cubits, which is the height of G2.
G2 base perimeter of **1,644** royal cubits (4 x **411**) divided by **137** = 12.



Copyright © Gary Osborn 2015. All Rights Reserved.

Fig. 11: Fourteen references to the number 137 in the height and base perimeter of G2- the second largest pyramid at Giza.
The angles of the four sides are each 53.13 degrees which is the precise angle of the 3-4-5 triangle.

The base side lengths of 411 royal cubits, each producing 3 x 137, isn't surprising when we realize that 4 and 11 are *Pythagorean Primes,* and 4 squared = 16, and 11 squared = 121 . . . 16 + 121 = 137.

[dccvii] *The Cosmic Womb: The Seeding of Planet Earth* by Chandra Wickramasinghe Ph.D., and Robert Bauval (Bear & Company, 2017).

[dccviii] Source: *fine-structure constant* by Robert Munafo.

[dccix] Lambros D. Callimahos (1910 – 1977) was a US Army cryptologist. In 1955, Callimahos established the NSA Technical Journal and taught NSA's senior course in cryptanalysis – serving as technical advisor for the rest of his career.

[dccx] *New Sci-Fi Movie Inspired by Famous UFO Incident: Exclusive Interview with Director* by Robbie Graham, August 6, 2018.

I should perhaps mention that the 2018 movie, *UFO*, by Ryan Eslinger, also discusses a novel idea for space travel: If the fine- structure constant was different in different locations in the universe, then intelligent beings could use the changing constant to navigate through space. The fine-structure constant relates to the strength of the electromagnetic force between elementary particles, and at times the research has suggested that this constant might vary across the universe. So then, space travelers could use it to triangulate their location. And it is discussed in the movie that this process could work similarly to how pulsar navigation would work, in that navigators would be able to observe the regularly pulsing neutron stars to figure out their own locations. Apparently, a pulsar navigation experiment was recently tested on the International Space Station. (Source: *'UFO' Movie Delves into Math of Universe Navigation* by Sarah Lewin, August 31, 2018).

The concept of the movie was based on the paper mentioned in the *ScienceDaily* article, *Laws of physics vary throughout the universe, new study suggests*. September 9, 2010. Source: Swinburne University of Technology.

Quote:

> "The Fine Structure Constant plays an important role throughout the film, right from its very beginning. At one point, discussing the constant with two scientists, it is suggested that the constant may in fact be the same throughout space, but not time. That the constant might be variable proves important to possibly solving the much more complex communications received from the aliens, which, in turn, suggests, though this is never spoken by any character, that the aliens are not from a distant point in space, but in time, namely our own future."
>
> *A Short Take on Ryan Eslinger's UFO* by Bryan Sentes, May 26, 2019.
> *Skunkworks: Notes towards tha myth of things seen in the sky.*

[dccxi] 32 divided by 7, then the result divided by 4, add 2 = 3.142857142857…, which is the same approximation of *pi* (at an accuracy of 99.96-percent) as expressed in the 14:11 base to height ratio of the north/south cross-section of the Great Pyramid of Giza, simply obtained by dividing 22 by 7. It is interesting that the repeating sequence of numbers here – i.e., 1-4-2-8-5-7, 1-4-2-8-5-7 and so on, relates to the same sequence in the 9-point *Enneagram* figure according to esoteric spiritual traditions,

based on the result of dividing one by seven in base 10 arithmetic: 1 / 7 = 0.142857142857142857142857142857… + 3 = 3.142857142857142857142857142857, which is the approximation of *pi* in the north/south cross-section dimension of the Great Pyramid.

The circle of the Enneagram symbolizes unity; the inner triangle symbolizes the "law of three," and the hexagon represents the "law of seven."

[dccxii] Only recently as Spring 2018, Glen Dash on behalf of the *Ancient Egypt Research Associates' Giza Plateau Mapping Project*, determined the coordinates the Great Pyramid of Giza. The source for the Glen Dash data: *Where in the World is the Great Pyramid* by Glen Dash. (2018). AERAGRAM 19-1:16-20.

When calculating distances it's advisable to measure everything at ground level. Taking the coordinates provided by Glenn Dash, ancient Egyptian researcher and author, Manu Seyfzadeh, calculated the center of the Great Pyramid at the base ground level as 29°58′45.04802″N, 31°08′03.12389″ E in degrees, minutes and seconds.

In decimal degrees these coordinates are 29.97918001°N, 31.13420108°E.

At a distance of 282.744 meters (540 royal cubits) south of 29.97918001°N, 31.13420108°E (180º heading), the coordinates in decimal degrees are 29.97662936°N, 31.13420108°E.

Taking the numbers in the latitude:

29.97662936 x 32, divided by 7 = 137.03602, which is the all-round value of the inverse number of the fine-structure constant.

1 / 137.03602 = 0.**0072973**514… which is α (alpha), the *fine-structure constant* to eight decimal places.

[dccxiii] These results can easily be attained by using an online distance calculator based on the formula devised by Polish American geodesist, Thaddeus Vincenty (1920–2002), which gives the 'Map Length' distance between two points on an ellipsoidal earth model accurate to within 0.5 mm distance.

I will give here a demonstration of how we calculate the coordinates of the center of the Great Pyramid from now to where the center of the Great Pyramid was in 1980. We now know that Giza on the African Plate is moving directly northwards at 2.12 cm per-year and at the northeast azimuth heading of roughly 51 degrees. This means that in December 1980, some 38 years after the center of the Great Pyramid at ground level was determined in Spring (April) 2018, the center of the Great Pyramid at ground level would have been 0.8056 meters southwest (heading: 231º) from its current position.

Great Pyramid coordinates (ground-level center) April 2018: 29° 58′ 45.04802″N, 31° 08′ 03.12389″ E (DMS).

2018 back to 1980 = 38 years.

38 years x 2.12 cm = 80.56 centimeters

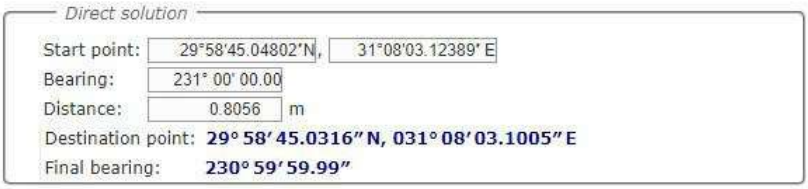
80.56 cm divided by 100 = 0.8056 meters.

Again, we just enter this data into the calculator on the webpage, *Vincenty solutions of geodesics on the ellipsoid*.

From 29°58′45.04802″N, 31°08′03.12389″E (2018), bearing: 231º (231° 00′ 00.00″ DMS) at a distance of 0.8056 meters,

will target the coordinates, 29°58'45.0316"N, 031°08'03.1005"E, shown below as the 'Destination Point' (screen shot of the

calculator).


Direct solution
Start point: 29°58'45.04802"N, 31°08'03.12389" E
Bearing: 231° 00' 00.00
Distance: 0.8056 m
Destination point: 29° 58' 45.0316" N, 031° 08' 03.1005" E
Final bearing: 230° 59' 59.99"

In decimal degrees these coordinates are 29.97917544°N, 31.1341946°E . . . *the ground-level center of Great Pyramid in 1980.*

[dccxiv] "*Speed of the Continental Plates.*" By Zhen Shao Huang, (1997). *The Physics Factbook.* June 2018.

[dccxv] This then begs the question: *Was Giza constructed by or on the instructions given by the same intelligence that produced the binary code received telepathically by Jim Penniston as claimed – i.e., information sent back in time or accessed in some way?*

If so, then the pyramids were also constructed at this specific location on the planet so that by a certain time in the future (1980) and via the slow duration of this tectonic plate drift, the point where the 1 and 0.618 proportions are divided at Giza and to which the pyramids are positioned would line up with the **29.9766248ºN** latitude which would then provide the fine-structure constant to 13 decimal places. It is as if with each passing century or decade of time due to the slow northeast shift of the African plate, this 'Golden Cut' latitude would calibrate itself to a closer determination of the fine-structure constant, which culminated in 1980 when Jim Penniston received the binary code message on Boxing Day of that year, and which contained the very coordinates that have always been pointed to this. However, the time of determining all this seems to be right NOW in May 2019, and if true, then this could only have been predicted and manipulated by an intelligence either from the future, or external to our space-time reality.

Also, I should mention that there is indeed a relationship between the *Phi*-ratio and the FSC (fine-structure constant), which is possibly why the FSC-related latitude is the *"Golden Cut"* that divides the 1 and 0.618 *Phi* proportions to which the pyramids are positioned at Giza.

For example, *Phi* 1.618033988749 squared = 2.618033988747, divided by 360 = 0.0072723… which is the result of physicist Niel Bohr's formulation of alpha acknowledged by mathematicians as the *Phi* version of the FSC (fine-structure constant) and 99.99 percent accurate to the FSC.

0.0072723… is the result of 1 / 137.507.

Now, 137.507 / 2 = 68.7535, and 360 / 68.7535 = 5.236… which is 10 x the royal cubit of 0.5236 meters.

> ". . . a revolutionary suggestion was recently made by the Czech physicist Raji Heyrovska, who deduced that the fine structure constant, . . . really is defined by the [golden] ratio . . ."
>
> — Carl Johan Calleman, *The Purposeful Universe: How Quantum Theory and Mayan Cosmology Explain the Origin and Evolution of Life.*

Also, see the paper, *Fine-Structure Constant from Golden Ratio Geometry* by Michael A. Sherbon, January 24, 2018. Sherbon states: *". . . these constants are included in symbolic geometry of historical relevance in the science of the ancients."*

In addition, there is also the theory that the fine-structure constant, which is associated with energy

exchange – i.e., the amplitude of an electron to emit or absorb a real photon, is a dynamic *geometric* process involving the *Phi*-ratio. (See YouTube video, published Oct 25, 2017: *A Reason for 137 the Fine Structure Constant*).

[dccxvi] The latitude of 29° 58′ 45.0316″ N in DMS, which is 29.97917544°N in decimal degrees, is only 1.6 mm from the official latitude coordinates given to the Great Pyramid still referenced today on the Internet, which dates from 1984 when the *World Geodetic System* (WGS84) datum began and which were obviously rounded-off to 29°58′45.03″N in DMS and 29.979175ºN in decimal degrees.

For example, see coordinates for the Great Pyramid of Giza on the Wikipedia page: *Seven Wonders of the Ancient World*. The coordinates given in degrees, minutes and seconds are: 29°58′45.03″N 31°08′03.69″E, taken from *GeoHack – Great Pyramid of Giza.* In decimal degrees these same coordinates are, 29.9791750°N, 31.1343583°E, but the longitude coordinates have always been wrong, as they target a point 15.13 meters east from the center of the Great Pyramid on the same latitude. The correct values for the longitude are DMS: 31°08'03.1005"E, and DD: 31.1341946°E. (See Note 717 below).

[dccxvii] For example, mathematical proof that the distance between the 1980 latitude coordinates 29.97917544ºN and 29.9766248ºN along the same longitude of 31.1341946°E is exactly 282.744 meters is presented in this screen capture from the 'Live Examples' calculator on the webpage, *Vincenty solutions of geodesics on the ellipsoid*.

Inverse solution
Point 1: 29.97917544°N, 31.1341946°E
Point 2: 29.9766248°N, 31.1341946°E
Distance: 282.744 m
Initial bearing: 180° 00′ 00.00″
Final bearing: 180° 00′ 00.00″
Direct solution
Start point: 29°58'45.0316"N, 31°08'03.1005" E
Bearing: 180° 00' 00.00
Distance: 282.744 m
Destination point: 29° 58′ 35.8493″ N, 031° 08′ 03.1005″ E
Final bearing: 180° 00′ 00.00″

Direct Solution. From Start Point: **29°58′45.0316″N, 031°08′03.1005″ E** at the bearing of 180º (a straight vertical direction south) to the "Destination point:" **29°58′35.8493″N, 031°08′03.1005″ E** in degrees, minutes and seconds (which converts to the decimal degree coordinates, **29.9766248°N, 31.1341946°E)** = Distance: 282.744 meters.

29.97917544°N which is 29° 58' 45.0316"N in degrees minutes and seconds, is only a difference of 0.0016 arc seconds from the official Great Pyramid latitude coordinates of 29° 58' 45.0300"N still being presented on the Internet (See Note 715 above).

In arc seconds this is only a difference of 1.6 mm, which is negligible. In any case, this shows how meticulously precise this is.

(282.744 meters converts to 540 royal cubits by simply dividing 282.744 by 0.5236, which is one royal cubit in meters).

So, at a distance of 282.744 meters (540 royal cubits) south (180º heading) of the latitude coordinates, 29.97917544°N, the latitude coordinates that divide the *Phi*-ratio proportions of 1 and 0.618 on the Giza plateau at this time would have been 29.9766248°N,

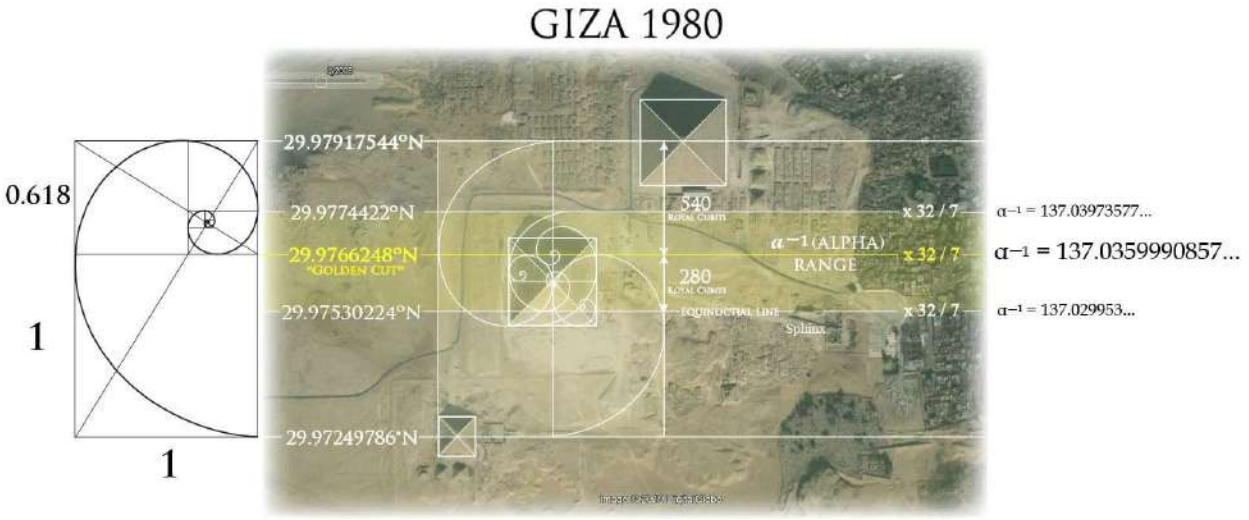
29.9766248°N x 32, divided by 7 = 137.0359990857...

1 / 137.0359990857 = 0.0072973525692 – the *fine-structure constant* as was determined in 2018 and published on May 26, 2019, to 13 decimal places or 14 digits, which is twice the number of digits

required by Lambros D. Callimahos, the NSA cryptanalyst to demonstrate communication by an advanced intelligence.

[dccxviii] In 1980, the latitudes that gave acceptable approximations and the most accurate value of the inverse number of the fine-structure constant (α^{-1}), as published on May 26, 2019, range between the Sphinx and a location equally distant between G1 and G2.

This 'α^{-1} range' through Giza is from the latitude of 29.97530224°N, (the *Equinoctial Line*) which passes through the length of the body of the Sphinx, marking the Sun rising on the eastern horizon during the two Equinoxes, and the latitude of 29.9774422°N.



The inverse of the fine-structure constant (α) is 137.035999084(21). Mohr, P. J.; Taylor, B. N.; Newell, D. B. (2019). "Inverse fine structure constant". CODATA Internationally recommended 2018 values of the fundamental physical constants. NIST (National Institute of Standards and Technology), 20 May 2019, published by *Wikipedia* on May 26, 2019.

Overlay artwork using *Google Earth*, Copyright © Gary Osborn 2019. All Rights Reserved.

Fig. 12: The Latitude-related 'α^{-1} range' passing through Giza in 1980, relating to the 1.618 *Phi*-Ratio, 'Golden Section' proportions.

The number of the latitude of 29.9766248ºN is the only number (numerator) that can be generated by the inverse number of the fine-structure constant, 137.0359990857, by using any 'power of two' number as the multiplier and dividing by 4.571428571428571428

Throughout this chapter I have used the lowest integer numbers 32 and 7 to easily obtain the inverse number of the fine-structure constant 137.0359990857… from the latitude of 29.9766248ºN, which represented the "Golden Cut" line in 1980 at Giza. However, this result can also be obtained by using any integer 'power of two' number higher than 32 – i.e., 32 x 2 = 64 . . . 64 x 2 = 128 . . . 128 x 2 = 256 etc., and then divided by the following numbers listed.

29.9766248 x 32 / 7 (32 subtract 7 = 25) = **137.0359990857**…
29.9766248 x 64 / 14 (64 subtract 14 = 50) = **137.0359990857**…
29.9766248 x 128 / 28 (128 subtract 28 =100) = **137.0359990857**…
29.9766248 x 256 / 56 (256 subtract 56 = 200) = **137.0359990857**…
29.9766248 x 512 / 112 (512 subtract 112 = 400) = **137.0359990857**…
29.9766248 x 1024 / 224 (1024 subtract 224 = 800) = **137.0359990857**…
29.9766248 x 2048 / 448 (2048 subtract 448 = 1600) = **137.0359990857**…
29.9766248 x 4096 / 896 (4096 subtract 896 = 3200) = **137.0359990857**…
29.9766248 x 8192 / 1792 (8192 subtract 1792 = 6400) = **137.0359990857**…

Only the numbers of the northern latitude 29.9766248ºN running through Giza and the southern latitude of 29.9766248ºS in the grid coordinates of the planet can be multiplied with the 'power of two' numbers in this way, resulting in the first eight decimal places of the inverse number of the fine-structure constant just published and displayed on the *Wikipedia* page, *Dimensionless physical constant* as 137.03599908.

$$\alpha = \frac{e^2}{\hbar c\, 4\pi\varepsilon_0} \approx \frac{1}{137.03599908},$$

"Where *e* is the elementary charge, *ħ* is the reduced Planck's constant, *c* is the speed of light in a vacuum, and *ε0* is the permittivity of free space."

Again, dividing 1 by 137.0359990857 results in the rounded-off value of 0.0072973525692 for the fine-structure constant (*alpha:* 0.0072973525692838) to 13 decimal places according to the most recent determination made in 2018 and presented on May 26, 2019, two days before I completed this concluding chapter for this book, and as an introduction for what will be revealed in Book Two of *The Rendlesham Enigma.*

Also, note that the distance between the 'Golden Cut' latitude of 29.9766248ºN is exactly 146.608 meters north of the *Equinoctial Line* latitude of 29.97530224ºN, which passes through the Sphinx. 146.608 meters converts to 280 royal cubits, which is the height of the Great Pyramid. This notable distance between the two latitudes is not a coincidence and confirms the significance of the 'Golden Cut' latitude in the mind of the designer/architect who planned Giza, and which also provides us with the *fine-structure constant.* Furthermore, the vertical distance between the latitude of 29.97917544ºN

which passed through the center of the Great Pyramid in 1980 and the latitude of 29.97530224ºN in 1980, which represented the Equinoctial Line that passes through the Sphinx, is exactly 820 royal cubits. Also the vertical distance between the south base edge of the Great Pyramid and the Equinoctial Line that passes through the Sphinx is exactly 600 royal cubits, which is 314.16 meters . . . 100 x 3.1416 *pi*.

[dccxix] I have experienced this kind of thing before while working on the coordinates from the Rendlesham binary code, and it really does seem as if the events in my life, especially concerning my work on the code, are being micromanaged in some way, as if someone either from the future or external to our reality and not bound by our time constraints is "peering over my shoulder" as I am working on it. What I have explained in Note 4 concerning the Svalbard coordinates embedded in the Giza coordinates showing a relationship between the two, and something which had already featured in the book I co-authored with Scott Creighton, is one example of this.

[dccxx] However, we should also consider the *c* constant (meters-per-second 'speed of light' in a vacuum) latitude of **29.9792458ºN,** which is presently 7.308 meters north at the base of the pyramid (information provided by Manu Seyfzadeh), which aligns with the north edge of the truncated apex. Because of the 51-degree northeast heading, which extends the distance to 11.59 meters, it won't be until the year 2565 – 546 years in the future – that the center of the Great Pyramid will align itself with the latitude of **29.9792458ºN**, and the full decimal-degree coordinates of 29.9792458°N, 31.1342879°E. It could be said then, that the Great Pyramid is moving northeast towards this predestined 'light-speed'-related latitude which has the same nine digits as the *c* constant (**299,792,458** meters-per-second in a vacuum), and perhaps because this synchronization or alignment will presage something important and possibly in terms of a collective awakening – i.e., illumination, which reflects the name given to the Great Pyramid . . . *Ikhet,* meaning *Light.*

My own personal view is that the year 2565 – when it really can be said that the latitude coordinates passing through the center of the Great Pyramid at ground level are **29.9792458ºN** – marks the true beginning of the *Age of Aquarius.* The measurements are meticulous, because this is already predicted in the *Giza Diagonal* – the length of which is 2,160 royal cubits and therefore represents *1/6th* the scale of half a Precessional Cycle in years.

2,160 x 6 = 12,960 years.

The *Giza Diagonal* is angled at azimuth 43.2 degrees, which reflects the 1:43,200 scale of the Great Pyramid in respect of the size of the northern hemisphere of the Earth. However, the Giza Diagonal also presents us with a timeline of 12,960 years from the *Age of Leo* in 10,460 BCE marked by the subsidiary pyramid referred to as G3a, to the *Age of Aquarius* in 2,500 CE, as marked by the subsidiary pyramid referred to as G1a. These revelations regarding the length of the *Giza Diagonal* and what it represents were also given to us courtesy of the Giza coordinates found in the Rendlesham binary code.

So, the year 2565 CE, when the center of the Great Pyramid aligns with the speed of light-related latitude according to these calculations relating to the northeast tectonic shift of the African Plate, is only 65 years past the year 2,500 CE. Perhaps the calculations are slightly off, or perhaps there are changes to the rate of speed, direction or other variables to consider and this alignment could indeed become a reality in the year 2,500 CE, and if so, then it will become a reality by this very alignment which will mark the true beginning of the Age of Aquarius – the Age of Light and Truth . . . *well, one can hope.*

[dccxxi] This is what organizations like TTSA (*'To The Stars Academy of Arts and Science'*), whose members are promising the public full disclosure on the UFO or UAP phenomenon, and who claim they have new information on the Rendlesham Incident, should be concentrating on – the forensic testing of the binary pages from Jim Penniston's notebook.

Jim Penniston is determined to get the notebook tested again, and this time to determine the age of

the written ink. He has been told that any ink testing in the future will involve testing the natural degradation of the ink that occurs after being written. Using biro pens and paper from 1980 in the present will not produce the same ink degradation that would be evident with ink that had been written onto the same paper in 1980. From exposure to light, air, and such, the ink degrades over time, and it is possible that the duration of time which has expired since the initial writing can therefore be determined. This is 'fool proof' testing, and Jim was told that the age of the ink could be dated to within a week!

Unfortunately, the cost of this kind of testing has been estimated to be between $8,000 and £9,000, and so unless someone offers to fund the testing, there is no way this more rigorous test will be done with the binary pages of the notebook, as it is cost prohibited. In view of this, Jim Penniston says he KNOWS when the binary code was written in the notebook as stated in his account, as it was he who had written it on the morning of Dec 27, 1980, and therefore has no problem submitting it for date authentication now, or in the future, as much as he never had a problem in 2012 when the notebook pages were tested by Robert M. Wood and verified as having dated from the time he says he wrote down the string of ones and zeros in 1980.

The fact that Jim Penniston is still willing to have the notebook pages and the ink tested and analyzed and has no problem with this even though he doesn't really care if people believe him or not, speaks volumes.

[dccxxii] This is the nature of the information encapsulated in the coordinates, and it is ironic that there are many who have foolishly assumed that the binary code is not even worth looking at – most of them having been easily influenced by the views of others without thinking for themselves. (For example, see Note 688). As mentioned, it has been suggested by skeptics that the code is a hoax, and that it had been devised by an agency closer to home and placed into Jim Penniston's mind through hypnosis to bring ridicule to the Rendlesham Incident and the witnesses. However, why this should have been planned to come into operation 30 years later does not make sense and does not fit the facts of what has emerged from the code, because if this was the motive, the 'agents of deception' certainly would not have gone to the trouble of also bringing attention to factual data relating to what had been encoded at Giza by those who constructed it and giving away many of its secrets, as this would conflict with the orthodox view of history that most people have been indoctrinated with, and which, in general, these people are employed to defend and uphold. However, based on this scenario, many UFO researchers – even those who have investigated the Rendlesham Incident, have ignored and avoided any discussion on the binary code as if it has already been rejected as nonsense created to fool people . . . *even though the fact is that those who assume all this have already fooled themselves.*

In any case, the code clearly wasn't meant for everyone . . . only those who would be able to understand it and appreciate it, and this will be evident when the findings of the binary code are finally revealed in full.

Table of Contents

Introduction
Chapter One
Chapter Two
Chapter Three
Chapter Four
Chapter Five
Chapter Six
Chapter Seven
Chapter Eight
Chapter Nine
Chapter Ten
Chapter Eleven
Chapter Twelve
Chapter Thirteen
Chapter Fourteen
Chapter Fifteen
Chapter Sixteen
Chapter Seventeen
Chapter Eighteen
Epilogue